

The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation

The Intermediate Study in The Perfect Principles of the Doctrine of Christ Trilogy

VOLUME II

A Comprehensive Biblical Reconstruction of Reality, Part 1:
The Great Instrument of Judgment Mercury
as Revealed in *Earth In Upheaval* and *In the Beginning*
and ***Enlightened*** [G5461](#) by ***Scripture*** [G1124](#)

SECTION 6 GJAC I & II, Part 1 - The Mercury Round of *Earth in Upheaval*

Begun Summer 2015

Like the order of topics presented in the sections of these ***'studies'***, 'itemizing' the "Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation" is to some extent arbitrary too. I mean I could primarily focus on The 13 Visits of The Natural Great Instruments of Death. Or I could add The 2 Abracadabra-style Great Judgments, (you know, the one that initiated all the following ***'natural'*** ones, and the other one that initiated the since irresolvable strife between ***nations***), and be ***handling*** as many as 15. Or I could itemize individual ***'great events'***, whether ***'natural'*** or ***'abracadabra-style'***, including The 21 Seal, Trumpet and Plague Judgments of The Great Tribulation, and have many more. But there are yet still broader perspectives in play, that is, considering that this ***study***, with Dr. Velikovsky's help, is not just God-Zone focused, nor just globally focused, but also Solar System focused, and even at times attempts to consider God's ***'transcendent, infinitely-lensed perspective'***, and that is, as I ***continue*** to reach beyond the limits of my own. But really most of all, I am ***trusting*** that from God's perspective that it is His ***inspiration*** which ***worketh in 'me'***. So I have decided to instead organize this ***study***—and thereby define ***'great judgments'***—with a primary focus just on The 5 Great Natural Instruments of Death that God ***used*** and will ***use*** to mostly ***'naturally accomplish'*** all His ***great and terrible, and mighty, and marvellous, and wondrous works***, which you should at least be starting to ***see*** is one of His ***ways*** of ***'introducing'*** Himself to us, ***'especially'*** to those of us who are paying ***better*** attention, ***except*** that I am really already doing ***all*** this 'itemization'—surely by the same ***inspiration of God***—and will ***continue*** doing it, though now more through this "primary focus". So again, it's really just an arbitrary organizational choice of mine, except I can also ***testify*** that it is by ***the inspiration of God***, which in this case is to focus on His ***great judgments*** primarily in terms of The 5 Natural Great Instruments of Death, that is, on Mercury, Venus, Mars, The Coming Great Tribulation Red Planet, and The Coming Last Rebellion Firebomb.

And so with what I'll call 'the preliminaries' behind us, (and for you, preferably, at least again), it's now finally time for Dr. Velikovsky. And to start with I should 'acknowledge', as he does, that he questioned and consulted and/or researched many scientists of and before his time in the completion of his work. And arguably the most prominent of his consultations, who apparently provided the most

extensive initial examination and analysis of his work, was the renowned Dr. Albert Einstein. In Dr. Velikovsky's *Acknowledgements* in *Earth in Upheaval* he wrote,

The late Dr. Albert Einstein, during the last eighteen months of his life (November 1953 – April 1955, gave me much of his time and thought. He read several of my manuscripts and supplied them with marginal notes. Of *Earth in Upheaval* he read chapters VIII through XII; he made handwritten comments on this and other manuscripts and spent not a few long afternoons and evenings, often till midnight, discussing and debating with me the implications of my theories. In the last weeks of his life he reread *Worlds in Collision* and read also three files of "memoirs" on that book and its [generally very negative] reception [by the then dominant *uniformitarian evolutionist* 'scientific community'], and expressed his thoughts in writing. We started at opposite points; the area of disagreement, as reflected in our correspondence, grew ever smaller, and though at his death (our last meeting was nine days before his passing) there remained clearly defined points of disagreement, his stand then demonstrated the evolution of his opinion in the space of eighteen months.

And Dr. Velikovsky's relationship with Dr. Einstein was even closer than this implies. On the second page of his *Buccaneer Books*, ("in coordination with Doubleday and Company"), publication of *Ages In Chaos* we are informed that,

Immanuel Velikovsky was born in Vitebsk, Russia, in 1895, and has studied at the universities of Moscow, Berlin, Vienna and Edinburgh. From 1921 to 1924 he edited, with Albert Einstein, the *Scripta Universitatis atque Bibliothecae Hierosolymitarum*, from which the Hebrew University was to grow. In 1939 he emigrated to America.

Scripta Universitatis atque Bibliothecae Hierosolymitarum, by-the-way, as best as I can determine, was a "journal" Dr. Velikovsky and Dr. Einstein "edited" together, Dr. Einstein naturally in charge of the topics of science and math, and Dr. Velikovsky's oversight evidently more general. The Latin title of this journal, as best as I can translate—surprise, I could not find much information about it online—is, "Universal Writings [a wide variety of essays, papers, etc.] and Library [journal and newspaper] of the Kingdom of Jerusalem". Hence I'm assuming its scope was on all academic topics and any important news and information relating to Jerusalem and Israel, and therefore was the natural driver for the formation of Hebrew University, God bless their hearts.

But Dr. Velikovsky also originally studied medicine at Montpellier, France, before finally receiving his medical degree at the University of Moscow. So it's not like Dr. Velikovsky was really that far 'out on a limb'—intellectually or scientifically—when he published *Earth in Upheaval* in 1955. By then reputedly one of the greatest minds that ever lived, a friend of his, had come most of the way around to his way of seeing 'Creation'.

However in this section we will see how even these two 'great minds' couldn't see the 'bigger picture', or even all the 'bigger science', because such a perspective

from God is only possible after you **receive ye the holy ghost**, which is the **miracle** of **salvation**. And you should know by now that I can't stop there, because this is really not even close to being enough either. Another prerequisite that must **accompany** such formidable **revelations**, is that you **go on** and **ye continue in** the **good work** God **hath begun...in you**, that He, being **great in counsel**, will **continue** to '**perform in you**' until **ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free**, that is, **if** you let Him, and that is, where They **make you perfect**, uh-huh, '**spiritually mature**', and even beyond that, where you finally join **them** who are actually really **able** to **live...by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**, and are actually really **committed** to **continue** in **so doing** even though this must also mean joining **them** who,

...suffer according to the will of God [and] commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator [1Pe 4:19](#)

And you should also by now **see** still further, beyond even all of this, that this is a neverending journey **ye continue in**, which is to further '**correct, improve and expand**', (read, '**grow in**'), the '**perspective**', (read, the **understanding of the truth**), **revealed** to you by The Spirit of God—you **know**, just like what **we** are **so doing** in this 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style' **study**, and like you should **continue** to do beyond it, wherein, **verily** I, '**unashamedly**', both **teach** and otherwise **speak as the oracles of God** as **commanded**.

But I should also 'disclaim', again, that Dr. Velikovsky was not a *creationist*, nor even an Orthodox (**believing**) Jew, nor was Dr. Einstein for that matter, at least they didn't **believe in God** like you and I do. This means that they, evidently without The Spirit of God to **teach** them **all things**, and **guide** them **into all truth**, let alone **shew** them **things to come**, like **we have**, could not fully imagine, even with so much evidence in front of them, the full extent of God's **wondrous**, **marvellous** and **mighty works**. I mean they could not **believe** that God, having **created all things** in a literal week, thereafter could make so many **marvellous** changes to Earth, bringing about and/or destroying seemingly endless *variations* of *species* from what must have been originally an innumerable diversity of them—I mean surely Adam didn't name **all species**—and they couldn't believe that God did **all** these **great and terrible things** within less than a couple of thousand years, and **all** by His **great judgments**, occurring, so far I mean, from passed the middle of God's 2nd Day (from 1656 AC or about 2300 BC) to before the middle of the 4th Day (in about 3270 AC or, according to Dr. Velikovsky, 687 BC). No, they couldn't 'wrap their great minds around it'. Apparently it did not occur to them that God was that awesome, so they weren't then fully ready to **meet** Him.

But since they are both Jews—yes are, and hopefully now are in **Abraham's Bosom**—I can only hope they will eventually fully **meet** Him on their second chance at it, even as I **hope** you can in this **study**. And yes, I'm talking about much more than just **the end of your faith**, which is **the salvation of your souls**, but of **the hope** of a '**God-glorifying**' **greater resurrection** and '**great eternal reward**'. And after all, this **study** offers many advantages to **us** now that they didn't have then. And just as I don't blame the Apostle Thomas for his initial doubts, so I won't hold it against anyone who needs more direct exposure to the **great judgments** of God, that is, to The Great Tribulation—or just to **Abraham's Bosom** along with a visit from the Two Witnesses—before they will **believe in God**, and in...

...[our Lord Jesus Christ:] ...the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords [1Ti 6:14-15](#).

I mean if They **counsel** (read, “plan”)—and They does—to again ‘identify’ Themselves with overwhelmingly awesome displays of **trouble**, popularly known as the coming **great tribulation**, though at that time in a way **such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time**, and to **do** again similar **great and terrible things**, and that is, ‘**most severely**’ in that it will be **such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time**, though all mostly just **to save some**, and in the process **save** even more than ever before, but also in the process, by **cruel...wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate...** [and] **destroy ‘the rest’**, because even this is still not enough for ‘**the rest**’ to ‘identify’ Him, then who am I to **condemn**.

Dr. Velikovsky’s ability to ‘identify’ God, on the other hand, though clearly mostly ‘**unable**’, seems occasionally to oscillate closer to being **able**, from time to time. I mean he seems to now and then give away that he is actually a ‘believer’, though one who remains a *catastrophic evolutionist*. I mean I am sometimes uncertain whether he mostly pretends to be **one that believeth not**—to remain more ‘believable’ to ‘unbelievers’—but who occasionally ‘slips’ or ‘misspeaks’—or instead ‘plants clues’—implying that he really does **believe in God**, but not so much that he can’t keep that hidden, and maybe only intentionally drops just enough clues for those with less “dull ears and dimmed eyes”. The last long paragraph—which is all just one sentence, by-the-way—of his *Forward* in the 1977 first *Pocket Books* paperback edition of *Earth in Upheaval*, may be one of his better attempts at both hiding and exposing his **belief** in God

(<http://www.truthseekersministries.org/files/Velikovsky-Earth-in-Upheaval.pdf>). And we’ll run across a few more examples I will **endeavour** to point out along the way. But I guess we’ll eventually find out, one **way** or another. Unfortunately for now, we must accept that Dr. Velikovsky did, at least mostly, maintain his position as an *evolutionist*, even one that, though disapproving of most *evolutionists*’ methods of ‘loop dating’ Earth’s *crust* and *fossils*, and their tendency to ridiculously overestimate the age of *glaciers*, etc. But we can assume that he held on to this ‘Old-Earth’ belief primarily because of the *speed of light* and the billions of *light years* there are between us and the farthest, only *telescopically visible stars*. Of course and again, he also lacked the help of The Spirit of Truth, and evidently could not accept the whole **truth**, that is, about God’s manifest ‘overwhelming awesomeness’, including as it is expressed in **scripture** about both His **creation** and **great judgments**. So, like many Christians nowadays, he couldn’t let go of the idea that the Universe was billions of years old.

But I should also clarify, again, that Dr. Velikovsky is a *catastrophist*—and I say “is” because I **believe** he now still “is”, and however much he was initially surprised, and that would be after arriving in **Abraham’s Bosom**. Nevertheless he made his *catastrophism*—or “catastrophic evolution”—position quite clear in his 1977 *Forward* too, writing,

...The earth is no [underlining mine] abode for peaceful evolution for eons uncounted, or counted in billions of years, with mountain building all finished by the Tertiary [*uniformitarian geological formation* of Earth’s crust from 65 million to 2 million years ago; or, “by” the slow processes of Earth’s *geology* alone—no!], with no greater event in millions of years than the fall of a large meteorite [that supposedly killed the dinosaurs—no!], with a prescribed [unchanging] orbit, unchanging calendar, unchanging latitudes, sediment accumulating slowly with the precision of an apothecary [or chemist’s] scale [no!], with few riddles unsolved but assured of solution in the very

same frame of a solar system, with planets on their permanent orbits [no!] with satellites moving with a [never changing] better-than-clock precision [no!], with tides coming in time, and seasons in their [same unchanging] order [again, no!]...

No, Dr. Velikovsky understood that Uniformitarian Geology and Evolution was fantasy. And his accumulated scientific proof in *Earth in Upheaval* is substantial. I think his best summary of the information he provides, really more the 'itinerary of his worldwide tour' of these "repeated upheavals", is near the middle of the book, in the last two paragraphs of *Chapter VI*..

Evidence of great upheavals has been brought forth from the islands of the Arctic Ocean and the tundras of Siberia; from the soil of Alaska; from Spitsbergen and Greenland; from the caves of England, the forest-bed of Norfolk, and the rock fissures of Wales and Cornwall; from the rocks of France, the Alps and Juras. And from Gibraltar and Sicily; from the Sahara and the Rift of Africa; from Arabia and its harras, the Kashmir slopes of the Himalayas, and the Siwalik Hills from the Irrawaddy in Burma and from the Tientsin and Choukoutien deposits in China; from the Andes and the Altiplano; from the asphalt pits of California; from the Rocky Mountains and the Columbia Plateau; from the Cumberland cave in Maryland and Agate Springs Quarry in Nebraska; from the hills of Michigan and Vermont with skeletons of whales on them; from the Carolina coast; from the submerged coasts and the bottom of the Atlantic with its Ridge, and the lava bottom of the Pacific.

With many other places in various parts of the world we shall deal in some detail in the pages that follow; but we shall not exhaust the list, for there is not a meridian of longitude or a degree of latitude that does not show scars of repeated upheavals.

So *Earth in Upheaval* overwhelmingly proves, and strongly supports—especially when added to *Worlds in Collision* where Dr. Velikovsky does consider God's **scripture**-defined-and-foretold **great judgments**—that the Theory of Catastrophism, or as Dr. Velikovsky puts it here, "repeated [global] upheavals", much better describes our reality, as well as helps **us** (e.g., [1Co 2:6-10](#)), that is, with the help of our growing more '**mature spiritual perspectives**', to **see** how **we** [may] **speak wisdom among them that are perfect**, not to mention have the opportunity to better **understand** the '**satanic conspiracy**' that hides this reality from the World. And again, it will help **us** along the way toward that increasingly better '**introduction**' to God, as well as to a '**greater understanding**' of His 'identity'. So, '**dear disciple**', **prepare to meet thy God**, yet again, and that is, even more fully.

But to be clearer, in the first published volume of Dr. Velikovsky's foundational work, *Worlds in Collision*, he uses *historical record* and 'supposed' *mythology* and *folklore*—including **scripture**—to substantiate the 'close passings' to Earth of Venus and Mars, and even of their separate 'battles' with each other, which we'll get to starting in **SECTION 8**. But in *Earth in Upheaval*, evidently at least in part due to the 'scientific outcry' against *Worlds in Collision*, the loudest usually from those who had not even read it, he abandons the use of *history* and 'so-called' *mythology*

for *science* alone. And speaking of those with “dull ears and dimmed eyes”, he explains himself in the *Preface* saying,

I had intended, after piecing together the history of these earlier global upheavals, to present geological and paleontological material to support the testimony of man. But the reception of *World in Collision* by certain scientific groups [- identified in the *Author's Note* as holding “uniformitarian dogma... whether called gradualists, evolutionists, or Darwinist”,] persuaded me, before reviving the pageant of earlier catastrophes, to present at least some of the evidence of the rocks, which is as insistent as that carried down to our times by written records and by word of mouth... [So] I present here some pages from the book of nature. I have excluded from them all references to ancient literature, traditions, and folklore [including mythology]; and this I have done with intent, so that careless critics cannot decry the entire work as “tales and legends” [like they did with *Worlds in Collision*]. Stones and bones are the only witnesses. Mute as they are, they will testify clearly and unequivocally. Yet dull ears and dimmed eyes will deny this evidence, and the dimmer the vision [or the more ‘valuable’ the fantasy evolutionary ‘turf’ being protected], the louder and more insistent will be the voices of protestation. This book was not written for those who swear by the *verba magistri*—the holiness of their school [read, **worldly**] wisdom; and they may [and usually did] debate it without reading it, as well.

Of course I must challenge you to read it too. But you’ll get more out of it if you finish this **study** first. And by-the way, I too believe the *science* of *Earth in Upheaval* is more than sufficient enough to prove its case for Catastrophism, as we will see.

So as I explained at the end of last section, in this section, and in our first round through *Earth in Upheaval*, I will be extracting all the evidence I can identify that applies to the passing of Mercury and to the resulting Flood of Noah (or Noachian Flood), along the way trying to pass over the evidence more directly related to The Visits of Venus and Mars, saving that evidence for later rounds and sections, but expecting there will unavoidably be some overlap. In fact I imagine the worst of this whole process of God’s **great judgments**—so far—as something like 3 ‘washing machine cycles’, the first ‘cycle’ happening in a ‘top-loading washer’, and the next 2 in a ‘front-loader’, where in the process of these 3 ‘cycles’, first sediment is ‘laid’, next it’s further washed and/or overturned, then washed and/or overturned once more. More specifically, there is **1)** The 1st Mercury Cycle: Fill ‘top-loader’ with *water* and *earth*, agitate, and drain, then **2)** The 1st Venus Cycle: Fill ‘front-loader’ with less *water* and *earth*, including some of the sediment from the 1st ‘cycle’, tumble, drain, but freeze more of the *water* so it can slowly thaw and drain, then **3)** The 2nd Venus Cycle: Repeat 1st Venus Cycle. There is also a smaller but significantly ‘globally agitating’ 2nd Mercury Cycle, and several comparable smaller Mars ‘cycles’ too.

Or as Dr. Velikovsky summarizes in his *Preface*,

The earth and the water without... turned into enemies and engulfed the animal kingdom, the human race included, and there was no shelter and no refuge [except for the Jews]. In such [or both] cataclysms [involving Venus] the land and sea repeatedly [and only to some extent temporarily] changed

places, laying dry the kingdom of the ocean [- lastingly so where the ocean floor rose -] and submerging the kingdom of the land [- lastingly so where the land sank].

Uh-huh. And before we're done you'll **see** better what we mean. And yeah, can't help it, 'it will all come out in the wash'.

To attempt as best I can to restrict ourselves in this section to presented evidence that applies to The Flood—what Dr. Velikovsky refers to as “the Deluge”—we will begin in *Chapter II, REVOLUTION*, in the section, *Sea and Land Changed Places*. Here Dr. Velikovsky uses the work and insights of Baron Georges Cuvier to summarize the ‘lay of the land’, who explains that there is “no doubt” that there is ‘fighting’ between the “earth and the water”, and he concludes that, “...this is especially easy to be proven.”

And by the way, maybe you already noticed that Dr. Velikovsky likes semicolons (;). They can be used for lists following colons (:), which he likes too, and for lists within lists along with commas (,), which he did a few paragraphs back. And it at least seems like that most of the paragraphs he writes have multiple semicolons, and mostly he uses them as they are otherwise and most commonly used; he uses them to connect two or more related sentences. So be careful to read your semicolons as the end of one sentence and the start of a new but related one as appropriate; and so Dr. Velikovsky reports,

The most renowned naturalist to come from the generation of the French Revolution and the Napoleonic Wars was Georges Cuvier. He was the founder of vertebrate paleontology, or the science of fossil bones, and thus of the science of extinct animals. Studying the finds made in the gypsum formations of Montmartre in Paris and elsewhere in France and the European continent in general, he came to the conclusion that in the midst of even the oldest strata of marine [salt-water] formations there are other strata replete with animal or plant remains of terrestrial [land] or fresh-water forms; and that among the more recent strata, or those that are nearer the surface, there are also land animals buried under heaps of marine sediment. "It has frequently happened that lands which have been laid dry, have been again covered by the waters, in consequence either of their being engulfed in the abyss [sinking land], or of the sea having merely risen over them... These repeated irruptions and retreats of the sea have neither all been slow nor gradual; on the contrary, most of the catastrophes which have occasioned them have been sudden; and this is especially easy to be proven, with regard to the last of these catastrophes, that which, by a twofold motion, has inundated, and afterward laid dry, our present continents, of at least a part of the land which forms them at the present day" [Georges Cuvier, *Essay on the Theory of the Earth*, 5th Ed, 1827, English translation... p.13-14].

"The breaking to pieces, the raising up and overturning of the older strata [of the Earth] leave no doubt upon the mind that they have been reduced to the state in which we now see them, by the action of sudden and violent causes; and even the force of the motions excited in the mass of waters, is still attested by the heaps of debris and rounded pebbles which are in many places interposed between the solid strata. Life, therefore, has often been disturbed on this earth by terrific events.

Numberless living beings have been the victims of these catastrophes; some, which inhabited the dry land, have been swallowed up by inundations; others, which peopled the waters, have been laid dry, the bottom of the sea having been suddenly raised; their very races have been extinguished for ever, and have left no other memorial of their existence than some fragments which the naturalist can scarcely recognize..." [p.15].

Cuvier [mistakenly - or is it Dr. Velikovsky's mistake -] believed that changes have operated in nature not just since the appearance of life [that is, since The Flood's *sedimentary rock* was 'laid' atop Genesis rock], for [or because] the land masses formed previous to that event [on Genesis rock] also seemed to have experienced violent displacements [- mostly because of Venus] [p.20].

He found in the gypsum deposits in the suburbs of Paris marine limestone containing over eight hundred species of shells, all of them [salt-water] marine. Under this limestone there is another—fresh-water—deposit formed of clay. [But *seawater* was probably 'fresh'—not salty—until The Flood—and remember there's a 'Greek myth' and surely others about this change too.] Among the shells, all of fresh-water (or land) origin, there are also bones—but "what is remarkable," the bones are those of reptiles and not of mammals, "of crocodiles and tortoises."

Much of France was once sea [before The Flood]; then it was land [maybe after Mercury's visits], populated by land reptiles; then it became sea again [maybe after The 1st Visit of Venus] and was populated by marine animals; then it was land again [maybe after the water drained], inhabited by mammals; then it was once more sea [maybe after The 2nd Visit of Venus], and again land [maybe after the water drained again]. Each stratum contains the evidence of its age in the bones and shells of the animals that lived and propagated there at the time and were entombed in recurrent upheavals. And as it was on the site of Paris, so it was in other parts of France, and in other countries of Europe.

The strata of the earth disclose that "The thread of operations is here broken; the march of Nature is changed; and none of the agents which she now employs, would have been sufficient for the production of her ancient works" [p.24].

How could I or Dr. Velikovsky have put it any better ourselves? And Baron Georges' report continues,

"We have no evidence that the sea can now incrust those shells with a paste as compact as that of the [*global flood-sediment-buried*] marbles, the sandstones, or even the coarse limestone..."

"In short, all [now active] causes united, would not change, in an appreciable degree, the level of the sea; nor raise a single stratum above its surface... It has been asserted that the sea has undergone a general diminishing of level... Admitting that there has been a gradual diminution of the waters; that the sea has transported solid matter in all directions; that the temperature of the globe is either diminishing or increasing; none of these cases could have overturned our strata,

enveloped in ice large animals, with their flesh and skin; laid dry marine [animals]... and, lastly, destroyed numerous species, and even entire genera" [p.32,36-37].

"Thus, we repeat, it is in vain that we search, among the powers which now act at the surface of the earth, for causes sufficient to produce the revolutions and catastrophes, the traces of which are exhibited by its crust" [p.35-36].

Dr. Velikovsky informs us that for Baron Georges, given the theories of the origin of the World of his time—which Dr. Velikovsky updates in *Worlds in Collision*—the matter remained a mystery. Baron Georges did not know about Venus or Mars, let alone Mercury. And Dr. Velikovsky tells us that this mystery “haunted”, and “almost...tormented” him (p.242). This shows us how important Dr. Velikovsky’s work is. If the likes of Baron Georges Cuvier had been cut off from the solution to such a mystery, surely the **whole world** had. This, then, is also evidence of a **‘satanic conspiracy’**—part of the present, new strategy whereby **Satan... deceiveth the whole world**, this being his ‘switch’ from **‘idolizing Creation’**, (see again [Rom 1:22-25](#)), to **‘idolizing self’**, (see again [Dan 11:36-39](#)). And Baron Georges’ failed and “tormented” search for a solution showed that Satan’s new plan was beginning to work, not that it wasn’t also all part of God’s to **‘make a show of him openly’** too.

Next Dr. Velikovsky introduces the Rev. Dr. William Buckland. And here we have more ‘overlap’. I mean most of this evidence is about Venus, and I may revisit it in a later section, but it demonstrates how his ‘misunderstanding’ of the ‘shallow-laid’ “diluvium” was confused for Genesis Flood sediments, and so will help distinguish the difference. Still in *REVOLUTION*, in the section, *The Caves of England*, Dr. Velikovsky writes,

In 1823, William Buckland, professor of geology at the University of Oxford, published his *Reliquiae diluvianae (Relics of the Flood)*, with the subtitle, *Observations on the organic remains contained in caves, fissures, and diluvial gravel, and on other geological phenomena, attesting the action of an universal deluge...*

And this title alone shows us that the Rev., Dr. Buckland was focused in the wrong places—in *fissures* and *caves*, that is, on the wrong kind of *sediment*, that is, on relatively shallow *gravel*, and on the wrong “action”, that is, more violent as opposed to relatively more ‘gently-laid’, and that is, if he was looking for evidence of The Flood. No, he was unknowingly at that time reporting on the evidence of Venus, and so naturally later abandoned the theory of an “universal deluge” altogether when he added this misunderstanding to the misinterpreted discovery of another “action” mostly attributable to Venus, ‘continent-covering’ *glacial action*. But Dr. Velikovsky gives us more details about the Rev., Dr. Buckland and his ‘misguided cavework’...

Buckland was one of the great authorities on geology of the first half of the nineteenth century. In a cave in Kirkdale in Yorkshire, eighty feet above the valley, under a floor covering of stalagmites [upward-pointing, ‘drip-built’, *sediment-filled-water-formed* ‘rock spikes’], he found teeth and bones of elephants, rhinoceroses, hippopotami, horses, deer, tigers (teeth of which were “larger than those of the largest lion or Bengal tiger”), bears,

wolves, hyenas, foxes, hares, rabbits, as well as bones of ravens, pigeons, larks, snipe, and ducks. Many of the animals had died "before the first set, or teeth, had been shed."

This is more information in some respects, and less in others, than we considered last section. Remember the existence of many of the bones in the cave in question was attributed by the Rev., Dr. Buckland to feeding hyenas. However rhinoceroses, hippopotami, and 'oversized' "tigers", or even birds, do not fit into this scenario. What happened in this cave? Let's consider more before I venture my guess. Dr. Velikovsky continues,

Certain scholars prior to Buckland had their own explanation for the provenience of elephant bones in the soil of England, and to them Buckland referred: "[The idea] which long prevailed, and was considered satisfactory by the antiquaries [*archaeologists*] of the last century was, that they were the remains of elephants imported by the Roman armies. This idea is also refuted: First, by the anatomical facts of their belonging to an extinct species of this genus; second, by their being usually accompanied by the bones of rhinoceros and hippopotamus, animals which could never have been attached to Roman armies; thirdly, by their being found dispersed over Siberia and North America, in equal or even greater abundance than in those parts of Europe which were subjected to the Roman Power" [W. Buckland, *Reliquiae diluvianae*, p.173].

So do you get it? The tropics—and the Equator—moved, meaning the Earth's axis 'shifted' in relation to the Sun. At one time, evidently after The Flood and before The 1st Visit of Venus, the tropics must have been a zone that included both Siberia and England, where larger animals than exist today—though still evidently shrinking in size since the Flood—could find the most vegetation—or prey—and best survive, at least until Venus came along. Dr. Velikovsky will show us much more evidence confirming this that we'll get to in later sections, but even now we can see that what Rev., Dr. Buckland exposed in this cave was not evidence of The Flood, since animals didn't start eating other animals until afterward—as he should have known. But there are more clues. Dr. Velikovsky collects them from the works of Baron Georges and others, writing,

It appeared that hippopotamus and reindeer and bison lived side by side at Kirkdale; hippopotamus, reindeer, and mammoth pastured together at Brentford near London. Reindeer and grizzly bear lived with hippopotamus at Cefn in Wales. Lemming and reindeer bones were found together with bones of the cave lion and hyena at Bleadon in Somerset. Hippopotamus, bison, and musk sheep were found together with worked flint in the ravels of the Thames Valley. The remains of reindeer lay with the bones of mammoth and rhinoceros in the cave of Breugue in France, in the same red clay, encased by the same stalagmites. At Arcy, France, also in a cave, bones of Hippopotamus were found with bones of the reindeer, and with them a worked flint [used by men, or 'cavemen', to start fires].

So, it obviously wasn't just *people* chased into caves by Venus. *Animals* were too. But there

are a couple of other possibilities of how they got there. Besides that after Venus' first **visit** *predators* tended to drag their *prey* into caves, evidently other *animals*, and *humans*, began sharing caves, at least temporarily, with other **creatures** they might not have otherwise been so inclined. And some may have rushed in at the time of Venus' passings in simple panic, if not also simply were 'washed in'. And the now *colder climate reindeer* and *musk sheep bones* found with the *warmer climate hippopotami, rhinoceroses, mammoths*, etc. implies a 'wash' in one direction or the other. However remember that before The Flood there were no *ice caps* or *glaciers*—no *ice*—as there were no *arctic regions* under the *water canopy*. So the *animals* that lived outside the 'new' *tropics*—the *tropics* being the *environment* that is closest to what it was like before The Flood, and before *animals* were eating each other—must have, after The Flood, adapted to be able to live in *arctic* or *subarctic regions*. So some of these *animals* may actually have been simply living near each other. Still, it must have been in at least some of these cases, and I'm guessing more on The 2nd Visit of Venus, that, using the current 'orientation', a 'southward wave' travelling over a 'northward roll' of the Earth, that some of these now 'separated' *animals* 'washed-up' together, since evidently the *warmer climate lions* and *hyenas* were the ones eating *animals* in some of these *caves* before being *buried*, probably having taken up this practice after the first passing of Venus. But these 'orientations' would change depending on how far these waves traveled, huh, I mean even including a few trips around the planet. And oh, another reason it must have been Venus was the repeated cases of burial in "red clay". Yeah, Venus didn't just turn *water* 'red'; it tended to turn *sediments* 'red' too. Remember Mercury is *blue*. And this, besides the depth of *sediments*, is another way to differentiate between the work of the *blue* and *red planets*. Get all that 'paleontological CSI'? Evidently neither the Rev., Dr. Buckland nor Baron Georges did, may God nevertheless have already preserved their souls. And are their excuses for their confusion and ignorance worse than yours, or of 'Christian scientists' today, by-the-way?

But you can also start to **see** from all this that the evidence of The Flood has been seriously 'tampered with' by Venus and Mars. Even Genesis rock, according to Baron George, was significantly 'tampered with', so that identifying isolated, untainted evidence of The Flood, being mostly underneath or otherwise 'displaced' by what Venus and Mars left behind, is more difficult than you might have previously imagined, and especially if you had no idea that there have really been as many as 10 '**great shaking**' cataclysms that have followed the original "universal deluge" so far, the last of these occurring in 687 BC.

And Dr. Velikovsky contemplates this evidence further himself saying,

According to the prophecy of Isaiah ([11:6](#)) [and [65:25](#)], in messianic times to come the lion and the calf would pasture together. But even prophetic vision has not conceived of a reindeer [supposedly] from snow-covered Lapland [Finland] and a hippopotamus [supposedly] from the tropical Congo River [Central Africa] living together on British Isles or in France [though Moses does in [Genesis 1:30](#), and even where this ends in [Gen 9:2-3](#)]. Yet they did leave their bones in the same [often *red*] mud of the same caves, together with bones of other animals, in the strangest assortments.

These animal bones were found in gravel and clay to which Buckland [mistakenly] gave the name diluvium [unknowingly referring to God's work using Mercury instead of Venus].

Buckland was concerned "to establish two important facts, first, that there has been a recent and general inundation of the globe; and, second, that the animals whose remains are found interred in the wreck of that inundation were [- though not necessarily originally -] natives of high north [though not originally 'cold'] latitudes." The presence of tropical animals in northern Europe "cannot be solved by supposing them to migrate periodically... for in the case of crocodiles and tortoises extensive emigration is almost impossible, and not less so to such an unwieldy animal as the hippopotamus when out of the water." But how could they live in the cold of northern Europe? Buckland says: "It is equally difficult to imagine that they could have passed their winters in lakes or rivers frozen up with ice." If cold-blooded land animals are unable to hide themselves in the ground over the winter, in icy climates their blood would freeze solid; they lack the ability to regulate the temperature of their bodies. Like Cuvier, Buckland was "nearly certain that if any change of climate has taken place, it took place suddenly" [p.47].

Of the time the catastrophe occurred, which covered with [oftentimes *red*] mud and pebbles the bones in the Kirkdale cave [maybe twice], Buckland wrote: "From the limited quantity of post-diluvian stalactite [downward pointing, 'dripping', *sediment-filled-water-formed* 'rock spikes'] as well as from the *undecayed condition of the bones*" [*italics* Dr. Velikovsky's - evidently to emphasize their 'violent, fresh burial'], one must deduce that "the time elapsed since the introduction of the [commonly *red*] diluvial mud has not been of excessive length." The bones were not yet fossilized; their organic matter was not yet replaced by minerals. Buckland thought that the time elapsed since a diluvial catastrophe could not have exceeded five or six [or really just four] thousand years, the figure adopted also by De Luc, Dolomieu, and Cuvier, each of whom presented his own reasons.

Then the illustrious geologist added these words: "what [the] cause was, whether a change in the inclination in the earth's axis, or the near approach of a comet, or any other cause or combination of causes purely astronomical [and a pun should be intended here], is a question the discussion of which is foreign to the object of the present memoir."

Yes, virtually all knowledge of the actual '**visits**' of Venus and Mars was, for all scientific purposes, lost or forgotten by the time of The Scientific Revolution that began with The Renaissance, mostly because it was successfully hidden and/or disguised as the ignorant myth of lesser-evolved, little better than 'cavemen'. And yes, I'm telling you that this is an ongoing, though continuously transforming, '**satanic conspiracy**', not simply human oversight.

But the more 'violent action' of *water* generated by Venus is more a topic for next section. Next, and though we're supposed to be done with examining this topic already, we'll consider Dr. Velikovsky's short summary of the development of Uniformitarian Theory, including his explanation of how *scientist* were misdirected to 'take their eye off the ball'—or 'balls', that is. And I mean the ones that are really responsible for the condition of Earth's *crust*. At the beginning of *Chapter III*, in the section entitled, *The Doctrine of Uniformity*, he summarizes,

For over twenty-five years, from the beginning of the French Revolution in 1789 to the Battle of Waterloo in 1815 [when The Scientific Revolution was gaining momentum], Europe was in turmoil. France beheaded her king and queen; many revolutionaries in their turn went to the scaffold too. Spain, Italy, Germany, Austria, and Russia became battlefields. The British Isles were in danger of being invaded, and Britain's fleet fought at Trafalgar the tyrant [Napoleon] who had sprung up from the revolutionary army. After 1815 there was a universal desire for peace and tranquility. The Holy Alliance [also called The Grand Alliance - a coalition of the monarch powers of Russia, Austria and Prussia after the defeat of Napoleon] was organized; Europe sank into reaction, England into a spirit of conservatism. The abortive revolutionary wave of 1830 did not reach the British Isles.

No wonder that in the climate of reaction to the eruptions of revolution and the Napoleonic Wars [that the 'opposite reaction' of] the theory of uniformity became popular and soon dominant in the natural sciences. According to this theory, the development of the surface [or *crust*] of the globe has been going on through all the ages without any disturbances; the process of very slow change that we observe at present has been the only process of importance from the beginning.

This theory, first advanced by Hutton (1795) and Lamarck (1800) [who, being French, is hereafter referred to as 'Miss-sure' Lamarck], was elevated to its present position as a scientific law by Charles Lyell ['Mr. Liar'], a young attorney whose interest in geology was to make him the most influential person in that field, and by Lyell's disciple and friend, Charles Darwin. Darwin built his theory of evolution on Lyell's principle of uniformity. A modern exponent [or interpreter] of the theory of evolution, H. F. Osborn, wrote: "Present continuity implies the improbability of past catastrophism and violence of change either in the lifeless or in the living world; moreover, we seek to interpret the changes and laws of past time through those which we observe at the present time. This was Darwin's secret, learned from Lyell [the 'big fat Liar']" [H. F. Osborn, *The Origin of Evolution of Life* (1917), p.24]. Lyell [- ultimately destined to have much more than just his 'pants on fire' -] built his case with convincing dialectics [read, '**deceiving propaganda**', or '**seemeth-right**', supposedly logical arguments that really are not, but are nonetheless very effectively used by '**professing-themselves-to-be-wise fools**'].

[Uniformitarian Theory presumes that...] Wind and solar heat and rain little by little crumble the rock in the highlands. Rivers carry the detritus [water or ice carried sediment] to the sea. The land is lowered by this process [which, at the present rate, you may remember, would in less than 20 million years result in all land to being 'washed' *underwater*], [but] which [nonetheless somehow] continues for ages [billions of years], until it turns a vast region into detritus. Then the massive earth, as if in a slow breathing process, every phase of which requires eons [or many more millions than just 20 million years], again slowly rises [and somehow even though the *land* is being washed away faster than it "rises"], [and supposedly as slowly] the bottom of the sea subsides, and the crumbling of the rock begins all over again [but again, somehow this happens when this 'rising' and 'subsiding of *land* happens much slower than it takes to

'wash' all *land underwater*]. [And still somehow in this 'mis-imagined' process,] The land comes up in an elevated plateau; the subsequent action of water and wind cuts furrows, and little by little the highland changes into a range of mountain peaks; more eons, [time they don't have,] and the heights crumble too, wind and rain carrying them grain by grain into the sea [again, much, much faster than they supposedly presently 'grow']; the shallow sea encroaches on the land, then slowly retreats. No great catastrophes intervene to change the face of the earth. Although sporadic volcanic action occurs, [it must only be] changing the face of the earth [in a way that is only] comparable in importance to that of rivers, wind, and waves of the sea.

What causes the eon-long process of elevation and subsidence has not been determined [except by Dr. Velikovsky - the "causes" being Mercury, Venus, and Mars - and except it did not take "eons"]. Naturalists of the eighteenth century claimed to have observed a minute gradual change in the level of the Gulf of Bothnia in the Baltic Sea in relation to the coast line. Similar processes in past geological ages must have brought about all the changes on the earth; the majestic mountains that rose and others that were leveled, the seacoast that moved in a slow rhythm back and forth, and the earth mantle that was redistributed by rain and wind. According to the theory of uniformity, no process took place in the past that is not taking place at present; and not only the nature but also the [present] intensity of physical phenomena of our age are [the only] criteria of what could have happened in the past.

Since the theory of uniformity is still taught in all places of learning [even to some extent to this day], and to question it is heresy [or otherwise start a 'turf war'—kind of like the worship of Mars over Venus did], it is pertinent to reproduce here some of ['Mr. Pants-On-Fire'] Lyell's original statements, made in his *Principles of Geology*; they served as a [*materialist-atheist*] manifesto or credo for all his followers, whether called uniformist or evolutionists.

['Mr. Flaming-leotards'] Lyell wrote:

"It has been truly observed that when we arrange the known fossiliferous formations in chronological order, they constitute a broken and defective series... we pass, without any intermediate gradations from systems of strata which are horizontal ['laid' by The First Visit of Mercury and later 'less displaced' by The Visits of Venus and Mars], to other systems which are highly inclined ['laid' by Mercury and 'more displaced' by Venus and/or Mars]—from rocks of peculiar mineral composition to others which have a character wholly distinct—from one assemblage of organic remains to another, in which frequently nearly all the species, and a large part of the genera, are different. These violations of continuity are so common as to constitute in most regions the rule rather than the exception, and they have been considered by many geologist as conclusive in favour of sudden revolutions in the inanimate and animate world". [Sir Charles Lyell, *Principles of Geology* (12th Ed., 1875). Vol. I, p.298.]

Thus he acknowledged that the surface of the globe has the appearance of having been subjected to great and violent sudden

changes, but he believed [or conspired] that the record is incomplete and that the major part of the evidence is lost. "In the solid framework of the globe we have a chronological chain of natural records, many links of which are wanting" [p.299]. To make this plausible [yes, using a misleading "dialectic"], ['Chuck the Liar'] Lyell cited an example from human affairs. If a census were taken every year in sixty provinces, changes in the population would appear to be gradual; but if the census were taken every year in a different province, and in only one, the change in the population of each province between the visits by the census takers at sixty-year intervals would be very great. ['Loathable'] Lyell maintained that this was the way geological deposits were made

The theory of uniformity, or of gradual changes in the past measured by the extent of changes observed in the present, has, as ['Licentious'] Lyell admitted, not positive evidence in the incomplete record of the earth's crust; consequently the theory, building on *argumentum ex silentio*, or argument by default, required further analogies. [Yeah, more dialectics, which in this case are worse than '**propaganda**', that is, they are better described as subterfuge.]

"Suppose we have discovered two buried cities at the foot of Vesuvius, immediately superimposed upon each other with a great mass of tuff [- a mix of *lava*, *ash* and *sedimentary rock* -] and lava intervening... And antiquary [*archeologists*] might possibly be entitled to infer, from the inscriptions on public edifices, that the inhabitants of the inferior and older city were Greeks, and those of the modern town Italians. But he would reason very hastily if he also concluded from these data, that there had been a sudden change from the Greek to the Italian language in Campania. But if he afterwards found three buried cities, one above the other, the intermediate one, being Roman... he would then perceive the fallacy of his former opinion, and would begin to suspect that the catastrophes, by which the cities were inhumed, might have no relation whatever to the fluctuations in the language of the inhabitants; and that, as the Roman tongue had evidently intervened between the Greek and Italian, so many other dialects have been spoken in succession, and the passage from the Greek to the Italian may have been very gradual..." [p.316].

This often-reprinted passage is an unfortunate example, for, in order to prove that there had been no violent changes, ['Lecherous'] Lyell chose to present a picture of violent catastrophes; the strata are separated by layers of lava. This is also the picture presented in so many geological surveys. To use this example as a proof of uniformity is a flight of dialectics [read, **deceit**].

The comparison is followed by an accusation that is all the more vigorous because of the inadequacy of the example which is called on to substitute for geological evidence. ['Loopy'] Lyell said:

"It appeared clear that the earlier geologist had not only a scanty acquaintance with existing changes [caused by *wind*, *flowing water*, etc.], but were singularly unconscious of the amount of their ignorance. With the

presumption naturally inspired by this unconsciousness, they had no hesitation in deciding at once that time could never enable the existing powers of nature to work out changes of great magnitude, still less such important revolutions as those which are brought to light by geology" [p.317].

Of course he's talking about *catastrophismists* like Baron Georges, the Rev., Dr. Buckland, Professor, Dr. Agassiz, Sir Richard Owen, etc., who by comparison actually made Mr. Lyell's "acquaintance" with the "existing changes" exceptionally "scanty". But he was shameless enough to call these *catastrophismists*, these then unrivaled 'investigators of geology', "ignorant", even "unconscious", and having "presumption". So I am reminded of a few more **words** that go along with such **deceit** as 'Mr. Liar's', including,

...reprobate... unrighteousness... wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; ...envy... debate... malignity... Backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful [Rom 1:28-32](#)

And I could go on. But unfortunately Dr. Velikovsky's report of Mr. Lyell's **deceit** goes on, that is, revealing his further attempts to **subvert**, where he quotes him next as saying,

"Never was there a dogma more calculated to foster indolence, and to blunt the edge of curiosity, than this assumption of the discordance between the ancient and existing causes of change. It produced a state of mind unfavourable in the highest degree to the candid reception of the evidence of those minute but incessant alterations which every part of the earth's surface is undergoing" [p.318].

And at first the tone of this pleading for the then 'unorthodox' Theory of Uniformity was defensive, the position being unsupported by sufficient evidence. But finally, as though a few analogies to human situations were so strong that they could substitute for the defective record of nature, the tone changed and became uncompromising.

"For this reason all theories are rejected which involve the assumption of sudden and violent catastrophes and revolutions of the whole earth, and its inhabitants—theories which are restrained by no reference to existing analogies, and in which a desire is manifested to cut, rather than patiently to untie, the Gordian knot" [- pertaining to Gordius, ancient king of Phrygia, who tied a knot that, according to prophecy, was to be undone only by the person who was to rule Asia, and that was instead cut, rather than untied, evidently as a result of the 'rash impatience' of Alexander the Great] [p.318].

Notwithstanding the strong language employed, the scientific principle which insists that whatever does not occur at the present time had not occurred in the past is a self-imposed limitation. Rather than a principle in science, it is a statute of faith. And ['Laughable'] Lyell ended his famous chapter accordingly, with an appeal for faith and with a precept for believers:

"If he [the student] finally believes in the resemblance of identity of the ancient and present system of terrestrial changes, he will regard every fact collected respecting the causes in diurnal [daily] action as affording him a key to the interpretation of some mystery in the past" [p.319].

And Mr. Lyell means we can have 'faith' that we just have to 'understand' the 'natural geological processes' that are going on today in order to 'understand' anything from the past. But of course Dr. Velikovsky is too kind in his treatment of Sir Charles. The Apostle Paul's **words** from Romans are much more appropriate for him. And unfortunately we will hear from **wicked** Sir Charles again. But now onto the another famous, 'so-called scientist', of that century, also named Charles. Continuing in *Chapter III*, at the start of the section entitled, *Darwin in South America*, Dr. Velikovsky again becomes a biographer, writing,

Charles Darwin, who had previously dropped his medical studies at Edinburgh, upon graduation in theology from Christ College, Cambridge, went in December 1831 as a naturalist on the ship *Beagle*, which sailed around the world on a five-year surveying expedition. Darwin had with him the newly published volume of ['Ludicrous'] Lyell's *Principles of Geology* that became his Bible. On this voyage he wrote his *Journal*, the second edition of which he dedicated to ['Lambastible'] Lyell.

This round-the-world voyage was Darwin's only [read, "scanty"] fieldwork experience in geology and paleontology [that is, compared to Cuvier, Buckland, Agassiz and Owen—and remember it was Sir Owen who did most of the examination of the *fossils* Mr. Darwin collected], and drew on it [- this 'relatively scanty acquaintance' -] his whole life long. He wrote later that these observations served as the "origin of all my views." His observations were made in the Southern Hemisphere and more particularly in South America, a continent that had attracted the attention of naturalists since the exploration travels of Alexander von Humboldt (1700-1804) [that renowned Prussian 'romantic' *naturalist—deist, materialist, or maybe just atheist—*mentioned last section]. Darwin was impressed by the numerous assemblages of fossils of extinct animals, mostly of much greater size than species now living [indicating they were Pre-Flood or Early Post-Flood]; these fossils spoke of a flourishing fauna [*animal life*] that suddenly came to its end in a recent geological age [or about 4400 years ago with The 1st Visit of Mercury that brought The Flood, and/or about 3300 years ago with The Visits of Venus at The Exodus and on Joshua's Day in the Sun]. He wrote under January 9, 1834, in the *Journal* of his voyage:

"It is impossible to reflect on the changed state of the American continent without the deepest astonishment. Formerly it must have swarmed with great monsters [that is, with 'cosmic-radiation-shielded', 'atmospherically-enhanced', 'longer-living-and-growing' **creatures**, as well as with the ones only newly no longer so protected that became nearly as 'monstrous' too]: [but] now we find mere pigmies [that is, because of the 'cosmic-radiation-exposed', 'atmospherically-deprived', relatively 'short-living-and-growing' **creatures** of the present], [and that is,] compared with the antecedent [or compared to the Pre-Flood and Early Post-Flood, 'monstrous'], allied races"

He proceeded thus: "The greater number, if not all, of these extinct quadrupeds lived at a late [recent] period, and were the contemporaries of most of the existing sea-shells. Since they lived, no very great changes in the form of the land can have taken place [being so "recent"—or so he kept telling himself contrary to the evidence before him]. What, then, has exterminated so many species and whole genera? The mind at first is irresistibly hurried into the belief of some great catastrophe; but thus to destroy animals, both large and small, in Southern Patagonia [at the southern end of South America], in Brazil, on the Cordillera [which is the highest mountain range] of Peru [and part of the Andes], in North America up to Behring's [or Bering's] Straits, *we must shake the entire framework of the globe* [emphasis Dr. Velikovsky's].

No lesser physical event could have brought about this wholesale destruction, not only in the Americas but in the entire world. And such an event being beyond consideration, Darwin did not know the answer. "It could hardly have been a change of temperature, which at about the same time [Mercury, but later and more noticeably Venus] destroyed the inhabitants of tropical, temperate and arctic latitudes on both sides of the globe."

And such 'universal destruction' actually happened 'most noticeably' 3 times: first when the *water canopy* was brought down by Mercury, where the worldwide *greenhouse environment* ended, and "tropical, temperate and arctic latitudes" formed for the first time, and lots of "monsters", not to mention 'monstrous amounts' of *flora* (*vegetation*), were buried under *sediment* deep in the *ground*; and for the second and third time near a millennium later when, on both The Visits of Venus, Earth's *poles* and *axis* 'radically shifted', again and again, each time creating new "tropical, temperate and arctic latitudes", and each time 'pulling up' or 'pulling higher' today's highest *mountain ranges*, the highest of them 'immediately forming' on the lines of the closest points 'she' passed over on the surface of the Earth, and by *conflagration* and 'extensive and violent' *continental inundation, buried*, though much more 'shallowly', the often 'shattered' *bones* of many 'decreasingly-large monsters', etc., in *sediment*, but also in *lava* and/or *ash*.

Imagining much more simply how these *animals* could have died, deductions are made.

Certainly it could not have been man in the role of the destroyer; and were he to attack all large animals, would he also be the cause of extinction "of the many fossil mice and other small quadrupeds?" Darwin asked.

"No one will imagine that a drought... could destroy every individual of every species from Southern Patagonia to Behring's Straits. What shall we say of the extinction of the horse? Did those plains fail of pasture, which have since been overrun by thousands and hundreds of thousands of the descendants of the stock introduced by the Spaniards?" Darwin concluded: "Certainly, no fact in the long history of the world is so startling as the wide and repeated exterminations of its inhabitants" [Charles Darwin, *Journal of Researches into the Natural History and Geology of*

the Countries Visited During the Voyage of H.M.S. Beagle Round the World, under date of January 9, 1834].

So really, Mr. Darwin's 'once-around-the-world' was enough to convince him of the reality of recently past, 'shake-the-entire-framework-of-the-globe-level', "great catastrophes", but he was evidently ultimately swayed to ignore much of his 'limited experiences' with this reality and believe instead fantasy, evidently because of the "dialectics" (read, **lies**) found in his personal 'Bible' written by 'Mr. Liar'. And so he explained away all the apparently "sudden" mass extinction and presently 'downsized' **creatures** by Natural Selection and Survival of the Fittest. And indeed the survivors of all God's **great judgments** are 'naturally selected' by Him, not having been instead 'targeted' by Him, making them indeed also 'best fit to survive', huh. I mean if the hairs on your head are numbered by God, and not a single **sparrow** dies without Him knowing (e.g., [Luke 12:6-7](#)), do you think He ever 'accidentally' killed anything—or let anything be killed—before the time He intended, ever? If not, you've gotten to know Him a little better. Uh-huh.

However I should also reemphasize here that Dr. Velikovsky refers to Mr. Darwin's observations, that seem to imply a single 'earth-shaking' cause of "great catastrophe", saying, "No lesser physical event could have brought about this wholesale destruction..." So to be clear, the "event" of "great catastrophe" both Dr. Velikovsky and Mr. Darwin refer to above could not have been just one "event", but again, most prominently at least 3 or more, including The Visits of Mercury and Venus, and to a lesser extent The Visits of Mars too. Mars, by-the-way, though closer in size to Mercury and therefore not as much of a 'mountain-maker' as Venus, which is nearly the size of the Earth, was able, at least on a couple of occasions, to significantly shift Earth's axis, and thereby significantly and repeatedly shift Earth's "tropical, temperate and arctic latitudes" too.

So though Mr. Darwin's "deep astonishment" about a land that must have "swarmed with great monsters", "mostly of much greater size than species now living", and covered with "flourishing fauna [*animal life*] that suddenly came to its end in a recent geological age", must be to a large extent the result of the work of Mercury and The Flood, his explorations in the Cordillera of Peru, for example, a section of the Andes Mountain Range, that was evidently raised, like all the highest *mountain ranges* on Earth, in no more than a few days—that is, during repeated 'passings' or 'orbits' of Earth by Venus—actually reveal how Venus 'greatly displaced' much of Mercury's work, and more 'shallowly buried' some more 'decreasingly-large monsters' in the process, all of which I trust you will better **understand** as we **continue**.

We move on from here, in our 'Mercury Round' in *Earth in Upheaval*, to *Chapter VII*, entitled, *DESERTS AND OCEANS*, where we will again, in order to better focus on what Mercury did, unavoidably have to look at evidence that was later 'contaminated' by Venus and Mars. We continue with Dr. Velikovsky's analysis at the beginning of this chapter's first section entitled, *The Sahara...*

The Sahara Desert, which stretches from the Nile to the Atlantic Ocean across the continent of Africa and covers 3,500,000 square miles, about the area of all of Europe, is the greatest desert on earth. What is now the desert of Sahara was an open grassland or steppe in earlier days.

Drawings on the rock of herds of cattle, made by [Post-Mercury, Pre-Venus-Visits] early dwellers in this region, were discovered by Barth in 1850.

Since then many more drawings have been found. The animals depicted

no longer inhabit these regions, and many are generally [or supposedly] extinct. It is asserted that the Sahara once had a large human population [and it surely did both before The Flood, and before The 1st Visit of Venus] that lived in vast green forests and on fat pasture lands. Neolithic* implements, vessels and weapons made of polished stone, were found close to the drawings. [*Neolithic means 'new rock', which in this case is most likely the Post-Venus period—associated by *evolutionists* with *rock* that supposedly 'formed' at the end of their 'mis-imagined' "Stone Age", near the supposed 'beginning of agriculture'—but of course *agriculture* 'began' repeatedly because of Mercury, Venus and Mars, and the so-called 'beginning' that would be the most 'detectable' would be sometime after The Visits of Venus]. Such drawings and implements were discovered in the eastern as well as the western Sahara. Men lived in these "densely populated" regions [- again, I'm thinking mostly Post-Mercury, Pre-Venus,] and cattle pastured where today enormous expanses of sand stretch for thousands of miles.

Several theories have been offered to explain the prodigious quantity of sand in the Sahara. "The theory of marine origin is now no longer tenable" [*"Sahara," Encyclopedia Britannica* (14th Ed.), Vol. XIX]. The sand, it was found, is of recent origin. It is assumed that when a large part of Europe was under ice the Sahara was in a warm and moist temperature zone [or in a *tropical* or *subtropical* zone until Mercury and later Venus, with various 'pushes' or 'pulls', finally 'spun it' closer toward the Equator]; [so that] later the soil lost its moisture and the [*exposed, lightest, 'Flood-laid', surface sedimentary*] rock crumbled to sand when left to the mercy of the sun and the wind.

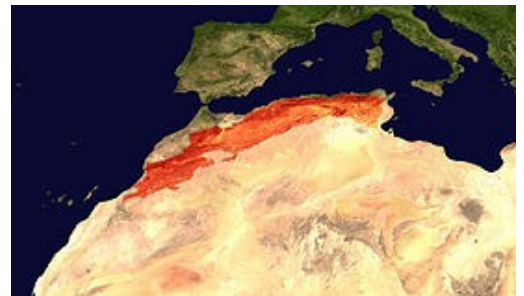
How long ago was it that conditions in the Sahara were suitable for human occupation? [Prof. Franz Karl] Movers, the noted Orientalist [- generally, a studier of the peoples, etc., east of Europe to the Pacific Ocean,] of the last century, author of a large work on the Phoenicians, decided that the drawing in the Sahara were the work of the Phoenicians [L. Frobenius and Douglas C. Fox, *Prehistoric Rock Pictures in Europe and Africa*, Museum of Modern Art, 1937, p.38]. It was likewise observed that on the drawings discovered by Barth the cattle wore discs between their horns, just as the Egyptian drawings [p.39-40, in such cases indicating Post-Venus herds]. Also, the Egyptians god Set [?] was found pictured on the rocks. And there are rock painting of war chariots drawn by horses "in an area where these animals could not survive two days without extraordinary precautions" [P. Le Cler, *Sahara*, 1954, p.46].

The extinct animals in the drawings suggest [to *evolutionists*] that these pictures were made sometime during the Ice Age; but the Egyptian motifs in the very same drawings suggest that they were made in historical times. [And though here Dr. Velikovsky seems much too conservative in his conclusions, it is reasonable because he knows he's 'messing with' - or 'on' - very well defended evolutionary 'turf'.]

The conflict between the historical and the paleontological evidence, and of both of them with the geological evidence, is resolved if one or more catastrophes intervened. It appears that a large part of the region was occupied by an inland [likely Post-Mercury] lake, known to the ancients as Lake Triton [- symbolic of Neptune-Poseidon, the sea god, and likely indicating that

Mercury 'created' it]. In a stupendous catastrophe the lake emptied itself into the Atlantic, and the sand on its bottom and shores left behind [- being *sediment* of The Flood], forming a desert when the tectonic movements [- the 'wrenching' and *melting* of much of Earth' *crust*] sealed off the springs that fed the lake. [Venus could have done both: thrown the *water* out and *melted* the *ground* to 'seal off' *springs*, and evidently this more commonly happened alongside 'her' paths over Earth's *crust*, where 'she' tended to create *deserts* instead of *mountains*, not to mention *rifts* and *valleys*.] [So...] The "land of pastures and forest" became a desert of sand; hippopotami that live in water and elephants disappeared [though likely in this case were 'flung', along with this *water*, more northward than westward, evidently as far as England], and with them also the hunter and farmer.

The French savant [- **professing...to be** ['really'] **wise**,] A. Berthelot says: "It is possible that Stone Age man witnessed in Africa three notable [all likely 'Venus-caused'] events: [1] the sinking of the Spanish-Atlas chain that opened the Strait of Gibraltar [and filled the Mediterranean Sea] and created a [shallow] junction [regulating] between the Mediterranean and the Ocean; [2] the collapse that cut off the Canary Islands from the African Continent [along with the sinking of Atlantis too?]; [3] the opening of the Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb, separating Arabia from Ethiopia" [and filling the Red Sea - yes, obviously initially colored 'red' by Venus] [A. Berthelot, *L'Afrique saharienne et soudanaise*, 1927, p.85]. Berthelot, however, ascribed these great tectonic changes to the time of prehistoric man and Abbé Breuil actually showed that prehistoric man already occupied these regions as the Eolithic or very crudely chipped stone artifacts indicate [- when people were forced into caves or to other regions because of The 1st and/or 2nd Visits of Venus]. But at a later date [and surely earlier too - before The 1st Visit of Venus,] people of advanced culture, contemporary with pharaonic Egypt, lived in communities, pastured their cattle [like **the cattle of Israel**] and left their tools and drawings there. Then in an upheaval, of which many traditions persist in classic literature, the **Atlas Mountains** were torn apart [or just 'raised', which evidently also formed the **Canary Islands** off Africa's new northwest coast], [while] the great lake ["Triton"] was emptied [likely mostly northward], and the watery region became the great and awesome desert—the Sahara [south of the Atlas Mountains, which evidently were 'abruptly shifted', along with the rest of the *hemisphere*, northward, except those parts shifting southward both out of and into this new *hemisphere*, and except that the orientations I'm describing here may be 'flipped', but where in this case this *mountain range* settled in the newly placed "tropical latitudes", and likely as a result of The 10th Plague Judgment, and/or Joshua's Prolonged Day - map, p.17].



And no, all my 'clarifications' added to Dr. Velikovsky's analysis do not really even begin to clear things up. But here's a little more clarification. *Evolutionists* confuse the time when 'cavemen' used 'crude' to increasingly 'refined' *stone tools* with the 'earliest civilizations'. But such *tools* are not evidence of that. They are instead evidence of times when men were 'chased into caves', or to other *regions* to escape *lava* or *inundation*, or even to escape *elevation*, being forced to leave

behind everything, and start over with nothing, maybe twice, that is, because of the World *cataclysms* brought by Venus. And since what was *buried* by Mercury's Flood was generally *buried* more deeply, and likely involved the largest *lifeforms* in general, this internment is most often not as near the surface as what was later more 'shallowly' *buried* by the '**sloshing of water**' across *continents* as a result of the '**axis-shifting**' caused by Venus.

And surely Noah brought most of his superior *tools* with him, as well as the knowledge of how to make them, and taught this superior knowledge that his generation possessed to his progeny, who, by-the-way, were still significantly 'longer-living' and therefore 'larger-brained' even a few generations after The Flood. So no one at that time would have lived like 'ignorant primitive cavemen', not until after the 'two-horned' Comet Venus arrived, and then only because of dire necessity, precaution, and fear of what else might fall from the sky.

So it must have been before the time of The Visits of Venus that the Sahara region, for example, was in a more "moderate", likely *subtropical latitude*, and had a "great lake" called "Triton" that was probably formed by The 1st Visit of Mercury, until it was '**sloshed**' northward, and/or 'boiled away', possibly in either a one or two step process—*hippopotami* and all—settling in the new *tropical latitudes*, ultimately becoming a *desert*—the *hippopotami*, etc., however, 'settling' as far north as England or farther, and all by one or both of The Visits of Venus. Yes, evidently sometime after The Visits of Venus the Sahara became the *desert* that it is today, yet there are pictures of Egyptian cattle that must have grazed there after the Egyptians began **worshipping** Venus, because the cattle have "discs between their horns", this being a clear symbol of the worship of Venus—or Isis—that began after 'her' passings, 'she' apparently being seen as a *comet* with two *tails*, which by the Egyptians, and the Indians of Southern Asia, for examples, were evidently assumed to be 'two horns on a bull's head', though more likely this 'assumption' originated by '**a lie of the devil**', as part of **his own** 'power play' to steal the **worship** of as many as **he** could. But we will **continue** to **see**, concerning the work of such **principalities and powers**, how that by God they have been, are, and will be all...

...spoiled... [since He has] **made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.**

And indeed God has **made a shew of them openly**, even in this, though we'll need the rest of this **study** to make this as clear as I can.

In the next section, *Arabia*, Dr. Velikovsky tells a similar story...

There is a "certainty beyond challenge that when the icecap of the last Glacial period covered a large part of the northern hemisphere [in this case more likely involving the work of both Venus and Mars], at least three great rivers flowed from west to east across the whole width of the [Arabian] Peninsula." So wrote Philby in his book, *Arabia* [1930, p.xv]. There was also a large lake in Arabia that disappeared in some geological or climatal change [C.P. Grant, *The Syrian Desert*, 1937, p.53].

At present, from Palmyra to Mecca and beyond, the Arabian Peninsula is a waterless desert, interspersed with volcanoes active not so long ago, but now extinct, the last eruption having taken place in 1253 [B. Moritz, *Arabien, Studien zur physikalischen und historischen Geographie des Landes* [*Arabia, Studies in the Physical and Historical Geography of the Country*],

1923]. There were also, sometime in the past, numerous geysers all likewise extinct now.

So apparently *geysers* were, and in other places still are, the result of *subterranean water* becoming *heated* and *expanded*, but also to some extent 'contained' *underground* under *volcanic or igneous rock shields*, where occasionally and/or regularly this *pressurized water* 'finds' a limited number of available *vents* through which to 'bursts out of the ground', this *volcanic or igneous rock* evidently being formed from *solidified liquid rock*, and that is, when *magma* (underground) or *lava* (above ground) *cooled* and *solidified* into *igneous rock*, covering, or 'sealing', or *shielding* vast areas, and where such *vents* are evidence that these *igneous rock shields* have been 'breached' by *underground water*, or by other means that nonetheless allow this *underground water* to 'escape to the surface'. But apparently *geysers* may eventually become "extinct", and that is, apparently when they finally release enough of the *water* and *pressure* that such *shields* had otherwise kept 'contained' *underground*.

And we have more to say about these vast *volcanic or igneous rock shields* shortly. But next Dr. Velikovsky offers evidence that, at least sometimes, there were also evidently *meteors* and *meteorites* associated with the process of the making these *shields*. Dr. Velikovsky observes,

Twenty-eight fields of burned and broken stones, called harras, are found in Arabia, mostly in the western half of the great desert [which is evidently part of what directed the Amalekites further south to conquer Egypt at the Exodus, by-the-way]. Some single fields are one hundred miles in diameter and occupy an area of six or seven thousand square miles, stone lying close to stone, so densely packed that passage through the field is almost impossible. The stones are sharp-edged and scorched black. No volcanic eruption could have cast scorched stones over fields as large as the harras; neither would the stones from volcanoes have been so evenly spread. The absence, in most cases, of lava—the stones lie free—also speaks against a volcanic origin of the stones.

It appears that the blackened and broken stones of the harras indicate that the trains of meteorites were very large and can be classed as comets. Despite alternate exposure to the thermal action of the hot desert sun and the cool desert night, the sharp edges of the stones have been preserved, which shows that they fell in a not too distant period of time. Following the procedure adopted in this book, literary references to the harras of Arabia in ancient Hebrew and Arabic literatures will not be dealt with here

AWWWWW!!!! But it's OK. There's more than enough of this kind of evidence in *Worlds in Collision*. And by-the-way, and for some examples, and if you're 'sharp' too, you should now be **able** to better **understand** verses like [Job 41:30](#), [Psalm 7:13](#) and [18:14](#), and that is, that some *meteorites* are naturally especially "sharp", like *arrowheads*, or *spearheads*, and sometimes not just like **arrows**, nor just 'smart weapons', but like an **overflowing rain**, and that would be of **great hailstones**, **fire** and/or **brimstone** 'bombs' (e.g. [Eze 38:22](#)), or they may be—or will be—as big as **a great mountain burning with fire** too ([Rev 8:8](#)), but all of which, according to God, **he ordaineth** to hit their targets. Or as Dr. Velikovsky further considers

and explains,

Meteorites that fall on the earth are of two kinds. One consists of iron with an admixture of nickel; by means of this admixture and the characteristic pattern seen in the cut surface of such stones, their meteoric origin can be easily established [that is, that they really are *meteorites*]. The other group, probably larger than the first, does not differ in the composition from the rocks of the earth and cannot be distinguished unless the fall has been observed, or, as in the case of the stones of the harras, their scorched and broken condition, together with their occurrence in large fields, speak for their extraterrestrial origin.

Larger bodies than the stones of the harras fell on Arabia, too. In Wobar in the desert there is a meteoric crater with meteoric iron and silica glass spread around it [R. Schwinner, *Physikal-ische Geologie*, 1936, Vol. I, P. 114, 163; L. J. Spencer, "*Meteoric Iron and Silica Glass from the Craters of Henbury [Central Australia] and Wobar [Arabia]*", *Mineralogical Magazine*, XXIII, 1933, 387-404].

Large rivers that disappeared, numerous volcanoes that burned and were extinguished, blackened stones that fell in areas each of them a hundred times larger than any volcanic eruption could have covered, and meteoric iron spread around a large crater—all of these bespeak great upheavals in nature in recent as well as earlier ages, to which the vast peninsula of Arabia was more than once subjected [- though all this really only happened in "recent...ages", because there 'ain't no such thing' as any "earlier ages" of which Dr. Velikovsky spoke of here].

In the southern part of the great Arabian desert, ancient ruins, almost entirely obliterated by time and the elements, and vestiges of cultivation are silent witnesses of the time when the land there was hospitable and fruitful; it [- this Post-Flood, Pre-Exodus land,] was as copiously watered and luxuriously forested as India on the same latitude. Orchards covered Hadhramaut and Aden. It was a land of plenty, paradise on earth, but following a sudden catastrophe, Arabia Felix [or Eastern Arabia] turned to a barren land. Arabia Petraea, the western part of the desert, is a dusty rock of lava that is broken by the Great Rift with the Dead Sea, an inner lake, on its bottom. [And that is, the water of the Dead Sea fills the lowest elevations of this "Great Rift", to well *below sea level*, as you should remember.] Sulphurous springs flow into it, and asphalt [or *tar*] rises from its floor and floats on it.

Like the Sahara and Arabian deserts, other great deserts of the world disclose the fact that they were inhabited and cultivated sometime in the past. On the Tibetan plateau and in the Gobi Desert remains of early prosperous civilizations were found with occasional ruins surviving from those times when the great barren tracts were cultivated. In the Gobi Desert, as in the Arabian and Sahara deserts, the impression is gained that in a tectonic disturbance the subterranean water dropped [and/or was *flash-boiled* away] to a great depth, [such that] the [remaining] sources [of water] became sealed [or *shielded below ground*], and the rivers died up completely. Some [or such]

changes in ground structure or in ground currents [can] also affect the clouds, which pass over such lands without unburdening themselves [of the *water* they carry].

Yes, in the Post-Flood World, before Venus came along and made all those vast, 'groundwater-sealing', *volcanic* or *igneous rock shields*, there weren't any *deserts*, at least not the now prevailing 'Venus-class' *deserts*, like the Sahara, the Gobi, etc., but instead there were "inhabited and cultivated... prosperous civilizations" everywhere, including where the *deserts* are now, And yes, after The Visits of Venus, because of all the Earth's *crust* 'she' ***melted***, vast *shields* of *igneous rock* naturally formed in all latitudes that resulted in vast *deserts*, except in the Arctic or under *oceans* or other *water*, including '***axis-shift-sloshed water***'.

And yes, before Venus came along there must have been relatively 'thin' *icecaps* in the Arctic latitudes, and probably no *glaciers* to speak of either, again, at least not the now prevailing 'Venus-class' *glaciers*, the ones that formed, or were added to, immediately following 'her visits' —these much 'thicker' and 'wider' *icecaps* and *glaciers* the result of a lot more *heating* of the Earth's *crust*, and therefore a lot more *water* being *boiled* into the *atmosphere*, and ending up over the Arctic, and then *freezing* and accumulating there. And this apparently happened a couple of times, creating 4 new *arctic regions*, only 2 at a time, as well as various new high, or higher, *mountain ranges*. And by-the-way, are you trying to count the Ice Ages yet?

And can you ***see*** it yet, that, largely because of these *igneous rock shields*, such formidable classes of *icecaps*, *glaciers* and *deserts* exist today, and still cover vast regions, and in all latitudes, that is, since the time of The Visits of Venus? But there is something you should now be ***able*** to ***see*** even beyond that, that evidently such *shielding* is the 'natural' and 'common' result of God's ***great judgments***, that is, when God...

...is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate [Jer 4:7](#),

and that is when...

...the Lord from his holy temple... cometh forth out of his place... [Mic 1:2](#),

and that is for His ***purpose*** to...

...make the land...utterly waste and desolate... (e.g. [Eze 29:10](#); [30:12](#); [38:8](#); [Isa 24](#)),

though you should also ***understand*** that He gets 'definably similar' results with 'conquering armies' and other 'facets' of His ***great judgments*** too (e.g. [Lev 26:33](#); [Eze 6:3-6](#); [Isa 24](#)).

And surely a future time still ***cometh***—that is, ***the day of the LORD***—when He ***cometh forth out of his place***, and in the process ***will make*** new—or add to the existing—*shields*, and this being just part of the way He will ***accomplish*** His ***purpose***, again...

...to lay the land desolate... [and] ***destroy the whole land*** [Isa 13](#),

but in this case, only...

...yet once more [Heb 12:26-27](#),

and where as part of this final...

...destruction from the Almighty [Isa 13:6](#),

old **waste and...desolate places** will become **places** where the **people...**

...shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them [Isa 65:22-23](#),

but surely also where new **waste and... desolate places** that are presently not *desert* will become so, like, for example, Italy, or at least a significant part of it ([Rev 18:2, 20-24](#)). Of course you should remember that the entire, and likely then significantly enlarged Pacific Ocean, then likely covering about half the planet, with **every island** that was in it then submerged, will be a “dead zone” too ([Rev 16](#)).

But there will be exceptions then too, a new *water canopy* playing a part in that, which will bring an end to *icecaps and other permafrost*, and *tundra*, and even to *snow* (sorry ‘snow lovers’), but instead may come with more permanently *inundated land*, which would arguable be, at least in some ways, really no less **waste** and **desolate** than *desert*, except that in time evidently all such...

...waters...shall be healed ([Eze 47:9](#), except for **the miry places** [Verse 11](#)).

And though you should also expect that after this...

...great and the terrible day of the LORD [does] **come** [Joel 2:11, 31](#),

when there will be plenty of *shielding* of the Earth’s crust under *regions* that are not inundated too, that after that coming final...

...great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth [Rev 16:18-21](#),

that will **‘shake every island underwater’**, and probably most *coastlands* too, and **‘shake every mountain and valley flat’**—except some *mountains* in Israel—and that is, **‘shake everything to pieces’** ([Rev 16](#) and [Isa 40:4](#)), water should much more easily ‘breach’ such shields, at least in more cases, because such ‘pulverized’ *shields* should thereafter not as readily cause *deserts* to form, and so much so that ‘Venus-class’ *deserts* may be no more.

And we can expect that along with the return of the *water canopy* there will also be the return of an enhanced *global greenhouse effect*, which will mean the end of ‘cold air’, at least any *cold* enough to *freeze* whatever is *precipitated*, which would stop *permafrost* from ever forming again, as well as eliminate the possibility that such *ice* could accumulate on *steep slopes* and *flow* as *glaciers*—since neither *ice* nor any *arctic* or ‘sufficiently elevated’ *steep slopes* will then anymore exist—and even ending the possibility that there could be *severely dry regions*, since, though there may no longer be **rain**, about this future time too it will likely again be true to say that...

...a mist from the earth [went up], and watered the whole face of the ground [Gen 2:6](#),

all of which we’ll consider further along the way, and especially in the last couple sections.

But even now there are some ‘mostly’ *shielded* regions that are not *deserts* because there are *geysers*, and/or enough *underground water* is able to ‘squeeze though’ to the surface, even finally forming and supplying large *lakes*

above ground. And this happens in places where the *pressure* underneath is sufficient enough, and under 'thin-enough' *shields* of *igneous rock*, to 'force its way through'. Or maybe such *water* is 'broken through', even through some of the 'thicker' *shields*, by other means, and that is, for example, like when 'cracked open' from above by a *visit* from Mars.

Or maybe—I'm just imagining—if someone just had a 'big stick', or call it a *rod*, **and with his rod he smote the rock...** Well, I *believe* that on at least one such occasion **the water came out abundantly**. In fact, it **gushed out**. Of course you'd expect there must have been some '**divine guidance**' involved in 'breaking out' this *water*, and maybe some '**abracadabra**'. But whether this *provision* by God was provided entirely '**supernaturally**' at the time, or it was instead 'long-before' more '**naturally provided**', though in either case both **ordained** and **predestinated**—including the *use* of that '**divinely-guided**' *rod*—it is nonetheless a *miracle*. And if entirely '**long before naturally provided**', by-the-way, it is arguably much more awesome, but not really any less so if it's instead some combination of the two—though I *hear* such **exploits**, especially when there is any interference with such '**predestination**'—and again, at least on one occasion—can ultimately lead to a really long hike up a 'Mercury-class' *mountain*, if you know what I mean. And we'll talk more about such '**divine guidance**' along the way too.

And whatever the case, if somehow enough *water* 'breaches' the *shielding*, this can inhibit the formation of a *desert*, that is, especially if there is enough *water* 'escaping to the surface' to keep *aboveground lakes* filled, and *rivers* flowing from them. However if there is not enough *water* surfacing for at least *seasonal overflow*, we may just be talking about an *oasis*. And by the way, there is a map of Earth's major *igneous rock shields* we'll get to later in this section (p.98). But you should understand that though they are mapped as existing everywhere, they include types formed with just *magma*, just *lava*, or both, with those formed by just *magma* being by definition formed entirely *underground*, and those formed by just *lava* by definition formed entirely *above-ground*—though possible shortly thereafter covered with '**sloshed**' *water* and/or *sediment*—and those formed with both *magma* and *lava* being both *below* and *aboveground formations*, though a later *water* and/or *sediment* 'topping' is again possible. And yes, when *lava* is involved we may be talking *inundating seas* of it, and that is, especially if Venus is involved.

But sometimes *lava* isn't just *erupted* from *volcano tops* and *sides*. Sometimes, because there is so much *magma* just beneath the surface, the surface begins to *melt* too, and any *water* above it, to *boil*, where by definition that *melted rock*, having in this way reached the surface, and whatever kind of *rock* it is, is redefined from *magma* to *lava*. But whether remaining *underground* and staying *magma*, or reaching the surface to become *lava*—and though debates about all these definitions surely arise—this **melted rock** often eventually cools to form *volcanic* or *igneous rock*, and if enough of it, a *volcanic* or *igneous rock shield* is formed, where certainly all the largest ones, covering significant parts of *continents*, were formed during our 'close encounters' with Venus.

And as concerning The Visits of Venus the psalmist sings,

The hills melted like wax at the presence of the LORD, at the presence of the Lord of the whole earth [Psa 97:5](#),

as must generally happen, and that is, in all God's more '**naturally administered**' **great judgments**. I mean surely even during The Flood,

He maketh the deep [oceans and seas] **to boil** [Job 41:31](#),

to some extent then too—and as the Prophet Nahum proclaims,

The mountains quake at him, and the hills melt, and the earth is burned at his presence, yea, the world, and all that dwell therein [Nah 1:5](#),

and as concerning Mars, but more “the coming red planet”, as the Prophet Micah says,

Hear, all ye people; hearken, O earth, and all that therein is: and let the Lord GOD be witness against you, the Lord from his holy temple. For, behold, the LORD cometh forth out of his place, and will come down, and tread upon the high places of the earth. And the mountains shall be molten under him, and the valleys shall be cleft, as [melted] wax before the fire, and as the waters that are poured down a steep place [and that is, ‘sloshed across the land’] [Mic 1:2-4](#),

and surely as speaking ‘across’ God’s 7,000-year Week of Creation, and that is, as in all God’s more ‘**naturally administered’ great judgment** upon the Earth, as the Prophet Amos says,

And the Lord GOD of hosts is he that toucheth the land, and it shall melt, and all that dwell therein shall mourn: and it shall rise up wholly like a flood; and shall be drowned, as by the flood of Egypt [Amos 9:5](#), (though the ‘across The Week’ context is best seen in the entire chapter and book),

and as in God’s still **coming ‘naturally administered’ great judgments**, but in this case including both Mars and “the coming red planet”, as the Prophet Amos also says,

Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed; and the mountains shall drop sweet wine, and all the hills shall melt... [Amos 9:13](#),

and even just about “the coming red planet”, as the Apostle Peter reveals in his **revelation**,

...the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up...

Ye therefore... ought... to be...

Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God [- that is, **giving all diligence to run, press, strive and fight to work while it is still day**], [this **coming... day of God** being] ***wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved*** [and lots of *atmospheric gases* are **burned up**], ***and the [ground] elements shall melt*** [and **boil**] ***with fervent heat*** [2 Pe 3:10-12](#).

And no, and whether Peter actually saw this clearly then or not, this does not happen at the end of The Millennium at the **great white throne**, when God **sat on it**, and...

...from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away [Rev 20:11](#),

or ‘vanishes’, because, as described there, it simply ‘disappeared’, that is, it **fled away to no place**, where clearly then the Old Earth doesn’t in any way get **burned up** or **melt with fervent heat**. And I mean I **see** the ‘**firebomb**’ that destroys all the armies surrounding Israel in The Last Rebellion as more a ‘shaped charge’ and therefore as a relatively ‘**small judgment**’, or as the least of the **great judgments**, and that is, one that just destroys those armies ([Rev 20:7-9](#)). So I see Peter’s descriptions of the ‘**last great judgment**’, where the **elements shall melt** and **the earth...shall be burned up**, as applying to The Great Tribulation a millennium before.

And about ‘what Peter knew’ and ‘when he knew it’ I just mean that at whatever ‘point’ any of us reach, we will **for ever** be **able** to ‘**correct, improve and expand**’ that ‘**perspective**’, as the Apostle Peter will. And yes, we’ll get to more of all this—some still coming—**dissolving, melting** and **boiling** all along the way too. And it will take most the rest of the **study** before you really start to **understand** what Dr. Velikovsky and I—and God—are trying to ‘**introduce**’ you to here.

But if you’re keeping count you could say that we have lost one of the so-called **great judgments**, leaving only 11. Well, remember that argument I made—call it an explanation—about why I thought the ‘diversification of languages’ at Babel was really purely ‘**abracadabra**’ and not one of God’s ‘**natural great judgments**’, that is, not the kind **administered**, at least mostly, by His **appointed...ordinances of heaven and earth**, and that is, by the ‘**fallout**’ of **the curse**? And next section we’ll look closer at how The 2nd Visit of Mercury was involved primarily with destroying the **tower of Babel**. And if you have been trying to keep count—and I wouldn’t expect you to be **able** to as much on your first times through this **study**, let alone stop compartmentalizing on the subject—so far I have counted this **visit** as one of the now 11 remaining **great judgments**. But like The Last Rebellion, since I **see** this 2nd Visit of Mercury as mostly just ‘targeting’ the **tower**, as we’ll see next section, though nonetheless used by Satan to ‘**deceive the whole world**’ to **worship** him through the ‘worship of Creation’, we could subtract it from our ‘list of great judgments’ too, which would leave just 10.

And though 10 seems like a good number for **great judgments**, I’ve also been hiding something else from you that I too found out along the way, which is that although there were apparently 7 ‘encounters’ with Mars altogether, maybe only 3 of these were of ‘great judgment caliber’, which we will see in the later sections about ‘him’. So yes, that would leave really just 7 of the more **natural**, unquestionably **great judgments**, 7 maybe instead being the number we should be looking for, that is, this number relating to the most ‘complete works’ of God.

By-the-way, though the 7th of these 7 **great judgments** mostly isn’t a time of ‘rest’, we will see that the likely longest, second to last of the 7 parts of the final round could be defined as such. Of course I’m also assuming that all 3 rounds of this **judgment** can be designated as just one of The 7 Great Judgments. But don’t get me—or God—wrong. I don’t mean I’m against God speaking in ‘multiple perspectives’ too. I mean that these **great judgments** may be seen as numbering 7, 10, 12, or many more, depending on how narrowly or broadly you—or He—may define them in any given context, but this will take the rest of this **study** to make His case for.

And maybe you’re already **seeing** the ‘7 pattern’. And beyond that these

prophets together identify **'same yesterday, and to day, and for ever'** characteristics of God's **great judgments**, where **at the presence of the Lord, 1) mountains...quake and melt**, that is, **as wax before the fire**, and **2) He maketh the deep to boil**, and **3) the earth is burned**, or as Dr. Velikovsky identifies it, there is "conflagration", but also **4) wholly like a [flash] flood** many **shall be drowned**, that is, **as the waters that are poured down a steep place** rush across the land, followed by **5) 'an abrupt change of seasons'**—and therefore of the **'phases of farming'**—where **6) rivers**, etc., **drop** or **flow** with a 'sweet red' kind of 'drink', though, as you should expect, othertimes it's a 'whiter' kind, though no less **'honey sweet'**, and sometimes it just accumulates on the ground as either *liquid* or *solid*, and whether it's 'red' or 'white', if you can imagine it, and finally but more generally, by the above and other means, God **will 7) make the land...utterly waste and desolate**. But surely the extent of all this varies by time and place.

Nevertheless, with such a short list you could really only just be starting to imagine such a 'pattern', because there are many more **'same characteristics'** of God's **great judgments** that I could add to this list, though some of them you should already 'know' from the last **study**, except, when it comes to their **'exercised use'**, too many of them may still be compartmentalized in that 'relatively newly', **'spiritually mature' mind of Christ** of yours. Of course compared to God we will all remain **'infinitely spiritually immature' for ever**, huh. But any 'gap' in your relative **'spiritual maturity'** compared to mine you can soon enough close, and that is, even before The Rapture. Otherwise, I mean if you don't, and though you'll eventually **learn** all I **know**, you'll **for ever** 'lag behind'. And if you expect to can catch up with me in just one trip through this and the last **study**, you'll never get close to catching me, because those who will catch me, and **for ever** keep up with me, and I with them, don't just **study**. No, they have also resolved to **commit** to **continue** in their **study** to **'correct, improve and expand'** their **'perspectives'** of **(1) God's works**, and **(2) of Who They is (gic)**, and **(3) of what He counsels**, and all this at neverendingly **higher** and **higher** levels, **for ever**, which means that these **'studies'** must soon become 'nursery school' compared to the **'increasingly' higher** levels of **study** we will **continue** to **ascend for ever** (see, [Psa 24:3](#)). And yes, God will help you to join me, even surpass me, if you only **will**.

And speaking of Peter's need to 'correct his perspective', maybe you also noticed it's time to further **'correct, improve, and expand'**—and certainly better decompartmentalize—mine and yours too. I have spoken so far of God's 'two ways' of **'administering'** His **great judgments**. The first way being by His **'abracadabra creation'**, along with that later **'major abracadabra adjustment'** to it—that is, **the curse**—whereby His **great judgments** thereafter begin to **'naturally fall out'** as He **predestinated**, meaning no **'natural great judgments'** of any kind were initiated before then, since before then the Universe had been **created** to last **for ever**, as **sin** had not yet **entered** and therefore no **judgment** was yet needed.

And it is in these **quake, melt, burned, boil, 'axis-shifting', 'horizontal water fall'** series of **scriptures** that we **see** the second, more **'naturally administed' way**, but also something else. We **see** how God gets 'involved' with the **'fallout'** that He long before 'set in motion'. I mean we **see** the Lord's **presence** at these "events", where **mountains quake at him**, and where **from his holy temple... the LORD cometh forth out of his place, and will come down, and tread upon the high places of the earth**, the result being that **the mountains shall be molten under him, and the valleys... cleft, as [melted] wax... and as the waters that are poured down a steep place** ([Mic 1:2-4](#)),

where ***all... wholly like a flood... shall be drowned*** [Amos 9:5](#), that is, as seas and oceans ***'slosh across land'***. And it's not just because of His ***presence***, but because ***the Lord GOD*** also ***toucheth the land***.

However God must be explaining these ***ways***—or 'characteristics'—of His ***great judgments*** to us to some extent 'naturalistically', and therefore allegorically, I mean, since His ***thoughts*** and ***ways*** are really so ***'unimaginably' higher*** than ours, and there being yet no better way for Him to explain His 'actual process'. Still, I ***believe*** we are ***seeing*** here, as best as God both can explain and demonstrate it, His Own ongoing participation with this ***'fallout'***, that is, in these ***great judgments***, as well as in ***'smaller ones'***. And I mean I imagine Him using the ***'fallout'*** that He long ago 'set in motion' with ***the curse*** to ***accomplish*** His ***great judgments***. And yes, I already acknowledged that He still does 'little things' ***'abracadabra-style'***, like ***shut*** the door on the Ark. But we ***see*** from suchlike ***scriptures***—and there are many more—a bigger and ongoing level of 'intervention' played by Him too, though at the same time—and by many other ***scriptures***—that it is all made possible by His ***use*** of the ***'perfectly-staged falling out'*** of the ***'slow death of Creation'*** that He long ago 'set in motion' by ***the curse*** on His Creation.

So I'm now more clearly acknowledging that God at least 'supervises' His ***great judgments***, apparently especially in the 'final execution' of them—I mean when the ***planets*** from this ***'fall out' visit*** Earth, parts of which He sometimes ***repented*** of, and stopped or limited, at least until He became ***weary with repenting***, and ***repented not***, and finally 'drives', 'fine tunes', and 'mediates' these ***'visits'***, all with the ***'unimaginably mindboggling skill and finesse'*** necessary to avoid 'destroying everyone and everything', and that down to the ***'last sparrow'*** and ***'every hair of your head'***, including while He is standing (or sitting?) in that ***'flying four-living-creatures'***, ***'wheel-in-the-middle-of-a-wheel'***, ***'knee-bucklingly-awesome'***, ***'rainbow-throne chariot'*** of His described in Ezekiel 1. And surely we have much more to ***learn*** about this perspective too.

But there's something else I don't want you compartmentalizing about right here, which is that God doesn't do the ***things*** He ***doeth*** for just His Own benefit, but more for ours. And I mean He both represents Himself and ***doeth*** what He ***doeth*** in ***ways*** that you can barely wrap your ***mind of Christ*** around, but that's only ***if*** you're ***giving all diligence*** with ***vehement desire*** to ***know*** Him. Yes, surely He must choose ***ways*** to communicate Who He is, and to show us what His capabilities are, ways that only the ***'most diligent disciples'***, and ***'friends of Jesus'***—the Sons of God in Their ***abode***—can only just begin to ***understand***, and only start to get a ***'growing understanding'*** of, or otherwise, and I mean without such consideration of our ***'ability'***, no one could really even begin to get this kind of ***'increasingly higher understanding'*** of how ***'knee-bucklingly-awesome'*** He really is, which I can already ***see*** I can ***continue*** to ***grow in*** both ***now*** and ***for ever***. And yes, I mean He must reach 'way down' to give us such ***'knee-bucklingly-awesome'*** perspectives that we can barely wrap our ***minds of Christ*** around ***now***, so we can then, with this ***'dawning of light'***, begin to ***arise*** in that ***knowledge*** too, that is, of Who He really is, ***for ever***, though, of course, not without regularly 'short circuiting' most every ***'ordered step of the way'***. And yes again, I mean He's going to ***lead*** us on this journey, ***'step by step'***, ***for ever***. But remember too that it's a journey that you can only receive ***glory*** and ***honour*** and ***reward*** for ***if*** you ***continue in it now***, that is, before The Rapture. All other Immortal Sons of God, who start later, will experience this journey too, just not directly, or as directly, that is, not so much if at all in direct ***'face to face fellowship'*** with God and Jesus, that is, within Their immediate ***abode***. No, and ***'I***

tell you the truth', because I can **'speak for God'**, that such **'direct relationships'**—at least the ones that may be **'now obtained'**—are not just reserved for those who intimately **know** what their Lord **doeth**, but also only for those who are long passed—far beyond salvation—experiencing **'the day dawn'**. And in this case I don't mean just a **'perfect understanding'** of **prophecy**, but also being **able** to 'wrap their minds around' a **'noon day' understanding** of Who God really is. 'Ch - ch-ch-ch - chhhh'?

And it's not that I don't **understand** our **'finite'** limits, that, as King Solomon puts it,

Then I beheld all the work of God, that a man cannot find out the work that is done under the sun: because though a man labour to seek it out, yet he shall not find it; yea further; though a wise man think to know it, yet shall he not be able to find it [Ecc 8:17](#).

But this really only means that we will be **able** to **continue in** God's Word, to **meditate** in it and **study** it, and thereby **'continue increasing in the knowledge of God'**, and to **abound** in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, even to the **increase of his government and peace to no end**. Because certainly what will take us **'longer than for ever'** God can do **'abracadabra'**. I mean, you can **see** how that 'pendulum' I speak of seems to 'swing both ways', as the Apostle Paul affirms,

For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he [God] said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if [or that] they shall [or shall not] enter into my rest: although the works [of His wrath, judgment and redemption] were finished from the foundation of the world. [Heb 4:3](#); from [Psa 95:11](#).

How do we reconcile the 'apparent contradiction' in this verse? Paul seems to misinterpret this **psalm**, because God seems to say that, **in my wrath**, He **cut off** His **people**. But this is really just a **judgment** on a particular **generation** of His **people**, as in this case He was working on —and **predestinated**—a 'longer way' for them to **enter into rest, praise God**.

And as you should remember, my conclusion that God **repented** is not an isolated incident either. See [1 Chronicles 21](#), [Jonah 3:1-10](#), [Amos 7:1-6](#), for examples, but also consider [Joel 2:10-14](#), which in this case is more clearly concerning His **people** both then and in the coming Great Tribulation—you know, where we can get a 'peek' at that 'multi-overlapping-perspectives view' that only God can operate in. And yes, **God repented, repenteth**, and **will...repent**, again and again. It's part of both who we are and Who He is. And you should also **know** that,

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance [2Pe 3:9](#).

And here's where I can finally reveal—if you haven't had this **revelation** already—that there really are no 'pendulums swinging' at all, because there is really no such thing as a 'contradiction' in God's Word. But when there seems to be, it necessarily involves a misunderstanding, because in all cases all seemingly opposing views on both 'sides'—if appropriately **'corrected, improved and/or expanded'** as needed—are **true**. But, and especially for **'meatier truth'**, it's only when our perspective finally becomes **high** or **deep** enough that we can **see** that there is really no

'swing' at all, because from the **higher** or '**deeper perspective**' we ultimately **see** that our **one LORD** really only offers '**one truth**'. And I mean that an 'apparently swinging pendulum', or any other type of 'apparent contradiction', is really just an indication that our **understanding** is not yet **high** or **deep** enough, and that we have **revelations** to look forward to.

And God's **repentance** is necessary for our perspective, not His. I mean though He may 'act out' for His **pleasure**, it is otherwise entirely **mercy** for our benefit. But certainly His **testimony** is that He is **well pleased** when His Sons **walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing**, and apparently He derives enough **pleasure** from at least a **few** of us to remain **longsuffering** to all, that is, for the sake of the **few**, and at the same time He lets those who are **awake** and listening **know** that He is **angry with the wicked everyday**, and that we can be **patient** too, because He assures us that **the great day of his wrath** will eventually **come**.

And apparently He gets **pleasure** not just from the **few**, but from His Creation, and from our interaction and response to Creation too, however **cursed** it and we presently are, since the Apostle John reveals that God's source of **pleasure** is not just from us, but that He...

...hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created [Rev 4:11](#).

And certainly through and by **all things** God can perceive what—from our perspective—is our '**free will love**' of Him. But surely He must prefer those with **greater love** of Him and His Son to those offering 'lesser demonstrations' of such **love**. But you might have to 'stew' on all this for a while too, well, **for ever** really. And by-the-way, you can **continue in** this level of **meditation** by reading a '**letter**' I wrote to you, one I wrote during the rough draft of this section. When you have a few hours, find it at the **RGT** site, under DOWNLOAD OPTIONS, in the WORD DOCUMENT files. Near the bottom of this list download the "To BFFs" file. But now it's time to get back to the '**astronomically mindboggling meditations and revelations**' we're expecting in this, from at least time to time, 'wild-screaming, white-knuckled, roller-coaster-style' **study**.

And yes, again, all this is a better picture of what Venus and Mars did to the Post-Flood Earth than of what the Pre or Post-Flood Earth was like. But again, such is the nature of the investigation of a 'contaminated crime scene'. And still we can see a lot about the Post-Flood World here, that is, before Venus came along. I mean you should see that Arabia might be like India today if it's 'water works' were not 'sealed underground' by the general **melting** of the **ground**, evidently mostly because of Venus. But though Dr. Velikovsky may not have so clearly suggested that Arabia was originally in a different latitude when it was 'hospitable and fruitful' and "copiously watered and luxuriously forested"—"as India"—the previous evidence we considered does. And I mean if the Sahara Desert region was 'shifted up' at some point, throwing the **water**—and **hippopotami**—of "great lake" Triton over Europe, then so must have everything on that side of the planet, with everything on the other side being 'shifted down', generally speaking. And by-the way, from this perspective the **hippopotami** would not have had to come from as far away as the Congo River in Central Africa if they instead mostly came from the former "great lake" Triton region. I mean it's not quite so far a '**slosh of water**'. And I'm sure God was careful not to make the Earth 'shift too abruptly', or maybe the entire surface of the Earth could have **melted**, and 'sealed' all **underground** 'water works', and made survival for anyone impossible. No, His '**great shakings**' are always 'just right', yes, down to the '**last sparrow**', and '**each hair on our heads**'.

The next best chance at a 'peek' at God's **use** of Mercury's generally 'covered-up' **work** comes in *Chapter X, THIRTY-FIVE CENTURIES AGO*—yes, referring more to a focus on The Visits of Venus—entitled, *Clock Unwound*, where Dr. Velikovsky tries to put the 'draining' of *continents* after various *inundations*—in these cases the '**sloshing**' of *oceans* and *seas* onto *continents*, as well as the 'quickly formed' but thereafter relatively 'slowly melting glaciers', on various 'time clocks'. He explains,

We can determine the time necessary for lakes to collect mud deposited by melting glaciers [connected to The Visits of Venus and Mars], for rivers to build their deltas, for waterfalls to cut their channels and remove the bedrock, for lakes without outlets to accumulate their [varying] salts [these helpful to "determine the time" of various '**visits**']. We can ascertain how much time has passed since beaches were raised, by the state of their shells, and the age of volcanic rocks by the amount of erosion [also helpful in distinguishing different '**visits**']. By counting the annual bands of clay and silt we may find out the number of years in their deposition [and therefore which *planet* must have started the process]. By studying the rings in old tree trunks we can determine the time of climatic changes as reflected in their growth [including which ones have been alive since just after The Flood]. The remains of extinct and extant animals—their appearance, position on the ladder of evolution [read, position of 'sudden burial'], and state of fossilization [read, how 'suddenly buried']—enable us [read, 'reasonable investigators'—not *evolutionists*] to establish their time of existence. By the content of radiocarbon in organic matter we [but usually not *evolutionist*] may detect the time an animal or plant died [except for the dramatic changes in *radiation levels* that surely 'reset clocks' during the '**visits**' of *planets*, as Dr. Velikovsky knows, but does not seem to consider here], and by the accumulation of fluorine in bones the length of time since burial. Finally, by studying artifacts and archaeologically determinable strata in the lands of antiquity, we [- again, not *evolutionists* -] may discover the time of deposits of associated animal or human remains; and by associated pollens of plants, a geochronological scale of climatic changes can be formulated even for areas where no archaeologically datable objects are found [and to his credit, Dr. Velikovsky isn't really talking about 'loop dating', but the reform of it].

There are a few other ways of calculating geological time: by measuring the amount of sediment on the bottom of the oceans [while necessarily avoiding considering how fast **all** *land* could be washed from *above sea level* to *below* it]; by computing the amount of salt in the oceans and comparing it with the annual influx of salts from land [and again, I'm assuming there was very little until after The Visit of Mercury, but also that more came from of The Visits of Venus and Mars—though, again, there should be even more—and no more *land*—at the present rate it is being 'washed in' by *rain* and *rivers* if you accept the 'evolutionary timescale fantasy']; and finally, by the analysis of rocks for their lead content as a product of decay of radioactive [e.g., *polonium* and *uranium*] elements [except again, and as we already know Dr. Velikovsky admits, these 'clocks' can be 'reset' by the **visit** of each *planet* too]. But these ways, especially the last two, cannot be profitably applied for measuring time in thousands or tens of thousands of years; they were devised [read, 'they are manipulations']

for reckoning time in millions of years.

The fact that Dr. Velikovsky seriously includes the phrases, “position on the ladder of evolution”, and, “reckoning time in millions of years”, shows he does not see God’s Creation altogether clearly. His redeemable analysis, however, comes from his perspective that ‘recent’ *geological formations* and *paleontological remains*—that *evolutionists* assert ‘marked’ the last about 50 to 100 million years—actually took place over the last few thousand years, and that mostly by the ‘work’ of Mercury, Venus and Mars, and that the ignorance of this ‘work’—genuine or pretended—has misdirected the ‘scientific community’ into believing that all this ‘work’ must have taken millions of years at a slow rate, instead of taking mere hours and days, on a number of occasions, over the last few thousand years. But ‘before’ the most ‘recent work’ of Venus and Mars, Dr. Velikovsky’s perspective seems to ‘quickly fall in line’ with the ‘evolutionary timescale fantasy’, though from His perspective the various *layers of sedimentary rock* were not ‘laid slowly and uniformly’ over vast amounts of time, but that each *layer* was ‘laid catastrophically quick’, and involved, according to him, a “pageant” of mostly unnamed ‘visitors’ that were supposedly individually responsible for the work of ‘laying’ each *layer of sedimentary rock* separated by millions or billions of years.

And you should know by now that “Carbon Dating”, especially nowadays, is usually ‘inextricably intertwined’ with ‘loop dating’, where the ‘baseline amounts’ and ‘predictable’ *rate of decay of radiocarbon (radioactive carbon)*—or more recently, *uranium that decays to lead, strontium that decays to rubidium, or potassium that decays to argon*, etc.—are ‘fixed’ (pun intended) to match the imaginary Evolutionary Geological Timescale, that is, to match the pre-established standards ‘set’ for each *sedimentary layer*. And I mean expected amounts of *radioactivity* are ‘fixed’ to make things ‘loop date’ very old rather than very young, and where if outside ‘acceptable ranges’, that is, if the samples are still too *radioactive*, they are simply disposed of, and if called to account for such ‘too young’ samples at all, *evolutionists* say they must have been contaminated by another source. But all this information can be **rightly** used to narrow down the real timescale, that is, if the ‘handlers’ of such ‘evidence’ could see that not only have there been ‘recent’ *catastrophic* “climatic and geological changes”, but that Creation itself is nearly as ‘recent’ too.

And I mean you should come to understand that Dr. Velikovsky believes that much of the measurable ‘catastrophic changes’ to Earth’s *crust* have been ‘recent’. He specifically places The 2 Visits of Venus about 52 years apart somewhere in the 1400’s BC, and The 7 Visits of Mars more specifically from 776 to 687 BC in 15 year intervals, though apparently indicating that The Visits of 747, 702-1, and 687 BC were the most remarkable, as we will see. However he seems to be unaware that “the Deluge”, as he calls it, was caused, at least to some extent, by Mercury, and instead of thinking that all the *water* came ‘from the sky’ and ‘inside the Earth’, that it instead mostly came from an ‘explosion’ of Saturn that he thinks must have resulted in a ‘flood’ of *water* being ‘blown’ to Earth, as we will consider next section.

But don’t misunderstand my appreciation of Dr. Velikovsky’s work. From his ‘shoulder tops’ he has given me of a better perspective. And with his help, but not without my **‘spiritual handling’** of The Word, I think Mercury came from neither Saturn nor Jupiter, but maybe from one of the *blue gas giants*, or more likely from even further out, and without any *water*, and even more likely than all this, after ‘visiting’ all the *giant planets* on its way to Earth, and ultimately reaching it’s present, rather ‘mercurial’ *orbit* closest to the Sun, its ‘present and continuing obscurity’ being the result of hiding more than half the time behind the Sun, which

is evidently comparable to 'his' similar 'former obscurity' when he was taking turns hiding in the proximity of each of the *giant planets*. In fact I imagine The Visit of Mercury to Jupiter, who is assumed in some 'myths' to be Mercury's 'father', may really be what provided that extra needed *external force*, possibly along with the *alignment* of one or more of Jupiter's *moons*, that helped the *ejected volcanic bomb* we now know as Venus to reach *escape velocity*. **See** it and 'short circuit'.

One of Dr. Velikovsky's misconceptions, to be more specific, is that the *bedrock* —or the Genesis rock that is mostly under all the more recently 'catastrophically laid' *sedimentary rock* and 'upshot' *magma-igneous rock*—is billions of years old. Still, his perspectives will help us better understand God's Creation. So we'll follow more of his analysis now...

Of the methods used to find how much time has passed since the ice cover started to melt, the "varve" method, until recently, was thought to be fairly precise. This method was introduced by G. de Geer, who counted the annual bands of silt and clay ("varves") deposited, coarse in the summer and fine in the winter, under the ice in the coastal lakes and rivers of Sweden, once covered by the glacial sheet of the Ice Age[s]. De Geer calculated that it had taken about 5000 years to melt the ice cover from Schonen, at the southern tip of Sweden, to the place in the north where there are still glaciers in the mountains. In no place are there five thousand overlying varves; but De Geer looked for similar series or patterns of thick and thin varves from one lake to another, about fifteen hundred outcrops altogether, always with the thought that a varve series found high in the deposit of some southern lake would repeat itself closer to the bottom of a lake to the north.

I think he means that as the *ice sheets melted* northward, the *lakes* in which *varves* were being deposited should be expected to be transitioning northward too, so that you had to kind of add them together over the course of the entire 'melt', but try to account for overlap, when *ice was melting* into the same *lakes* at the same time, and even account for missing *varves* when there was no *lake* for them to be deposited in, but instead ran in *rivers* to the *sea*, for example.

Dr. Velikovsky continues,

Additional figures used in De Geer's evaluation of the time that passed since the end of the [last] Ice Age are of a more hypothetical nature [- yes, even more 'guess work' added to the above 'guess work']. For the preceding period, the time allegedly needed for the ice to retreat all the way, from Leipzig to southern Sweden, where no varves are found, De Geer offered, as a surmise, a span of 4000 years. Then he surmised further that the end of the melting of the ice cover coincided with the beginning of Neolithic time, which he placed [ending] 5000 years ago, this arriving at the final figure of 14,000, or 12,000 years before the present era [with the present supposed length of the Neolithic Age being estimated as starting around 10,000 BC and ending, give or take a millennium, around 3000 BC]. The area of Stockholm [with this 'reasoning'] was freed from ice about 10,000 years ago. Other scientists [evidently wanting more time, and apparently even less swayed by the actual evidence, that is, by the actual number of *varves*] freely interpreted De Geer's data as indicating that the ice cover in Europe started to melt

25,000 years or even 40,000 years ago [Dr. Thomas Chrowder Chamberlin, in *The World and Man*, Ed. Dr. Forest Ray Moulton, p.93; Daly, *Our Mobile Earth*, p.189-90; C. Schuchardt, *Vorge-schichte von Deutschland*, 1943, p.3]. The method [of counting *couples* of *varves* per year], when applied to North America, also [somehow] gave the figure the explorers looked for, namely 35,000 to 40,000 years; in this estimate great stretches of land without varves in them were freely evaluated as to the time in question [that is, by minimizing the rule of 1 year to each 'coupling' of a 'thick course summer' with a 'thin fine winter' *varve*, and maximizing, that is, just making up whatever number of 'missing' *varves* you want in order to 'claim' - read *lie* - it took much longer].

De Geer applied his method of identifying synchronical varves to countries as far apart as Sweden, Central Asia, and South America. His telechronology was objected to [by *evolutionists* wanting even more time] on the ground that a dry phase in Scandinavia may not necessarily have coincided with a dry phase in the Himalayas or in the Andes, and that therefore the telechronology was built on an erroneous assumption [E. Antevs, "*Telecorrelation of Varve Curves*", *Geologisma Forhandlinagar*, 1935, p.47; A. Wagner, *Klimaanderungen und Klima-schwankungen*, 1940, p.110]. But the method as applied to northern Europe or North America was hailed as a most exact geological time clock [even though there was really little direct correlation between years and 'couples' of *varves*]. The summing up of varves from one dried-out lake to another is a delicate process and often subjective appraisals replace an objective method [that is, "appraisals" were 'fixed' to match the desired longer outcome]; especially arbitrary are the estimates for intervening stretches of land where no varves are found [where as many years as desired could be added in place of *varves* when actually there are none].

In 1947 an ingenious new method of investigating the age of organic remains was developed by W. F. Libby of the University of Chicago. The radiocarbon dating method is based on the fact that when cosmic rays hit the upper atmosphere they break the nitrogen atoms into hydrogen (H) and radiocarbon (C-14), or carbon with two extra electrons, therefore unstable, or radioactive

Willard Frank Libby, by the way, received his doctorate in chemistry from UC Berkley in 1933, worked on the Manhattan Project at Columbia University, helping to build the *hydrogen bomb*, after which he became a professor at the University of Chicago's Institute for Nuclear Studies, "where he developed the technique for dating organic compounds using carbon-14", then he further supported *nuclear testing* as an advisor to the Atomic Energy Commission, but in 1969 became a professor of Chemistry at UCLA, establishing the first "Environmental Engineering program" there in 1972, "and as a member of the California Air Resources Board, he worked to develop and improve California's air pollution standards".

And yes, as Dr. Libby showed in Chicago, *radiocarbon decay rate* can be 'put on a clock', as long as it can be determined that this 'clock' was at no time 'reset' by later additional exposure—which, though usually overlooked, can not often be, if at all, a certainty. And if this uncertainty is a reality, as Dr. Velikovsky acknowledges, his next explanation seems to be, at least to some degree, compartmentalized, and certainly not, at least always, true. Even so, he explained,

The radiocarbon is mixed with the atmospheric carbon and as carbon dioxide it is absorbed by plants; it enters the animal body that feeds on plants and also the carnivore that feeds on other animals. Thus animal and plant cells as long as they live contain approximately the same amount of radiocarbon; when death comes, no new radiocarbon is assimilated and the radiocarbon present in the remains undergoes the process of decay, as every radioactive substance does. After another 5568 years only half of the radiocarbon remains; after another 5568-year period only half of the half, or a quarter of the original content in the organic body, remains. A sample undergoing analysis—a piece of wood or skin—is burned to ashes and its radiocarbon content is determined by a Geiger counter. This method claims accuracy for organic objects between 1000 and 20,000 years old; bones and shells are unsuitable materials because organic carbon is easily lost in the process of fossilization, often being replaced by carbon in ground water and by mineral salts.

But could it really be “approximately the same amount of radiocarbon”? Again, sounds like Dr. Velikovsky is compartmentalizing here, forgetting he doesn’t believe in *uniformitarianism*, as he will later fully confirm. So really this is just another of his short, though somewhat flawed, ‘wild goose chases’. I mean though he does not yet share our perspective that there is no such thing as the *remains* of an *organism* that is over 6,000 years old—unless he has since come to such a conclusion in *spirit* in ***Abraham’s Bosom***—he seems to be forgetting here that it is possible that some *organisms*, at some times in the past, must have been exposed to much less *radioactive carbon* than we now are, like, as we might assume, before The Flood, but certainly that at other times other *organisms* must have been exposed to much more, that is, because of the “pageant” of ‘radioactive visitors’ he is attempting to introduce to us. So it appears here that he’s forgetting that such ‘radioactive clocks’ could have been repeatedly ‘reset’. But surely at the time of this writing he also doesn’t yet have the perspective that ‘greater exposure’ could happen just by living longer than *organisms* now *live*, that is, especially just after The Flood. And surely in “cataclysms” such *radioactivity* can be more quickly both “lost” or “replaced” than Dr. Velikovsky seems to be imagining here. Still there may be generalities that can improve our perspective in this kind of analysis. And Dr. Velikovsky nonetheless maintains,

The first important result of the radiocarbon dating method in glacial chronology was a radical reduction of the terminal date of the Ice Age. It was shown that ice, instead of retreating 30,000 years ago, was still advancing 10,000 or 11,000 years ago [- that is, because it was more *radioactive* than *evolutionists* initially imagined, it’s higher level of *radioactivity* matching ‘younger loop dating’ standards][F. Johnson in Libby, *Radiocarbon Dating*, 1952, p.105]. This conflicts strongly with the final phase of the Ice Age in North America [Antevs, “*Geochronology of the Deglacial and Neothermal Ages*”, *Journal of Geology*, Vol. LXI, 1953, p.195-230; note: however, G. de Geer in *Geografiska Annaler*, 1926, Vol. H, p.4, evaluated the time when the ice cover left the region of Toronto as about 9750 years ago].

But there are really two kinds of ‘variability’ here. Surely there is ‘variability’ in the levels of various kinds of *radiation*, especially during “cataclysms”, and both

globally and regionally. And surely there was plenty of **'axis shifting'** going on, so that the *freezing* and *melting* of different *regions*, even of the greater part of *hemispheres*, did some 'shifting' too. And it occurs to at least me here how God could 'seal' and 'cleanse' *regions* that are 'excessively radiated' by covering them with vast *sheets* of *ice*. And Dr. Velikovsky offers additional evidence for even greater "exceptions", that is, 'variability', reporting,

Even this great reduction of the date of the end of the Ice Age is not final. Radiocarbon analysis, according to Professor Frederick Johnson, chairman of the committee of selection of samples for analysis [The Committee on Carbon 14 of the American Anthropological Association and the Geological Society of America], revealed "puzzling exceptions" [- yeah, samples with exceptionally higher *radioactivity*—read, 'way too recent'—that have become standardly rejected and/or disposed of]. In numerous cases [until it became standard to reject such cases altogether] the shortening of the time schedule was so great that, as the only recourse, Libby assumed a "contamination" by radiocarbon [by an 'additional source', uh-huh, though Dr. Velikovsky still seems to be compartmentalizing with 'as-it-was-in-the-past-so-it-is-in-the-present', *uniformitarian* thinking here]. But in many other cases "the reason for the discrepancies cannot be explained" [- just ignored and/or disposed of]. Altogether the method indicates that "geological developments were speedier [as well as sometimes exposed to more *radiation*] than formerly Supposed" [Johnson in Libby, *Radiocarbon Dating*, p.97, 99,105].

H. E. Suess [not to be confused with Eduard Suess, his grandfather] of the United States Geological Survey reported recently [evidently in the early 1950's] that wood found at the base of interbedded blue till, peat, and outwash of drift, and ascribed by its finder to the Late Wisconsin (last) glaciation, is according to radiocarbon analysis, but [or just] 3300 years old (with a margin of error up to two hundred years both ways) [which is about right for The Visits of Venus], or of the middle of the second millennium before the present era [1500 BC]. Still more recently [grandson] Suess and Rubin reported that "a glacial advance in the mountains of western United States was determined to have occurred about 3000 years ago" [*Science*, Sept. 24, 1954, and April 8, 1955].

This "grandson", Dr. Hans Eduard Suess, by the way, "was an Austrian born American physical chemist and nuclear physicist. He was a grandson of the Austrian geologist Eduard Suess. The younger earned his Ph.D. in chemistry from the University of Vienna in 1935. During World War II, he was part of a team of German scientists studying nuclear power and was advisor to the production of heavy water in a Norwegian plant. After the war, he collaborated on the shell model of the atomic nucleus with future (1963) Nobel Prize winner Hans Jensen. In 1950, Suess emigrated to the United States. He did research in the field of cosmochemistry, investigating the abundance of certain elements in meteorites with Harold Urey (Nobel Prize in Chemistry, 1934) at the University of Chicago. In 1955, Suess was recruited for the faculty of Scripps Institution of Oceanography [now associated with UCSD], and in 1958 he became one of the four founding faculty members of the University of California, San Diego. He remained at UCSD as Professor until 1977 and as Emeritus Professor thereafter. He established a laboratory at UCSD for carbon-14 determinations..."

And yep, we're talking "3300 years old (with a margin of error up to two hundred years both ways)", though again, these '**visits**' of Venus must have occurred closer to 1300 BC or we'd already be in Day 7, that is, in The Millennium. Remember that because there were very near

1056 years from Adam's **creation** to Noah's birth as calculated from Genesis 5. and because there were very near 893 years from Noah's birth to Abraham's birth as calculated in Genesis 11, and because there were—according to **scripture**—very near 700 years from Abraham's birth to The Exodus—which was supposedly, according to Dr. Velikovsky, in 1450 BC—and because there were very near 2649 years from Adam's **creation** to The Exodus, and accepting the popular date for Jesus' birth as very near correct too, then this is the year 6115 (in 2016)] since the **creation** of Adam. And though you should also remember I say "very near" because months and days, that is, revealing partial years, are not available for these calculations, and also because it is only recorded that Isaac was past 40 when Jacob was born, and because Jesus' birth may be a few years off, you should nonetheless see that this is 'no where near' possible, because **one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day** apparently means, as apparently supported by **all scripture**, that God from His perspective has a '7-day plan', which from our perspective must be a '7,000-year plan'.

And I mean if The 1st Visit of Venus, more popularly known as The Exodus, took place instead in the year 1300, it would instead now be (in 2016) the year 5965 since Creation Week, (this number being a year off my earlier one since it is now a year later), which is in the ballpark of how much time I expect it will take for what Jesus and the Apostles and the Prophets reveal must take place between here and the beginning of The Millennium, which apparently makes these '**studies**' a demonstration that we are indeed not just **encouraged** but also **able to watch and see** "very near" correctly **when** the start of The Great Tribulation, immediately preceded by The Rapture, is, or as Jesus metaphorically puts it, when it is **at the doors**.

And yes, Dr. Velikovsky has dramatically improved the chronology, at least between The Exodus and the present day, except possibly for his general placement of The 1st Visit of Venus in "the middle of the second millennium before the present era". And more than that, [2 Peter 3:8](#) seems to show that Peter **understood** God's 'chronology', and [Psalm 90:4](#), as this **psalm** is a **Prayer of Moses**, may also show that Moses got the '7 day - 7,000-year plan' **revelation** too.

Dr. Velikovsky continues, noting,

Already there is an accumulation of similar results that do not fit into the accepted scheme [which have, of course, since then been discarded], even if the Ice Age is brought as close to our time as 10,000 years. Professor Johnson says: "There is no way at the moment to prove whether the valid dates, the 'invalid ones,' or the 'present ideas' are in error" [Johnson in Libby, *Radiocarbon Dating*, p.106]. He says also: "Until the number of measurements can be increased to a point permitting some explanation of contradictions with other apparently trustworthy data, it is necessary to continue to form judgments concerning validity by a combination of all available information."

But this recommendation, like the similarly 'undesirable evidence' that supports it, was as if it was never even given, being 'muted' by the 'shouts of triumph' for much longer time periods as required by 'evolutionary fantasy'. Still, despite the

pervasiveness of what I could more appropriately call **blindness**, Dr. Velikovsky nonetheless presses on hopefully, saying,

With this [entirely realistic] idea [of considering all the evidence] in mind, I offer in the following section a review of the results of several other methods of time measurement, especially as regards the dating of the last glaciation. Libby recognizes that the exactness of his method is dependent on two assumptions. The first is that for the last 20,000 or 30,000 years the amount of cosmic radiation reaching our atmosphere remained constant [or *uniform*]; the other is that the quantity of water in the oceans has not changed in the same period of time. Actually only a minor part of the radiocarbon created by cosmic rays is absorbed by plants and animals, the so-called biosphere; a still smaller part is present in the atmosphere; the largest share is absorbed by the ocean [and both the ‘quantity of water in the oceans’, and the ‘amount of cosmic radiation’ was likely ‘significantly adjusted’ by The Visits of Mercury, Venus, and Mars].

Libby stressed the significance of these factors. It transpires that if there were cosmic catastrophes in the past, cosmic radiation could have reached the earth at a different intensity [that is, not just *created* in the *upper atmosphere* over ‘eons of time’, but delivered by ‘**visiting**’ planets, each **visit** offering a short but intense **blast of God...by the breath of his nostrils** (e.g., [Job 4:9](#)) of such *radiocarbons*, etc., with all these ‘**visits**’ happening relatively recently]; and in a future book I intend to show that the waters of the oceans and their salts were increased substantially in a recent geological age.

No, this work was not completed by him, but was nonetheless, in a somewhat ‘incomplete form’, published posthumously, along with other of His ‘works in progress’, including essays and books, with appropriate editing by his assistant. So nonetheless yes, he proved that “salts were increased substantially in a recent geological age”, that is, *chlorine-based salt*, as some ‘myths’ apparently support, except that, contrary to what Dr. Velikovsky proposed, the discovered ‘extra water’ likely did not come from 1) the former ‘water giant’ Saturn which apparently ‘exploded’ and in the process supposedly ‘blasted’ the Earth with its *water*, well, not likely directly anyway, and I mean I’ve imagined this ‘excess water’ on Earth may have come, but only in part, from 2) the “messenger” Mercury, ‘who’ may have ‘carried’ some *water* from Saturn to Earth, being at the time of this ‘blast’ one of Saturn’s ‘caught’ *moons*, and where such a ‘great explosion’ resulted in Saturn going from being the largest and brightest *planet* to it’s present size now somewhat smaller than Jupiter, resulting in some of the *water* that was ‘expelled’ from the *planet*, some clearly far beyond it’s present *moons*, being caught in it’s *magnetic equator* and there *frozen* to form it’s present *ice rings*, and maybe earlier Mercury also participated in ‘knocking’ Uranus ‘on its side’, as other ‘myths’—in this case one already considered—seem also to support, so maybe Mercury was sent ‘on his way’ toward Earth as a result of the Uranus ‘knock-over’, or even earlier by Neptune’s ‘involvement’ with the *collision* that created the Kuiper Belt and/or the Scattered Disc, or, as so many ‘myths’ seem to support, Mercury was somehow involved—at least ‘visually’—in all these ‘collisions’, ‘disruptions’, and ‘explosions’, however even more likely this ‘extra water’ was 3) ‘dislodged’ from Earth’s *sky* and ‘squeezed’ from Earth’s *crust* by Mercury, this part of the ‘story’ evidently beyond even what Dr. Velikovsky imagined. But you should read Dr. Velikovsky’s posthumously published

'incomplete works' free online at *The Immanuel Velikovsky Archive*, at *VArchive.org* (<http://www.varchive.org/index.htm>), starting with one of his *Collected Essays* entitled, *Saturn* (<http://www.varchive.org/ce/sattot.htm>).

And again, though technically "unpublished", several of Dr. Velikovsky's 'works in progress' at the time of his death are now available at *VArchive.org*, including several 'substantially completed works' that he had promised to eventually publish. Who published them? Let their short introduction of themselves and their intentions on their home-contents page of *VArchive.org* suffice for the answer:

This archive is being maintained by a team of historians to ensure the integrity and preservation of Immanuel Velikovsky's unpublished writings; it is strictly non-profit and its sole purpose is the advancement of education and scholarship.

Enough said I think.

And by-the-way, in addition to the 'unpublished' volumes, *The Dark Age of Greece* and *The Assyrian Conquest*, each meant to 'illuminate' the so-called "dark age" between the 18th and 19th Egyptian Dynasties, there is also, *In the Beginning*, which includes topics in the form of sections that were promised in both *Earth in Upheaval* and *Worlds in Collision*, these sections entitled, *THE [Pre-Flood] EARLY AGES*, *SATURN AND THE FLOOD*, *MERCURY AND MEMORY*, and *JUPITER OF THE THUNDERBOLT*, a work we will cover in it's entirety next section.

So with Dr. Velikovsky's help, let's tangent a little further here and broaden our perspective using some of his 'unpublished' research and analysis about the Planet Mercury, starting with one of his many essays that are to be found at *VArchive.org*, specifically the one entitled, *Mercury*. And though coming from him, where we naturally expect a case for a rational, mechanical—though more complicated than most imagine—Universe, we should nonetheless expect, as we '**continue increasing in the knowledge of God**', that we will need to read between the 'lines'—like we have been doing—so that we will be **able** to 'glimpse' God's 'mind-boggling', 'knee-buckling awesomeness', including experience what I could call, inseparable from the pun, 'a whole new kind of heavy'. 20 paragraphs into this essay, not counting quotes, Dr. Velikovsky summarizes his opening analysis, writing,

Mercury, Hermes of the Greeks, was thought to keep well his secrets [most likely not only because of the far distant perceptions of its origin and travels, but because 'his' present *orbit* around the Sun also leaves 'him' only briefly and hardly visible, even with the aid of a *telescope*, with all this, and other 'obscurities', resulting in what are called "hermetic books"]. The ancient writings [or books] not intended for circulation but for the study of the initiated only [- or more specifically, for the 'priests' of **MYSTERY** 'religions', or for the 'higher-ups' of various 'occult orders', making them books containing 'secret and purposely hidden information',] were called hermetic books.

And I'm interrupting this paragraph to say that I hope you one day fully experience the **horror**

[Psa 119:53](#) of the **revelation** that Biblical 'exegesis', that is, 'explanation and interpretation' of the Bible, as taught in most all 'Bible colleges' today, is called

hermeneutics, yes, also named after the **'god-planet'** Hermes-Mercury. But Dr. Velikovsky is not so much interested in the kind of 'corrupt secrets' that are only available to 'false high priests' or 'higher occult initiates', ancient or modern, but instead in 'natural secrets' that are even today still mostly unknown to most *scientists*, in this case, the ones so long 'kept secret' by the Planet Mercury. And because these 'natural secrets' are still mostly unknown, though exposed by Dr. Velikovsky, and more recently by others, this is further evidence of **'satanic conspiracy'**, and that Satan's 'false high priests', including *scientists*, are not only **'traffickers in deception'** but are just as much **'obstructers of truth'**. Still, and apparently entirely unaware of any **'satanic conspiracy'**, Dr. Velikovsky reveals some of these 'natural secrets' related to the Planet Mercury, explaining,

In our days Mercury disclosed four secrets: first [1] that it is warm on the darkened side [when it's 'supposed to be' extremely cold]; then [2] that it has a hydrogen atmosphere [when that should be 'very long gone']; next, [3] that its axis is wobbling [or has a *precession*, for which another *force* besides just the Sun's *gravity* is - or was - required], and finally [4] that it is not locked with one and the same face toward the Sun [which, like our Moon, it should 'very long ago' have been]. Each of the four revealed facts is in conflict with accepted solutions [where Dr. Einstein's General Relativity Theory doesn't actually account for even the last of these 4 "secrets"]. All together [however, these 4 "secrets"] offer a solution—[that Mercury is] a planet on [or that has moved to] a new position since, in astronomical sense, recent times.

In the story as told in the volume *Worlds in Collision* the planet Mercury plays no role; however in the projected volume [*In the Beginning*] about earlier events on the celestial screen, Mercury was a participant and was not an idle spectator of the theomachy, the battle of the gods. It had an epoch of its own [read, a 'millennium' of its own—from just past the middle of God's 2nd Day to halfway through the 3rd], or an act in which it was the principle actor, in the early historical times [- yeah, but not millions of years ago, just one of God's Days before Venus came along], [that being] in an age antecedent to [or preceding] the events in the solar system, [that were] dominated (as seen by man from the earth) first by Venus, then by Mars. But despite my not having introduced Mercury into the narrative of those later times (15th - 7th century before this era [1400's - 600's BC]) it could not remain even then as a completely inactive member of the planetary family. Especially if planets are charged bodies, the entrance of a new planet (Venus) into the system [as a *volcanic bomb expelled* from Jupiter, and maybe which Mercury helped 'pull out',] must have caused much havoc also on planets not in collision or near collision. One should think of the changes which the entire solar system would undergo and also keep in mind [- for a comparison -] what the entrance of a new proton or electron would signify for an atom—the result could amount to the transmutation of an element.

In other words, Mercury probably 'messengered by', or 'passed near', or came in *alignment* with, many *objects* in our Solar System, both large and small, on its entire journey, likely originating from the far reaches of our Solar System, and I mean probably originating from or near the *blue gas giants* Neptune and/or Uranus,

including 'visits with' and 'escapes from' maybe all the *giant planets*, until it finally reached Earth, somehow at least twice, and ended up where it is now resides closest to the Sun.

And by-the-way, here's a place where Dr. Velikovsky could see, but certainly we can, that it might make no sense that Mercury was 'greatly revered' at all, and especially in the time of King Nebuchadnezzar, just after the more recent '**visits**' of Venus and Mars, and that is, 'revered' as a **god** at the level of both Venus and Mars, when, if Dr. Velikovsky was consistent, he would acknowledge he may be placing Mercury's **visit** long before *man* 'sufficiently evolved', and I mean long before 'man' could have passed along such 'information', and therefore could not have really been a 'witness' of such 'worshipful events'. No, following his reasoning fully, 'mankind' may have not been able to pass on any knowledge of what Mercury did. Nevertheless, as we will see next section, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, and even as we have seen to some degree already, it is no surprise that **mankind** has been **deceived** to **worship** Mercury.

And don't be so quick to condemn Dr. Velikovsky's compartmentalizations, because even if you already saw this one, there are bigger ones than this to expose that are now misleading you in your own brain, and you have **the mind of Christ**. So what's your excuse? But I am not condemning you either. Yes, you have no excuse, nor do I, but you may be, like me, nonetheless excused, that is, as Jesus puts it, **if ye continue in my word... for evermore**.

And to explain Dr. Velikovsky's helpful 'subatomic analogy' further, since *elements* are determined and identified by the number of *protons* and/or *electrons* that they possess, adding or subtracting either of these *subatomic particles* can result in a change from one *element* to another. Such changes, as you may remember, happen in *radioactive decay*, where 'especially' *unstable atoms* give up mostly *electrons* but also finally *protons* and *neutrons* in the process, and where in time and in *stages*, to use what for you should be a familiar example, *polonium* rather quickly becomes *uranium*, and then *uranium* much more slowly becomes *lead*, the *radiation* produced by each *stage*, if encased in *granite*, able to 'etch concentric spheres', or, if cross-sectioned, 'bull's-eye patterns' into the *granite* in the process.

But for further clarity, before The Fall apparently only 'permanently stable' *atoms* existed, meaning that *atoms* then evidently could retain their structure 'permanently', (which should not be confused with the both then and now ongoing *chemical* and/or *physical reactions* that can destabilize and/or establish *molecular bonds*), and meaning, for example, that before The Fall there was no such thing as 'especially unstable' *atoms* that naturally tended toward *radioactive decay*. But after The Fall, when some of these formerly, Pre-Curse, 'permanently stable versions' of *atoms* evidently became instantly 'especially unstable', and were inside *granite*, at that point, the point of **the curse**, they then immediately started to *decay*, which initiated a process that could 'etch concentric spheres' via *electron bombardment* into the surrounding *granite*, such *electron* 'etching patterns' known as *halos*, where when such affected Genesis rock is cross-sectioned, that is, split or cut open, it reveals 'bull's-eye target patterns', obviously 'marks' left by the *staged radioactive decay* that began with **the curse**.

But again, there were and still are endless both *chemical* and *physical* ways groups of *atoms*, that is, *molecules*, can be 'restructured', or just separated as individual *atoms*, like, for another example, the both *chemical* and *physical reactions* of *burning wood*, where *organic hydrocarbons* —called *organic hydrocarbons* because every **living thing** is made of just 6 *elements*, mostly of *carbon*, *hydrogen* and *oxygen*, and to a lesser extent also of *nitrogen*, and to a

much lesser extent also *sulfur* and *phosphorus*—where, evidently because of the *chemical reaction* that produces *physical heat*, a variety of *solid oxides* are formed including with *carbon*, *hydrogen*, *calcium* and sulfur, but where after some exposure of such *solids* to the *carbon dioxide* (CO₂) in *air* they revert back to *carbon*. And *gases* are also produced in this multi-leveled *reaction*, mostly *water vapor* (H₂O) and *carbon dioxide* (CO₂). But all this is just to extend Dr. Velikovsky's metaphor, that there are endless effects, and many dynamic changes that can occur when new *objects* are introduced into a Solar System.

Switching to the 'changes' Mercury's 'introduction' to the Solar System made on various cultures, Dr. Velikovsky informs us that,

The Romans as well as the Greeks pictured Mercury with wings, either on his headgear or at his ankles, and with an emblem, caduceus, twin snakes winding. The Babylonian name of the planet was Nebo, and he was an important deity, as the name of the mountain Nebo, on which tradition lets Moses die (Sinai, by the way, was consecrated to the Moon, Sin in Babylonian); Nebo in the names of the Kings Nabopolassar and Nebukhadnezzar [**Nebuchadnezzar**] testifies to its significance in the Babylonian pantheon as late as the seventh and sixth centuries [- yes, the better part of a millennium after The 2 Visits of Venus, and near a century after The 7 Visits of Mars too]. Equally pronounced was the role of Thoth, the planet Mercury of the Egyptian pantheon, the theophoric part of the name Thutmose or Tut-ankh-amen.

"...with wings, either on his headgear or at his ankles"? This seems to be the result of which way 'his' *cometary tail* was 'blown' by the *solar wind*, that is, when approaching the Sun "wings" were seen to propel 'him', in this case, I imagine "at his ankles", and when 'he' finally obtained an *orbit* around the Sun, when retreating from 'him', I imagine that "wings" are seen "on his headgear", and further, the "twin snakes winding" implies a 'double tail', as well as at least one 'encounter' with one of his 'fellows' that left 'him' in a 'tail spin', and evidently at some point or points 'he' noticeably increased in *velocity*, apparently *accelerating* like a Kreutz Sungrazer around the Sun on the pass. And do you **see** how this gives us more clues for 'his' entire 'journey'?

The word "theophoric", by-the-way, is from the Greek, *theophoros*, literally meaning "bearing or carrying a god", and here meaning to "embed the name of a god in a name, both invoking and displaying the protection of that deity". "Thutmose", in this sense, was the shared name of the 3rd, 4th, 6th and 8th Pharaohs of the 18th Dynasty of Egypt, who arose after Egypt was liberated, after the Post-Exodus centuries of **Amalekite** control (sometime within the 15th to 11th Centuries BC).

Amalekites and their allies, including the **Midianites**, by-the-way, were called the "Amu" by the Egyptians and "Hyksos" ("king-shepherds") by the Greeks, and were evidently commonly behaved like they did in [Judges 6:1-6](#). And yeah, you can assume such "king-shepherds" easily seized such vast **spoils**, and for so long maintained control of Egypt, because these "king-shepherds", like the Egyptian pharaohs, must have *expressed* some 'angel DNA' too. But the ones in Egypt were finally defeated with the help of King Saul probably within the 11th Century BC, making these 18th Dynasty, "New Kingdom" pharaohs also contemporary with Kings David and Solomon, and with the earlier kings of The Split Tribes of Israel. Of course you won't find this chronology in history books or encyclopedias because it's from Dr. Velikovsky's indisputably improved, radically reconstructed chronology of history

from his *Ages In Chaos* series.

And with this help we can **see** that following The Exodus that Egypt not only had maintained their reverence for Mercury for well over a millennia after ‘his’ visits, but also that Egypt, or at least some of her pharaoh’s, understandably had little appreciation for what Venus had much more recently done to Egypt. I mean it’s easy to see why many in Egypt had little regard for Venus. And The Visits of Mars don’t apply here because they apparently coincide with the end of Egypt’s 18th Dynasty, as Dr. Velikovsky, in his second book of his *Ages In Chaos* series, *Oedipus and Akhnaton*, implies, this implication, and the above chronology, also relying on his 3 previous publications, *World’s in Collision*, *Earth In Upheaval*, and *Ages In Chaos* as well.

However one of the last kings of the 18th Dynasty was Pharaoh Tut-ankh-amen—where “ankh” as both a word and a symbol identifies the perverted sexual nature of the worship of the **gods** to which Venus is central, and where therefore this theophoric name respects primarily Mercury but also the character of Venus and other **gods** too. Pharaoh Tutankhamen was evidently contemporary with kings of the period of the Split Tribes of Isreal—I’m thinking in the 8th to 7th Centuries BC. And yes, he is now known as “King Tut”, made famous with the discovery of his impressive tomb, much of which is explained in *Oedipus and Akhnaton* too. This pharaoh’s father, Akhnaton—evidently also at least partly a ‘Venus man’ too—is shown to be the real-life source for Homer’s ‘fictional’ character “Oedipus”, this ‘fictional’ Greek king being extensively modeled after him, including depicting his similar relationship to Akhnaton’s son Tutankhamen, the similar relationships with his wives and other children, as well as the similar major events of all their lives, etc., and, as other pharaohs of this and previous Egyptian dynasties, and as other kings all over the World up to this time, similar in that they *express* ‘superhuman strength and intelligence’, as Oedipus did, though not so much being ‘giant size’, but nonetheless implying that they all *expressed* some ‘**angel DNA**’.

But this **study** only begins to better clarify such things, not to mention that a lot of it, because of the vulgarity and merciless violence, should be left to you to further examine. And that would be after these ‘**studies**’, and after that ‘little study’ at the end of last section, and after Dr. Velikovsky’s works, and really only if it should ever become **profitable** for you to do so. And I mean proceed with caution, possibly starting here: *Ancient Pagan and Modern Christian Symbolism*, by Thomas Inman, M.D., 1875, (<http://www.gutenberg.org/files/38485/38485-h/38485-h.htm>).

About Mercury Dr. Velikovsky appropriately concludes,

Mercury, or Hermes of the Greeks, was a swift messenger of the gods that speeded on his errand sent by Jupiter or Zeus. [And yeah, that would be Kreutz Sungrazer “swift”.]

In my understanding Mercury was once a satellite of Jupiter [and/or] of Saturn [and/or Uranus and Neptune] and under circumstances not understood by me, was directed toward the sun [and ‘**visited**’ the Earth along the way at least twice] and [was finally] caught there in an orbit still elliptical. It could, however, have been a comet passing near Jupiter [on its way from further out, and possibly extracting Venus and/or Mars in the process] and the entwined snakes of the caduceus may memorialize the appearance it had [- evidently having either a ‘leading’ or ‘trailing’ and sometimes ‘spin-twisted’, *double cometary tail* -] when seen by the inhabitants of the Earth [and surely originally seen so *magnified* through the *water lens*]. There are indices [or indications] that point toward Mercury’s involvement in the catastrophe that is described in

Genesis as the confusion of the builders of the Tower of Babel, something that in modern medical terms seems like a consequence of a deep electrical shock.

So here we get the hint—evidently missed by Dr. Velikovsky—that Mercury must have **'visited'** Earth, and exchanged *electromagnetic energy* with Earth, at least twice, Dr. Velikovsky here only identifying The 2nd Visit that caused, surely among other global “commotions”, the destruction of the Tower of Babel, if not also somehow helping with the **'confounding of languages'**.

And though the **'confounding of languages'** using a “deep electrical shock” would seem **possible** for God, (and contrary to my explanations last section—yes, possibly more ‘wild-goose-chasing’), surely an *electromagnetic discharge* alone—or what might otherwise be considered ‘shock therapy’ or ‘electro-reprogramming’, the result of Mercury *discharging* to the Earth—could only at best be another *natural phenomena* that God **used to confound** their **language**, that is, using it to ‘reprogram’ everyone’s brain with a new **language**.

And there are at least two mass, ‘brain-reprogramming’ events to come. The next being when, as I **see** it, God **'unconfounds language'** again at the beginning of The Millennium, maybe using the Coming Red Planet, and the last being at the end of The Millennium. And though the next one may offer similar ‘electro-reprogramming’ opportunities, the last one, a ‘selective memory wipe’, I do not **see** as accompanied by a **predestinated, planet to planet**, “deep electric shock”. And it occurs to me—regardless of Mary Shelly’s ‘monstrous imaginings’—that Adam and Eve must have been given some level of **knowledge** when they were **created**, which I also do not **see** as requiring any ‘naturally-generated’, ‘massive electric jolt’ to activate. So no, I’m still guessing, more like with Adam and Eve, that God didn’t **use** “deep electrical shock” to ‘implant’ and/or ‘remove’ **knowledge** from our brains at any time—not that He couldn’t, but that He didn’t and won’t. And I mean it makes more sense to me in this case that **'abracadabra'** does the whole job, and that the **predestinated** ‘electric jolts’ were needed for other things, like for bringing down the *water canopy*, and destroying the Tower of Babel, and finally for restoring the *water canopy*. But there I go again talking like I **know** something about **thoughts** and **ways** that are really, ‘far and away’, **'unimaginably higher'** than mine.

Still I should again acknowledge that this ‘Tower of Babel incident’ has characteristics of one of God’s **'natural' great judgments** too, because when I say “twice”, I mean that, though Dr. Velikovsky thought it was Saturn ‘going nova’ that brought the ‘extra water’ to Earth, and not that it was carried by Mercury from Saturn, and certainly not that the ‘extra water’ was **'shocked out'** of Earth’s sky, and **'squeezed out'** of the ground, by Mercury, as [Psalm 104:5-10](#) implies, we can deduce here that it evidently did **visit** Earth first at The Flood and at least one more time at the Tower of Babel. However like some of The Visits of Mars, we will consider evidence that The 2nd Visit of Mercury was not severe enough, ‘destruction-wise’, to rate as one of the 7 Great Natural Judgments of The Ages of Creation, but certainly one of the top 13.

Still, peoples all over the World recorded this “confusion” of languages. So evidently with a reputation for ‘global destruction’ after The Flood, on it’s 2nd Visit Mercury added to that reputation a ‘profound psychological influence’, which apparently was useful to Satan to **'deceive the whole world'** to **worship** him through Mercury back then too.

In the section entitled *Mercury*, from *In the Beginning*, Dr. Velikovsky offers some specifics about Mercury from an Ancient Egyptian perspective...

In the year of the world one thousand nine hundred and forty-four, two hundred and eighty-eight years after the Deluge [1656 + 288 = 1944—yes!], a comet was seen in Egypt of the nature of Saturn, [or that from Egypt looked like it came from Saturn] in the vicinity of Cairo, in the constellation of Capricorn, and within the space of sixty-five days it traversed three [Zodiac] signs in the sky. Confusions of languages and dispersals of peoples followed. On this the text of the eleventh chapter of Genesis speaks in more detail. [Abraham Rockenbach, *De Cometis Tractatus Novus Methodicus*, 1602, p.113f, from J. Hevelius, *Cometographia*, 1668.]

This account, besides revealing there was 288 years between The Visits of Mercury—assuming there were only two—also implies that the worst of this 2nd Visit was not really any kind of ‘global destruction’, but more just the “confusion of languages”, and that this is what led to “dispersals of peoples”, that is, much more than any **‘global natural catastrophe’** may have. And it is appropriate to also mention that “the text of the [tenth and] eleventh chapter of Genesis speaks...” of no ‘cataclysm’ either, but only about **the people**, and when God

...did there confound the language of all the earth, [and so] from thence did the LORD scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth [Gen 11:9](#).

And speaking of characteristics of God’s **great judgments**, *In the Beginning* also documents, in the sections entitled, *The Confusion of Languages* and *Mercury*, “many” ancient ‘myths’ that associate this ‘universal shock’ at Babel to an accompanying “mighty wind”. But evidently Dr. Velikovsky with his sources also sometimes confuses Mercury’s relatively ‘less severe work’ with the ‘more severe work’ of Venus. Though yes, a “mighty wind” is one of the conditions you should expect anytime another *charged planet* larger than the Moon is in close proximity to the Earth. And it makes sense that this **‘natural’ judgment** of God brought chaos, though I’m thinking that, in the case of the Tower of Babel, most of the chaos was caused by the “confusion of languages” which, again, I **see** as happening more by God’s instant **‘abracadabra’** than by what He otherwise ‘set in motion’ to **‘naturally’** happen following **the curse**. And surely all God’s **great judgments** are accompanied by some of His **‘abracadabra’**. But for this reason, that the ‘greater chaos’ was more the result of God’s instant **‘abracadabra’** than by His ‘long-time-coming’, **‘natural great judgment’**, I will continue to leave this **judgment** out of my now reduced ‘top 7’ Natural Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation.

Still and evidently, it was at least partly a **‘natural’ judgment**—again, **‘naturally falling out’ perfectly** in God’s timing, set in motion at **the curse**—that at that point “destroyed” the Tower of Babel, and, along with the “confusion of languages”, took things ‘back to square one’ again. But the **judgment** that is **the curse** surely also to a significant extent contributed, and along with the “confusion of languages”, evidently even more significant, brought not just “fierce strife and hate”, but also “strong necessity”, that is, ‘hard times’, or as “the Sibyl”, one of the 2nd to 6th Century “prophetesses” recorded in the *Oracula Sibyllina (The Sibylline Oracles)*, “prophesied”,

When are fulfilled the threats of the great God
With which he threatened men, when formerly
In the Assyrian land they built a tower,

And all were of one speech, and wished to rise
Even till they climbed unto the starry heaven,
Then the Immortal raised a mighty wind
And laid upon them strong necessity;
For when the wind threw down the mighty tower,
Then rose among mankind fierce strife and hate.
One speech was changed into many dialects,
And earth was filled with divers tribes and kings

[Quoted by Theophilus of Antioch [Patriarch of Antioch, 2nd Century], *To Autolytus II*, p.xxxi, transl. by M. Dods in *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Vol.II, 1962; from Josephus, *Antiquities*, Vol.I. p.109-121; Bochart, *Geographia Sacra*, Vol.I, p.13; *The Sibylline Oracles*, Vol.III. p.97-107 in R. Charles ed., *Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*, 1913, Vol.I, p.380 f.]

So yeah, this '**global natural' judgment** of God must have been experienced by all, and was part of what "laid upon them [that is, everyone] strong necessity", that is, 'very hard times'. But again, this hardship apparently "rose" more because "one speech was changed" to "many dialects", creating "divers tribes and kings", causing **mankind** to experience "then...fierce strife and hate", evidently because of the competition to survive and/or dominate. 'Very hard times' indeed, and 'the hardest of times', except compared to The 1st Visit of Mercury, and the still coming Visits of Venus, Mars, and, worst of all, the Coming Red Planet.

And apparently the **tower** itself, reportedly partly intended by the builders to save them from the possibility of another 'global flood', also became the 'lightning rod' to receive...

"...fire from heaven [that] fell in the midst of the tower and broke it asunder." [Quoted in Bochart, *Geographia Sacra*. Vol. I., p.13, from M. Adler, *The Itinerary of Benjamin of Tudela*, 1907],

where, by one account, this 'fiery lighting bolt' destroyed the top third of the tower, while the bottom third "sank" into the melting ground (*Tractate Sanhedrin* XI (fol. 109A) of Seder Nezikin, transl. by H. Freedman, ed. by I. Epstein, 1935, p.748), and where the "mighty wind", (or you can read, **stormy wind** or **whirlwind**), surely like some that was and will be 'stirred up' in other **great judgments** too, finally totally 'finished it off'.

And again, by-the-way, among the Mexican traditions about this event—whose ancestors were alive then too, right?—someone described the builders of the Tower of Babel, and...

"...tells of giants who built a tower that almost reached the heavens, when it was destroyed by a thunderbolt." [See notes attached to Reference 10 in the section, *The Confusion of Languages* from *In the Beginning*, or wait for it to come around again in **SECTION 7**.]

Yes, hard times, or more specifically, **evil**, 'Nimrod-like', '**angel-human-giant-king**' times, but also ultimately another '**Satan-made-a-show-of-openly-by-God**' time too, and though not yet 'cave-dwelling' times, certainly 'back-to-square-one' times, where, again, "strong necessity" occupied most everyone as they competed to survive, but also for dominance, as "tribes and kings" have ever since.

And we will explore these times, as well as the times before The Flood, some

more this section, and in the entire text of *In the Beginning* next section. But now let's get back to the view of this same 'big picture' as seen from Dr. Velikovsky's 'astronomical analysis' of Mercury and its "secrets". Dr. Velikovsky continues in paragraph 25 of his essay entitled, *Mercury*, explaining,

The claim is that Mercury travels on its present orbit only since some five or six [but really about 4½] thousand years. This view conflicts with both standard alternatives—of [Laplace's] nebular and of [more recent] tidal theories of the origin of the planetary family [- and that would be "tidal theories" such as the "Chamberlin-Moulton planetesimal hypothesis", which is supposedly when *planets* were 'splashed' from the Sun when it was 'hit' or 'passed' by another large *body*], and [this view - Dr. Velikovsky's - conflicts] with the [now popular] assumption that the planets occupy the same orbits since billions of years. Since the early days of modern science, actually since [the '**propaganda**' popularized by] Aristotle, it was considered undisputable that, since the origin of the solar system, Mercury has been moving on the very same path [near the Sun]. The study of ancient texts convinced me that there was nothing to this belief besides wishful thinking: [because the evidence is clear that] the entire solar system was repeatedly rearranged. Mercury does not occupy its orbit since six billion years—the assumed age of the universe (which by the way was repeatedly re-assessed from 2 billion when I started my studies till by now [when] 10 and 12 billion years are occasionally heard).

Actually, "10 and 12 billion" are now nearer to what is commonly accepted for the age of the entire Universe, though that figure topped out at around 20 billion before settling back down to the present figure of 13.7 billion, and the Solar System 'settled' at between 4 and 5 billion, though again, this will only be until the new 'super telescopes' have been online a little while, because, if Jesus tarries long enough, the further extended 'perspectives' of these *giant telescopes* now under construction—one, which is an especially-effective-for-deep-space, 60-plus, *sub-radio-frequencies satellite dish array*, and which is already partially in operation in the Central Valley of Chile, will force the further extension of these figures, that is, when they find **the stars** in God's Universe only continue to extend as far as they can see, again.

But I should also not overlook another opportunity to correct Dr. Velikovsky when he said, "...there is nothing to this belief [in 'old orbits'] besides wishful thinking..." No, and again, really this not just ignorant and/or misguided thought, but also falsified and misrepresented thought, and therefore evidence of '**satanic conspiracy**'. And we can even **see** here, if you are yet **able**, that it involves Satan's 'change of plans', that is, a change from the '**false worship**' of Creation, that is, from **worshipping 'created things'**, to '**self-worship**'.

And yes, all "indices"—or indications—are that the all the *planets* and *moons*, and all the *asteroids* and *comets* of our Solar System, have only been a few thousand years in their present *orbits*, this also sufficiently enough deduced by other means, including that they are **1)** mostly all 'beaten-up' by *impact craters* and *volcanic action*, at least where surfaces are visible, and/or are evidently just pieces of what's left over from a *collision* of larger *objects*, and because **2)** some of these *objects* still have atmospheres that should be otherwise long gone, and because **3)** they are generally all still 'too hot', at least on the inside.

And by all this we may also deduce that it all began at The Fall, all this

'rearranging' beginning at the moment, by God's '**perfectly administered command**', and especially because of the beginning of *electromagnetic, gravitational, radioactive* and *atomic decay*, where our Solar System started to slowly 'fall apart', maybe with the first significant *inelastic collisions* seen from Earth afterward—through the *water canopy lens*—being the ones that created the Oort Cloud and the Kuiper and Scattered Disc *asteroid belts*, along with that "lunar race", evidently including Mercury, many of which were otherwise caught, if not consumed by all the *giant planets*, and if escaping them finally swallowed by the Sun, or still orbiting as *comets*, maybe still influenced *by the giant planets*, all of which somewhere along the way led to the *collision* that made the Main Asteroid Belt between Mars and Jupiter. And Saturn's 'colossal explosion', which probably involved an alignment with Jupiter—and Mercury—but while Mercury at the same time arrived to accost the Earth, and a few centuries later 'spun around' to do so again, and where somewhere along the way Mercury also played a part in directing Venus toward Earth, that is, after Venus had 'erupted' out of Jupiter onto the scene—this possibly an event Mercury was 'pulling for', pun intended—and where all this 'rearrangement' altogether seems to imply that Venus 'emerged' before Mercury 'settled' into its present *orbit* nearest 'his' now 'best buddy' the Sun.

Also helping with such speculative deduction is the fact that so many of the *objects* in our Solar System have *precessions*, or "wobbles", that are apparently due to the combination of the Sun's powerful both *gravitational* and *magnetic field forces*, and also to various 'offsetting encounters'. But these *fields* and *forces*, though originally 'permanent', are now in the state of *decay*—something Dr. Velikovsky apparently somewhat misunderstood, but which nonetheless implies that this *decay* was initiated by God, specifically by **the curse**, and primarily by the relatively fast *decay of magnetic fields* since The Fall, and especially of the Sun's, and of the *giant planets*, which has thrown our Solar System, which God originally **created** to be *stable*, so 'quickly'—as 'quickly' as such 'spinning' *electromagnets* do *decay*—'out of balance'. But of course this was partly for the **purpose**, among other reasons, to '**administer**' His **great judgments** precisely as **predestinated**, some of which are surely still 'on the way'.

Or as Dr. Velikovsky more simply—though to some degree unwittingly—puts it,

A perturbation [that is, any disruption of an *orbit* of any sort] displacing a planet or a satellite by a few seconds of arc must [eventually] direct it from its orbit. [I. Velikovsky, "*COSMOS WITHOUT GRAVITATION*", 1946, fact 15, <http://www.varchive.org/ce/cosmos.htm>.]

But Dr. Velikovsky is more specific as to how he sees these newly '**cursed laws**' working, though of course he does not recognize them as **cursed** or even 'new' in any way. Still he does a remarkable job teaching aspects of God's reality, though seeing such '**cursed ordained laws**' as just nature's "celestial mechanics" or "motions", but also seeing them, metaphorically, and as described in "ancient texts", as "theomachy", "the battle of the gods", or just as their 'interactions'.

Dr. Velikovsky also does a good job of exposing some very important misconceptions, where I will only try to clarify his analysis as necessary, and mostly just in places where I needed to attempt to clarify it for myself. And it turns out we're overdue to expose a 'whooper' of a 'wild goose chase'—maybe one of the biggest 'scientific wild goose chases' in modern history, even since the time many believed that the World was 'flat'—if indeed many ever really did—and what's more, maybe really two such 'whoppers'. I mean it's unfortunate that *scientists* today, all across God's wide, 'flat Earth', are still 'chasing' such imaginary 'big flat geese'. And naturally Satan's still having a 'big flat field day', one that seems to promote

the participation of his '**subordinate**' **angels**, supposedly from 'deep space', as you may finally **understand** before were done.

In paragraph 26 Dr. Velikovsky theorizes,

Already before the publication of *Worlds in Collision* I considered (and let it be set in print) a system of the world in which the sun, being a charged body in rotation, creates a magnetic field; the planets, being charged bodies, move in that magnetic field and are compelled to proceed on their orbits [because of this *magnetic energy* alone, there being no such thing as 'gravitational attraction', just *magnetic attraction* and *repulsion*]; to this phenomenon I gave the name "circumduction", borrowed from J. Kepler (see my *Cosmos Without Gravitation*, 1946 [at VArchive.org under]). I considered Mercury's precession [or its very slow 'wobble'], discovered by Leverrier in 1846, as resulting from such an effect, and, possibly, from a growing charge on Mercury [partly acquired from the continued close *orbit* around the Sun—and besides because of its preceding celestial "battles" and "interactions"]. I considered Einstein's use of Mercury's precession [or 'orbital wobble'] as an *ad hoc* [or 'specialized' and therefore, in this case, 'inconclusive'] argument for the General Theory of Relativity (certainly not a prediction, as James Jeans [previously] wrote in *The Encyclopedia Britannica*).

No such thing as 'gravity'?! *Magnetism* and *electromagnetism* explain all motion?!—including *celestial mechanics*?!—that is, how *planets, moons, comets* and *asteroids orbit*?! The word for this *force* Dr. Velikovsky offers is "circumduction", evidently derived from 'circumference', referring to the *circular motion* of *orbits*, and from 'induction', meaning, when related to *electricity* or *magnetism*, the process by which a body with *electric* or *magnetic properties* produces *magnetism*, an *electric charge*, *electricity*, and/or an *electromotive* (moving) *force* in a neighboring *body* without contact. So yes, from Dr. Velikovsky's perspective we might therefore refer to 'gravity' as really just an unrecognized form of *magnetic attraction*.

Then what does Dr. Velikovsky think happened when that 'apple' fell out of that tree and hit Sir Isaac on his noggin? It is common knowledge that all *atoms* are complex *magnets* and function by *magnetic forces* in a variety of ways. Their *nuclei* (the plural of *nucleus*), or centers, contain collections of *quarks* called *protons* and neutrons which altogether have a *net positive charge*. And these *nuclei* are 'orbited' by *electrons*, which are *negatively charged*. So again, *atoms* are *magnets* and therefore, apparently naturally, that is, as God **created** and then **cursed** them, *attract* or *repel* each other. And evidently *atoms* and *molecules* (*bonded atoms*) tend to *attract* each other in the *solid* or *liquid* state—this phenomenon, Dr. Velikovsky suggests, being confused with 'gravity'—but they apparently also tend to *repel* each other in the *gaseous state*—this phenomenon generally misunderstood and/or ignored as it would otherwise have to be acknowledged that it 'goes against the concept of gravity'.

And you might want to eventually tackle the list of Dr. Velikovsky's reasons for believing this, in his essay, *Cosmos Without Gravitation*, at VArchive.org under his [Collected Essays](#). In this essay he documents such phenomenon as that there is no measurable *lateral* or 'sideways' *force* of 'gravity' detectable from a close-by *mountain range*, even by the Himalayas, as should be expected because of their great *mass*, and that the *molecules* in our *atmosphere*, from *nitrogen* to *oxygen*, though varying greatly by *weight*, do not become 'gravitationally layered', or

layered like *sediment* by 'weight' (or *density*) as should be expected if only 'gravity' was involved, but for the most part stay fully mixed—or we would die—with the necessary exception that the heaviest of *atmospheric gases*, *ozone* (O₃), stays in a *layer* at the top, effectively screening out a lot of harmful *cosmic radiation*—or, again, we would die—while most the rest of the range of lighter *atmospheric molecules* remain well mixed beneath, even in places where there is little to no wind and 'settling' should, if 'gravity' were real, occur—and again, if it did we would all die— Dr. Velikovsky suggesting that *atoms* and *molecules* in their *gaseous state* do not *magnetically attract* each other but instead are *magnetically repulsive*, naturally tending to bounce off each other, thereby keeping themselves fully mixed, though again, as I think Dr. Velikovsky also implies, in some cases *layering* can occur, like with *ozone* (O₃) on top, because of how well— or poorly—certain *atoms* or *molecules* in various conditions naturally *repel* each other. I mean evidently a great enough difference in the ability of *atoms* or *molecules* to *repel* each other can cause *layering*, where more 'bouncy' ones separate themselves below less 'bouncy' ones. And at least this makes sense for what is going on with the 'mixing' and 'layering' or our *atmospheric gases*, apparently showing that 'gravity' doesn't really exist. But again I should repeat that Dr. Velikovsky suggests that *atoms* or *molecules* in their *solid* or *liquid states* naturally, instead of *repelling*, *attract* each other, and I presume he means that this is the phenomenon that has been mistaken for 'gravity', 'gravity' itself supposedly an altogether mistaken concept.

And for one more of the many examples, he also exposes the somewhat ignored phenomenon that there is a greater 'gravitational force' over the *oceans* than over *land*, though *land* is on the average nearly 3 times more *dense* than *water*, indicating *land* should create the greater 'gravitational force', Dr. Velikovsky suggesting that *water's* stronger *magnetic properties* cause it to more *forcefully magnetically attract* other *solid* or *liquid masses*.

And one more time, to limit the confusion, Dr. Velikovsky delineates the difference between the two kinds of *magnetic attraction* and *repulsion*. One is what I will call 'normal' *atomic* (and/or *molecular*) *magnetic attraction* that he thinks is applicable to *solids* and *liquids*, and misunderstood as 'gravity', along with the 'normal' *atomic magnetic repulsion* evidently applicable to *gases*, and which is misidentified as a phenomenon related to *gas pressure*, or just ignored. And the other is what I will call 'special' *electromagnetic attraction* and *repulsion*, because it operates by the *flow* of *electrons*, and is a *force* (or are *forces*) understood to accompany *magnets* and *electromagnets*. So yes, given these observations it appears that there may be no such thing as 'gravity', just *atomic magnetic attraction* and *repulsion* that may also sometimes be influenced by *electromagnetic attraction* and *repulsion*. So apparently we are being asked to believe that there is *atomic attraction* and *repulsion*, and *electromagnetic attraction* and *repulsion*, these 2 (or 4) *forces* working together to establish *stable orbits*, as well as do everything else 'gravity' does, including everything else 'gravity' can't do too.

And I suppose this still agrees with *scripture*, that *by* God—and Jesus—*all things consist*, or "hold together", but evidently also sometimes in this '**God-ordained**' process, *repel* each other—that is, *all things consist* by *atom magnets* that *God hast created* to operate differently in their various *states*—which evidently Dr. Velikovsky thinks everyone misunderstands as a separate, imaginary phenomenon called 'gravity'. And I hope my repetition was sufficient for the beginning of an *understanding* of all this. Still by all means read through the last 5 paragraphs, with side trips to a dictionary, and/or encyclopedia, and/or to Dr. Velikovsky's essay—as many times as necessary to get one. But before I take a

stand on all this, let's hear some more of Dr. Velikovsky's case from his essay entitled, *Mercury*.

In my debate with Einstein [about "circumduction", etc.], already early, in a letter written in August or September, 1952, I drew his attention to charges and consequences for Mercury, traveling in the extended corona of the sun. I returned to this also later in our correspondence.

Dr. Dicke came up with an oblate sun [depressed at the poles, widened at the Equator] as a partial cause of the Mercurial anomaly. I drew his attention to the fact that he disregarded the by then discovered solar plasma and the magnetic field centered on the sun and permeating the solar system. He gave me a strange answer: "That is something we have to disregard".

In my paper at the San Francisco Symposium, "Velikovsky's Challenge to Science," I once more drew attention to the problem and its consistent evasion in discussions of the General Theory of Relativity. Even in the days of Einstein he must have known of the general magnetic field of the sun, discovered by Hale a few years before Einstein used the argument for his theory; the magnetism of the solar spots was discovered earlier by Hale. Einstein corresponded with Hale on other matters.

I will only also recognize Dr. Dicke's "strange answer" as more evidence of **'satanic conspiracy'**. But I should 'bio' Dr. George Ellery Hale a little more: educated at MIT; Professor of Astrophysics at the University of Chicago; 'co-developer' of the California Institute of Technology (Cal Tech) as a research institution; builder of two Mount Wilson *telescopes*—the 60-inch Hale Telescope was largest in the World in 1908, and the 100-inch Hooker Telescope was largest from 1917 to 1948; then also the Palomar (mountain range) Observatory 200-inch, honorarily named, Hale Telescope was the largest from 1948 until the Russian BTA-6 was built in the Caucasus Mountains in 1976, the Palomar Hale Telescope remaining the second largest until the construction of the Keck 1 Telescope atop the *dormant volcano*, Mauna Kea, in Hawaii in 1993. So Dr. Hale was a prominent figure in the *astronomical sciences* in the early 20th Century.

Considering Dr. Hale's inventions and discoveries of the 'magnetic qualities' of the Sun, and Dr. Einstein's *theories* about 'gravitation', Dr. Velikovsky concludes,

As a matter of methodology it appeared to me improper that Einstein selected the case of Mercurial anomaly (precession of the perihelion [or the *rotation* - or 'slow wobbling movement' - of Mercury's closest point to the Sun in the process of *orbiting*]) for the support of the General Theory of Relativity [including that *massive objects* measurably 'bend space', which in Mercury's case, being so close to the Sun, supposedly causes its 'wobbling orbit'], without eliminating first the possible effect of the solar magnetic field on the precession [or 'wobbling orbit'] of Mercury.

Yes, Dr. Einstein accounted for Mercury's 'wobble' with what he imagined was 'bent space', or a "gravity well" around the Sun, supposedly caused by the great *mass* of the Sun, but he did not consider that the Sun's *magnetic field* could instead be the cause of Mercury's 'wobble', nor did he ever really call this into question, at least

publicly. Though Dr. Velikovsky did, for years, call him on it.

Next, Dr. Velikovsky brings the father of the Theory of Gravity, Sir Isaac Newton, into the conversation, explaining,

According to Newton an inverse cube effect [the supposed *force of magnetic attraction by distance*] when superimposed on [or simultaneously occurring with] an inverse square effect [the supposed *force of gravity by distance*] would result in a precession [‘orbital wobble’]. A regular dipole [‘two-pole’, *positive* and *negative*] magnetic field would produce an inverse cube effect [$1/x^3$] when superimposed on an inverse square effect [$1/x^2$], due to gravitation.

And yes, this is puzzling, at least for me it is, but especially the part where he seems to see the “inverse cube” *force of magnetic attraction* ($1/x^3$) working with the “inverse square” *force of gravity* ($1/x^2$) to cause the ‘wobble’ here, since he doesn’t believe ‘gravity’ exists. Turns out he makes clear in *Cosmos Without Gravitation* that he thinks Sir Isaac is wrong too, that again, the ‘wobble’ is simply the result of the interaction between the Sun’s and Mercury’s ‘normal’ and ‘special’ *magnetic fields*. However I did not find him clear about exactly how. Maybe he means that the ‘normal’ *atomic* (or *molecular*) *magnetic attraction* between Mercury and the Sun measured—like ‘gravity’—by *distance* as the *force* of $1/x^2$ (*inverse square*), where “x” is the *distance* between them, is “superimposed on” the ‘special’ *electromagnetic attraction* between Mercury and the Sun, which is measured as a force of $1/x^3$ (*inverse cube*), where again “x” is the distance between them. And together, as Sir Isaac originally suggests, evidently these two *forces* cause Mercury’s ‘wobbling orbit’, except that they are entirely *magnetic forces*, not including the supposedly nonexistent ‘gravitational’ one. But another of Newton’s ideas, *inertia*, must also play a major role in keeping *objects* in *orbit* as we’ll consider shortly.

But first, consider how these two *magnetic forces*, the stronger “inverse square” ($1/x^2$) *force*—not ‘gravity’, but ‘normal’ *atomic magnetism*—and the weaker “inverse cube” ($1/x^3$) *force*, that is, ‘special’ *electromagnetism*, each get weaker by *distance*. For example, let’s imagine a planet 1 AU (*astronomical unit*) from the Sun. That would be where the Earth is, remember? And let’s say that what is popularly known as the ‘force of gravity’—but is really the ‘normal’ *atomic magnetic force*—from the Sun on Earth, is equal to 1. Now let’s move Earth twice as far away, to 2 AU, just outside the orbit of Mars. The new ‘force of gravity’ from the Sun would be $1/2^2$ or $1/(2 \times 2) = 1/4$ of what it was at 1 AU. Now let’s take Earth out between Jupiter and Saturn, to 10 AU. The new ‘force of gravity’ from the Sun would be $1/10^2$ or $1/(10 \times 10) = 1/100$ of what it was at 1 AU. Near Neptune, at 30 AU, it would be $1/900$ of what it was at 1 AU, I mean assuming it really works that way.

And now let’s consider how much faster the “inverse cube” *force*—or ‘special’ *electromagnetic force*—weakens by *distance*, again using the Earth for the example. At 1 AU, again we’ll say the ‘special’ *electromagnetic force* is equal to 1. Outside Mars, at 2 AU, the new ‘special’ *electromagnetic force* would be $1/2^3$ or $1/(2 \times 2 \times 2) = 1/8$ of what it was at 1 AU. Between Jupiter and Saturn, at 10 AU, it would be $1/10^3$ or $1/(10 \times 10 \times 10) = 1/1000$ of what it was at 1 AU. And out near Neptune, at 30 AU, it would be $1/27,000$ of what it was at 1 AU.

And this raises some questions for me. Dr. Velikovsky says that “the magnetic field [is] centered on the sun and [is] permeating the solar system...” One question is, does he think that the ‘special’ *electromagnetic force* would still be a “significant” *force* at 30 AU? I don’t know, but this seems at least questionable.

And if my math is right, the $1/x^2$ 'normal' *force* becomes twice as great as the $1/x^3$ 'special' *force* when you double the *distance*, 10 times greater at 10 times the *distance*, and 30 times greater than the 30 times the *distance*, and so on. So apparently the *stability of orbits* is 'exponentially lessened' by *distance*. So it seems. More specifically, it seems that the stronger 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction*, at 30 AU, results in much less *stable orbits* than ones closer to the Sun. Uh-huh, so it seems. And with this being how much slower the 'force of gravity' gets weaker over *distance* compared to the 'force of magnetism', or as I define what Dr. Velikovsky means, how much slower 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction* gets weaker over *distance* compared to 'special' *electromagnetic attraction*, though both these *forces* becoming dramatically weaker at 30 AU and beyond, then maybe you can **see** that after **the curse**, things would 'naturally' start to 'fall apart' much faster out near and beyond Neptune, yes, and in the process evidently send Mercury 'on his way' early on, as we will consider further 'along our way' too.

But why in these cases aren't we considering the 'forces of gravity' or 'magnetism' in the other direction too, that is, the *force* of the Earth 'pulling' on the Sun? Because it is already popularly assumed by *scientists* that since the Sun is so much bigger than Earth it makes Earth's 'pull' on the Sun 'negligible', or what is mathematically considered "insignificant", at least for the purposes of these examples. But of course in cases where bodies are closer in size, the *forces* from both directions must be considered. And I can only hope this **exercise** with "inverse square" and "inverse cube" *forces* will eventually help you **understand** the **revelation** about God's **cursed** Creation at the end of the last paragraph.

Dr. Velikovsky next highlights Dr. Hale's contributions to the debate, informing us that,

The general magnetic field of the Sun was made known by G. E. Hale in 1912 at the time when Einstein was construing [read, imagining] his General Theory [that *massive objects* measurably 'bend space' and therefore whatever passes through that *space*]. The magnetic property of solar spots had been discovered at the beginning of the century by the same Hale. On the 14th of October, 1913, Einstein wrote to Hale on the issue of another of his advance claims [or predictions], actually the only one that could put claim to this definition [since the other things he supposedly 'predicted' had already been predicted by others]. In his letter he inquired whether there was a possibility to observe in broad daylight, very close to the rim of the sun, some fixed star, this with the help of the powerful telescope that Hale built (Mt. Wilson 100-inch telescope). It was a naive inquiry; however, it was suggested to Einstein by another physicist in Zurich and he followed the advice—the idea was that if the answer were positive there would be no need to wait for a full solar eclipse for observing whether the sun (or any large mass) deflects [or 'bends'] a ray of light from its rectilinear [straight-line] path [as it passes by the "large mass"]. Writing to Hale, Einstein showed much respect—but where he had to take into account Hale's great discoveries [about the Sun's *magnetic field*], he omitted to do so. Only by excluding [or 'ruling-out'] the possibility that magnetic fields deflect a ray of light from rectilinear [straight-line] passage, would [or could] Einstein have cleared the way for offering an explanation based on a new ["General Relativity"] principle in science.

In other words, Dr. Einstein's Theory of General Relativity—including that the *mass* of *objects* can 'bend space', as well as 'bend' what passes through that 'bent space', supposedly including both other *objects* and *light*, cannot be considered a valid *theory* until the effects that *magnetic fields* have on *charged* and *uncharged objects*, and *light*, are considered—which to this day— if it has been done at all— has been mostly ignored, evidently mostly because Sir Isaac's and Dr. Einstein's *theories* remain 'sacrosanct' in every sense of the word. But of course I **see** a '**satanic conspiracy**' here too, as I will also continue to further clarify.

And finally Dr. Velikovsky offers his 'theory', explaining,

In my understanding that goes back to the forties, the Sun being a rotating charged body creates a magnetic field that stretches far into interplanetary space [- this apparently being just the *force* that supposedly gets weaker faster over *distance*, 'special' *electromagnetic force*, as opposed to the stronger one, 'normal' *atomic magnetic force*]. This ['special'] field rotates with the Sun on which it is centered; [it supposedly reaches with still "significant" strength] at [or to] the distance of any planet, [where] the field travels the length of the planetary orbit in the same time it needs for one axial rotation, or one turn of the Sun on its axis.

Now here Dr. Velikovsky does not seem to be considering both the $1/x^3$ along with $1/x^2$ *forces*, does he. He speaks instead here of just one "field". Is it that he thinks that the 'magnetic attraction' that creates *orbits* operates by one *law*, a *law* that can be expressed as a $1/x^2$ force "superimposed on" a $1/x^3$ one? But we know some *forces* are one or the other, not both, and that their strengths are dramatically different at different *distances*. And Dr. Velikovsky, in *Cosmos Without Gravitation*, does speak of two kinds of 'magnetic force', the first being the one I have further identified as 'normal', that is, atomic (or *molecular*) *atomic magnetic attraction*, involving *solids* and *liquids*, and *repulsion*, involving *gases*, these *forces* in operation because all *atoms* are essentially *charged magnets*, and the second being the one I have further identified as 'special' *electromagnetic attraction or repulsion*, as in *magnets* and *electromagnets*, though again, here he does not seem to be including both kinds, unless he is thinking of them together as one *force*, some kind of 'single', "superimposed" version. Here he also describes this "field" as 'rotating', since it emanates from a *rotating body*. So I assume he must also think the 'normal' *atomic magnetic field* of a thrown, spinning rock, which is being 'normally' *attracted* back toward Earth, 'spins' with that rock too, I mean unless he just didn't think it all that far through.

And he does not seem to be referring to both 'normal' and 'special' *magnetic forces* when he next simply states that,

Mercury is a charged body and it moves in the solar magnetic field that rotates swifter than Mercury proceeds on its orbit.

And certainly Dr. Velikovsky could just be compartmentalizing here—not that I can confidently say that I '**rightly understand**' all this either—while Dr. Einstein surely overlooked—or ignored—all *theories* of *magnetism* altogether. But Dr. Velikovsky did not give up on Dr. Einstein.

Speaking of their "long debate", he notes,

In August 1952 I started my long debate with Einstein on the question whether inertia [- the tendency of *mass* to remain still if still or keep moving if

moving] and gravitation are the only forces responsible for all the movements of the celestial clock [or of the *stars* and *planets*], or whether electricity and magnetism, to whatever extent, need to be considered, too. I put the problem of Mercury squarely before him on this issue. I wrote:

Now the visible streamers of the sun that conveyed to Hale the idea that the sun is a magnet reach a long way towards Mercury, almost half the way. Was the electromagnetic state of the sun ever considered as the cause of the ['wobbling'] anomaly? The effect of the electromagnetic action must have been reckoned, and possibly excluded, but not disregarded... Also the fact that the sun radiates at the expense of splitting (or building-up) of atoms was never followed through to the inevitable conclusion that the sun *is* a charged body in motion. At least the action of the magnetic spots of the sun with a field intensity reaching four or five thousand gauss should have been, if only once, taken into computation for its influence on planetary motion, Mercury in the first place, if only for the purpose of showing it as ineffective.

So Dr. Velikovsky is respectfully suggesting that Dr. Einstein prove him wrong—prove that “electromagnetic action” does not play a role in “celestial mechanics”. And by now you should be **able** to **see**, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, that it must, and a big role at that, maybe even to the complete exclusion of Sir Isaac Newton’s Theory of Gravity—but not to his Theory of Inertia—and maybe also making Dr. Einstein’s ‘space-bending’ General Relativity Theory completely worthless too, though you should be **able** to **see** that some things still need to be cleared up.

In fact this is where we can more easily **see** that Dr. Velikovsky’s *theories* cannot be considered fully valid either, at least as they are, because it is plain here that he was convinced that the Sun has been “splitting...atoms” for billions of years, that is, ‘burning’ by *thermonuclear* “fission and fusion”, which really could only have been happening before **the curse**. So he was here attributing—or “construing”—imaginary, long-ongoing “mechanics”—or at least ones that are no longer ongoing—to the maintenance of the entire Universe over billions of years. I mean he imagined a supposedly ‘indefinitely-burning’, “fusion and fission” *thermonuclear-powered* Sun, along with its ‘planet-managing-and-stabilizing’, ‘unimaginably-long-time-slowness’, ‘rotation-powered’ *electromagnetic field*, that has worked with the also ‘unimaginably-long-time-slowness’, ‘rotation-powered’ *electromagnetic fields* of the *planets*, etc., too, all together supposedly doing what they’re now doing for billions of years, and remaining able to do so for billions more.

And remember it’s hard to completely pardon him for such a ‘far-reaching’ oversight because Dr. Velikovsky must have gone through the “Neutrino Crisis” in the early 1970’s too—which should have confirmed for him too that the Sun is at least no longer *burning*, almost endlessly, by *thermonuclear fusion*, but simply mostly by the *consumption* of its *fuel*, and thereby measurably ‘shrinking’, not to mention that all *objects* in our Solar System are measurably slowing down, from the Sun on out, including both *rotations* and *velocities of orbit*, none of which Dr. Velikovsky, “if only for the purpose of showing it ineffective”, has called any attention to either. Of course I should concede here too that the Sun may not be ‘burning’ and ‘shrinking’ by “gravitation collapse”, but mostly just by the *burning of fuel*, evidently mostly *hydrogen*, that is, unless ‘solid-atomic-magnetic-attraction

collapse' overcoming the 'gaseous-atomic-magnetic-repulsion' is a real phenomenon to be factored in too.

And now we can get to the idea that *objects* tend to maintain their *momentum*, also known as *inertia*, which is that other 'necessary force'—or phenomenon—that helps keeps *objects* in *orbit*, commonly identified as one of Sir Isaac's "laws of motion"—that *objects* in *motion* tend to continue in *motion*, while objects at rest tend to stay at rest, unless acted on by a *force*. Yes, but 'stay in motion' for billions of years? Not in this Solar System, though apparently Dr. Velikovsky thinks so. I mean it is evidently '**God-ordained truth**'—and amazing—that if an *object* was moving in a total "vacuum", that is, in a *space* that had absolutely no other *atoms* or *molecules* in it, so that there was no possibility of any 'wind friction', and there were no other *significant forces* acting on it, then it could, theoretically, keep moving, and at the same *velocity*, forever, except when it would slow down, bounce and change direction, and/or break in pieces, depending on whether such *collisions* with the sides of this less than infinitely-sized "vacuum chamber" was *elastic* or *inelastic*. But *friction* and both *elastic* and *inelastic collisions* produce *heat*, which would, in a direct exchange, slow this *object*, or slow the 'pieces' of this *object*, though if a lump of *clay*, it could just flatten out and stick to the side, making a warmer lump of *clay*, and, depending on it's size, a somewhat warmer *vacuum chamber* too, for example.

But I'm also talking about another amazing, '**God-ordained truth**', that is, about the Conservation of Mass and Energy. This part of the **appointed...ordinances of heaven and earth** ensures that 'neither *mass* nor *energy* is ever created or destroyed'—*mass* can only be rearranged, again and again, and *energy* can only be converted from one form to another, and to another, and so on.

So with the example of our *inelastic collision*—the lump of clay 'squishing' and 'sticking' against the wall of the *vacuum chamber*—all the *energy* of it's *velocity* (*kinetic energy*) would be converted to *heat energy* (or *thermal energy*). But in the example of the *elastic collision*—the *object* that bounces but also breaks in pieces—some of the *energy* remains in the *velocity*, or in the *velocity* of its pieces, but less of it altogether, so the pieces should heat up, and they will slow, but they, or maybe just some of them, could speed up too, because there is another 'exchange of energy' involved. I mean some of the *kinetic energy* was instead used to break some of the *atomic* or *molecular bonds* holding this *object* together, and some of that *energy* could be transferred into *thermal energy* too, but some of it could instead be transferred into additional *kinetic energy* for some of the pieces. And the 'squishing' of that *clay*, by-the-way, must break some *bonds* too, that energy just converted to *heat*.

So surely *kinetic energy* can be all or partly converted into *thermal energy*, and *atomic energy* can be converted into *thermal* and/or *kinetic energy*, all in a multitude of ways, but *mass*, or *atoms*, or at least their *atomic particles* and *energy*, whatever the form, cannot be created or destroyed, that is, *mass* can only be endlessly 'rearranged', and *energy* can only be endlessly 'exchanged' from one form to others. Yeah, that's how God's Creation works. And you should **see** that such **ordinances of heaven and earth** could be useful in making the Universe last forever, I mean if God didn't initiate *atomic*, '*gravitational*', *radioactive* and *magnetic decay*, not to mention all the other consequences of **the curse**, and the resulting 'fall out' from it.

And we did talk about some of the other many kinds of *atomic energy* in **SECTION 2**, and we could talk about *chemical energy*—a kind of *atomic* or *molecular energy*—but instead, for now, I'll just mention *potential energy*, that, for example, if

you push an *object* that tumbles downhill, it's *potential energy*—the *energy* it took to elevate it in the first place—will first be converted to *kinetic energy*, and also, along the way, a little to *thermal energy* by *friction* with the sloping ground, till it comes to a rest at the bottom, that is, as close as it is free to reach the center of the Earth, and that is, assuming it doesn't *collide* with another *object* and break in pieces along the way, where the *transfers* of *energy* get more complicated, huh. But you should rehearse what happens if it hits another *object* on its way, considering both *elastic* and *inelastic collisions*.

Why? Well, this is really the same kind of *energy transfers* that happen to *objects* in our Solar system when they are given a little 'push'—which *astronomers* call *perturbations*—and they 'fall out' of their *orbits*, 'falling' toward the nearest larger body, and if there is not another one near enough, then toward the Sun, since *objects* on Earth and in the *space* of our Solar System are all apparently most *significantly* 'pulled-on' by the 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction* ($1/x^2$) of the largest *objects* nearest to them.

And this is now happening evidently because *objects* in our Solar System cannot 'continue in motion' as freely as they did before ***the curse***. Now, apparently, *space* is not a completely empty *vacuum*, but certainly not as empty as it was before ***the curse***. And I mean that certainly our Solar System now contains *trace gases*, enough—a little like the *wind* you feel when you stick your hand outside of a moving car—to provide *friction*, a *force* that will eventually slow to a stop the *objects* it acts on, well, that is if other *forces*, like 'coasting downhill', or other *atomic magnetic forces*, etc., don't take over. The point is that there is enough *gas* in the *space* of our Solar System to slowly slow the *rotations* and *orbits* of the *objects* now moving in it. And when they have slowed enough, which for all of them couldn't take many more thousands of years, they must 'fall from orbit' and 'crash' into the Sun, or into a *giant planet*, or have a *collision* that makes new *asteroids* and/or *comets*, and that until the last *object* in our Solar System is consumed by the Sun. And after that it must finally 'burn out', literally becoming a 'shadow of its former self'.

But again, as surely—and as relatively quickly—as the Earth's *rotation* is slowing, so are the *rotations* of all the *objects* in our Universe. And Earth's *orbit* around the Sun is certainly getting measurably slower too, as all *orbits* everywhere must be. So evidently there is a *force* or *forces*—in this case evidently at least a small amount of *wind friction*—at work slowly slowing both the *angular momentum* (*rotation*) and *linear momentum* (in this case, *orbit*) of *orbiting objects*, meaning it can be no more than thousands of years before they all 'fall out of orbit'. And this happens when *orbits* slow to speeds where they become vulnerable to *perturbations*—that is, to being 'pulled out of orbit' by the *atomic magnetic attraction* of larger bodies passing nearest to them, this usually being at their closest points in their *orbits* to one of the *giant planets*, or to the Sun. Bombs away! Of course none of this is really discouraging because it will never really happen, and not because our Solar System isn't really moving in that direction, but because not much more than a single thousand years from now this present Creation will have served its ***purpose***, and ***heaven and earth shall pass away...***

But at least Dr. Velikovsky rejects the idea that this tendency to 'stay in motion'—when it comes to *orbits*—is balanced only by a 'normal', 'gravity-like' *force*. He instead thinks 'magnetic fields'—necessarily of both the 'normal' and 'special' varieties—help keep *objects* in *orbit*. And if and to whatever degree *magnetic field strength* is in anyway a factor in the longevity of *rotation* and *orbit*, it also, to that extent, should help predict *orbital decay*, because there is really nothing to stop the 'magnets' involved from slowly 'powering down' too, and to do so whether they are *decaying permanent magnets* and/or 'slower-and-slower-

spinning' and therefore supposedly 'weaker-and-weaker' *electromagnets*. But again, long before the *spin* or *orbit* has stopped, and evidently before or not long after a *magnetic field* is entirely *dead*, *planets*, or *comets*, or *asteroids*, etc., must become unable to any longer maintain *orbit*, and by the nearest larger *body* either be caught in a new *orbit*, or 'crash and burn'.

But remember Dr. Velikovsky doesn't believe 'gravity' is responsible for 'balancing' the *momentum* of *planets* into *orbits*. He believes in "circumduction". And though his explanation of it remains a bit vague as far as I can understand it, let's give it a 'fair shake', and in the process possibly explain something he did not yet fully **understand**, as well as some things I'm sure he did not at all **understand**.

And in order to **understand** my and Dr. Velikovsky's idea of "circumduction" you have to **understand** that considering 'magnetic attraction' is only part of the story. Another part is 'magnetic repulsion'. And still another part is that the *planets* and our Sun are evidently not all totally *solid* and *liquid*, but are to some degree also *gaseous*, and in the Sun's case supposedly to a "significant" degree, yes, meaning it may 'atomically repel' to some "significant" degree too.

And I mean that Dr. Velikovsky observed that *planets*, etc. *orbit* mostly in or near the *elliptic*, or in or near that *plane* that extends from the Sun's *equator*, and that they even seem to get help in maintaining *orbital stability* by doing so. Why? How? Remember we're also talking about *magnets*—*spherical dipole magnets*—ones with *positive poles* that are *attracted* to the *negative poles* of other *dipole magnets*, and with *negative poles* that are *attracted* to the *positive poles* of other *dipole magnets*.

So, I don't know, but let's say the Sun's 'north pole' has a *negative charge*, and its 'south pole' a *positive*. *Orbiting* on or near a *plane* that divides the Sun's *negative* and *positive poles*, by "circumduction", the Earth, while 'balancing' its 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction* (and lesser *electrical magnetic repulsion*) to the Sun with its *velocity* and *linear momentum (inertia)*, would also naturally orient itself, and apparently stabilize itself, and maybe even to a small degree *charge* itself, with its *north magnetic pole* being *positive*—"opposite" to the Sun's *negative north magnetic pole*, and its *south magnetic pole* being *negative*—"opposite" the Sun's *positive south magnetic pole*.

And I mean apparently the Earth stays in its particular *orbit* around the Sun not just by its *momentum* 'balanced' with the 'normal' *net atomic magnetism*, but because it is also 'balanced and oriented' as a much smaller *magnet orbiting* a much bigger and stronger one—the bigger one 'positioning' the smaller one in an *orbit* that is on a *plane* that is more or less between its *positive* and negative sides, and in an 'orientation' where the *poles* of the smaller *ball magnet* are naturally—that is, as God designed—*inverted* from where the *poles* of the bigger *ball magnet* are, because the *poles* simultaneously *attract* the "opposite charges" of the bigger *magnet* and *repel* the "like charges", all this evidently 'locking' *magnetic planets* into relatively 'stable' *orbits*. And from all this we would also assume that if the Sun's or the Earth's *magnetic field* were to somehow 'reverse', then the Earth would 'flip over', and if it was first the Sun that 'reversed', then all other *orbiting objects* in our Solar System with *magnetic fields* would follow. Uh-huh.

So now let's briefly consider evidence of '*gaseous atomic magnetic repulsion*' in play here. In *Cosmos Without Gravitation*, Dr. Velikovsky offers the evidence that small *meteorites* tend to 'bounce off' our *atmosphere*. He explains,

Meteors, after entering the terrestrial atmosphere at about 200 km. above the ground, are violently displaced [or somehow 'deflected'] toward the east. These displacements of the meteors are usually ascribed to winds blowing in the upper atmosphere. The atmospheric pressure at a height of 45 km. is supposed to be but "a small fraction of one millimeter of mercury" ["standard atmosphere pressure" ["at sea level"]...is equivalent to 760 mm Hg"; *Hg* is the symbol for *mercury*]. On the other hand, the velocity with which the meteors approach the earth is between 15 and 75 km. per second, on the average about 40 km. per second or over 140,000 km. per hour [87,000 miles per hour]. If winds of 150 km. per hour velocity were permanently blowing at the height where the meteors become visible [and they are not], it would not be possible for such winds of rarefied atmosphere to visibly deflect stones falling at the rate of 140,000 km. per hour.

Approaching the earth, the meteorites suddenly slow down and turn aside, and some are even repelled into space. "A few meteors give the appearance of penetrating into our atmosphere and then leaving it, ricocheting as it were." [Fact 24]

So yes, in addition to the 'special' *magnetic forces* in balance, and in addition to the greater, 'normal', *atomic magnetic attraction*, greater because Earth is made up of much more *atoms* in a *solid* and *liquid state* than *atoms* in a *gaseous state*, there apparently nonetheless must be an opposing lesser *force*—lesser to the degree that there are less *atoms* in and around Earth in a *gaseous state*—of 'normal' *atomic magnetic repulsion*—which altogether surely results in a *planet* that is 'locked' in its *orbit*—I mean by the 'special' *forces*—and *orbiting* the Sun as a result of its *momentum* and the *net atomic magnetic attraction*. And I must assume that the Sun is therefore to a larger degree more *liquid* and *solid* than *gaseous* too—though I'm guessing more *liquid* than *solid* in its case—or it would not be able to hold its *planets* in *orbit*, not to mention that Kreutz Sungrazers would not likely be able to crash into it, let alone be attracted to it. And all this certainly not without the help of 'special' *electromagnetism* to 'stabilize' this motion, which before The Fall could have lasted **for ever**, but evidently still provides for what is now considered to be 'stable' *orbits*, that is, ones that can last more than a few thousand years, though also evidently, with all the *asteroids*, *comets* and *retrograde-spinning-and/or-orbiting moons* out there, and even a *retrograde-spinning planet* or two, some *orbits* do not last so long.

And though, again, you may need to review the last group of paragraphs repeatedly, and over time, you should eventually come to an **understanding** of what is to be **learned** here. And I mean that not only does this all fit why *planets orbit* close to the Sun's *magnetic elliptic*, and explain why their *moons* and *rings* also tend to have a relationship to both the Sun's and their own 'planetary' *magnetic elliptics*, it looks like we just laid the scientific foundation of the 'story' of why and how the Earth has a number of times 'flipped', and naturally 'restabilized', a tale we will further 'spin'—whether 'flippantly' or not—along our course too.

So despite Dr. Velikovsky's huge 'timescale oversights', and the fact that the present "mechanics" maintaining the Universe are not—or at least are no longer—operating in a way to make it last 'as it is' for even another 10,000 additional years, let alone millions or billions, his ideas seem appropriate and helpful enough to **add** to our **understanding** of God's **ordinances of heaven and earth**, and that is both to the original 'permanent' or **eternal** ones, and to the now 'temporary'

or **cursed** ones, and that is, for example, by helping us **see** that things must have been *very stable* until 'special' *electromagnetic decay* began, and until *atoms* themselves became relatively *unstable*. But yes, this perspective makes what we might still call 'gravitational decay' hard to measure, especially since the *force* that is confused with the concept of 'gravity' must be naturally and slowly—except more quickly if *radioactive atoms* are involved—'decaying', because all *atom* (and *molecule*) *magnets* are 'decaying', and 'destabilizing', that is, are in the process of '**falling apart**' too, not too much unlike our Solar System is now doing.

But of course all this is to some degree speculation, and certainly in continuing need of '**correction, improvement and expansion**'. But thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, (so let's call it Velikovsky's Theory), we're considering much more evidence than 'disciples' of Einstein and Newton do. But again, just as we saw there were still things Dr. Velikovsky was missing, and not fully explaining, surely there are things I am missing too, and maybe to some degree misinterpreting, because, as you should **know** by now, **the wisdom and knowledge of God** will always remain **past finding out**. Or as the Apostle Paul, evidently quoting Job, psalmists, and prophets, says,

O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out. For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counsellor [or 'designer' or 'planner']? Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again? For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen Rom 11:33-36.

Amen and glory to God. And the point here is, again, that we can only at best **hope** to remain on 'the cutting edge' of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God.

Next in Dr. Velikovsky's essay on *Mercury*, in paragraph 37, he documents some of this 'inconsideration' of the 'disciples' of Einstein and Newton by his attempts to further encourage the testing of his ideas, writing,

When, nine years later, Prof. H. H. Hess, upon being appointed, or elected, chairman of the Science Space Board of the National Academy of Sciences, wished to hear from me some suggestions for the activities of NASA (National Aeronautics and Space Administration), I offered, on September 11, 1963, a program for a series of investigations; concerning Mercury I wrote:

The cause of the precession of the perihelion [again, the *rotation*—or 'wobbling'—of the closest point to the Sun in the process of *orbiting*] should be re-examined in the light of the presence of a magnetic field of solar origin and solar plasma through which Mercury ploughs. An artificial satellite with a perihelion close to the sun could be tracked as to the [*magnetic-field-induced*] precession of its perihelion.

Since I wrote this suggestion for experiment more than twelve years have passed. I have not heard or read of such a satellite having been dispatched.

And there still have not been, though remember there was a plan to “dispatch” an array of *satellites* to attempt to detect the Sun’s “gravity well”—you know, that zone close around the Sun that measurably deflects *light* by ‘bending space’, or is it by the Sun’s *magnetic field*? But I’m not aware that has happened yet either.

Next, moving to the time of the “Neutrino Crisis”, and evidently still ignoring the ‘news’ that the Sun is not ‘burning’ by the ‘long-lasting’ process of *thermonuclear fusion*, Dr. Velikovsky nonetheless ‘challenges’,

At the symposium “Velikovsky’s Challenge to Science” organized by the AAAS [American Academy of Arts and Sciences] in San Francisco in February 1974, in my paper, entitled “My Challenge to Conventional Views in Science,” I returned to the problem of the electromagnetic nature of the solar system and of the universe in general, and said concerning Mercury’s [‘wobbling’] anomaly:

It was, of course, known since Gilbert that the Earth is a magnet and G. E. Hale discovered that solar spots are magnetic and that the Sun possesses a general magnetic field. But this did not keep Einstein, a few years later, from accounting for the Mercurial precession [Mercury’s ‘orbital wobble’] by a new [“General Relativity”] principle instead of first eliminating the effect of the newly discovered solar magnetic field on Mercury’s movement.

But again, the ‘news’ that the Sun could be not ‘burning’ by *thermonuclear fusion*, nor that it was measurably ‘shrinking’, let alone that the Earth’s *rotation* was slowing the better part of second a year, did not “keep” Dr. Velikovsky from reconsidering his ideas about the supposed ‘longevity’ of the Sun’s *magnetic field*. Still and again, his ideas nonetheless remain otherwise appropriate and helpful. And his biggest problem—besides not acknowledging God—was that he was on the wrong side of this ‘**satanic conspiracy**’, which is at least the better side to be on. And he understood he was inappropriately shunned, and that more for reasons of ‘faith’ than ‘science’, writing,

If I was completely at odds with the cosmogony [theory of the origin of the Universe] that had the solar system without history [or ‘uneventful’] since creation, I was also carrying my heresy into a most sacred field, the holy of holies of science, to celestial mechanics. I had a chapter on the subject at the end of *Worlds in Collision*, but I kept those galleys [narrow trays for print type, used for editing before the type is set, inked and pressed to paper—hence, it was the final stage of writing before printing] from inclusion in the book [Awwwww!!!] and instead I included only one or two paragraphs—and the only italicized words in the book are found in them—namely: “The accepted celestial mechanics, notwithstanding the many calculations that have been carried out to many decimal places, or verified by celestial motions, stands only *if* the sun, the source of light, warmth, and other radiation produced by fusion and fission of atoms [again, supposedly ‘burning’ billions of years], *is as a whole an electrically neutral body*, and also if the planets, in their usual orbits, are neutral bodies [that is, “if” they are not ‘special’ *magnets*].” I showed [in the galleys of type that were never printed] how the events I reconstructed [evidently explaining how *planets, moons, comets*, etc. had been *perturbed* from their *orbits* into new *orbits*, or into *collisions*] could have

occurred in the frame of classical celestial mechanics [that is, recently], but coming from the field of studying the working of the brain—I [by-the-way] was the first to claim that electrical disturbances lie at the basis of epileptic seizures [- he being a doctor of both *medicine* and *psychology*, after all]—I was greatly surprised to find that astronomy, the queen of sciences, lives still in the pre-Faraday age [pre-19th Century], not even in the time of kerosene lamps [late 19th and early 20th Centuries], but of candles and oil [again, pre-19th Century]...

The “pre-Faraday age”, again, by-the-way, would be before the work of Church of Scotland

Deacon, Honorary Harvard Doctor, Professor Dr. Michael Faraday, “the first and foremost Fullerian Professor of Chemistry at the Royal Institution of Great Britain”, who essentially discovered *magnetic fields*, and their relationships to the flow of *electrons* now called *electricity*, from which discoveries he invented the *electric motor*, and proved that *magnetism* and/or *electricity* can deflect or ‘bend’ **light**, etc. Dr. Velikovsky appropriately points out that the ‘astronomical sciences’, including the *theories* of “celestial mechanics”, are (even still) back in the age before Dr. Faraday, back in the times before kerosene lamps, when candlelight and oil lamps were the best lighting available.

And let’s not miss, though yet again, by-the-way, that Dr. Faraday—in the 19th Century—demonstrated that a *magnetic field* could indeed ‘bend’ *light*. So whether or not ‘gravity’ plays a lesser role than now popularly believed, or none at all, it appears Dr. Velikovsky is generally right, or at least has introduced to us other *forces* that need to be factored in, and his conclusions seem appropriate and applicable, even despite his now more understandable ‘timescale oversights’, and equally understandable ‘since-**the-curse** decay misconceptions’. But of course I have to say “more understandable” because we **know** even he is really **without excuse** to have **known** better, huh.

But again, the **world’s** blatant ‘inconsideration’ of the valid considerations Dr. Velikovsky offers is no accident, but part of a **‘satanic conspiracy’**. And yes, I mean ‘scientists’ **wrestle not against flesh and blood** too, don’t they—which makes me only all the more admire Dr. Velikovsky’s tenacity. And though also generously respectful, (at least from my **‘sons of thunder’** perspective), he shows no signs of ever giving up when he writes,

Thus I did not omit once more to challenge the accepted view that Mercury’s [‘wobbling’] anomaly serves as confirmation of Einstein’s concept of space curved [or ‘bent’] in the presence of a mass, independently of whether Einstein was right or not in the theory itself. But if the Mercurial precession has a different [or additional] cause than that which Einstein envisaged [one that Dr. Faraday the century before already proved at least applies], the absence of the effect expected by him could not but be damaging to his theory of the nature of gravitation.

In other words, if Dr. Einstein is right, then consideration of any effects of the Sun’s *magnetic field* should not “be damaging” to his ‘space-bending’ General Theory of the nature of ‘gravity’. However and apparently, Dr. Velikovsky already knew that Dr. Faraday had really already proven Dr. Einstein to be at least partially wrong, and to a *significant* extent. And yes, again and again, only **‘satanic conspiracy’** makes sense of all this.

And though Dr. Faraday's studies of *magnetic fields* and *electricity* overwhelmingly support the Velikovsky Theory, they both are mostly still ignored. However finally a *satellite* did offer new evidence. And at least Dr. Velikovsky caught the significance of this 'news', in paragraph 41 writing,

It did not take long after the symposium in San Francisco and the Mariner X probe, upon passing and surveying Venus, approached Mercury [2 "fly-bys" in 1974 and 1 in 1975].

Even from a great distance the photographs of Mercury taken by the unmanned probe showed a surface that attested to a very stormy past of the planet, and as the probes came closer, the features grew in detail. It revealed itself as a battered world. Its surface features were never before observed by a telescope from the Earth; but after the scientific world accustomed itself to the Martian photographs of American and Russian space probes, there was no outcry of surprise anymore, though this planet closest to the sun was the least known as to its surface features. But the explanations applied to Mars and Moon for the phenomenon of cratered surface, namely, that these celestial bodies are in travelling [that is, being exposed to more 'celestial traffic'], Mars more, the Moon less, in the zone of the asteroids that supposedly by collisions with Mars and the Moon have caused these features, [an exposure that] could not well be applied to Mercury, [presently] out of reach of almost all asteroids [yet, nonetheless, Mercury too is 'beaten to a pulp']. And there were other features on the Mercurial surface that bespoke a violent past [as you can see again on the first page of [SEC. 5](#), in [VOL. I, p.412](#)].

Very shortly after the February, 1974 symposium, Mariner X, passing near Mercury, established to the great surprise of all scientists, that it possesses a magnetosphere. Since it rotates slowly [and therefore is thought not to be able to generate much of an *electromagnetic field*], in my opinion the magnetosphere [of Mercury] results from the speedy relative motion of the space satellite and Mercury on its orbit [meaning, apparently, that Mercury's *magnetic field* must be generated by *induction* as it quickly "ploughs through" the Sun's *magnetic field*—*induction* being, again, "the process by which a body having electric or magnetic properties produces magnetism, an electric charge, and/or an electromotive (moving) force in a neighboring body without contact"]. On the second passage, and third, of the satellite, the existence of the magnetic field around Mercury (magnetosphere) was confirmed. Now [read, 'Yet'] it becomes possible to abstain [because of '*satanic conspiracy*'] from considering the effect of the Mercurial magnetosphere traveling with the planet through the magnetic field lines centered on the sun.

So Dr. Velikovsky sees fit to repeat,

"The accepted celestial mechanics, notwithstanding the many calculations that have been carried out to many decimal places, or verified by celestial motions, stands only *if* the sun, the source of light, warmth, and other radiation produced by fusion and fission of atoms, *is as a whole an electrically neutral body*, and also if the planets, in their

usual orbits, are neutral bodies." (*Worlds in Collision, Epilogue*, p.387). "In the Newtonian celestial mechanics, based on the theory of gravitation, electricity and magnetism play no role."

The precession of Mercury, the planet closest to the sun, is claimed by the General Relativity theory as one of the proofs of the curvature [or 'bending'] of space around mass; but since Mercury moves close to the charged sun and actually in the outer reaches of the solar corona, the magnetic field of the sun [by *induction*] must act on its motion; therefore the claim of the [General] relativity theory needs reexamination as to its validity. (Already [in the early 19th Century, Pierre-Simon] Laplace [who originally proposed the "nebular hypothesis" of the origin of the Solar System] showed that should a celestial body attracted by its primary [e.g., Mercury being *attracted* by the Sun] as inverse square [$1/x^2$] of distance [that is, by a 'gravity-like' *force*] be subject to another attraction that changes as the inverse cube [$1/x^3$] of distance [that is, by *magnetism*], a precession by [or 'wobbling' of] that body would result.)

But this seems to as much strengthen the argument for the existence of '*gravitational fields*' as much as for '*magnetic fields*'. So now it's time to admit there is a 'pendulum swinging' here, or to put it another way, we seem to be on a 'teeter totter' of sorts, one that even Dr. Velikovsky seems to be at least sometimes 'onboard' too, writing,

Things axiomatic need to be repeated again and again over a score of years [in this case from the time of the publication of *Earth in Upheaval* in 1955 to about 1975]; the omission to take into account physical realities and calculate their effects should not be placed solely at Einstein's door; in over sixty years since the publication of the General Theory [from 1912 to about 1975] nobody was disturbed by this situation and in merely a score of years since the space investigation started [in 1958], with by now probably a thousand artificial satellites having been launched, an experiment intended to observe the behavior of a satellite on the Mercurial orbit and on an orbit perpendicular to it have not been performed or even planned [nor since have].

An electromagnetic effect must be incalculated in the celestial mechanics, whether its action equals to a substantial part of the gravitational attraction, or to only a minute part: the [apparently delicate] precision of the celestial motions and the advance knowledge of planetary positions [- and that is, our ability to have such knowledge,] to a small degree of a fraction of a second of the arc, raises the question as to the part [smaller or larger] the electromagnetic interrelation must account for.

It's all explainable by *magnetism*, with no need for 'gravity'. Though, (and maybe just to make it easier for the '*prideful*' to start such an investigation), maybe it's both *magnetism* and *gravity*. Repeat the last two sentences. So this "teeter totter" seems to 'rock back and forth'. And I mean yes, he is conceding here that there may be an "electromagnetic interrelation". An interrelation with what? With

'gravity'. So though Dr. Velikovsky concludes in *Cosmos Without Gravitation*—and not necessarily inappropriately so—that 'gravity' is likely not necessary to explain "celestial mechanics" at all, and is therefore likely imaginary, he avoids overtly saying so in his essay entitled *Mercury*, and in fact more suggests that 'magnetic fields' play the 'smaller role'. But this appears to be only because of the opposition he sees before him. So I presume that he therefore uses this 'tactic'—admitting that "magnetism" plays a 'smaller role', only in the hope his *theories* may be less offensively received, and that it may provoke further investigation of the presently still popularly ignored *characteristics* and *properties* of *magnetism*.

And he concludes this essay 'along these lines', (like I could avoid this pun), giving us a last bit of new evidence for *magnetism's* apparently 'smaller role', leaving the door open for us to conclude he thinks it is possible that 'gravity' plays the 'bigger role' after all, informing us that,

The discovery by John H. Nelson of certain dependence of the radio transmission and reception on the relative position of the planets (March 1951 issue of *RCA Review*) points in the same direction of an electromagnetic interdependence of planetary bodies. If an electromagnetic effect is present between these bodies, the exact masses of the planets must be recalculated, in order to leave also...a role [for the newly detected *forces*], [even if] small, however yet detectable, in the phenomenon of perturbation [or where there is 'disruption of orbits'], or attraction of a planet by another [- this sentence edited, amended and reconstructed for improved clarity—I do have a BA in Literature/Writing from Revelle College, UCSD, after all].

But maybe you also **understand** from this that the reason *scientists* nonetheless can so accurately trace the *orbits* of *planets*, etc., is because, using the *theory* of 'gravity' instead of —or without—that of *magnetism*, they are miscalculating the *mass* of *planets*, etc., and are apparently imagining they have 'greater mass' than they actually do, which apparently can fully compensate for the need of factoring in whatever 'magnetic effects' there really are. However, as with the *molecules* in our *atmosphere*, and *meteorites* that 'bounce'—"ricocheting as it were"—off our *atmosphere*, sometimes such calculations don't work at all, that is, because identifiably *repulsive forces* cannot be accounted for with the concept of 'gravity', that is, when 'normal', *gaseous atomic magnetic repulsion*, and/or when any 'special' *electrical magnetic force*—being unacknowledged, unmeasured, and/or overlooked—are nonetheless at least *significant factors*, that is, 'significant parts' of the *equation* determining the *net* or *resulting force* or *forces*. And no offense to 'rocket scientists', but this really does make what they now do, to use Dr. Velikovsky's comparison, as simple as things were back in the days of 'candle lighting'. It also show us that this is no new '**conspiracy**', but one surely managed by the '**father of lies**' to **deceive** us about what is 'really real' for a number of centuries now.

And Dr. Velikovsky speaks in this essay as if he allows for some 'partial' *force* of *gravity* that works with *magnetism*, and remains arguably vague, and seemingly inconsistent in identifying the 'normal' *atomic magnetic force(s)* ($1/x^2$) separate from the 'special' *electromagnetic force(s)* ($1/x^3$). Yet again, in his essay, *Cosmos Without Gravitation*, he seems to make clear that he does not believe 'gravity' is necessary at all to explain "celestial mechanics", or any other motion, while also seeming to make clear that his preferred alternative is solely the 'two kinds' of *magnetic force*, which he convincingly argues are the answers to phenomenon that

'gravity' does not explain, including ones that are popularly unknown, unmeasured, and/or ignored. And he at least strongly implies by the title of the essay that he believes we are living in a 'cosmos without gravitation', that is, 'without it' as Sir Isaac and Dr. Einstein described it anyway. But Dr. Velikovsky, for the most part, is missing something else on this topic, and that is, **scripture**, not to mention the '**Spirit-filled**' **interpretation** of it. Here are some examples of what I mean.

And in fact my closest brother in Christ, though not 'trained' in the 'sciences' to the extent I have been, (me only at the 'undergraduate level', including "C's" in "Quantum Mechanics", "Chemistry" and "Cell Biology"—and in "Calculus" too, by-the-way—hence I became a 'writer'), brought to my attention something that I had taught him, but that I had not yet used to '**correct, improve and expand**' my **knowledge of God** on this subject, this being a '**better perspective**' of Creation Week. What happened then? Let's reconsider a few things in **light** of what we have learned from Dr. Velikovsky...

Just before the start of **the first day**, before **light** was **created** by God, before the lone Earth began its first *rotation* on its *axis*—see [Gen 1:1-5](#), this being a time I did not as fully deal with in **SECTION 2**, by-the-way—what *laws* can we now assume originally existed—that is, when God had only **created the heaven and the earth**. I mean I still assume as previously that when **light** was **created** by God He was adding to His original '**bespoken ordinances**'. So in other words, what *laws* originally existed before **God said, 'abracadabra-style', Let there be light?** Well, there must have already been a relatively full "Periodic Table" of *elements*, ('relatively full' as some have only been recently added to the chart by *electron bombardment*), and surely all the *molecules* that were needed, all contained in **the earth** and **the waters** that covered it. I mean we can assume that since **the solid** and **liquid earth**, and **the liquid waters**, whether before or after The Fall, surely **consist** of *elements*, and that is, *atoms*, then before **light** was **created** by God there must have been 'normal'—originally *permanent* and *stable*—*atomic magnetic force(s)* already **appointed** by God, though possibly there were no *atmospheric gases* yet.

And this '**scriptural perspective**' seems to reveal that there evidently was at least 'normal', *solid* and *liquid*, *atomic magnetic attraction* working to hold **the earth** together before God added **light**, which with this additional '**abracadabra**' evidently added 'special' *electromagnetic force(s)*. And yes, I'm assuming here that *atomic magnetic attraction* is what 'gravity' really is—though presently mis-measured because of the *repulsive force* that is not considered in the process of their *net interactions*—and that this *magnetic attraction* is separate, and apparently foundational to God's **ordinances**, but surely works together with the shortly-thereafter-**created** 'special' *electromagnetic force(s)*, which, for example, a few days later gave us *visible light*, as well as that phenomenon that causes 'wobbles' in, but also 'stabilizes', *orbits*.

And as for the 'normal' *gaseous atomic magnetic repulsion force*, I'm assuming God **created** it along with the 'normal' *solid* and *liquid atomic magnetic attraction force* apparently just before The 1st Day, but He apparently did not put the *repulsive* one to its arguably most important **use** until The 2nd Day, when He then first **made the gaseous firmament** (the sky), as I now **see** indicated in [Verse 6-8](#), where He then more fully puts His **ordinances** of 'special' *electromagnetic force(s)* to work, most noticeably to hold some of the **waters... above the firmament**, making a 'cosmic-radiation-shielded', 'hyperbaric', 'intelligence-enhancing', 'giant-lifeforms-growing', 'mist-irrigated', 'permanently-sustaining', *greenhouse atmosphere*, about which all my previous speculation and comments concerning its structure and functions as yet need no further **correction**, though much '**improvement and**

expansion' as we should unavoidably expect in this **study**, including with Dr. Velikovsky's help, and especially in the rest of this and next section. But I should immediately clarify that when I say 'permanently-sustaining', I mean before **the curse**, because after it, though still a far superior *atmosphere* than the one that resulted from The Flood, it was diminished in every way, becoming merely "long-life-enhancing", since surely then **sin** and **death**, accompanied by the '**cursed decay**' of all Creation, had **entered**.

Of course since I am now clarifying that **light** was **created** on the same **day** that He set **the earth rotating**, maybe at the moment He did, but after He **created the heaven and the earth**, this order surely for some physical and symbolic reasons that I have **for ever** to fully realize, then, at this point I can only routinely—however much implicitly—**ask** God why, thereby adding it to the great multitude of **questions** that have preceded it, believing They will eventually **answer** most all my **questions**, like any **loving** Father or Husband would, and believing so because of the nearly as large multitude of **questions** already **answered**, though actually I have received many more **answers** than I have **asked** for, because I commonly receive from single **questions** multiple **answers**, as well as **answers to questions** that come before I can **ask, praise** our **loving** Father and Betrothed. But also again, it is my experience that more and faster **answers**, and the most '**astonishing**' ones at that, come when you **ask** more and better **questions**.

But still, at this point, I'm going to assume that when **God said, Let there be light**, this was when *electromagnetism* was **created**, including what Dr. Velikovsky and I have more recently more precisely identified as 'special' *electromagnetic attraction* and *repulsion*, which before The Fall was a 'permanently stable' *force*, but which, along with all the other **ordinances of heaven and earth**, became relatively 'unstable', this universal *decay* beginning with The Curse.

And pausing to again be less than implicit with a **question**, what does all this tell us? Well, with everything we have so far considered, I am ready to take a stand. I see how Dr. Velikovsky sees no need for the 'theory of gravity' anymore, though also acknowledging that *atomic magnetic attraction* apparently behaves in many ways much like 'gravity' is thought to, where the larger the collection of 'atoms or molecule magnets'—as well as the larger each individual 'atom or molecule magnet' is—the greater the *force* is, except that, again, this *force* only operates when *atoms* are in their *solid* or *liquid* state, while *atomic magnetic repulsion* instead operates when *atoms* or *molecules* are in their *gaseous* state. But these reconsiderations of the **ordinances** God as **appointed** by Him are still much too general not to soon need more **correction**, as well as '**improvement and expansion**', including beyond the parameters of this **study**. Nonetheless, we now have opportunity for such reconsideration from here on.

So I will proceed as if I am more sure that Sir Isaac's 'theory of gravity' is at least greatly misused to support the '**satanic propaganda conspiracy**' of *uniformitarian evolution*, as well as other forms of this fantasy, and that is, I will proceed as if it is likely that Dr. Einstein's 'space-bending' General Relativity Theory is entirely fantasy because it ignores real *forces*. However it is understandable why this '**propaganda campaign**' has been successful, since it evidently has even the help of **lying wonders**, and the accompanying 'testimony' about of them, whereby **spiritual wickedness in high places** works to help us **deceive ourselves**, and that is, so that we 'believe' that such 'imaginary forces' have 'substantiation'.

What do I mean? Some good examples of such 'misunderstandings' that you should now be ready to '**rightly understand**' can be found in the 'performances' of Satan's Angels, when they apparently 'masquerade' as 'unimaginably far-traveling space aliens', who seem to have 'mastered' the ultimate form of 'space

bending' for 'space travelers', and that is, 'travel' by "worm holes" or "stargates", this kind of 'masquerade' evidently **deceiving** virtually everyone exposed to it, or to such '**propaganda**', including to the General Theory of Relativity related to it. And I mean this 'imagined phenomenon' not only already **deceiveth the whole world**, such 'masquerades' also **deceive the very elect**. And I mean it seems that there is no one left who does not believe this '**propaganda**' besides me, and possibly now you. And if you no longer do, you can now better see what Dr. Velikovsky was really up against, and what we are now.

But again, what **deception** have Dr. Velikovsky and I exposed? It can now be recognized, in this example, how Satan already **deceiveth the whole world** because most 'educated' people, even most 'educated' Christians, 'believe' in 'gravity', and therefore 'space bending', or are at most one step away from 'believing' so, that is, they are no more than one step from 'believing' that these 'masqueraders' are actually able to 'travel' through "worm holes" or "star gates", and so really 'believe' that these imposters really can 'travel' to Earth by 'extreme space-bending', and supposedly do so from their 'homes in the stars' that are so impossibly 'far, far away'.

And I mean if you were ever at all fooled in this way, **believing** that *space* naturally, by 'gravity', really 'bends', and that the 'extreme bending' of it really can make "wormholes" and/or "stargates", as I was, then who will not be **deceived**? Indeed, how can any that miss The Rapture avoid being **deceived** in this way? And if so how? Well, this **question** has at least one of those '**astonishing answers**' too. And the **answer** I'm talking about is that God is **able** to **shew** His **divine, marvellous, wondrous, glorious, excellent, strong, death and life**—or '**furios**' and '**delivering**'—**eternal** and **everlasting, exceeding great** and **mighty power** so incredibly '**awesomely**', that He will by this means **save some**, that is, **some** that would otherwise **fall** for such 'comparatively-only-just-impressive' **deception**. And **believe** it or not, it is my **purpose** and **hope** throughout the remainder of this **study** to further expose the nature of God's '**incredibly awesome power**' and **judgment** that, as He testifies, **change not**, which in part means He always **useth** them with '**absolute control and finesse**', and whether to **save** or **destroy**.

But yet again, 'gotcha', because that's really not the half of it, well, apparently significantly more than half of it. Nonetheless you're the victim of another, mercifully short, 'wild goose chase', though this is really only a 'partial' one. And it's all your fault, because when I say some paragraphs back that, "Dr. Faraday had really already proven Dr. Einstein to be at least partially wrong, and to a *significant* extent", and when I say that Dr. Velikovsky "at least has introduced to us other *forces* that need to be factored in", and when I amended his text to read, "But if the Mercurial precession has a different [or additional] cause than that which Einstein envisaged...", as well as having made other similar qualifications since those, you should by now **know** what I mean. Either that, or I've let you compartmentalize long enough. And I'm asking if you have been 'teeter-tottering' too—like I was when I was first discovered this information. Yes I, when I first took this 'trip', compartmentalized too, overlooking that we already have good reasons to believe that *gravity* is indeed also real, though it doesn't need to be a *force* that is strong enough to 'bend' *light*, at least 'significantly', since Dr. Faraday long ago proved that a *magnetic field* can do that 'significantly enough' all by itself. And I mean that maybe 'gravity'—whatever it really is—can 'help' a little with the 'bending of light' too, though likely not so much 'bend space'.

See I finally remembered that the European Organization for Nuclear Research (CERN) is presently using that biggest-ever, 17-mile-long, *subatomic* "particle

collider" near Geneva, Switzerland to identify yet undetected but suspected *subatomic particles*, having supposedly already succeeding in identifying the *Higgs boson*, that 'companion' *particle* to the *graviton* that evidently is enough to verify it's existence, and therefore the existence of *gravity*, or at least a *force* with maybe some of the characteristics that it is now popularly thought to have, though not including what *magnetism* actually accounts for, both being *forces* that need to be "factored in".

And remember CERN is also looking for the additional *subatomic particles* predicted by that Maui 'surf bum'/*atomic physicist*, Dr. Garrett Lisi, that is, the ones predicted by his "beautiful", "8 directional dimensions", 'theory of everything' model of the *atom*, a model that supports the existence of *gravity*, and which is held together by *magnetic charge*, the *spin* of the *particles*, and, besides what *atomic physicist* think they know, God knows what else. So yes, maybe both Dr. Einstein and Dr. Velikovsky are right, but each maybe only 'partly right'. And yes, this is who I think God is, and that is, Someone Whose designs, operations, and *forces* may be endlessly discovered, but which nonetheless remain forever ***past*** fully ***finding out***.

But surely to some extent we are being fooled, and at least by the extent that *space* can actually be 'bent', if at all. However maybe 'a lot of gravity' can 'bend space' a little, though it's been known for approaching 2 centuries that the *force* that *significantly* 'bends light' is *magnetism*, while no one thinks *magnetism* 'bends space'. And I mean it appears that 'extreme-space-bending space travel' by "wormholes" or "stargates" is entirely fantasy, one of those ***lies*** of ***Satan*** to ***deceive***, as it is presently exactly so doing. But it's undeniable that God's ***ordinances of heaven and earth***, even beyond ***the curse***, are truly and forever ***past*** fully ***finding out***.

So finally we get back to *Earth in Upheaval*, and back to another fantasy that is 'mis-substantiated', in this case by "radiocarbon...dating", with Dr. Velikovsky's closing thoughts —and 'over-optimistic predictions'—on the subject. Dr. Velikovsky concludes,

Bearing in mind these limitations [or misconceptions about the supposedly 'long-ongoing' and 'uniform' existence of *radiocarbons* in the *environment* and in *organisms*—when actually they were mostly 'delivered' in irregular 'lump sums' by Mercury, Venus and Mars], I confidently [but 'over-optimistically' at best] expect that in the field of geology more and more "puzzling" results of radiocarbon test will compel a full-scale revision of the dating of glacial periods [which surely did not happen as currently 'dated']. ([And] In the field of archaeology, I expect [again, 'over-optimistically' at best] the radiocarbon test to confirm that the time of the [misplaced] Eighteenth Dynasty in Egypt must be reduced [that is, the starting point for this dynasty needing to be moved forward] by five to six hundred years, and the [starting] time of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Dynasties [forward] a full seven hundred years.

So we see here that Dr. Velikovsky 'expects' that, "the time of the Eighteenth Dynasty must be reduced by five to six hundred years, and the time of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Dynasties a full seven hundred years." And though this supposedly 'reliable scientific method' and the 'fellow scientists' he was depending on to further account for this 'timeshift' mostly resulted in yet another 'wild goose chase' for him, what Dr. Velikovsky was appropriately trying to further "confirm"—yes further, because this has already been sufficiently established in just the

‘published volumes’ of the *Ages In Chaos* series—is that the “Eighteenth Dynasty” needs to be “reduced”, and that is, the starting point needs moving forward in time by about “five to six hundred years”, specifically, from starting in the middle of The 16th and ending near the beginning of The 13th Centuries BC to actually starting in The 11th or 10th and ending in The 9th or early 8th Centuries BC, though, as the connection from the funeral of **king Ahaz** to one of The Visits of Mars apparently shows, connectable from *Worlds In Collision* to *Ages In Chaos*, as well as within the text of *Ages In Chaos* itself, Mars must have been a factor in this dynasty’s conclusion, so it must have ended in the late 8th or possibly in the early 7th Century BC. And this is the dynasty that apparently followed The Exodus, (and is no longer thought to precede it—if the Exodus is acknowledged at all), but also that followed what The Exodus first facilitated, and that is, The 1st Canaanite Occupation of Egypt by the “Hyksos”—Greek for “king-shepherds”—evidently derived from the more recently discovered Egyptian name for them, *hekau khaswet* (spellings, also as usual, vary), meaning, “ruler[s] of foreign countries”—or just read, **Assyrians**, or, as otherwise defined by Dr. Velikovsky, as the “Amu-Hyksos” or “Hyksos-Amalekite rule”, or “the Hyksos Dynasty”, but what we can also otherwise recognize as **‘Amalekite-Canaanite rule’**.

However this “rule” was occasionally ‘interrupted’—mostly only in Israel and Egypt, and in Egypt by The Rise of the 18th Dynasty—which only means that The 2nd Angel-Prince-Head of the 7-Headed Beast ‘sponsored rule’ changed hands to other **Canaanite** peoples, this first major change happening when **king Saul** helped defeat the **first of the nations, Amalekite**-led, as the Greeks called them, “king-shepherds”, this evidently happening at their ‘capital city’, *Auaris*, just north of Egypt—see [1 Samuel 15](#), most notably Verse 5, which Dr. Velikovsky shows contains the Hebrew word, *nakhal*, which could instead be translated in the KJV as “river bed” as opposed to “valley”, this distinction helping to connect other both Hebrew and Egyptian accounts of the “siege” and “fall” of this particular **Amalekite** ‘capital city’ in question, this ‘setback’ initiating the ‘first slump’ in, let’s again say, **Canaanite ‘rule’**, that is, the end of The 1st Canaanite Occupation of Egypt, and starting the shift of **Canaanite** power northward, finally to its capital city in **Nineveh**, this shift starting when Ahmose I became the first pharaoh of the “Eighteenth Dynasty”, though again, the **Assyrian ‘Empire’** otherwise, generally speaking, continuing, but with this new Egyptian dynasty continuing for a while too, or let’s yet again call it a ‘slump’ in the **Assyrian** or **Canaanite ‘Empire’**, since the **Canaanite ‘world-ruling kingdom’** remained under the control of The 2nd Angel-Prince-Head of the 7-Headed Beast. And you can think about it like the change in dominance from **the Medes to the Persians** in the later, **‘world ruling’, ‘Medo-Persian Empire’**, except in this case it involved the ‘elimination’—by God through **Saul**—of the first ‘human dominators’, kind of like what will happen with the future **‘red horse’**, ‘communist revolution’, that is, with Russia’s ‘elimination’ by God, and with the shift at that point of all the power in this **‘red revolution’** to China. Still, this ‘interrupting’ 18th Dynasty spanned the reigns of Kings David and Solomon—Solomon being a contemporary with this dynasty’s 5th pharaoh by marriage, Hatshepsut, that both Dr. Velikovsky and I would have you read, **the queen of Sheba**, her son-in-law becoming the next pharaoh, Thutmose III, who successfully conspired to ‘split up’ The 12 Tribes of Isreal, and one of the last pharaohs in this dynasty being Pharaoh Akhnaton, a contemporary of Kings **Ahab** of Isreal and **Jehoshaphat** of Judah.

But unfortunately my encyclopedia tells me that the last, or second to last, pharaoh in the 18th Dynasty appointed the next and supposedly immediately succeeding first pharaoh of the 19th Dynasty, while Dr. Velikovsky is nonetheless

able to show that there really must be a century or two gap before this next pharaoh actually really begins his reign and dynasty, this being Ramses I of the so-called “Ramesside Period”, which shows that the imaginary earlier ‘version’ of him and this “Period” is used to fill the gap created by pushing back the time of previous dynasties, these imaginary earlier versions becoming, as Dr. Velikovsky describes them, like “shadows” of the real ones, or as he puts it in his *Introduction to Ages In Chaos*,

Ancient history is distorted in this very manner. Because of the disruption of synchronism, many figures on the historical scene are "ghosts" or "halves" and "doubles." Events are often duplicates; many battles are shadows; many speeches are echoes; many treaties are copies; even some empires are phantoms.

The primary error can be found in Egyptian history [since it is used as the standard for all others]; because of retardation [or erroneously pushing groups of the Egyptian dynasties back varying amounts of time], the history of Egypt was taken out of real contact with the histories of other peoples. Events in which the people of Egypt and the people of Assyria or Babylonia or Media were involved were recorded in the histories of these peoples from the Egyptian annals; the same events were then described for the second time in the history of Egypt, the annals of these other peoples, participants in the events, being the source [thus ‘duplicating history’, and ‘stretching out the time’ required for it, again and again].

Thus the histories of Assyria, Babylonia, [Persia] and Media are disrupted and spoiled; the history of the "Hittite Empire" is entirely invented; the Greek history of the Mycenaean period [before The Exodus] is displaced, and that of the pre-Alexander period is lacerated, and Spartan and Athenian warriors, even those with well-known names, appear once more [as “duplicates”] on the pages of history as archaic intruders out of the gloom of the past [p.xii].

So these “displaced” dynasties, including the now supposed 13th to 11th Centuries BC version of what is now known as the “Ramesside Period”—the last “New Kingdom” dynasties involving the Ramses Pharaohs—are erroneous “duplicates” of the real, later versions, made to fill in erroneously created gaps, gaps created by erroneously pushing groups of dynasties back in time, some of this confusion surely partly the result of the ‘evolutionary mindset’ to ‘stretch things out’, but more the result of **‘satanic conspiracy’**, though plenty of this confusion is provided by God Himself, by the ‘devastatingly destructive results’ of The Exodus, and this confusion including the ‘duplication’ of names, reigns and/or circumstances of these dynasties.



But altogether by this ‘resorting of history’ Dr. Velikovsky shows that the actual time of the real 19th and 20th Dynasties is not in the 13th to 11th Centuries BC, nor is its rival the “entirely invented” **Hittite Empire**, (shown on the map on p.60 as also the imaginary rival of The 18th Dynasty, with Egypt’s northern control of the **Canaanite** region “invented” on this map too), but that these later dynasties really only belong in and around The 6th Century BC, and that is, apparently beginning sometime after The Visits of Mars, and ending sometime before Alexander the Great conquers Egypt, Dr. Velikovsky recognizing and exposing the ‘duplication’ that must be eliminated, and that the century or two gap between The 18th and 19th Dynasties should instead be filled by the dynasties of the “Libyans and Ethiopians”, where the starting point of “the time of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Dynasties” is moved forward in time “a full seven hundred years”, moving from starting in The 13th Century BC to starting in The 6th Century BC, and The 18th Dynasty from starting in The 16th Century BC to starting in The 11th or 10th Century BC, and ending no earlier than in The 8th Century BC, not in the 13th Century BC, with, again, the arguably less significant “Libyan and Ethiopian Dynasties” filling this remaining gap between The 18th and 19th Egyptian Dynasties, and with the placement of The Exodus helping to make sense of this “reduced” amount of time, and that is, even without the consideration that we really only have 7,000 years, altogether, to work with here.

But again, don’t worry so much about a ‘full understanding’ of this summary, or the related summaries in **SECTION 4**, your first few times through. I mean, if this is only your first or second time through this **study**, you’re likely still at the stage where you can only really just pump your shoulders while briefly and quickly vibrating your head, and move on, because that, or other similar natural gestures, is all the help you’re likely to get at such an early point, and at least until you get to **SECTION 11**, again, including making the trip between here and there a time or two first too, because that’s where Dr. Velikovsky and I elaborate about this confusing mess created by the formerly exalted “Classic Chronology”, that is, by ‘**satanic conspiracy**’, and it’s when you might finally be ready for it, and that is, as much as **God permits**.

But I have to say it again, and elaborate some more, that “this is a ‘simulation-of-what-it’s-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style’ **study**, so you really just do yourself a disservice, that is, you will miss the experience, and you won’t really **learn** the more important **things**”. And I’m talking about **all things that pertain unto life and godliness**, that is, about the ‘**endless**’ opportunities to **get wisdom** and **get understanding**. And I mean you will miss out on the **better** kind of **knowledge** that the Lord **promises** that **he shall teach** you, and the ‘**deeper doctrine**’ that **he shall make** you **to understand**, that is, the kind **he** really wants you to **know**, instead of just ‘getting’ more ‘details and facts’, and not really ‘**getting**’ **how should we then live**, that is, “if you don’t **wait** for it”, and that is, **wait** to experience what can only be **learned** along **the way**, by the ‘journey’ itself, and that is, how to ‘**correct, improve, expand**’ and ‘**unendingly**’ **grow** in **the knowledge of God** every ‘**ordered step of the way**’, because God **trieth the hearts and reins** for each of your **steps**, **if** you will let Him. And I mean these ‘**studies**’ in their entirety are also a ‘simulation-of-what-it’s-like-to-travel-the-road-to-wisdom’ too, and without ‘the full experience’, ‘details and facts’ are indeed ‘food for thought’, but too often just for those ‘**seemeth right**’ kind, because they too easily come from your ‘**carnal mind**’ and/or from your ‘**desperately wicked heart**’, that, whether you are able to **discern** it or not, you should **know** by now are the initially ‘**unperceivable**’ **ways of death**. So ‘stay the course’. I mean, ‘stay on the **path**’ of these ‘**studies**’ as **taught**, including by me, especially from here on. And from a ‘**perfect teacher**’ of The Word of God, ‘**I tell you the**

truth—because I can **‘speak for God’**—this is for your protection, and eventually for **our glory, God willing and if God permit.**

And to whatever extent that any “radiocarbon test” has corroborated Dr. Velikovsky’s “reconstructed” chronology, it apparently never became widely known or accepted. Besides, it could really only corroborate, I hope Dr. Velikovsky at least eventually realizes, that because of those occasional, large, and ‘irregular loads’ of *radiocarbons* being ‘delivered’, mostly by Mercury, Venus and Mars, it should be impossible to ‘calibrate’ such tests for use as a reliable ‘clock’. And besides that, ‘full understanding’ of Dr. Velikovsky’s “reconstructed” chronology would require a ‘full understanding’ of his *Ages in Chaos* series, which is no easy task in itself. But this **study** allows you to postpone, even **‘acceptably’** do without this work—because, **having then gifts differing**, we **all** can’t do **all** the work that **he that teacheth** does, now can **we**. Neither can **he that teacheth** expect to excel as much as others do by their **work** in the **‘spiritual maturity’** of their **‘differing gifts’**, though we should **all** be **helping** each other **excel** more in **all things**, now shouldn’t **we**. And **we** should eventually become **apt** in **all things**, even without having the **gift**. And **we** should be **so doing** even though we are **frail**, and cannot **discern** all our **secret faults**, nor for now can **we** even always **resist the devil**, or expect to always **mortify the deeds of** our **flesh**, because God is **strong** and **faithful**, and we can nevertheless **trust** and **rely** on those ministering **‘perfectly’** and **‘acceptably’** in their **gifts**—if not just on God Himself, including by **prayer**—and receive it, whatever the outcome, as **the work of God** for and through His people.

And like with his ‘theory of gravity’, with his chronology Dr. Velikovsky was comfortable to allow plenty of ‘leeway’, including in the dates I attempt to pin him down on, allowing me to adjust them accordingly, which would seem appropriate in that I am, at least in **‘spiritual ways’**, **‘guided’** in my **study of scripture**, certainly much more than he was. And I mean Dr. Velikovsky, for some examples, didn’t recognize that the source of a lot of that ‘extra water’ that appeared on Earth was from Earth’s own sky, and he didn’t understand that **the curse** at The Fall is the rather recent ‘main cause’ of the **‘falling out’** of all the subsequent, so-called, ‘celestial battles’, and, being an *evolutionist* that was at least in some respects agreeable to ‘stretching out’ time almost endlessly, he had no notion that God instead planned to ‘squeeze’ His entire plan of Creation, from Adam to the New Heaven and Earth, into just 7,000 years.

But he nonetheless “reconstructed”—and greatly corrected—the more ‘recent’ historical record, and exposed arguably the biggest ever of the ‘big-fat’, ‘scientific wild goose chases’—ever—teaching us that it’s likely fantasy to believe in ‘gravity’, at least as it is now popularly ‘understood’, let alone in ‘space bending’, and that is, in the way Dr. Einstein described it. Dr. Velikovsky realized, as I now do, that *normal* and *special magnetism* account for most of everything we attribute to ‘gravity’, and also solve the many “secrets”, (read, ‘oversights’ and/or ‘cover-ups’), that ‘gravity’ alone does not explain, and of course he realized how these real *forces* have played a major role in all the **‘fallout’** that has occurred in ‘recent times’.

. This brings us to more ‘scientific validation’ of his “reconstructed” history, that is, to the continuation of his promised “review of the results of several other methods of time measurement, especially as regards the dating of the last glaciation”, and to the next section of *Chapter X, THIRTY-FIVE CENTURIES AGO*—yes, again, referring more to The Visits of Venus than Mercury—entitled, *The Glacial Lake Agassiz...*

Lake Agassiz [named after you should know who], the largest glacial lake of North America, once covered the region at present occupied by Lake Winnipeg, Lake Manitoba, a number of other lakes in Canada, and parts of the North Central States of the United States. It exceeded the aggregate area of the five Great Lakes tributary to the St. Lawrence River. It was formed when the ice of North America melted. Study of its sediment, however, disclosed that its entire duration [that is, as just one big 'great lake'] had been definitely less than one thousand years, a measure of time unexpectedly [and certainly unacceptably] short; this indicates also that the glacial cover melted in catastrophic conditions. [Or more specifically, the *ice*, likely on multiple occasions, didn't just slowly *melt*, but was also 'speed melted', and most likely as a result of the '**visits**' of *planets*, that is, following a previous **visit** - or '**visits**' - that helped *form* the *ice* beforehand, with surely much more *ice* being *formed* by The Visits of Venus, leaving more opportunity for the *melting* of it available to Mars, though surely there was some *formation* of *ice* by Mercury and Mars too, including in the regions where *glaciers* still exist today.] Warren Upham, the American glaciologist, wrote: "The geologic suddenness of the final melting of the ice-sheet, proved by the brevity of existence of its attendant glacial lakes, presents scarcely less difficulty for explanation of its causes and climatic conditions than the earlier changes from mild and warm preglacial conditions to prolonged cold and ice accumulation [- meaning, in other words, that the *ice* abruptly *formed* - likely mostly because of The Visits of Venus - and as abruptly *melting* - likely finally because of The Visits of Mars]." [W. Upham, *The Glacial Lake Agassiz*, 1895, p.240.]

Not only was the life of the glacial Lake Agassiz measured in hundreds of years and the melting of the continental ice cover that gave rise to this lake of short duration but this melting must have taken place only recently: the erosion on the [now dry] shores of Lake Agassiz indicates that it existed only a short time ago. Upham also recognized that the shoreline of the extinct lake is not horizontal, which indicates that the warping too occurred recently. [And yes, the 'warping' may have been cumulatively caused, by Mercury about 4300 and 4,000 years ago, by Venus about 3300 - 3500 years ago, and by Mars about 2700 years ago, it being the result of, I assume, the 'bulging' of the Earth, mostly because of the *solid atomic magnetic attraction* of the Earth to Venus, but apparently also to a lesser extent to Mercury and Mars.]

Although this study of Lake Agassiz by Upham is over fifty years old [and over 100 now], its conclusions have never been challenged [- now just ignored and forgotten]. He also stated:

"Another indication that the final melting of the ice sheet upon British America [read, North America not including Canada, which was 'French America'] was separated by only a very short interval, geologically speaking, from the present time is seen in the wonderfully perfect preservation of the glacial striation and polishing on the surface of the more enduring rocks... It seems impossible that these rock exposures can have so well withstood weathering in the severe climate of those northern regions longer than a few thousand years at the most [p.259]."

Upham realized and stressed that "these measures of time" are "surprisingly short, whether we compare them on the one hand with the

period of authentic human history or on the other hand with the long record of geology."

How it started, how it ended—all appears enigmatic [or mysterious]; what is clear is that great changes took place but a few thousand years ago, under catastrophic conditions.

So, 'in very short order'—much too short for the comfort of *evolutionists*—a 'lake', named after our beloved *glaciologist*, that covered the greater part of South Central Canada and the North Central United States evidently 'quickly drained' the *melted ice* that previously filled it, which evidently 'quickly melted' too, and it was evidently 'drained' mostly by the St. Lawrence and Mississippi Rivers, leaving behind—at the biggest—only much smaller 'great lakes' that still exist in this region. I would only emphasize here that this probably happened repeatedly, from The 2nd through The 4th Day—from The Flood to beyond The Visits of Mars—though the first 'draining of the water' from this region, after The Flood, may not have been preceded by the melting of *ice*, as it was simply a *global inundation* 'triggered' by Mercury, though it likely also 'triggered' the *formation* of the first, originally much smaller, *ice caps*, this about 4300 years ago, and where The Visits of Venus, which *heated* and *boiled* or *evaporated* much more *water* into the *atmosphere*, was able to create lots more *ice*, that is, as the resulting *water vapor* traveled to regions where it could then *condense* and *freeze*, and that about 3300–3500 years ago.

So on to the next 'clock', and to the next section, entitled, *Niagara Falls...*

When ['Lughead'] Lyell, on his trip to the United States, visited Niagara Falls, he talked with someone who lived in the vicinity and was told that the falls retreat about three feet a year. Since the natives of a country are likely to exaggerate [though not nearly as much as *evolutionary scientists*], ['Lubricous'] Lyell announced that one foot per annum would be a better figure. From this he concluded [or, he being a lawyer, 'arbitrated' might be a better word,] that over thirty-five thousand years were necessary [and certainly preferable to a smaller number], from the time the land was freed from the ice cover and the falls started their work of erosion, to cut the gorge of Queenston to the place it occupied in the year of ['Low-down'] Lyell's visit. Since then this figure has often been mentioned in textbooks as the length of time from the end of the glacial period. [And surely "textbooks" have become one of the most effective means of disseminating '**so-called scientific satanic conspiracy propaganda**'].

The date of the end of the Ice Age was not changed when subsequent examination of records indicated that since 1764 the falls had retreated from Lake Ontario toward Lake Erie at the rate of five feet per year, and that if the process of wearing down the rock had gone on at the same rate from the time of the retreat of the ice cover, seven thousand years would have been sufficient to do the work [- and no, it wasn't really "the cats" this time either]. However, since in the beginning, when the ice melted and a swollen stream carried the detritus [again, *rock particles*, etc., carried by *water* or *ice*] abrading [or *eroding*, including causing "striation and polishing" of] the rock of the gorge, [THEN] the erosion must have been more rapid, [AND] the age of the gorge must be further reduced. According to G. F. Wright, author of *The Ice Age in North America* [to be bio'ed eventually], five thousand years may be regarded as an adequate figure. ["*The Date of the Glacial Period*" , *The Ice Age in North America and Its Bearing upon the*

Antiquity of Man.] The erosion and sedimentation of the shores of Lake Michigan also suggest a lapse of time reckoned in thousand, but not tens of thousands, of years since the beginning of the process. [E. Andrews, *Transactions of the Chicago Academy of Sciences*, Vol. II.]

In the 1920s, however, when borings were made for a railroad bridge, it was found that

the middle part of Whirlpool Rapids Gorge of Niagara Falls contained a thick deposit of glacial boulder clay, indicating that it had been excavated [by erosion] once, had been [re]filled with drift, and then partly re-excavated by the falls in post-glacial times [W. A. Johnston, "*The Age of the Upper Great Gorge of Niagara River*", *Transactions of the Royal Society of Canada*, Ser.3. Vol.22. Sec.4, p.13-29; F. B. Taylor, *New Facts on the Niagara Gorge*, Michigan Academy of Sciences, XII, 1929, 251-65]. While the question of the age of the falls thus becomes complicated [because of some number of '*cataclysmically re-unsettling*' '*visits*' of *planets*], the discovery shows that the post-glacial period was of much shorter duration than generally assumed, even if the rate of retreat of the falls is reduced to the minimum figure of under four feet per year, as observed

in more recent years. R. F. Flint of Yale writes:

"We are obliged to fall back on the Upper Great Gorge, the uppermost segment of the whole gorge, which appears to be genuinely postglacial. Redeterminations by W. H. Boyd showed the present rate of recession of the Horseshoe Falls to be, not [anymore] five feet, but rather [already slowed to] 3.8 feet per year. Hence the age of the Upper Great Gorge is calculated as somewhat more than four thousand—and to obtain even this [low] figure we have to assume [but shouldn't] that the rate of recession has been constant [again, not a reasonable assumption because when there was more water flowing there must have been faster *erosion*], although [- and here comes the rare confession -] we know that discharge has in fact varied greatly during post-glacial times." [Flint, *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch*, p.382, C. W. Wolfe, professor of geology at Boston University, in *This Earth of Ours, Past and Present*, 1949, writes (p.176), "A rather satisfactory estimate on the recession of the Horseshoe Falls section indicates that the falls are moving upstream at the surprising rate of five feet per year..."] If due allowance is made for this last factor, the age of the Upper Great Gorge of Niagara Falls would be somewhere between 2500 and 3500 years. It follows that the ice retreated in historical time, somewhere between the years 1500 and 500 before the present era [- and that would be after The Visits of Venus and through and just beyond The Visits of Mars].

And these "low" numbers should by now sound familiar. Mercury must have visited twice, doing its original 'water damage' about 4300 years ago, and thereby forming *ice caps*, and likely some relatively small *glaciers*, which about 300 years later, on its next *visit*, could have been, to some extent, 'quick melted', while others were newly *formed*, though surely the later Visits of Venus, being able to *boil* and *evaporate* much more *water*, made most of the *ice*, around 3300 to 3500 years ago. And surely Venus was more responsible for "warping" the Earth's surface too, including 'raising' the Andes, Rockies, Cascades, Alps and Himalayas, as well as the *island chains* of the Pacific, etc, and responsible for the resulting *conflagrations* started by the *melting ground* that, thankfully and awesomely, was only a small part

of what God set in motion with **the curse**, as such *conflagrations* were mostly 'extinguished' by the '**sloshing of water**' across *continents* due to the 'lurches' in Earth's motion caused by its then 'close attractions' to and/or 'repulsions' of Venus, all naturally amazingly quickly *boiling* an 'Ice Age' of *water* into the sky that would in due course become *frozen* when *precipitated* out into the new, greatly expanded 'Arctic' and 'Antarctic' regions, and that is, with *ice* extending from the Poles farther than ever toward the Equator. But of course Mercury and Mars surely both 'made' and *melted* significant quantities of *ice* too, all of which we will continue to further investigate along the way.

And by-the-way, the "Pleistocene Epoch" is defined by my dictionary—and *evolutionists*—as "the epoch forming the earlier half of the Quaternary Period, beginning about two million years ago and ending 10,000 years ago, characterized by widespread glacial ice and the advent of modern humans", this 'chronologically mis-imagined' period supposedly including 4 "Ice Ages". And yeah, that's really 'stretching it out', now isn't it. And I mean that this period really fits in about the last 4300 years, because all this *formed* and since *melted ice*, making *waterfalls* 'race up' the *rivers* that 'drain' the *water* resulting from it—though not quite as fast when involving *igneous (volcanic)* or Genesis rock—was all formed and melted, evidently repeatedly, not in a million or more years, but in the last 4300 years, and ending around 2500 years ago.

Next on Dr. Velikovsky's *Chapter X* agenda we jump back over to Europe to 'calibrate' the next 'ice clock', that he calls, *The Rhone Glacier...*

The lifetime of a glacier is determined by measuring the detritus deposited by melting ice [in *glacial lake* bottoms]. Albert Heim, the Swiss naturalist, estimated the age of the glacial river Muota that flows into Lake Lucerne as sixteen thousand years. F. A. Forel, another Swiss naturalist, undertook an evaluation of the detrital mud deposited by the Rhone Glacier on the bottom of Lake Geneva. He arrived at a figure close to twelve thousand years as the span of time necessary for the mud and detritus to have been deposited on the bottom of the lake, or from the height [or 'coldest point'] of the Ice Age to the present. Forel's result actually signifies that the Rhone Glacier, which feeds the river and the lake, is evidence of the short duration of the post-glacial period, or even of the entire Ice Age if the origin of the lake goes back to the first glacial period [or most probably, to The Visits of Venus]. These estimates, when announced, were much lower than expected [or again, desired].

The eminent French geologist of the beginning of this century [who did most his work in the second half of the previous century], and a colleague of ["the Swiss naturalist"] Heim and ["another Swiss naturalist"] Forel, A. Cochon de Lapparent, ["the" late 19th Century President of the (French) Geological Society, Professor of Geology and Mineralogy at the Catholic Institute in Paris, and author of "a well-regarded textbook of stratigraphy", as well as other books, including, *Les tremblements de terre (The Shakings of Earth, 1887)*, *Le siècle du fer (The Century of Fire, 1890)*, and *Les anciens glaciers* (got this one?, 1893)] arrived at an even more radical result [that is, one contrary to 'time-stretched' *uniformitarian evolution*]. In the time of its greatest expansion [surely just after The Visits of Venus], the Rhone Glacier reached from Valais to Lyons. De Lapparent took the average figure of progression as seen today on larger glaciers. Mer de Glace, a glacier on Mont Blanc, moves fifty centimeters

in twenty-four hours. Moving at a comparative velocity, the Rhone Glacier, when expanding, would have required 2475 years to progress from Valais to Lyons. Then, comparing the terminal moraines [- the line of *rocks* pushed by *glaciers* and left in a line at the end of their run], or stone and detritus accumulation, of several present-day glaciers with the moraines left by the Rhone Glacier at its maximum expansion, De Lapparent again arrived at a figure of about 2400 years. He also concluded that the entire Ice Age was of very short duration. To this another geologist, Albrecht Penck, objected. [*Das Alter des Menachen-geschlechts*] [*The Age of the Human Race*] *Zeitschrift fur Ethnologie*, XL, 1908, p.390 ff.] His objection was not based on a disapproval of the above figures, but on a claim that great evolutionary changes took place during the consecutive interglacial periods. The divergence of opinion between them was so great that hundreds of thousands of years in Penck's scheme were reduced to mere thousands of years in De Lapparent's calculations. Penck estimated the duration of the Ice Age with its glacial and three interglacial periods, as one million years [and I guess we know who won this 'debate']. Each of the four glaciations and deglaciations must have consumed one hundred thousand years and more. The argument for his estimates is this: How much time was necessary to produce the changes in nature, if no catastrophes intervened? And how long would it take to produce changes in animals by means of a process that in our own day is slow as to be almost imperceptible?

But here even Dr. Velikovsky seems to be getting on a 'wrong track'. I mean did you see the implication for *punctuated equilibria/saltationism*? But nonetheless, and by reading between the lines, he is helping us correctly **understand** that even *evolutionists*, though always 'arbitrating' for 'stretched-out timeframes', identify "four glaciations". What does this mean? Dr. Velikovsky and I think it means—even though he surely cannot **see** The Flood in the full **light** of **scripture**—that there were evidently 3 '**visits**' of various *planets* to Earth which caused the 'orientation' of the Earth to the Sun to be 'significantly shifted', causing '3 major shifts' of the 'established arctic zones', possibly the first 'noticeable' one being The 2nd Visit of Mercury, though there probably wasn't nearly as much *ice* at the Poles between The 1st and 2nd Visits of Mercury, because I'm guessing The Flood actually limited the amount of *vaporization* and *boiling* of *water* into the *atmosphere* at that time—compared to the later work of Venus—so maybe the first 'noticeable shift'—or 'shifts'—of the Poles came with one or both, or with the aggregate of both of the half-century-apart Visits of Venus, though I'm also thinking that the enormity—including a big *polar shift*—of the 'second visit' became the first 'noticeable shift' as it must have greatly 'reset the changes' caused by its first '**visit**', including *re-melting* and *re-freezing* most the ice it originally made, and that only several decades earlier—that's my guess anyway. And maybe the **ten degrees** 'shift back and forth' caused by a couple of The Visits of Mars, though apparently only 15 years apart, and though not doing near so much to 'reset' the conditions as much as one or both of The Visits of Venus more likely did, were the cause of either one or two 'noticeable changes' in *glaciation*, which of course is just another guess, because there are potentially 11 '**visits**' of *planets* to consider, any of which could have caused one of these more 'noticeable', 'Pole-shifting', 'shifts of glaciation'.

And we do know that we're talking about enormous amounts of H₂O being 'moved' by excessive *heating* of the Earth, causing excessive *vaporization* of H₂O,

and where a large part of this *water vapor* undergoes *condensation* and then *freezing* whenever it reaches the Arctic Regions, and whether it arrives there by being carried by the wind, or because the ‘new Poles’ move under it. Of course in this process if any *ice* that started in a Polar Region ends up in a Tropical Region then, and especially after any ***shadow of death*** “gloom” clears, it begins to ‘slow melt’, though it shouldn’t take that long.

But again, at the risk of ‘over-explaining’, we’re talking about ‘moving’ a lot of ‘heat-produced’ *water vapor* from *warmer* regions toward the Poles, that is, transforming *water* to *gas* by *heating*, after which some of it drifts toward the Arctic Regions, either that or the Poles move under this ‘water-filled’ *atmosphere*, which in either case *condenses* and *freezes* it, which also in either case is when there are ‘significantly displaced’ new Poles, and where regions that were formerly *tropical* end up in the Arctic, so that *land* where there was little or no *ice* starts to accumulate it—quickly—and enormous quantities of it, but also by this process of the ‘shifting’ of the *axis of rotation* of the Earth, regions covered with *ice*, because they move into Tropical Regions, see the *melting* of all the *ice*, and when in the close proximity of a ‘***visiting planet***’, there may be a ‘quick melt’, maybe even finally some *boiling*.

And whoever the real culprits are that made the most ‘noticeable changes’—whether Mercury, Venus, and/or Mars, though I expect all three took a turn—and whenever these ‘major shifts’ of the Pole Regions took place—though clearly limited in range from The Flood to The Last Visit of Mars—apparently somehow the Tropics have ‘significantly shifted’ toward the Arctic Regions, and vice versa, at least 3 times, where each time one of these ‘major shifts’ occurs *glaciers*, really ‘continent-sized’ *sheets* of *ice*, fairly immediately *form* at the new poles, or, being previously *formed*, and being moved into the Tropics, begin *melting*, and all this easily enough ‘noticeable’ as an ‘Ice Age’ if the ‘shift’ is not further disturbed for a long enough period afterward, or if only lasting a short time, nonetheless measurable because of the significant amount of *water* that is quickly converted to *ice*, and vice versa—Mercury or Mars more likely the cause of the longest lasting ‘shifts’, and Venus more likely the cause of a much shorter one, but also of a long one too. And yeah, this is a lot to picture. But it is the purpose of the rest of this ***study*** to help you to ***see*** it, and everything else going on too, ***better***, that is, to get to where you have significantly decreased the need for my help, because you become ***approved unto God*** to ‘***correct, improve and expand***’ your ***meditation*** on such topics all by yourself. Well, I mean the time should be coming when we are more working together than not. And like we could leave such analysis in the hands of an *evolutionists*—even a Christian one—and regardless of his ‘I.Q.’

And yes again, not counting The Flood, evidently there were 3 ‘noticeably significant’, long term, or ‘cataclysmic-enough-to-be-measured-but-not-as-much-a-total-reset’, short term, ‘reorientations’ of the Earth to the Sun, making at least what appears to be 4 ‘Ice Ages’, implying that not every ‘***visit***’ resulted in a ‘significant shift’ of Earth’s ‘solar orientation’, or that it was followed too closely by another ***visit*** that denied the previous one the time needed to make ‘as noticeable a mark’. And again, all these ‘Ice Ages’ together didn’t take “one million years”. In fact it would not even have been possible to move all that H₂O, even given a ‘million years’, without ‘extraplanetary assistance’, and especially without The 2 Visits of Venus, where evidently the biggest *ice caps* were formed, twice in about half a century, where even without a ‘significant shift’, the enormous *ice caps* may have simply been ‘doubled’, and we’re talking *ice caps* that, at their farthest extent, reached the greater part of the way to the Equator in some places, as we, that is, Dr. Velikovsky, you and I, will further consider along the way.

Next Dr. Velikovsky introduces us to the early 20th Century opinion of the director of two prominent German *natural* and *historical* museums, including lastly the Director of the Archaeology Department of the Ethnology Museum in Berlin, who was also finally Chairman of The Berlin Society for Anthropology, Ethnology and Prehistory, Carl Schuchardt, writing,

Carl Schuchardt, in his book, *Alteuropa [Old Europe]*, warned his colleagues not to turn deaf ears to voices like that of De Lapparent. Let us assume that the geological processes were always as they are now. In Ehringsdorf near Weimar there is a tufa layer [- "a porous limestone formed from calcium carbonate deposited by springs or the like"], in which, during the entire last interglacial period, calcium was deposited. "But should we even assume all kinds of imaginable causes that would have retarded the depositions of calcium so as to make it ten times as slow as at present, still we would have only 3000 years and not 100,000!" [*Alteuropa*, 1929, p.16; Idem, *Vorgeschichte von Deutschland [Prehistory of Germany]*, 1943, p.3.]

If we follow the principle of quantitative analysis and accept De Lapparent's figure as approximately correct, the maximal extension of the Rhone Glacier dates from a point well within the bounds of human history [- read, within God's first 4 Days, or within the first 4,000 Years of Creation, it now being near the end of Day 6, or in other words, this happened within the last 3 to 4 Days, and that is, within the last 3 to 4,000 years].

Dr. Velikovsky then uses another eminent early 20th Century scientist's opinion, an Austrian *glaciologist*, who his successors saw fit to name a *glacier* in Antarctica after, Raimund von Klebelsberg, concluding,

The recent [early to mid-20th Century] field work in the Alps actually revealed that numerous glaciers there are no older than 4000 years. This startling discovery made the following statement necessary: "A large number of the present glaciers in the Alps are not survivors of the last glacial maximum, as was formerly universally believed, but are glaciers newly created within roughly the last 4000 years." [Flint, *Glacial Geology*, p.491, cf. von Klebelsberg, *Geologie von a Tirol [Geology of a Tyrol]*, 1935, p.573.]

In the next section of this chapter entitled, *THIRTY-FIVE CENTURIES AGO*, but really 2500 to 3500 years ago, Dr. Velikovsky jumps back across to North America to tell us about one of the major 'contributaries' (yeah, just made this word up) involved in the 'draining' of the *melting ice* there, *The Mississippi*, explaining,

The Mississippi carries yearly in its stream many billions of tons of detritus, a large part of which is deposited in the delta. As early as 1861, Humphreys and Abbot calculated the age of the Mississippi by evaluating the detritus borne by it and the sediment deposited in the delta. They arrived at the low figure of 5000 years as the age of the delta, its birth thus being related to about the year 2800 before the present era [- yes, its original 'father' probably being Mercury]. [Humphreys and Abbot, *Report on the Mississippi River*, 1861, a publication of the U.S. Army.] However, when at the close of the Ice Age the ice cover melted in the north, multitudinous

streams [again yes, let's call them 'contributaries'] must have carried an enormous amount of detritus into the Mississippi and its [main] tributary, the Missouri, and for this reason the above figure, if otherwise properly calculated, must be appreciably reduced. It is assumed that when the continental ice started to melt and the Great Lakes became swollen, but the St. Lawrence was still blocked by ice, the water of the basin emptied to a great extent into the Gulf of Mexico through the Mississippi.

The Falls of St. Anthony on this stream at Minneapolis have excavated a long gorge by removing the bedrock [Genesis rock]. In the 1870s and 1880s N. H. Winchell made this falls the subject of a study. Comparing topographical maps covering two hundred years, he concluded that the falls had retreated 2.44 feet yearly. If this was the constant rate of retreat, the falls must have started 8000 years ago. [*Minnesota Geologic and Natural History Survey for 1876, 1887, p.175-89.*] But here, too, a larger stream carrying abundant detritus, which abraded the bedrock, must have flowed when the ice cover melted. J. D. Dana, studying the area of Lake Champlain and of the Northeastern states in general, came to the conclusion the prodigious floods of almost unimaginable magnitude accompanied the melting of the ice cover: in the lower part of the Connecticut River the floods rose two hundred feet above the present high-water mark. [G. F. Wright [again, to be bio'ed eventually], *The Ice Age in North America*, p.635.] And if this is true for those regions, it must be true also for the valley of the Mississippi. Consequently the gorge of the Falls of St. Anthony must be of more recent date than Winchell calculated, though even his figure [of course] was regarded as much too low.

The protracted discussion of the results derived from the exploration of Niagara and St. Anthony falls demonstrated the need for yet another area of investigation, preferably the delta of a stream fed by still existing glacier that could be carefully studied. For that purpose the delta of the Bear River was selected (a stream from a melting glacier that enters the Portland Canal on the Alaska-British Columbia border). On the basis of three earlier accurate surveys made between the years 1909 and 1927, G. Hanson in 1934 calculated with great exactness the annual growth of the delta through deposited sediment. At the present rate of sedimentation the delta is estimated to be "only 3600 years old". [G. Hanson, "*The Bear River delta, British Columbia, and its significance regarding Pleistocene and Recent glaciation*", Royal Society of Canada, *Transactions*, Ser.3, Vol.28, Sec.4, p.179-85; see also Flint, *Glacial Geology*, p.495.] The glacier that feeds the Bear River was formed and began to melt in the middle of the second millennium before the present era [about 3500 years ago].

In the next section Dr. Velikovsky moves from the Mississippi 'contributaries', and from its *delta* on the Gulf of Mexico, to the Atlantic Coast, and to *Fossils in Florida*, chronicling,

On the Atlantic Coast of Florida, at Vero in the Indian River region, in 1915 and 1916, human remains were found in association with the bones of Ice Age (Pleistocene) animals, [that is, *bones* believed associated with the 'mis-imagined' so-called 'Ice Ages' of the last "two million years", though surely really no

more than about 4,000 years old, right?] many of which either became extinct, like the saber-toothed tiger, or have disappeared from the Americas, like the camel.

The find caused immediate excitement among geologists and anthropologist. Beside the human bones pottery was found, as well as bone implements and worked stone [- evidently more people that were 'blasted into the stone age']. Ales Hrdlicka, of the Smithsonian Institution of Washington, D.C., a renowned anthropologist (who generally opposed the view that man existed in America in the Ice Age), wrote that the "advanced state of culture, such as that shown by the pottery, bone implements, and worked stone brought from a considerable distance, implies a numerous population spread over large areas, acquainted thoroughly with fire, with cooking food, and with all the usual primitive arts"; the human remains and relics could not be of an antiquity "comparable with that of fossil remains with which they are associated [and that is, though buried together, he assumed the "human remains and relics" are a million years or so more recently buried, so as to preserve the *uniformitarian* 'stretched-out' *timescale*]." [*Preliminary Report on Finds of Supposedly Ancient Human Remains at Vero, Florida,* *Journal of Geology*, XXV, 1917.] He also published the opinion of W. H. Holmes, head curator of the Department of Anthropology of the United States National Museum, who investigated the pottery obtained by Hrdlicka from Vero. These were bowls "such as were in common use among the Indian tribes of Florida." When compared with vessels from Florida earth mounds [or "burial mounds", where are sometime found buried *giants*—these "mounds" believed to facilitate 'reincarnation', remember?], "no significant distinction can be made; in material, thickness of walls, finish of rim, surface finish, color, state of preservation, and size and shape," the vessels "are identical." There thus appears "not the least ground in the evidence of the specimens themselves for the assumption that the Vero pottery pertains to any other people than the mound-building Indian tribes of Florida of the pre-Columbian time [that is, before the time of explorer Christopher Columbus - or before 1492 - while 'giant-inspired', 'burial-mound-building' pertains to tribes all over the Americas during this time as we have seen].

But the bones of man and his artifacts (pottery) were found among the extinct animals. The discoverer of the Vero deposits, E. H. Sellards, state geologist of Florida and a very capable paleontologist, wrote in the debate that ensued: "That human bones are fossils normal to this stratum and contemporaneous with the associated vertebrates is determined by their place in the formation, their manner of occurrence, their intimate relation to the bones of other animals, and the degree of mineralization of the bones." This "degree of mineralization of the human bones is identical with that of the associated bones of the other animals." In his view the evidence obtained "affords proof that man reached America at an early date and was present on the continent in association with a Pleistocene [Ice Age] fauna [*animal life*]." [*On the Association of Human Remains and Extinct Vertebrates at Vero, Florida,* *Journal of Geology*, XXV, 1917.] Anthropologist of the Hrdlicka school would not accept this,

claiming a late arrival of man on the American continent, and the presence of pottery was in their view proof of a late date for the human bones. The human skulls, though fossilized, did not differ from the skulls of the Indians of today.

In 1923-29, thirty-three miles north of Vero, in Melbourne, Florida, another such association of human remains and extinct animals was found, "a remarkably rich assemblage of animal bones, many of which represent species which became extinct at or after the close of the Pleistocene [Ice Age] epoch." [J. W. Gidley, "*Ancient Man in Florida*," *Bulletin of the Geological Society of America*, XL, p.491-502; J. W. Gidley and F. B. Loomis, "*Fossil Man in Florida*," *American Journal of Science*, 5th Ser., Vol.12. p.254-65.] The discoverer J. W. Gidley, of the United States National Museum, established unequivocally that in Melbourne—as in Vero—the human bones were of the same stratum and in the same state of fossilization as the bones of the extinct animals. And again human artifacts were found with the bones. The "projectile points [*arrowheads*], awls, and pins" found with the human bones at Melbourne as well as at Vero are the same workmanship as those unearthed in early Indian sites, two thousand of which are known in the area [which thanks to the '*false religion*' of the "Indians", may no longer be excavated, not that such further excavation would be 'handled fairly' by *evolutionists*].

All these and other considerations of an anthropological as well as geological nature, being summed up, prove, in the opinion of I. Rouse, a recent analysis of the much debated fossils of Florida, that "the Vero and Melbourne man should have been in existence between 2000 B.C., and the year zero A.D. [or the year of Christ's birth]." [I. Rouse, "*Vero and Melbourne Man*", *Transactions of the New York Academy of Sciences*, Ser.II, Vol.12,1950, p.224ff.] This does not solve the problem [- and really just ignores it -] of the association of extinct animals [supposedly up to 'millions of years old'] and man who lived between two and four thousand years ago, in the second and first millennia before the present era.

There is no proper way out of this dilemma, other than the assumption that now extinct animals still existed in historical times and that the catastrophe which overwhelmed man and animals and annihilated numerous species occurred in the second or first millennium before the present era.

The geologists are right: the human remains and artifacts of Vero and Melbourne in Florida are of the same age as the fossils of the extinct animals.

The anthropologists were equally right: human remains and artifacts are of the second or first millennium before the present era.

What follows? It follows that the extinct animals belonged to the recent past. It follows also that some paroxysm [or "sudden, violent action"] of nature may have destroyed numerous species so that they became extinct.

In the next section we move to the Western United States, to the Great Basin, that "high dessert" between the Rocky Mountains on the East and the Sierra

Nevada and Cascade Mountain Ranges on the West. In this *basin* Dr. Velikovsky finds a clear connection between the *Lakes of the Great Basin and the End of the Ice Age*, reporting,

The Sierra Nevada chain rises between the Great Basin to the east and the Pacific, cutting off the drainage to the ocean. Abert and Summer lakes in southern Oregon have no outlets. They are regarded as remnants of a once large glacial lake, Chewaucan [that, since it required that Venus 'raise up' the Sierra Nevadas on one side, and the Rockies on the other, this 'Great Basin Great Lake' must have first existed after The Visits of Venus, where Venus apparent not only easily enough 'raised' these *mountain ranges*, but also afterward '*sloshed*' enough *waters* into this 'great basin' to mostly or entirely fill it, uh-huh]. W. van Winkle of the United States Geological Survey investigated the saline content of these two lakes and wrote: "A conservative estimate of the age of Summer and Abert Lakes, based on their concentration and area, the composition of the influent waters, and the rate of evaporation, is 4000 years." [Walton van Winkle, "*Quality of the Surface Waters of Oregon*," *U.S. Geological Survey, Water Supply Paper 363*, Washington, 1914.] If this conclusion is correct, the post-glacial epoch is no longer than 4000 years. Startled at his own results, Van Winkle conjectured that salt deposits of the early Chewaucan Lake may be hidden beneath the bottom sediments of the present Abert and Summer lakes [supposedly only making it seem as if they are so 'new'].

To the east of Sequoia National Park and Mount Whitney in California lies Owens Lake.

It is supplied by the Owens River and it has no outlet. At some time in the past the surface level of the lake, because of a greater water supply, was so much higher that it overflowed its basin. H. S. Gale analyzed the water of the lake and of the river for chlorine and sodium and came to the conclusion that the river required 4200 years to supply the chlorine present in the lake and 3500 years to supply its sodium. [Professor of Geography] Ellsworth Huntington of Yale found these figures too high [bless his heart, as appropriate], because no allowance was made for greater rainfall and "refreshing of the lake" in the past, and consequently he reduced the age of the lake to 2500 years, which would place its origins not far from the middle of the first millennium before the present era [in the ballpark The Visits of Mars]. [*Quaternary Climates*, monographs by J. Claude Jones, Ernst Antevs, and Ellsworth Huntington, Carnegie Institute of Washington, 1925, p.200.]

Another vast lake of the past without an outlet to the sea was Lake Lahontan in the Great Basin of Nevada, which covered an area of 8500 square miles. As its water level fell, it split up into a number of lakes divided by a desert terrain. In the 1880s I. Russell of the United States Geological Survey investigated Lake Lahontan and its basin, and established that the lake was never completely dried out and that the present-day Pyramid and Winnemucca lakes north of Reno and Walker Lake southwest of it are the residuals of the older and larger lake. [I. Russell, "*Geologic History of Lake Lahontan*," *U.S. Geological Survey, Monograph 11*, 1866.] He concluded that Lake Lahontan existed during

the Ice Age and was contemporaneous with the different stages of glaciation of that age. He also found bones of Ice Age animals in the deposits of the ancient lake.

More recently, Lahontan and its residual lakes were explored by J. Claude Jones, and the results of his work were published in "*Geological History of Lake Lahontan*" by the Carnegie Institution of Washington [*Quaternary Climates*]. He investigated the saline [or *salt*] content of Pyramid and Winnemucca lakes and of the Truckee River that feeds them. He found that the river could have supplied the entire content of chlorine of these two lakes in 3881 years. "A similar calculation, using sodium instead of chlorine, gave 2447 years necessary." [J. Claude] Jones's careful work led him to agree with Russel that Lake Lahontan never fully dried up and that the existing lakes are its residuals.

But these conclusions require that the age of the mammals of the Ice Age, found in the deposits of Lake Lahontan, be not greater than that of the lake. This means that the Ice Age ended only twenty five to thirty-nine centuries ago. Jones checked the figures obtained from the rate of accumulation of chlorine and sodium and brought in by the Truckee River, with other methods, such as the accumulation of chlorine in lakes during the thirty-one years that had passed since the analysis made by Russell, and also the rate of concentration of salts by evaporation, and each time reached the result that the entire history of Pyramid and Winnemucca lakes "is within the last 3000 years [p.4]."

Bones of horses, elephants, and camels, animals that became extinct in the Americas, were found in the Lahontan sediments, as well as a spear point of human manufacture. [Russell, *U.S. Geological Survey, Monograph 11*, p.143.] When a branch of the Southern Pacific Railroad was laid through Astor Pass, a large gravel pit of Lahontan age was opened, and J. C. Merriam of the University of California identified among the bones the skeletal remains of *Felix atrox*, a species of lion found also in the asphalt pit of Rancho La Brea. [J. C. Merriam, *California University Bulletin, Department of Geology*, VIII, 1915, p.377-84.] "All of these forms are now extinct and neither camels nor lions are found on this continent as a part of the present native fauna [*animal life*]." [*Quaternary Climates*, p.49-50.] The similarity of the fauna of the asphalt pits of La Brea and the deposits of Lake Lahontan led Merriam to decide that they were contemporaneous.

On the basis of his analyses Jones came to the conclusion that the extinct animals lived in North America into historical times. This was an unusual statement and it was opposed at first on the grounds that his interpretation of his observations was "obviously erroneous, since [it] led him to the conclusion that the mastodon and the camel lived on in North America into historical times". [Dr. C. E. P. Brooks, *Climate through the Ages*, 2nd ed., 1949, p.346.]

Yes, "obviously erroneous"—to *evolutionists*—only because it eliminates the need for quite a 'big chunk' of 'stretched-out time'. But getting back to reality, it could only have been Venus that had enough 'pull', an 'orbit' at a time—and whether on

'her' 1st and/or 2nd Visit'—to quickly 'raise' these high *mountain ranges* that border the Great Basin, as well as all the other highest *ranges* in the World, such as the Andes, the Alps, and the Himalayas. Such higher *ranges* literally 'draw the lines', and their varying elevations literally 'mark her speed' as 'she' moved over Earth's surface at any given point—or *peak*—and thereby identifies the different courses of 'her passes' over the Earth's surface, while smaller *mountain ranges* more likely instead 'mark the routes', *accelerations* and *decelerations* of Mercury or Mars over the Earth. But the *density* of the *rock* being *melted* and/or 'pulled on' must also have been a factor in how high these linear *ranges* could be **lifted** (e.g., [Isa 2:14](#)). And of course this is part of the reason why Venus and Mars 'tore up' and/or 'reburied' so much of the 'work'—read, **judgments**—of Mercury. Uh-huh.

Jumping to *Chapter XII, THE RUINS OF THE EAST*, and to the 5th and last section, *Times and Dates*, Dr. Velikovsky explains his arguably randomly presented information—but especially the need for further analysis—writing,

The evidence of this and preceding chapters should not be interpreted as proving that there were global catastrophes only in the first and second millennia before the present era [and that is, by only Venus and Mars]; but as substantiating the claim that in those times, too, there were global disturbances: these were actually the last in a line that goes back to much earlier times.

But were there really earlier "global disturbances" before these so-called "last in a line"? Yes, but there were really only 2 earlier "global cataclysms" of the nature of the ones caused by Venus and Mars, these earlier ones really only involving Mercury, and only going back about another millennium, including The 1st Visit of Mercury in about 2300 BC that caused The Flood, and The 2nd Visit of Mercury nearer to 2000 BC that caused the destruction of the Tower of Babel, etc., and maybe also was the one of God's **instruments**—so far—that He **used** for something even more spectacular, that is, as suggested not just by **scripture**, but also by ancient sources uncovered by Dr. Velikovsky, and I mean God may have somehow used Mercury—*electrically*—to **confound... languages**—read, 'electrically reprogram' the language center of everyone's brain, or read, 'Matrix' everyone's brain. However apparently Dr. Velikovsky thinks such "global catastrophes" have been going on for millions to billions of years, misunderstanding the lower 'levels' of the "Geological Record" or "Geological Timescale" as the evidence of that, and that is, though he sees all the lower 'levels' as being more recently seriously 'disturbed' and 'added to', he doesn't see that they were otherwise mostly all 'laid' at once in The Flood, and instead thinks they were 'laid' over 'millions to billions of years', one at a time, in "a line" of "global cataclysms", and in this respect he too is out of touch with reality—timewise—as all other *evolutionists* are.

But getting back to more "recent times" where his 'grip on reality' is more firm, he adds,

According to the narrative of *Worlds in Collision*, two series of world catastrophes [that he sees as "the last in the line"] took place in recent times: "one that occurred thirty-four [or three] to thirty-five centuries ago, in the middle of the second millennium before the present era; the other in the eighth and the beginning of the seventh century before the current era, twenty-six centuries ago [*Worlds in Collision, Preface*]." The first of these catastrophes [- The 2 Visits of Venus, about 52 years apart,] occurred at the end

of the Middle Kingdom in Egypt and actually caused its termination [though this **'judgment of God'** is now thought—and only by implication—to have occurred in the middle of the time of “Hyksos rule”, if acknowledged at all, that is, it has become at most a factor in The Hyksos Decline and therefore in The Rise of the New Kingdom, but apparently occurring, by my previous accounting, closer to 1300 than to 1500 BC, as we will further consider]; in *Ages in Chaos* further details were given of the closing hours of the Middle Kingdom [- again, not to be confused with The Decline of Hyksos Rule], which went down under the blows of nature [by God]. The second series of catastrophes [- The 7 Visits of Mars, each apparently 15 years apart,] occurred in the period that started in -776 and lasted until -687, when in the final act of a protracted drama, Sennacherib [King of Assyria, who was besieging Jerusalem then under King Hezekiah,] met his downfall.

In an independent investigation, Claude Schaeffer [- a 20th Century “French archeologist”, evidently now only acknowledged for being the one “who led the French excavation team that began working on the site of Ugarit”, “an ancient port city” now thought to have had “close connections to the Hittite Empire”,] came to the conclusion that at the end of the Middle Kingdom an enormous cataclysm took place [Venus] that ruined Egypt and devastated by earthquake and holocaust every populated place in Palestine, Syria, Cyprus, Mesopotamia, Asia Minor (Turkey), the Caucasus, and Persia... [Dr. Velikovsky adds by footnote that, "In *Ages in Chaos* I have shown why the end of the Middle Kingdom must be dated about -1500"]; previously Sir Arthur Evans[- to be



covered later and in **SECTION 8** -] had shown that, at the downfall of the Middle Kingdom in Egypt, Crete was overwhelmed by a natural upheaval; also the volcano of Thera erupted prodigious quantities of lava; and the Indus Valley civilization [- supported by the Indus River, a major Asian river running from Tibet through India and Pakistan -] came abruptly to an end.

More recent catastrophes embracing the entire Near and Middle East [- see the map highlighting the Middle East in **dark green**, and the Near East in **light green** on **p.72** -] are also described by Schaeffer as having taken place a few centuries later. Evans had found that the cities of Crete [- **Crete**, also on the map, being the largest of the Greek Islands -] were again destroyed in very severe earthquakes that terminated the conservative Minoan ages on Crete.

Schaeffer’s findings, based on excavations in scores, if not hundreds, of places all around the ancient East, where populations were decimated or annihilated, the earth shook, the sea irrupted, and the climate changed, are by themselves sufficient support [and therefore nowadays almost entirely ignored] for the claims made in *Worlds in Collision* as to the times and the vastness of the catastrophes. But we have more [currently mostly ignored] evidence, and no wonder: the catastrophes being ubiquitous [uh-huh, everywhere!], their effects must be found everywhere [and the **'satanic conspiracy'** to cover all this up “must be found everywhere” too].

And Dr. Velikovsky concludes, including summarizing evidence we have yet to cover, saying,

The Rhone Glacier in the Alps started to melt 2400 years ago, in the middle of the first millennium [BC]. This calculation of De Lapparent coincides with that at which we arrived by dating the last catastrophe in -687. In this catastrophe many older glaciers melted, and the subsequent increased evaporation and precipitation [because Mars not only 'shifted' the Poles, but evidently also *heated* everything up, thereby converting a lot of *liquid water* to *water vapor*, and in the process...] built other [- and that is, new] glaciers that before long also started to melt, a process that has been going on ever since. Many glaciers of the Alps, it was recently learned with surprise, are less than 4000 years old (Flint).

Catastrophic changes in climate, found by Sernander and others in Scandinavia [not yet covered], correspond almost exactly with our dates: in the second millennium, about -1500 [read, -1300], and once more, 800 to 700 years before the present era, or thirty-four [or three] and almost twenty-seven centuries ago. The same dates are established through pollen analysis by Gams and Nordhagen [not yet covered] for the catastrophic changes of climate in German fens [*bogs, swamps*] and tectonic disturbances in central Europe; and again the same dates, close to the middle of the second millennium before the present era and once more following the year - 800, are fixed by Paret and other authors [not yet covered] for the climatic catastrophes that are reflected in the history of the lake dwellings in Germany, Switzerland, and northern Italy [though of course Gams, Nordhagen, and Paret are little known anymore].

Careful investigations by W. A. Johnston ['scrubbed clean' from the internet] of the Niagara River bed disclosed that the present channel was cut by the falls less than 4000 years ago. And equally careful investigations of the Bear River delta by Hanson [also 'scrubbed'], who compared measurements repeated in periodic surveys, showed that the age of this delta is 3600 years, its origin going back to the middle of the second millennium before the present era.

Warren Upham's research on the great glacial Lake Agassiz and the striations of the exposed rocks there indicates that the lake was formed but a few thousand years ago and existed for a short time only [- Upham being that "American Geologist" whose extensive work entitled, "*The Glacial Lake Agassiz*", was published by the United States Geological Survey, and who I will further 'bio' a little further on].

The Study by [J.] Claude Jones [- the only reference of him I could find, by-the-way, besides the one citing this paragraph, being that he was the "professor of geology and dean of the McKay School of Mines of the University of Nevada -] of the lakes of the Great Basin showed that these lakes, remnants of larger glacial lakes, have existed only about 3500 years, and also that the Ice Age fauna survived to a date equally recent. Gale obtained the same result

on Owens Lake in California and also Van Winkle on Abert and Summer lakes in Oregon [and nope, neither these guys are remembered either].

Radiocarbon analysis by Libby [- that mid-20th Century Berkeley doctor of chemistry, Columbia *hydrogen bomb* maker, University of Chicago *radiocarbon dating* developer, and, after helping 'blow up' a bunch of *nuclear bombs*, finally UCLA 'environmentalist' -] also indicates that plants associated with extinct animals (mastodons) in Mexico are probably only 3500 years old. Similar conclusions concerning the late survival of the Pleistocene fauna [Ice Age *animal life*] were drawn by various field workers in many parts of the American continent.

Suess ["of the United States Geological Survey", the "grandson", who later worked with 2 Nobel Prize winners, including Dr. Urey, and who ultimately became a founder of and set up a 'radiocarbon lab' at UCSD,] and Rubin [Herman and Jean? - Professors of Statistics and Mathematics, both at Purdue University - Herman, evidently still alive at this writing, being first published in 1945 or earlier, and Jean, who once joint-published with her husband Herman, passed in 2002 -] found with the help of radiocarbon [and evidently mathematical and statistical] analysis that in the mountains of the western United States ice advanced only 3000 year ago [again, *Science*, Sept. 24, 1954, and April 8, 1955; if you can get either copy, let me know].

The study of the magnetic properties of the clay of Etruscan [pre-Roman] vases [not yet covered] points to a reversal of the general magnetic field of the earth, and also to a passage of the earth through strong magnetic fields in historical times [but also "points to" the 'resetting' of all sorts of 'geological clocks' too, huh].

The Florida fossils beds at Vero and Melbourne proved—by the artifacts found there together with human bones and the remains of animals, many of which are extinct—that these fossils beds were deposited between 2000 and 4000 years ago. As brought out by Godwin [not yet covered], the two irruptions of the sea on English shores also took place sometime in the second and first millennia before the present era. According to an earlier work, by Prestwich [not yet covered (or bio'ed), hereafter *nyc*], the irruption of the sea was of a very violent nature; it spread to central France and the French Riviera, to Gibraltar, Corsica, and Sicily, and to the entire area that stretches to the land of the ancient East. In all these places animal bones have been found broken but fresh; these bones of extant and extinct species have been found in fissures and caverns, sometimes on the tops of high hills, in great numbers. The bones found in English caves, covered with diluvium, were also described as fresh and unfossilized [and again, all this more 'violent upheaval' was mostly caused by Venus, and most all of this *nyc*, but we'll get to it all in **SECTION 8**].

From observations on beaches in numerous places all over the world, Daly [only previously mentioned, *nyc*] concluded that there was a change in ocean level, which dropped sixteen to twenty feet 3500 years ago; Kuenen and others confirmed Daly's findings with evidence derived from Europe [which again was caused by Venus when 'she' abruptly converted so much of the *liquid water* on Earth to *above-sea-level ice*, not to mention 'raised' and 'lowered' so much of the *crust* of the Earth].

To these closely dated geological, climatological, and archaeological evidences of catastrophes, we may add numerous others which also point to the recency of great upheavals.

Animals, torn and broken, many of which are of extinct forms are found in enormous heaps in Alaska, their bones and skins fresh; the mammoth meat discovered in Siberia is still edible; the bones of hippopotami in the rock fissures of England still retain their organic matter. The mountain chains of China and Tibet, of the Andes, the Alps, the Rockies, and the Caucasus rose to their present heights in the late Stone and even in the Bronze Age, and at those times (post-glacial) Africa was torn by the Great Rift [- all still *nyc*, but again, though with further specifics, all of this we, (Dr. Velikovsky, you and I), will cover in detail in **SECTION 8**, as most of this violence to *animals*, etc., was caused by the more violent **'sloshing'** of *liquid water* across our planet because of the very close proximity of Venus, where Mercury by *water* mostly just drowned its victims, and afterward literally 'buried' everything, that is, up to many miles deep in *sediment*].

We have the same late dating from all parts of the world, and what is even more important, by all kinds of calendars, calculations, and approaches [- also *nyc*, but some of which is in *Ages in Chaos*, and reserved for **SECTION 11**]. And actually the figures brought together on these pages are from the fields of archaeology and climatology, and from fossil beds and waterfalls and deltas and fens (pollen analysis), from lake dwellings and glaciers and ocean levels and the magnetic polarity of the earth, disclosing the same events and the same dates [- again, mostly *nyc*].

And from all this you can **see 'increasingly' better** what Dr. Velikovsky didn't so clearly see, and that is, The Flood, not to mention Mercury's role in it. I mean, again, he doesn't see that it was the single event that 'laid' most all the *sedimentary rock* at once, and that is, not over 'millions to billions of years', but only less than 4 millennia ago, though he does see how it was all 'recently displaced' and 'added to' by Venus and Mars. And we will learn much more from Dr. Velikovsky about Mercury and 'his other exploits' in the next section, all of which will help to **'correct, improve and expand'** our **understanding** of 'God's work' in The Flood and otherwise.

And yes, Venus, and to a lesser extent Mars, or really God, and mostly **'naturally'**, that is, by what He set in motion—**'abracadabra style'**—at The Fall, repeatedly 'savaged' the whole Earth, though not usually including where **his people** were, and though both this **destruction** and **great deliverance** were nonetheless **'accomplished'** with **'awesome control and finesse'**, and not just for Jews, but potentially **in every nation** for **accepted** Gentiles too—a perspective we will **continue** to improve upon in the following sections. And of course I'm talking about anyone—before this **dispensation**—that, as The Apostle Peter puts it, **feareth him, and worketh righteousness, and is accepted with him** [Acts 10:34-35](#), as opposed to everyone else who didn't and wasn't. And I mean that these few of the **few** in these 'Pre-Age-of-Grace times', who were **'God-saved souls'**, evidently became such because they did **'fear him'** and **'work righteousness'**, and therefore were **accepted with him**—in their case their **spirits** first joining the **'pre-saved'** who waited in **captivity** in **Abraham's Bosom**, which was the **'captive waiting place'** of the **'pre-converted'**, this evidently because of God's **'divine anticipation of a redemptive act of free will'**, certainly a 'big factor' in this **'free will choice'** coming from one round or

more of His both **terrible** and **wondrous works**, though now **Abraham's Bosom** is apparently just a place where '**the choice**'—that is, to **choose life**—is still entirely pending.

So what else about Mercury? Please review the paired 'black and white' drawings/diagrams of the **Grand Canyon** in **SECTION 3** on **p.285**. This is to hopefully improve your perspective of the difference between what Mercury and Venus did. In these drawings you can see, exposed by Venus, some of the *layers* of *sedimentary* rock that 'settled out' as The Flood...

...waters returned from off the earth continually; and after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were abated... [that is] ... unto the place which thou hast founded for them... a bound that they may not [permanently] pass over; that they turn not again to [completely] cover the earth ([Gen 8:3](#); [Psa 104:5-9](#)),

which must have included refilling the underground **storehouses** or *aquifers* that originally supplied the **fountains...of the great deep**, as well as *springs* and *well water*, and that would be the ones that didn't get filled with *magma*. (See also [Pro 8:28-29](#) – and don't be confused; the speaker is **Wisdom** personified – and see [Job 26:10](#) and Act 17:24-26).

And you should see that this *sedimentary rock* that was 'laid' as a result of The 1st Visit of Mercury is now in a new situation and condition, that is, since The 2 Visits of Venus. I mean that Venus 'raised' high *mountain ranges* on the lines drawn by its closest points to Earth as it 'passed over', mostly 'raising' the more abundantly available, and more flexible, *sedimentary rock* that Mercury 'laid' over all of the Earth's surface, though this *sedimentary rock* was also 'supported and uplifted' by the both *solid* and *melted*, and if *melted* then *expanding* Genesis rock, that eventually, to a great extent but not completely, cooled from *magma* to *igneous rock*, but often before that, and decreasingly so ever since, *erupted* as *lava*, that is, at points where the expansion of *magma* became too much to be contained under the *sedimentary rock*.

And since repetition along with a '**growing perspective**' can only be helpful at this point, again, in the process of 'passing over' the Earth Venus made high *mountain ranges* specifically along the lines drawn at the closest points of Venus to the Earth, the speed maybe somehow slowing where the *mountains* are highest, *peaks* maybe indicating the most slowing, even possibly 'pauses', though not so much 'pauses' in *momentum* in this 'dance of planets', and/or maybe they're points containing more 'flexible' *sedimentary rock*. But certainly all the higher *mountains* that exist today were 'raised' by the *atomic magnetic attraction*, and maybe some 'gravity', resulting from the very close proximity of Venus to the Earth, with some of these 'Venus-lifted' *ranges* going from *pole* to *pole*, like the Andes to the Sierra Nevada to the Cascade Mountain Ranges, for example, this Western North and South American **bound** evidently re-**set** by God to contain the Pacific Ocean on its east side. And the many 'Venus-class' Mountain Ranges, including all across the Pacific Ocean Floor, many of their *peaks* being *islands*, are found all over the globe, and indicate 'she' must have made a number of 'orbits' around Earth on 'her' 2 '**visits**'. And remember that there were 10 separate **plagues** in Egypt, possibly indicating as many or more 'orbits' on 'her' 1st Visit.

But Venus also, by evidently introducing a lot of, or a lot more, *salt* into Earth's *oceans*, and by evidently '**sloshing**' the resulting *saltwater* across *continents*, covered the *continents* with *salt* too, and doing so whether this was before or after her 'mountain-raising' required also 'raising larger-than-mountain-sized' *tidal waves* (now called *tsunami*, which I will hereafter try to ignore). And I mean higher

coastal and *inland mountain ranges* must have required more ‘abrupt changes’ in Earth’s motion to **‘slosh’** such ‘overtopping’ *waves*, where these **‘sloshed’ waters**—in this case after *mountains* had been ‘raised’—were captured in the naturally created *basins*, or simple caught where the ground was relatively low, but also caught if fairly quickly *frozen*, and anywhere *water precipitated* out of the sky, being already *frozen*, which evidently happened in vast *arctic areas*.

And so the numerous, long *mountains ranges*—including the taller and wider ones where maybe Venus was ‘forced’ to ‘pass over’ a little slower, and/or where the *sedimentary rock* was more flexible—were ‘quickly raised’, well, evidently after a number and variety of ‘orbits’ in this repeated ‘dance of planets’, but nonetheless ‘raised’ as ‘quickly’ as ‘she’ passed over the Earth. And I imagine it was mostly then that the *atomic attractive force*, (you know, ‘gravity’), was creating enough *underground pressure*, thereby ‘pushing’ *magma (melted rock)* out from the interior of the Earth through ‘breaches’ in the Genesis rock, (where again, such *magma* by definition becomes *lava* only when *expelled* from Earth’s *crust*), and by this process helping to ‘raise’ such ‘Venus-class’ Mountains Ranges that ‘she’ was ‘passing’ most directly above.

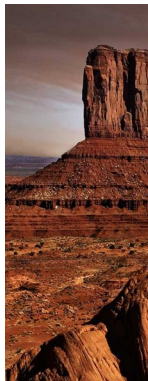
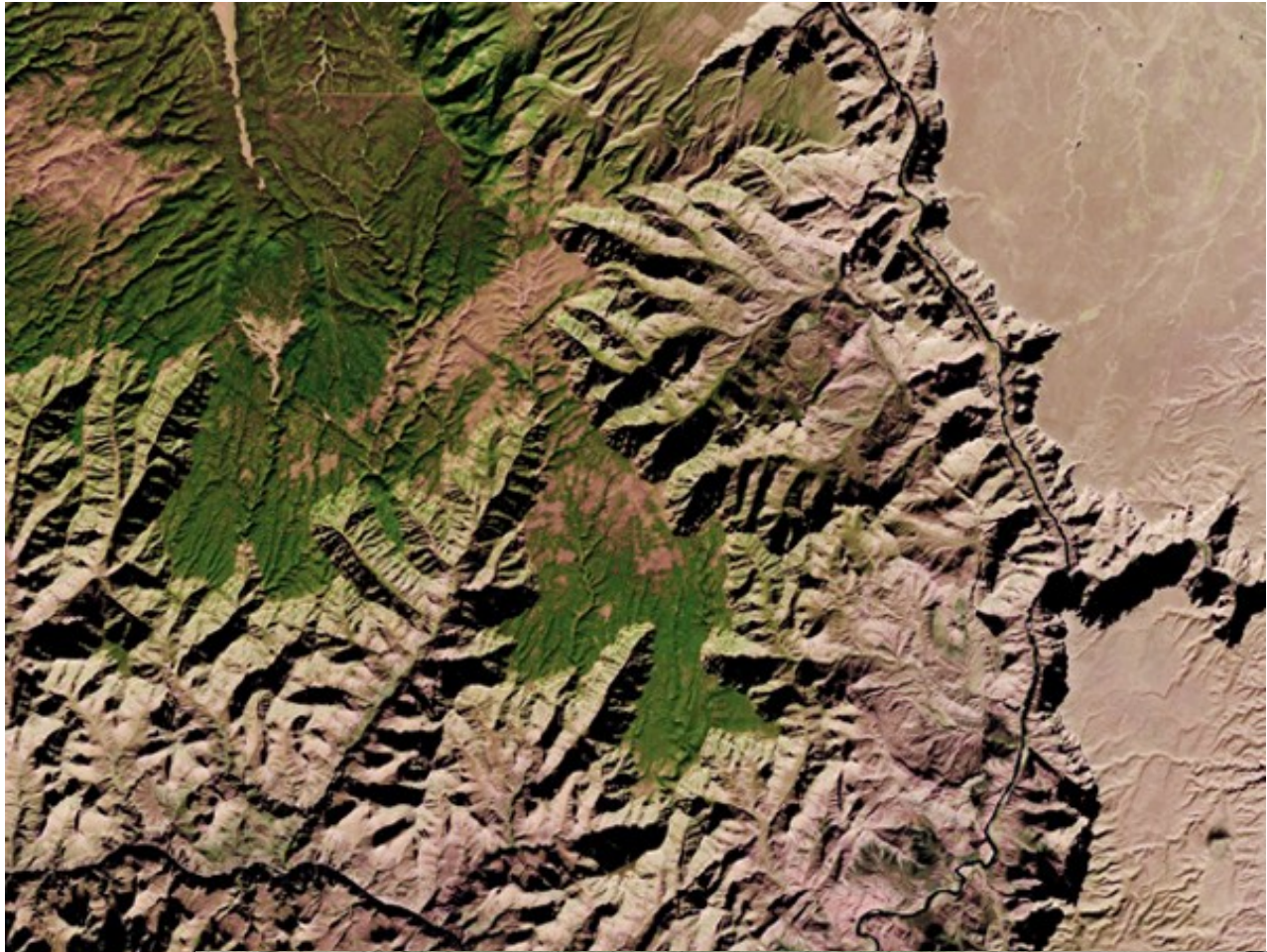
And evidently, in addition to the time the *ice* took to *melt*, it took a little while for the *water* to ‘cut its way’ and make increasingly widening ‘breaches’ in these new mostly *sedimentary rock mountain ranges* in order to ‘drain’ all this *water*, the Grand Canyon itself created with the help of such ‘water cutting’ and ‘mountain-range breaches’, in this particular process making the most famous ‘contributory’ in the World, one that evidently did most of the work of ‘draining’ most of Western North America, likely, to varying extents, repeatedly.

And besides the following 2500 years—starting after all the *heating*, and *freezing*, then *melting* of *water* caused by The Visits of Mars—the 2500 years when mostly only minor *erosion* by just *rain* took place—taking us to the present—you can see from the following pictures (p.77-82) that the Great Basin, and other adjacent *basins*, were once full of water to their very bordering *mountain tops*. But remember a lot of the *water*, especially north of, say, Texas, *froze*, and had to *melt* before ‘draining’. So there was more than just ‘great-basins-full’ of *water* to ‘drain’. There was also astounding amounts of continually *melting ice* on top of it all to ‘drain’ too.

And by-the-way, you should expect that there will be a lot more to **see** that you didn’t **see** in SECTION 3. And you should expect this ‘trend’ to continue, including each time you review, in this really neverending **‘correction, improvement and expansion’** of your perspectives, by **revelation** after **revelation** after **revelation**. And no, this **good work** that is **begun** by God **in you**, one that He will continue to **perform Phl 1:6**, was never meant to end. And how could it, I mean, knowing Who He is? And you should be ‘short circuiting’ because of these last few paragraphs. Either that, or you have some more **work** to do before you really get here.

And some hints for the struggling, (and if it’s your first time through this should generally be expected, and either that or you’re not **understanding** nearly as much as think you are)...

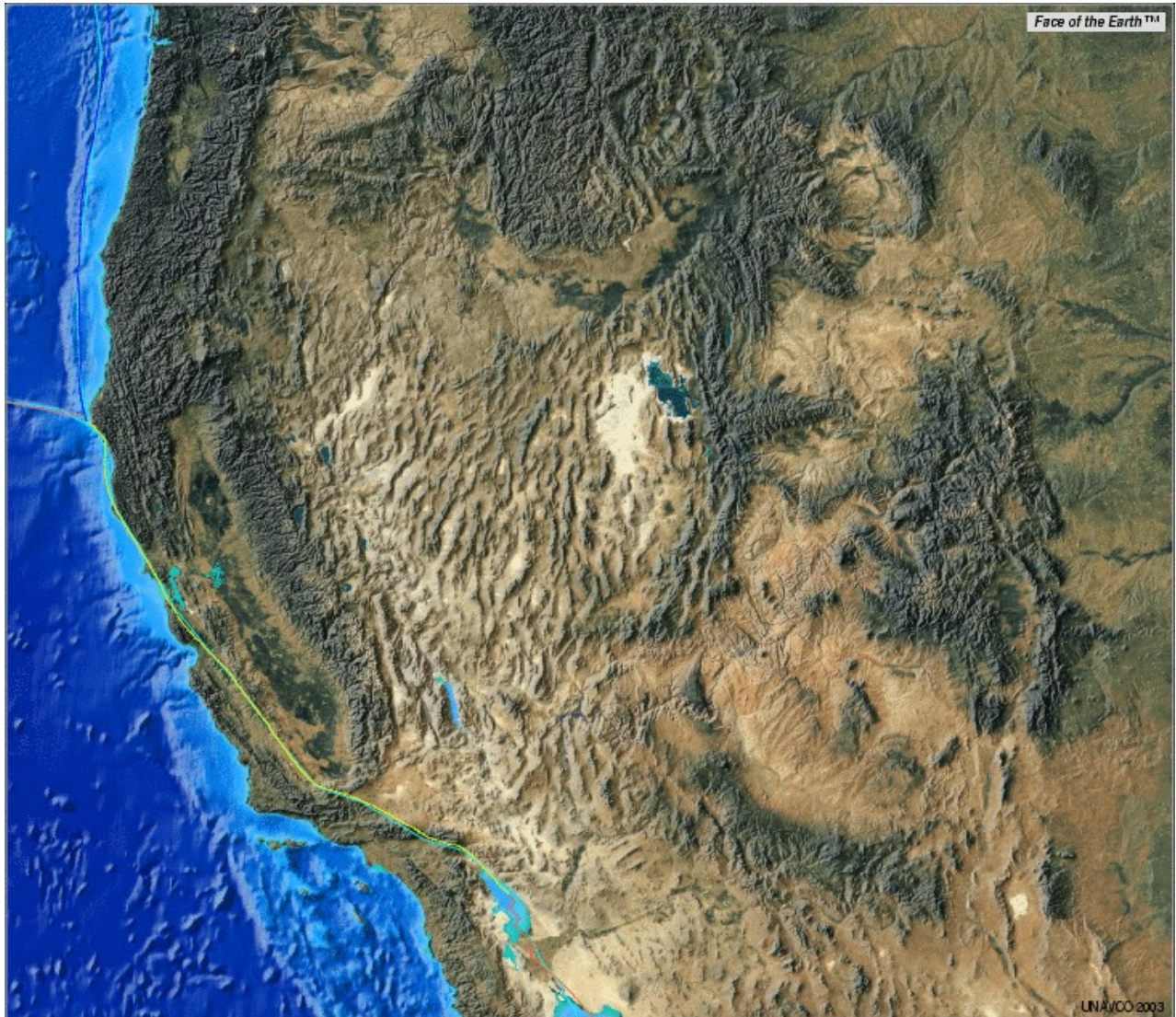








most of the preceding photos and maps only focus on the 'widest section' of the Lower Colorado River, which evidently originally helped 'drain' both the Great Basin and the Colorado River Basin, or more specifically, the part of the *river* that ultimately reaches Lake Mead near Las Vegas before continuing on to divide



California and Arizona, and empty into the Gulf of California, with only the last three showing the entire river, and therefore the entire Western United States.

But there is also the smallest photo that shows the 'erosion-exposed magma pillars', yes, that were formed under and through *sedimentary rock*, that is, until a 'continent full of water' rather 'quickly washed away' much of the *sedimentary rock* formerly containing them.

And the last picture is the test—testing if you've spent enough time studying these photos and maps, at least for the first time. The test is to attempt to topographically identify—just using your eyes—the Colorado River and the *mountain ranges* that it 'cut through' to 'drain' the Upper Colorado River Basin to the south, but also to try to trace the rest of the Colorado River, including the Grand Canyon, where the *canyon* appears to greatly expand and move mostly west, and therefore how this *river* and *canyon* appear to be in a position to help 'drain' both the Upper and Lower Colorado River Basins, as well as be a big help with the Great Basin too. And can you see where the *river* and *canyon* finally 'dip south' before reaching Lake Mead near Las Vegas? The 'almost-too-tiny-to-see' Colorado River runs this course now, but only after Venus 'raised' all these mountains, that is, these Western North American *coastal* and *interior ranges*, all visibly 'breached' by *water* as you should now be able to spot, which means that, at least at one point, all these *basins* were full of *water*, possibly a lot of it at first 'quickly frozen', these *mountains* evidently being only temporarily able to contain it all.

And all of these mountains must have been **lifted** by Venus, evidently on a number of 'passes', and on both '**visits**'—the Rocky Mountains evidently 'raised' on a different 'pass', or 'passes', and likely when Venus was 'passing' over Earth's surface at a slower speed, or speeds, than on the 'pass', or 'passes', that 'raised' the Sierra Nevadas, for example—with each 'jerk' in these 'orbits' marked by *mountain peaks*, the formation of the biggest ones likely accompanying the '**sloshing**' of *saltwater* into the interior of *continents*, where now the Colorado River marks one of the 'main exits' of this *water*, including revealing where it dug its way through the *sedimentary rock* in the way, and even through a little Genesis rock too, in order to 'drain'.

Yes, the resulting 'lower regions'—after The Visits of Venus—were 'brimming full' of *water* to their 'newly-raised', bordering *mountaintops*—though this evidently repeated 'brimming-to-overflowing' process surely included the *melting* of a lot of 'far-above-sea-level' *ice* (see it?)—until finally, but evidently at first only little by little, though increasingly more and more, and faster and faster, entirely broke through their containing *mountain ranges* to 'fully drain', with all that *water*, in some places 'digging' entirely through the 'Mercury-laid' *sedimentary rock* in relatively short order, sometimes leaving 'pillars' of *igneous rock* as evidence of its work with this *softer rock*. But there was evidently enough *water* to continue to 'dig' beyond this *softer rock*, even through some of the 'God-laid', original Genesis rock, and to an easily observable extent.

And yes, this also implies that long after **the mountains of Ararat** ([Gen 8:4](#)) provided that 'highpoint' for disembarking from the Ark, *mountains*, evidently including **Ararat**, have significantly increased in size, that is, since The Visits of Venus, including being covered with significantly more *ice*, and including, a couple of times, to much lower *northern* and much higher *southern latitudes*, the natural *glacial movement* of which has at some point evidently split the abandoned Ark in two, and separated these parts on that *mountain*. (You could start with, *In Search of Noah's Ark*, Sun Classic Books, 1976.)

But are you still just reading? If so it's time to **study** these photos and maps until you begin to **see** all this and more, and pass the test above. And if you want a

little extra credit, consider, given this **'corrected, improved and expanded perspective'**, how it would have been so much easier to 'submerge' the entire Earth *underwater* at the time of The Flood, since then there would not have been any 'Venus-class' *mountains* yet to submerge, just the much smaller ones, evidently then just formed and forming, of the smaller 'Mercury-class' variety.

And if you've done this work you should be ready to really **see** that *great lake* near the center of the last picture, near the eastern side of the Great Basin. It's called the Great Salt Lake, and it's near Salt Lake City, Utah, and next to the Bonneville Salt Flats, famous for land speed records at the "Bonneville Speedway", and it's the largest of many *salt flats* located west of this *great lake*. Been there. Mostly crusty white *salt* covers the ground for as far as you can see. And yes, this is because the whole Great Basin was originally filled with the *saltwater* **'sloshed'** into this newly formed 'basin' by Venus—though surely Mercury is responsible for some of this *salt* too, and before Venus 'raised' the *mountains* creating this *great basin* to catch evidently even *saltier saltwater* and hold it a little longer. See it? But don't worry if you don't. Or if you haven't passed the test yet. Worry if you don't **continue** until you do, and even if it means many reviews of this section, and of the whole **study**. And I mean you don't have to struggle with it too much. Just let it come back around as many times as needed—along with as much side study of the meaning of terms, etc., as you need—till you **get understanding**. Then again, you can expect to **see** more and more every time through most every section.

And now that I've again briefly, but still further, laid out my interpretation of all this evidence, it's time for Dr. Velikovsky to do so, as least as far as he does in *Earth in Upheaval*. He uses the last 4 chapters to do this. And although in them he explained why he thought it reasonable to conclude that the Earth and Universe are billions of years old, you should be **able to see** in his analysis of unimaginably long, but really imaginary, 'evolutionary ages', glimpses of what actually happened in the awesome **great judgments** God actually set in motion at The Fall, the biggest of which I'm defining as 'caused by' His **'great' instruments of death**, the *planets* Mercury, Venus and Mars, and though of course all these **great judgments**, so far, all occurred in less than 1700 years, starting only about 4300 years ago, or in other words, starting in the later part of Day 2, concluding in the first half of Day 4, where, in this 'transcendent perspective' that is much more God's than ours, we are presently very close to the end of Day 6, waiting for the last Day to begin, and that is, 7 years after The Rapture of The Pre-Church and the Church.

So if you can forgive Dr. Velikovsky his **'inability'** to **see all** this awesomeness taking place so 'quickly'—and I mean, again, he only sees the work of Venus and Mars as taking place more 'recently'—his relatively 'slow motion' interpretations of Mercury's **work** should, at least eventually, help **'improve and expand'** your **'perspective'** of God's instead relatively 'high speed' **great and terrible and wondrous works**, as well as **reveal** His **'mindboggling control, restraint and finesse'** too.

And yes, when you read **great and terrible and wondrous works**, also read that there is a **multitude** of His **great...mercies** too, and if not so much **mercies** to those who are **destroyed**, then to those **delivered** out of **'great tribulation'**, even if straight to **Abraham's Bosom**, and **mercy** to those not yet born who did not lose the opportunity to be eventually **saved** because of such **'precisely-controlled destruction'**. And yes, most directly God's **mercies** were extended for the **deliverance** of and **provision** for **his people, the Jews**, but not to the exclusion of, as the Apostle Peter finally realizes, the same **mercies** for the **accepted**, wherever and whenever they **live** too. Surely God's **great...mercies**

are available ***in every nation***, and as the story of Lot implies, to the very last ***good man***, and though this has been ***hid in God*** till Christ, God's ***mercies*** having always and everywhere been available for ***he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness***, where finally now ***the blood of Jesus*** is available to ***redeem*** all that have ever ***come short*** of this kind of ***righteousness***, even to those that entirely ***come short, glory to God***.

And I mean in some ways Dr. Velikovsky really only misses the 'quickness' and 'individuality' of Mercury's part, mistakenly assigning most of the work of this particular '***instrument***' of God to a "pageant" of "catastrophes", each 'driven' by an 'imaginary visiting planet', and each laying a new level of ***sedimentary rock***, so that the entirety of the imagined Geologic Column—or Geologic Time Scale—is thought to have come into existence over 'millions to billions of years' a ***layer*** at a time, that is, until Venus and Mars more recently came along and so extensively 'disrupted' all this 'layered work' supposedly 'laid' by 'previous catastrophes'. And I mean Dr. Velikovsky does offer insightful descriptions of how he thinks each of these 'layers' of this 'not-really-even-close-to-complete-anywhere' Geologic Column got 'catastrophically laid', which I think offer us a few clues as to how all the ***water*** from The Flood naturally 'settled-out' all the 'separated' ***sediments*** with the ***remains*** of ***lifeforms*** in them.

But I should be 'briefly specific' here too about how it really did 'settle-out'. In this case I will offer a comparison. Let's say you filled the bottom of a 'glass bathtub' with ***dirt***. Then you took a 'firehose' and filled the tub. It would only take hours—not 'millions of years'—for the ***dirt*** in that tub to 'settle out' ***in layers***. And I'm sure you could control the experiment—kind of like God did—and introduce the ***water*** into the tub a little less abruptly, but enough to nonetheless fully mix all the ***sediment*** and ***water***. And you could first put on the bottom some, say, starfish and clams, (or ***snails*** and ***crabs***, if you prefer). And they would more likely remain on the bottom. And you could add some ***goldfish***, (or ***anchovies***, ***sardines***, or even ***delta smelt***, if you prefer), and they would more likely end up buried in the middle. But let's throw in a few 'baby bunnies' too. (OK, we could use 'lab rats'—but God 'threw in' ***all*** the baby bunnies not on the Ark, right?). And I mean in their attempts to keep their heads above water they should end up buried closer to the top. And though The Flood was not that simple, it was kind of like that. And I mean The Flood was just a much bigger 'dirt-filled' bathtub, full of all ***lifeforms***, some of which lived on the bottom of the sea, some closer to the top, and others on land that were more or less able to find high-ground before finally ***submerging***, or, in the case of maybe a few people who clung to anything that ***floated***, they simply starved to death—though more likely succumbed to dehydration—this sometime before the end of ***the hundred and fifty days*** before ***the waters*** were finally ***abated***.

And to this day, where this 'layered' ***sedimentary rock*** has since been 'raised', 'split', 'shifted', 'tilted', or even 'over-turned' by Venus, and where it was 'cut open' and 'revealed' by ***water***, we see the 'glass bathtub' views of these 'settled-out layers' from The Flood, though now to some degree 'colored red' by Venus and Mars. And if you can believe ***scripture***, it really was...

...after the end of the hundred and fifty days [that] the waters were abated,

and therefore in this 'short' and 'recent' timeframe in which all these 'great sedimentary layers' were 'laid', and in this process were filled with the ***lifeforms*** that were 'positioned' to be 'entombed' inside all this 'settling' ***sediment***, a process that usually, but in many cases only partially at best, though also necessarily rather quickly, ***fossilized*** them. And by-the-way, if that ***dirt*** in our 'glass bathtub'

experiment stayed wet long enough, being 'seasonally watered' as necessary, all the 'sample lifeforms' in it would eventually become fully *fossilized* too, or in this case, *petrified*, which is essentially the same thing, and all in just months, or in a few years at most.

And though again Dr. Velikovsky's analysis and interpretations have more to do with Venus and Mars than Mercury, there is certainly some, again unwitting, focus on Mercury's work in these chapters, and enough where our '**increasingly spiritually mature perspective**', atop Dr. Velikovsky's shoulders, who at least has a more intellectually honest perspective of the real evidence, will help us further as we adapt his perspective to our '**growing**' *knowledge of God*.

So without further ado, In *Chapter XIII, COLLAPSING SCHEMES*, Dr. Velikovsky begins his closing interpretations of all the evidence he has collected by looking at the conclusions of past scientists, thereby identifying some erroneous 'evolutionary perspectives', more specifically, the ones now known to be associated with Darwinian Evolution, initially popularized by Sir Liar, uh, Lyell, (but really I got it right the first time, didn't I, and so will he hereafter be called). And even more specifically, in the first section of this chapter, *Geology and Archaeology*, he identifies this **science falsely so called** by identifying the irreconcilable conflicts that are apparent from the perspectives of these two fields. Dr. Velikovsky concludes,

Measured by anthropological and archaeological evidence, the age of many [read, all] finds is recent; measured by the prevailing geological and paleontological schemes [read, 'evolutionary fantasy'], the dates of the same finds are many times more remote. This conflict was very sharp in the case of the Vero and Melbourne, Florida, beds containing fossils and artifacts, and it re-peated itself in a great many places. A. S. Romer brought together a wealth of material to show the late survival of Pleistocene fauna [Ice Age *animal life*] and was widely quoted by archaeologist. A. L. Kroeber sees no easy way to avoid the conclusion that "some of the associations of human artifacts with extinct animals may be no more than three thousand years old" and not "twenty-five thousand years old." [A. L. Kroeber in the volume dedicated to A. M. Tozzer, *The Maya and Their Neighbors*, 1940, p.476.] Like [J. Claude] Jones, he assumes that the Ice Age fauna survived until such a recent time by going through a process of slow extinction. But the idea of the slow and gradual extinction of Ice Age fauna is opposed by students of the problem, who feel that "sudden and decisive geological or climatic changes occurred which simultaneously wiped out a considerable number of animals species." [L. C. Eiseley, "*Archaeological Observations of the Problem of Post-Glacial Extinction*," *American Antiquity*, 1943, Vol.VIII, No.3, p.210.]

From the evidence turned up on the European continent, "where documentation from early post-glacial sites is much more complete, we find a rather sudden disappearance" of the fauna [p.211].

When measured by archaeological standards, however, the artifacts and other remains of human origin found with the fossils point to a much closer date in Europe too. K. S. Sandford, writing of the conflict of views between geologist and archaeologist in England, says: "The difference of opinion in some instances is so complete that one or the other must assuredly be wrong." [K. S. Sandford, "*The Quaternary Glaciation of England*

and Wales," Nature, December 2, 1933.] Those who measure the time in terms of cultural or physical anthropology and archaeology stand in very definite opposition to all [- and it really is all -] estimates based on a geological or a paleontological time scale.

As an additional argument the archaeologist points to pictures of extinct animals in Babylonian and Egyptian bas-reliefs, the bones of which have actually been found. And the anthropologist believes that even oral traditions concerning extinct animals are grounds for far-reaching conclusions. [One of them - 'far-reachingly' enough - concluded...]

"Archaeology has proved that the American Indian hunted elephants; it has also strongly indicated that these elephants have been extinct for several thousand years. This means that the traditions of the Indians recalling these animals have retained their historical validity for great stretches of time. Exactly how long, it is impossible to say: probably the minimum is three thousand years... If some Indian traditions have remained historical for so many years, undoubtedly traditions of other races and peoples have also." [L. H. Johnson, "*Men and Elephants in America*," *Scientific Monthly*, October 1952.]

The animals of the La Brea asphalt pits in Los Angeles were first regarded as belonging to the opening of the Pleistocene or Ice Age, almost a million years ago; then, the close relation between the Lahontan fossils and those of La Brea compelled a change in this estimate and the assignment of the fauna of La Brea, as well as the similar fauna of other asphalt pits in California (Carpinteria and McKittrick) to the end of the Ice Age, presumably [only] twenty or thirty thousand years ago. [One anthropologist's "radically revised" conclusion follows...]

"Perhaps most striking is the conclusion that if these so-called early Pleistocene assemblages ['fossil-filled' *tar pits*] are actually late Pleistocene in age, early Quaternary vertebrate faunas [*recent vertebrate animals*] are as yet practically unknown in the western United States [meaning that though they are 'tightly crammed-in' to these *tar pits* - which we will later consider further - they are nonetheless 'mysteriously missing' from the present *fauna*, though found 'entombed' elsewhere]." [R. Schultz, "*A Late Quaternary Mammal Fauna from the Tar Seeps of McKittrick, California*," in *Studies on Cenozoic Vertebrates of Western North America, Carnegie Institution*, 1938.]

This radically revised view was not limited to the western coast of North America: the fauna two or three decades ago [that] was thought to have perished at the advent [or start] of the glacial periods is now thought to have survived the entire Ice Age and to have [mysteriously] perished at its very end [though in some cases it may just look that way because the *ice formed* before these *dead animals* could fully, or in some cases, at all, *decompose*].

"It seems off that a fauna which had survived the great ice movement should die at its close. But die it did." [Eiseley, *American Antiquity*, 1943, Vol.VIII, p.211.]

Yet even the reduction of the time when the major part of the Pleistocene fauna succumbed on the western coast from one million years to only thirty or twenty or even ten thousand years [ago] is insufficient if

Jones's estimate of the age of Lahontan deposits is correct [though surely the **god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not** as to how awesomely quickly God could **accomplish** His 'tar-pit-making', 'mountain-raising', 'ground-melting', and 'great-basin-filling', 'water-and-ice' **works**]. [Nevertheless...] According to his analysis of the salt accumulation in the residual lakes of the larger [former *great*] Lake Lahontan, this glacial lake came into existence only 3500 years ago, and the fauna found in its deposits could not be older. This compelled further vacillations. J. R. Schultz, writing on the fauna of the tar seeps in California, says that in view of the established correlation of the fauna of La Brea and the fauna of Lake Lahontan it is now possible "to reconcile the vertebrate evidence" even with the opinion of Jones "as to the relatively late [or very recent] age of the lake." [Schultz, in *Studies on Cenozoic Vertebrates*.] Would this really signify that the extinct animals of the asphalt pits are only 3000 or 4000 years old? This would mean that these bones were deposited in the time of the recorded history of Egypt and Babylonia. [Uh-huh.]

Thus we witness a return to the view held by American geologists in the latter part of the nineteenth and the beginning of the present century: [(1) Pastor, Dr.] George Frederick Wright (1838-1921), [doctor of divinity from Brown University, Fellow of the Geological Society of America, "frequent lecturer" at the Lowell Institute, and "an outspoken defender of Darwinism", though "later in life he emphasized his commitment to a form of theistic evolution"], [(2) Professor] Newton Horace Winchell (1839-1914), [Professor of Geology, Botany, and Zoology at the University of Minnesota, and responsible for the six-volume, *The Geology of Minnesota: Final Report of the Geological and Natural History Survey of Minnesota*, and a bibliography of his publications compiled by Warren Upham in the *Bulletin of the Geological Society of America* (volume 26, pp.27-46) contains almost 300 titles], [(3) Warren Upham (1850-1934), ["further", as promised, a Dartmouth College graduate, *geologist* and *archeologist* who worked under Professor Winchell, and whose work was published by both the Geological Survey of Canada and the U.S. Geological Survey, including "the main product of his many years of study", "The Great Lake Agassiz"]. [Pastor, Dr.] Wright concluded that the Ice Age "did not close until about the time that the civilization of Egypt, Babylonia and Western Turkestan had attained a high degree of development [or sometime after The Visits of Venus and Mars]," and this in opposition to the "greatly exaggerated ideas [especially timewise] of the antiquity of the glacial epoch." [Wright [- to be bio'ed further next volume], *The Ice Age in North America*, p.638.]

Toward this view, with slow steps, scientific opinion is approaching, though it still maintains that there was a great gap between the Ice Age and the beginning of recorded history, the survival of many Ice Age animals until the second millennium before the present era notwithstanding.

Of course such "steps" have not been just "slow", but also mostly backward, and increasingly 'back-peddling' toward further "exaggerated" or longer timeframes, where even if some form of *saltationism* becomes more popular as the 'primary mechanism' of *evolution* it will not help to 'reduce' this imaginary "Geologic Timescale", nor the number of **deceitful workers** behind it, nor 'reduce' the increase of their **deceitful lusts**, which is the real 'reason' for it.

Pressing on nonetheless, and hopefully not just in **'vain hope'**, in the next section, *Collapsing Schemes*, Dr. Velikovsky relates further that,

In 1829 Gerard [Paul] Deshayes [a French *geologist* and *conchologist* (*mollusk shell specialist*), and Professor of Natural History at the Museum of Natural History, who "rendered much assistance" to Sir Liar, and therefore was elected Chairman of the Geological Society of France "several times", and therefore **'naturally'**, in 1870, after the Theory of Evolution began catching on, won the Wollaston medal of the Geological Society of London] published his studies on the fossiliferous strata in the Paris area, where marine animals alternate with land animals; these strata disclosed that in

The Accepted Sequence of Geological Ages

CENOZOIC	Age of Man	QUATERNARY Recent (Neolithic, Bronze, Iron) Pleistocene or Glacial (Paleolithic)
	Age of Mammals	TERTIARY Pliocene Miocene Oligocene Eocene
MESOZOIC	Age of Reptiles	Cretaceous Jurassic Triassic
PALEOZOIC	Age of Invertebrates, Fishes, Amphibians	Permian Carboniferous Devonian Silurian Ordovician Cambrian
AZOIC	No life and prim- itive life	Pre-Cambrian

the upper marine bed were many kinds of shell-bearing mollusks that still inhabit the waters of the sea, and that the deeper the stratum, the fewer the living forms of mollusks.

Following the publication of Deshayes's work, Lyell [or Sir Liar] devised a timetable of geological ages. The fossilized remains of ancient animals indicate changes in fauna in the course of time; Lyell's measurement of geological periods is based on such changes in the animal kingdom, especially among the shell fauna. He found that there has been in the **Quaternary**, or the age of man, not more than one twentieth of the evolution that has occurred since the lower **Miocene** (middle series of **Tertiary**, the **age of mammals**). From that point on he traced one complete "cycle of evolution." during which, at his estimate, practically all species that existed at the opening of the cycle were replaced by new species. Thus, if a figure of 1,000,000 years is accepted for the age of man, which started with the close of the Tertiary epoch, then 20,000,000 years were needed to accomplish the changes observed since the lower Miocene; and four such cycles of transformation of life forms must have passed since the end of the **Mesozoic**, or the **age of reptiles**. By this method Lyell reckoned twelve cycles, or 240,000,000 years from the beginning of the **Paleozoic**, or the time of early life forms on the earth. This figure is now considerably increased [- see "**The Accepted Sequence of Geological Ages**" chart on p.88]; the other figures are accepted at Lyell's valuation.

[Sir Liar] Lyell's scheme, [of defining only each "period"—a "period" for each enormous *layer of sedimentary rock*, later supposedly] perfected by the introduction of new subdivisions of geological epochs [and more recently also 'complicated' by subdividing "epochs" into "ages", etc.], sets forth the following rule. If a stratum [or *layer*] contains ninety to a hundred per cent modern species of shells, the stratum is **Pleistocene**, or of the Ice Age; if it contains forty to ninety percent modern species of shells, the stratum belongs to the last subdivision of **Tertiary**—the **Pliocene**; if only twenty to forty per cent of the shells in a stratum are present-day varieties, then the stratum is of **Miocene** times, and earlier subdivision of the Tertiary; and so on, down to the stratum where shells of extant species of mollusks find no direct ancestors.

[Sir Liar] Lyell's time system is based on the assumption that no catastrophic events intervened and that the extirpation ['removal' or 'extermination'] of species was the result of slow extinction, which Darwin's theory ascribes to the survival of the fittest in the struggle for the limited means of existence. But if great catastrophes occurred on the surface of the earth and in the depth of the seas, of more than local character [read, globally], and if in such upheavals some forms of life perished and others survived, and the progeny of still others underwent strong mutations, then the entire scheme of percentages and time allotment by the multiplication of changes observed in the last epoch, with its preconceived plan and rigidity, is no more valid than the pronouncements of some theologians, like Archbishop Ussher of Ireland,

who in 1654 declared that the Creation took place at nine o'clock in the morning on the twenty-sixth day of October in the year 4004 B.C.

Yes, Sir Liar's "time system", based on counting 'seashells by the seashore', is childish at best, while Archbishop Ussher's 'estimation' of the 'Biblical Time Scale', concluding that it's only been about 6,000 years since '**abracadabra**' Creation Week, and, being based on **scripture** instead of a 'geological fairy tale', is incomparably closer to correct than any conclusion based on any kind of 'God-denying', 'absurdly exaggerated', 'fantasy evolutionary timescale'.

And for our better **understanding**, Dr. Velikovsky offers us his simplified version of this mostly still accepted imaginary 'Geologic Column'. I mean though it's since been somewhat adjusted, it still mostly agrees with the present popular format, give or take a little shuffling, some new classifications, and a few reclassifications too. See again his chart on [p.88](#).

And did you catch it this time? He speaks of "strong mutations", again apparently proposing the likelihood of *saltation* as a result of the 'cataclysmic changes in the environment'. But we know the Patriarch Jacob 'bio-engineered dramatic changes' in the *species* he bred. And I mean he purposely and successfully 'bio-engineered' specific desired *variations* in *species*, using what he discovered is their 'God-given', natural ability for 'survival by environmental adaptation', while also promoting 'the survival of the fittest', as well as aspects of what we could call 'natural selection' too, but all only **after their kind**, or course, and where, in Dr. Velikovsky's terms, we might instead define the *variations* in Jacob's **goats** and **sheep** as relatively 'weak mutations', that is, the result of comparatively 'milder changes in conditions', though again, Jacob also 'engineered' **stronger** species too, or as Dr. Velikovsky might put it, the "fittest" *species* possible. And if you haven't yet seen all this in Jacobs's **stewardship** of his *livestock*, read the story about how he raised and bred his and his father-in-law's **cattle** again ([Gen 30:37-43](#)).

But unfortunately, and though agreeing with little about the means by which Sir Liar invented this 'Geologic Time Scale', Dr. Velikovsky nonetheless agreed with it far too much, concluding,

The present work does not suggest either a lengthening or a shortening of the estimated age of the earth or the universe (which during the few years when this book was being written rose from two to six billion years [and went to 20 billion before settling back down to the present 13.7 billion—until the new 'giant telescopes' get going, anyway]. I do not see why [that] to a truly religious mind a small and short-lived universe is a better proof of its having been devised by an absolute intelligence. [Of course that argument is equally good both ways.] Neither do I see how by removing many unsolved problems in geology to very remote ages we contribute to their solution or elucidate their enigmatic nature.

In other words, Dr. Velikovsky clearly discounts a literal interpretation of Genesis—including that Creation happened '**abracadabra-style**' about 6,000 years ago—though he otherwise has much less trouble seeing some of the **work** of God's '**great instruments of death**—the Planets—in **scripture**, though seeing them as only 'natural phenomenon', while in the same paragraph he acknowledges the likelihood of a 'supernatural creator'. So speaking of arguments that are "equally good both ways", he is arguably also saying, if I may 'cram words into his mouth',

(and use a few extra commas for readability), that, 'I do not see why that, to a religious mind, in a long or short-lived universe, there must be a creator that, besides in the creation itself, is entirely uninvolved, nor that this is better proof of it having been designed by an absolute intelligence'.

Nice words though, I mean "absolute intelligence". Not 'higher' or just 'greater intelligence', but—and this is one of those places where he 'let's slip' that he actually does **believe** in God— "absolute intelligence". Because by this word choice he must see that God must be a being that possesses 'unlimited intelligence'. And I mean Dr. Velikovsky is acknowledging here that all the 'intelligence' he can see in the 'design' of the *universe*—along with everyone else who is **without excuse** for seeing it—is attributable to God, and that His 'intelligence' is 'infinitely beyond human intelligence', **praise God**. And yeah, God never misses a thing, and He is surely also, apparently contrary to what Dr. Velikovsky thought, 'fully involved' with His Creation, and with our lives, at least until some of us are finally **given over** to ourselves, but He nonetheless knows the **number of our days**, and **promises**, one way or another, to **fulfil** them (e.g., [Exo 23:26](#)), and yes, surely down to the very last **hairs of your head** (e.g., [Mat 10:30](#); [Luke 12:7](#)).

But Dr. Velikovsky at least 'leaves this door open', I mean 'the door' to a "short-lived universe", but 'sticks to business', that is, debunking *uniformitarianism*, maintaining,

Whatever the age of the universe and the earth, single geological epochs were of very different length than has been assumed on the ground of the theory of uniformity. The concept of a 60,000,000-long Tertiary when mountains were [supposedly] uplifted, followed by [another imagined] 1,000,000 years of Ice Age, a time of great climatic changes, followed by 30,000 years [really only about 2500 years] of the tranquility of Recent time, with quietude in the mountain building [really 'mountain raising'] and stability in climate, is basically wrong [because all this took place since The 1st Visit of Mercury about 4300 years ago]. The mountain building went on during the Ice Age[s] [- Mercury having caused the first 'Ice Age', or at least the first 'glaciation' of the Poles], coinciding with climatic catastrophes [especially in the following 'Ice Ages' brought by Venus, and to a lesser extent Mars], and both endured into Recent time, [ending] only a few thousand years ago [after The Last Visit of Mars].

So he's really just a 'step away'. I mean he sees that the most recent "Period", with 'world-shaking catastrophes', didn't happen over many 'millions of years' as it is now 'stretched into' by *evolutionists*—and that is, not into just a couple but into more than 60 million years now—because he sees it as just a few thousand years. So it's really just another step for him to see, since he already sees a "pageant" of "catastrophes" happening previously anyway, that the even further 'stretched' supposedly preceding "periods" don't need "removing...to very remote ages" either.

And to be clear, though it may appear that Dr. Velikovsky is proposing that 'everything' that has taken place is very 'recent', that is, 'in the age of man', including the Tertiary Age or Period of 'mountain raising', he really only believes that some of the "great catastrophes...of more than local character", the evidence of which he thinks is mostly found in the Earth's *upper crust*, were "Recent", while also believing that there were other 'great catastrophes' caused by 'earlier visits' over the 'billions of years before the age of man' that left their evidence in Earth's

supposedly much older, *lower crust*, though to some extent also recognizing that even this *lower crust* has been disturbed and exposed—and to varying degrees ‘colored red’—by the most recent ‘**visitors**’.

So we need to identify the flaws in his identifications of what all these “great catastrophes” were, because much of his perspectives of the evidence found in Earth’s *crust* is somewhat ‘upturned’ too. And I mean these *layers* are not only sometimes ‘out of order’, but they are too often ‘understood’, by all evolutionists, and sometimes by Dr. Velikovsky too, by “removing many unsolved problems in geology to very remote ages”, which, at least in Dr. Velikovsky’s case, I hope, is partly because he was ‘misinformed’, and partly because of ‘ignorance’ of such evidence as *polonium halos*, and *polystrate (multi-layer) fossil tree trunks*—showing *branches, leaves and bark*. Of course he is **without excuse** for the fact that he did know about ‘preserved’ *fossil fish skin*, including its color, while he could not have known about the relatively new discovery of *viable ‘Dino-DNA’* obtained from two different continents, nor about various *human artifacts* ‘buried’ in too low a *strata*, nor even about *organisms* ‘long-buried’ *alive*, that were broken-out from inside *rock* or *coal deposits*, etc. However and again, he should have known, when not compartmentalizing, that the Sun could not be nearly as old as *evolutionists* want it to be.

And such serious flaws in his perspective—again hopefully more due to ‘misinformation’ and ‘ignorance’—reveals he did not fully understand, or at least seriously compartmentalized, that much of Earth’s *lower crust* evidence of these “great catastrophes” involves the combined **works** of Mercury, Venus, and Mars. I mean though Dr. Velikovsky apparently clearly sees the ‘recent’, ‘closer-to-the-surface’ **work** of Venus and Mars, he mistakenly attributes most of the *lower crust work*, which also partly belongs to Venus and Mars, to other supposed ‘visitors’ and “remote ages”, and this while overlooking most of the **work** of Mercury altogether, not attributing the colossal *lower layers* of *sedimentary rock* atop the Genesis rock to ‘him’, but instead attributing each *layer* to different imaginary ‘visitors’, each ‘laid’ from ‘millions to billions of years ago’. But again, that’s OK, because recognizing much of the **work** of Venus and Mars for what it was is a major step in the right direction, without which I would have never been **able** to climb on his shoulders and **see** so clearly how that Venus and Mars ‘messed with’ Mercury’s **work**.

And we will see further how he to a great extent misidentifies some of the order and timeframes in this way in the next section, entitled, *In Early Ages*. But again, you should now see that he is assuming there really were ‘billions of years’, and doesn’t realize that Venus was the main cause of the worst “great catastrophes” when it came to ‘breaching’ the Genesis rock, as it was mostly Venus that was able to ‘draw upward’ both an ‘underwhelming’ and ‘overwhelming’ quantity of *magma* and *lava* into, and to some extent through, the already ‘Mercury-laid’ *sedimentary rock* above it. And again, he couldn’t fully see this because he apparently thought that these separate *layers* were both ‘laid’ and repeatedly ‘breached’ over the ‘billions of years’ since the Genesis rock supposedly first *cooled* to *solid rock*, and so he must have thought that the *sedimentary rock* wasn’t all there yet when the Genesis rock was later ‘breached’, meaning he thought that other ‘visitors’ besides Venus must have done at least some of this ‘lower level work’, and that is, over the ‘billions of years’—which is understandable, given the ‘misinformation’ he was working with.

Dr. Velikovsky reveals this kind of misunderstanding, saying,

When the earliest rocks [including Genesis rock] are investigated they are found to be records of great upheavals in comparison with which the upheavals of later times appear only minor. Along the Canadian border west of Lake Superior in the Keewatin area, a complex of ancient [he means 'millions to billions of years old'] lava flows, and interbedded [or 'intermixed'] sedimentary rock [- the *sedimentary rock* 'laid' by Mercury and the following 'interbedding' of it with *magma* or *lava* that was *melted* and 'extracted' by Venus -] reached, according to C. O. Dunbar of Yale, "the impressive thickness of 20,000 feet [near 4 miles] [[Carl Owen] Dunbar, *Historical Geology*, 1949; in the earlier editions Charles Schuchert is coauthor]."

And speaking of 'flaws in perspective', we can see here that the first sentence of this paragraph and the concluding second sentence seem to be at odds with each other. We are first informed that he thought that the 'greater upheavals' occurred in the lowest, or as he saw it, in the "earliest rocks", meaning that he must have thought that there was a time when the 'bedrock' Genesis rock was the only thing covering the *magma* (*melted underground rock*) underneath, and that the 'breaches' in it must have first occurred because of a 'visitor' from the 'unimaginably distant past'. However in the concluding sentence to this paragraph he uses an example that includes vast amounts of *magma* and *lava*, apparently *melted rock* that escaped its lower confines by both *melting* and 'breaching' the Genesis rock, but which also somehow got 'mixed'—or as he put it, "interbedded"—with the above, supposedly 'later-laid', *sedimentary rock*, which could not have involved just the "earliest rocks", but some of the 'more recent rocks' it "interbedded" with too. The real problem, however, was that he apparently couldn't see that Venus was the most responsible for 'raising' *magma* from below the Genesis rock all the way through the 'Mercury-laid' *sedimentary rock* to make 'seas of lava' on Earth's surface.

And of course most of the *sedimentary rock* was 'laid' in ***an hundred and fifty days***, with the help of Mercury, evidently around 2300 BC. And the 'God-awesome', 'Venus-class' *mountain raising*, while other *mountains* were *melting*, accompanied by "upwelling", vast 'seas of lava', happened about 1000 years later, let's guess about 1300 BC. So within a millennia and a half altogether, by 687 BC, Mars was also finished 'stirring and shifting' things around a little more too. And though there are innumerable details to consider, it can be as simply put at that.

And by-the-way, because Dr. Velikovsky thinks that many *objects*, including *planets*, and in addition to Mercury, Venus and Mars, have 'visited' Earth over these imagined 'billions of years', he also appears to have the 'unrealistic' view that it's the 'special' *electromagnetism* 'natural interactions' with 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction* that generally protects us from 'overly hard' *inelastic collisions*. But my *faith* isn't in 'special' *electromagnetism* like Dr. Velikovsky's seems to be. I mean though this 'dual' *force* makes opportunities for 'soft' *elastic collisions*—which by the odds should happen no more than half the time—I don't think it makes Earth 'safe' from 'hard', 'planet-breaking'—that is, 'asteroid-belt-making'—*inelastic collisions*. And I mean without a Director, then at least as often as not the *opposite poles* of *dipole ball magnets* 'hurdlng toward each other' should 'wind up' in a position to 'specially' *attract* each other, and in such cases their *collision* would not only be 'hard' in the 'normal' *atomic-magnetic-attraction* sense, but they would hit even harder due to the *acceleration* added to their *collision* by 'special' *electromagnetic attraction*, and if we're talking about *planets*, likely resulting in new *asteroid belts*, along with innumerable, 'smashed-to-pieces', 'stray' *objects* being 'scattered' across the Solar System that naturally find other *objects* to *orbit* or

collide with.

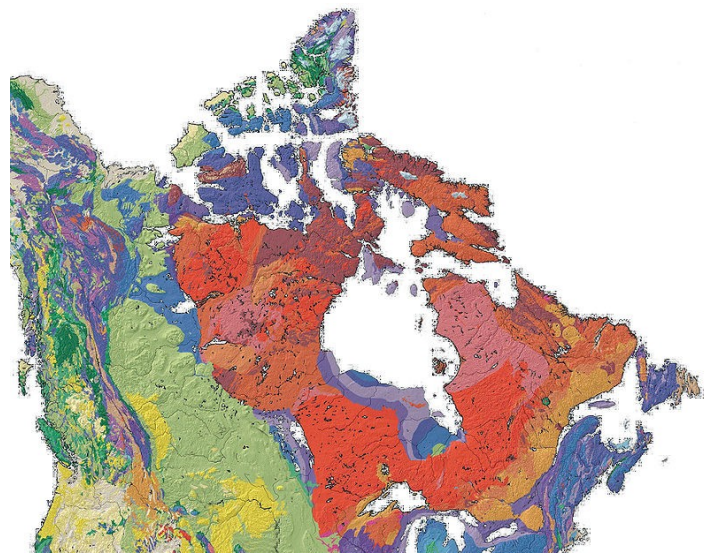
And I mean we on Earth have had at least 3 planets evidently on 11 occasions 'hurdle at us', and on no occasion did one of them 'hit us', not even after also 'close-orbiting us' repeatedly. And remember there really are a number of known *asteroid belts* out there, including the Kuiper Belt, the Scattered Disc, and the Main Asteroid Belt, and evidently also the Oort Cloud, not to mention the Jupiter Family Comets, the Centaurs, Kreutz Sungrazers, and most the *planets* have *greeks* and *trojans* (*asteroids* that either 'lead' or 'follow' *planets* in their *orbits*), and there are lots and lots of *moons*, all of which are most likely just 'escaped' from *asteroid belts* and *captured* by *planets*. And maybe there are even more 'belts' out there, and beyond that, still innumerable, 'smashed-to-pieces' and 'scattered' *objects*, altogether representing the 'pieces' of many, many different *collisions*. Yet we remain intact. **Understand?** And you know the drill if you don't. Either way I hope you will come to **understand**—in greater and greater scientific detail—how our **great and terrible God** is **worthy** of all the credit for his **mighty, wondrous, and marvellous works**, and **great judgments**, accomplished by His various **instruments of death**, and by His now **cursed, ordinances of heaven and earth**. I mean, though I know that,

God gave them up [the Jews] **to worship the host of heaven** [Act 7:42](#),

I don't think this is a 'side trip' we will need to take on our journey.

Dr. Carl Owen Dunbar, by the way, quoted above, received his doctorate in Paleontology from Yale, and "was a Professor of Geology at Yale University [specializing in *invertebrate fossils*] from 1920 until 1959... [and] Director of the Peabody Museum of Natural History at Yale University from 1942 until 1959, which is "among the oldest, largest and most prolific university natural history museums in the world". And Charles Schuchert, evidently also quoted above, served on the United States Geological Survey, as a Curator of the U.S. National Museum. as the first Professor of Invertebrate Paleontology at Yale, the first President of the Paleontological Society, a President of The Geological Society of America, was a National Academy of Sciences award winner, and a Penrose Medal winner too—the top prize awarded by the Geological Society of America. Dr. Velikovsky quotes these two 'notable scientist' further, adding,

At Michipicoten Bay the volcanic tuff [a mix of *lava, ash* and *sedimentary rock*] is 11,000 feet thick. In the same area of Lake Superior a later flow of (Keweenawan) lava [- though possibly as little as hours later], still very early in the history of the world [- but actually in about the middle of Day 3 of God's 7-Day Plan, and certainly the result of the work of Mercury and Venus], "has been estimated at 24,000 cubic miles," and in Northern Michigan and Wisconsin, the Keweenawan system "may reach 50,000 feet [9½ miles], much more than half of which is made of ['layered seas' of] lava flows." "It stirs the imagination to contemplate the 2,000,000 square miles of granite gneiss [a kind of igneous rock—in this case *layers of melted and resolidified* Genesis rock that has been mixed and melted into various



amounts and types of displaced *sedimentary rock*] that floors the **Canadian Shield** [shown in shades of **red**, encircling **Hudson Bay** - just an oversized or *great crater lake*? - on the map, **p.93**], and to realize that it all came into place as fluid magma, which congealed beneath a cover of older [but not possibly that much older, *sedimentary*] rocks now long since removed by erosion [thereby 'revealing' this *igneous rock* that was formerly underneath - kind of like how those 'pillars' of *magma* got 'revealed' by the "erosion" that removed all that *sedimentary rock* from the Grand Canyon]." The impression is gained "that during these primeval eras [- actually less than 3½ Days ago -] the crust of the Earth [- and that is, both Genesis and *sedimentary rock* -] was repeatedly broken [to the greatest degrees on the repeated '**visits**' - and many *close orbits* - of Venus, making it indeed look like a "pageant" of 'visitors', and largely engulfed in 'upwellings' of *molten materials*, read, significant portions of the continents were repeatedly covered with *lava* and subterraneously - under *sedimentary rock* - *inundated with magma*]." In these pre-Cambrian lavas glacial deposits were found in Canada as well as in Australia and South Africa, "with boulders in part rounded [water-washed] and in part angular [not water-washed], and some of them faceted [ice-polished] and striated [rock-rubbed]." The detection of this evidence of early [but more likely 'Venus-caused former polar region'] glaciation came at first as "a shocking discovery," because it appeared "a serious obstacle to the belief that the Earth was originally molten." Later, however, geologists, by placing some half a billion years between the origin of the earth and the early ice phenomena, allowed the rock to cool off first.

But you need to **understand** what he means by "pre-Cambrian lavas". In his 'evolutionary way of thinking', such "earliest" of "upwellings" of *magma* came almost entirely from underneath the Earth's then supposedly simpler just Genesis rock *crust*, that is, with some of the Genesis rock *melting* too, the destination of all this *magma* only imaginable to him as "lavas" on top of it, because he mis-imagined this occurring at a time when there was not yet any *sedimentary rock*, and mis-imagined that, since exposed Genesis *bedrock* evidently was indeed 'water-washed' and/or 'glaciated', that these "pre-Cambrian lavas" and the Genesis rock itself were finally only later covered by the Cambrian Strata, and this because of the next 'participant' in this supposedly 'newly begun' "pageant" of 'visiting', 'catastrophe-causing' *planets*. And certainly such *flows* came through the 'breaks', 'cracks', 'rifts' and 'melts' in the Genesis rock. But really the worst of these were only 'broken' and 'melted open' by the many *close orbits* of The 2 Visits of Venus, and this instead really a while after all the *sedimentary rock* had been 'laid' on The 1st Visit of Mercury, which, though surely lesser so, was surely a 'Genesis rock-breaching' encounter too.

And I mean Dr. Velikovsky understandably mis-imagined that the "earliest" *flows* happened before the first *layer* of *sedimentary rock* was 'laid', that is, before the supposed 'first-life' *layer*, known as the Cambrian Strata, was 'laid'—hence, he called them "pre-Cambrian lavas"—though he also knows that such *flows* also—supposedly 'millions and billions of years later'—also became "interbedded" and/or 'gneissed' (*magma* along with *melted* Genesis rock with *sedimentary rock* *melted* into it too, all *solidifying* into a kind of *igneous rock*) within and in between the *layers* of *sedimentary rock*, including in *rock* that supposedly did not exist before the Cambrian *rock* was 'laid', and including all the way through and on top of all present day *sedimentary rock*, which we can instead see means that these varieties of 'flows'—from the ones just breaching the Genesis rock to the ones entirely

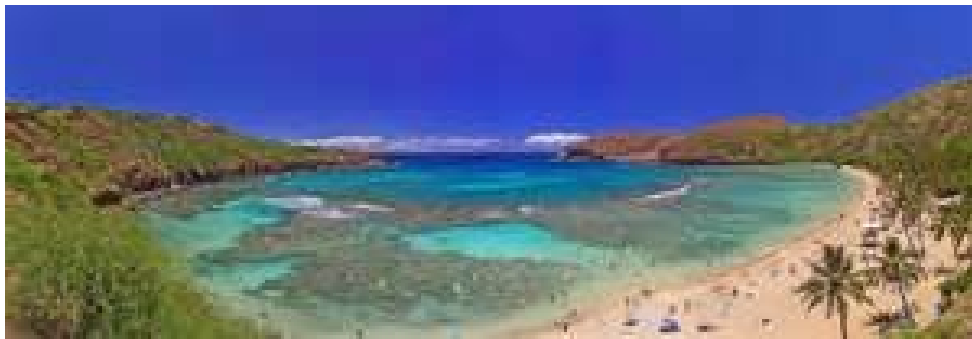
breaching all the *sedimentary rock*, finally resulting in *lava* flows and/or *ash explosions* that reach miles high into the sky—really happened because of the varying conditions caused by the various *close orbits* of Mercury, Venus and Mars, with the worst of the uppermost ‘breaches’ of Earth’s *crust* surely mostly because of Venus, and the lower ones more likely the result of the ‘**visits**’ of the smaller planets, Mercury and/or Mars.

So *magma* was ‘upwelled’, most spectacularly by Venus, becoming *lava* whenever it fully escaped Earth’s *crust*, but before that, being ‘squeezed’ and ‘oozed’—or ‘exploded’—through all the *breaks, cracks, rifts* and *melts* that were created through the bottom Genesis rock to the top *sedimentary rock*, all of this surely also opening, enlarging and filling many *seams* and *caverns* with “embedded” or ‘gneissed’ *magma*, including filling some ‘spaces’ that used to be for *water storehouses* too, but where after things ‘cooled down’ surely ‘alternative spaces’ for *water*, etc., ‘opened up’. Or in other words, I imagine that ‘peak overheating’ helped to create and/or expand all ‘underground spaces’, and that because of the ‘expelling’ of *lava* and subsequent *cooling*, other ‘empty spaces’ were created that could afterward be filled by other “materials”, or not, kind of like how the *mouths* of *volcanoes* tend to be empty after they’ve ‘blown their tops’ and then ‘cooled off’, and later become *crater lakes*, or *crater bays*, evidently also in the process making some *underground storehouses* too, which may just remain empty, or not.

And by the way, in this case it’s more than just my imagination. I mean I once explored a “lava tunnel” on the island of Maui, Hawaii. It was obviously formed at a time of ‘peak over-heating’, and probably during a ‘Venus-class’ event, where in this case the maximum *flow* of *melted rock* from the *mouth* of this *tunnel* was around 10 to 15 feet high and about twice that wide. The tunnel was essentially cylindrical and empty. The *lava* that had apparently been *expelled* out of it evidently ‘ran’ from its *mouth* downhill to the *ocean*, where after the quantity of *lava* being expelled finished ‘running out’, the empty “lava tunnel” was left behind as evidence of how much *lava* was flowing at ‘peak overheating’. And I mean that there were surely lots of such, and surely bigger, ‘Venus-class spaces’ created *underground* to compensate for other ‘spaces’ that were filled by the *rock* Venus *melted* and moved into them.



For another example, I’ve also snorkeled—you know, with a “swim mask” and one of those curved pipes that lets you breathe with your face in the water—to see some of God’s incredible variety of **tropical fish**. They seemed



to glow with ‘neon’ colors, and had both ‘stripes’ and/or ‘polka dots’. They were awesome. (And no, I couldn’t resist underlining.)

And where did I see such marvels? One place I've been, near where I lived, where they're easily and naturally viewable is at **Hanauma Bay**. And you can see by the picture on **p.95** that this *bay* on the South Shore of Oahu, Hawaii, is really the *mouth* of a *volcano* that has since become 'breached' by the Pacific Ocean, becoming a small, circular *bay*. Needless to say if you're up for snorkeling I can recommend a visit to Hawaii just for this. And come to finally think of it, in hindsight these previous 'explorations' of mine seem awfully providential too, huh. And I have another evidently divinely **predestinated** personal story of 'geological significance', as well as 'cosmological significance', from one of my visits to Maui—I lived on Oahu from 1986 to 1990—that hopefully I'll remember to share later on, where it more appropriately belongs.

And surely all this "upheaval" happened most 'extensively' along the lines Venus drew at 'her' closest points to Earth—including 'raising quickly-solidifying', 'towering pillars of lava' from the *ocean floors* that became *islands*—these 'points' on this 'line' being where the *atomic magnetic attraction* was greatest, '**naturally**' raising the highest *mountain ranges* along these routes, and the most *magma*, with some of this happening at newly repositioned *poles*, which *cooled* much quicker, and then started to quickly accumulate 'new ice', or if happening in regions recently shifted away from the *poles*, and 'arriving' there still covered with *ice*, this 'old ice' even more quickly *melting* by this process. But of course all this was '**perfectly**' **predestinated** by God, and that is, with whatever 'measure' of 'special' *electromagnetic attraction* and/or *repulsion* of the 'planet-sized' *ball magnets* that was involved, and with whatever 'measure' of 'normal' *atomic magnetic repulsion* of the *planets atmospheres*, and of course—since we're talking mostly about what God set in motion at **the curse**—with whatever 'measure' of both *linear* and *angular momentums* that the 'interacting' *planets* brought to these 'dances', all these *forces* perfectly—and 'jaw-droppingly'—balanced by Him to avoid a *collision*. Uh-huh, that's Who He is, but no where near Who He is at His **greatest**, just Who He is at the present limit of our ability to **understand**, though such '**higher understanding**' is only possible for those who are giving Him their complete attention, and have been '**so doing**' for a while.

And the idea of such mostly *underwater*, 'towering pillars of lava' reminds me of yet another story of geological—and providential—significance, and that this is not just my imagination either. When I was a high school science and history teacher at an 'evangelical' Christian high school on the 'west shore' of Oahu (Windward Oahu), on a school 'field trip' I had occasion to visit an Hawaiian cultural exhibit, which at the time I believe was in King Kamehameha's Palace, in Honolulu, a location presently being used in the current TV show, "Hawaii Five-O" as their "5-O Headquarters"—this place being the one with that 'greater-than-life-sized' statue of King Kamehameha I out front. Anyway, I saw exhibited there a *3-dimensional topographical map*—or call it a model—of the *local ocean floor* including all the Islands of Hawaii. In this perspective most of the *islands* in this *chain* were revealed as individually supported by very 'tall', astonishingly *sheer* (straight down), *igneous rock* 'pillars', with these 'pillars' mostly only supported by the *ocean floor* very far below. And yeah, this means that Mauna Kea—you know, the tallest *mountain* in Hawaii (close to 14,000 ft.), atop of which sits some of the World's best, but soon-to-be-outclassed, *telescopes*—measures from the *ocean floor* to over 6 miles tall (33,000 ft.), the better part of a mile 'taller' than Everest from *sea level* (29,000 ft).

But you can **see** how Dr. Velikovsky misunderstood that there was a "pageant" of 'visitors' instead of just the evidently 'multi-orbit visits' of Mercury, Venus, and Mars, since Mercury was able to 'stir up' and 'lay' most all the *sedimentary rock* on

just 'his' first **visit**, and since each subsequent *close orbit* of Mercury, Venus and Mars since then evidently 'raised' varying amount of *magma* to varying *levels* within and above this 'originally laid' *sedimentary rock*. I mean evidently sometimes, or at some 'points' in any of these *close orbits*, it is apparent that the *magma* only 'breached' the Genesis rock and did not 'breach' the lowest, supposedly 'first-life' Cambrian *level* above it, while at other 'points' it 'breached' all the *sedimentary rock*, making 'seas of lava', and thus these varying *flows* appear to be the work of many different 'visitors', that is, instead of just mostly the **work** of the many *close orbits* of Mercury, Venus, and Mars.

But now we should be ready to wrap-up another short, 'semi-wild goose chase'. And yes, it's only at most 'half a wild goose chase' because the perspective that I offered to you—as far as I can presently tell—is going to remain arguably at least 'haft right' or more. As such, by-the-way, I would therefore call this a 'corrected' **revelation**, a **revelation** where most of the **precepts** involved stay **interpreted** as they are, but that the perspective is nonetheless fundamentally changed due to one or more of those 'always lurking' compartmentalized **precepts** that—as you should be growing in agreement—we so easily overlook. And yes, this is a 'partial wild goose chase' and '**corrected**' **revelation** that I had to experience for myself before I could offer it to you in this 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God' kind of way.

I'm talking about the 'special case' of the first visit of Mercury. Of course they're all 'special' in their own ways. But in this case the first **visit** of Mercury is 'special' because during it I imagine a period when none of the *sedimentary rock* was yet 'laid', and the Genesis rock was completely exposed, and was maybe only starting to be re-covered before—or after—Mercury left. I mean I'm imagining in this case, after about **forty days and forty nights** of **rain**, when all the **windows of heaven** were finished emptying the sky, and with the '**water storehouses**' of **the deep** being, as much as they were going to be, all 'pushed', 'pulled' and 'squeezed out', and at the point when the initial *turbulence* of this 'flooding process' had mixed all God's 'Creation-Week-created topsoil' into the *water*—let's call it Genesis topsoil—a 'topsoil' evidently susceptible to being made into *sediment* by turbulent enough **waters** where the Genesis *bedrock* below it was not so much so—then at this point the Genesis rock below these *sediment-filled, turbulent waters* was 'washed bare'. And with all the *sediment* entirely *suspended* (mixed) in this *turbulent liquid*, Mercury must have also by that point, along her 'lines of closest passage' over Earth, been the first to *break* and *melt* the Genesis *bedrock*, and therefore the first to 'pull up' a little *lava* here and there too, these "lavas", maybe at first, simply *submerged* under all these '**saving waters**', and for a short time having no place to come to rest other than on top of the Genesis rock, which not much more than **an hundred and fifty days** later, that is, after the *settling out* of miles and miles of this *water-borne sediment*, one *layer* at a time, besides burying most everyone and everything except those on the Ark, and besides the *magma* that afterward also became *embedded* within or atop these *layers*, surely ended up as *lava* too on top of each *layer* as it was being 'laid', the *sediments*, one *layer* at a time, burying any ongoing "upwelling" *underwater lava flows*, and at whatever level they had just breached before the next layer started to settle, including the ones that were the first to be 'laid atop' the 'briefly bare' Genesis rock, and including the ones that were 'laid atop' all the other 'briefly bare' *layers*.

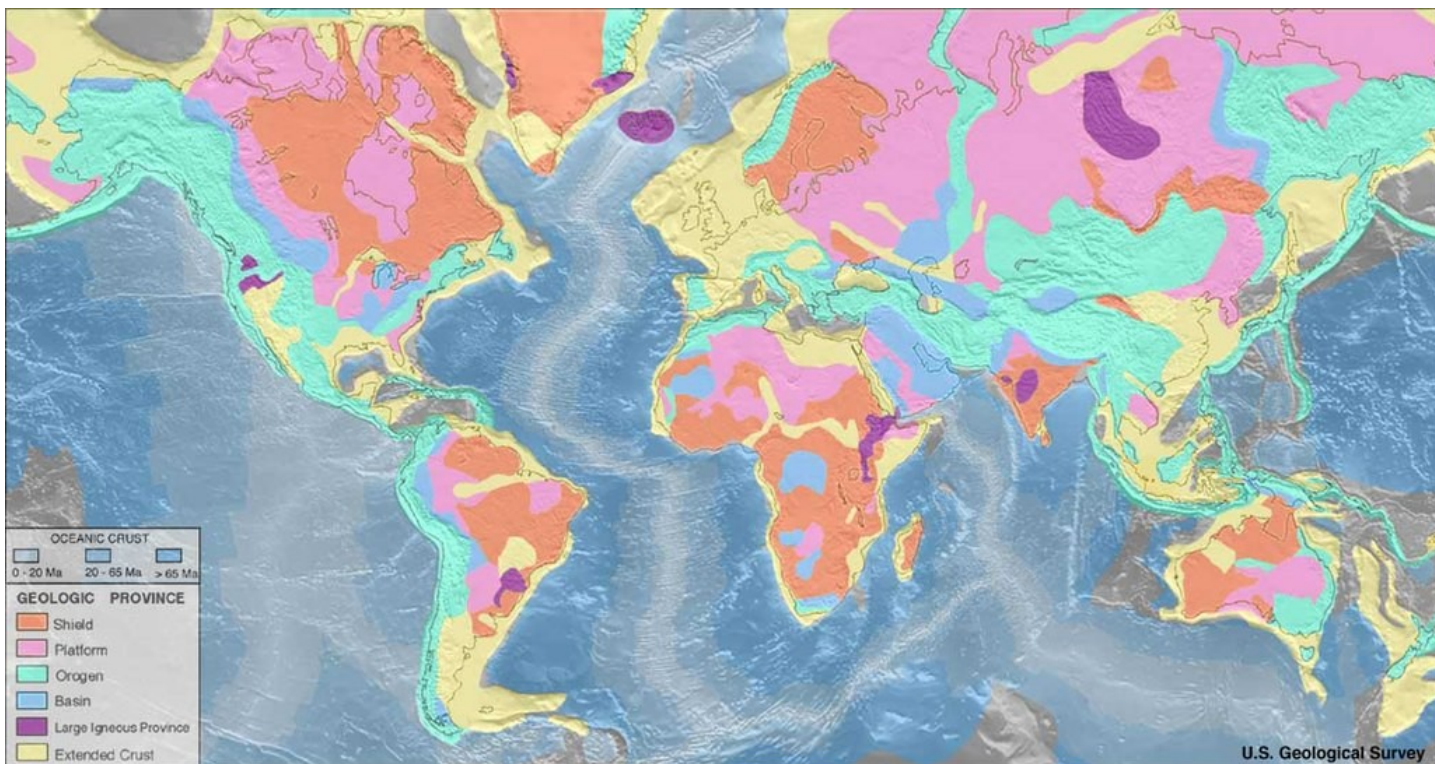
And I mean you should now be even better able to sympathize with the 'mis-imaginings' of Dr. Velikovsky, as I do with yours, and that I could only have come to **see** all this because of what he was able to see—though again, this is not a 'fair fight', as his insights came without the help of The Spirit or a '**perfect**

understanding of **scripture**. And I mean I sympathize with you as much as with Dr. Velikovsky because of my—or really God’s—‘simulation-of-what-it’s-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style’ presentation. And I mean that, since I nonetheless **speak as the oracles of God**, this is a **‘higher level’, approved unto God, ‘perfect-teacher-led’ study**, in this case the ‘intermediate’ one of this “Trilogy” of **‘studies’**. But I also mean it is not just a ‘simulation’, but a **‘high-calling-level-of-growth-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style’ study** too, because it’s presented to and meant to be received by the most **‘diligently pressing disciples’** and **‘would-be close friends’** of Jesus, and because it requires **partakers** to **learn** by **experience** how to **‘handle great gobs of increasingly complicated combinations of precepts’**, that is, how to **continue** to **‘correct, improve and expand’** their **knowledge of God** through His **approved** and **‘perfect way’** to **study**, and that is, to be **‘skilfully exercised’** in **‘precept interconnectivity’** at **‘increasingly higher levels’**, and because it requires all **partakers**, like any **approved** version of the one and only **‘perfect way’** to **‘study God’s Word’**, to **commit** to **continue** the journey up this **‘endless staircase of steps ordered by the LORD’**, ultimately an **‘invisible precept’** at a time, **for ever and ever**. And again, I can’t wait for the chance—**if God permit**—to bring my future **brother** in Christ, Dr. Velikovsky, ‘up to speed’ with the rest of **us**, God willing if after he is **‘raptured’** out of **Abraham’s bosom** to Israel he will **‘choose life’**.

And yes, they were surely mostly meant by God to be **‘saving waters’**, because they surely helped **save** us all, **thank God**. And besides the **waters** that saved Noah and renewed **hope** for His progeny, we can as well **thank God** for the **waters** that were **‘sloshed’** by the ‘abrupt’ or ‘jerky movements’ of the Earth, the ‘jerkiness’ maybe even in places ‘observable’ by the heights and frequency of **mountain peaks** along any given ‘Venus-class’ **range**, such higher **peaks** possibly markers of the places where the **orbit** briefly ‘slows’ or ‘pivots’, even possibly ‘jerks’ to a brief, though maybe also ‘twirling’, stop, (that is, briefly transferring its **linear momentum** into **angular momentum** and back), which I imagine could **inundate continents**. But some of these **‘saving waters’** were also likely **‘pushed’** by other combinations of **forces**, that is, by ‘Venus-raised’ **underwater mountain ranges** by ‘her’ passing over the Oceans—see a **topographical map** of the entire Pacific Ocean **floor**—this process not so much **‘sloshing water’**—as happens with ‘abrupt movements’—but by **‘pushing water’** away from either side of these ‘astoundingly quickly rising’, and surely also ‘earthquake shaken,’ **underwater mountain ranges**, this process also helping to largely **inundate**, and **re-inundate**, **continents** too, but also ‘put out’ most of the “conflagrations”, again **thank God**. Of course then all these **waters** ‘thrown onto land’ began ‘washing away’ much of the **continental sedimentary rock** in the ‘draining process’, and in many places leaving exposed vast areas of ‘melted-together’, **igneous-Genesis-sedimentary rock** ‘mixes’ (**gneisses**), in some case now more commonly referred to as **“shields”**.

And talking about ‘good maps’, see the **U.S. Geological Survey Map of Geological Provinces** on p.98, and notice how the Canadian Shield ‘steals all the attention’ in North America. Also notice that variation from light to dark blue in the “OCEANIC CRUST” (see map legend) means lower to higher concentrations of **igneous rock—solidified magma** or **lava**—that make up the various regions of the **underwater crust** of the Earth, that is, that lighter blue regions have up to 20% **igneous rock**, while darker blue regions have over 65% **igneous rock**. You can also see the **tectonic plates** of the Earth’s **crust** since the **‘visits’** of the Planets too—the borders of such **plates** being the lightest blue, yes, because the **tectonic action** now occurring—and over the last about 2500 years—is observably less than what it was during the preceding less than 2,000-year period of The 11 Visits of Mercury, Venus and Mars

between about 4300 to 2700 years ago. And maybe you remember the ‘play on words’ I used in the last **study** to distinguish the difference in *tectonic action* between then and now. Comparing this difference, I agreed that what is happening today is appropriately referred to as *continental drift*, but that what was happening back then, though maybe to some degree hyperbole, was



more like “continental roaring rapids”. But it is my intention—and I **hope** God’s, that is, in order to **‘increasingly better introduce’** Himself to you through me—that this will all only get clearer as we proceed.

And certainly significant parts of all these reddish *shield provinces* seen on most all the *continents* were to some degree exposed by the washing away of the *sedimentary rock* formerly on top of them, but surely they are partly made up of *inundations* of *lava* too, and whether such *flows* were later *inundated* with *water*—and by whatever the *water* ‘carried’—or not.

And all this not in millions of years, nor even in thousands, because again, there was apparently less than 1,000 years between The Visits of Venus and Mars. And it was Mercury, only about a 1000 years before Venus, that provided a place for ‘magma storehouses’, as well as a ‘multi-layered net’ to ‘catch’ most of it with, that is, the *magma* was mostly ‘caught’ by the somewhat more ‘stretchable’ *sedimentary rock* which I imagine mostly ‘held down’ the “upwelling” *magma*. In other words, *sedimentary rock* was able to both ‘catch’ and ‘make room’ for most of what Venus ‘forced-out’ and ‘upwelled’ from underneath the Genesis rock, again, **thank God**.

And with all this ‘movement’ of *magma* mostly inside, but to some extent all the way through, the *sedimentary rock*, there must also have been newly created ‘open spaces’, like the ones inside *volcanic mountains*, such ‘spaces’ being **‘naturally’** created because of all the *molten rock* expelled onto the surface of the Earth, that is, created because the ‘channels’ that expelled *magma* were afterward to some extent left empty, these *underground* ‘spaces’ often later filled with something else, like some of the **waters** that later, coming again and again from every direction, *inundated* whole *continents*.

But again, and though exactly how to some degree I'm guessing, as well as that there must surely be aspects of how it happened that I'm still missing, it should nonetheless be blatantly clear at this point that it is by God's **'skill', 'restraint', 'finesse'**, and especially **grace** that most of the awesome amounts of *magma* Venus 'squeezed' and 'exploded out' from underneath the Genesis rock—along with also *melting* 'overwhelming' amounts of *sedimentary rock* in the process—was mostly all 'caught' and/or 'contained' by the *sedimentary rock*, with only relatively small amounts of *magma* entirely escaping Earth's crust and, by definition, becoming *lava*. I mean God could have *inundated* the entire *crust* of the Earth with *lava*, and could have *melted* all the *rock*. But apparently that didn't happen. So I'm guessing the *magma* was mostly 'contained' by the Genesis and *sedimentary rock*, the best reason being that I **hear** He had **'plans'**—or **thoughts** or **counsels**—for the survivors and their progeny, **thank God**. But **we** can now **understand** that Venus also exposed some of this *magma* another way too, and did so after it had already *cooled underground* to *solid igneous rock*, that is, by providing more **'saving waters'** that not only 'put out' most **the fires** and 'cooled' everything down, but in some places 'washed away' the *sedimentary rock* on top of it, again, **thank God**.

So yes, apparently together God's **'great instruments of death'**—Mercury, Venus and Mars —much more than just to **destroy**, were **used** by God to limit the amount of destruction on the surface too, including by 'storehousing' and 'containing' most of the originally deadly *hot magma underground*. And again I mean that I'm guessing that most the *magma* 'upwelled' by Venus was 'caught', *cooled* and *solidified underground* by the *sedimentary rock* 'laid' by Mercury. And I'm guessing that most of whatever amount of *lava* that reached the surface either did so *underwater*, or rather immediately naturally ran downhill into the closest huge, 'water-filled basin'—as a 'good map' will show—or, if remaining on land, and if causing great "conflagrations", then shortly thereafter *inundated* with *cooling water*, all of these and surely more being God's means to avoid any 'un**predestinated** overheating', including applying repeated *inundations* as necessary. In fact you should now see that The Flood also, besides bringing in advance 'new cooling ice' to the Poles—that God could later 'shift' wherever he wanted, both to open up new habitable land in the Tropics and to cool off an 'overheated zone' rather quickly that had formerly been in the Tropics—He also brought in advance all that 'extra cooling water' down from the sky to Earth that would be needed too, that is, all to both **save some** then, and make it possible to **save** others later, including **us** now, **'praise and thanks and glory to God'**.

And yes, all these **words** of adoration of God are in one verse of **scripture**, a couple really, in one case inspired by the time King David brought the Ark back home to Jerusalem. And this is an appropriate occasion for me to bring it to your attention—hopefully again, as the **psalm** inspired by this event containing these **words** is also referenced in **SECTION 2**—because the **psalm** he wrote for the occasion, recorded in [1Chronicles 16:7-36](#), was originally 'performed' by the **singers** of the **Levites**, that is, **the singers with instruments of musick, [the cornet, and with trumpets,] psalteries and harps and cymbals, (1Ch 15:16, 19, 27)**, including a **'chief Levite'** who was **skilful** in **song** to **sing** it ([Verse 22](#)), with **all** the people accompanying them in their own way, be it by **instruments** and/or **song** ([Verse 28](#)). And yes, the word **singer** here—as elsewhere in **scripture**, and as the **'temple singers'** introduced in **RGT**, but not in every case—is used in this way, that is, to refer to both **the players on instruments** as well as to those who **sing**.

Anyway, you might think, including because you were misled by me, as I once was

by my own 'lapse of thoroughness', that the *psalm* in [1Chronicles 16:7-36](#) is exactly the same as [Psalm 105](#), but it really isn't. They start with the same 15 verses pretty much. I mean besides some English translation differences—not to be confused with contradictions—it appears there was a minor amount of 'editing' by David of the later *psalm*—in 1Chronicles I assume. And I mean in [Verse 23](#) of 1Chronicles 16, (corresponding to [Verse 16](#) of Psalm 105), instead of a detailed focus on God's past **marvellous works**, it continues in a more general and '**prophetic**' direction, though it does include some specifics too, and though the 'God-adoring and glorifying' themes remain the same.

And I mean in what I assume is the earlier *psalm*, [Psalm 105](#), after Verse 15, the focus is on God's past **care** of **his people**, starting with His **holy promise** of a **covenant** with **Abraham** and **Jacob**, and continuing with His **work** using **Joseph**, and then his **work** using **Moses**, telling of His '**great deliverance**' of **Isreal** from **Egypt**, specifically accounting for 8 of The 10 Plagues, followed by God's **care** and **provision** for **Isreal** when **he made them wander in the wilderness forty years**, after which He finally **gave them the lands of the heathen**, specifically, **the land of Canaan**. And all this so, according to the conclusion of this *psalm*,

That they [his people] might observe his statutes, and keep his laws.

But both *psalms* start with identical instructions for the Jews, now doubly applicable to **us**, to **make known his deeds among the people**, and to, **talk ye of all his wondrous works**, (and did you catch the word **all**), and to, **Remember his marvellous works; his wonders, and the judgments of his mouth** (with **all** implied here too), and **all** to '**praise and thank and glorify and sing unto God**' because of **his marvellous works**, and **his wonders**, as well as to...

Glory ye in his holy name: [and to] ***let the heart of them rejoice that seek the LORD.*** [And indeed to] ***Seek the LORD, and [to know] his strength:*** [and thereby expect to] ***seek his face evermore*** [that is, ***continually***] [Psa 105:3-4](#); [1Ch 16:10-11](#); [Isa 46:9-10](#).

The implication of **all** this being that **we too** should **make known, talk...of, and remember** His **wonders** and **marvellous works** in order to '**praise and thank and glorify and sing unto God**' because all this is directly connected to what it means to '**seek the LORD's face**'. And I mean that this is a big part of what we're doing, and what David was trying to reinforce by using part of one psalm to compose the other, directing our view to both past and future **works** of God.

And hopefully you noticed that though the focus in these *psalms* is on the God Zone, it is clearly not limited to it, as they also both tell us that God's...

...judgments are in all the earth.

And the Prophet Isaiah agrees too, though not speaking of the time of The Exodus, but as David does of another **day**, that is, a future **day**, when, for example,

The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them ([Isa 11:6](#), etc.),

you know, The Millennium. But whatever **the day** in question, we **know** that God remains **the same... for ever**. So we **understand** Isaiah agrees with David when the **prophet** says that,

...in that day shall ye say [and yes, this is talking to you too], **Praise the LORD, call upon his name, declare his doings among the people, make mention that his name is exalted. Sing unto the LORD; for he hath done excellent things: this is known in all the earth. Cry out and shout, thou inhabitant of Zion: for great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of thee** [Isa 12:4-6](#).

So they're all on **'the same'** page really, including David and Isaiah also being on the same **day**, while agreeing, whether 'past-focusing' or 'future-focusing', because, as everything in God's Word, they are unavoidably and in all cases, and whether in **prophecy** or a **psalm, glorifying God**, who is always **the same**.

Still we could consider further that the main difference in David's **psalms** is that in one the focus is on God's **'glorious deliverance'** of **his people** from **Egypt** to ultimately **give them** their **lands**, while in the other the focus is on God's **'future plans'** for the **salvation** of **his people**, where the change, starting in [1Chronicles 16:23](#), is really a continuation and expansion of our general obligations to God, that is, it further **establisheth** (or **stablisheth**) that **his people** should also **Declare his glory among the heathen and his marvellous works among all nations**, and it also **establisheth** (or **stablisheth**) that we should all therefore, **Fear before him**, and that would include, **all the earth**, as well as anticipate His coming **salvation**.

And the change continues with David offering new, both past and future specifics for Isaiah to agree with, this 'further agreement' starting in [Verse 31](#), the focus becoming, instead of on God's past **marvellous works**, a glimpse of a few of the characteristics that will be involved in His future ones too, that is, a glimpse of how God will **establish** His future Eternal Kingdom, though evidently pretty much using **'the same'** kind of **marvellous works** He has before, except at this future time we are encouraged to imagine hearing all men **say among the nations, The LORD reigneth**, and imagine how this will again include seeing the **sea roar**, and again hearing **the fields rejoice, and all that is therein**, and hearing **the trees of the wood sing out at the presence of the LORD** again too.

And yes, David sings of a future time, like others in the past, when **the fields, the mountains and the hills, the stones** (e.g. [Luke 19:40](#)), and **the trees**, and even the **stars** (e.g. [Job 38:7](#)) altogether shall **resonate**, that is, **shall break forth...into singing**, and that is, **Cry out and shout** and **sing** and **clap** their **praise to the LORD**. Or as Isaiah puts it,

...the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you [O LORD] into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands [Isa 55:12](#),

and that is, along with everyone and everything else (e.g., [Rev 5:13](#)). And we'll eventually get to more specifics on both the previous and future 'occasions' of these universal **'outbursts'**, the future ones coming at that **prophesied** time of **great tribulation**, and surely followed by a time when we will **ever shout for joy**, when The Father and our Lord Jesus will **establish** Their **everlasting kingdom**, an event that David apparently already **knoweth** is coming, and coming by means he **knoweth** God has **used** before, because, for example, at a time when he is **king** over Israel, over all the then united **twelve tribes**, and on the occasion of the return of **the ark of the covenant** to Jerusalem, he appropriately concludes his **'celebratory' psalm** with the **supplication**,

Save us, O God of our salvation, and gather us together, and deliver us from the heathen, that we may give thanks to thy holy name, and glory in thy praise [1Ch 16:35](#).

Yep, David was evidently fully ‘up to speed’ on all God’s **counsels of old**, or “plans formed long ago” ([Isa 25:1 HCSB](#)), and more specifically, **toward us**,

...thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end [Jer 29:11](#),

including God’s **thoughts** that are still about the future.

And I can only **hope** a lot of this now sounds familiar to you too, or at least is starting to, but even more that it is becoming—‘**increasingly**’—a ‘**deeper understanding**’ of ‘**higher thoughts**’ of God than you’ve ever had before, again. And I mean, for example, we **learned** from Jesus that **if** we want to be **worthy** to be one of His **friends**, we need to **know** what **he doeth**, and **hath done**, and **shall do**. But maybe you can **see** here too that **all his people** are called to be ‘**fluent**’ in what **he hath done**, and that it would be a **shame** not to be. And at least the Apostle Peter—besides Jesus, Paul, and Peter’s altogether many ‘**admonitions**’ to **watch**—makes clear that we would all **do well** to **take heed** to the **more sure word of prophecy**, necessarily including both the already past part, and the still to be fulfilled part of God’s **counsels of old**, all of them being, again, His “plans formed long ago”, and **...thoughts... toward you...to give you an expected end**, all of which are recorded, though ‘**divided**’ into ‘**component precepts**’ and ‘**scattered**’ quite extensively throughout His Word.

And yes, Peter means that unless you **take heed** to the yet unfulfilled ‘**prophetic counsels of old**’ too, you’re not going to be **able** to **do so well** otherwise, that is, if you keep, as he puts it, ‘**walking around blind**’, including without enough **light** in this **dark place** to **see** what’s really going on. But I nevertheless **hope** you’re growing in an ‘**increasingly brighter understanding**’ of all this, because it too is a big part of **the purpose—the purpose of God**—for these ‘**studies**’.

And I mean if you ‘**would do**’ even **better** than just to **do well**, notice that David also implies that this ‘**fluency in what the LORD hath done**’ is a necessary ‘**skill**’ for anyone who would **seek his face evermore**, that is, **continually**, the implication being that this is a requirement for having regular access to his face, that is, to being one of His **friends**, and that is, if ya ain’t **seeking** it **now**, you’re not likely going to get to **see** much of it anytime later either, including **evermore**. Or as another **psalm** puts it,

The foolish shall not stand in thy sight (NAME THAT PSALM!).

And surely this at least to some extent applies to every Christian, and to whatever extent they are **blind**, and need to, as Jesus puts it, **anoint** their **eyes with eyesalve**, and need to—to whatever degree—as Paul puts it, **awake to righteousness**, because they remain too **dull of hearing** to **take heed**, and therefore are **not able to bear** any real **strong meat**.

So heads up, again. I mean I’m guessing that even all the initially **foolish** Immortal Sons of God, that is, just after they make their relatively ‘**not so abundant entrance into heaven**’, where, being ‘**eternal dimlits**’, they will never be ‘bright enough’ to **stand in** God’s or Jesus’ **sight** for long, if ever at all, and that is, not and be **able** to **see** much of anything anyway, and I mean anything other than an

entirely overwhelmingly **bright** [H5051](#); [H3974](#); [G2986](#), **white... light**. However I'm **seeing** [G3708](#); [G991](#); [G4267](#) that it's a **light** not nearly so **bright** for those who themselves, as Gabriel through Daniel puts it, **shine as the brightness of the firmament**, or **as the ['bright and morning'] stars** ([Dan 12:3](#); [Rev 22:16](#)), and who therefore can, most the time, **see** [Him] **face to face**. And that's what **morning stars** are, by-the-way, **stars** that are so **bright** that you can see them though the dawning sunlight, if that helps you get a '**brighter**' idea anyway.

But though I am again here further emphasizing the '**eternal dishonour**' of those too '**dimlit**' to be other than—at least usually—'**blinded by the light**', I only do so in the **hope** that this will further motivate you to **follow 'me'** in the **press** to become '**increasingly like Jesus**', and to become '**increasingly**', by **any** and **all means, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance, and 'increasingly thankful'** that God can, by **any** and **all means**, and by His Son's **sacrifice**, ultimately **redeem**—even **with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments** if necessary—each and **every son whom he receiveth, 'praise and give thanks unto the LORD', for he is good: for his mercy endureth for ever**.

And of course these **psalms** along with Isaiah **prophecy** strongly **encourage** us in this direction, as well as to become '**fluent in the excellent things God hath done**'. However the people that originally sang these **psalms**, and 'heard' Isaiah, had a much closer, if not first hand connection to these kinds of **marvelous works** and **wonders** that David sings of. I mean back then they at least had fairly recent memories of these **excellent things** to pass along. So we've got the harder job when it comes to being '**fluent enough**' to **talk...of all his wondrous works**. I mean in a way we're instead having to sort of 'back-engineer' them in order to **see** what they were really like.

But we do have the advantage of what Gabriel, thanks to Michael, et al., also foretells through Daniel, that is, that **knowledge shall be increased**. And maybe you can **see** that **we** have been using such '**increased knowledge**' to get an even bigger and better picture of all the **excellent things** God **hath done... in all the earth**, and in some ways an even '**better**', that is, '**farther reaching perspective**' than even Noah or Moses could have had, as well as having also the advantage of being '**farther along**' in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, and that is, '**reaching**' the kind of perspectives that should one day again **provoke** David, again and again, to '**strike up the singers**', so we can **all**, again and again, '**praise and thank and glorify and sing unto God**', being overwhelmed, again and again, with **revelations** of '**unendingly deeper and higher perspectives**' of His '**excellent, marvellous and wondrous works**' that He gives to those who **continually** and **diligently**—including with '**zealous relentlessness**'—**press to seek his face, even for evermore**.

And **remember** that the Apostle Paul further clarifies that,

...without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is [and even **better, know** Who He is], **and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently** [- and again you can add, '**with zealous relentlessness**', if you want -] **seek him** [Heb 11:6](#).

And certainly there is **none else, none beside** and **none like unto the LORD our God**, and nothing to compare to His **reward** for those who '**continually, diligently, zealously and relentlessly**' **press to seek to know** Him, **evermore**. And besides, what could compare to being one of our Lord's '**face to face friends for ever**'? And my **hope** is that anyone that will **follow** along with me will become one of my FT3F's too.

And there's one more really big **thing**. Surely **we** are the **habitation of God through the Spirit** [Eph 2:22](#), and surely, as **true worshippers**, we all **know**—being those who **worship the Father in spirit and in truth**, and who **know** that **the Father seeketh such to worship him** [John 4:23](#)—that He can and does **'occupy our praise'**, that is, by **the communion of the Holy Ghost** [2Co 13:14](#). And hopefully you're **seeing** in all this that it's not a 'one way street', that 'His side' of this **communion** isn't all there should be to it, because without getting to **know** Him **'better', continually, it's mostly all there really can be**, where such 'neglect' on our part even limits what we are **able** to **receive** from 'His side'.

And by the way, I prefer **singing** as opposed to **instruments of musick**. How about you? And not that it couldn't be both, but that it should be at least one or the other if you are to fully participate in **'thanking and praising and glorifying and singing unto God'**, and one day soon, **God willing**, even **come with singing unto Zion** too. But there are still other verses from these **psalms** that should eventually attract our attention in later sections.

And this brings us back, **'praise and thank God'**, to all those 'cooling', 'washing', and **'saving waters'**, by some of which surely vast amounts of *igneous*, and all 'levels' of *sedimentary rock* was 'exposed', that is, *rock* that was formerly *underground*, some of it *solidified magma*, less *solidified lava* from The 1st Visit of Mercury, mostly made from Earth's supposedly original *inner magma*, and from the *melting* of some Genesis rock, as well as from the *melting* of all the various kinds of *sedimentary rock* too, which all finally, in various combinations, *solidified*, or *'gneissed'*, into *igneous rock*, and which, as I'm trying to be repetitive—or **exercised**, as much as I can get away with for your sake anyway—was later 'exposed' because of all the **waters** that, repeatedly, and to varying extents, 'washed' the *sedimentary rock* on top of it away.

And again, I **hope** you're **seeing** in all this that these are **his doings**, evidently the **marvellous works** of both The Father and Jesus. And I mean all this 'limitation of the destruction' was not just for the **'few'** survivors sakes, but for our sakes too, yes, as much for the survivors as for some then still waiting in **the lowest parts of the earth**, including some who were yet to be born, and all those waiting to be **born again** too, **'praise and thanks and glory to God'**.

And again, you should be **able** to **see** that God's original **use** of Mercury made possible a variety of **'saving graces'** for The Visits of Venus, including that, since there was apparently some 'repositioning of the Poles' by Venus and Mars that immediately *melted* at least some of the old and created new *frozen* Polar Regions, as well as new Tropics, etc., it must have been by Mercury's **use** that God created Polar Ice Caps and Tropics in the first place. So there would have been *frozen poles* when Venus first came by and 'raised' higher *mountains*. Talk about 'fire and ice'. Of course in some cases such places could have rather quickly provided refuge for survivors, places that because they started out under *ice* did not experience "conflagrations", and therefore more quickly, with some migration, became habitable. But surely in some places Venus only increased the amount of *ice*, like on the 'newly-raised' and higher *mountains*, this apparently including lifting—and maybe 'in due course' even further lifting—Noah's abandoned Ark to where it now is, that is, evidently much higher on the **mountains of Ararat** than when Noah landed there, and where it has since remained mostly out of reach—though I hear it was broken in two, apparently in an *avalanche*, with one part now hundreds of feet lower than the other, though both parts nonetheless evidently almost continually fully covered by *ice*.

But one thing is sure. Surely we may expect to endlessly **see** how God's awesome

judgments are always accompanied by arguably even more awesome—that is, **'unimaginably skillful', 'perfectly controlled and restrained', and 'exactly finessed'—'saving graces'**. And aren't you starting to **see** how this is an unimaginably harder thing to do than just to **destroy** things? I mean it is not just annihilation. It is also His **'loving judgments'** to rescue those who will, or eventually will, **hear** Him. So in this you should **see** 'both sides', and that is, that our **Almighty God** expresses both His **'awesomely powerful love'** to those who, from their perspective, **choose** to **hear** Him, and His **'awesomely terrible wrath'** to those who, from their perspective, **choose** not to. Or as the the Apostle Paul, to both **Jews** and **Gentiles**, puts it,

Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off [Rom 11:22](#),

And besides again showing that **'saved souls'** can later, and that is, again, be **lost**, this implies that His **'great instruments of death'**—The Earth-Visiting Planets—are just as much or more **'great instruments of salvation'**, really controlled and used by God in each case to **'administer'** both. I mean in Mercury's case, as a **'great instrument of death'**, I imagine it as more of a 'the sky is falling' kind of thing, added to a...

...fountains...of the great deep broken up... [from where God originally] layeth up the depth [or waters] in storehouses [Gen 7:11](#)...[Psa 33:7](#)...

...kind of thing, and not as much a 'horrific amounts of magma and lava' kind of thing—like during The Visits of Venus—but more just 'major' **water action**, that is, **'great water works'**, and only 'relatively minor', 'mostly underwater', or 'relative quickly submerged' **volcanic action**, making the **'fire and ice works'** altogether 'relatively minor'.

While in the cases of The Visits of Venus, when 'she' was **used** by God as one of His **'great instruments of death'** for His **great judgments** on Earth, I imagine these **'visits'** as more a...

...him that... turneth the shadow of death into the morning, and maketh the day dark with night [by 'shifting' the Poles]: [and] **that** [by both a 'pole-shifting' and 'mountain raising' process] **calleth for the waters of the sea, and poureth them out upon the face of the earth** [to 'cool off' a lot of the 'overheating' otherwise caused in the process]: **The LORD is his name** [Amos 5:8](#)...

...kind of thing, since it would have literally taken **the waters of the sea**—or **oceans of water**—to 'put out' such **fires** started by all the 'Venus-class axis-shifting' and 'mountain raising'. You know what I mean? I mean in the case of Mercury it was **'major water works'** along with **'minor fire and ice works'**, the **waters** then **used** by God to **save** Noah and His family and **destroy** everyone else, as Mercury is so much smaller than Venus, but apparently able to put more **water** 'in play'. So not as much **ice** was needed to cool down the then relatively less **heated** Earth.

And I mean in the case of Venus there was both **'major water'** and **'major fire and ice works'**, since both lots of **water** and **ice** were needed to quench **the fires** and **cool** and **resolidify** the **land** that was **melted** by 'major magma and lava works', where the 'Venus-class mountain-raising', and some, or more, 'shifting' of the Poles and Tropics not only helped start all **the fires**, but also helped produce lots of moving **water**, along with **forming** and **melting ice** to help put them out too.

But was this enough repetition, that is, enough **'exercise'** for a good 'burn'? Of course remember you can start over as many times as you need to, or as many times as it **'continues'** to teach you new **things**, as well as inspire new **revelations** even beyond what's presented.

And also **remember**—and I mean a **'step'** beyond how David **exhorteth** us in **psalms** to **remember**—that we will not only one day soon, again, **glorify** God for the coming both **'saving and destroying waters'**, that is, because of...

...the sea and the waves roaring... [Luke 21:25](#)

but **we**, including **ye**, will also one day soon, again...

...glorify ye the LORD in the fires, even the name of the LORD God of Israel in the isles of the sea [or 'in the Continents of the Oceans'] [Isa 24:15](#)...

...too, that is, **God willing** we get an actual view of all this from **heaven**, though you'll at least be **able** to **'rightly imagine'** it, again, you **know**, as we **continue** our **'search'** of **all things, yea, the deep things of God**. And you should be **able** to start getting an **'increasingly wondrous and marvellous view'** of such **great and terrible things**, both past and future, even now. So yes, **rejoice** and **glorify ye the LORD** even now, **'in the saving and destroying waters'**, and **'in the saving and destroying fires'**, as well as **'in all his marvellous works'**, just like God's Word does in the ones both past and still coming, and in both **psalms** and **proverbs**, and in both **chronicles** and **prophecy**, and in both **'the gospels'** and **'the epistles'** too, and that is, as **'fluently'** as you now can, and of course, and **'hopefully'**, more **'fluently'** than you were the last time you went through this section.

And I should admit here that, no, I no longer at all think that **in the fires** here means "in the dawning light" (NKJV), or even "in the east" (NIV), like I at least partially implied in the last **study**. I think were talking about some really awesome, unavoidably **'God-glorifying'**, literally 'continent-sweeping' **conflagrations**, that relatively **'few'** evidently newly **'accepted souls'** will get to witness from **'afar off'**.

Getting back to Dr. Velikovsky's perspective of all this, maybe you now **see** the problem raised by Dr. Dunbar's suggestion that the Earth may not have originally been entirely **molten**, that is, since there is evidence of **inundation** and **glaciation** of some exposed Genesis rock. Of course the Earth was never entirely **molten**, but if such evidence doesn't really **prove** this. What does? For one thing **remember**—this time just like David **exhorteth** us in his **psalms** to **remember**—that Genesis rock, when **melted**, **cooled** and **resolidified**, does not again become Genesis rock, but becomes **igneous rock**, which must mean that whenever this happens there is then **less** Genesis rock on Earth. And when we **understand** from **scripture** that all Genesis rock must have been created at **the beginning** of Creation Week, we can deduce that this originally **created** rock, like all God's Creations, and like the **skin** 'containing' our 'innards', is really something only God can make—**'abracadabra-style'**. Of course God has created **organic things** to be able to **reproduce**. But **inorganic things** cannot. So please **understand** that Genesis rock cannot be made by a natural process, such as by **cooling magma** into **rock**, making Genesis rock itself not only the **proof** God **created** it, but also that the Earth could never have been entirely **molten**, or there wouldn't be any Genesis rock. And by this comparison—that Genesis rock is in a way like the lowest **layer** of 'skin' of the Earth—you can **see**

something else too, that *igneous rock* is in a way like ‘scar tissue’, essentially sealing ‘injuries’ to Earth’s ‘skin’, this ‘inorganic skin’ otherwise altogether known as the *lithosphere* (Earth’s ‘solid rock covering’).

And by-the-way, **remember** that all the “Genesis topsoil” is gone, all of it having settled out as *sedimentary rock* because of The 1st Visit of Mercury, and it too must have been of a quality, including being ‘full of life’, and though already **cursed**, far superior to what today ‘scars’ the entire *upper lithosphere*, I mean, kind of like the ‘skin’ of a ‘burn victim’. And I mean that surely Genesis topsoil was something that only God could make too, and that what passes today for ‘soil’ is mostly just the ‘watered-down’, ‘lightweight stuff’ on the surface, because evidently most the rest of its heavier original components, along with a lot of the beneficial *lifeforms* in them, by *atomic magnetic attraction*—OK, possibly including ‘gravity’—or by *settling out in water*, were deeply buried in great *layers*, that is, from the heaviest to the lightest components, and that is, from bottom to top, generally speaking.

And so as with other **revelations** of changes that took place after we went from a ‘**stable**’, ‘**regenerating**’, and ‘**permanent**’ Universe to one that is now **cursed**, **groaneth**, and is ‘**dying**’, as well as one where **the curse** also occasionally delivers **great judgments** to Earth, and where our own bodies **groan** under these changes too, that is, just like **the whole creation groaneth**, please, like I have, pause to **sigh**, even **groan**, as needed. But then ‘buck up’, (read, ‘**encourage yourself**’), because I have it on good authority that a **new** and even ‘**better creation**’, along with much ‘**better bodies**’, and that is, fully ‘**groan-free**’, **incorruptible**, and **everlasting** ones, are coming soon, where **we** will experience **everlasting mercy**, **everlasting kindness**, **everlasting righteousness**, **everlasting joy**, and ‘**unimaginably**’, **wonderfully**, **marvellously**, and ‘**for ever increasingly more**’ by The Natural Eternal Progression of the Knowledge of God by The Word of God, resulting in **the increase of our everlasting kingdom to no end**.

And still Dr. Velikovsky will continue to help us **prove** that Venus exposed a lot of Genesis and *igneous rock*, and has already helped us ‘**rightly imagine**’—though somewhat unwittingly—some of the results of when Genesis rock, on The 1st Visit of Mercury, must have indeed been entirely—but only briefly—‘exposed’, and has also helped us ‘**rightly imagine**’—being closer to ‘**rightly understanding**’ it himself—that portions of Genesis rock, on a number of occasions, were later ‘exposed’ and/or ‘shifted’ into or out of Polar Regions.

But beyond what Dr. Velikovsky has been able to show us, we have considered many other **precepts** that, especially when put together, do **prove** that the Earth could never have been entirely *molten*, and certainly did not exist ‘billions of years ago’. But though we have arguably ‘exposed’ enough of them already, there is still more ‘proof in this pudding’ to ‘expose’, though this will no longer so much be for the purpose of ‘exposing the fantasy world of evolutionary perspective’ but instead to add to our ‘**fluency of God’s marvellous works**’, wherewith we will surely also want to further—that is, with ‘**ever-increasing understanding**’—**glorify God**, and **talk...of, make known, declare**, as well as **remember** them, that is, if about such **great and terrible things** you truly are someone who **hath an ear...** [to] **hear** [Rev 2:7,11,17,29](#); [3:6,13,22](#); [13:9](#), and that would be about ‘**all things that your Lord doeth**’, both past and future.

But really all anyone has to do is to ‘keep at it’ until **he...hath**, because there are really no excuses otherwise. I mean The Word of God makes clear to me that, ‘**especially**’ with the help of a ‘**perfect teacher**’, it should be a matter of time before The Word of God ‘**makes wise**’ even **the simple**. Or to combine all this and take it a ‘**step**’ further, as another **psalm** puts it,

Make me to understand the way of thy precepts: so shall I talk of thy wondrous works [Psa 119:27](#). (See also [Psa 71:17-18](#), [77:11-12](#), and all of [Psalm 111](#).)

And I **hope** you can **see** by now that ‘this’ is what we—and God—are **so doing**.

And this makes a good opportunity to pause to take this **‘ability to hear’** a **‘step’** further too, that is, back to God’s perspective, so that you can **understand** what I mean by the fact—yes, I’m **‘speaking for God’**—that there are indeed “no excuses”. And I mean God always **judgeth** and will **judge...righteously** whether or not we **hear** Him, since from our perspective it remains our **choice** to **endeavour** to be **‘able to hear’** or not, that is, **consciences** remaining **‘unseared’**. And I mean our **righteous judge**, though He is also The Trier of Hearts, is **great** and **plenteous in mercy**, and of **great...faithfulness**, and **full of compassion** and **‘steadfast love’**, all of which—and **exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think**—are **new every morning**, and all to **help anyone** who will **endeavour** to **hear** Him. But evidently eventually, and after **‘unfathomable’ patience** and **longsuffering**, He will either entirely **forsake** those, or to some degree **‘distance’** Himself from those who **make** a lifestyle of **‘ignoring’** Him. And yes, I mean this applies to some extent even to **the saved**, that is, when God finally does **not make** He and His Son’s **abode** very close to them. Uh-huh, He will finally **‘distance’** Himself, even from most of **the saved**, and that is, to the degree that **they** consistently, however many times He **pricks** them, **refuse to hear** His call to **draw nigh**.

And this **should** give you an even **‘better understanding’**, again, of the **‘perfect teaching’** of the Apostle James for the **simple**, as well as for **babes in Christ**, to,

Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you.

I mean by now you **should** recognize **both** sides of the motivation to, **Draw nigh to God**, and that is, both the ‘positive motivation’ to **receive a reward, glory** and **honour** for **so doing**—not to mention for the ‘out-of-this-world’, **‘close’ fellowship** with Jesus and His Father—and the ‘negative motivation’ to avoid being **confounded** and **ashamed**, or finally really **for ever** being **put to shame**, or call it **‘eternal dishonour’**, otherwise.

And all this **should** also **‘shew you’**, again, that this is a **revelation** we will **grow** in **understanding** of **for ever**, even as we must **continue** to **grow** in **‘knowing God better and better’**, and thereby **‘draw nigher and nigher to God’**, **for ever**. And I will go so far as to say—still **‘speaking for God’**, since we’ve covered enough of the ‘history of science’ alone so far to **prove** it—that God is also **‘unfathomably faithful’** to offer each one of us, **continually**, the next **‘heart-trying ordered step’** in our **path**, whether toward **redemption** or whether, beyond that, to **‘brighter and brighter’**—and therefore **‘nigher and nigher’**—perspectives of Him, so that His **judgments** of the ones who **neglect, deny** or **refuse** these **‘God-illuminated steps’** will **always** and **for ever** remain **righteous**, and so that His **reward** and **honour** for the ones that **diligently seek him** will be seen to appropriately **abound**, that is, **‘precisely’** as much as they are **worthy** of it. Is that **righteous** enough for you? Ch - ch-ch-ch-ch - Chhhh.

But surely God also **‘naturally’**, and/or **‘supernaturally’**, sees and does things **his way**, where, if you’re **not rebellious**, or in His perspective, you’re **not** one of the **vessels of wrath** who is **‘doomed’** to be **‘seared’**, but instead are a **‘high-calling’ vessel of honour**, then it’s really just as much Him in this case too that...

...wilt prepare their [and your] heart... [and] wilt cause thine ear to hear... [and has] given me [and you] the tongue of the learned... [and] wakeneth mine [and your] ear to hear as the learned... [and] opened mine [and your] ear [in the first place]... [whereby we can understand this to be true simply because, from our perspectives, we are indeed] not rebellious, neither [- and that is, ever-decreasingly so -] turned away back... [from hearing by the word of God] [Psa 10:17](#); [Isa 50:4-5](#); [Rom 10:17](#).

But why does God even tell us about this reality—that it's Him Who is the **cause** that we are **'able to hear'**—when we really can't perceive it His **way**? The **'beginning understanding'** of this is **simple** too really. Again, if you are too **rebellions to hear** Him, and if you **choose**—from your perspective—to **neglect**, or **deny**, or **willingly are ignorant of** the fact that...

...it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure,

then at some point it must become painfully obvious—excruciatingly so really—what awaits you, which for **many**—most really—is a **revelation** that—in sufficient 'clarity'—comes all too late, namely, and to whatever degree, that you are a **shame**, which most commonly though not necessarily is accompanied by the **everlasting contempt** of God. However **if** this **ignorance** and/or **neglect** is instead, and fully enough, **'recognized'** in time, it can be a **'beginning revelation'** that not only should, but is meant to, 'scare the hell out of you', this kind of **fear**—the **fear** that should overwhelm you when you **'recognize'** you're **'ignoring God'**—is part of what is defined by King Solomon as **the beginning of wisdom**, where, **'mercifully'**, such **'God-fearing'** actually initiates **'the beginning of the ability to cast out fear'** too. Yes, this **'supernatural spiritual power'** to **'cast out fear'** all starts shortly after you finally get the hint that you'd **better** be **endeavouring to hear** God like your **eternity** depended on it, and that is, **if** you want to avoid being **ashamed**, I mean, at least as much as 'humanly possible', which, when you truly **desire to hear**, becomes the **'foundation'** of your motivation to **strive, press, work, fight**, and finally also even to **run**, and that is, every **'God-illuminated step of the way'**, and whereby you may **experience** that God's Word in you, as He puts it,

...shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

And I **encourage** you to **continue to strive, press, work, fight**, even eventually **run** to become **able to experience** more 'short circuits' about all this too, and as often as you can. I mean, such **revelations should** happen—and **grow**—at least as often as you will eventually have opportunity to visit The Pit of Hell outside the southeast gate of the city, **The LORD is there** (*Yéhovah shammah*, you know, the Millennial City of Jerusalem), because such **'fear-initiated' revelations** are natural, supernatural really, and certainly necessary for **'growth in spiritual maturity'**. And **'short-circuiting' revelations should** also naturally and increasingly 'come with the territory', that is, with **'pressing toward high-calling-level marks'**, such as the **mark to 'increasingly know all things that your Lord doeth'**, this being at least an eventual requirement for **whosoever** would be one of the **'closest' friends** of Jesus too.

But speaking of 'living in fantasy worlds', even Dr. Dunbar's particular, though now mostly unheard and forgotten, 'evolutionary perspective', and though

essentially acknowledging that ‘exposed’ Genesis rock at various times was *lava covered, water inundated, and/or glaciated*, is still a ‘wildly further flight of fancy’ beyond what most Christians mis-imagine, his apparently a ‘fantasy world’ that can only be imagined by those who are **‘blinded in the mind’** enough to ‘stretch out’ God’s so far about 6,000 years of Creation into ‘billions of years’ in fantastic detail, and who do so while actually believing they are only properly using the available evidence, that is, whenever **‘blindly’** enough compartmentalizing, and otherwise **‘ignoring the God-illuminated steps toward the truth’**. And it would be hard to ‘miss the mark’ of **the truth** by farther, or distort reality further, though we have seen that nowadays ‘scientists’ nonetheless find ways to increasingly do so, and thereby are becoming, at best, increasingly useless.

And such men can really have no idea Who God is, because, in their **vain** attempts to define their ‘reality’, and that is, in their **‘increasingly strong delusion’**, they have an **‘increasingly strong blindness’** too, that is, they have **‘conscious-seared mindsets’** that **‘increasingly and consistently reject knowledge’**, wherein, ultimately, they even **mock** God’s overwhelmingly awesome, astoundingly very ‘recent’, and, even to those long past their **recovering of sight**, not-even-close-to-being-fully-imaginable, and otherwise repeatedly defined by **scripture** as **great, terrible, wondrous** and **marvellous works**. And unfortunately all of this to some extent at least used to apply to Dr. Velikovsky too, and still may, **God forbid** (prosopopeia intended/resurrection expected—hereafter, PIRE).

But **‘strong spiritual blindness’** doesn’t apply just to those ‘living in evolutionary fantasy worlds’. To some extent it also applies to you and me too. Remember the Spiritual Maturity Diagnostic Pretest? It could be you’re still not ready to pass it. Think about it. Sure, just **knowing** about Jesus’ **sacrifice** for you, and simply continuing to accept it, may get you **into** His **everlasting kingdom**, (that is, if you aren’t still **in her**—the Catholic Church—and haven’t **received the mark of the beast**, or have otherwise at any point seen fit to **blaspheme against the holy ghost**). But **knowing** this alone, that Jesus can **save** you, leaves you still about as far as you can get from really knowing Him or The Father, and far from having a perspective that those who really **know** Them have, because such **‘strong spiritual sight’** requires an **‘exceedingly broadly transformed and renewed mind’** (e.g., [Psa 119:96](#) connected to [Rom 12:2](#)), that is, one which is **‘increasingly transformed and renewed to oppose natural, seemeth-right ways’** (at least a triple connection, which I’ll leave you to sort out), and until you have been **approved unto God** as having **attained** a **‘spiritually mature perspective of reality’**, which is a perspective best exemplified by the **first** or **great in the kingdom of heaven**, including the real **‘close’ friends** of Jesus, who could be otherwise defined as those fully **committed** to **‘continue in the word’** while also remaining ever **vigilant** both to discover and expose their own **‘increasingly more subtle errors’, for ever**.

And yes, and staying as repetitious—or **exercised**—as I can be, you should now well **know** that at the point you **enter into the kingdom of heaven**, if only just saved and little more, you are, generally speaking, just one **revelation** passed those still **lost**, and therefore you would **enter into...heaven** about as far away from really **knowing...God** and His Son as those who don’t at all, that is, unless before this transition from mortality to immortality, by the available relationship with The Word of Truth by The Spirit of Truth—and let me be clear that I’m being as personal as I can possibly be—you for a long time experience what it’s like for Them to ‘make their abode with you’. And yes, such a **‘close relationship’** with The Father and Jesus is only possible after the necessarily preceding long period of

time, wherein you *seek 'their' face[s] continually*, that is, when you have for a long time *'experienced'* that it is your *'God-given heart's desire'* to be *so doing, evermore*, and that is, and in other *words of God*, where you *'continually seek to abide under the shadow of the Almighty'*, even *'under his wings'*, or as Psalm 91 further clarifies, when *thou hast made the LORD your refuge and habitation*, and when you truly *'dwell' in the secret place of the most high*, that is, in a *place you know well* to be real BECAUSE YOU LIVE THERE, and which you *understand* is an exclusive and *secret place* since you know few if any others who know how and where to find it, *'it'* being a *place* that is now in *heaven*, where you presently and generally may only *abide, dwell*, and find *refuge* and *habitation* there *by* and *in the spirit*, but which is nonetheless a *place* you expect to soon move to for at least 7 years, and after that to move with it—and that is, with Jesus—to Millennial Jerusalem, and finally to move with it—uh-huh, with Jesus—to a *'top foundation floor'* of New Jerusalem on *new earth*, these being *'places'* you actually *'vehemently'* and *'fervently hope'*—that is, have a *'God-given and zealous hearts desire'*—to much more than just visit.

But I expect that these coming *'places'*, like the one now available, will *for ever* remain *'secret'* to all but a relatively very few of the *few*. I mean apparently all these *'places'* remain *'secret'* because they are mostly or completely inaccessible to those who are *not* real *'close' friends* of Jesus, which would be to most all the Immortal Sons of God. And I mean that though most—at least nowadays—are taught otherwise, only very few should expect to be *rewarded* with such an *[abundant] entrance*, let alone expect to *dwell* and *abide* in this final *secret place*, and that is, *evermore*, because this is a *prize* that cannot be easily *obtained* or *apprehended*, nor do I expect that it is an *honour* I have yet fully *attained*. Still I *press toward* even this *mark*, and *prize*, even as the Apostle Paul puts it,

Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus

[Phl 3:12](#) (but for better context see the next 5 verses too).

And no, contrary to what too many *babes in Christ* are taught, they do not really have the kind of *'intimate access'* to God and His Son that the *'spiritually mature'* can have. This 'misunderstanding', that they may have *'unlimited boldness'* to *'access with confidence'* God and His Son, is mistaught using verses like [Ephesians 3:12](#), and, for *shame*, undermines the motivation to *'grow in the knowledge of God'*, making *babes* think that they truly have *'unlimited intimate access'* when surely they do not. I mean they think there is nothing *required* by God to *attain* or *apprehend* such *'perfect access'* beyond 'buckets-full' of *the blood of Christ*. Again, this is a *shame*, making it one of the more effective *'growth-limiting' doctrines of devils*, being especially *'debilitating'* for those with *'hearts'* still too *'desperately wicked'*, or for those who still too easily believe *seducing spirits*, being *unable*, (combining what the Apostles Paul and John *teach*), to *try the spirits*, making it a *'false doctrine'* that is *'naturally'* and *'heartily'* embraced by *'carnal Christians'*, being that they are generally entirely *deceived* by it. And there is someone else you can see, who at least used to believe such *'spiritual childishness'*, and likely way too recently, I mean, if you happen to have a mirror handy.

And I mean I don't expect to be anywhere *'close'* to *'apprehending'* and *'attaining'* such *'perfect access'* until I've gotten all the way up the *'ordered steps'* of all 'three flights' of the *'studies'* God is giving me, because that is what

they are for. And I mean I **see** them as my personal prerequisites for such consideration by God, but also how **we**—yes, both you and I—may finally **'obtain permission'** to so **'closely and intimately serve'** Them. And so I **continue** in the **hope** that such an **'invitation'**—to this most exclusive and **secret place**—is the ultimate end of my **'purpose in Christ'** in this **'incarnation'**, or from God's perspective, that I too **am apprehended of Christ Jesus** for this **purpose**, and I also **hope** that this **'invitation'** is not just for me, but for **whosoever** else **will** come with me to **seek** such a **'proper introduction'**.

And I don't mean that every Immortal Son of God won't have a connection to God **by** The Spirit **for ever**. I just mean it appears we're talking about two different kinds of **'access'** here. On the one hand, the most common **'access'** is indeed had **freely**, and that **by the blood of Jesus**. However such **'unlimited, bold and confident access'** mostly only happens **by and in the Spirit**, whereby we may all —**spiritually—enter into the holiest** [Heb 10:19](#) and...

...come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need [Heb 4:16](#).

So yes, I'm deducing—since **precept upon precept** God's Word does **teach** it—that **'universal bold and confident access'** to God and His Son, though certainly freely available, is limited. How is it limited? To oversimplify, it is limited to **'finding grace'**.

And I mean that, on the other hand, and getting personal again, the evidently much less common way for you to **'gain close access'** to Jesus and The Father is much harder to be **apprehended**, let alone **attained**, because it is the kind of **'access'** only offered if, **'beyond salvation'**, you **'unceasingly continue'** to **go on unto perfection**, and **press toward** a **'high'** and **'strong perfection'** at that, in the process unavoidably discovering within yourself the **work** of God ([Phil 2:13](#)) to have **'zealous, fervent and vehement desire'**, like Jesus gave Peter to **strengthen** his **brethren**, thereby becoming among the **great in the kingdom of heaven**, and, **God willing** and **'permitting'**, also one of the **'close' friends** of Jesus, who may eventually be found **worthy** to **approach** Him and the Father in this way, that is, in a more **'face to face way'**.

Still I wonder how such intimacy with Jesus and The Father could even be possible, since, and as the Apostle Paul also says, only Jesus is...

...dwelling in the [Father's] **light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see** [except Jesus] [1Ti 6:16](#) (and see as many of the surrounding verses as you need to until my 'identifications' in brackets are clear).

I mean this implies that both The Father and Jesus are **'naturally'** too **'blindingly bright'** for anyone, even Angels, to endure, let alone even approach, kind of like trying to approach the Sun.

But Jesus will live with mortals on this present Earth during The Millennium. Though remember from [SECTION 11](#) in the last **study** how that regular **'access'** to Jesus then, at least for mortals, will be strictly restricted. I mean just to **serve** him regularly you would have to be a **Levite**, and not just any **Levite**, also one who is...

...of the sons of Zadok; which have kept my charge, which went not astray when the children of Israel went astray, as the [other] **Levites went astray** [Eze 48:11](#).

And more than that remember you'd have to change clothes every time you see Him, and obey *all* the **ordinances of the house of the LORD**, and live an exemplary faithful and pure life, as much as a mortal can, and make sure you are **cleansed** from your **sins** otherwise, that is, to avoid 'dropping dead' in any of your attempts at '**approaching**' Him. Uh-huh. It was like that in all the past Temples too, when apparently Jesus just 'occasionally' visited.

So if '**regular face to face access**' to Jesus will be that restricted for **his people** the Jews—who will by then be **redeemed to God by Jesus' blood** too, by-the-way—how is that you're expecting easier '**face to face access**' yourself, and whether as a mortal or immortal.

Of course Jesus tells us that these particular Zadokian Levites nonetheless...

...shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge [Eze 44:16](#).

And, as we will consider shortly, I'm deducing—**precept upon precept**—that He doesn't **eat** alone, at least usually, but will instead **eat and drink** with his '**closest**' friends,

Then again, swinging back the other way, we should also remember that The Father—or was it Jesus?—had to tell Moses,

Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see me, and live [Exo 33:20](#).

I'm guessing this is Jesus talking. And sure this may have been partly because Moses was still mortal, this also being before Jesus **hath** [His present form of] **immortality** [1Ti 6:16](#), that is, before the time we could become **like him** [1Jo 3:2](#), but I'm **seeing** more than just these things in all this. And I mean that once we become **immortal, like him**, I'm guessing, but in this case apparently '**preceptually deducing**', that even the '**brightest**' among us will always require God and Jesus to use Their '**dimmer switches**' in order for us to be other than entirely blinded—even '**extinguished**'—by Their **light**. And so we might further '**preceptually deduce**' that if you don't have an '**abundant entrance level**' of '**brightness**', that is, if you're not one of the Lord's '**close**' friends, you won't get, or at best will rarely get, '**face to face access**'. This also likely means that, just like God and Jesus, any immortal '**brighter**' than a '**dimlit**' will need to use their '**dimmer switches**' too in order to fully 'interact'—or not use them to avoid 'interaction'—with '**dimmer**' Immortals, and that all of this is part of both the **honour** and **dishonour**, (yeah, you can read, **shame**), that we'll all **live** with **for ever**—though usually more of the one and less of the other depending on how **great** in Their **everlasting kingdom** you actually become, and all this somehow only appropriate to, or directly related to, your pre-Rapture **zeal to be partakers of the divine nature** with Jesus in His pre-Rapture **work of the increase of his government and peace to no end**.

But again, how can we both have **boldness** to seek **access with confidence**, but at the same time remain in a condition before God where **no man can approach unto** Him? That would be the difference between our '**spiritual access**' to **the throne of grace**, and, **if God permit**, our literal '**face to face access**' to Them, which I expect—at least usually—is only available to His '**closest**' friends, though possibly more occasionally to those otherwise not too '**dimlit**', but rarely at most to those who are. And I mean that this journey to '**gain close access**' and '**make your abode**' in this particular, exclusive, and **secret place** could and should lead '**whosoever hath an ear to hear**', **God willing** and '**permitting**', to

the beginning of the most **'increasingly amazing'** actual **'face to face friends for ever time'**, (hereafter, FT3F time), imaginable, and that is, with Jesus, and maybe with The Father too. But it's really presently mostly **'unimaginable'**, and should remain mostly **'unimaginable'**, as it should **'unendingly'** take you to **'ever-increasingly and dizzyingly higher heights'**, and that is, ones only His **'closest' friends** will ever, and **evermore**, be **'bright'** enough to more directly experience.

However even the **'very closest' friends** of Jesus, his **disciples**—and I mean **the twelve**—openly **disputed** about this, surely then **foolishly**, and evidently repeatedly, where **there arose a reasoning among them**, and where, on another occasion or more, **there was also a strife among them** about **which of them should be accounted the greatest**, that is, **in the kingdom of heaven**. But we have the benefit of what was later taught to them by The Spirit, so we don't have the excuse of **ignorance** like they did then. And I mean it's not even possible that you or me, besides Jesus, will be the **greatest in the kingdom of heaven**, nor is it likely—to add a little more context—that we'll get opportunities, at least regularly, like Jesus **promised** His **twelve disciples**, to...

...eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and [certainly not to] **sit on**
[the highest]

thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel [Luke 22:30](#).

No, this 'top level' of **'close fellowship'** and **rule** with Jesus, possibly most broadly first displayed at **the marriage** and **marriage supper of the lamb**, and continuing **for ever** from then on, is specifically reserved for **the twelve**, that is, which likely includes Paul, though I would guess this **rule** Jesus refers to is shared by the entire **four and twenty**, though maybe **the four and twenty** will join the others that stay in **heaven** for The Millennium, so that their further **'table eating and drinking'** with Jesus may not continue until **we** too see New Jerusalem **coming down from God out of heaven**. Maybe. Either that or in The Millennium the mortal Zadokian Levites will be—at least frequently—**'ministering'** to the **four and twenty** along with Jesus, and I'm guessing 'occasionally' also to others of the highest **'abundance-entrance-level luminosities'**, and sometimes also to **worthy** mortals. And this seems to imply that on the 'rarer visits' with **'dimmer'** Immortals Jesus would have His, and the **four and twenty** their, **'dimmer switches'** appropriately 'turned down', or for mortals, 'turned all the way off', or no one could get a **'face to face seat'** with Him or them. And I just mean I'm expecting—at this point in my **'continuing preceptual analysis'**—that it will be something like that.

And this brings us to the **parable** The Spirit reminded me about concerning all this, which **'expanded'** my **understanding** in the process, that is, the one about the **shame** involved with such erroneous **reasoning**, and with any accompanying **strife**, and I mean the one where Jesus **teacheth**,

When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding [including, I suppose, by **the son of man** to **the marriage of the lamb**], **sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.**

And yeah, I *see* such **shame** happening at **the marriage** and **marriage supper of the lamb**, but such **worship** too, or, as our Lord both '**here and there**' puts it 'in a nutshell',

For whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted; [Matthew 23:12](#); [Luke 14:11](#); [Luke 18:14](#).

But He also says,

If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour [John 12:26](#).

And are you still wondering whether there will be **dishonour** and **shame** among the **least**, and **honour**, even **worship** given to the **great in the kingdom of heaven**, as well as on Millennial Earth, and finally **new earth**? '**I tell you the truth**, such things, from one side or the other, will be '**experienced**' by **all** those finally '**living above ground**', **even for ever and ever**.

And don't misunderstand. This cannot just be my '**offer**' or '**invitation**' to you. That would be worthless. But it is what I **understand** and **hope** is His '**offer**' and '**invitation**' to me, and to **whosoever will** come with me, and **learn to walk**—and **run**—beside me, and I with them, where, again, my **hope** is to one day—necessarily fairly soon—be overtaken by that 'thundering herd of turtles', even occasionally 'over-bounded' by a 'rabbit' or two, or more, even as God is **willing**, that is, this '**hopefully**' happening **with a great...cloud of witnesses** before it's too late, and that is, before it's too late to be **rewarded** for such '**devoted, diligent God-seeking**', this deadline being, of course, The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church.

And you got the '**invitation**' for that already, didn't you—I mean most recently from King David—when he instructed us to **seek** God's **face continually** (or **evermore**)? But even this '**lower-level invitation**'—the one that starts the journey to reach the '**higher-level**' one—the '**higher**' one being where you actually **gain** some level of '**eternal access**' to the **secret place**—is arguably only for the '**greatest disciples**', but surely especially for 'candidates' to be among the '**closest**' friends of Jesus, such 'candidates' being positively identified as '**whosoever hath an ear to hear the invitation**', and that being **whosoever will strive, press, work, fight**, and also **run with patience the race that is set before** them, and **continue in so doing** until they have **finished** their **course**. Otherwise, and evidently, you're not '**invited**', and this could possibly be because somewhere along the way you become '**disinvited**'.

And getting back to becoming '**fluent**' in God's both past and future '**plans**', besides **an ear** that really can **hear**, it may take such evidence as *polonium halos*, and other examples involving God's presently '**curse-based**' **ordinances of heaven and earth**, to **reveal** how 'quickly' our present World is becoming **old like a garment**, that is, along with the **testimony of God** by His Word, which **declareth**—in this case through the Apostle Paul—that,

...sin entered into the world [at The Fall], ***and death by sin*** [and ***the curse***]; ***and so*** [the '***first***' and ***second***] ***death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned*** [Rom 5:12](#).

Yes, '**and so death entered by sin**', meaning that before that '**death had not yet entered**', and that otherwise Adam and Eve, et al., could have lived, and the Universe could have lasted, 'indefinitely', that is, until **by sin...death passed upon**

all men, and that by **the curse**, ‘starting the clock’ on not just the **death** of **every living thing**, but also on the ‘destabilization’ and ‘decay’ of all **‘material creation’** too. And I could add that, **‘and so judgment entered by the curse’**, that is, the Universe began **‘falling apart’**, though doing so **‘precisely’** according to God’s 7 Day – 7000 Year Plan, and according to His **‘predestinated judgments’** that certainly God **‘had afore prepared’** starting at **the curse**, and whereby **all things** God **determined** to **‘bring...upon the earth’** by His Word were and will be **accomplished**, including **all** the **‘precisely-planned fallout’** that specifically—and astoundingly—will culminate in the **delivery** of additional **great and terrible, wondrous, and marvelous, instruments of death**—though surely accompanied by sufficiently **‘saving graces’** too—which both Jesus and Gabriel imply involve even **‘greater’ great judgments** than have so far been so astoundingly **delivered**, where God **promises** that the result will be, as the Prophet Isaiah **prophesieth**, that,

Therefore hath the curse devoured the earth [and heavens], and they that dwell therein are desolate: therefore the inhabitants of the earth [that are predestinated and ‘precisely targeted’ for destruction] are burned, and few men left [- that is, exactly the **few** God **predestinated** to survive by His **‘precisely targeted saving graces’**] [Isa 24:6](#).

And in case you doubt my ‘clarifications’ that God will provide **‘precise targeting’** in The Great Tribulation, where only relatively **few** survive, I have a question for you. How could God **save** such a specific few of the **few**, I mean those who at this time will also become **devout men, out of every nation under heaven** ([Acts 2:5](#)), without it?

And by-the-way, I introduced Isaiah in the present tense, yes, PIRE. And maybe you noticed the literary device I’ll call a ‘double partial’ or DP-PAMD that, besides being of ‘absolute manifest destiny’, it’s ‘doubly partial’ because it doesn’t involve different meanings of identically sounding words, but the different forms and meanings of a word, where in this case **‘falling apart’** implies the following 3 forms and meanings: **1)** literally ‘falling to pieces’, including the **‘fallout’** caused by **‘curse-corrupted’ ordinances**, **2)** **‘falling’** in the sense of **sin**, including how whole societies ‘fall apart’, and **3)** ‘The Fall’ itself, the **‘entering of sin’**, and the **‘beginning of cursed ordinances’**.

Of course Dr. Velikovsky missed most all of this—and certainly the PIRE and DP-PAMD—seeing each **sedimentary layer** that Mercury left behind as “single geological epochs”, each separated by ‘millions of years’ or more, though at least he imagines each **layer** as being initiated—and much more ‘quickly laid’—by a corresponding “pageant” of ‘visitors’, and in many respects he imagines something remarkably close to what God’s **great and terrible, wondrous, and marvellous, ‘great’ instruments of death** actually **accomplished**. But he apparently didn’t see that, besides The Curse, the real beginning of these “great catastrophes” was The 1st Visit of Mercury, only about 4300 years ago, with the **water canopy ‘draining out of the sky’**, and with **all the fountains...of the great deep broken up** [Gen 7:11](#), which resulted in the first **glaciations** of the Poles, and the first just ‘regional’ Tropics—when before that the whole **planet** was ‘tropical’ due to the **greenhouse effect** of the **water canopy**—and which also resulted in the ‘raising’ of the smaller, **igneous-rock-supported**, ‘Mercury-class’ **mountains**, like **mount Nebo**, for example, and where mostly just **water** was ‘pulled out’, or ‘squeezed out’, and finally just ‘washed out’ of the **ground**, and enough, along with what came out of the sky, to **submerge** all land, including all the then still ‘rising’ only ‘Mercury-class’, **igneous-rock-**

supported *mountains*, while evidently in the process ‘agitating’ these **waters** enough to temporarily *suspend* all the Genesis topsoil in the **waters** as *sediment* above the Genesis rock and newly ‘rising’ *magma* and *lava* that, being mostly *underwater*, quickly became *igneous rock*—all this something like in that ‘glass bathtub, dirt and firehose experiment’, where in this comparison the Genesis rock and ‘newly formed’ *igneous rock* make up the bottom of this ‘bathtub’, the ‘dirt’ being the Genesis topsoil, and the ‘firehose’ being the **‘sky-windows’** and **‘ground-fountains’** that, after these **waters** ‘stop running’, result in the *suspended sediment* ‘settling out’ by *density*, naturally becoming *layered*, miles-deep *sedimentary rock*, leaving the Genesis rock and ‘newly formed’ *igneous rock*—again, represented by the bottom of the ‘bathtub’—as the only remaining ‘original rock’ left—*rock* now extensively ‘scared’ by *igneous rock*—and that is, after all this *sediment*, finally filled with mostly dead *lifeforms*—give or take a few *frogs*, *lizards*, *insects*, and lots of *microorganisms*, etc.—‘settles out’ onto it, as well as onto any ‘rising formations’ of it.

About a millennia later there followed another pair of “great catastrophes”, this time both within a century’s time, instigated by Venus, or by God **‘using’** Venus, including probably a couple, or a couple more, **‘shifts’** of the Polar and Tropical Regions, and this time also including the corresponding “upwelling” of **‘continent-innundating’ amounts of magma and lava’**, along with the ‘raising’ of much higher ‘Venus-class Mountain Ranges’, and, because of **‘pushed and slosed oceans-full of water’**, the ‘washing away’ of significant portions of the ‘previously-laid’ *sedimentary rock* too.

And just another several hundred years later the last round of “great catastrophes”, evidently involving 7 **‘visits’** of Mars, again all within a century’s time, and though certainly altogether much less destructive than The 1st Visit of Mercury or The Visits of Venus, certainly also **greatly ‘stirred-up’** and **‘shifted around’** both the *planet* and its peoples.

And to give all this a name, the last 3 paragraphs could be called, ‘Another Brief History of **The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation** So Far’, which so far, to again briefly summarize, has **‘precisely fallen out’** just as God **‘planned’** as a result of The Curse. And I have **‘strong faith’** it will continue to **‘fall out’** as God **‘hath afore prepared’**, and that is, exactly as He **predestinated** at The Curse. And yeah, there’s another DP-PAMD or two in this paragraph.

Or as we can now so much **‘better understand’** from King David’s perspective, and as he put it in those **psalms**,

He is the LORD our God; his judgments are in all the earth [1Ch 16:14](#);
[Psa 105:7](#).

And yes, again, **his judgments** already **are ‘recorded’ in all the earth**, as we will **continue** to **see**, but hopefully also **‘increasing learn’** to **talk...of, make known, declare** and **remember**. Because such **‘perfect understanding’** of God’s **great and terrible, wondrous** and **marvelous works** will not come **just** by the **singing** of **psalms and hymns and spiritual songs**. And again, besides David’s example of not only looking back, but also looking forward to such **wonders**, we have it from Gabriel through Daniel, and from Jesus through Matthew and Mark, that the **‘worst’**—but evidently also the **‘most wondrous’**—are still to come, which we’ll get back to again and again along the way, but especially in the last sections of this **study**.

And again, Dr. Velikovsky seemed only to see The Visits of Venus and Mars satisfactorily, while seeing the work of Mercury less so, that is, missing the bulk of

'his' original 'quick work'. And I mean, again, he did not correctly imagine the Genesis rock as the original *bedrock* for all the *sedimentary rock* that 'settled-out' in The Flood, though correctly understood that Venus later 'lifted' and/or 'lowered', 'broke' and/or 'overturned', and *inundated* with *magma* all these *layers*, though incorrectly imagined that there were other 'culprits' involved at every 'level' doing this kind of "upheaval", because he mis-imagined the *layers* being 'laid' one at a time, with these "events" being separated by ridiculously long "periods" of time, and involving as many 'visitors' and/or 'visits' as there are *layers* of *sedimentary rock*, seeing the 'transitions' in these *layers* —the ones misrepresented on Sir Liar's chart—as each corresponding to a different "great catastrophe", these *layers* misunderstood to have been initiated by new or returning "worlds".

And yes, I'm sure he knows the Bible story, you know, the one that implies that the entire Geologic Column—now the Geologic Time Scale, and altogether a 'hell of a lot' of *sediment*—'settled-out' in just ***an hundred and fifty days***, and that it implies that all the dead people in this *sediment*, (which, by-the-way, ***died*** to cause the event I'm going to call The First Wide-mouthed Reception of Spirits into Hell), and all the other dead—or still alive—*lifeforms* in it, and to whatever degree *fossilized* or not, should have generally ended up *buried* at *depths* corresponding to the 'elevation' where they previously lived, though because of all the *turbulent waters*, but also due to the later repeatedly 'rising' and/or 'falling', even sometimes 'overturned' *ground* they were *buried* in, there should be innumerable examples of exceptions to this, that is, ***in all the earth***. And yes, I'm sure Dr. Velikovsky knows all this, though he may even still be '***rejecting knowledge***' along these lines. But I nonetheless ***hope*** he will, if not already ***in spirit, acknowledge*** all this, and hopefully not too late. And of course it's the real and coming '***reincarnated***' opportunity to do so, by God's ***mercy***, that gives me ***hope*** that he, at that time, will.

But we should again remind ourselves that though these *layers* imagined by Dr. Velikovsky, and *evolutionists* in general, are generally found in the order on Sir Liar's chart, these *layers* don't really all fully exist anywhere. But where they do exist they are generally in this order apparently because similar 'heavier' or more *dense sediments* naturally really did *settle out* before the 'lighter' ones—like in our 'glass bathtub experiment'—except that in the 'global event', *sediments* only actually 'fell out' where they existed, or according to their 'regional supply', if any, so that in all places some of these *layers* represented on the chart are 'missing'.

And these *layers* generally contain *fossils* corresponding to the 'elevations' where they previously *lived*—with ***creatures...in the sea*** generally lower down, and ***the beast of the earth*** generally higher up, but like the *sedimentary layers* that contain them, they don't really all fully exist anywhere either, not in just one place, or *layer*, and apparently not anywhere near their mis-imagined entirety, or consistency, and apparently much less so than Dr. Velikovsky was misinformed to imagine, and therefore to some degree he simply misunderstood the even then known lack of 'uniformity' in these enormous, but really to a great extent variable—especially in their 'fossil content'—*sedimentary layers*.

However remember again that the "Neutrino Crisis" apparently didn't cause him—neither for that matter very many "theistic evolutionists", now "progressive creationists"—to recant, qualify, or reconsider anything, which I can't imagine he—or they—could have missed. And though really only God knows what contradictions He brought to Dr. Velikovsky's flawed perspectives, I still ***believe*** that God made him aware of plenty of them, that is, that God is always—'***pre-conscious searing***'—'***faithfully illuminating next-ordered-steps toward the truth***', even as He always offers me '***correcting, improving and expanding***'

revelations pretty much **'every God-lit step of the way'**, and especially if we **seek his face continually**, that is, **evermore**. And again yes, every Son of God, including both Jews and Gentiles, and whether starting as **mortal**, or starting after having **put on immortality**, will begin their **'eternal tour of duty'** at the point they come to the **understanding** that **increasing in the knowledge of God** is an inevitable, neverending, **'kingdom-government-and-peace-increasing duty'**, which for those still in this **age** best begins before the next one starts, that is, before The Rapture, though this likely only after an at least somewhat **'fear-initiated' revelation**, whereby you become **committed to for ever** be **'found'** by God **so doing**, and where the unavoidably **'increasing short-circuiting' revelations** only **'increasingly encourage'** you in your **'ever-increasing' zeal** to **'increasingly' continue to grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, for evermore**.

And now that you're better ready to **understand** what Dr. Velikovsky was and is talking about, and was and is thinking, including what he properly understands and otherwise misunderstood —PIRE only as appropriate—we will continue in *Chapter III, COLLAPSING SCHEMES*, still in the 3rd section, *In Early Ages*, where he further explained, (uh-huh, PIRE not appropriate), what he thought followed these "ancient", "pre-Cambrian" times, that is, following the time when - as he imagined it - there wasn't yet any *sedimentary rock* atop the Genesis rock, when,

Then in Cambrian time seas flooded the continents, and [- supposedly because of one of the "earlier" of the 'visitors', maybe somehow carrying 'additional water' aquired from Saturn, as we will further consider next section -] dolomite [which is nearly 3 times more *dense* than *water*] and metamorphosed rocks 3000 to 4000 feet thick were formed [- these *sediments settling out* and *forming rock* first in The Flood as these *sediments* were 'heaviest']...

So yes, he apparently thought a 'flood' could deposit over ½ to ¾ miles of 'heavy' *sediment* quickly, but evidently also that at that "time" there were no 'lighter' *sediments* in these **waters** to be 'deposited'. And he surely expected that this happened, and certainly was initiated, with the help of an unnamed 'early visitor', and that it happened 'catastrophically fast', though 'ridiculously long ago'. Still and again, Dr. Velikovsky is seeing this "catastrophe" doing most its work rather immediately, incomparably faster than 'uniformitarian speed', showing how he views the 'uniformitarian scheme' as "collapsing".

Yet in no way does he see all *sedimentary rock* being 'laid' at this "time", though surely it was, since, in reality, **the waters prevailed upon the earth only an hundred and fifty days** altogether, during which time **the waters returned from off the earth continually... and after the end of the hundred and fifty days the waters were abated**, which means that then all the *sediment* 'settled-out' from bottom to top, except there was apparently continuing 'sub-surface compression' and 'drying', including the filling of empty *underground water storehouses*, as well as the later 'disruption' of a lot of this *sediment* by The Visits of Venus and Mars.

So Dr. Velikovsky not only thought that the composition of this lowest *layer* of *sediment* was limited to the *minerals* that were then available worldwide, he also thought, as all *evolutionists* do, that the general representation of *lifeforms* in this supposed "earliest" *layer* was limited by the then existing availability of *lifeforms* too, concluding...

...Only lower animal life was present in the world [in this imaginary Cambrian "time"]...

However Dr. Velikovsky seems to again 'waffle' by qualifying this observation, quoting,

...Yet "the simplest, unspecialized ancestors of modern animals, are most intensely modern themselves in the zoological sense and... belong to the same order of nature as that which prevails at the present day."

But by acknowledging the 'evolved complexity' of these supposedly "earliest" *animals* he was not implying that the *rock* that contained them must be vastly less "ancient" than most *evolutionists* assume. So why did he acknowledge here the apparently 'sudden complexity' of these supposed "lowest" and "earliest" but also "intensely modern" *animals*? Well, remember that he was not just a *catastrophist*, but evidently a *saltationist* too, since he apparently believed that "great catastrophes" fostered 'fast evolution', though he nonetheless saw 'gobs of time' in between the many "great catastrophes", but also that there were at least one or more 'fast-evolution' provoking "catastrophes" per *layer* that, again, he mis-imagined this way mostly because he couldn't believe the Bible story. But he nonetheless thought that this first *layer* was 'laid' and that the "lowest" but nonetheless "intensely modern" *lifeforms* in it evolved quite 'fast', and that such swiftness of both *layer formation* and *evolution* is more or less what is seen in all *layers*. But he wouldn't believe that all the *sediment* could be 'laid' by just one 'catastrophe'. And he wouldn't believe that all *lifeforms* - even the "lowest" - are "intensely modern" because God **created all lifeforms** in a matter of less than a literal week about 6,000 years ago. So though he believed that *sedimentary rock* was formed by *settling out* 'quickly', he only believed it did so a *layer* at a time, with 'fast spurts' of *evolution* happening after each 'layer-initiating catastrophe'. And he saw these "great catastrophes" happening mostly only after 'ridiculously long intervals', 'millions to billions of years intervals', and more simply describing them as a "pageant of earlier catastrophes", with the 'latest participants' in this ongoing "pageant" being Mercury, Venus and Mars, "the last in a line that goes back to much earlier times".

It is indeed a mind-bogglingly **wondrous, marvellous, and great and terrible** 'stretch of the imagination' to **understand** how just Mercury, Venus and Mars are the only '**great instruments of life and death**' God has **used**, and that is, so far. And I can easily forgive Dr. Velikovsky all his misconceptions in exchange for the scientific evidence he so faithfully makes available to us, because where he falls short, we, by The Spirit, may interpret it for ourselves. But let me be clear. Without this mostly 'faithfully delivered' evidence I would certainly have never been able to **understand** so much. Of course we've really only begun to 'stretch out imaginations' concerning these '**wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible works of God**' as we will be **so doing** throughout the rest of this **study**.

Dr. Velikovsky continued with his mis-imagined, 'many-catastrophic-visitors-bringing-fast-spurts-of-evolution mindset', mis-imagining that...

...In Ordovician time [- supposedly involving just the second most *dense sediments* to *settle out* in The Flood -] the sea submerged [- evidently among other places -] "fully half of the present [North American] continent [- supposedly with the help of another 'visitor' or 'visit', which maybe somehow 'carried' another installment of

water from Saturn, which again, we'll attempt to much **'better imagine'** next section,] and reduced it [- North America -] to a group of great islands."

This suggests a number of things, one being the reason why all the 'layers' that Mercury 'laid' don't exist everywhere - hint: the 'bathtub bottom' wasn't flat. Another *sediment* 'segregating' *factor* seems to be that the more *dense* (or 'heavier') *sediments*—not being *gaseous*—were more 'forcefully' *atomically magnetically attracted* 'earthward', that is, being evidently able to 'push through' the *resistance* of *water* and 'fall faster'. But - and finally this "partial wild goose chase" is over - this is not really the case. You need to **understand** that *falling solid objects* with different *masses* and in whatever the *fluid* - both *gases* (e.g., *air*) and *liquids* (e.g., *water*) being *fluids*—all experience equal *atomic magnetic* (and possibly some 'gravitational') *acceleration*, (which on Earth is about 10 m/sec^2), and therefore *fall* at the same *acceleration*, or at the same 'increasing speed', that is, they *accelerate* at $10 \text{ meters per second every second}$, which means in the first *second* any object - no matter how 'heavy' - can reach a speed of 10 m/sec , and in the next *second* a speed of 20 m/sec , then 30 m/sec in 3 seconds, etc. And so the *acceleration* continues, UNLESS other *forces* interfere otherwise. And in *fluids* - like *air* and *water*—another *force* can and *significantly* does - *fluid drag*. But *fluid drag* can be very complicated. Sometimes it can greatly "resist" the *motion* of *objects*, and other times not enough to really notice, especially over shorter *distances*. It all depends on both the *fluid* and the *object* in *motion* in it. If, for example, 'someone' were to simultaneously drop a large and small cannon ball through *air*, the *fluid drag* over 'shorter distances' would be 'visually insignificant'. They would appear to hit the ground at the same time. Really. In fact it's a famous old experiment,



attributed to the renowned 17th Century Italian scientist, who is called the "father of observational astronomy", the "father of modern physics", the "father of the scientific method", as well as the "father of science" itself, Galileo Galilei, who supposedly "dropped a cannonball and a musketball simultaneously from a tower, and observed that they hit the ground at nearly the same time. This contradicted Aristotle's long-accepted idea that heavier objects fell faster." However as there is "no historic evidence", it's really just a "legend" that Galileo carried out this experiment atop Italy's famous **Leaning Tower of Pisa** (photo, p.117).

So I'm guessing it would probably take a drop of thousands of feet to witness the smaller one—the one experiencing less *fluid drag*—land before the larger, heavier one. And this would be because the smaller one has a little less *form drag*, *form drag* being just one of the many possibly *factors* involved with the *total fluid drag*. Another *factor* is more easily identified if these cannon balls were 'rough-surfaced' (or less *aerodynamic*) instead of 'smooth-surfaced' (or more *aerodynamic*). Then they would both have more *friction drag*, with the larger one by far having the most since it has *significantly* more *surface area*, which should further increase the difference in their landing times, but still only 'visibly' if falling far enough, and only with all this experimentation happening in *calm weather*. And in *calm water* we would get similar results except it would be called *hydrodynamics* instead or *aerodynamics*.

And again, there are many other possibly *significant factors* in *total fluid drag*, but imagine a 'smooth-surfaced' *rock* versus a 'dry' *leaf*, (an example of a big difference in both *form* and *friction drag*, as well as in *density*), *falling* through *air* or

water, along with some swirling *wind* or *current* that can create *lift*, and other possible *factors* in *total fluid drag*. And I mean that apparently—and whether ‘heavier’ or ‘lighter’—more *aerodynamic* or *hydrodynamic* (‘less bulky’ or *low form drag* and/or ‘smoother-surfaced’ or *low friction drag*) *sediment*, some of it *falling* in *water* near 20 *miles* or more to the Genesis rock—**remember?**—apparently experienced less *total fluid drag* to oppose its *fall*, including being less affected by any *lift* caused by *turbulence*, and so reached ‘Genesis-rock-bottom’ first.

And so this ‘partial wild goose chase’ comes to an end. But what was it again? To over-simply summarize—which at this point is the best I can do—apparently, and regardless of its *density* or *weight*, the ‘more streamlined’ and/or ‘smoother-surfaced’ *sediment* fell faster than the ‘less streamlined’ and/or ‘rougher-surfaced’ *sediment*, and that is, if I’m indeed **‘rightly handling’** these particular **ordinances of...earth**.

But I didn’t mean that ‘the pendulum’ can’t ‘swing back the other way’ too, because it also occurs to me that, in general, more *dense materials* tend to be ‘smoother-surfaced’, and would therefore tend to *fall* faster in *fluid*, and no, not because they’re ‘heavier’ and ‘accelerate faster by gravity’, but because they’re naturally more *fluid-dynamic* or ‘smoother surfaced’ and as a result experience less *friction drag*, and that is, if not also poorly *fluid-dynamically* shaped, and therefore experience more *form drag*. And this additional ‘teeter-tottering’ with **precepts** should **‘shew you’** that our journey to **understand** *settling sediments* must become increasingly complicated, just as our journey to **understand** the concept of ‘gravity’ has become, and it should remind you that **truly** all of God’s **ways** are **passed** fully **finding out**.

However the point here is that different *sediments* must somehow ‘naturally’ have *fallen out* at different ‘speeds’, and landed at *significantly* different times, especially if *falling* long *distances*, which most of them did. Some *sediments* fell for *miles*.

Remember *sedimentary rock* is estimated to be up to 19 to 24 *miles* deep in places. And be assured that the ‘glass bathtub experiment’ is real – I’ve seen a version of it done – which **sheweth** us that if you can see such separations in the *settling* of *sediments* in the *depth* of a ‘bathtub’, then the *settling* of *sediments* down to the Genesis rock could have been really ‘spaced out’. I mean it should have taken days to weeks for each *layer* to separately *settle*, and that only after the evidently ‘firehose-like’ *turbulence* of these **waters**—the ‘firehose’ being the **‘sky windows’** and **‘water storehouse fountains’**, along with some **‘sloshing and pushing’** of these **waters** by Mercury, altogether evidently making *sediment* out of all the Genesis topsoil—finally ceased, and **the waters** began to calm, and the various *sediments* began to *settle* at their differing rates

And if you’re up to speed on this ‘rollercoaster ride’, or ‘whitewater rafting adventure’, if you prefer, you might be experiencing—if just metaphorically—something like the *fluid drag* one feels on their face, hair, and raised arms while riding a rollercoaster, or as they with two hands hoist up their oar above their head while riding through ‘white water’, and in either case, scream. And yeah, it could not be more appropriate, when you’re overwhelmed by such awesomeness of God, that you spontaneously, even like we have heard that Creation itself will sometimes do,

O clap your hands, all ye people; shout unto God with the voice of triumph. For the LORD most high is terrible; he is a great King over all the earth [Psa 47:1-2](#).

And see also [Psalm 5:11-12 and Isaiah 12:6](#), or **'better'** yet, you could just concordance search **shout, shouteth, shouted** and **shouting**, as well as **cry, crieth** and **crying**, etc, to find other verses that apply here. Of course maybe you also noticed this could involve some especially vigorous **singing**, I mean even to the point of **shouting**, too.

Another thing Dr. Velikovsky's observations suggest here is that he saw more of this 'lack of uniformity' in the "Geologic Column" than I gave him credit for, because he seems to be seeing a lot of 'irregularly laid' *sediment* here, though I may have otherwise fairly misjudged him because, not losing track of reality, I see that he, along with other *evolutionists*, apparently overlooked the impossibility of both any 'uniformity' or 'irregularity', and I mean above *sea level*, that is, in the "timescale" they 'mis-imagined'. I mean I wonder if Dr. Velikovsky—or *evolutionists* in general—ever really considered how miles of any 'sediment' actually accumulated, even 'catastrophically', and remained on top of predominantly 'dry ground', and that is, above *sea level*, when all 'dry ground' is now only being—in the 'evolutionary mind-set'—very quickly 'washed' by *rain* and *rivers* back below *sea level*, and will at the present rate be all *underwater* in less than a couple dozen million years. This should mean that—after that 'mis-imagined time' of the 'introduction' of enough *water*, supposedly, according to Dr. Velikovsky, mostly from Saturn, and supposedly "earlier", which again we will consider further next section—there would only be 'ground' above *sea level* for several million years at a time thereafter, and that is, only for a relatively 'short time' after each 'visitor' came by to raise some 'dry ground' back up above *sea level*. I mean he apparently thought that such significant enough 'ground raising' only happened once in a 'ridiculously long time', and hopefully was unaware, (by compartmentalizing, or worse, by ignoring), that such intervals are way too long to have prevented just *rain* and *rivers* from keeping the planet, for the much greater majority of the time, *submerged*. And I mean that any amount of 'dry ground raised' *above sea level* should only remain *so* a little more than several million years at a time, which is almost no time compared to how long he implies there was between new supposed 'ground-raising catastrophes'.

So I can only hope he wasn't aware that scientist now know, (though those that do compartmentalize, or worse, and worse than ignore too), that all the ground that is presently above *sea level* should have been 'washed' *underwater* around 3 times since the end of the supposed "period" when the *dinosaurs* are thought to have 'roamed the Earth'. However Dr. Velikovsky knew that we've only had these larger 'Venus-class' *mountains*—to start 'washing underwater'—a very few thousand years now. So there's no 'uniformity' or 'irregularity' to see in the *sedimentary layers* really, just the remaining **work of God** from Creation Week supporting it all—the remaining Genesis rock—and the **works** of His **'great' instruments of death** since then, that is, of Mercury, Venus and Mars, and all this in much less than the time it would take for just *rain* and *rivers* to 'wash' all *land* entirely *underwater* even once.

Elaborating about this "Ordovician time" or "period" of major *sediment accumulation* over not all, but major portions of the Earth, and if not helping us with accurate scientific interpretation, at least some more with 'relatively accurate' scientific evidence, Dr. Velikovsky added that,

In the beginning of that period [which is supposedly the result of another 'visitor' or 'visit', as well as another quantity of *water* somehow reaching Earth from Saturn], "the marine waters also spilled over and at times spread widely across the central and eastern part of the United States." Later in that period [-

evidently mis-imagining maybe the continued contributions of Saturn and/or a different 'visitor' or 'visitation' -] "a vast sea spread southward from the Arctic across central Canada to join the southern embayments that occupied much of the United States [all of which I'm imagining as simply evidence of the rising and receding **flood of waters**]." Mountains were rising, folding, and overthrusting, in the so-called Taconian disturbance [and in all The Visits of The Planets]...

The Appalachian Mountain Range has several 'branches', some of which are thought to have been 'raised', or 'further raised', by the "so-called Taconian disturbance", now known as the "Taconic Disturbance" or "Taconic Orogeny", (*orogeny* the new word for 'mountain-raising').

And "overthrusting" is when *mountains* literally 'extend' themselves so much—other than only just vertically—that they literally fall over, or are 'pulled over', on their sides. But I don't see Mercury as having the "pull" to accomplish a lot of this. So the laying of this Ordovician *sediment* probably does not really correspond to the "time" when all this "overthrusting" occurred, nor to a little 'later', on The 2nd Visit of Mercury, when 'he' could have passed over nearly the same *ground* as on 'his' 1st Visit, *ground* that would have been somewhere near last to be *submerged*, and therefore likely remaining dry on The 2nd Visit, with the 'later pulls' possibly 'further extending' some of what the 'earlier pulls' started. And I will elaborate on the possibility of the 'near-identical passes' a little further shortly.

And Venus does not seem to be directly involved in this particular *orogeny*, because *peaks* in the Appalachians are not "Venus class", averaging only about 3,000 feet high, with the highest less than 7,000 feet, which makes me think that they could have been the result partly of the original **work** of Mercury at the time the *sediment* was being 'laid', but maybe also the 'later' **work** of 'his' 2nd Visit too, and maybe also—or instead—added to by the even 'later' comparable 'pull' of Mars, especially at certain points of the intersections of their paths, like over that approaching 7,000-foot peak, with the also likely 'washing away' of parts of these *mountains* happening because of the **work** of both Venus and Mars, including the 'cutting' of river canyons through these likely originally 'Mercury-raised', but maybe also 'later' somewhat further 'Mars-raised' *mountains*, though again, altogether involving much less "overthrusting", etc., than 'direct overpasses' of Venus would cause.

However some think the Appalachians use to be as high as the 'Venus-class' Rocky Mountains or the Alps but were since 'eroded away' to their present lower elevations. And maybe enough *orbits* of Mercury and/or Mars could have accomplished such 'lifting', because the surrounding *highlands* that border the various higher *ranges* are filled with the *sediments* that are supposed to be 'washed' from these higher *ranges*. But I'm thinking it must have been Venus that did most of this 'eroding', and that if it did significantly 'erode' these *mountains* by 'washing a lot of water over them', I'm guessing it wasn't 'in position' to also further 'raise' them too.

And apparently *evolutionists* have generally changed their minds, or maybe are now disputing whether this now "so-called Taconian disturbance", "Taconic Disturbance", or "Taconic Orogeny" occurred "in Ordovician time", because some now apparently instead 'mis-teach' that it took place more recently, 'mis-imagining' this Appalachian Mountains-raising event as occurring in the Devonian Period, while apparently others agree with Dr. Velikovsky that this 'mountain-raising' happened in the Ordovician Period. And yeah, I'm as sure as the Apostle James would be that some of this must just be **'fleshly warring'**. But evidently this "disturbance" or

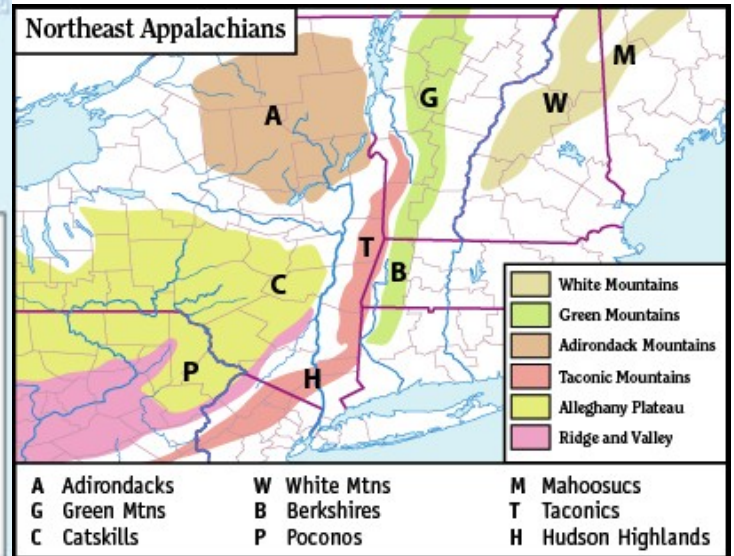
“orogeny” is, to at least some *evolutionists*, no longer thought to have happened nearly half a billion years ago, but now supposedly just 250–350 million years ago, being associated with—or confused with—for example, the ‘raising’ of the Catskills Mountains, which is the location where supposedly a former northeast-flowing *river delta* was ‘lifted’, after which it is further mis-imagined by *evolutionist*—whenever they think it happened—that ‘uniformitarian erosion’ slowly ‘dissected’ the resulting *plateau* into *mountains*. But of course this too was accomplished so much faster than even ‘normal’ *rain* and *rivers* can ‘wash’ *land underwater*, that is, all within a couple millennia after The 1st Visit of Mercury, and not just by the ‘pull’ of Mercury and/or Mars, but also by the ‘**water-and-ice works**’ of Venus too, and likely with some further assistance, more with just ‘**ice works**’, by Mars.

And by-the-way, I’m also sure that the only way you will come to the conclusion that any part

of the *theory of evolution* is not in some way disputed is to only listen to one *evolutionist*, and even this is no guarantee. Of course the same is **shamefully** true of the many conflicting Christian ‘doctrines’ both within and without the many Christian ‘denominations’. Still I can encourage you to **fret not**, because as surely as all **doctrines of devils** one day will **not be remembered, nor come into mind**, so surely one day will **the unity of the faith** of The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ be **established**—or **stablished**. And more ‘**encouraging**’ than that, the main **purpose**—and I **believe** God’s **purpose**—of the next **study**, which I **warn** you again we won’t be ready for until we get there, is to ‘**finish establishing**’ the ‘**perfect doctrine**’ that we apparently now still lack, that is, **The Perfect Principles of The Doctrine of Christ**, wherewith and finally **the unity of the faith** may **rightly** begin, and ‘**God willing and permitting**’, as I **hope**, before The Rapture. But I also **warn** you that if you are **not able to bear** the **perfect** or ‘**spiritually mature**’ **rightly dividing** and **handling** of just **the ordinances of heaven and earth**, then what makes you think you can **bear** the ‘**perfect rightly dividing and handling**’ of what The Church of Jesus Christ, let alone what **The Fellowship of The Kingdom of God must begin** to be.

But there may be something we can **learn** from the ‘evolutionary perspective’ here, with their ‘replacement’ of this “Taconic Disturbance” from “Ordovician time” to the ‘later’ Devonian Period, that is, placing it about a couple hundred million years later. What? They may be seeing that there is evidence of the ‘sequence of events’, which to us may be useful for clues that, along with those Bible stories, can help us ‘**increasingly better rightly divide and handle**’ our perspectives of God’s uses of His **ordinances of heaven and earth**. And I mean we should become ‘**increasingly able to discern both good and evil**’, or in this case, ‘**discern both right and wrong**’ perspectives, and increasingly even ‘**the degree of right and wrong**’.

And to get you started with a **'speculative exercise'**—or you could call it **'speculative meditation'**, and you should do increasingly more **meditation** along these **'lines'** so that you will be **able** to **'increasingly better understand'** what I mean—take a look at the **Map of the Great Appalachian Valley** (left)—which is really a system of valleys—and also the **Map of the Northeast**



Appalachians (right) on p.120. On both maps I see both 'long and narrow' and 'long and wide' *mountain ranges* (designated by the unnumbered colored regions in the "Valleys" map, and by the lettered and colored regions in the "Mountains" map), both of them seemingly *mapping* the resulting *topography* created by the various 'passes' of Mercury, and maybe also of Mars, over this region, though evidently also showing evidence of the *erosion* finally caused by both Venus and Mars too. And to oversimplify the case, and my **'speculation'** —it's really just the next **'level'** of my **'asking, seeking and knocking'**, after all—in the "Valleys" map I suspect that the (purple and reddish) relatively 'narrow' *ranges* are 'split' by a long (pink) *valley* in the center that I'm guessing may have been the result of at least 2 'near identical', but 'slightly-west-to-east-shifted passes' of Mercury and/or Mars, that is, where the "Escarpments & Ridge mountains", (*cliffs & steep ground* marked by a dotted line on the "Valleys" map), on the left side of this *valley* indicate one of more 'orbital lines' just to the west side of this *valley*, and one or more 'orbital lines' just to the east or right side, that altogether 'split' these mountains along the "Escarpments and Ridge mountains" and altogether 'pulled apart' that "great valley" eastward, and where the 'wide' surrounding, lower (greenish) "Plateaus" are possibly also the result of a passing or two of Mercury and/or Mars, but also the result of the *sediment eroded* from the formerly *higher ranges* by both Venus and Mars, which I would guess also helped deepen and widen the "Valleys", and except that at the northern end of this "Great" valley, where it ends along the eastern border of the State of New York, and finally where it just enters Canada, where evidently the *above sea level* 'splitting work' ends, I suppose I'm seeing a tighter convergence of the 'lifting work' of Mercury and/or Mars. And so yes, maybe I'm seeing the 'narrower' **work** of Mercury with the 'wider' **work** of Mars over similar 'passing lines', along with the 'river-valley-cutting', and 'plateau-piling-with-eroded-sediments' **work** of both Venus and Mars too. And again, I just mean that maybe it's something like that.

And I also hear that it is believed that *high viscosity* ('thicker') *magma* makes for 'steeper-sloped' *mountains*. And so I'm thinking, though even Dr. Velikovsky probably never considered this, that more or less *viscous* ('thick') *magma* may at least sometimes be the result of the different kinds of 'pull' on Earth's *crust*, that is, that more *viscous magma* may be more commonly the result of the 'pull' of a *more dense planet*, that is, one with a 'more concentrated pull', with less *viscous magma* being more commonly the result of a *less dense planet* with a 'less concentrated pull', Mercury being smaller but more *dense*, and Mars being larger but less *dense*.

But surely there are innumerable factors involved here, and many other '**seemingly right scenarios**' we could consider, so I just mean that, at least for us, it's all fair speculation, but also that it could possibly eventually lead to '**provable revelations**', though ones that too often even 'top' Christian *geologists* or *astronomers* 'don't even have a prayer of a chance' of getting, not in this present '**incarnation**' anyway. And the same goes for most all of the '**proved perfect doctrine of God**', as well as for most all the so far still '**high-level speculative doctrine**' in this *study*. And I mean that such '**higher and deeper knowledge**' must remain beyond the reach of any who do not *continue* to '**rightly study**' to **know the truth**. And yeah, this means that really both the **lost** as well as too many Christians, by...

Professing themselves to be wise, they became [and remain] **fools**
[Rom 1:22](#).

They remain fools because **they remain ignorant** by '**mis-imagining reality**', and not just by '**misunderstanding**' **the ordinances of heaven and earth**, but also to some degree by '**mis-imagining**' at some '**level**' virtually **all things that pertain unto life and godliness**, the real **danger** being that they do so while not even knowing that they are doing little to nothing to '**correct, improve and expand**' their '**deceived perspectives**', being mostly to entirely unaware that there is really just '**one way**' to begin to '**renew and transform their minds**' from what otherwise is '**naturally**' really just a '**head full of seemeth-right ideas**', and which are really only **the ways of death**, though and nevertheless '**the Spirit is withstanding**', especially where **the blood of Christ** is applied, but those who remain ignorant of **whom God shall... teach knowledge** may at best only just get through that '**works-trying fire**', in which they will **suffer** up to total **loss** of any **reward**, or **honour**, let alone any **eternal weight of glory**. And certainly any Christian who you can regularly **find** "passing up opportunities to meditate in God's Word" are the ones we will eventually **see, then face to face**, to be not so much **blessed** as they thought they were going to be, that is, after their **lord when he cometh shall find** [them] **so doing**. And of course I mean, yet again, that it's **better**—that is, a '**better resurrection**'—to **awake to righteous** by **the knowledge of God** sooner than later.

And Dr. Velikovsky saw 'scenarios' of his own, including 'actions' happening in this supposed much earlier "Ordovician time" of 'fast' *sediment accumulation* and 'mountain-raising', adding,

This [supposed Ordovician 'sediment-laying cataclysm', that was certainly really only a part of The 1st

Visit of Mercury,] was accompanied by ['Mercury-class'] volcanic activity. Ash fell from Alabama to New York [- the length of the Appalachian Mountain Range], "and even [drifted] as far west as Wisconsin, Minnesota, and Iowa." The ash beds [within and/or atop this *layer*] vary in thickness from a few inches to

more than seven feet. "The greatest display of volcanic activity, however, is found farther to the northeast, in Quebec and Newfoundland," where volcanic tuff [- again, a mix of *lava*, *ash* and *sedimentary rock* -] of great thickness represents the epoch [- and that is, this "tuff" is within and/or atop this Ordovician *layer*].

And yes, he's evidently talking about "ash beds" and "tuff"—both containing formerly *airborne volcanic ash*—that end up within or atop this 'second-from-the-bottom' Ordovician Layer, and therefore underneath the 'third-from-the-bottom' Silurian Layer, the 'apparent mystery' of which we'll confront soon enough. Next let's allow Dr. Velikovsky to further 'pile on'. And I mean next he addressed his perspectives of the fate of *lifeforms* more or less *fossilized* inside this layer, which we **know** must have lived before The Flood really. So he'll unwittingly be telling us about a "time" when we don't need any 'pole shifting' to account for *tropical lifeforms* being buried in Arctic Regions, because Earth before The Flood was a natural and total *greenhouse*, with an entirely *tropical climate*. But from Dr. Velikovsky's perspective,

At the same time coral reefs [*buried* in this *layer*] were built in [presently] arctic Canada, from Alaska to Manitoba, as well as in Newfoundland and northern Greenland [- *coral* that, besides being limited to regions that are both *submerged* and appropriately *shallow*, maybe otherwise was limited in the Pre-Flood World to certain latitudes too, but this much more likely due to competition with other *species*, or other factors, rather than because of *climate*, huh]. Indications of an ice age (tillites [- *glacial drift* consisting of varying mixtures of *frozen* or formerly *frozen clay*, *sand*, *gravel*, and *boulders*]) are found [in this *layer* too] in northern Norway [though this may be because this *layer* was later exposed and shifted into this 'borderline' Arctic Region by Venus and/or Mars], and [or but] if they are of the same age [that is, "if" the "tillites" were formed in "the same age" that this *layer* was] they certainly present a problem, because of the coral reefs that [just before The Flood] then grew in [what is now] the north...

And he means, among other things addressed with my 'bracketed clarifications', that "if" both this *layer* and the *freezing* of it are equally 'ridiculously old', then *evolutionists* must acknowledge this "ice age" as 'ridiculously old' too. Of course they more likely avoid the need to revise their 'theories', and just add something to their list of necessary things to ignore and hide, you know, all those potential '**ordered steps**' God faithfully keeps offering to turn them around in the **right** direction, a process that too often instead leads to the evidently **predestinated**, metaphorical, 'smoke coming out of their ears', but that, by God's special **mercy** to **his chosen people**, Jews like Dr. Velikovsky should get a second chance at. One way or another this *coral* being *buried* and *frozen* really essentially are "of the same age" since everything Dr. Velikovsky is talking about happened because of the '**visits**' of Mercury through Mars, which is, again, during an "age" of little more than 1 ½ millennia. But we will confront this 'apparent mystery' further soon enough too.

Concerning other *lifeforms buried* in this *layer* at this "time", Dr. Velikovsky only saw that...

...Life was concentrated in water; the sea was inhabited by thousands of species.

Of course the most likely *lifeforms* to be found so abundantly so deeply *buried* in this *layer* would be “sea...species”, just as *land species* are more likely to be found *buried* more shallowly, that is, being from formerly *above-sea-level elevations*, and that is, except for the ones on the Ark.

And **remember** when we’re talking about this Ordovician Period or *layer* we’re really only talking about the ‘earlier period’ of the 150 days it took for all the *sediment* Mercury ‘stirred up’ to *settle out*, and for **the waters** to be **abated** too, along with the original ‘Mercury-class’ *orogeny* (yes, ‘mountain-raising’) that occurred on The 1st Visit of Mercury, though also about some of the things that may or may not have happened to this *layer* on ‘his’ later **visit**, or on the later ‘**visits**’ of Venus and Mars. But when it comes to the actual *settling out* of this—usually—2nd Sedimentary Layer, this is really just a ‘period’ of surely no more than a few weeks, maybe just a few days. And beyond that, apparently Dr. Velikovsky was confusing this “time” with some of the later ‘**visits**’ of Mercury, Venus and Mars, and at the same time didn’t **see** that it altogether happened—from God’s **work** using just these 3 *planets*—‘catastrophically fast’, that is, with a lot fewer ‘disturbances’ than he and other *catastrophic evolutionists* have ‘**mis-imagined**’, as Dr. Velikovsky ‘**misrepresenting**’ their number as a “pageant” of ‘ridiculously spaced-out visitors’.

But it must be time to expose a ‘**mis-imagining**’—in this case a discovered ‘apparent contradiction’—of my own, one I overlooked in the account by Moses of The Flood about when **the waters were abated**, which will expose a few former **errors** in my perspective, ones I have misled you with so far, which can be seen as late as in the previous paragraph (honk, honk!—yeah, it’s not a car horn). What is this not only ‘apparent’ but actual contradiction I overlooked (yes, more than compartmentalized)? To **see** it we’ll need to ‘**handle**’ and ‘**divide**’ the account of The Flood a bit more completely. Starting from the beginning, The Flood began when...

...In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened... [Gen 7:11](#).

And apparently after the previously mentioned **forty days and forty nights** of **rain** [Gen 7:4,12](#), which evidently are included in **the** [also previously mentioned – [Gen 7:24](#)] **hundred and fifty days** **the waters were abated** [Gen 8:3](#), **in the seventh month, on the seventeenth day of the month**—evidently exactly 5 month or 150 days from the start of The Flood—**the ark rested...upon the mountains of Ararat** [Gen 8:4](#). And please check my math.

But we’re told that not until in **the tenth month, on the first day of the month, were the tops of the mountains seen** [Gen 8:5](#). So I’m assuming that they then still couldn’t really see **Ararat** either, as it was beneath them. And don’t be confused that **Ararat** today is almost 17,000 feet high. The present version of it could not be the one they landed on. I mean if it was—it being among the first available for **the ark** to ‘**rest**’ **upon**, along with other ‘**mountain tops**’ that were later **seen**—then it would have been an especially inconvenient place to disembark from at best. And you should **remember** that it must have been originally ‘raised’ by Mercury during The Flood, and **remember** that a *mountain* like Nebo—evidently also ‘raised’ by Mercury—even a 120-year-old, Post-Flood, **prophet** of God could easily enough ascend, and therefore even easier descend, if he was allowed to. So

Noah and crew—veritable ‘supermen’, ‘superwomen’, and ‘superbeasts’, being just out from under the **‘water canopy’**—could have managed the decent from the **‘top’** of a ‘Mercury-class’ *mountain* with ease. And also **remember**, because you now can, that *mountains* as high as **Ararat** is today could not have existed until Venus came along, as we will continue to further consider, especially in **SECTION 8** and **9**.

And evidently from the start of **the tenth month** they waited another **forty days** until **Noah opened the window of the ark** [Gen 8:6](#), and started his ‘bird scouting’ **to see if the waters were abated from off the face of the ground** [Gen 8:8](#). And it took another couple weeks before **the dove** returned a second time with an **olive leaf pluckt off: so Noah** [then] **knew that the waters were abated from off the earth** [Gen 8:11](#). But is it that Noah didn’t have a lateral view from **the window of the ark**? I mean maybe he could only see mostly just upward. But even if so you would think he would have found a way to stick his head out for a better look.

And besides that, it wasn’t until in **the tenth month** that **the tops of the** [other] **mountains** [were] **seen...** And how could he see them if not the **waters** too? Such considerations lead me to think that Noah was still seeing mostly only *water* when **the dove** returned the second time with that **olive leaf**, and that Noah only deduced that *land* must be surfacing somewhere out of sight, other than **the tops of the mountains** that he apparently could see. This ‘waiting/bird-scouting’ period, by-the-way, was apparently about 54 days (40 + 7 + 7), which by my math took them to the 12th month and about the 24th day. And yes, I’m calculating with 30-day months, as I expect they were back then, which we will eventually also further consider.

And so it was, evidently another week later, that...

...in the six hundredth and first year, in the first month, the first day of the month, the waters were [finally visibly] **dried up from off the earth: and Noah removed the covering of the ark, and looked** [having his best view yet], **and, behold, the face of the ground was dry. And** [or but, not until] **in the second month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, was the earth** [finally fully] **dried. And God spake unto Noah, saying, Go forth of the ark, thou, and thy wife, and thy sons, and thy sons’ wives with thee** [Gen 8:13-16](#).

So Noah and his family were on **the ark** for a year and 10 days. Do the math. To do this simple addition just note Noah’s age when The Flood began, and when they disembarked from **the ark**. The details in between are important though. For one thing, it seems to show us that the *sediment* likely only began to settle after the 150 days, not so much during that period. And I mean that the **word, abated**, in its first use in this account ([Gen 8:3](#)), seems to refer to when **the waters** stopped rising, this supposedly after the **‘sky-windows’** were finally finished draining, and after the **‘ground-fountains’** were done ‘erupting’, and when Mercury was through **‘sloshing and pushing the waters’** around. And I mean it seems that only after all of this *turbulence* stopped that the Genesis topsoil finally stopped being stirred up from off the Genesis rock.

And this implies that only the later uses of the **word, abated** ([Gen 8:8&11](#)), instead apply to the “receding” of **the waters**, to when **‘mountain tops’** became visible, and **‘dry ground’** began to increasingly appear, which altogether apparently means, and this is where the math is a little tougher, that it wasn’t until The 6th Month of The Flood that there were calm enough waters for all the *sediments*

to start *settling*, or at least stay *settled*. However the *sediments* having less *fluid drag* apparently *settled out* long before *sediments* that were more affected by it, that is, while ever-decreasing *turbulence* played its role in giving the more *hydrodynamic*—or more ‘lift resistant’—*sediments* an even further ‘head start’ to reach the bottom, that is, by keeping the less *hydrodynamic* ones ‘stirred up’ longer, or at least from remaining fully *settled*.

So again, it appears it wasn’t until **the seventh month** of that **year**—the 150 days apparently ending on **the seventeenth day** of this month—that **the waters were abated** (8:3), or **were** no longer rising and being ‘stirred up’, at which point **next the waters were abated from off the earth** (8:11), or began “receding” **from off the face of the ground** (8:8), allowing the *sediments* to then completely *settle*, that is, other than what would ‘normally’ be ‘stirred up’ from the natural *circulations* of the *oceans* from then on.

And surprise! The English **word, abated**, used three times in Genesis 8, is really two different Hebrew **words** in this chapter. The first is a translation of חָצַר or *chacer*, and the second two are translations of גָּלַל or *galal*. To make a long study short, I again like the English ‘renderings’ of the HCSB version, and in all three verses. This version is now on blbclassic.org. Just click on the blocked “V” next to any verse to see its ‘interpretation’, along with another ‘baker’s dozen’ or so of others, though you should continue to use extra caution with the versions “shown in red and in SMALL CAPS” in the last **study**, and that is, consider them no better than flawed commentaries. And by-the-way, the HCSB fails both “The Psalm 12 Test” and “The Daniel 11 Test”, etc., giving it “red and in SMALL CAPS” status too, so I’ve only so far found it to be a better, flawed, ‘modern translation commentary’ than the others. And I just mean this version may be helpful when it’s not disagreeing with the KJV, you know, when it’s not contradicting God’s **‘for ever kept and preserved pure words’** in English. And it’s time you got over your difficulty with the Old English anyway. I mean the way I look at it, I **see** that nowadays that God is more or less forcing the **perfect** to adapt to Old English as another way He is **trying** us to **see** if **we** really want to **know the truth**. Or you could instead learn Hebrew and Greek if you think that would be faster and easier. For myself I think that would be a **waste** of the precious remaining **time**. And it’s my intention by these **‘studies’** to make it an even bigger waste of time, at least for those who already speak English, I mean unless it’s God’s **purpose** to allow time for a few who **‘master’** these **‘studies’** to translate them into other languages. But besides this, and as I explained in the last **study**, by comparing the various ‘interpretations’ from ‘modern translations’ with the KJV, you can **judge** the ‘top’ Hebrew and Greek scholars—and their **warrings**—quite well. So in the meantime I **believe** I am best **‘redeeming the time’** by **working** with the KJV, that is, **while it is still day**, because I know **the night cometh** [John 9:4](#). And I know that not long after that, **then God will turn**—or is it **return?**—**to us a pure language** [Zep 3:8-9](#).

And you can grapple with a little Hebrew scholarship here too, I mean about the various meanings of these two different Hebrew **words**, that is, considering the context of each of their uses, starting with clicking on the blocked “C” next to each verse, though you can also, in a search of the English **word, abated**, for example, just click those little blue Strong’s Concordance numbers next to the **words**, in this case [H2637](#) and [H7043](#), and maybe like I have, find another case where there seems to be a definition, or at least a specific enough one, missing from the concordance/lexicon.

And surprise again, because here’s where we get a little ‘loopy’, again. And I mean that, besides that you really should be seated for this, and besides that

annoying sound of more 'honking', I should finally admit that I eventually became unsure if the first use of **abated** refers to when the *turbulence* stopped, or instead just to when **the waters** had already "receded" to the point when '**dry ground**' was ready to start appearing. I mean this is another idea I get from the first '**layer**' of this chapter, specifically [Genesis 8:1-3](#), or maybe all the way to Verse 5, the same idea I finally also got from the HCSB's renderings of **abated**. And I mean I no longer think that it was 5 months—or 150 days—before **the waters** 'stopped rising', nor that long before the *turbulence* **abated** either, which implies it didn't really take months to drain the **waters...above the firmament**, nor did Mercury necessarily 'hang around'—*orbiting* Earth, something like our Moon—for months, and therefore didn't for that long continue to '**squeeze and pull water**' out of those '**ground fountains**', nor so long continue to '**push and slosh**' it around faster than most the *sediments* that were 'stirred up' in it could *settle*.

No, I guess it makes more sense that when Moses says in Verse 2,

The fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped, and the rain from heaven was restrained...

...he is not only referring to when **the fountains...of the deep** and **the windows of heaven... stopped**, but he is also implying that Mercury had already '**stopped**' all 'his' '**pushing and pulling**' and had gone too, all of this implying that all the *turbulence* ended at or just following the end of the **forty days of rain**. And in this case the first use of **abated**, in Verse 3, is instead referring to the fact that it took 150 days for **the waters** to be "receded" or "subsided" to the point that '**mountain tops**' were finally ready to be exposed, meaning that **the waters** likely had been "receding" since the end of the **forty days of rain**, and that in the remaining 110 days of The 1st 150 Days of The Flood probably most of the *sediments* found opportunity to *settle*.

And maybe you didn't make some of these **errors** like I did for so long, I mean, if you've even yet decided on a more complete version of this Bible story, let alone can even fully enough yet 'see' one. But if you're more like me, you get to the point where you can't stop going through passages of **scripture** again and again because too often—but not often enough really—you **continue** to discover more flaws and/or oversights in your perspective.

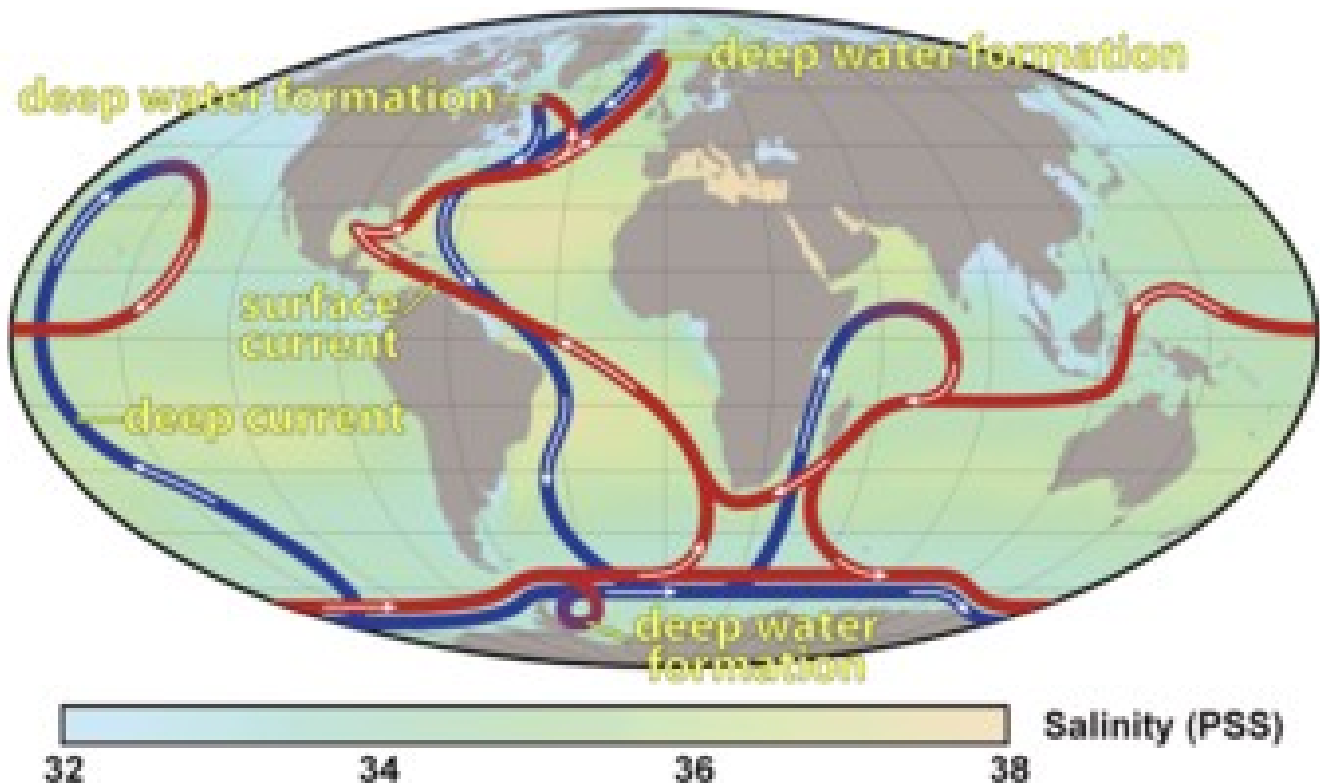
And by-the-way, I'm also seeing another example of the '**layering**' of an account here, it being another example from Moses something like in Genesis 1 and 2. In this case I see three '**layers**': [Genesis 7:12-16](#); [17-24](#) and [Genesis 8](#), that is, where again he starts and/or transitions with verses that give overviews of large portions of the ongoing account, and in between gives the more specific details from the various perspectives. But instead of considering this particular account to have '**layering**', I'd be fine just saying that along the way Moses occasionally 'jumps to the end of the story' before further proceeding with it.

And speaking of "the natural *circulations* of the *oceans* from then on", and that is, besides further 'interruptions' by God's '**great instruments of death**, *deep ocean currents* are 'driven' by *temperature* and *density gradients* (read, *variations*), kind of like how *atmospheric circulation* or *weather* is *driven* by *temperature* and *pressure gradients*, but really *density*, *temperature* and *pressure* work hand in hand in both of these kinds of *fluid circulation*. In both cases *relative heat* expands the *fluid*, decreasing *density* but increasing *pressure*, while *relative cold* contracts the *fluid*, increasing *density* but decreasing *pressure*, the biggest differences between these two types of *fluid circulation* being that *ocean currents* are also made more or less *dense* and *pressurized* by their *salinity gradients*, or by *variations* in *ocean saltiness*. However *significant* enough changes in the concentrations of any *gases* in

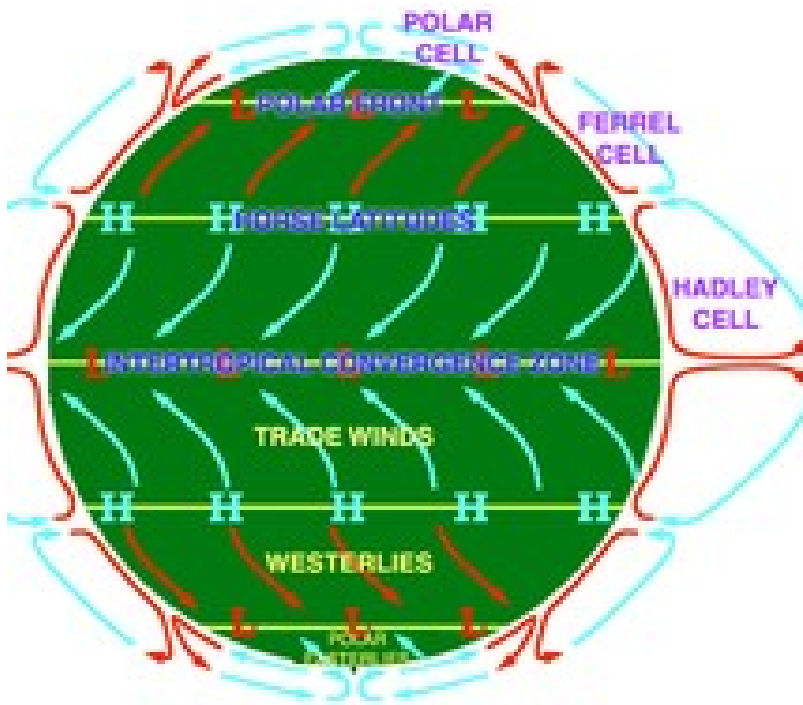
our *atmosphere* can affect the *weather* as well, even as *significant* enough changes in any *chemicals* other than *salt* can further affect *ocean currents*.

This 'greater natural circulation' of *ocean waters*, among the many other lesser kinds, which is commonly referred to as the "conveyor belt" of the *oceans*, is otherwise more technically referred to as the *circulation* caused by relative *heat* or *cold*, and by more or less *salt*, hence the name, *thermohaline circulation*, which otherwise 'operates' by *deep-ocean, density-driven, ocean-basin currents*, that is, by the *circulation* caused when *warmer, less salty, 'closer-to-the-surface' water* is 'sucked'—essentially *siphoned*—to a place where it becomes *climate-cooled* and/or *saltier*, and therefore *more dense*, and *sinks*, and then is 'sucked' along the *ocean floor* to another place where it becomes *climate-warmed* and/or *less salty*, and therefore *less dense*, and *rises*, and so continues this *circular siphoning cycle*. These *circulating currents*, called "submarine rivers", are generally not seen on the surface except where there is 'significant upward movement' of *ocean currents*, that is, where *relatively warmer waters* are 'siphoning upward', not so much where they are 'siphoning laterally, nor where *relatively colder waters* are 'siphoning downward', these 'up and down' *movements of currents* known as *upwelling* and *downwelling*. But though *downwelling* is not usually seen on the *surface*, I'm guessing it does dig some 'visible holes' in the bottom, if you get my 'drift', or the ocean's.

And notice by the chart on p.126 that *current circulation* is 'irregular'. This is because it is confined both by *continents* and to *ocean basins*. In other words, it is heavily restricted by *topography*. So to help you get a '**better**' idea of these **ordinances of heaven and earth**, let's also take a look at another 'less-restricted' form of



fluid circulation, and that would be of Earth's Post-Flood *atmospheric circulation*. Earth's *atmosphere*, not being as much restricted by *topography* as its **waters** are, and being a *fluid* too, can show us more about how such *circulating fluids* behave.



The *circular siphoning cycles* of our atmosphere can be said to start when *less dense hot air rises*, e.g., over the Equator, by being ‘sucked’ high into the *atmosphere*, and then both north and south until it routinely finally ‘cools enough’ to ‘sink’ back down, coming down at the 2 **Horse Latitudes** (High pressure) which separate the Tropics from the Subtropics, and from there *air* is ‘sucked’ back to the Equator, where it ‘warms’ and *rises* again, these 2 *tropical Hadley Cells* meeting at the **Intertropical Convergence Zone** (Low pressure) at the *equator*, where they share *rising warm air*, and are 2 of the 6 ‘greater cycles’ of *atmosphere*, Pole

to Pole.

Another pair of *circular-siphoning cycles* just north and south is the *sub-tropical Ferrel Cells*, *circulating* in the opposite direction, and so share *sinking colder air* with the Hadley Cells at the “doldrums”, or at the Horse Latitudes, while the last pair of *cells*, the southern and northern-most **Polar Cells**, ‘in turn’ reverse their *circulation* as well, and share *rising relatively warmer air* with the *sub-tropical Ferrel Cells* at the **Polar Fronts** (also Low pressure). Notice also that *air sinks* over both Poles. And you can see where the *relatively warmest* and *coldest air* is by how high the *warm air rises* in each *cell*. And just to be clearer, each of these 6 *cells* is like a ‘tube’ defined by its *circulating air*, where each of these ‘tubes’ fully ‘ring’ the *planet*, except at the Poles where they more or less ‘cap’ or ‘crown’ the *planet*. See the “idealized” (‘oversimplified’) diagram, [p.127](#).

Of course only the *wind* traveling over the surface is felt by the people on the surface, though there are many other ‘diverting influences’ on the *wind*, like coastal, daily-alternating, morning *land* and evening *sea breezes*, this happening because every day *water rises in temperature slower* but *holds heat longer* than *land* does, or like the effects of the fluctuating bands of *warming* and *cooling Pacific Ocean equatorial waters*, the El Niños, these being just a couple of the other influences complicating overall *atmospheric circulation*.

Another bigger, more regular influence than these is the *angular momentum* or *spin* of the Earth, and the resulting Coriolis Effect or Coriolis Acceleration that generally ‘bends circulating winds’ somewhat from “easterly” or “westerly” origins. The ground-level or *surface easterly winds* happen in the Tropical and Polar Regions. They are called **Trade Winds** in the Tropics, (the *surface Hadley Cell winds*), or individually the Northeasterlies and Southeasterlies. However make sure to notice that “easterly” is describing the direction these *surface winds* are coming from—from the east—not the direction they are blowing. And you can see by the chart that the “easterly” Trade Winds actually generally ‘bend and blow’ west. At the Poles they are called **Polar Easterlies**, (the *surface Polar Cell winds*), again because in these *cells* the *surface winds* generally come from the East and ‘bend and blow’ west. The ‘great cycle’ *surface westerly winds* happen only in the Subtropics. They are called the **Westerlies** (or Antitrades or Prevailing Westerlies), or individually the Northwesterlies and the Southwesterlies, and they generally

originate in the West and 'bend and blow' east. And yes, the 'spin of the earth', along with the directions these *winds* in their *cells* are being *siphoned*, and whether higher in the *atmosphere* or on the surface, give them their "easterly" or "westerly" 'slants'. And you should try to imagine those 'higher-in-the-atmosphere' *winds* too, which 'blow' in the opposite direction of the *surface winds*, and 'bend' in the opposite direction too, on their more or less *circular* paths.

Why? Well, you might remember that we have already determined somewhere along the way that there is no 'why' really, except that ***'In the beginning God created the ordinances of heaven and earth'*** to *work* like they now *work*. So the question can only really be, how? Or how do ***the ordinances of heaven and earth*** 'work together' to make this happen. Well, best as I ***understand***, it apparently has to do with the fact that the ground at the Equator is spinning at over 1000 mph, but at points 1 mile from either pole at only about ¼ mph. So apparently *winds* that are experiencing increasing angular momentum (*spin*), that is, *winds* that are 'blowing' toward the Equator, *convert* and use that added *energy* to *accelerate* in the *direction* of the *spin*, while *winds* that are experiencing decreasing angular momentum, that is, *winds* that are 'blowing' toward the Poles, *convert* and use that loss of energy to *decelerate* in the opposite *direction* of the *spin*. And to be clearer, this Coriolis Acceleration and Deceleration doesn't so much affect *wind speed*, but mostly only just changes the *direction* that the *wind* 'blows', though surely a lot of other ultimately ***'unsearchable'*** factors are involved in all this too.

And by-the-way, the source I found informed me that the *circumference* of the Earth at the Equator is 24,901 *miles*. Accepting this number as accurate, the *velocity* of the *ground* at the Equator is 24,901 *miles* ÷ 24 *hours* = 1,037.54 *mph*. But I did the math for the *velocity* of the *ground* near the Poles for myself. Specifically, the *velocity* of the *ground* a *mile* from either *pole* is [2 x 3.14 x 1 *mile*] ÷ 24 *hours* = .26 *mph*—because the *circumference* of any *circle*, or the *distance* around its border, is *equal* to 2 x *pi* x the *radius*, or **2 π r**, where *pi* = 3.14 (or more accurately, 3.1415926535..., which, though it has been calculated beyond a million digits without repetition of sequences, and apparently could be infinitely further, uh-huh, is usually thought to be *significantly* enough rounded to the nearest hundredth, or to 3.14), and where the *radius* is the *distance* from the *center* of any *circle* to its border. Further—and though it's attributed to an Ancient Greek mathematician, I mean I'm sure **Adam** figured this out too—the *length* of the *radius*, which is half the distance across a circle, is needed exactly 3.14 times to 'circumnavigate' exactly half way around any *perfect circle*, no matter what its size. The *diameter* of any *circle* then, or any *line* going from border to border inside a *circle* that intersects its center, would therefore be needed exactly 3.14 times to entirely 'circumnavigate' the *circle*. This means the *radius* is needed 6.28 times to completely 'circumnavigate' any *circle*; hence the popularly used *formula* for its *circumference* is **2 π r**, though another correct *formula* would be "pi" times the *diameter*, or **π d**, (where the algebraic convention is that numbers and other symbolic values that are simply adjacent to each other are meant to be multiplied together). But why is the *radius* used when the *diameter* is a simpler *formula*? Well, it has to do with the usefulness of the *radius* in other *formulas* involving circles, like the *area* of a *circle*, **π r²**, or the *volume* of a *sphere*, **4/3 π r³**, or *cylinder*, **π r² h** (where **h** is the *height*), or *cone*, **π r² h/3**, all of which and more I'm sure **Adam** figured out too.

By-the-way, there is mention in my encyclopedia that some Egyptologist have asserted that "ancient Egyptians used an approximation of **π** as 22/7 (3.142857..., yes, quite '*significantly*' close enough) from as early as the Old Kingdom", and

therefore **Moses**, who you should remember **was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians**, surely knew and used it. But why they now use the letter in the Greek alphabet, “pi” (π) to identify this mathematical relationship between the *radius* or *diameter* of a *circle* and its *circumference* I don’t really know, except that, also according to my encyclopedia, it evidently started in the early 18th century, not long after Sir Isaac ‘co-invented’ Calculus which made further calculations of “pi” possible, and except that the use of Greek letters for *mathematical variables* and *constants* has been popular for some time. But since they never decide to use Hebrew letters instead, my speculations about such things, and that would be about **worldly** ‘scientist’ and ‘mathematicians’ in general, are, as you should know by now, not flattering, even to the Ancient Greeks, who surely no more than ‘re-pioneered’ such *mathematical concepts*. And I mean I see using Greek letters in mathematical expressions as just another way for the **ungodly to deny...God**, and to express their ‘faith’ in their ‘religion’, which has more recently been called Secular Humanism.

And speaking of ‘pioneering’, I see yet another important factor in these ‘great cycles’ of *atmosphere*. And I mean I’ve never heard this ‘supplementary idea’ elsewhere, and it doesn’t seem to be in my favorite encyclopedia, so I may be—kind of like Dr. Velikovsky with his *atomic magnetic forces*—a ‘pioneer’ with this one, though we’re both surely really just ‘re-pioneering’ too (PIRE), but I nonetheless **believe** that another of the more *significant* and *constant* influences ‘containing’ *these* ‘great cycles’ must be Earth’s Magnetic Field, that is, I think it is responsible for these ‘subdivided’ *circulations* of *atmosphere*, and also that without it we would have at most a ‘two cell system’, one north of the Equator and the other south, making much longer-traveling *surface winds*, resulting in intolerable *surface wind speeds*, and that is, at least for as long as the *atmosphere* lasted. But the only evidence I can offer for this, which I did find in my favorite encyclopedia, is that **Mars**, with a nearly identical *axis tilt* as Earth, and



therefore similar seasons, but a very *weak magnetic field*, and a very *thin*, mostly CO₂ *atmosphere*—though it is measured to be increasingly *thinning* due to *solar wind*, by-the-way—has periodic, ‘worldwide’, great “**dust storms**” that freely engulf the entire *planet*, while conversely—with a *strong magnetic field*—**Jupiter** displays that famous, centuries-old, ‘big red storm’ that doesn’t move much, let alone across the entire planet. And Jupiter’s *weather* is, “visibly segregated into several bands at different latitudes, resulting in turbulence and storms along their interacting [cell] boundaries”, the presently longest lasting one being the “**Great Red Spot**” [telescopic photos, p.129].

And all of this leads me to identify yet another of God’s ‘**saving graces**’, another of which we may ‘**endlessly continue**’ to ‘**search out**’, that is, just in God’s design of Earth’s Magnetic Field alone. And though most of these **thoughts** and **ways** must remain ‘**too high for us**’, as well as **for ever** remain **past ‘fully’ finding out**—because in all of time we will only be **able** to begin to investigate the **works** of The Infinite One—still we can expect that in every ‘**ordered step**’ up this ‘**endless staircase of understanding**’ that we will ‘**continually and increasingly come to new revelations**’, and on each occasion find another opportunity to ‘**praise and thank**

and glorify and sing unto God', and don't you forget it, I mean, as if from now on you will ever be able to.

The admitted conjecture in my encyclopedia, by-the-way, is that Mars used to have a *denser atmosphere* and a *stronger magnetic field* to protect it, but that it "lost its magnetosphere 4 billion years ago possibly because of numerous asteroid strikes". Well, it was something like that, huh. But you'd think it would be obvious that it can't have been that long ago or the *atmosphere* wouldn't just be thin, but long, long gone, and probably a lot of the *topsoil* too. But we **know** that this is not obvious to most. And we **know** this because of That **man** Who **offered one sacrifice for sins for ever**, and by The Spirit of God He sent us, but also by our **diligent** and **fervent**, even also **vehement** and **zealous** response to His '**work mightily performed in us**' to **continue in His word**, and in His **work**, and that **unto perfection**, that is, because each of us have become an '**unashamed**', **approved...workman**. So most have no **way** of **seeing** this so clearly, including too many Christians, because only those who have '**perfect understanding**' with '**approved spiritual maturity**' are the most **able** to **see** how...

...the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them [2Co 4:4](#).

But you should also **know** that it is not just Satan doing the '**blinding**'. God too eventually **shall** again **send...strong delusion** to those who for too long **received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved** [2Th 2:1-12](#). And it is God's **work** that those continually **speaking lies in hypocrisy** will eventually experience **their conscience seared with a hot iron** [1Ti 4:1-2](#), except they won't even know that, since they refused to **retain God in their knowledge**, that He finally **gave them over to a reprobate mind** [Rom 1:28](#), where there is no longer any **hope** that **the light of the glorious gospel of Christ** might **shine unto them** anymore. And we **know** that even God's people the Jews, whenever they are **stiffnecked** and **forget God** and **would not hear...the word of the LORD**, eventually must, by ignoring and/or misusing **the word of the LORD**, **fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken** [Isa 28:9-13](#). And how much more must this be the case with **the church of God...in Christ**, where we are told that **in it judgment must begin** [1Pe 4:17](#), that is, on that **day** and in that **fire of the judgment seat of Christ** ([1Co 3:10-15](#); [Rom 14:10](#); [2Co 5:10](#)), which is another of the '**many infallible proofs**' that there really will be a '**pretribulation rapture**', by-the-way. But I will also again be careful to remind you to **be mindful** of what is God's perspective and of what it ours.

And also by-the-way, I suspect there is another reason why Jupiter's 'big red storm' is entirely restricted to its 'fixed spot', while its 'lesser storms' seem only to be restricted to within their 'band boundaries', this reason being the same one for its unique shade of red, about which we'll '**reason together**' further too, especially in [SECTION 8](#) and [9](#).

And speaking of those '**endless and fully unsearchable things**' that we nonetheless '**continue in searching out**', and about that I may be a 'pioneer' of such 'missions', I say that it is my experience that I truly am one, that is, in The Word of God, and **hope to for ever** be so. And I'm not just talking about being a 'pioneer' in this present Creation's **ordinances of heaven and earth**, nor just in the **things that pertain unto life and godliness** here and now, but also about already being one in the **ordinances and things** that are **to come** in The Fellowship of Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ, which you should already **know**

has already begun *in* us. And yes, by a 'pioneer' I mean I have been and will **continue** to be one of the very few of the **few** who by The Spirit will be **first**—besides Jesus—to **know** God's '**next ordered revelations**' of His '**higher thoughts and ways**', and therefore to be **first** to **do** the resulting **greater things** that must naturally **accompany** such '**higher knowledge**'. And I mean that, having for so long experienced **the zeal of the lord of hosts** that **worketh in 'me' mightily**, I find myself now '**relentlessly**' committed ^{G4100: G3872} to **continue** in this '**eternal work to know God**', that is, to remain among the '**diligently zealous**' who **searcheth the deep things of God** on the 'cutting edge' of The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God through The Word of God. Decided whether or not you're going to be one of the '**higher**' **partakers of the divine nature** with me? If so you should also **know** by now that it must eventually be I with you too. Either that or you're likely to get all your '**highest revelations**' at best 'secondhand', huh.

And finally 'cycling back' to that '2nd-from-the-bottom', so-called Ordovician Layer for one more brief 'visit', **remember** that everything now 'recorded' in it didn't happen in just a year and 10 days, but mostly all happened in less than a couple millennia, that is, most of it was God's **work** using Mercury, Venus and Mars, with nothing comparable happening in the approaching 3 millennia since, and with only about another millennia and a half otherwise that preceded these "great catastrophes", that is, only the 1656 years from the literal week-long, '**abracadabra creation of heaven and earth**' to the time God **used** Mercury to help **bring** The Flood.

And that about covers everything, and not just of Mankind's history, but also of that of the Angels, yes, which I imagine includes The Creation of the Angels too, which, though apparently still one of those both '**dark glass**' and '**unlawful-to-utter**' topics ([1Co 13:12](#); [2Co 12:4](#)), I can only guess happened at the start of Creation Week, or maybe on the 4th Day of Creation Week, when the **stars** were **created** too, these **stars** on that **day** becoming a '**4-dimensional cartographical symbolic representation**', or a '**symbolic space-time map**' of both the Angels and us, as well as a '**4-dimensional cartographical symbolic prophecy**' of how **great**, if at all, each of them and us will ultimately become, with our original ancestors, Adam and Eve, evidently both '**pre-symbolized**' and '**symbolized**' with a couple of these literal **stars**, or *galaxies*, or *galaxy clusters*, too, and being **created** literally 2 **days** later.

And I mean I'm guessing, but arguably deducing, that this '**space-time map**', and the ongoing changes happening to it, somehow involve the '**present symbolizing**' of **angels** and **people**, including '**stational symbolizing**' of their 'roles in the big picture', and **whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers**, and with all this also somehow 'interwoven' into '**prophetic representations**' of the future too. Again, I just mean somehow. And yes, evidently **Satan** and his **angels**, and all the ultimately Damned get '**4-dimensional symbolic and prophetic stars**' too, though evidently they all at some point get '**cast down**', maybe starting with the ones representing those **angels...cast** into *Tartarus* at the time of The Flood, but surely concluding with the greatest '**casting down of stars**' of all, that is, when **heaven ...shall pass away**, leaving only the '**for-ever-shining**' **stars**, that is, the ones who are not **cast into the lake of fire**, but are instead the '**eternally-luminescent**' Immortal Sons of God.

And by-the-way, I did hear from a pulpit once that The Huguenot Massacre of 1572, when apparently about 100,000 French Protestants were slaughtered by French Catholics, uh-huh, was accompanied by the appearance of 'a new cluster of

stars in the heavens', yes, I assume immediately **'symbolizing'** these particular **martyrs of Jesus**. However in more recent searches I have been unable to re-corroborate the story, or locate these **stars**. But this is part of what I am talking about, and part of how I came to such conclusions about God's **great, 'infinitely big', 'space-time star map'** of **us all**. And remember I have already recommended, along with some necessary **'spiritual filtering'**, a couple of other 'bigger introductions' into how God "somehow" speaks to us through **the stars** that are referenced in **SECTION 4**. And they absolutely are 'introductions' of how to read **'God's Word in the stars'**. And specifically I'm talking about the work of Dr. Joseph Seiss, *The Gospel in the Stars*, (<https://archive.org/details/gospelinstarsorp00seis>), as well as about Attorney Mr. Frederick A. Larson's presentation, *The Star of Bethlehem*, (<http://www.bethlehemstar.net>).

And as Dr. Seiss himself puts it in 1882 (PIRE),

...the constellations and their associated myths and traditions themselves... [not in the later "absurd" myths 'argued' by "infidels" and popularized in "Greece and Rome", but] in the original, [are] from the very same prophetic Spirit that the Sacred Scriptures have come, and... they are a piece with the biblical records in the system of God's universal [and **infinite**] enunciations of the Christ (*Preface*; 5th Edition; underscoring mine, link above).

And **'wow'**—read, **'wonder of wonders'**. I just realized—and I **hope** you're no longer wondering how—the main reason why there are so many stars in the heavens. **Remember** they were created before The Fall, when the Universe could have lasted **for ever**, when the progeny of Adam and Eve still had the potential to be literally innumerable. And I mean I now see the majority of the **stars in the heavens** to be God's **testimony** of Himself, and not just of His **'infiniteness'** and **'omniscience'** (**'all-knowing-ness'**) and **'omnipotence'** (**'all-powerful-ness'**), but also of His **'great faithfulness'**. And I mean the implication from **scripture** is that He **promised** Adam and Eve a **garden to live in for ever**—that is, that they would only **die** if they **shall...eat...of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden**. And God told them to **be fruitful and multiply**, even before they **did eat** that 'forbidden fruit', and before The Fall and **the curse**, which means to me that all the **stars in the heavens** are **testimony** that God could and would have been able to fulfill His **promise** to them, and do so as **'infinitely'** as there are an **infinite** number of **'symbolic stars'** in **the heavens**, and even though He had **predestinated** that this first couple would **eat** and **fall**
[G4098](#); [G3895](#); [G4417](#).

And by-the-way, I don't **believe** there is any end to **the stars**, just as I **believe** that there is no 'end' to **space**, since 'something' has to be on the other side of any 'perceived end'. Though maybe you think there may at some point be a 'transition' to **'early everlasting'**—read, for now, 'extra-dimensional space'. But since I don't **believe** there's an 'end' to the 'extra-dimensional space' God lives in either, I also **believe** that our physical Universe simply exists 'inside' His **'higher'** form of **infinite space**--or inside **'infinite heaven'**. See again [Ephesians 6:12](#) and [Rev 20:11](#) for examples that support this idea. And how could God **'imprison spirits'** inside this present Earth if such 'space' wasn't already 'coexisting' already? So I **believe** it is possible for God to make an **infinite** number of **stars**, etc., to fill **infinite, '4+ dimensional space'**.

And I mean that this Who The Father is. He's not *like* us. And even Jesus declares,

...my Father is greater than I [John 14:28](#).

So I *believe*, representing Himself, that there really are an *infinite* number of *stars*, and that therefore if *sin* hadn't *entered*, Adam's progeny could have been as innumerable as *the stars*, with both *infinite space* and an *infinite number* of "Goldilocks planets" available for them to expand out onto as needed *for ever*.

And yes, *remember* there came a point between *Abraham* (or *Abram*) and *Lot*, when...

...the land was not able to bear them, that they might dwell together: for their substance was great, so that they could not dwell together. And there was a strife between the herdmen of Abram's cattle and the herdmen of Lot's cattle...

And so *Abraham* (still *Abram* at this point) suggested to *Lot*,

Let there be no strife, I pray thee, between me and thee, and between my herdmen and thy herdmen; for we be brethren. Is not the whole land before thee? separate thyself, I pray thee, from me: if thou wilt take the left hand, then I will go to the right; or if thou depart to the right hand, then I will go to the left [Gen 13:5-12](#).

So I'm also imagining—really fantasizing, since apparently '*God knew better*'—that if *sin* hadn't *entered* that '*unfallen man*' must eventually have reached a planetary version of this kind of *strife*, where opportunities to *separate* to other *planets* would have become similarly desirable. And surely '*unfallen man*' in an '*uncursed*', *eternal* World, with higher, *electromagnetically-enhanced brain function*, *hyperbaric-oxygen-enhanced strength*, and *hyperbaric-CO₂-enhanced plant nutrition*, that is, with greatly enhanced intelligence, strength and endurance, would have experienced the '*increase of knowledge*' much faster than we '*fallen men*' have. Remember that even us '*fallen men*' already are arguably, and reportedly, on the verge of figuring out how to 'instantaneously teleport', (according to that "Better Future", 2008 issue of *Discover* magazine cited in [SECTION 7](#) of [RGT](#)). So certainly the ability of '*unfallen man*' to 'teleport' anywhere would have eventually become routine, including to *planets* as far away as needed, that is, to where comparable 'water-canopied' *planets*, with comparable '*gardens*' either already existed, or could be engineered and/or 'transplanted', and where regular 'visiting' between *planets* would be just as routine too, and all this because these 'higher abilities' available to them would make all this possible, and surely long before overcrowding became a serious 'issue', except maybe of the 'magazine variety' ☺.

And here's another '*wow*'. I can't help, just for another moment, recognizing the ultimately relatively inferior environment of The Garden of Eden, and the ultimately relatively physically inferior attributes poor Adam and Eve were first given. And I mean '*I thank God*' that He apparently *predestinated* that they would lose it all, because I can only see, much like our present circumstances are greatly inferior to the ones they briefly had, that theirs must eventually be seen as greatly inferior too, that is, compared to the ones we now all look forward to, and that is, in the evidently 'dimensionally-enhanced' *new heaven and...new earth*. Uh-huh.

And it now makes more sense to me that Earth was not as "rare" as I thought it was, and that there were—or in time would have been—an *infinite* number of

'earthlike' *planets* just the right distance from 'Sun-sized' *stars* ("Goldilocks planets" or *circumstellar, habitable-zone exoplanets*). And I just said "was", "were" and "would have been" because **the curse** is now 'killing' them all, and/or is now preventing any chance that they could 'form'.

And from this I'm reminded of one of the '**saving grace**' Mercury brought, which is, that since Earth's Magnetic Field began to *die* at **the curse**, I expect if Mercury hadn't come along just when 'he' did, the Magnetic Field would have at some point not long thereafter have become too weak to hold those **waters above the firmament**, the more sudden collapse of which maybe even the Ark could not survive. And there was that perfect **rebuke**, in this case taking the form of a perfectly-measured 'electromagnet jolt' *discharging* from Earth to Mercury—one 'he' would evidently need to 'return' to Earth on 'his' return 'visit'—with that first 'jolt' surely accompanied by a 'perfectly-pitched' **voice of...thunders** that altogether 'just gently enough' drained the sky of its **waters**. And the need of recharging was not just provided on Mercury's 'return visit', but was also provided as later needed, along with whatever else was later needed, by both Venus and Mars, with each in turn, by both '**destroying the sinners**' and 'resupplying' Earth with what it and its surviving inhabitants needed, prolonged the ability of Earth to support **life** to this very day. But these '**great instruments**' of God did not as much 'restore' the Earth, even altogether, as I **believe** "the coming Red Planet" will, as we will further consider, especially in the last sections.

And again by-the-way, this also **bringeth...to remembrance** another **way** God **made a shew of them**—that is, of **Satan** and his **principalities and powers**—and that **openly**. I mean Satan must have thought that he had God 'in a corner', since he had already **tempted** Adam and Eve successfully. And after that,

By the multitude of thy [Satan's] merchandise [H7404](#) [read, 'dealings', and evidently **in** [all] **the earth**] **they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned ... Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries** [including all **places** of **worship** of **molten** or **graven images**, or of other **made gods**, or of all **strange, new**, and any **other gods** too] **by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick** [H7404](#) (again read, 'dealings'; full context in [Eze 28:11-19](#)),

meaning he **made merchandise** [H6014](#) or '**traded**' and '**trafficked**' (from [H7404](#)) in both **heavenly** and **earthly** 'resources', and both by **spiritual** [G4152](#) and **temporal** [G4340](#) means, and all with just enough **doctrine of vanities** ([H4148](#) and [H1892](#)) to **deceive** most of his victims, and with his greatest '**evildoings**' (from [H7489](#) and [G2555](#)) accomplished using his **defiled...sanctuaries**—read, '**false religious institutions**'—some of the earlier casualties of which I'm guessing were those bunch of **angels** he **temped** into going...

...in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them of men [Gen 6:1-5](#),

all of whom ended up in *Tartarus*. And the result of this **multitude** [H7230](#) **of...merchandise** being that...

...the wickedness [H7451](#) **of man** [H120](#) **was great** [H7227](#) **in** [all] **the earth**, [H776](#) **and that every imagination** [H3336](#) **of the thoughts** [H4284](#) **of his heart** [H3820](#) **was only** [H7535](#) **evil** [H7451](#) **continually** [H3117](#) [Gen 6:5](#).

So why would Satan have thought that he had God 'in a corner'? Well, because

it appeared God had no choice but to **destroy** everything, that is, just to let **the waters** ‘crash down’, or in terms of still popular mythology—including the ‘misadventures’ of “Chicken Little”—just let the sky ‘unrestrainedly fall’. So it was unimaginable then, even to Satan, that God could, more or less naturally,

...destroy man whom...[He] created from the face of the earth [Gen 6:7](#),

yet at the same time essentially **‘save’ the earth** for the remaining very few **faithful**, that is, evidently for only 7 people, though unfortunately really **eight souls were saved by water** in the process ([1Pe 3:20](#)). And you should have at least some idea why I say “unfortunately”, though at the same time...

...we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose [Rom 8:28](#).

And if you don’t yet **know**, it is also part of our journey to again and again **shew** how God continues to **‘make a shew’** of Satan and his angels, finally **openly, triumphing over them** every single time.

And when it comes to the *infinite number* of **stars**, think about it, because it’s just math too. I mean if there were an *infinite* number of anything, like *objects* in the Universe, then any subset of these innumerable *objects*, like *stars* or *planets*, would each nonetheless be *infinite* in *number* too. And this can apply to the *smallest subsets* within any infinite set, yes, even to ones as small as “Goldilocks planets”. And I mean if there were only one ‘Earth’ in our entire *visible* Universe, considering the likelihood that there are *planets* around most all ‘visible’ **stars**, and I mean the **stars** seen using our best *telescopes*, and if there were as little as only one more ‘earthlike’ *planet* in every million (or billion or trillion, etc.) of the equally large ‘star-filled spaces’ surrounding our *visible space*, then there would still be an *infinite number* of ‘earthlike’ *planets*, that is, if **the heavens** and **stars** are as **infinite** as our God. And I can only **believe** they are.

And this **bringeth...to remembrance**, and in this case also ‘totters’ me back to the idea that Earth may still in a sense be quite “rare”. And I mean it makes sense to me that there indeed may be only one ‘Earth’ in our *visible* Universe, because it may take a *universe* of at least this ‘visible size’ to so **‘precisely establish’** all **the ordinances of heaven and earth** God has **ordained**, or in more scientific terms, to so ‘finely tune’ and ‘balance’ such a ‘razor’s-edge precise’ range of *forces* and *factors* that make *physical life* possible, because maybe without such ‘awesomely-expansive size’ such ‘mindboggling-razor’s-edge precision’ would not be possible, nor *physical life* either, at least as we know it. And I mean, again, something near the size of our *visible* Universe may be required to make **life** as we know it on Earth possible, that is, as God designed it. But remember also that the *visible* Universe is a *variable*, because what is ‘visible’ is limited to the biggest *telescopes* we have at the time. So, and in other words, the ‘visible Universe’ is presently in the process of getting *significantly* bigger all the time now.

But I realized I was overlooking something here too—yes, at least one thing that I have compartmentalized up till now—that there is apparently only one **book of life** (e.g., [Rev 20:12](#)) that keeps a record of **all** the **redeemed**, who, along with all who will be **lost**, their **substance** being **made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth**. And I mean that no matter how big that **book** may be, it evidently does not contain an *infinite number* of names, but more likely an extremely disappointing small number of them. And there is apparently only a finite

number of **angels** too, which ‘swings’—or ‘totters’—us back to a perspective of God’s **creation** where all the **stars** cannot be so much a literal representation of our reality, but more a symbolic representation of both His and our potential, this potential manifestly available through His ‘**infiniteness**’, ‘**omniscience**’, ‘**omnipotence**’, and ‘**great faithfulness**’. And after all, it’s not like He could have been surprised by the outcome in The Garden of Eden. Of course if we consider just the ‘visible stars’—in this case I mean only the ones we can see with the naked eye—separately from the ‘invisible’ ones—the ones we can’t see without the aid of a *telescope*—but include the many, many more of them that were seen with the help of that former, *upper-atmosphere water lens*, we could to some degree ‘totter back’, at least a bit, and really more or less ‘sit on both ends’ of this ‘teeter-totter’ at the same time, huh.

And beyond that, certainly beyond what any *evolutionist*, even if Christian, could ever **understand**, remember we learned back in **SECTION 2** that *evolutionists* believe that they are ‘looking into the past’ when they look through their *telescopes* at the **stars**. And of course to a certain extent they are. But it’s not really looking 12½ billion years into the past when you look at the Lynx Supercluster(s). Why not? A ‘**simple answer**’ is that God is **infinite**. But ‘**hopefully**’ you’re not satisfied with a ‘**milky simple answer**’ anymore. And as you should expect, a ‘**meaty spiritual answer**’ will require another of those ‘**further introductions**’ to our **infinite** God. So to help with what we could call ‘**an even further expanded**’ **revelation**, let me first introduce you to a very “close star”, Bernard’s Star, which is only about 4 *lightyears* away. Remember this means that it takes only about 4 years for *light* coming from this **star** to reach Earth. And let’s say that Bernard’s Star just spectacularly ‘blew up’, or “went nova”, and then slowly went dark. Would we see it when that hapened? No. For the next about 4 years it would look like it always had, just another **star** in the sky. But about 4 years after this star “goes *nova*” one of the multitude of ‘backyard astronomers’ would be looking into Earth’s night sky and see this explosion and/or implosion that had taken place 4 years earlier. So yes, we can look into the past a little, but evidently not beyond about 6,000 years, because **light** has only been ‘streaming’ to us for that long. And this means that any light from **stars** or other phenomenon that is farther out than 6,000 *lightyears* shouldn’t have reached us yet.

But it has. And *evolutionists*, whether Christian or not, think that if *light* is reaching us from as far away as about 13.7 billion *lightyears*, then the Universe must be that old, or the *light* would not have been able to reach us. But this is wrong. Why? They don’t really **know** God, because really, and no matter where we look, it’s only as much as about 6,000 years into the past.

And here’s where we can **see** beyond where *evolutionists* are even **able** to **see**, that is, if you’re willing to be ‘**further introduced**’ to the ‘**infiniteness**’ of God. And I mean that God could not have just **created the stars**, but must have **created** ‘extended’ *photon* and other *radiation fields* too, all the way to Earth, or Adam would not have been able to see any of them outside the *distance* that *light* can travel in 2 days, and that would be none of them but the Sun. And neither would any of those ‘extremely large telescopes’ be able to see any of them outside the *distance* that *light* could travel in the last 6,000 years, which would be comparatively very few.

And I know we learned in **SECTION 2** that *space* is mostly *empty*, and that where *visible matter* does exist it is relatively ‘tightly clustered’. But now you should be **able to see** that even if *space* is not filled with *dark matter*, *infinite space* cannot be *empty*, because it is at least ‘filled’ with the *radiation* of the *light* from all **the stars**, and must have been from the instant they were **created**, or, again, Adam

and Eve, 2 days after the **'abracadabra creation of the stars'**, on their first night, would not have been able to see a single **star**, nor would today's 'extremely large telescopes' be able to see any of them outside 6,000 *lightyears*.

And I **know** the psalmist **sings**, as the Prophet Isaiah **declareth**,

He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names [Psa 147:4](#).

See also [Isa 40:26](#). And you may at first be satisfied to think that this means that there are a finite number of **stars**, because God **telleth the number** and **calleth them all by names**. And how could you **'name'** an **'infinite number of stars'** anyway. And what would you call them? Of course maybe God only **'names'** the ones that can be seen by the naked eye, or even more likely, just the **number of them** corresponding to and representing everyone in His **book** ([Psa 139:15-16](#)), and to **all the angels** too. But I nonetheless think that there really are an **'infinite number'** of **'potentially-to-be-named' stars**, except I think that He has already **'named'** all those too, even as He has **'infinitely stretched out the heavens'** ([Isa 45:12](#); [42:5](#); [51:13](#); [Jer 10:12](#)), as well as **'infinitely stretched out starlight radiation fields'** to fill **'infinite space'**, all of it being **'instantaneously created'** on The 4th Day—though it's now all **cursed** and **'dying'** since The Fall—and all by our **infinite** God, because that's Who I think He is.

And occasionally, when I have such 'mind-blowing' thoughts, I think that maybe I'm 'overthinking' God. And sometimes I even think that such a wildly fantastic story cannot possibly be true. But then I **remember** that even this **'infinite perspective'** of God is just 'child's play' to Him. And I mean to Him even **stretching forth the heavens** must be like hanging a 'mobile' over a child's crib mostly just to entertain and amaze. Or in other **precepts**, and to those **able** to pay **better** attention, it could be little more to God than 'stooping' to **'introduce'** Himself in **ways** we can only eventually—by **'diligent study, meditation and continued seeking'**—be **able** to **understand**, because it is impossible for Him to reveal Himself to us as He really is. Yes, even the entire **'infinite Universe'** is just God 'stooping' to **reveal** Himself to us. But the even **'better news'** about this—in this case **'infinitely better news'** than the **gospel**, uh-huh—is that no matter how much we **'unendingly spiritually mature'**, our **meditations** about Him will **for ever** remain **'infinitely below'** His **'higher thoughts and ways'**, which means that as far as His **'infiniteness'** goes, **thank and praise the LORD**, we will never, ever be **able** to 'overthink' Him. And I mean that He will **for ever** remain **'infinitely more awesome'** than we can ever possibly imagine, so that we will **'always and for ever'** continue to need **'further higher and deeper introductions'** to Him. And I mean that if not already, sooner or later you're going to get used to it, and expect it really, because it must eventually become the **'eternal lifestyle'** of every Immortal Son of God. And I mean that you're going to have to, again and again **for ever, prepare to meet thy God**, that is, in **'ever-increasingly higher ways'** and in **'ever-increasingly deeper things'**. And don't you think it would be best to take full advantage of the **'introductions'** that He is offering us in this present Creation while it lasts? Uh-huh. And if any of this sounds to you like it could ever get boring, you just haven't really **'met'** Him enough times yet. But if you haven't noticed yet, I am attempting to let God use me to help remedy that **'for good'** (PAMD).

And by-the-way, and only to 'wildly goose-chase you' a little more, my encyclopedia reports that 'new' **supernovas** are seen by the naked eye on an average of about 3 times a century, or about once in the current average lifetime. But remember if we can see it with the naked eye, it's a relatively "close star", and

not even as far away as in a ‘neighboring’ *galaxy* or *galaxy cluster*, but most likely within our own *galaxy*, but necessarily within our own *supercluster*, because with the naked eye you presently can’t see any **light** coming from even our ‘nearest neighboring’ *supercluster*. **Remember** it would take hundreds of millions of years traveling at the *speed of light* even to get to the closest of these ‘neighboring’ *formations*. And whether ‘naked-eye close’ or ‘telescopically far’, we’re talking about when a **star** ‘blows up’ and/or ‘collapses’, that is, when a **star** is said to “die”. So we might as well also **‘connect’** here that this must be the result of **the curse** too. And I mean I don’t **believe** that **stars** began ‘blowing up’ until after **the curse**. However evidently we can ‘telescopically see’ *novas* and *supernovas* that have ‘exploded’ and/or ‘imploded’ that are much farther than 6,000 *lightyears* away. But I can’t **believe** that this is because the **light** from them has been traveling that long either. So at this point, since I **know** God—as all who are **approved unto God** may appropriately **testify**—here are a couple of **precepts** I must **believe** are **‘directly connected’** to this ‘apparent natural mystery’. They are that God is **faithful**, and that He is **not willing that any should perish**. And I mean, yes, on The 4th Day of Creation God **created** the **infinite photon** and other *radiation fields* that then began to **declare the glory of God**, and at the same time began to **declare** the **‘permanence’** of His Creation, this **‘permanent declaration’** first seen then by the Angels, and it from then on continued to emanate from **the stars** for Adam and Eve to see, and would have **‘for ever after’** if **sin** had not **entered**.

And so we may also **understand** that by the same **‘faithfulness and unwillingness’**—and just as appropriately—a different **‘declaration’** is now emanating from **the stars**, that is, a **‘cursed declaration’**, or a **‘declaration of corruption’**. And I mean that at **the curse** He apparently “somehow” once more ‘advanced’ the **‘cursed light radiation fields’** from each **star** so that the **light** seen from Earth more fully showed the newly **‘cursed’** condition of **the stars**.

And I’m talking about the effects of what we call *entropy*, (read, ‘the naturally destabilizing operations of systems of energy’, otherwise known as The 2nd Law of Thermodynamics), as well as about *magnetic and radioactive decay*, and about *atomic* and even *quantum (subatomic-particle) destabilization*—which I expect are ‘naturally’ also slowly *destabilizing all* forms of *radiation*, and even also the *forces* now popularly associated with the concept of ‘gravity’, etc. And I mean that the effects of all these **‘cursed ordinances of heaven and earth’** were not just seen to be happening on Earth, but also everywhere ‘visible’ **in the heavens**.

However, like the ‘oversimplified’ Law of Gravity, I recognize The Law of Entropy—or The 2nd Law of Thermodynamics—as a ‘less mature perspective’ too, because I don’t see any individual ‘force’ or ‘dynamic’ making *energy* ‘destabilize’—I mean besides God by **the curse**. And I mean that I instead see that “systems tend to go from order to disorder” because all God’s **‘cursed ordinances of heaven and earth’** are presently working together to “disorder” things. And I mean *entropy* is a ‘boogeyman’. It is not a real ‘driving phenomenon of disorder’. It’s just a relatively **‘simple way’** to ‘lump together’ the many *ways* that God’s **‘cursed ordinances of heaven and earth’** are slowly **‘killing’** His Creation. Of course it is also handy for ignoring and/or denying God, or sometimes just an effective ‘roadblock’ on your journey to getting to **know** Him **‘better’** by His innumerable multitude of *works*, I mean unless you’re just instead, unwittingly or not, letting your *flesh* use it as an excuse to avoid getting to **know** Him **‘better’**.

And maybe you can **see** by this **‘awake to righteousness call’** that ‘gravity’ and ‘entropy’, and really the entire **‘seemeth-right way’ modern science** is **‘handled’** by **‘God-deniers’**—and even by those just **‘stuck’** in their **‘growth in**

the knowledge of God—‘tend’ to have the same **‘dishonouring’** to **‘damning’** effects on people. But **‘I tell you the truth**, that **the time [of the end] is come...** And we **know** this is at least because **the words** formerly **closed up and sealed till the time of the end** are no longer **sealed** (see [RGT](#)). And by this we **know** that it is now fully **time... that judgment must begin at the house of God**. So **if God permit**, and as much as **God is willing**, I have not yet begun to **sound** the **‘awake to righteousness call’**. But **‘I** again **tell you the truth**, that none of us will be ready for all this **‘shouting from the housetops’** till the next **study**. So **press** on.

And getting back to God’s **faithfulness**, and knowing that He **so loved the world** that He continues to be **willing** to **save some**, surely God is still **faithfully** using **the heavens** to **declare** His **glory**, but now also to **declare** that it is **‘dying’**. I mean I can **see** that God remains **the same** in that He has been **faithful** by **the things that are made** to make it abundantly clear that we, as the Apostle Paul puts it, **are without excuse**. And no wonder King David repeats in the Psalms,

The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God [Psa 14:1](#); [53:1](#).

And I mean He surely showed Adam and Eve on the **night** they were **created** only **‘permanent stars’**, that is, **stars** that were not decaying or dying in any way. And when he **cursed** Creation to start **‘dying’**, surely **polonium halos** weren’t the only **things** that started ‘popping’. And there apparently wasn’t **just** a ‘reset’ of **the ordinances of heaven and earth**, but also of the **radiation fields** emanating from all **the stars** again too, so that the **‘first couple’** could then appropriately start to see that not just they themselves, but that the entire Creation, including all **the stars** they could see in the sky, were beginning to **die**. And I mean that I expect that **light** from every **star** was once more advanced to Earth at **the curse** so that for the next 7,000 years we would all be able to increasingly see the alarming number of **stars** that would ‘destabilize’ and ‘blow up’, or in another **word, die**. And I guess this means that “somehow”—**‘abracadabra-style’**—we have been given by God a 7,000-**lightyear ‘shew’** of **‘the coming death of heaven’**.

And remember that whatever the case, we are not actually seeing **the stars** in the sky, but the **light** from them that has reached Earth, which, in order for us to **see** it how God intended, must have been “somehow”, evidently twice, ‘advanced’ or ‘shifted’ here by God. So an important question here is, how did God ‘advance’ the **light** to Earth so we could see it? I mean it **‘seemeth’** to me that we’re talking about the apparent ‘disappearance’ of **‘permanent light’** instantaneously—and I mean like this present **heaven and earth** soon will, it just **fled away to no place** (see, [Rev 20:11](#))—after which it is apparently ‘replaced’ by **‘cursed light’**, because, at this point, this is the only way I can begin to imagine how we could see ‘telescopically-far’ **supernovas**, as well as all the other more distant indications that **‘the heavens are dying’**, but also that **the heavens** still nonetheless **declare the glory of God**, etc.

And think about it, if we’re not expecting our Sun, after **the curse**, to last much more than several thousand years, we shouldn’t expect The Visible Universe to last much longer either. I mean the whole **‘shew’** should pretty much ‘go dark’—and I mean become too dim to see from Earth—in not much more than several thousand years too. Of course that would only be if **heaven and earth**, before that happened, didn’t have some **place** else to be, that is, **no place**. But these are not just ‘star-exploding’ ideas; they are ‘mind-blowing’ ones too, and ones worth a lot more **meditation** than I am giving them here. But I also mean that, again, all I **know** for sure is that I really have very little idea of what I’m talking about at best.

But I'm nonetheless expecting that **the third part of the stars**, the 'visible' ones representing a certain **rebellious** group of **angels**, will "somehow" some day soon 'go dark', and I mean evidently about a millennia before **heaven and earth** make that one way trip to **no place**. Of course we should **remember** that we're really only talking about **the angels** that are '**yet to fall**' here, as evidently some already '**fell**' at The Flood, though we're also evidently still talking about some of the most '**glorious stars of heaven** now '**shining**'. And I don't have a '**simple answer**' as to how this will literally occur in God's Creation either. I just **believe** it will "somehow" happen, this being the symbolic representation God intends to **shew us** in the sky, I mean, at least to those **able** to pay attention, which also makes this another of those '**implied-documented asking-seeking-knocking questions**' of mine to God that I can expect He will at least eventually answer, and at least eventually **shew me** (e.g. [Psa 25:4](#)), in His time, and even if its only by the actual, soon-coming "events" themselves.

By the way, I know *planets* are not *stars*, but the **ancients**—or the mortal ones anyway, that is, Adam, et al.—seem not to have known this, or if they did—and **remember** they were smarter than us, generally speaking—they nonetheless decided to identify them as a kind of **star**. The word "planet" comes from the Greek and means "wanderer". And they did distinguish and chart their 'irregular wandering behavior', calling them **wandering stars**. And anyone paying attention could see that they were the only 'stars' that appear to make 'loops' in the sky as the Earth passes them by, or as they pass us by, in our *orbit* around the Sun. Of course we now know—or maybe have just 'relearned'—that this 'looping' *retrograde motion* is really just an 'optical illusion'.

And *planets* weren't just thought of as 'special stars'. The *planet* named by Rome as Saturn, for example, which would be Cronus or Kronos to the Greeks, is stated in **scripture** to be '**the star of a god**'. And it is otherwise called by the Ammonite name **Moloch** ([Amos 5:26](#); [Act 7:43](#)) or **Molech** ([Lev 18:21](#); [20:2-5](#), etc.) or **Milcom** ([1Ki 11:5,33](#); [2Ki 23:13](#)) or **Malcham** ([Zep 1:5](#)), or by the Canaanite-Phoenician name **Baal** or the plural **Baalim**, (many references), or by the Moabite name **Chemosh** ([Num 21:29](#); [1Ki 11:7](#); [Jer 48:7,13,46](#)), and once by the evidently Hebrew name **Chiun** ([Amos 5:26](#)), and one other time by the Egyptian name **Remphan** ([Act 7:43](#)), all these names apparently referring to Saturn, and all of which connect to the two occasions in **scripture** where Saturn is identified as **the star your god** [**Moloch**, **Chiun** and **Remphan**] [Amos 5:26](#); [Acts 7:43](#).

In the same way the *planet* named by the Romans as Venus, but also referred to by them and the Greeks as Astarte, and otherwise in various other 'traditions' of the Greeks and Romans as different '**goddesses**' including Artemis, Athena or Athene, Aphrodite, and several times in the 19th Chapter of Acts by the name **Diana** ([24-35](#)), but more in **scripture** by the Assyrian-Babylonian-Canaanite name **Ashtoreth** ([1Ki 11:5,33](#); [2Ki 23:13](#)) or the plural **Ashtaroth** ([Jos 9:10](#); [12:4](#); [13:12,31](#); [Jdg 2:13](#); [10:6](#); [1Sa 7:3-4](#); [12:10](#); [31:10](#)), and repeatedly related to the **worship of the queen of Heaven** ([Jer 7:18](#); [Jer 44:17-25](#)), as well as to the Assyrian and Egyptian '**goddesses**' Ishtar and Isis. And besides all of them relating at one time or another to the Planet Venus, many of them also earlier relate to the planet Jupiter, though 'she' is more recently known as both "The Morning Star" and "The Evening Star", as the present *orbit* of this **brightest object** in the sky—**brightest** besides the Sun and the Moon, that is—offers us both of these 'ecliptic perspectives' of 'herself'. And I mean in one part of her *orbit* 'she' is seen near the horizon 'rising' just after sunrise, and in the other just after sunset.

But I should also mention that **Baal** is sometimes instead connected to the **worship** of the Sun, and that **Ashtoreth**, et al., especially in earlier **ages**, with the

worship of the Moon. And I'm guessing that this is connected to Pre-Flood and early Post-Flood perspectives of the Sun and the Planets, which didn't yet include perspectives of that later-emerging 'drama queen' Venus. And I mean that **Ashteroth** was earlier generally thought of as the female counterpart of the Canaanite god **Baal**, so evidently Nimrod claimed that the Sun 'represented' him, and Semiramis that the Moon 'represented' her, until she got rid of him, stealing the 'limelight'.

And I mean this **Baal and Ashtaroth** (Sun-King Father and Moon-Queen Mother) **worship** evidently had some transitions in their 'heavenly body representations' both before and after the time of The First Babylon. And for example in the case of **Ashtaroth**, evidently at some point Venus came along and 'outshined' the Moon, stealing the role of '**Queen-Mother star**'. And as we will hopefully be able to clarify next section, the Sun was evidently only the 'fall back' for the '**King-Father star**' when, sometime before The Flood, Saturn 'exploded', was significantly diminished in *brightness*, and lost that role to the Sun and/or Moon. And I'm gathering that the supposed child of Nimrod and Semiramis, Tamuz, who was supposedly the re-incarnated Nimrod, offers further connections, all of which I will be on the lookout for as The Spirit brings them to my attention. But a lot of these connections are in the additional study recommended at the end of the last section, as well as in the Reverend Hislop's book introduced in [RGT](#).

And the "Morning Star" has since become popularly associated with **Lucifer**. And this **seemeth** to be an appropriate association as Venus is the '**brightest wandering star**' in the sky. And remember that he was **created** by God to be the **anointed cherub**—I'm reading, '**king angel**' [Eze 28:14-15](#). And this also **seemeth** to fit because we know that **the third part of the stars are predestinated** to 'go dark', which may include Venus. And I mean you could guess from all this that in The Great Tribulation, when God will **once more... shake not the earth only, but also heaven**, that Venus is going to be one of the 'casualties' of this soon-coming '**shaking**'. And it also **seemeth** that Jude in his **epistle** confirms this, saying that **certain...ungodly men**, among a list of other comparisons, can be likened to...

...wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever

([Jude 1:13](#), but read the preceding verses for the full context).

And I mean that Jude surely **knew** that the **wandering stars** were associated with '**false gods**', and that they too must be **predestinated** to 'go dark'.

And I have another even crazy-scarier idea involving an **interpretation** of another of God's messages in **the stars**. **Remember** how it looks pretty pessimistic that no more than a few to several hundred million **souls** will be **saved** altogether—given the death tolls in The Great Tribulation, and the limited space available in Millennial Israel, and the clues that **the nations of them which are saved** will be '**few**' too, not to mention that scary-low number of **all the angels** reported in Revelation at **the time of the end**? But really I have discovered **many infallible proofs** of this soon-coming 'disappointment'. And here's evidently some more supporting 'pessimistic perspective' of how **few there be that find it**, that is, the **few** who '**receive** the end of '**their**' faith, even the salvation of your souls, and therefore how '**few of these few**' will become '**regular face time**' friends of Jesus.

An *astronomy* source I found reported that it has been estimated that there are presently only as many as "10,000 visible stars", that is, "Considering all the stars visible in all directions around Earth" (<http://earthsky.org/space/how-many-stars->

[could-you-see-on-a-clear-moonless-night](#)). Now we **know** that even **the third part of the stars**—and in this case were talking about **angels**—should be a number much larger than 10,000, because the Apostle John’s **‘time-of-the-end report’** was that there were some multiple **thousands** more than 100,000 of them, which of course can’t include the already ‘gone dark’ ones in *Tartarus*. So who could this relatively small number—10,000—of “visible”, and therefore **‘most glorious stars’** symbolically represent. Well, minus the number still **prophesied** or otherwise **predestinated** to ‘go dark’ before the end of The Millennium, I’m guessing the remainder represents the population of the top floor of New Jerusalem. And by-the-way, this fits other ‘pessimistic estimates’ I’ve made of what the **‘foundation-floor populations’** of New Jerusalem—given its parameters—might be, specifically that the top floor may have as **‘few’** as about 5,000 ‘residents’, implying, if I am anywhere near correct, that about half of the “visible”, and therefore **‘most glorious stars’** will ‘go dark’ before Heaven and Earth take that ‘one-way flight’ to **no place**.

And of course this implies that not all **the angels** are in this **‘most glorious’** group, just the **‘most glorious’** of them. And certainly not all humans are in this “visible” group either, just the **‘most glorious’** of us. The rest of the Immortal Sons of God—including the rest of the Immortal Angels and Humans, and excluding all that ‘go dark’—are evidently not **‘glorious’** enough to be seen by ‘everyone’ from ‘everywhere’. And I’m saying that I’m thinking that on New Earth that some of us, some of the Immortal Angels and Humans, if not obstructed by the horizon or otherwise, will be able to be seen from any distance at all times—even possibly through the colorful, transparent walls of New Jerusalem, and even possibly, if all the **nations** are on one side of New Earth as I expect they will be, from the farthest points in the farthest **nations**. However this could only be the case if these **‘few of the few’** are not too close to the much **‘greater lights’** emanating from **the Father** and His **only begotten Son**. Crazy-scary, huh.

And again whatever the case, I do feel I am getting to know my God **better** and **better**. And I should at least mention at this point that I would not have come to some of these **‘improved and expanded’ revelations** as soon as I have without the now **‘increasingly fruitful fellowship and co-meditation’** I have recently been having with a **‘close friend’**. And I’m saying that one of the reasons the **revelations** are getting **better** in this section—haven’t you noticed?—is because I now have someone to somewhat more fully **fellowship** with. So imagine what it’s going to be like with a **cloud of witnesses** and **‘close friends’** in **‘perfect fellowship’**. Or don’t just imagine it. Come join us and experience it, **for ever and ever**.

And yes, **the curse** is—increasingly quickly—killing the entire Universe, as I expect will be evidenced by the increasing rate of the **death of stars**, and probably especially during the **‘heaven-shaking’** of The Great Tribulation. But, and hopefully not to get too ‘loopy’, we should **remember** that in some **ways** God’s **‘cursed creation’** is also preserving God’s people too. And I mean that if it were not for the **‘saving graces’** that accompany God’s **‘curse-initiated’ great judgments**, I expect that Earth would already be **dead** by now. Yes, Earth has as much been **sustained** ^{H5564} by God’s **‘great instruments of life’** as **judged** at the same time by His **‘great instruments of death’**. And it is one of the **purposes** ^{H4284} of this **study** ^{G4704} to **continue** ^{G3306} to **shew** ^{G312 G3936} both **former** and **yet to come** further **‘corrected, improved and expanded’ revelations** of such **great judgments** and **‘saving graces’** so that **‘for ever after’, God willing**, we may **remember** them.

And yeah, the more you **ask, seek** and **knock**, the more He **will shew you** (e.g.,

[John 16:13](#)), that is, the more He **will 'correct, improve, and expand'** your **'spiritual perspective'**. And appropriately enough, God just **'revealed'** to me, though somewhat expectedly, another of the necessarily **many infallible proofs**, in this case another of the more important conclusions about the meaning of **stars**. Turns out the Apostle Paul has already explained this, that is, what **stars** and other **celestial bodies** mean. He explains this in a couple of verses I have overlooked until now, verses which agree with what I have been **teaching** all along. Paul **teacheth**,

There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. So also is the resurrection of the dead... [1Co 15:40-42a](#)

Of course when he is referring to **the resurrection of the dead** he is referring, at least in part, to **our glory**, but also to **'dimlits'** too, and even to the **stars**, however presently **'glorious'**, that will eventually be **cast down**. And of course I mean we should be **'interpreting'** his **teaching** with the advantage of being further along in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, including using some of the **'increase of knowledge'** Gabriel told Daniel was coming, both of which we have taken advantage of along the way, and will **continue in**.

But this also **sheweth** us that much of what you can **learn** in The Word of God is by implication, or by what the Apostle Paul calls **meat**, that is, through **'precept interconnectivity'**, except that again and again you should nonetheless expect to find direct statements you have previously overlooked in **scripture** that confirm all or part of what you already concluded from **scripture** by implication, this in turn confirming each time at least two things. One is that you are, only possibly **by the Spirit, rightly dividing the word of truth**. But it also continually offers **proofs** that **the Lord our God is one Lord**, and that if properly interpreted His Word will always agree with itself, even by implication, and that if it 'apparently' doesn't, it just means you have more **work** to do, a **labour** that best starts when you **ask** that **right** question, and is best **finished** as you **continue in** The Word, I mean unless it's another of those **answers** that come before you're even able to **ask**. But again, this is another of those topics where you should again realize that **'we see through a glass, darkly'**, and through a **telescope** very 'limitedly' for that matter. And I mean that even our **'spiritual perspectives'** are **'dark'** and **'low'** and **'shallow'** at best,

I mean compared to God's.

Still, and speaking of **singing**, no wonder David **sings** (PIRE),

When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained; What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him? [Psa 8:3-4](#)

I mean God is nonetheless **'praiseworthy'** in all this, even for as much as we can **understand**

at this point. And I mean that all of this is **'approved meditation'** about the reasons why God **'created stars by and for'** Jesus. And yes, though most of them are "invisible" to the naked eye, they are mostly all still there, but they're not the same as before The Fall, because they're all now literally **'dying'**, and yes, **'falling apart'** (DP-PAMD), as are the "visible" ones, including the ones supposedly representing those Huguenots, as well as the ones representing each of us, **God**

willing one of the “visible” ones does. And I haven’t found my **star** yet either, by-the-way. Talk about ‘a needle in a haystack’. And I mean I expect that being **able** to fully ‘**read**’ this ‘**star map**’ is something that only Those who **commanded** it into existence can do.

And I surely don’t know—nor do I think I am really **able** to **know**—what happened in the ‘**early everlasting**’, that is, before The Father, **by...and for** Jesus, both **spake** and **commanded** this present **creation** into existence ([Psa 33:9](#); [Col 1:15-17](#)), except that The Father and The Spirit, and ‘sometime before Creation’ **his only begotten Son**, was ‘there’. And surely, besides some relatively brief excursions into our territory—which I can only imagine is not really leaving Theirs—and some alterations to Theirs, including laying some really awesome ‘**glass-like floorspace**’ altogether inside a **temple** that can easily hold an ‘**innumerable great multitude**’, They still is. (And yes, the ‘grammar is correct’, including the ‘**transcendent conjugation**’ of the verbs, hereafter *gic*). But we’re already **increasing in**, and will **continue** to ‘**correct, improve and expand**’ the **knowledge** we have of what’s coming after this present Creation, you know, by joining **the Spirit** as He **searcheth...the deep things of God**. And **God knoweth**, in His time He may **reveal** to us some **knowledge** about ‘**early everlasting**’ too. And we should at least consider this another ‘**implied-documented asking-seeking-knocking question**’ to God, which in my experience He **answers** as well as more direct ones, even like He has again and again along our way. And yes, if you’re still reading, this is now as much your **way** as mine, even as **God knoweth** it would be (*gic*), all this being just as much for me as you, now isn’t it.

And this is what we should **continue** to expect, that since **the Lord our God is one Lord**, as we **go on unto perfection** it is only **right** [G1342](#); [G2117](#) that **we** [G2249](#).

...all [G3956](#) **speak** [G3004](#) **the same thing**, [G846](#) **and** [G2532](#) **that there be** [G5600](#)
no [G3361](#) **divisions** [G4978](#) **among** [G1722](#) [us] [1Co 1:10](#).

And ‘**I** am **persuaded** also by God, **which worketh** [G1754](#) **in ‘me’ mightily** [G1722](#) too, that I am **called** [G2822](#) **according to his purpose** [G4286](#), which is to **shew** His Church, and **all** the Immortal Sons of God, that **we** [G2249](#) actually can...

Be of the same [G846](#) **mind** [G5426](#) **one toward another** [G1519](#) [G240](#) ... [Rom 12:16](#);
[15:5-6](#),

and even ‘**deeply**’ so, because surely...

...we [G2249](#) **have** [G2192](#) **the mind** [G3563](#) **of Christ** [G5547](#) ... [1Co 2:9-16](#),

such that **whosoever** [Mat 20:26-27](#); [Mark 10:43-44](#) will **go on unto perfection** [Heb 6:1-3](#), and remain **committed** to **continue** [John 8:31-32](#) to **study to shew** themselves **approved unto God** [2Ti 2:15](#), will be **able** [1Co 3:1-2](#) to **be** [Rom 12:16](#); [15:5-6](#) **spiritual**, and...

...he that is spiritual [G4152](#) **judgeth** [G3303](#) [G350](#) **all things** [G3956](#) ... [Verse 15](#).

And I mean it is just as certainly a matter of time before **each and every** Immortal Son of God is appropriately described as both **perfect** and **spiritual**, which is to say, **like** Jesus, and **one** with The Father, because this ‘**shall be accomplished**’ by The Word of God by The Spirit of God in The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, wherein it is certainly my mission to provide the ‘**perfect**

doctrine' that will make the inevitably resulting **unity of the faith** possible, so God is helping me, and **God willing** so also He is now helping a '**great cloud of witnesses**' who are **predestinated** by Him to **be partakers** in this '**service to all**' with me. And I mean that I **hope** that these **predestinated** may join me and my '**close friend**' before The Rapture.

And speaking of God's 'often-used', 'along-the-way style' of answering questions —**especially** for those who **labour** and **press** to **continue in** His **word**—He again just **shewed** me something offering additional insight related to my speculations about when Angels were **created**. Read [Colossians 1:15-17](#). It **sheweth** me God used Jesus to **create** them too, which strongly implies that they did not exist before Creation Week, other than possibly just before the start of it, since, as Verse 16 seems to **shew**,

...all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers [- the **invisible** ones obviously including to **angels**]: **all things were created by him, and for him.**

And I mean it seems to imply here, to me, that **all things created...in heaven, and...in earth**, including the Angels, **were created** in Creation Week by God, and both **by...and for** Jesus too.

And FINALLY it must be "soon enough", because that 'universe-sized' tangent we just took is finally over for now. Can I hear an "aw!" And I mean speaking of solving **mysteries of the kingdom of heaven**, it's time to get back to solutions to **mysteries** involving **the ordinances of heaven and earth**, that is, for those **mysteries** about that '2nd-from-the-bottom' Ordovician Layer that Dr. Velikovsky and I brought to your attention about a score of pages back. Specifically, when it comes to *tropical fossil coral* and *glaciation* existing in that same *sedimentary layer*, there are really a couple of ways to explain this that The Spirit brought to my attention. Besides that Venus, and to a lesser extent Mars, unearthed lower *layers*, and sometimes afterward or in the process *glaciated* them too, we should also **remember** that Mercury did indeed create the first Arctic Regions. And I don't know at what point in the 'draining' of the *water canopy* that *ice caps* began to form, except that, as we will later see, it can happen very quickly, where such newly exposed *regions* evidently can be "frozen up immediately". And in that passage a score of pages back (bottom half of p.122) Dr. Velikovsky has evidently illuminated evidence—though really unwittingly—that it possibly began while this 2nd Layer was being 'laid'. And I mean maybe—as The Spirit seemed to me to be suggesting—*sedimentary layers* at the Poles on The 1st Visit of Mercury may have been *freezing* nearly as "immediately" as they were forming.

Another 'apparent mystery' that we're ready to "confront" is also brought to our attention by Dr. Velikovsky in the immediately preceding passage (top half of p.122). And this '**mystery**' confused me for a while too. I mean for a while I could not see how all that *volcanic* "ash" that supposedly "fell" from the sky ended up buried within and between *sedimentary layers*, that is, until The Spirit brought to my attention another couple of explanations. Specifically, apparently within and atop this Ordovician *layer*, "Ash fell from Alabama to New York", which is along the entire length of the Appalachians, and all the way to "Iowa", and a lot more in Eastern Canada, all supposedly from the sky onto 'dry ground', and *ground* which later got buried by the next *layer* of *sedimentary rock*. Or did it? I mean Dr. Velikovsky imagined—"in Ordovician time"—that most of the *planet* was "submerged", so he

must have thought that these “ash beds” were deposited on those “great islands”, unless he thought this “ash” *settled out* in “water” too, which it evidently must have, making their own distinct *layers within* or *atop* the so-called Ordovician *layer*, and that is, *underneath* the *layer* that supposedly some time later covered it, the so-called Silurian.

And it turns out that there is a component of *volcanic ash, pumice*, that in some forms is ‘light’ enough to *float*, that is, having a *density* lower than that of *water*, (the *density* of *pumice* being as low as .7 grams per cubic centimeter, while *water’s density* is about 1 gram per cubic centimeter—1 g/cm³). And I have seen a little *pumice rock float* in a coffee cup, buoying back to the surface quite quickly after being tossed in, though *pumice* can be a little ‘heavier’ than *water* too (up to 1.2 g/cm³), and therefore readily *sink* in *water*.

But whatever the case with the *pumice*, which is just one of the *components* of *volcanic ash*, and of a “gray” as opposed to a “red” *volcanic eruption*, the difference of which we’ll get to shortly, the other “gray” *components* of *volcanic ash* are never ‘lighter’ than *water*, but rather about 2 to 3 times ‘heavier’, and therefore readily *sink*. And they are not only “very dense”, but evidently predominantly originate in *volcanic eruptions* as “very small” *particles*. And I mean I guess the phrase, ‘blown to bits’, more than applies here. And though it’s altogether called *ash*, it’s not like *wood ash*. It’s actually mostly very *dense*, very small *rock particles*. And besides the *pumice rock*, one of the other components in it I have heard described as “tiny glass shards”, and another as one that will form a kind of “cement in you lungs” if you breathe in too much of it. Of course too much of the “tiny glass shards” couldn’t do your ‘internals’ any good either.

However these ‘heaviest’ and ‘smallest’ *components* of “gray” *volcanic ash* (up to around 2.7 g/cm³) are still a little ‘lighter’ than *dolomite* (2.8 - 2.9 g/cm³), which evidently is the dominant ‘formerly-Genesis-topsoil’ component of the lowest *layer*, the so-called Cambrian, which apparently is a factor in why all that *dolomite* generally beat all other *sediments*, including the ‘near-as-heavy’ components of *rock ash*, to the bottom. And I mean I’m guessing that being even more *dense*, the *dolomite* probably, if not a *sediment* of even smaller *particles* (limiting *form drag*), has a ‘smoother surface’ (limiting *friction drag*). Another advantage the *dolomite* apparently had in reaching the bottom first was that it did not start *airborne* and therefore didn’t have as far to go, though the *rock ash* should have made a showing as a second or close third to reach the bottom, as it apparently did. And this *dolomite* may have also had another ‘head start’, generally, over most all the other *sediments* because of another type of *drag* called *lift*, which it’s about time I made clear *is affected by density*. (Honk, honk!) And I mean yes, the ‘heavier’ the *sediment*—or object, if it doesn’t naturally *float*—the less it can be ‘stirred-up’ and ‘uplifted’ by *turbulent fluid*. And yes, in this case were *not* talking about the *uniform acceleration* of *falling*, but about the *energy* required to *lift* things. So again yes, ‘heavier’ things require more *energy* to *lift*. But of course were *not* talking about ‘uniform’ *turbulence* in all places and depths here either, that is, there was *not* an equal amount of *lift* everywhere in this ***flood of waters***, and of course I’m not really just talking about only *lift*, but also *undertow, upwelling, downwelling, etc.*, though surely all this *turbulence* at some point ‘lifted’ *all* the Genesis topsoil off the Genesis rock, meaning that there evidently was, during the time of the *turbulence*, more *lift* than *downdraft, etc.*, occurring, which also means to me that this did not yet so much include the now more regular *thermohaline circulation* the Oceans would eventually ‘settle into’.

So again, along with many other factors, there was obviously more *lift* in some

places and depths, and less in others. But otherwise and generally speaking, again yes, the 'heavier' the 'stuff' is—though we're only talking about the 'stuff' with a *density* greater than *water* (1 g/cm³)—the less it can be *lifted*, or 'slowed in its sinking', by *turbulence*, and the more it would naturally generally stay or end up closer to the bottom during a period of *turbulence*. However the *total lift* of such materials will be affected by the other kinds of *drag* too, that is, by *friction* and *form drag* which can play a significant role in whether something is more or less additionally *lifted* by *turbulence*.

And to further illustrate what I mean, imagine a *leaf* being *lifted* very high and traveling very far away in the *wind*, and that this also happens to *dust*, and with *stronger wind*, even to *sand* too, but that rocks of even very small size tend to lie still in the same *wind* that carries away *leaves* and *sand*. And I really just mean that God considered all the *factors*, surely most of which we have not even begun to consider, such that the *layers settled out* exactly as He

'designed' [H1254](#); [G:2936](#); [H7760](#); [G2476](#) and **'planned'** [H4284](#); [H6098](#); [G1012](#) them to.

But I also mean that *if* the more *dense components* of *ash*—and whether or not these *components* 'travel' separately—'landed' on ***the waters*** at a particular time, when, for example, the Ordovician Layer was not yet in the process of being 'laid' due to ongoing turbulence, and therefore all other *sedimentary layers* too, then apparently such *settling rock ash* could end up making regional, '2nd-from-the-bottom' *layers*. And for that matter later *expelled ash* could end up within or atop any particular still exposed lower or higher *layer* of *sediment* depending upon when the *ash rock* 'lands' on ***the waters***, just not as likely within or below any more *dense*, and/or more 'smoother-surfaced' *sediments*, especially those of the Cambrian Layer, because *if* these *lowest sediments* were not 'speeded on their way' by being the most *hydrodynamic particles* of *sediment*, but just by being the 'heaviest' to *lift* compared to most other *sediments*, then, to put it in a little different ***light*** than I did in the last paragraph, they were nevertheless ***predestinated*** by God, according to the then ***'cursed ordinances of heaven and earth'***, to be the first to reach the bottom, because the so-called Cambrian *sediments* plainly, but surely only generally, were first to reach bottom.

But more than that I expect that we should be able to continue to confirm that all these *factors* were ***ordained*** [H6213](#); [H3245](#); [H3559](#); [H7760](#); [G:2936](#); [G2476](#) to ***order*** [H6186](#); [H3559](#); [G950](#) the *settling* of all the *sedimentary layers*. And I mean we should be ***able to continue to prove*** that, generally speaking, 'higher-laid' *sediments* were 'laid higher' because they were *less hydrodynamic*, *larger-particle*, and/or *rougher-surfaced*, and/or *less-dense sediments*—that is, with evidently more *form* and/or *friction drag*, and/or more susceptibility to *lift*—than the *more hydrodynamic*, *smaller-particle*, and/or *smoother-surfaced*, and/or *more dense sediments* that were 'laid below'. And the 'interspersed' *rock ash* within and between these *layers* must have been the result of it entering ***the waters*** 'intermittently' and 'regionally' during the *settling process*.

However there is another 'apparent mystery' here, because we know that the *planet* was entirely inundated, and that all the *layers* settled out in less than 150 days. I mean how do you get 'great clouds' of *volcanic ash* on a *planet* covered with *water*? Well, one ***'Spirit-inspired'*** explanation came when I realized that I was forgetting (yes, compartmentalizing) that it took somewhere approaching ***forty days*** to fully *submerge* the entire *surface* of the *planet*, and that while this was happening apparently 'Mercury-class' *mountains* were being 'raised', which may have for a short time been the center of those "great islands" in what today is Eastern North America. And apparently 'Mercury-class' *volcanic action* was occurring too, including the ***spewing*** of 'great clouds' of *volcanic ash* miles into the

air, and likely even though this *rock ash* must have been limited from spreading any further than it did by the **rain**. Still this *volcanic ash* must have drifted and settled over major portions of *continents*, *significant parts* of which would have been already *inundated*. So this **spewing** of *rock ash* evidently happened before the Earth could be entirely *submerged*, with ‘Mercury-class’ *volcanoes* likely the last to go under.

And yes, I’m imagining the ‘Early Appalachians’ as among the highest *mountains* in the World at the time of The Flood, but probably not then as high as they became after other ‘visits’ of Mercury and/or Mars. But it’s really just my guess, as The Spirit seems to have suggested, that there was a ‘time’ in what is now called the eastern half of North America when at least a few of the highest “Mercury class” *volcanoes* were not yet submerged, and **spewing** ‘great clouds’ of *volcanic ash*, which didn’t spread further because of the **rain**, and this when most all the rest of the planet was *submerged*, so that the *ash* landing on the *water settled out* within and/or atop this region’s ‘2nd-from-the-bottom’ *layer* of *sediment*, and so ended up under the somewhat ‘slower-settling’ *layer* that shortly thereafter covered it. And I just mean it’s possible that it was something like this, and that any perspective involving ‘millions of years’ is not.

And there is another, I suppose ‘**Spirit-inspired**’, possible explanation, that is, another smaller but likely ‘significant contributor’ of *atmospheric volcanic ash*. And that would be that ‘smaller planet in the sky’, one not only close enough to interact with Earth’s *magnetic field*, ‘short-circuiting’ it and thereby ‘funneling’—mostly through ‘**the magnetic pole windows**’, but also by **rain—the waters** that **stood above the mountains** onto the ground, but evidently also close enough to interact with Earth’s *gaseous atmosphere*, and thereby with Earth’s *surface* too, in this **way** also ‘funneling’ and/or ‘raining’ loads of *volcanic ash* into Earth’s *atmosphere* from Mercury’s then *exploding*, ‘Earth-class’ *volcanoes*, and in this **way** helping to provide the vast quantities of *volcanic ash* accounted for in all the *sedimentary layers*. **Remember** we already **know**—and will further verify—that Venus and Mars dumped loads of *iron oxide* and a variety of other ‘debris’ into Earth’s *atmosphere*, likely including some *volcanic ash*. So I expect that Mercury’s earlier contributions of *volcanic ash*, that were surely dispersed over the Earth as God ‘**planned**’, would have ended up exactly in the kinds of places where Dr. Velikovsky describes they were found, within and between the *layers* of *sedimentary rock*.

And some of this ‘planetary debris’ was more deadly than others. I mean you might miss being fatally hit in a ‘rock storm’, and whether they were *burning* or not, and I mean as long as you could outrun any ‘pursuant’ *wildfires*. And though evidently some have been ‘drowned’ in ‘downpours’ of **manna**, and other forms of *hydrocarbons*, or were otherwise ‘burned alive’ by *ignited* versions of them, as we will eventually see, ‘near misses’, if they don’t involve one of those *wildfire* you can’t outrun, were survivable, and may even have temporarily provided plenty to eat. And you usually can outrun a “red” *eruption* with its characteristically ‘slow-flowing’ *lava*.

But there’s no running from a “gray”, *pyroclastic* (‘hot rock fragment’) *eruption*.

And yes, there are two types of *eruptions*: “red” and “gray”. “Red” *eruptions* are believed to happen if the *magma* that *erupts* is of *low viscosity*, or ‘thinner’, and therefore more *fluid*. This is where *lava* pours out of the top or sides of a *volcano*, or *explodes* out the top making ‘not-that-far-spreading lava showers’, though remember that when this *liquid lava* travels long enough in the air, it usually ‘sphere-itizes’ and *solidifies* into *volcanic bombs*, but produces little to no *volcanic ash*. This is apparently because there is little or no trapped *gas* inside the *magma* before it *erupts*, because any *gas* in it can more freely escape such *less viscous*

(less 'thick') *magma*. But if the *magma* is more *viscous* ('thicker'), then the *gas* in it is kind of like the CO₂ trapped in a soda bottle, so that when the *ground* above it finally gives way, it *explodes* out of the *magma*, blowing literally everything to 'very tiny bits', and making a *pyroclastic cloud* that can travel several hundred *miles per hour*, with *temperatures* inside reaching several hundred *degrees*. So there are no 'near misses' inside one of these *clouds* that can travel for many miles. And the *fallout* will travel much farther. How far? Well, if it's the result of one of the 'biggest planetary encounters', such *pyroclastic explosions*—and we're surely talking multiple, intermittent *explosions* from multiple *mountain ranges* all around the globe—then apparently this could form what has been described as **the shadow of death**, that is, where there would be enough 'clouding' of the atmosphere to 'shroud' the entire *planet*, and where this "gloom" could last for, say, a quarter century, including for about a decade and a half before you could distinguish the Sun in the sky. And no, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky I'm not really just making this 'stuff' up, as we will see, especially in **SECTION 9**.

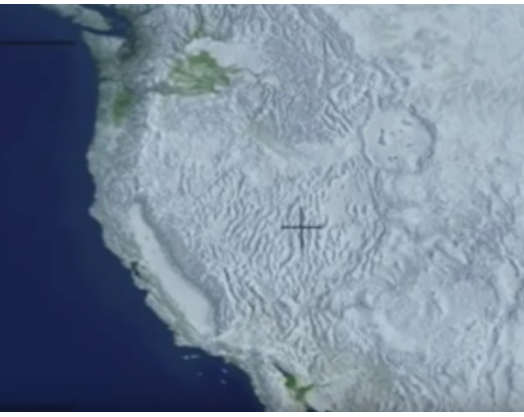
But I further imagine that at the greatest distances from these 'erupting mountain ranges' there would be the least *incidences* of "cement in the lungs" and/or *inhaled* or *ingested* "tiny glass shards" *fatalities*. And yeah, I mean in such a case survivors would most usually have to be really 'far misses', that is, unless, for example, you somehow had plenty of **rain** following such *pyroclastic explosions* that washed all the *ash* out of the sky while you were safe and sound inside like, an **ark**, or something.

And by-the-way, I watched a 2005 "fictional documentary"—meaning the writers and filmmakers used 'existing known', and in this case, 'established scientific facts' to anticipate likely outcomes by way of a "drama, action, thriller" movie. This 'fact-based, fictional, future-set docudrama' is called *Supervolcano*, and I believe it is to some extent a realistic portrayal of what could happen if the "great cove of magma located below the [Yellowstone] caldera's surface" *erupted*. This "exceptionally large" *caldera*, or what we might just call a 'gigantic volcano hole', measures "about 34 by 45 miles (55 by 72 km)", and is estimated to have about 100 times the "volcanic explosivity index" (VEI) of the 1980 Mount St. Helens 'blast', and is further defined by my encyclopedia as follows:

Volcanic eruptions sometimes empty their stores of magma so swiftly that they cause the overlying land to collapse into the emptied magma chamber, forming a geographic depression called a caldera.

The movie about this "exceptionally large" *caldera* is described by the filmmakers to be "a tale told from former Yellowstone scientists, who recall the final days before Yellowstone erupted, and everything changed forever." And my encyclopedia tells how it could happen, reporting,

The volcanic eruptions, as well as the continuing geothermal activity, are a result of a great cove of magma located below the caldera's surface. The magma in this cove contains gases that are kept dissolved only by the immense pressure that the magma is under. If the pressure is released to a sufficient degree by some geological shift, then some of the gases bubble out and cause the magma to expand. This can cause a runaway reaction. If the expansion results in further relief of pressure, for example, by blowing crust material off the top of the chamber, the result is a very large gas [or "gray", *pyroclastic*] explosion.



And the 'graphic representation' from the movie about the 'possible' *volcanic ash fallout over The Central and Western United States* from such a *Yellowstone Caldera*, "worst-case-scenario" *eruption* is shown by the computer graphics ("CG") 'satellite photograph' on p.146. The 'potential' new *caldera*, much larger than the present one, larger than some states, can be seen in the upper right quadrant of this graphic representation.

Oh, and to relate another 'providential experience of geological significance', when I was attending UCSD, (located near the bottom of the giant San Joachin Valley running through the center of California on the 'satellite photo'), Mount St. Helens 'blew'. The next day we saw a light but visible 'showering' of *volcanic ash* falling on campus which had traveled a 1,000 miles from that *pyroclastic explosion*. A hundred times that much *ash* would have been 'difficult to live with' to say the least.

Of course my encyclopedia also 'informs' us that the last 3 "supereruptions" at Yellowstone took place over half a million to over 2 million years ago. But by now it should be clear that these 'greatest of eruptions' were more likely the results of Venus, and all happening closer to about 3500 years ago. And the *evolutionists* that write such 'encyclopedia entries' are, in at least some 'compartments' of their brains, *uniformitarians*, and even *catastrophists* like Dr. Velikovsky to some extent are, because they all think that 'ridiculously great intervals of time' occur between the more 'dramatic events'. But they also don't seem to **understand**, though in this case *catastrophists* are to some extent exceptions, that *volcanic activity* isn't 'heating up' any more, but is really still cooling down, and that *earthquakes* aren't increasing, but decreasing both in number and intensity. They don't **understand** that all the *volcanic* and *seismic activity* must be lessening ever since there has been nothing significant—like Mars—to continue to 'stir it up' anymore, that is, to the levels of its former, and to us, long past "explosivity". And I mean that for us, the 'extra-terrestrially-assisted', 'volcanic-and-seismic-activity-intensifying' interactions with Mars are indeed relatively "long past", and Dr. Velikovsky offers more than just 'implicative evidence' for this, as we will see, especially in **SECTION 10**. So yes, and geologically speaking, things must still be 'calming down' since Mars, but God assures me that further, 'greater-than-ever-before', *volcanic* and *seismic activity* is on the way, which both the last **study** and this one together offer much more than just 'implicative evidence' for too. And yes, I mean I **believe** that The Spirit can and really does **shew you things to come**, and in as **deep** detail as you are **able to bear**, but no more than to the extent that you **ask, seek, and knock** for **answers**. Uh-huh.

But please also **understand** that surely **God knoweth** absolutely '**every sparrow**' He either kills or allows to die—and really every *unicellular organism* for that matter—and that He has '**unimaginably precisely**', to much less than a hair's-breadth, as well as to the last *unicellular organism*, '**planned**' it all, including, for example, the exact *magnitude* and *distance* of each of these **great pyroclastic explosions** in relation to **the children of Israel** when they were escaping Egypt, as well as any '**saving graces**' needed to protect them in cases where one of them was otherwise too close. Uh-huh. And of course I also mean He **predestinated** even all these deadly *explosions*, even **from the foundation of the world**, and even as **all things**, '**endlessly shewing**' each of **us** simultaneously both **the goodness and severity of God**, though surely the more '**spiritual perspectives**' of all this are mostly only available to those of **us** who are paying attention, and

then only to the extent that **we** each **'continue in so doing'**. And yeah, that's who I not only expect, but also daily experience that They is (*gic*).

And really I'm just agreeing with the Apostle Paul, who **teacheth** that,

...[all] **the works were finished from the foundation of the world** [Heb 4:3](#).

And yeah, we can now **understand**, in The Natural Progression of The Knowledge of God by The Word of God, that since The Fall, generally speaking, as Paul is here, what we're mostly experiencing is just the **'fall out'** (DP-PAMD) from God's **'cursed Creation'**, which He is using to **bring The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation upon the earth**, these **great judgments** being **'accomplished'** by what I call an awesome 'cosmic demolition derby/billiards game' that **was ordained to bring** them, that is, to **bring** a series of **'great instruments of both life and death'**. And part of the main **purpose** of this **study** is to **teach** you **'increasingly'** about these, what I have called, **'introductions to God'**, even as I myself **continue** to be **'introduced'** to Him in this **way**. And I am just as surely being **taught** by Them to make such **'introductions'**, that is, as I **continue in** the **teaching** of Jesus and the Apostles and Prophets, as well as in **every word of God, by the Spirit**.

And we should therefore pause here to **remember**—because at each **'step'** we should be **able** to do so with **'increased spiritual discernment'**—what all the 'planetary debris' from God's **'great instruments of both life and death'** really is, that it is generally either God's **'ordinance'** (**'preceptual'** pun intended, hereafter P-PAMD, or if a double or more, MP-PAMD, M for 'multiple'—and by-the-way, there have been no single 'partial' puns so far identified), and that is, **'ordinance'** for both offensive and defensive protection of **his people**, surely including His **accepted** Gentiles too, and otherwise for their **'provision'** and/or **chastisement**, or, also generally speaking, and as God has repeatedly spoken about **the people of the earth**, it is, and again will be, part of **his purpose to destroy the sinners thereof out of it**. Though in the case of The Flood, just **the waters** seem to have been sufficient for both the **great deliverance** of **his people**, as well as His means to **destroy the sinners** that He **predestinated** would never be. However He surely used this **flood of waters** and the 'debris' for many reasons, some revealed, at least to me, only quite recently, and surely others that are still to be revealed, as over time I expect The Spirit will continue to **shew me**. But again, with further **meditation** in these **'studies'**, and through other experiences, He will continue, unendingly really, to **shew you** such reasons too.

And for an example back at the time of its original use—and I mean during The Flood—I have more recently imagined that all this 'airborne debris' helped further to prevent any of the stronger, smarter and/or more resourceful **sinners** from successfully 'pulling off' any 'last ditch effort' to 'ride out' and survive this **'roaring flood of waters'**. **Remember** they had incredible stamina and intelligence, hence resourcefulness. And some of them were **'angel-human bred'**, that is, more or less 'superhuman'. But yeah, we now **know** that besides the overwhelming **turbulence**, which evidently only **the ark** was **builded** to withstand, it wasn't just 'raining' harmless **water**. So there must have been reasons why it took 150 days for **the waters** to be **abated**, maybe the most important of which might be that some **'angel-human bred' sinners** may have somehow survived for a 100 days or more, just not 150. And they were certainly **'unimaginably precisely targeted'** by God's **'absolutely infallible smart ordinance'** (PMP-PAMD?—'partial' and 'multi-preceptual') as He required.

Providentially enough, I saw a British television crime drama recently where the

'serial killer' sneaks up on his victims and hits them over the head with a rock, and because of their disoriented, semi-conscious state, is able to drown them in available water. And I'm thinking that in The Flood this was certainly one of the ways God, as He would, was able to...

...lay low ^{H8213} **the haughtiness of the terrible** ^{H6184} [Isa 13:11](#).

Of course **low**, in this case, is about as 'low' as you can get on the Earth, that is, *buried* in *sedimentary rock*. So it occurs to me that the writers of this television production weren't the first to come up with such an **evil** idea. God was, which entirely agrees with His **testimony** about Himself, that,

I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create ^{H1254}
evil ^{H7451}:

I the LORD do ^{H6213} **all these things** [Isa 45:7](#).

And adding 'humbling' insults to 'falling rock' head injuries, we can also '**preceptually deduce**' that '**angel-human bred**' **sinner**s became 'lesser superhumans' after Earth's *magnetic field* was 'short circuited' and the *water canopy* came down, huh. I mean, kind of like when Noah was 'caught off guard' by *faster fermentation* in *direct sunlight*, these 'superhumans' must have been too, and that is, by how relatively quickly they were becoming fatigued without those Pre-Flood 'enhancements' that used to be available under the *water canopy*, not to mention that in a *weakened magnetic field* even their brains must have felt a little 'foggy' by comparison, especially if also hit on the head with a '**precisely targeted**' rock.

And for another reason recently **revealed** to me about God's 'planetary debris', this time applying to today—and thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, that is, for his faithfully enough provided evidence—I can now **see** that God used this **flood of waters**, along with whatever combination of Earth's and Mercury's *volcanic ash* that was dumped into it, to **send...strong delusion** to today's *evolutionists*, even *catastrophists* like Dr. Velikovsky. I mean with their '**blinded-in-the-mind**' and '**naturally truth-hating**' focus (read, compartmentalizing or worse) such *underground ash beds* do make it appear that these *underground sedimentary layers* must have been individually 'exposed' for much longer "periods" of time than the Bible story otherwise **revealeth** to '**renewed-mind truth-lovers**'. And maybe you noticed that I'm implying that **stars** and *starlight* itself is one of the '**strongest delusions**' imaginable, because it is 'naturally' impossible, given that God has clearly informed us that His Creation is no more than about 6,000 years old, that the *starlight* that 'stretches' for billions of *lightyears* could be 'naturally' as old as it appears. And no, even Satan can't compete with that.

And speaking of '**renewed-mind truth**', and how much I **love** to **grow** in it, from all this it seems we may deduce that Mercury's surface does not contain a lot of *iron oxide*, because Noah did not report that any of all those **waters** engulfing the Earth turned *red*, at least not near the surface where he could see it anyway. And **remember** Mercury is classified as a *blue planet*, and Venus and Mars as *red*. In fact it is this '**invisible**' or '**deduced precept**' that finally 'sparked' the **revelation** for me that it was indeed Mercury that God used as His '**great instrument of death**' to **bring a flood of** [*blue* and not *red*] **waters upon the earth**.

But do you **remember** "the Old Red Sandstone in the northeast of Scotland" that Drs. Agassiz and Buckland visited? Whether it was later uncovered and/or disturbed by Venus or not, this now *red rock* was surely 'laid' by Mercury. And evidently there

are other *sedimentary layers* generally characterized, at least regionally, as *red*, including a variety of 'shades' of *red*. But were they *red* when they were first 'laid'? I mean were they 'stained' with *iron oxide* during The Flood? And did Mercury somehow provide some source of *iron oxide* after all? Or was it mostly provided from the Earth? Or was it mostly later turned *red* by Venus somehow? And I mean I never until now tried to imagined how Venus could turn *underground layers* of *sedimentary rock* various 'shades' of *red*, thinking that only Earth could somehow do it in the *settling process*, or somehow afterward, imagining, for example, that maybe 'iron-oxide rich' *underwater lava* that was *ejected* from Earth's *crust* 'stained' the *layers* as they were being 'laid'. Or maybe there were *pockets* of *iron oxide* in what I have called the Genesis topsoil, possibly where *iron* and *underground water storehouses*—*aquifers*—co-existed, which somehow 'dyed' the *rock* before it was made into *sediment*, or maybe after The Flood by similar means. But none of this really explains how entire *layers* of *sedimentary rock*—in the regions where they exist—are entirely *red*, while often the below and/or above *layers* abruptly cease to be. And yeah, I'm *seeing* another '*mystery*' here, which to *evolutionists* would be more of that long-ago *buried*, but only recently 'exposed', *strong delusion* that God surely '*sent on purpose*'.

And surely God has a lot of *purposes*, including *high* ones, my experience being that they may sometimes involve a person with a *high calling* that—you should *believe* by now—God can nevertheless *accomplish* through them by His *excellent...working* in them, including as necessary, though preferably '*decreasingly*', despite them. But you'd have to guess that this is mostly going to happen with '*renewed-mind truth-lovers*', who will from their perspective *work* together with The Spirit *toward the mark* of *revealing* God's '*ever higher thoughts and ways*' and '*ever deeper things*'. And so apparently, because in my experience it is '*increasingly*' usual for me, I could tell I had been prepared for a rather immediate explanation for this 'apparent mystery', as it immediately 'popped into my head', even as I was forming and recording the questions. And I mean in this instance, as I was writing the above paragraph, and the questions in it, (which in this case would be '*documented asking, seeking, and knocking*', something I have been doing most actively since the start of the first *study* really), an '*approved answer*' occurred to me, that is, how a specific kind of *underground sedimentary rock* that originally was not *red* could have later been turned *red*, and this, at least mostly, by God's *work* using Venus.

Remember in The Great Tribulation—yes, this would be '*future remembering*'—how The 2nd and 3rd Plague Judgments will turn first *aboveground* and next *underground water blood red*. 'Well', (pun 'deeply' intended), from this I imagine how *layers* of *sedimentary rock* that previously were not *red*, became *red*. And yes, I mean that God used Venus not only to turn *water* temporarily *red*, but also to turn some rock 'permanently' *red*. How could this happen? A little further on we will look closer at more of the workings of this phenomenon to improve your perspective even further, but let it suffice for now to say that different *layers* of *sedimentary rock* not only have different *densities*, but also different levels of *hydraulic conductivity*. This means that some *sedimentary rock conducts water* through itself quite 'well'—this being what an *aquifer* is, and where "well water" comes from—while other *sedimentary rock* does not *conduct water* through itself so 'well', requiring, if you want *water*, drilling through it to *rock* that does. So only the *sedimentary rock* with sufficient *hydraulic conductivity* was able to be turned *red underground*, while *rock* with little or no *hydraulic conductivity* kept their original colors, with this 'reddening phenomenon' not as much occurring by the '*pushing and sloshing*' of '*iron-oxide-reddened water*' over Earth's surface, but more by

it's movement—at a much more restricted pace—through *sedimentary rock*, that is, through the *rock* that has sufficient *hydraulic conductivity*.

So let me guess, maybe even **'preceptually deduce'**, that all *red sedimentary rock* has at least some *hydraulic conductivity*, and that 'darker' *red rock* likely has more, while 'lighter' *red rock* likely less, and *rock* that is not *red* at all likely has little to no *hydraulic conductivity*. Of course there must be many other factors in the 'dyability' of *rock* to consider.

See the pictures on p.150 of the various 'shades' of *sedimentary rock*, from very *red* (likely *high hydraulic conductivity* - HHC) to not *red* at all (likely *very low hydraulic conductivity* - LHC). However remember these pictures really only show us less than the 'bottom-half' of the 11 or 12 so-called "Period" *layers*, (12 for those who split the "Tertiary Period"), which, and however many of them are represented in any given place, were actually all 'laid' by Mercury, and later to some extent 'exposed', and apparently to various extents 'reddened' by Venus, that is, when by various means 'she' was responsible for 'washing away' a lot of the *sedimentary rock* that Mercury had previously 'laid', and responsible for **'pushing and sloshing'** a lot of **'red water'** through that *rock*, including, for example, through **The Grand Canyon** (pictures, p.149). And this would mean that it was primarily Venus that turned *underground sedimentary rock*, any *rock* that had some *hydraulic conductivity* and was 'dyable', more or less *red*, and that is, with all its **'pushing and sloshing'** not of just *aboveground water*, but also by a more restricted version of the same thing going on with *underground water*, including within *sedimentary rock*. Of course



Mars probably contributed to turning *hydraulically conductive sedimentary rock* a 'shade' or so 'darker' *red*, not to mention, by *glacial action* and *melting*, helped 'wash away' some more *sedimentary rock* too. And so *blue* Mercury would not have had to leave behind much if any *red rock* at all, or not any other than what the Earth 'herself' managed to 'redden' here and there as a result.

And by-the-way, *Genesis rock (bedrock)* and *igneous (or volcanic) rock* have what is deemed *very low hydraulic conductivity* (VLHC), which would be virtually none, so they naturally contain and preserve *aquifers*, or 'contain' the *water* within the *hydraulically conductive rock* they border, but evidently in some places "shield" them from the surface too, which is one reason why in some places 'drilling for water' is necessary, and all of which, again, we'll elaborate a little further on a little

later on.

And take a look again at that smallest picture above. See those 'thin black and white layers' within all that otherwise *red rock*? What's that? I could be wrong, but I'm thinking these 'thin layers' are not just the result of the *very low hydraulically conductivity* (VLHC) of its *black* and *white* components, but also the result of intermittent skyward *pyroclastic* ('hot rock fragment') *explosions*, whether on Earth or Mercury.

And notice these pictures also confirm that this *canyon* was once overflowing with *red water*, as some of the 'not-all-washed-away' top *layers* are *red*, at least on one side. And The Spirit also—through a comment by that '**close friend**'—**revealed** to me something else in these pictures, that is, one of the reasons why *sea* and *ocean water*, etc., are no longer *red*. Why? Besides that the *evaporation* that results in *rain* separates *iron oxide* from *water*, evidently all the *hydraulically conductive rock* did its share too, that is, to 'filter out' and 'capture' all the *iron oxide* that comes through it, which it apparently eventually did.

So it's time for another **pop quiz**. Can you tell, in the panoramic shot, which side must be the north side and which the south? And in the narrower shots does it look to you like maybe more *ash* was falling later in the 'less-than-150-day' *settling process* than earlier? And can you guess why this may have been? And relax. There are no '**provably**' **right** answers here.

But to appropriately **give...the glory** to Whom **the glory** is due in 'all this' (PAMD), I should emphasize that I did not learn how *ash beds* ended up within and between *layers* of *sedimentary rock*, or how whole, isolated *layers* of *sedimentary rock* 'turned red' from Dr. Velikovsky. And I mean he surely helped indirectly, just not directly like The Spirit does. However he does directly acknowledge that it was Mercury which was involved in that 'Tower of Babel incident', even acknowledging the Bible story that relates to it as evidence of it, but, since he evidently did not yet really **know God**, let alone His '**mindboggling awesomeness**', he was unable to accept that earlier Bible story, and could not see that Mercury had a '**hand**'—or metaphorically was God's **outstretched arm** and **mighty hand**, or more literally, one of His '**great instruments of death**' that also '**accomplished**' exactly what that earlier Bible story describes too. But I should also appropriately admit again that I would never have come to so many of these **revelations**—and so many more to come, both in this **study** and beyond—without Dr. Velikovsky's help, God **save** His **soul** in Isreal, which in this case is my '**documented hope and prayer**'

And beyond this, since on Earth we **know**—and with Dr. Velikovsky's help will further establish —that Mercury raised 'Mercury class' *mountains*, and Venus much larger 'Venus class' *mountains*, then what kind of *mountains*—and 'volcanic activity'—do you imagine Earth 'pulled' from Mercury? Uh-huh, I expect 'Earth-class' *mountains* and *volcanoes* were 'raised' on Mercury, supposedly comparable to the 'Venus-class' ones on Earth. However we will eventually confirm that the *mountains* and *volcanoes* that were 'raised' on Mars during 'his' later '**visits**' to Earth, with Mars being a little larger but less *dense* than Mercury, must have been higher than the ones Earth 'raised' on Mercury, and for two reasons. With more '**visits**', and a tendency toward similar *magnetically stabilized orientations*—which I will attempt to better explain shortly—Mars should have experienced more 'pulling' from the Earth over the same *ground*, and in any case it would have been on less *dense* and therefore 'more pullable' *ground*. **Remember** more *dense* Mercury '**visited**' only twice, at least as far as it has been remembered, these 2 '**visits**' including an unknown number of 'close-Earth' *orbits*, while we may '**preceptually deduce**' that less *dense* Mars '**visited**' 7 times, and with likely a much larger number of 'close-Earth' *orbits*.

And **remember** that though Mars is bigger than Mercury', they have the same *surface gravity*. (And no, I'm not compartmentalizing; it's just a convenient term to consolidate the apparently multiple *forces* involved). So not only should we expect higher *mountains* from the 'pull' from Earth on the less dense, 'more pullable', and more often 'pulled' surface of Mars', we should also expect that, compared to Mars, Mercury, though not as repeatedly, would on each pass 'pull' from Earth 'higher but narrower' *mountains*, ones I imagine would be 'thinner-skinned' and therefore more easily become 'exploding mountains'. And I mean that though likely fewer in number, I imagine that they would nonetheless tend toward more *pyroclastic volcanic activity*, that is, along the 'pull lines' of Mercury on Earth, which, to be even more specific, would be because of the more 'densely concentrated pull' from Mercury as compared to Mars.

Think of it as the difference when the same '**person**' that is 'sucking on a straw'—in this case 'sucking' *magma* from underneath the Genesis rock—uses a narrower and then later a wider straw. In this comparison I also imagine 'thicker material' being lifted in the narrower straw than in the wider one, if you see what I mean. But the composition of the *rock* and innumerable other possible factors must be in play here too. Of course there is also the distinction that Mercury was, at least at first, 'sucking' on Genesis topsoil, while Mars had, besides again the Genesis *bedrock* underneath, only Mercury's 'reconfigured' *sedimentary rock* to 'suck on'. And I'm just guessing that these too are significant factors in the formation of *red* as opposed to *grey volcanoes*. And we should also **remember** that Mars could further 'pull' on what Mercury and Venus had previously 'pulled' on Earth, while Mercury had only one chance to 'pull' on its own previous **work**. But I can 'top all that'. And I mean I will eventually **reveal** the *planet* in our Solar System where the highest known *mountain* exists, and even the 'perpetrators' of its 'pulling', but at this point, to stay on track, only that this '**great mountain**' is not on the 'visible side' of Mercury.

And instead, at this point, because I promised to "attempt to better explain" the meaning of "similar *magnetically stabilized orientations*", you should **remember** that it is by all these *forces* that Mercury keeps the same side toward the Sun, like the Moon does to the Earth, and so has a perpetually unseen "dark side" too, which, (besides showing we're not compartmentalizing about 'gravity'), is another phenomenon that Dr. Velikovsky's identifies as the result of a 'temporary balance' of both the 'special' and 'normal' *magnetic forces*, or of the 'special' *electromagnetic attraction and repulsion forces* with the 'normal' *atomic magnetic attraction and repulsion forces*, whereby—with literally **all things** working together—our Solar System's still 'relatively stable' *motions and operations* can for a 'long time', but no longer indefinitely, continue.

More specifically—and despite that these **ordinances** are now 'under' **the curse**—the 'special' *magnetic forces* of the larger, generally *spherical magnets* (the Sun and *planets*) still tend to 'orientate' and 'stabilize' the *orbits* of the smaller, generally *spherical magnets* (*moons, meteors, and comets*) *orbiting* them, all of which, in one *magnetically stabilized orientation* or more, also circle our supreme *magnetic orientater and stabilizer*, the Sun, and where these 'special' *magnetic forces* **work** together with the 'normal' *magnetic* and 'gravitational' *forces*, (popularly thought to be just 'gravity'), which in turn **work** together with the *linear (velocity) and angular (spin) momentums* of all these usually or formerly *magnetized objects* to keep them 'relatively stable' in their *orbits*, (and I mean that *orbits* can be 'temporarily sustained' with 'less stability' without the 'additional help' of 'special' *forces* too), with their *momentums*, (determined by their *mass, velocity and spin*), and their resulting *orbits* surely originally '**preordained**' for them by God in Creation Week,

and that is, until The Curse, when He then **ordained** His **judgments** upon the Earth by 'slightly destabilizing' His original **ordinances**, so that these 'generally spherical objects' should become *perturbed* and 'redirected' by 'close encounters', which in some cases resulted—or will result—in *collisions*, or in 'planet-pulled', 'planet-sized', *volcanic bombs*, (or '**great fiery pearls of God**', which I will explain shortly), as well as in other both *elastic* and *inelastic* 'interactions' that altogether greatly not only 'redirect' various *objects* in our Solar System, but in some cases also greatly increase their numbers, though at the cost of greatly decreasing them in size, that is, by making lots of *asteroids* and *comets* out of what used to be *planets*.

And yes, I'm talking about God's 'cosmic demolition derby/billiards game' again, but also about how this 'game' is **ordained** by God's '**cursed ordinance of heaven and earth**', which surely and nevertheless carries on **all...according to his purpose**, that is, not just for **signs** and **seasons**, but also to **accomplish** His **great judgments** on Earth, including to occasionally **destroy the sinners thereof out of it**, and also to some extent to **maintain** and sufficiently **preserve** the Earth from '**dying**' too fast in its **cursed** state, even to **restore** it—as we will see Jesus will do at the end of The Great Tribulation, which we will attempt to imagine more fully in later sections—but surely most of all, also to **save, defend, deliver** and **provide** for, though seemingly just as often also to **chastise** or **punish** the **iniquity** of, '**his chosen and accepted people**'.

So here I am finally ready to conclude, and hopefully '**rightly imagine**'—a 'relative' of '**rightly remember**' in that they are often mostly **the same** except in chronology—and I mean as I **believe** it was **shewed** to me by The Spirit, that Earth, in coordination with the various **ordinances of heaven and earth**, including using the then '**flowing**' and surely also sometimes '**drifting magnetic pole**' **windows of heaven**, '**siphoned**' great quantities, among other things, of Mercury's *volcanic ash* into Earth's *atmosphere*, which apparently also—I mean possibly along with what was **spewing** from the last, still-above-water, "Mercury class" *volcanoes* on Earth—landed on **the waters** in time to begin *settling out* as low as within and/or atop The 2nd Sedimentary Layer. Of course we're talking about **the work of God**, and about **his purposes**, and in this case one of the **purposes** of this **study**, which is to revisit such '**curse-initiated**' and '**God-driven phenomenon**', and recognize the similarities in them, expecting, as the Apostle Paul reports about Jesus, and as we can already '**preceptually deduce**' for ourselves about His and His Father's **works** and **ways**, that They needs no room for improvement, making it '**increasing understandable**' to say that They remains **the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever** (*gic*).

But Mercury is only the beginning of this, in some **ways**, repetitive '**fallout**', that is, as it applies to Earth, and we're really just getting started with the 'fallout' from Dr. Velikovsky's 'mindset' too. And I mean we're now finally ready for a discussion of the next or The 3rd Sedimentary Layer that he further somewhat 'mis-imagined', when he reported,

In the following Silurian period [or during the maybe several-days-to-a-few-weeks-long 'laying' of this next *layer*, then evidently increasing] volcanic activity broke out with new vigor [though in Dr. Velikovsky's perspective supposedly after yet another 'ridiculously long interval', and because of yet another 'mis-imagined visitor']. "In New Brunswick and especially in southeastern Maine, ash beds and lava flows attain the impressive thickness of 10,000 feet and more." Also in southern Alaska and northern California there are imposing lava flows, volcanic breccia [broken pieces of *rock melted* together] and tuff [again, a mix of *lava, ash* and *sedimentary rock*] dating from [or simply 'laid' in] this time [though

some of these “lava flows” were surely later just *embedded* in this *layer*, originally as *magma*, by later **‘visits’** of Mercury, Venus, and/or Mars].

And by my clarifications one of the things I mean is that, in this *layer* too, all of this ‘hot mess’ may not date “from [just] this time”, that is, from when this *sediment* was *accumulating*. I mean that if we’re talking about just “lava”—which has no formerly *airborne volcanic ash* in it—then it’s possible, for example, that only later, ‘Venus-extracted’ and *embedded magma* was involved, *magma* originating mostly from below the Genesis rock, which ‘broke’ and/or ‘melted’ its way up—while *melting* some *sedimentary rock* in the process too—and became *embedded* within and/or between this already existing 3rd Sedimentary Layer. Or I imagine if just “breccia”—with no formerly *airborne volcanic ash* in it—then it’s also possible, for example, that later, ‘Venus-triggered’, *underground volcanic explosions* may have formed it. But all of it could not be just the **work** of Venus, but must have included the **work** of Mercury too, because some of its **work** resulted in buried “tuff”, which supposedly at least generally contains what must have been at some point *airborne volcanic ash*.

And I mean the adjacent and/or intermixed “lava”, “breccia” and “tuff” in this 3rd Layer may not have all been *embedded* at the same ‘time’, and therefore by different means, and evidently by different ‘perpetrators’ too, where any ‘volcanic by-product’ possibly without *ash*, including the *lava*, which could really just be *magma*, and *breccia*, which I’m guessing could be formed *underground* too, might never have reached the *surface*, at least not above *water*. And so, besides the earlier-produced, ‘airborne-ash-free’ *volcanic activity* that took place entirely *underwater* with Mercury’s help, and there must have been some, there surely was even more later-produced, ‘airborne-ash-free’, entirely *underground* ‘volcanic by-products’ that instead ‘forced their way’ within or atop this previously ‘underwater-laid’ *layer*, that is, by the later ‘superior help’ of Venus, and also possibly with the later help from Mercury and Mars too.

And to further **‘belabour’** the point, as I so often do, as I **believe** by **experience** I should, and as you should be at least starting to **believe** too—it’s called **‘exercise’**—this necessarily ‘earlier-laid’ *tuff* apparently was, though only for a very short time, that is, during the *settling out* of the *sediments* of this *layer*, exposed to the timely *ejections* of *lava* erupting from Earth’s then *underwater crust*, which was added to at this time by *falling* and *settling ash*, and also at least in some cases by *falling* and *settling breccia* too (read, **great hailstones**, [H417](#) [H68](#) **fire**, [H784](#) **and brimstone** [H1614](#) which are **from the LORD out of heaven** [H8064](#), or just **from** [G575](#) **heaven** [G3772](#)), uh-huh, which I assume should include some *falling* and *settling volcanic bombing*, with all this **‘ordinance’** (P-PAMD) originating both from ‘Mercury-class’ *volcanoes* on Earth, as well as from “Earth-class” *volcanoes* on Mercury, a portion of which was **‘precisely planned’** by God to *settled out* in this *layer* along with the ‘next in line’ *sediments* from the Genesis topsoil, and all while this *layer* briefly, and though *submerged*, was still exposed, and therefore able for this brief time to accumulate not only the *settling* Genesis topsoil, but also whatever was *falling* out of the sky into the *water*, that is, before the next *layer* started to *settle*.

Of course later this *layer* was ‘breached’ by surely larger quantities of *volcanic materials*, that is, by the **work** of the much larger *planet* Venus, though in ‘her’ case adding nothing at this level with any formerly ‘airborne components’, I mean besides possibly those that are entirely *soluble* or *suspendable* in *water*, and ones that might change the color of both *water* and *rock*, and I mean *particles* otherwise small enough to stay ‘invisibly mixed’ in *water* without, at least quickly, *settling out*, and which could therefore also be transported into and through *rock* via *hydraulic conductivity*, if you see what I mean.

And by-the-way, **great hailstones** [H417](#) [H68](#), evidently literally means “stones of fire”, or “pearls of God”. So I’m guessing—but probably **‘preceptually deducing’**—that the ones that were not **burning** were evidently often enough recognizable as ‘round and hard’ like **‘great pearls’**, and I mean at least the ones that weren’t deformed or demolished upon impact with the Earth. And though *oyster pearls* tend to be thought of as “white”, they really come in all colors, including “red”, which I expect would have been much more common just after The Visits of Venus, but also of Mars. And I mean yes, whether **burning** or not, or whether they were deformed or demolished on impact or not, and whether more commonly seen in the past as ‘red’ or not, and really no matter what colors they were, many of the “stones” that fell out of the sky and landed on Earth—no matter what *planet* they originated from—were naturally given a name in Hebrew that means, whether ‘fiery’ or not, “pearls of God”. See the pictures chart of the variety of **colors of oyster pearls** on [p.153](#).



And I think this supports the idea that not only was there not much *red rock* before The Visits of Venus and Mars, but neither were there many *red oyster pearls* either. And I mean that I’m guessing that the color of *pearls* is related to how, where, and even to when they are made. How are they made? Well, when an *oyster* gets a ‘grain of dirt’ or ‘sand’ inside its *shell*, it can evidently become very irritating to its soft body, because God gave them a way to deal with that. They repeatedly *secrete* a *fluid* that *hardens* around such ‘irritating grains’, and they continue to do so until the *secretions* make a hard but smooth and round *pearl*. And I’m guessing in the case of *red pearls*, we’re starting with an irritating *red* ‘grain’, not to mention with an *oyster* that lives near a lot of *red rock*. Of course their diet and many other factors must be involved too. And you should now be able to imagine how other *grains* and *environments* might produce different *colors*. And you should also now be able to guess why someone would put an ‘irritating grain’—whatever its *color*—inside an *oyster shell*.

And this brings me to that “divinely **predestinated** personal story” of “cosmological significance” I **hoped** to remember to share “later on”, which also somehow brought to my attention something about **hope** [G1679](#) and [G1680](#), which in the KJV is translated from two Hebrew **words** that are ‘closely related’, and seems to be used interchangeably, with one of them also translated 18 times as **trust**, and the other translated once as **faith** in [Hebrews 10:23](#). And what I “somehow” realized

about **hope** is that it is also ‘closely related’ to the act of **prayer**—and **meditation** too for that matter—in that they are forms of direct communication with God whereby you should expect **answers** from Him. Of course the “somehow” in this case was again **by the Spirit**, who so **faithfully** will **teach you all things**, in order to **guide you into all truth**, and in the process as necessary also **bring all things to your remembrance**. And what I **‘remembered’** in this case was actually in a ‘case’, that is, in a ‘glass display case’ at the Maui International Airport.

This story of “cosmological significance” took place when I and my wife were the administrators of my Church’s “satellite homeschool program”, and we were on our first visit to Maui to meet with our “satellite homeschooling families” there. In that ‘glass display case’ was what looked to me at first glance like an old, large, bowling-ball-sized, cannon ball, which I first assumed was somewhat *oxidized (rusted)*. I mean it had what I thought was a ‘slight tint of red’ to it, but more just a ‘dark dirt color’. And it looked somewhat ‘flakey’ deep within, though the ‘flakes’ were thick and not small, each ‘flakey layer’ evidently encompassing the sphere, a ‘peeling crack’ here and there revealing this ‘flakiness’, though overall it just looked remarkably ‘round and hard’. Turns out as I read the information in the ‘case’ I discovered it was a “volcanic bomb” from an *eruption* of one of the *volcanoes* on The Big Island, also known as The Island of Hawaii. I seem to remember it was from the still *active* Mauna Loa *volcano*. And it is much less likely from Mauna Kea—where on top all those ‘last generation’ *telescopes* sit—as it has been long *dormant*. And Mauna Loa’s *activity* involves *less viscous* or “more fluid” *magma*, which is the kind needed to make *volcanic bombs*, while Mauna Kea, though *dormant*, is reported to have “more viscous” *magma* inside, which would be the kind to produce *pyroclastic explosive eruptions*.

My encyclopedia also says Mauna Kea’s ‘thicker’—evidently ‘silica-rich’, or ‘high in sand’—*magma* is the reason it has a “steeper profile”, and this implies that Mauna Loa’s “very fluid” (and “silica-poor” or ‘low in sand’) *magma* is the cause of its “relatively gentle slopes”, well, one of the reasons anyway. I mean besides the *silica* or *sand content*, which evidently determines how much if any *highly pressurized gas* can be trapped in the *magma*, I still think that the *size, mass* and *density* of each of the *planets* that ‘raised’ and/or ‘further raised’ these *volcanic mountains*, both of which are taller than Everest from their bases on the *Ocean floor*, should also be considered important factors in the resulting *viscosities*—or *sand content*—of the *melted rock* within them.

And whatever the case, since the authors of Scripture didn’t know about ‘cannon balls’ or ‘bowling balls’, it makes perfect sense that they would instead compare such *volcanic bombs* to *pearls*, and not to just *pearls*, but ‘pearls from the sky’, and not just ones of normal size either. So yes, it was indeed a “pearl of God” that God providentially **shewed** me that day, which The Spirit has on a number of occasions since **‘brought to my remembrance’** to aid in my various **‘corrections, improvements, and expansions of perspective’**. However the details of some of these **‘higher revelations’** that are associated with this story’s more ‘cosmological implications’ will be more appropriately shared in later sections, and whether or not The Spirit has already helped you figure out some of them yourself.

But to give you an even **better** hint, we’ve already been **‘introduced’** to the **‘wondrous variety’** found in the *crystallization* of *snowflakes*. And now you could say you’ve had an **‘introduction’** to at least the potential of the **‘wondrous variety’** that we will one day soon be able to witness in the *formation* of *volcanic bombs*, that is, of “pearls of God”. I mean The Great Tribulation is coming soon

enough. So I expect we'll soon thereafter have some first hand encounters with them, and with many, many more of them than the one I had involving that 'glass display case' at the Maui International Airport. And I mean I'm looking forward to seeing fields full of them, though I'm not expecting to personally witness the sky **rain a very grievous hail** [Exo 9:18](#)—and that is, while standing under that sky. But I am expecting they'll nonetheless *fall* in the **'wondrous variety'** that *snowflakes* do, including in 'bigger-than-life' size, and in every imaginable *color*, though I'm guessing that *red* ones will once again be the more common.

And I'm guessing that 'bowling' or 'curling' may not be just relatively modern inventions, nor do I think that suchlike games will go completely out of style in The Millennium. I mean I'm guessing that there will then be plenty of appropriately-sized 'balls' for rolling, etc., laying around, though no more *ice* to slide "curling stones" across anymore.

And all this brings us to one of the timely—and increasing in number—**'co-meditations'** I just had with my **'close friend'**, one which again **'further revealed'** to me—I am convinced—something God wanted to **shew us** just then, and of course now to you too, and ultimately to **all**, though you wouldn't at least at first think so, since it involves a verse primarily about some of God's **'Fatherly chastisement'** of Job, that is, one where God uses these particular examples of His **'wondrous variety'**—I mean of **snow** and **hail**—to 'put' Job 'in his place', kind of like how Jesus' **disciples** were 'put in their place' when He challenged each of them to **add to his stature one cubit**, or when He 'schools' them that they aren't even able to **make one hair white or black**. In the same way The Father, or is it Jesus, challenges Job, saying,

Hast thou entered into the treasures of the snow? or hast thou seen the treasures of the hail, Which I have reserved against the time of trouble, against the day of battle and war? [Job 38:22](#)

And surely Job is getting 'schooled' by God here too. How? He not only makes it clear that His **'wondrous treasures'** are far beyond Job's **'ability'** to fully **understand**, but also that these very same **treasures** are **reserved** (read, besides 'held in store', **predestinated, ordained** and **appointed**) for future **time[s]** of **trouble, battle and war** (read, **great judgments**), the **'worst'** of which we **know** is **promised** to be during The Great Tribulation. And we will **continue** to see how both **snow** and **hail** have **fulfilled** and will continue to **fulfil** this **promise** of God to Job.

Or as the **'sweet psalmist of Israel'** would **sing**,

Fire, and hail; snow, and vapour; stormy wind fulfilling his word... [Psalm 148:8](#).

And by-the-way, such **'time-of-trouble vapours'** would bring more than just **snow**, because it would bring enough of it to produce enormous quantities of *ice* too, that is, when that **stormy wind** carries enough of that **heated water vapour** to places where it gets *cold* enough to **condense** back into *water*, then **freeze**, and fall out as **snow**, but then start to 'pile up' on top of **frozen arctic oceans** and **land** and make **ice caps**, or atop **high mountains** until it makes **flowing glaciers**, huh.

And I **hope** you're starting to better **understand** my testimony that I'm not so smart. I mean I keep telling you it's all just what the Spirit **sheweth** me, including what God has long **prepared** me to be **able** to **see**. However I don't expect regular **revelations** at this **'level'** would come without regular **'strong exercise'**. It has taken days of **work**, each day as long as my brain lasts, from a few to several hours

each day, and most every **day**, to **perfect** a lot of these paragraphs, which includes the **meditation**, that is, mostly just ‘stewing’ on them overnight, and over time, with this **meditation**—and now with more and more ‘**co-meditation**’—continually proving to be as important to the process as the day’s **work** itself. I mean it is becoming clearer to me that spending time to **study to shew thyself approved unto God** is no more important than spending time with a **friend** where your **iron sharpeneth** each other’s **iron** [Pro 27:17](#), and that neither of these are more important than spending time to **commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still** [Psa 4:4](#).

And if I can continue to oversimplify, if there were really just one other “important” aspect to ‘**spiritual growth**’, that would be having access to a ‘**spiritual teacher**’. So it seems appropriate here to again **testify**, and you can ask my **friend** about it as he has known me for quite a while, that I have lacked a **teacher** other than The Spirit for most of my ‘**spiritual life**’, my **testimony** being that I have **learned ‘higher and deeper truth’**, other than **by the Spirit**, from identifying the **errors** of other **teachers**, rather than as much by their ‘**good teaching**’. And I mean I have long shared the **testimony** of King David that,

I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. I understand more than the ancients [“elders”], because I keep thy precepts [Psa 119:99-100](#).

And like Paul **encouraged** Timothy when he was relatively young, the Lord **encouraged** me also to...

...Let no man despise thy youth... [1Ti 4:12](#)

because indeed the Lord **shewed** me these verses, and even the ‘**dawning**’ of His **purpose** for me, all about three decades ago, this **purpose** being presently **revealed** in these ‘**studies**’, which is to provide ‘**good, strong, high, and deep spiritual teaching**’ in order to ‘**better encourage spiritual growth**’, or in other ‘**meaty words of God**’, to provide ‘**perfect principles of the doctrine of Christ**’. And for now I just mean that a ‘**gifted and spiritual teacher**’ of The Word is as “important” to ‘**spiritual growth**’ as **study**, ‘**iron sharpening**’ or ‘**heart communing**’, but also that I have had the ‘**best teacher**’ possible, that is, I have been **taught** directly by God. And I’m sorry to say that, besides His **help**, you’re stuck with me, not to mention that you likely still have no one to have ‘**good iron-sharpening sword fights**’ with, and that would be even if you look to those that regularly stand behind pulpits. In fact it has been my experience that such are more often than not somewhere between ‘**useless**’ to **dangerous** to so ‘engage’ at this ‘**level**’, and therefore that they more than others should generally be avoided in this way, even as **instructed** in the repeated **proverb**...

A prudent man foreseeth the evil, [or departeth from evil] and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished [Pro 22:3](#); [27:12](#); [see also [Pro 12:23](#)].

And yes, I mean I used to be **foolish** enough to ‘engage’ such ‘**would-be master swordsmen**’ and was each time **punished** for it, but I now consider myself to be someone who is more **prudent** and **wise**, who in such cases not only **1) foreseeth the evil**, but also **2) departeth from evil**, and even further as much as necessary **3) hideth himself**. But I am **hoping** to help remedy this too. It’s really a matter of time, and, as Jesus and the Spirit puts it (*gic*),

I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see [Rev 3:18](#).

And being **a preacher of righteousness** too, and increasingly **bound in the spirit** to **speak for God**, I must add that **shamefully**, so far, I mostly find just **'spiritually immature gifted teachers'**, and beyond that, at best, what I would call **'advanced-novice-level teachers'**, though there is no question that the **'better'** of these, like I've put it in the past, are "the best game in town", and that even the **'fodder'** of your local church, and **whosoever** is **servng** it up, is likely otherwise "the only game in town". I mean The Spirit, to whatever degree He is allowed by The Father, **'withstandeth'**, (read, **withholdeth** [G2722](#) or **letteth** [G2722](#), [2 Th 2:1-12](#)), isn't He? But of course this is only the case if they are Protestants, and even if they don't know it or act like it, though surely there are many Catholics and other 'priests' of the **'mystery religions'** that are just an **'exit'** away from joining this group at one **'level'** or another.

But I also mean that since before the turn of this year (2016), it now being late in the year, and with the help of my **'friend'**, The Lord has seen fit to let my **labour in the word** be my only **work**, so that I now no longer **work** just full to overtime, and an average of just 2 out of every 3 days—which was my regimen since June 2006—but now, since late last year, I **study** most every day. I mean I recall missing only 6 days so far this year, 2 of those used to move, and the other 4 to **visit** [Jas 1:27](#) and **honour** my still surviving parent, as I am **commanded** by God, Jesus and the Apostles to do ([Exo 20:12](#); [Deu 5:16](#); [Mat 15:4](#); [19:19](#); [Eph 6:2](#), etc). And I mean there has not been a day where I have been too sick to **study** for as long as I can remember.

And by-the-way, I regularly **visited** [Mat 25:31-46](#) my other parent before she died last year, and especially while she was bedridden for the last 6 years of her life, spending the whole day for days at a time at her bedside several times a year, while I regularly wrote to and phoned, but now mostly just spend hours on the phone weekly with my still surviving parent otherwise, who I now only occasionally **visit**, as he now lives so far away, though I have a couple times, and God willing will continue to add to the several thousand miles I have already traveled to do so, with all this **'visiting'** and **'honouring'** being for 'folks' that I could only best **spiritually** describe as PIHO's (see [RGT](#)), though I have reason to think (read, **hope**) that one of them is presently nonetheless **'safely redeemed'**, if little more. And I mean I did and continue to do all this more than anything else because I **fear God**, that is, I **fear** the consequences if I don't.

However I also mean, for example, that besides the 'first draft' to this section, which I started sometime last year, I've worked on **perfecting** this section, just up to this point, from the end of March into November, 2016. So I can only think that such **'concentrations of revelations'** can only come from **'concentrated meditation'** along with **'concentrated labour in the word and doctrine'**. And I wouldn't do a thing differently, as I can **see** more and more, most every single day, that it's really just **the work of the LORD**, including each and every one of His **'ordered steps'** by which He **worketh in 'me' mightily**. I mean the experience continues to be increasingly mindboggling to 'short-circuiting'—usually on a daily basis—every **'ordered step of the way'**, as I **hope** it is for you too.

But getting back to this '3rd-from-the-bottom', supposedly 'multi-visited' in 'ridiculously long intervals', so-called Silurian Period, and jumping over to Northern Europe, Dr. Velikovsky concluded,

The close of this period was marked by the so-called Caledonian disturbance [now, Caledonian Orogeny] in Europe [though apparently at least some *evolutionists* have further '**mis-imagined**' the timing of this], with a mountain crest rising across the British Isles and Scandinavia. "Throughout the length of Norway and Sweden, a distance of exceeding 1100 miles, the pre-Devonian [or by more recent '**mis-imaginings**', 'fully Devonian' or later] formations were folded, overturned, and overthrust with eastward movement on individual fault planes as great as 20 to 40 miles [that is, evidently along the 'line' or 'lines' Venus was then passing over the Earth, evidently 'splitting loose' and 'dragging along' *ground* with 'her']." Again, [necessarily Pre-Flood] coral [- since it is buried in this *sedimentary layer* -] grew in [what at some point later ended up in] arctic regions.

And surely Dr. Velikovsky thinks, as do I, that there likely was at least some "tuff" that was 'deposited' in this Silurian level in this Northern European 'mess' too. But again I can only '**rightly imagine**' that it must have been long before Venus came along to 'shred' this layer, and make a 'mess' of it, along with all the others. And I mean the laying of any "tuff" in it only possibly occurred during The Flood, during the 'period' of weeks, lasting up to 5 months—or 150 days—when all the *sediments* were being 'laid', except that the "tuff" that ended up within or atop the Silurian *layer* must have been laid in a much shorter period of probably just days and not weeks, that is, only when this *layer* was to any degree still being laid and/or was still exposed. And I'm still guessing that the later in these 5 months that *sediment* was *settling*, the less likely there were any remaining *unsubmerged* "Mercury class" *volcanoes* still 'spewing' *volcanic ash* into the sky from Earth's surface, and the more likely it was that the *volcanic ash* from the more 'dramatic volcanic activity' happening on Mercury was finally and increasingly making it's way into Earth's *atmosphere*, though evidently 'piling-up' in some regions more noticeable than in others. (And yes, this is my answer to one of the last **pop quiz** questions).

And though Dr. Velikovsky at least to some extent seems to '**mis-imagine**' these 'events' as all taking place in the same "period", that is, from the time this *layer* starts to be 'laid' to when it finishes, and I mean in the same "period" when there is vigorous "overthrusting" and 'splitting and dragging' of "fault planes" (read, 'planet-split-and-pulled ground') along their *fault lines* (or 'ground-splitting lines'), and though he saw it all happening between 'ridiculously long intervals', we may nonetheless '**rightly divide**' (P-PAMD) these "events" into different 'periods', though

see them all easily fitting into less than 2 millennia.

And I mean you should at least be starting to **see** that the *settling* of the *sediment* and most the 'ripping apart' of this *layer* happened more than a millennia apart, since this is altogether both the 'sedimentary-rock-laying' **work** of Mercury and the later and greater 'ground-shredding-and-lifting' **work** of Venus. And whether or not this 'Venus-class-mountain-range-raising' "disturbance in Europe" is still thought to have happened in the Silurian or Devonian Period, or even later, there is still no problem for us, as we may expect that *ash* and *lava* and *breccia* could have earlier become *embedded* along with *settling flood waters sediments* because of Mercury's 'sedimentary-rock-laying' **work**, and that later just *magma*—confused for *lava*—could have "upwelled" and 'forced its way' into and atop this *layer* because of the 'ground-shredding-and-lifting' **work** of Venus.

And yes, I also mean I'm thinking that at the actual time of the accumulation of this Silurian *sediment*, Mercury's contribution to Earth's *atmospheric volcanic ash*

was then more fully 'kicking in', so that during the time of this accumulation, whatever *ash* God had '**planned**' to reach Earth, and whatever **measure** of *lava* being expelled *underwater* contributed to the "thickness" Dr. Velikovsky is reporting in this *layer*. But to fully "attain the impressive thickness of 10,000 feet and more", I'm thinking there would have had to be a 'bigger draw', or 'draws', and that these 'bigger draws' and 'greater liftings and shreadings' were most likely the '**precise**' *magnetically stabilized and oriented work* of God by the later 'visits' of Venus.

And I again say '**precise**'—and even again '**remind**' you that God is '**unimaginably precise**'—because He evidently is. I mean you should **know** He not only **meted out heaven with the span**, (yes, **with** that particular "half-cubit" *unit of measure*—and yeah, an '**infinite number**' of them), but also that it is a **small thing** to Him that He...

...measured [all] **the waters in the hollow of his hand... and comprehended** [all] **the dust** [read, "ground" or *dirt*] **of the earth in a** [single] **measure, and weighed** [individually] **the mountains in scales, and the hills** [individually too] **in a balance** [and I add the word "individually" because I'm guessing he **telleteth** '**their**' **number** and **calleth** '**them**' **all by their names** too] [Isa 40:12](#); [[Psa 147:4](#)].

And do you think He can't **measure** down to the last *molecule* or *atom*? And beyond that, do you think that He couldn't '**precisely weigh**' and **know**, at any given time, the increasing 'astronomical number' of 'stray', *atomically-radiated, subatomic particles* which are the result of the *destabilization of atoms* since **the curse** too? And even if you think you **understand** what I'm talking about, you can **see** that there is really no way for us to fully '**imagine**' such things, let alone '**precisely measure**' them, because you should remember we are not only finding new *subatomic particles* all the time, but also finding new 'subcomponents' and 'subcomponents of subcomponents' of *subatomic particles* all along the way too. And I no more **believe** we'll stop finding these than we will stop finding **stars**. And I mean isn't that Who He really is?

And by-the-way, a **span** is defined as the distance from the tip of the thumb to tip of the middle finger. And that could be about a "foot", or "half cubit", if you had Pre-Flood 'giant hands'. Then again, God can '**hold**', metaphorically speaking or not, all **the waters** on Earth **in the hollow of his hand**—not to mention that the whole Earth **is his footstool**—which, when it comes to Him having **meted out heaven**, would be a whole other **span** altogether.

Moving up in the *layers*, and returning to the Appalachians, then back to Northern Europe, and also to Australia, but finally actually 'collapsing the bridge' from North America to Europe, Dr. Velikovsky next passed along his 'information/misinformation' about the "Acadian disturbance" —now the "Acadian Orogeny"—which apparently relates to the Appalachians' Acadian Mountains, but more specifically to The 3rd Appalachian Orogeny—the Taconic Orogeny being the 2nd—of the supposedly 4 'mountain-raising events' that altogether account for the entire Appalachian Orogeny. And if this is really a 'later addition' to the Appalachians, from our perspective this may have happened other than on the original **visit** of Mercury, but also that there probably is something to my *theory of magnetically-stabilized-and-oriented* 're-passes' of *planets* over the same *ground*, and even if it's just a 'set' of *orbits* occurring on one **visit**. However it has more recently been '**re-mis-imagined**' (e.g., [Jas 1:8](#) with [Prov 14:12](#) / [16:25](#)). And with Dr. Velikovsky still quoting Dr. Dunbar's *Historical Geology*, his

'misunderstanding' was that,

The next (Devonian) period was marked by a so-called Acadian disturbance [- The 3rd Appalachian Orogeny, evidently really just a 'later passing' of Mercury, or maybe Mars]. "Much igneous [*volcanic*] activity accompanied the Acadian disturbance. Great thickness of bedded lavas and tuffs in southern Quebec, Gaspé, New Brunswick, and Maine record volcanoes that were active during Devonian time." Magma intruded and lifted the White Mountains and built their granite core [- na-uh, at best *granite*/Genesis rock was 'pushed up', because **remember**, contrary to the **'misrepresentations'** - uh-huh, read **ignorance** and/or **lies**—of *evolutionists*, all *granite*/Genesis rock was created by God and cannot be naturally reproduced, because *melting granite* only makes the 'scar tissue' in Earth's 'skin' known as *volcanic* or *igneous rock*, not new *granite*]. Similar processes went on in other parts of the world [except, again, not the making of 'new granite']. The Old Red Sandstone of Europe is a Devonian formation [- also na-uh, and I at least mean it was likely not originally *red* when 'laid']. In eastern Australia mountains were formed that stretched the full length of the eastern boarder of the continent. "Much igneous activity had occurred during the period in this region, and the Devonian strata and associated volcanics ["volcanic by-products"] are said to be over 30,000 feet thick ["over" 5½ miles, or "over" the height of Mount Everest, with surely most of this "draw" being the later **work** of Venus]." Throughout Devonian time North America must have been connected with Europe by a land bridge "which later subsided beneath the north Atlantic [again, because of Venus, an event supposedly spoken of allegorically by Plato]." Evidence [however] that these two lands [actually] met is found in the land plants and fresh water animals [evidently including *fish*] preserved [as *fossils*] in the Devonian rocks of the two [now 'split apart'] regions, "[which would be Pre-Flood *animals* and *plants*, and] which are so much alike on both sides of the Atlantic that it seems clear they were free to migrate across an easy land bridge [- but this also further implies that the Atlantic Ocean was 'significantly widened', at least partly because a large portion of this former "land bridge" was 'submerged', though surely "continental roaring rapids" must have played a significant part in this 'widening' too]."

And this time I'm leaving it to you—with the help of my 'clarifications'—to more **'rightly imagine'** what *ash*, *tuff*, *breccia* and/or *lava* was 'laid' *underwater* and then quickly buried under *sediment* by Mercury, and what *magma* was later 'pulled up' and 'cozied-up' to the previously accumulated "volcanics" (again, "volcanic by-products") already there. But much more than that, and at some point, I'm going to have to leave it to you to **press toward** an **'increasingly corrected, improved and expanded perspective'** of God's **work** in these **'precisely measured visits'**, at least as it concerns this **study**. But not yet, so let's **'press on'**.

By-the-way, I haven't overlooked the supposed billions of years of *continental drift* most *evolutionists* see as having taken place and that is still ongoing. I've just come to the conclusion that it's presently a much less 'significant factor' for consideration compared to the effects of these "great catastrophes". Dr. Velikovsky discounts any 'great significance' to this present phenomenon too. I still think it's happening, but very slowly, and slower and slower all the time since Mars last passed, and as Dr. Velikovsky will further show. So here I'm going to predict that there won't be any more "great catastrophes", not until God 'greatly speeds things

up again’ —‘geologically speaking’—with another of His **great judgments**. And the next time I would expect—by **‘meaty prophecy’** really—the return of a few ‘worse-than-ever’ short periods of “continental roaring rapids”, which again will play a ‘significant part’ in the overall result, which is that—before it’s all over—there will be **few men left**. Of course I also expect that this ‘significant contribution’ to the ‘death toll’ will be ‘assisted’ by the ‘pull’ of another of God’s **‘great instruments of death’**, and one likely near the size of Venus, and where there will not just be more of **the sea and the waves roaring** than ever, but also more **‘sloshing’, ‘cracking’, ‘breaking’, ‘melting’, and ‘pushing around’** of the Earth’s *crust* than ever before too.

But I’m not really thinking of “events” that are necessarily ‘greater in magnitude’ than on The 1st Visit of Venus, but “events” that, though in some ways being more individually survivable, are of longer duration, and where this time the **‘precise targeting’** is **‘accomplished’** in clearly **‘escalating stages’** (P-PAMD), even as our Lord’s **Revelation** describes. So yes, when Gabriel tells Daniel it will be **such as never was** ([Dan 12:1](#)), and Jesus tell us it will be **such as was not since the beginning of the world** ([Mat 24:21](#)), I’m expecting God will **shew us**, in this **visit**, not only His **‘greatest judgments of all time’**, but also His **‘most terrible, most marvellous, and most wondrous skill, control, restraint and finesse of all time’** too. But presently I only see that **things** are continuing to ‘cool’ and ‘slow down’, that is, ‘volcano-wise’, ‘earthquake-wise’, and ‘continental-drift-wise’.

However there is one **‘great event’** that I **believe** was predominantly the result of Mercury’s ‘influence’, in that it was likely ‘set in motion’ by Mercury, but happened sometime after ‘she’ left for the last time, and ‘long before’ Venus or Mars arrived. I’m talking about **Peleg**, and how **in his days was the earth divided** [Gen 10:25](#). And my best guess is that this is when the Earth’s ‘single land mass’ began to ‘split apart’, marking the beginning of the Pacific, Atlantic and Indian Oceans, and of many *seas*, and of course the beginning of the new **isles of the sea**, that is, the evidently originally 8, but now just 7 *continents*. And I mean that it occurs to me that the later Visits of Venus did most of the rest of the **work** to expand or contract these new *oceans* toward their present shapes and sizes, including being most responsible for ‘sinking’ the ‘continent’ of “Atlantis” to fully open up the Atlantic Ocean, not to mention to further God’s work on Earth to, when necessary, **destroy the sinners thereof out of it**.

And I mean from the available ‘evidence’ that I’ve considered, including that some of the former inhabitants of Atlantis are thought to have a connection to European Druids, and were by some described as “superhuman”, and more than that, a “giant, godlike [“Nordic”] race”, who destroyed themselves by abuse of “psychic and supernatural power”, I’m guessing that “Atlantis”, as **the abominations of those nations** go, must have been ‘chief’ in the **‘use’** of **abominable idolatries**, making them **‘abominably evil people’**, and probably as much or more so as the last inhabitants of **Sodom and Gomorrah** were in their **against nature, vile affections** and **lasciviousness**, except that in the case of the ‘Atlantians’, and kind of like **Manasseh**, son of **Hezekiah**, they instead...

...observed times [H6049](#), **and used enchantments** [H5172](#), **and used witchcraft** [H3784](#), **and dealt with...familiar spirit[s]** [H178](#), **and with wizards** [H3049](#) **...[which] wrought much evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger** [2Ch 33:6](#).

And I mean I don’t expect God would have ‘brought down’ such a reportedly “immeasurably large island”—that is, if it wasn’t actually ‘classifiable’ as a “continent”—for anything less.

And beyond this I think that the past short periods of “continental roaring rapids” together with the past and present much longer interim periods of much slower “continental drift” of these resulting ‘new’ *isles*—and yes, ‘new’, since they’re evidently only about 4,000 years old—are ‘**precisely measured**’, that is, and among innumerable other *things*, to help God ‘**bring upon the earth**’ His **great judgments**. And I think so because I’m guessing, **knowing the judgment of God** and **his power**, but also His ‘**precise skill, control and finesse**’, that He anticipated the need for greater accessibility to a variety of large quantities of *water*, that is, to put out the varied and widespread “conflagrations”, and to ‘quickly cool down’ and ‘resolidify’ areas of *melted crust* that Venus left behind, and all this essentially for the same reason why He left all that ‘magma-catching’, ‘relatively flexible’ *sedimentary rock* covering the Earth after Mercury’s *visit*. I mean God knew that the **great judgments** that would be the *work* of Venus were already ‘on the way’—or at least ‘in process’ in a *volcano* on Jupiter—being **ordained** at The Fall too really, so that ‘she’ would arrive at the ‘**perfect times**’ to **judge the earth** as needed, but that ‘she’ would also do the ‘**perfect work to save some**’ too, and that pun includes literally.

Yes, I **believe** God knew He would not just need something to catch ‘excess’ *magna* and *lava* with—and that would be both with *sedimentary rock* and additional *ocean* and *sea basins*—but He also knew He would need a lot of appropriately-placed **waters** to put out **fires** too, and that is, not too much of **them** in one place. Of course some of those ‘far-flung’ **waters** might require you to duck, that is, to avoid being hit, because accompanying **them**, and possibly somehow ending up on a somewhat lower trajectory, might be a no longer *waterborne*, but finally *airborne*, ‘incoming’ *hippopotamus*. I mean I’m guessing that some ‘hippos’ became separated from the *water* while ‘flying’ through the *air*, maybe just by ‘sinking’ all the way out of the *water* on their possibly ‘transcontinental flights’, as *water* tends to stick to itself, while hippos, I imagine, have low *fluid drag* and *form drag*, not to mention a higher *density*, making *lift* in the ‘**turbulent waters**’ less a factor for these enormous, awkward ‘projectiles’. But I’m guessing you never thought anyone ever had to ‘duck’ for a God-thrown, ‘flying hippopotamus’. But Dr. Velikovsky’s research offers evidence that suggests otherwise, now doesn’t it. And I’m sure God, if He is willing, never fails to give the ‘heads-up’ about such things as necessary. In fact I expect to eventually hear **testimony** along these lines. In fact once I heard **testimony** from an undeniably **faithful brother** in The Lord, who **testified** that God told him to lift his arm, which he obediently without questioning did, and where it turned out that at that moment some heavy roof tiles were falling off the house he was walking next to, his arm diverting them from landing on his head, evidently saving his life, or certainly much worse injury. Yeah, stories like that, except with ‘flying hippos’ or the like. And by-the-way, many *animals* were harmed in the **fulfilling** of God’s **great judgments**, and many more eventually will be too, and all for the sake of His **accepted, chosen** and **peculiar people**, each of which, according to Jesus, **are of more value than many sparrows** [Mat 10:31](#); [Luk 12:7](#), and evidently **more** than any number of *hippopotami* too. And for these reasons, and surely innumerable others, **was the earth divided**.

But I do think that just after this ‘split’ the resulting new *isles* or *continents* ‘drifted’ a little faster than they do today. I mean I imagine the various *cells* of *underground circular siphoning magma*, which I imagine ‘dragging’ on the *crust* above as it passes by, and with the *magma* being a little hotter and faster moving so soon after The 2nd Visit of Mercury, ‘forced’ this ‘split’, as well as more significantly contributed to widening the Atlantic, and to narrowing the Pacific, not to mention more significantly contributed to the formation, one way or the other, of

many *seas*, even to the then still ‘faster-rising’ *mountains*, and that is, compared to the ‘greatly-slowed-down’ movement we are seeing today.

And I also think so because it appears that the time when The Father, Jesus and The Spirit ***go down, and there confound their language*** at ***Babel*** ([Gen 11:1-9](#)), which would be at The 2nd Visit of Mercury, is not long before this ***‘dividing of the isles of the Gentiles’***. How do I know? By my math ***Peleg*** is born about 101 years after the Flood, and we are told by Moses he lived ***two hundred and nine years***, which means he lived to about 310 years after The Flood. And we can gather from Genesis 10 and 11 that the king and god of The 1st Babylon, ***Nimrod***, was in the third generation from Noah, and ***Peleg*** in the fifth, so surely they were contemporaries, though Nimrod surely the elder. And if you add to all this that Ancient Egyptian perspective finally brought to our attention by Dr. Velikovsky that I shared earlier this section, which tells us that the ‘Tower of Babel incident’ happened exactly “two hundred and eighty-eight years after the Deluge”, which would be about 22 years before Peleg dies, we can ***‘preceptually deduce’*** that it’s not just by ***language*** that They ***divided*** the people back then, but that it must have been, and not much longer thereafter, by geography too. Or as it is rendered in Their ***‘layered, precept-scattered, puzzletized way’*** in [Genesis 10...](#)

By these [or by ***the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth***] ***were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their land; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations*** [and evidently to some extent ***‘on their isles’*** too] [Verse 5](#).

And if you ***know him*** at all, you ***know*** His primary ***purpose*** for everything, including for ***‘dividing’*** us, is always to ***save some*** in this ***world***, though secondarily, to ***destroy the sinners thereof out of it***, which would be those who would only ultimately help make ***‘saving some’*** eventually ‘impossible’, even for God, at least without more ***‘abracadabra’*** than He had already ***predestinated***. But ***knowing the scriptures*** and ***the power of God*** as I do, I ***know*** my Father will never need to use any ***‘abracadabra’*** He had not already ***predestinated***. And I just mean that all the ***‘open shewings’*** God and His Son has ***made (gic)*** and ***‘will make’*** of all ***principalities and powers*** will only end in Their ***triumphing over them in it*** [Col 2:15](#).

But ‘never’ is a really long time, isn’t it. So it occurs to me, if you will indulge me, that after some ***‘unimaginably long time’*** into the future, ***‘unfathomly deep’*** into The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ, that The Father might to some extent eventually choose to allow entirely ***‘unpredestinated fellowship’***. And I guess I’m really just talking about some ***‘level’*** of the ***‘suspension of predestinated intervention’*** among His Immortal Sons. You know, kind of like after that seemingly ‘endless period of time’ when you ‘grew up’, and were finally considered ‘an adult’, and finally allowed some of the ‘perks’—and ‘consequences’—of ‘responsible maturity’. Of course again, I really have no idea what I’m talking about, now do I.

So getting back to our present relatively ***‘infantile perspective of reality’***—and in this case, to Dr. Velikovsky’s ***‘mis-imagined reality’***—he next ***‘mis-imagined’*** the following ‘Pole to Pole’ view of the next higher ‘sedimentary layer’, “the Carboniferous period”, and the supposedly involved ‘new visitor’ or ‘visitors’ and/or ‘visits’, while nonetheless informing us that,

In the Carboniferous period [where with the help of another ***‘mis-imagined visit’***] mountains

were made, seas invaded land, [and again, Pre-Flood] corals built reefs on the [presently] arctic coast of Alaska, and on the [presently] polar islands of Spitsbergen, volcanoes erupted, and glaciation took place [- the first *glaciation* caused by Mercury, but much more of it later by Venus], especially in Australia. Land animals left their records [- usually entirely fossilized ones -] beside those of rich marine life [which since they were buried in *sedimentary layers* were more likely the **work** of Mercury than Venus, though surely much of this **work** was later 'disturbed', and/or added to, and/or *frozen* by Venus, and mostly just further 'disturbed' and/or *frozen* by Mars]. Coal beds were formed [- the larger of which must have been formed from the much more abundant Pre-Flood *vegetation* 'gathered and buried', and then mostly just *compressed* into 'lighter' *coal* under lots of *sedimentary rock* by Mercury, though later much of it must have been 'cooked' to 'darker' *coal* by Venus]. In the [evidently far Northern Appalachian] coal basins of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick "the coal measures reach a thickness of a few thousand to 13,000 feet"...

And remember it takes 12 *feet* of 'uncompressed' *plants* to make 1 *foot* of *coal*, which in this case would require a 'plant pile' nearly 30 miles high! Of course this seems way too much for even Mercury to submerge, let alone to bury under enough *sediment* to *compress* into *coal*, unless all this *vegetation* was somehow 'sucked down' and *compressed* by **the waters**, I mean especially by **the waters** that were **broken up** and became **the fountains of the great deep**, which later, and through these same 'breaches', were able to **go down**, and I mean where these former **fountains** ultimately must have reversed directions and became *whirlpools*, and that is, 'big plant and animal sucking drains'.

My encyclopedia defines a "whirlpool" as,

...a body of swirling water produced by the meeting of opposing currents. The vast majority of whirlpools are not very powerful and very small whirlpools can easily be seen when a bath or a sink is draining. More powerful ones in seas or oceans may be termed *maelstroms*. *Vortex* is the proper term for any whirlpool that has a downdraft.

But like the definition for "glacial erratics", this definition of *maelstrom-level whirlpools* ('big sea/ocean whirlpools') seems to somewhat minimize—or at least more poorly defines—one of their causes, specifically how that they can be *formed* not just by "opposing currents", but in the same way as "when a bath or a sink is draining" too. The entry does however acknowledge that they can also be caused by *waterfalls*, as does Dr. Velikovsky earlier this section. And their power is acknowledged. For example,

The Corryvreckan is a narrow strait... on the northern side of the **Gulf of Corryvreckan, Scotland**. It is [also the name and location of] the third-largest whirlpool in the world [photo, p.163]. Flood tides and inflow from the Firth of Lorne [- a "firth" being Scottish for "a long, narrow, deep waterway", which "inflow", and in this case,] ...can drive the waters of Corryvreckan to waves of over 9 metres (30 ft), and the roar of the resulting maelstrom [big *whirlpool*],



which... ['spins' at] speeds of 18 km/h (11 mph), can be heard 16 kilometres (9.9 mi) away. Though it was initially classified as non-navigable by the British navy it was later categorized as "extremely dangerous".

A documentary team from Scottish independent producers... once threw a mannequin into the Corryvreckan... with a life jacket and depth gauge. The mannequin was swallowed and spat up far down current with a depth gauge reading of 262 metres (860 ft) with evidence of being dragged along the bottom for a great distance.

But is this an "opposing currents" or a "downdraft" type *whirlpool*? Whichever, "the roar of the resulting maelstrom [*whirlpool*]" must be impressive too. My encyclopedia also mentions that...

Old Sow whirlpool... located between Deer Island, New Brunswick, Canada, and Moose Island, Eastport, Maine, USA... is given the epithet "pig-like" as it makes a screeching noise when the vortex is at its full fury.

But I'm sure this "vortex...at full fury" could be nothing like God's in His Great Judgments.

And by-the-way, *tornadoes* or other kinds of *cyclones* are in one way or another the same kind of *fluid phenomenon* as a *whirlpool*, that is, either "opposing currents" of *fluids* and/or "draining" *fluids*. And the 'swirling rising or falling' of *air* or *water* can be caused by the different *pressures* resulting from *hot* on top of *cold* or *cold* on top of *hot fluid*. And remember *hot air* or *water rises*, while *cold air* or *water sinks*, and if necessary 'funnels' and 'swirls' its way through *fluid* of a different *temperature* and *pressure* to get there, the 'swirling' being the result of the interaction of "draining" or "opposing currents", along with the *spinning* or *rotation* of the Earth.

And **remember** how *wind* blowing toward the *equator* 'gains' *angular momentum* (*spin*) and therefore is 'bent' in the direction the Earth is *spinning*, and how *wind* blowing away from the *equator* 'loses' *angular momentum*, and therefore is 'bent' in the opposite direction the Earth is *spinning*. It can be like that with *rising* and *falling fluids* too. And you can think of a figure skater here. When she pulls her arms into her body her spin 'speeds up', and when she puts them out she 'slows down'. In the same way when a *fluid* on a *spinning planet sinks*, its *angular momentum accelerates*, and this relative change apparently result in the *fluid* starting to *spin*, and when a *fluid* on a *spinning planet rises*, its *angular momentum decelerates*, and this relative change apparently results in the *fluid* starting to *spin*. However when it comes to *tornadoes* my encyclopedia insists that the *spin* of the Earth has no effect on them, and that it must instead just be the result of *hot air rising* and *cold air sinking*, or an "opposing currents" type of *vortex*. Then again, when defining this phenomenon, and referring to the 'scientists' defining it, the entry uses the phrase, "there is...disagreement", three times. And certainly our **knowledge** and **understanding** of these particular **ordinances of heaven and earth** can **for ever** be '**corrected, improved and expanded**'.

But if you can **see** [H7200](#); [H2372](#); [G991](#); [G1492](#) it yet, I'm imagining, kind of like I did in *RGT*, how the close presence of Mercury 'slightly elongates' the Earth like an egg, and even more so if aided in one way or another by the Moon, 'stretching' it toward its closest point with its '**visitor**', and thereby probably '**squeezes**' *water* out of the ground mostly by *atomic magnetic attraction* and opposing *momentums*, but *water*

could also be ‘pulled’ out of the *ground* by what Mercury adds to the Moon’s more direct, *atomic magnetic tidal force*. However ‘single-satellite’ *tidal force*—as provided by our Moon—simultaneously ‘lowers tides’ as much as it ‘raises’ them. Still I *see* that by God’s ‘**mindboggling skill, finesse and control**’, which would be by all these ‘**great instruments and ordinances precisely working together**’, that they could have together helped both ‘**squeeze**’ and ‘**pull**’ waters out of the *ground*. But when Mercury ‘leaves’ and ‘releases this hold’, and Earth returns back to its more spherical shape, I imagine that a lot of **the waters** are ‘sucked back inside’ Earth’s *crust*, evidently ‘pulling down’, even *underground*, lots of *animals* and *plants* in the process.

And think about it. This could not have been just the **work** of Venus, because it must have required the Pre-Flood *environment*, that is, when the Earth was supporting *plants* with a ‘water-canopy greenhouse’, with ‘cosmic radiation shielding’, and with ‘hyperbaric CO₂’, all these and more being factors in how so much ‘coal-making vegetation’ was able to be *grown* and then, during The Flood, be ‘washed’ and ‘sucked’ and ‘compacted together’ *belowground*. And the same considerations apply to ‘oil-making animals’. But though you may now think yourself **able** to begin to ‘**rightly imagine**’ how such ‘unimaginably massive’, ‘compressed accumulations’ of *vegetation* and/or *animals*—along with some **measure** of *sediment*—may have been *deposited, buried* and *compressed*, this does not fully explain how any of it was ‘processed’ into ‘dark’ *coal* or *oil*, that is, until you also consider that when just *compression* wasn’t enough to do the job, Venus came by later and provided the necessary extra *heating*.

But The Visits of Mercury, Venus and Mars each produced new *ice* too, while *melting* some older *ice*, and surely The Visits of Venus produced much more of it. And Dr. Velikovsky evidently thought that the *freezing* of this layer was caused by one or more ‘**visitors**’, though he also saw it as taking place only in the “carboniferous age”, apparently ‘**mis-imagining**’ an isolated though ‘ridiculously long period of time’ many millions of years ago when...

...Extensive continental glaciation of India, South Africa, South America, and Australia took place.

And you should be starting to *see* that this instead had to be due to some ‘shifting’, but must have also been the result of all that *heated water vapour* that the **stormy wind** carried around the *planet*, and evidently the biggest portion of it produced around the time of The Exodus, and especially in the early part of that ‘sunless period’ that **scripture** identifies as **darkness**, and **the land** or **the valley of the shadow of death**, as we will further consider.

Again, *glaciation* was ‘most extensively’ the **work** of Venus, but originally the **work** of Mercury, and finally a **significant work** of Mars too, and again, and to look at it from another ‘angle’, this not happening just because each **visit** added excessive amounts of *heated water vapour* into the *atmosphere* that by **stormy wind** ended up over the Poles or over *high mountains*, but also because of the ‘shifting’ of *tropical regions* into *polar* ones, and originally just because of the ‘draining’ of the *water canopy*, which means that all The Visits of Mercury, Venus and Mars were used by God in **fulfilling his word** that not just **fire, and hail**, but also **snow, and vapour** and **stormy wind**, like He **promised** Job, were **reserved against the time[s] of trouble**, and that is, evidently ‘**especially against**’ both past and future **time[s] of His great judgments**.

And how again, besides the ‘**planet-assisted shifting**’ of the Earth, does all that *heated water vapour* get to these ‘colder regions’ to make so much *ice*? Uh-huh, by **stormy wind**, which you should **know** is the kind that can be accompanied by

great hailstones, yes, including “pearls of God” (see [Psa 107:25, 148:8](#) and [Amos 5:8](#) to **know**; [Exo 9:18-26](#) and [Eze 13:11-15](#) to **remember**; and [Luke 21:22,25-27](#) and [Rev 16:21](#) for ‘**future remembering**’), and surely also accompanied by ‘**roaring waves**’, and as a result by ‘flying hippos’, which would also be “when pigs fly”, and when “I see an elephant fly”, which certainly will happen again when **such as never was... nor ever shall be** actually happens, except that not long after such things begin to happen—again —all that **vapour** will stop *condensing* and then *freezing*, and all the *ice* will *melt*, and remain as *liquid* or **vapour** throughout The Millennium as we will **see**. And who’d be able to forget that, even if it were presently just something that the Spirit could **shew** you of the **things to come**?

Next Dr. Velikovsky better shows the helpfulness of his perspective, concluding,

Here I stop quoting from [Dr. Dunbar’s] *Historical Geology*. Again and again [and not over millions to billions of years, but really in a period of less than 2 millennia altogether] the world was a playground for Vulcan [- Roman “god of fire”, comparable to the Greek god Hephaestus -] and Poseidon [- Greek “god of the sea, with the power to cause earthquakes”, comparable to the Roman god Neptune], the elementary forces of melting rock and trespassing sea. But when all is told, we are nevertheless assured that the geological record is one of calm and uniformity, and what appears as revolution is a telescoped view of slow and ordinary processes; even the seas of lava [like the ones visible on the surface of the Moon and Mercury, and that are mapped on our own oceans’ floors, and which significantly *shield every continent*], though obviously formed in single paroxysms [‘sudden, violent outbursts’], are, in the over-all picture, denied a catastrophic origin.

Next Dr. Velikovsky takes us on Boston’s 1½-millennia-long, ‘wild rollercoaster ride’...

One reads, "It is not obvious that the city of Boston rests [or has ‘roller-coastered’] on the surface of one of the world’s greatest mountain chains—yet it does [and has]" (it had been depressed and also eroded [too, or beforetimes was a “depressed” *lowland* or *seabed* (Pre-Mercury), then next was ‘lifted up’ - by the repeated ‘passes’ of Mercury and/or Mars - and now is *eroding* its way down again - evidently mostly by the ‘**water and ice works**’ of Venus and Mars]) (Daly [[still nyc](#)] [Our Mobil Earth, p.239]); one reads also that "Boston lay in the equatorial rain zone during the Carboniferous and in the region of hot deserts during the Permian" (Brooks [[nyc](#)] [Climate through the Ages, p.232]); one is, furthermore, told that the site of Boston was once under the sea, and that it was once also under a mile thick cap of ice. It is insisted that all these changes took place without any upheaval in nature, merely as effects of processes and agents active also in our own time—the highest mountains becoming flat [and *lowland* or *seabed* becoming the highest *mountains*], equatorial jungles giving place to hot sand deserts and hot deserts to polar cover of ice, and the polar cover of ice to the bottom of the sea, and the bottom of the sea to the site of Harvard University. It all [is ‘**ridiculously mis-imagined**’ - as **fools** do - to have] happened so slowly that no living creature ever perceived the change[s].

But hopefully you have “perceived” that even though Dr. Velikovsky ‘shores up’ the ‘collapsing schemes’ of *uniformitarian evolution* with his *catastrophic* ones, his own ‘spaced-out’ view of ‘individually-laid’ *sedimentary layers* by a “pageant of earlier catastrophes” brought by ‘numerous earlier visitors’, makes his perspective, at least in many respects, significantly **‘mis-imagined’** and **‘ridiculous’** (read, **foolish**) too. But so he presses on with his version of this certainly ‘wild’, but really only 1½-millennia-long ‘roller coaster ride’, though seeing instead literally “eons” of ‘visitations’ bringing “a [‘ridiculously-long’] line” of “great catastrophes”.

An “eon”, by-the-way, is “the largest division of geologic time”, and there are “4 total, half a billion years or more” each—see again the “Geologic Time Scale” in **VOLUME I, SECTION 3, p.283**. Even so Dr. Velikovsky’s ‘understanding’ is better related to **the truth**, being maybe just one major **‘day-dawning revelation’** away from his **eyes** being **opened to it**, including to the **‘rightly-imagined reality’** where he realizes that there really have been no more than 11 **‘great visitations’** so far, with only 3 **‘visitors’**, and all but one **visit** he specifically accounts for, that is, not for The 1st Visit of Mercury but only the 2nd—The Tower of Babel Visit—and for 2 by Venus, and 7 by Mars, though he attributed all the supposed “earlier catastrophes” not to The 1st Visit of Mercury, but to an imaginary “pageant” of ‘visitors’ occurring in imaginary “earlier ages”.

Of course I should clarify—really just for the **purpose** of **offering** another somewhat **‘implied’** but certainly **‘documented supplication’** for a **‘potential saint’** [Eph 6:18](#)—that Dr. Velikovsky really needs two major **‘day-dawning revelations’**, the first being that he is a **sinner** in need of **the grace of God that bringeth salvation**.

But though Dr. Velikovsky arguably does, evidently **scripture** alone doesn’t help us identify all 7 of The Visits of Mars, really only maybe 5 of them, with maybe not even that many being identifiable as **great judgments** affecting the God Zone, and that is, as far as I have been **able** to tell. But clearly the most extensive “great catastrophes” of all—so far—were The 1st Visit of Mercury and The 1st Visit of Venus, as we will **continue to establish**.

Still beyond this I also **see** that all these **visits** could be further ‘broken down’ into their ‘number of orbits’ of Earth ‘per visit’, as well as to the degree of destruction ‘per orbit’, which is apparently one of the reasons why Dr. Velikovsky **‘mis-imagined’** so many additional ‘visitors’. And I mean you should now see that it is mostly in the longest intervals of ‘in-between time’, the longer ones being the near 800 years between The Visits of Mercury and Venus, and another maybe nearly that long between The Visits of Venus and Mars. But there are other shorter, though still possibly ‘noticeable intervals’ too, including the nearly 300 years between The Visits of Mercury, and the over 50 years between The Visits of Venus, where ‘glaciation’ and/or ‘melting zones’ could have remained changed for long enough, and where desertification and/or ‘vegetation zones’ were ‘reset’ for long enough, and where ‘crust-lifting’ and/or ‘sinking’ **significantly** ‘slowed’ for long enough, and where further **burial** of **plants** and **animals** was extensive enough to ‘permanently enough’ transform the Earth, and where ‘inundation’ and the subsequent ‘draining’ were finished long enough to again ‘re-mark’, as God so **judged**, the **‘boundaries of land and sea’**. And I’m thinking that even Mars, if ‘he’ just left the Earth **significantly** ‘shifted’ from where ‘she’ was when ‘he’ first arrived 90 years earlier, or significantly enough otherwise ‘shifted’ Earth’s axis at any time, should have left some pretty ‘noticeable marks’ too.

And since the **record** given to us through Moses of The Exodus **reveals** that Venus must have been here for some time on that **visit**, interacting with the Earth

in various ways, and surely not just 'parked in the sky' the whole time, but necessarily *orbiting* Earth in order to **accomplish** God's **word** through Moses, then certainly some of the more awesome changes to Earth could have taken place even more quickly, especially between each *orbit* of Venus around Earth, the damage done on each 'pass', though only an 'orbit' apart, understandably seen as one end or the other of a "geological age" to Dr. Velikovsky, et al., and especially since he missed that the *sedimentary rock* 'laid' by Mercury was all there long before most of the later "disturbance" to it, where he apparently '**mis-imagined**' most of this "disturbance" happening as each *sedimentary layer* was being laid. And I mean he apparently also missed that it could only have been Venus that could have 'upwelled' numerous 'continent-covering' *shields* of *magma* or *lava*, and in the process made the 'biggest messes' of Genesis rock, and of *sedimentary rock* too, not to mention how all **the waters** it '**sloshed**' and '**pushed around**' and '**drained**', and all the **snow** it formed that *flowed* in *glaciers* down *mountains* and across *continents*, altogether 'washed and scrubbed away' so much *sedimentary rock*, and even some Genesis rock too.

In the last section of *Chapter XIII, Coal*, Dr. Velikovsky's reveals a perspective that is again much more helpful than not. But still he was (PIRE not applicable, hereafter PIRE-NA) unaware that, besides the help of the Moon, there are only Mercury, Venus and Mars, and that often mostly the 'relay team' of Mercury and Venus, '**working hand in hand**'—gets it done, but of course I'm talking about the **fearful... hands of the living God**. Nonetheless, Dr. Velikovsky 'digs deep' to expose, as well as to 'beat the dead horses' (both puns intended), explaining,

Coal is found in layers that are ascribed to various ages mainly on the basis of fossils found in them. Brown [or 'light', read, not or less *heated*] coal is a compacted mass of plant remains [evidently mostly only 'Mercury-washed' and/or 'drain-sucked' and 'deep-sediment-compressed']. Lignite is made chiefly out of trees only partially converted into coal [likely only 'Venus-washed' and 'heaped' and only at most 'lightly' *heated* and *buried* with *sediment*]. Soft [or 'dark'] or bituminous [read, well *heated*] coal is brittle and of bright luster and contains sulfur [released with enough heating, more likely one way or another by Venus, though the larger and 'deeper-buried' *deposits* more likely accumulated by Mercury, the smaller and 'shallower-buried' ones by Venus]; its organic nature can sometimes be seen under a lens, and the plants that participated in its formation can be recognized by leaves in the shale [evidently 'water-pulverized', *fine grain mud/clay*] on top of the coal bed [and whether 'shallow' or 'deep']. Anthracite or hard [or 'darker'] coal is metamorphosed ['changed', but in this case meaning the most 'Venus-heated'] bituminous coal.

The [more of less *heated*] plants that went into the formation of ancient [or lowest level] beds [of the Carboniferous Layer] include chiefly [the evidently *lower-growing* and/or *poorer-floating*] ferns and cycads [which are known for "having a thick, [less 'woody',] unbranched, columnar trunk"]; layers of later ages [or just the *higher layers*] are composed of [evidently *higher-growing* and/or *better-floating*] sassafras, laurel, tulip tree, magnolia, cinnamon, sequoia, poplar, willow, maple, birch, chestnut, alder, beech, elm, palm, fig, cypress, oak, rose, plum, almond, myrtle, acacia, and many other species. [George McCready Price, a Christian *Flood geologist*, who in 1906 offered \$1000 "to any one who will, in the face of the facts here presented [in his book, *Illogical Geology*], show me how to prove that one kind of fossil is older than another", *The New Geology*, p.468-69.]

The origin of the coal beds is still far from being satisfactorily explained [- (this the conclusion of) Eduard Suess, Professor of Paleontology and Geology at the University of Vienna, (and grandfather of the UCSD founder Hans Edward Suess), from *The Face of the Earth*, Vol.II. p.244; this conclusion from his 4 volume work, published from 1883-1909, on the *geologic structure* of the entire *planet*, which included his theories of the *structure* and 'evolution' of (read, 'the passings of the *planets* over') the *lithosphere*—Earth's *crust*—and his tracing of the changes—or exchanges—in the *continents* and *seas* from ancient to modern time]. One theory [specifically about the *formation of coal* in Earth's *crust*] would make peat bogs the place where, in a slow process measured by tens and hundreds of thousands of years, coal was born. It is said that the plants fall, but before they decompose in the air they are covered by the water of the swamps. A layer of sand is deposited over them, forming the soil for new plants, and thus the process repeats itself...

Of course this "Peat Bog Theory" for the formation of *coal* should not to be confused with when Mercury, surely with the cooperation of the Moon, once 'washed' and/or 'sucked' a 'world-full' of *giant plants* and/or *giant animals* into 'gigantic heaps', and then 'buried' and 'compressed' them under innumerable tons of *sediment*, nor should it be confused with when Venus' later 'washed' a 'world-full' of smaller *plants* and *animals* into 'smaller gigantic heaps' while intermixing and covering them with "diluvium" (remember this is a misnomer), and in some cases *heating* them enough—as well as *heating* some of what Mercury had gathered—to convert the *plants* into 'darker' or more *bituminous coal*, or the *animals* into *oil*, or various combinations thereof, but whatever the mixture, necessarily also including varying amounts of *sedimentary rock* too.

But Dr. Velikovsky, from his *catastrophic, saltationist evolutionary perspective* identifies the problems with this *uniformitarian* "Peat Bog Theory" well enough, seeing that...

...In order that the layer of sand may be deposited, it is necessary that these marshy regions be covered by water in motion. Since almost regularly marine shells and fossils are found on top of coal beds, the sea must have covered the swamps at one time; then, for new land plants to grow there, the sea must have retreated. There are places where sixty, eighty, and a hundred and more successive beds of coal have formed [where we're talking 'waves full' of *plants* and/or *animals*, and *sediment*, not *land* and *sea* 'repeatedly changing places']; [however] this theory would then require that as many times the sea trespassed—when the land slowly subsided—[it] as many times retreated [when the *land* supposedly again 'rose']. In other words, this theory assumes that the ground is pulsating [up and down] and that the sea will return again sometime and cover the coal beds as it [supposedly literally] did a hundred [or "more"] times in the past.

And of course we're not really talking 'gobs of time', nor a separate 'visit' for each of these 'pulsations', but instead literal 'Flood-sized' *currents* or 'Venus-class' *tidal waves*, (remember I'm ignoring they're now called *tsunami*), where each 'wave' contributes—a *seam* at a time—to 'piling up' various "great heaps" of 'sediment-mixed' *vegetation* and/or *animals*. And again, as in The Exodus, which is the **work** of The 1st Visit of Venus, I'm seeing *giant tidal waves* carrying 'smaller giant heaps' of Post-Flood *plants* and *animals*, and where such 'layers' of 'washed-into-place

heaps' all end up more or less on top of any remaining previously Mercury-laid *sedimentary rock*, while with The Flood, which is the **work** of The 1st Visit of Mercury, I'm not as much seeing 'water waves', but *currents* carrying 'waves' or 'heaps' of *giant plants* and *giant animals* that arrive in their turns, and/or that are finally 'sucked down' and 'compacted' into 'layers' through 'drain holes' by *giant whirlpools*, and/or are 'pulled down' by 'cycles' of 'swirling' great *turbulence*, and where the 'intermittent arrival' of these 'waves of organic matter' become 'stacked' to be further *compressed* into *seams* under the 'soon-following', *settling sediments*.

And Dr. Velikovsky does his share to expose the '**ridiculousness**' and **foolishness** of this *uniformitarian* "Peat Bog Theory", even doing so 'tongue-in-cheek', quoting,

"Fossils of marine clams, snails... are abundant in the shales [again, 'water-pulverized', *fine grain mud/clay*] just above each seam of coal. Later, with fluctuating sea level, the salt waters withdrew and another fresh water marsh came into being, giving rise to another bed of coal above the earlier one. Again we are surprised, this time by the large number of such alternations of coal with marine sediments; these are now recognized as distinct cycles, each cycle representing a common sequence of events... Ohio displays more than forty such cycles, and in Wales [in the British Isles] more than a hundred separate seams of coal have been discovered. Marvin Miller has given 400,000 years as the probable time represented by the average Ohio cycle [but of course these *deposits* of so many "seams" must be the **work** of Mercury in The Flood, and likely with the help of 'great whirlpools' and/or 'great turbulence', and over no more than a few weeks at most]." [Dr. Thomas Chrowder Chamberlin, in *The World and Man*, p.79.]

This scheme demands not only that the sea should have covered the land one hundred times but also that after each retreat of the sea a fresh-water marsh should have appeared on the vacant ground in order to give the trees a place to grow and fall down and decay; and that the process of decay should have been checked before going too far, "for otherwise the vegetable matter would have disappeared completely and none would have been left in the form of coal [p.78]." And then each time "not only was the areal extent [or 'great areas'] of the marshes remarkable but the thickness of the coal required a surprising accumulation of vegetable matter. [Yeah, and not just "surprising accumulation", but surely the *plants* were of 'surprisingly giant size' too!].

Many kinds of plants and trees that went into the formation of coal do not grow in swamps, and when they die they remain on dry ground and decompose. This fact [alone] suffices to render the peat-bog theory untenable [and yeah, you can read, **a lie**].

Today the remarkable "areal extent" (again, 'great areas') and surprising "thickness" of so many *coal beds* in the Carboniferous *layer*—which the Peat Bog Theory is no longer expected to explain—are now 'explained' as the result of a "minor extinction event", where 'giant plants'—and 'giant animals'—'collapsed' and gave way to the more currently sized ones, this multi-staged "event" being the now so-called Carboniferous Rainforest Collapse (CRC). Of course my tongue too is 'in cheek' when I say, 'that explains everything'. But Dr. Velikovsky has more 'nails to drive in this coffin' of the Peat Bog Theory, and in the process really 'lays to rest' as well as 'deeply buries' any *uniformitarian* theory of the *formation of coal*, saying,

[Individual] Seams of coal are sometimes fifty or more feet thick [- uh-huh, we're talking a lot of really *giant plants*, and all at the same place and time]. No [present] forest could make such a layer of coal [but evidently the Pre-Flood *giant forests* of *giant plants* could, hence the newer CRC Theory]; [however] it is estimated that it would take a twelve-foot layer of peat [*uncompressed plant*] deposit to make a layer of coal one foot thick [as well as subsequent *compression* and/or *heating* too]; and twelve feet of peat deposit would require plant remains a hundred and twenty feet high. How tall and thick must a forest be, then, in order to create a seam of coal not one foot thick but fifty [that is, without the help of, say, a 'great sucking whirlpool']? The plant remains must be six thousand feet thick [yeah, more than a mile "tall and thick"].

Of course we're only talking one *seam* of *coal* here, or just one 'wave' of Pre-Flood *giant plants* evidently from what used to be a relatively 'nearby' *giant forest*. So maybe you can **see** why I think the "plant remains" must have been 'drain-sucked downward' by 'great downward-moving currents of water', likely involving *great whirlpools* that began when **the waters** 'retreat back' into the '**squeezed-and-pulled-empty**' **storehouses** inside Earth's *crust*, that is, when they were 'opened back up' after the 'pull' from Mercury ended with its departure, allowing **the waters** to more or less **return...again** to where they came from. And I mean I'm **seeing** a process where the 'breaches' that originally '**fountained the waters up**' finally 'suck it back down', becoming increasingly 'clogged' with 'great plugs' of 'intermittently accumulated waves of vegetation', that are then further *buried* and *compressed* under 'astounding amounts' of *settling sediment*. Either just that or, a millennia later, I'm **seeing** more 'currently-sized', 'forests-full' of *plants* must have been 'washed' in 'sets' of *giant tidal waves* into "great heaps", which, because of their immediately preceding "conflagration", could already be *coal*, even before arriving where these *giant waves* "deposit" them, which makes *deep burial* and *significant compression* under 'astounding amounts' of *sediments* unnecessary, or in other words, making *shallow burial* by "diluvium" sufficient. But however these 'layers' of "great heaps" of "plant remains" are 'accumulated' and *buried*, and however 'deep', I'm **seeing** that they mostly must be *heated* or further *heated* later by The Visits of Venus before they become 'darker' *coal*, and that would be either by rising *magma* after 'accumulation', or simply by being 'pre-burned' in "conflagrations" before 'accumulation'. These are my best guesses anyway.

And Dr. Velikovsky continues to 'pile on', saying,

In some places there must have been fifty to a hundred successive huge forests, one replacing [or by 'successive waves' instead 'piling on'] the other, since so many seams of coal [by either Pre-Flood, 'forest-carrying', *great turbulent currents*, or by Post-Flood, 'forest-filled' *giant tidal waves*] are formed. But [- and still unable to 'dislodge tongue from cheek' -] it is further questionable whether the forests grew one on top of the other [which surely they didn't, but were in any case instead relatively quickly accumulated by the movement of *water*, and all in 'waves' a *seam* at a time], because a coal bed, undivided on one side, sometimes splits [or "forks"] on the other side into numerous beds, with layers of limestone or other formations between.

And I'm imagining that if one of these "forks" is 'branching' on the upward side, it is more likely the result of a 'partially clogged' and therefore 'irregularly sucking

drain', or one that in the process of 'clogging' essentially becomes multiple smaller ones. And I would guess that downward 'branching' is more likely due to *topography*, especially when the collection is made by *giant tidal waves* that make their *deposits* on uneven, and generally 'not too deeply buried' *ground*, but could instead be the result of 'irregularly-shaped drain holes' that are 'much more deeply buried', and where 'intermittent arrivals' and 'concentrations' of *plants, animals* and *sediments* should be a factor in the 'branching' too.

So I think I'm **seeing**—beyond Dr. Velikovsky's presentation, which certainly involves **revelations** that need further **proving**—with these larger, 'more deeply buried', 'waves of forests' which are 'concentrated' in *great seams of coal*, the initial 'faster accumulation' of "plant remains" that first begin to 'collect' and 'plug the drain hole' to one of Earth's *underground water storehouses*, including a *giant whirlpool* that entirely 'sucks down' a region's "huge forests", that is, one at a time, and where finally a number of them are 'intermittently accumulated' as a 'surprisingly-and-remarkably-sized drain plug'. And so in this way whole, *giant Pre-Flood forests* as *seams* are 'collected', and in the same process, due to the 'intermittent arrival' of each *forest*, and to the increasing irregularity of the 'suction of the drains', sometimes also just *layers* of *sediment* 'accumulate' in these 'drain plugs', and evidently sometimes enough to make more than just a 'transition of seams', and where this 'interplay' of 'current-carried', 'successive waves' of *forests* and/or *sediments* continues, until finally the particular 'ever-weakening drain' is 'fully plugged', or the '**storehouse**' becomes 'full of water', but where in either case thereafter only 'relatively small concentrations' of "plant remains" are left to 'settle-out' with the remaining still 'astounding amount' of *sediments* that finally *deeply bury* and *compress* these 'plugs'.

And I could think through these processes further with more a focus on *animal—giant* or not—instead of "plant remains", or more on Post-Flood, 'miles-high', 'forest-filled' *tidal waves* instead of Pre-Flood, 'forest-sucking', "whirlpool drains", including the considerations of both 'before-and/or-after-accumulation' *heating* too. Can you? You certainly won't have '**mastered**' (read, become **apt to teach**) this **study** until you can. But there are even '**higher levels**' of **exercise** ^{G1128} along these '**lines**' ^{H6957} to come. Still all you really need to **see** your first time through is that **if** you never cease to **continue** to **strive** and **press** to **work** and **study** to **understand** all this—which is what these '**studies**' are intended to help you **do**—you eventually will, with the inevitable '**corrections, improvements and expansions**' of your **understanding** expected to '**for ever continue**' to '**follow**', even as **we** will '**for ever continue**' to '**follow Christ**', **Amen** and **Alleluia**. And in this **way** it is really **they** Who invite '**you**'—and I mean **they** as in [Revelation 12:6](#)—but also '**I beseech you**', to **continue** to...

Be ye followers of 'me', even as 'I' also am of Christ [1Co 11:1](#); [1Co 4:16](#).

And that is, and at least for now, **in** these '**studies**'.

And speaking of '**exercise along these lines**', and of '**tough acts to follow**' (both P-PAMD), not to mention how lonely it can, no, it is supposed to get, I'm **hoping** you're ready for me to **continue** to keep a promise I made last **study**, when I say, "we'll unavoidably see some more of this humiliation", and in this case certainly the kind that is potentially '**faith stumbling**'. And I'm talking about another **Translation Alert**. Except here were not just talking about the **pride** and/or **deceit** accompanying the '**ignorant errors**' and/or '**knowingly wicked perversions**' that take the form of '**mis-translations**' of God's **pure words** into

English, were also talking about the similar at least *sinful* but “perhaps” *damnable heresies* taking the form of *‘definitional perversions’* of certain *pure words* by some ‘Bible scholars’, that is, through their ‘man-made’ concordances and lexicons.

Then again, you too may have already *‘misunderstood’* that Strong’s has *erred* by *‘misdefining’* both *line* ^{H6957} and *precept* ^{H6673}, since the *‘heretical misdefinitions’* attached to these *pure words* in the Blue Letter Bible program are specifically connected to the Prophet Isaiah’s *use* of them in [Isaiah 28:10](#) and [13](#). But these *‘heretical misdefinitions’* are not the doing of those who in 1890 published the now renowned, and exceptionally *pure*, “index of every word in the King James Version”, “every word” being why the word “Exhaustive” appears in its full title, and though it is otherwise more simply referred to as *Strong’s Concordance*. No, this *triumph* of Christianity, “constructed under the direction of James Strong”, was surely, in *God speed*, on the ‘cutting edge’ of The Natural Progression of The Knowledge of God by The Word and Spirit of God.

More particularly, it is in 1867 that “financier and railroad tycoon” Daniel Drew purchases an estate in Madison, New Jersey to establish a theological seminary to train candidates for ministry in the Methodist Church. The resulting Drew Theological Seminary or School, and eventually University, is now the third-oldest of thirteen Methodist seminaries affiliated with the United Methodist Church, the largest North American *‘branch’* of the followers of the Arminianist—as opposed to Calvinist—John Wesley.

Our brother John, by-the-way, besides being a prolific *‘hymn writer’* (e.g. [Eph 5:19](#)), and *teacher* and *preacher* of The Word of God, gives us the phrase, “agree to disagree”, though this out of respect for the then world famous, and even more prolific, “Great Awakening” *preacher*, Calvinist—as opposed to Arminianist—George Whitefield (pronounced, ‘Whitfield’), who, and though these two originally work together along with John’s brother Charles, who is the even more prolific *‘hymn writer’*, finally ‘agreeably split’—Charles ‘siding’ with George—including because of their Calvinistic v. Arminianistic ‘disagreements’, with this eventual ‘agreeable split’ being the real beginning of the ‘Arminian branches’ of the Methodist Church, though John remains an Anglican priest until his death, as does George and Charles, except that John is never fully reconciled to the (Anglican) Church of England. And George and Charles, besides finally reconciling with the Church, and collaborating to give us the *hymn*, “Hark the Herald Angels Sing”, are the ‘fathers’ of the “Calvinistic Methodists”, originating as the Presbyterian Church of Wales, (apparently wholly distinct from Scottish Presbyterianism, which Sir Walter Scott teaches me so much about, and mostly all good too I think,) and except that my encyclopedia adds that,

...all the early Methodists in England and Wales worked together regardless of Calvinist or Arminian (or Wesleyan) theology, for many years...

which may have had something to do with the fact that George asks John to speak at his funeral just before he dies, which he apparently ‘quite agreeably’ does.

And so it is about 76 years after our brother John’s death, during the still rising movement to shun ‘elitism’ in the Church, and in its representative schools, in the New World this being most notably Harvard and Yale, that Drew Theological Seminary in its early decades provides the background for one of its evidently ‘Arminianist’ Professors of Exegetical Theology, James Strong, to *honour* the Church in general with his *‘faithful work’*. And yes, I mean it is my testimony that it was

and continues to be a **'service to all'**. And you should know by now I think his name makes a perfect **'preceptual'** pun (P-PAMD).

But I don't know when it started with Blue Letter Bible—or if it was an original practice—but it turns out that they now include 'definitions' from 'another lexicon'—and yeah, in this case it's like **another gospel**, because I'm talking about a **perverted** [H5753](#); [H2015](#) Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament, more commonly known as the Brown-Driver-Briggs (or BDB)—which are the three authors—first published in 1906. And unfortunately some modern versions adopted the use of "Strong's numbers", making these two works thereafter much easier to interconnect, but really just making the **pure words** of God easier to **pervert** [H5186](#); [H5791](#); [G1294](#); [G3344](#). And it's 'likely' only going to get **'more perilous'** from now on, because in 2013 the National Endowment for the Humanities gave a couple of **'likely reprobates'** a grant to fund the creation of a revised and updated electronic version of the BDB. And of course I mean **'likely reprobates'** considering their source of support, or considering that this surely **'corrupt tree'** expects to **make** this also surely **'corrupt fruit'** (e.g. [Mat 12:33](#); [Luke 6:44](#)).

And even if we 'overlook' that the late 18th and early 19th Century 'original language Bible scholars', Brown and Driver, who had backgrounds at the Old World's most notable 'elitist schools', Oxford and Cambridge, respectively, participated in this **'perverted judgment'**, and if we also 'overlook' that their work "drew heavily" on the English translation of the early 18th Century work of German Professor, Heinrich Friedrich Wilhelm Gesenius—hereafter referred to as Silly Willy (if ever again), as he was a proponent of the *philosophy* of *rationalism*, (read, **'seemeth-right-ism'**)—then we will nonetheless find it sufficient to focus only on the third author, Honorary Doctor, Professor, former Presbyterian Pastor, but finally Episcopal Church Father (priest), Charles Augustus Briggs, because, according to my encyclopedia,

He was excommunicated from the Presbyterian Church because of his liberal theology regarding the Bible.

And "some argue" that this happened, besides because of his reported "much posturing, maneuvering and publicity-seeking", mostly because of his...

...belligerent manner and militant tone of expressions; [and] by what his own colleagues in the Union Theological Seminary called the dogmatic and irritating nature of his inaugural address.

And it was in 1892, evidently because of this "inaugural address", that he was tried for "heresy" by The Presbytery of New York, and was acquitted. But the case was appealed to The General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church, and he was "defrocked" and "excommunicated" in 1893. And again, it was his own public statements that reveal the **pride** that "unavoidably" (my word) must have been involved in the completion of the BDB Lexicon. And please notice that all this "humiliation" (again my word) occurred over a decade before its publication in 1906.

In brief, and according to my encyclopedia, his publicly exposed **'prideful perspectives'** were (PIRE-NA) as follows:

- He **'mistaught'** that "reason" and "the Church"—yes, evidently referring to an 'elite', "churchwide hierarchy of ruling clergy" (also my words, [RGT](#))—are each a "fountain of divine authority" which, separate from Holy Scripture, can

“savingly enlighten men”, which of course sounds ‘reasonable’ and **seemeth right**, especially to a ‘reasoning elitist’ who is not as much a **babe** as a **wolf**.

- He **‘mis-imagined’** that “errors may have existed in the original text of the Holy Scripture”, and so he evidently **‘misunderstood’** that you could use “reason” to ‘pick and choose’ which ‘pure words’ were ‘acceptable’, and even by this means ‘decide for God’ how to ‘define’ the ones you did choose, which evidently enabled him to **spread** much less **the knowledge of God** than **heresies**.
- He was **deceived to believe** that “many of the Old Testament predictions have been reversed by history”, though this was surely because of the ongoing **‘deception’** based on the ‘Bible-contradicting’, ‘evolutionary-theory-supporting’, and otherwise **‘false interpretations’** of ‘modern historians’, that is, of **false teachers**.
- He was **deceived to believe** that “the great body of Messianic prediction has not and cannot be fulfilled”, and since he apparently ‘believed’ such things, including about Jesus’ **resurrection** and the coming **resurrection of the dead**—let alone The Rapture—and that is, that they are both ‘unfulfilled’ and ‘unfulfillable predictions’, you should **know** what Paul and I would say about his **faith**.
- He **‘misled’** others to **believe** that Moses is not the author of the Pentateuch (the first 5 books of the Bible), and that Isaiah is not the author of part of the book which bears his name, meaning, apparently, that he thought that God wasn’t necessarily—at least entirely—The Author either.
- And he was **‘misled’ to believe** that Protestant theology incorrectly limits redemption to this World, or in other **‘perverted words’**, that “sanctification is not complete at death” because “processes of redemption extend to the world to come”, which you should remember we’ve already traced back to *The Apocalypse of Peter* (see [RGT](#)).

So now we’ve not only traced this source of the **‘false hope of the damned’**, not to mention of that **‘misidentified’ fig tree**, and traced how the Gnostic, Porphyry of Tyre, or ‘Mr. Pompous-ass’, still **deceiveth** most to **‘mis-see’** only a still **closed up and sealed** version of Daniel’s last **prophecy**, that is, because of his **‘misidentification’** of Antiochus IV (‘Mr. Greaseball’), but now we’ve also traced who the **‘perverter’** of Isaiah 28:10 and 13 is, though there were surely other **‘perverters’** of this critical passage of God’s Word than just Charles Briggs.

But I wouldn’t think of leaving him without a more appropriate name. So we’ll call him Chuck, short for ‘Chuck-full of Pigs’, whose also a “prig”, I mean, as defined by my dictionaries, “a person who displays or demands of others pointlessly precise conformity, fussiness about trivialities, or exaggerated propriety, especially in a self-righteous or irritating manner”, or more simply defined, “a silly or foolish person”, or as well the simpler “British Dictionary” definition, “a person who is smugly self-righteous and narrow-minded”, because all these definitions appropriately identify ‘Chuck-full of Pigs’ to me.

And I mean it was him that was **deceived to believe** in what **seemeth right**, and therefore, despite his both ‘scholarly’ and ‘pastoral’ lists of ‘credentials’, was nonetheless, and that is, according to God, at best a **‘foolish babe’**, but that would only be if he didn’t abandon his **faith in the resurrection of the dead**, which apparently he did, making him at least **reprobate**, and that would also only be if he didn’t also **deny** God’s authorship of His Own **pure words**, which he apparently also did, that is, whenever it **‘seemed reasonable’** to him, which is real **‘heresy’**, not to mention that he was expecting ‘a pass’ on his **sins** until sometime after he died, and likely ‘lived’ accordingly, that is, being **‘misled’ to believe** he did not

need **forgiveness** for all his **sins** before he left this World.

And I mean whatever 'Brown-nose' or 'Screw-Driver' so-called 'scholars' were involved with this lexicon '**heresy**', the 'chain' can be no stronger than it's 'weakest link', which in this case is plainly 'Chuck-full of Pigs'. And '**shamefully**' the authors of Blue Letter Bible have been **deceived** to accept this particular '**rational heresy**' in the form of the BDB lexicon, most significantly where they have inserted the BDB's '**seemeth right**' definitions into Isaiah 28:10 and 13.

Beyond this, I occasionally **discern** definitions from the context of **scripture** that should be in Strong's but are not. Remember for example how **we** concluded that "vanish" or "be erased", or "be obliterated", or maybe better yet, "disappear", should be among the definitions of **be destroyed** because the **use** of these **words** in Daniel 11:20? And I often find Strong's definitions too simple. However Blue Letter Bible and Strong's otherwise well enough '**rightly define**' God's **pure words**, and also generally '**rightly define**' the "Root Word (Etymology)" meanings of them too.

Still the effects of this **corruption** in Blue Letter Bible can be more recently seen in the newly added New English Translation (NET, ©1997), whose authors will also one day bare the **shame** of offering one of the most '**perverted translations**' of these verses in Isaiah 28 that are based on these—even in Blue Letter Bible—BDB '**misdefined**' **pure words**.

And I should also point out that most 'modern translations' instead '**misuse**' question marks in the second half of [Verse 9](#). And before you panic—or **stumble**—read again the 2 questions God has for **us** in the first half of Verse 9, and ask yourself, does the second half of Verse 9 and Verse 10 answer the preceding questions or not? If you don't already **know** they do, and how they do, you shouldn't '**follow me as I follow Christ**', because it's exactly how the **steps** in these '**studies**' have been **ordered**, whereby '**we**' who do **understand** resolve to **continue** to **prove** and **exercise** in God's '**One interpretation**' of [Isaiah 28:9-14](#), as well as in **all scripture... given by the inspiration of God**, and whereby **we all** must eventually...

...come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect [or 'spiritually mature'] man... [Eph 4:13](#),

but more specifically for '**us**', that '**our**'...

...lord when he cometh shall find [at least 'us', His 'meat eaters' and 'servers of all',] so doing ([Mat 24:42-47](#); [Luk 12:41-44](#)),

and yes, **even for evermore [Psa 121:8](#)**. But really this whole short **psalm** applies.

And yes, for BDB you can from now on read, 'Brownnose-ScrewDriver-Pigs'. And please **understand** that this is just another of my '**son of thunder**' and '**Nehemiah-beard-pulling**'—though nonetheless '**Spirit approved**'—**ways to save with fear [Jude 1:22-23](#)**, as well as to **shew** that I **abhor that which is evil [Rom 12:9](#)**, or in other **pure words** of God, to **shew** that I **love** and **fear the LORD**, and therefore **hate evil [Psa 97:10](#)**, and furthermore, that...

...pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate [Pro 8:13](#).

And how can we deny that **the wicked triumph** (e.g., [Psa 12:6-8](#) and [Psa 94](#), especially verse 8) by such **damnable heresies** (e.g. [2Pe 2](#)), that is, through our **adversary the devil**, except where it concerns **us** that **hath an ear to hear**, and I mean **us** as in [1Corinthians 2:10](#). But I also mean that by this **knowledge**, and by

the grace of God, the **gates of hell shall not prevail against 'us'**. In fact, by this **knowledge of God**, **we** also,

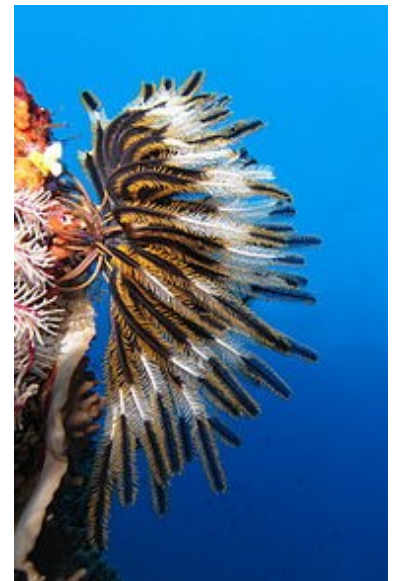
...having spoiled principalities and powers, ['make'] a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it [Col 2:15](#).

And yes, **we**, that is, His **disciples indeed**, are **'made unassailably free'**.

And remember those “contradictions” in Dr. Velikovsky’s own perspectives that I was talking about, the ones that surely must have been **'faithfully revealed'** to him by God, even as He is **'faithful to reveal'** them to you and me? I think these last observations of his showed him a few of them. And it might eventually **'open his ears to hear'**, whenever it is his time for him to **hear**. But by his observations and acknowledgement of such ‘catastrophic phenomena’—as far as he did—I am nonetheless **given...hope** for his **'immortal soul'**, I mean assuming he is presently on the **'right side'** of that **great gulf in the lower parts of the earth**, where if so he is now in a much **better** ‘frame of mind’ to reconsider such observations, and finally really experience that **'hath an ear to hear'** moment. You **know**, that moment that God **'divinely anticipated'** would happen, and which is the reason his **spirit** is now in Abraham’s Bosom, **God willing**.

And at this point Dr. Velikovsky is done ‘beating’ this particular *uniformitarian* ‘dead horse’ *theory* ‘to a peat’, (and no, I couldn’t help it), and goes, (keep up with the PIRE and PIRE-NA verb conjugations), on to a newer **'misrepresentation'** for the *formation of coal*, observing,

The consideration of the enormous mass of organic matter needed to form a coal seam brought about the birth of another theory of the origin of coal. Fallen trees were carried along by overflowing rivers, and coal was formed from them, not from the plants *in situ* [that is, not from *plants* “situated in their original, natural, or existing place or position”]. This [“drift”] theory [which is apparently the precursor to CRC Theory, supposedly] explains the enormous accumulation of dying plants in some localities; it may be able to show why, in many cases, a fossilized tree trunk is embedded in coal with its lower part uppermost, or standing on its head [but really can’t even do that if you just **remember** the ‘layer-transcending potential’ of *polystrate fossils* from last section]—which the peat-bog theory does not explain [- taking it even further beyond the point of being **'ridiculous'**]. But the drift theory can’t account for the fact that various kinds of marine life are mixed with the coal. Carbonaceous [less or not *heated* mostly *plant-sediment-mix*] and bituminous [more *heated plant-animal-sediment-mix*] shales [- last time: ‘water-pulverized’, *fine grain mud/clay*] are frequently packed with fossilized marine fish. **Deep-sea crinoids** [photo, [p.174](#), which can live over 5 miles beneath *sea level*], and clear-water ocean corals [which, as they live by *photosynthesis*, only live up to 200 feet *underwater*] often alternate with the coal beds. [!] [Now there’s some ‘up and down’ *great turbulence* for you, and can you now **'better see'**, even **'better hear'**, such ‘great swirling turbulence’ accompanied by ‘great-sucking sounds’?]



Erratic boulders [- 'displaced' and sometimes "enormous", weighing 1000's of tons, now called just "erratics", or 'incompletely defined' as "glacial erratics"], too, are often encased in coal [and I can **see** such 'huge boulders' moved along like 'pebbles in a steam' either by *great turbulence* or *giant tidal waves*, as Dr. Velikovsky will further reveal in **SECTION 8**]. It was [**'ridiculously'** and/or **'deceitfully'**] supposed that these boulders were carried by chance on natural rafts of closely drifting logs and thus became embedded in the coal. Close rafts of drifting trunks are conceivable only after a great hurricane. However, marine fish would not enter deeply into inundation rivers to be entombed together with the boulders, and coral does not grow in muddy water.

And finally Dr. Velikovsky gives us the benefit of his somewhat **'mis-imagined'** and therefore limited, but nonetheless helpful perspective of how *coal formed*, concluding,

Apparently the coal was not formed in the ways described [that is, not by "Peat" or "Drift"/CRC Theory]. Forests burned [especially during The Visits of Venus], a hurricane [or **'planet-sloshed and pushed' waters**, but the first time instead a **'planet-assisted' global flood**] uprooted them [where The 1st Visit of Mercury helps stir up *turbulent waters* to 'sedimentize' the Genesis topsoil, at least in most places, all the way down to the Genesis rock/*bedrock*], and [where The Visits of Venus are able to **'slosh and push'**] a [giant] tidal wave or succession of [giant] tidal waves coming from the sea [that] fell upon the charred and splintered trees and swept them into great heaps, tossed by billows, and covered them with marine sand, pebbles and shells, and weeds and fishes; [then] another [giant] tide deposited on top of the sand more carbonized [already *burned*] logs, threw them in other heaps [which apparently is his suggestion of how 'forked upward' *deposits* were *formed*], and again ['lightly'] covered them with marine sediment [making another 'relatively shallow', 'Venus-class' *seam* of *coal*, which Dr. Velikovsky did not seem to **see** will not be eventually 'deeply' *buried* like the *deposits* in The Flood altogether at one time were]. The heated ground [if it existed where the "heaps" landed - and **remember** even if so this is also "ground" just *inundated* with quite a lot of *water*, unless we're talking about the *underground heating* of what Mercury a millennium earlier 'more deeply' *deposits* -] metamorphosed ['changed'] the [yet *uncharred* or already] charred wood into ['dark' or even 'darker'] coal, and if the wood or the ground where it was buried was drenched [from the sky] in a bituminous [*hydrocarbon*] outpouring, bituminous coal was formed [unless enough *heating* alone is capable of producing such 'dark' coal, though surely extra *liquid hydrocarbons* in the 'recipe' could make it even 'darker', as could a 'substitution' of a sufficient quantity of 'oily' *animals* and/or *plants*]. Wet leaves sometimes survived the forest fires and, swept into the same heaps of logs and sand [or in the case of The Flood, instead are 'sucked' along in the same *underwater currents* that 'more deeply' but just as 'intermittently' *bury* these "heaps" that they 'carry'], [and in either case these *leaves*] left their designs on the coal. Thus it is [by both means] that seams of coal are covered with marine sediments; [and] for that [or these and other] reason[s] also a seam may bifurcate [or "divide or fork into two branches"] and have marine deposits between its branches.

This *bifurcation* or "branching" of *coal deposits*, by-the-way, is most likely, with Mercury, the both 'upward' and 'downward branching' of "coal beds" that resulted

from 'his' original and 'deeper' **work**, where 'clogging breaches' produce what I might call 'bifurcating whirlpools' and thereby 'upward branching' of *deposits*, and where just the 'filling' of the 'irregularly-shaped breaches' themselves result in 'downward branching' too. Or with Venus I'm seeing mostly the 'downward', 'shallow' **work** on top of 'uneven' *topography*—like where adjacent 'water-plowed' *ravines* get 'filled' and then further *buried* under "plant remains". And I'm thinking there is less *bifurcation* of *deposits* by 'upward irregular stacking of heaps' by Venus simply because 'she' could not generally *bury* such "heaps" deep enough in *sediment*, not as deep as Mercury did anyway, and certainly not as deep as Dr. Velikovsky '**mis-imagined**' his "pageant" of 'visitors'—over "eons" more time—eventually supposedly did. And I can only hope you're starting to keep up with where prosopopeia (or PIRE) does or does not apply, because from here on you'll be getting no more help from me.

And **remember** I'm also thinking that "brown" or 'light' *coal* can be formed just by *burying* enough collected "plants remains" deep enough, that is, so that there is enough *pressure*—provided by a 'colossal covering' of *sediment*—to 'metamorphose', or in this case, 'pressure cook' it—an 'occurrence' Dr. Velikovsky apparently also did not **imagine** could happen, at least quickly enough. And yes, increasing *pressure* naturally increases *temperature*. However such a 'recipe' would 'pressure cook' it's 'ingredients' a little slower and less 'completely' than if an even *higher heat* was at some point added to the 'recipe'. And if *buried frogs, lizards, snakes* and *bugs* can be preserved *alive* for thousands of years inside *seams* of *coal*, then both the *plant* and *animal remains* that are *deposited* by Mercury could remain to some degree *unfossilized* for the only about one thousand years it takes for Venus to come along and by *volcanic activity* sufficiently *heat* these *deep deposits* into 'darker' *coal* and *oil*, huh.

And by the way, on The Visits of Venus I don't expect that the whole surface of the Earth was *hot* enough to turn *wood* into *coal*, or even into 'darker' *coal*, so that if the "plant remains" aren't fully enough 'pre-burned', or did not happen to fall on "heated ground"—but necessarily on ground that had just been 'greatly inundated'—you more likely got "Lignite", which again are "plant remains" that are not fully "metamorphosed" into *coal*, meaning to me that they apparently received neither sufficient *pressure* nor *heat* to do so.

But here Dr. Velikovsky's gives an acceptable but limited account, that is, mostly of just how

Venus made *coal*, where he apparently saw less of how Mercury at least participated in making most of it, nor how 'he' at least participated in making most the *oil*. And I mean Mercury "at least participated" in the cases where just the *pressure* and the 'lesser heating' that 'he' provided wasn't enough. And Dr. Velikovsky does add something here that we have not really yet connected so far, though, as with some of his other perspectives, it appears he made it account for more than it really did, and so it will be necessary in some cases to 'make substitutions' to his 'recipe' based on our now '**better skill**' and '**better equipment**' in this 'kitchen'.

But by-the-way, I meant it was likely that just you did not **remember**, as I was simply—and again—somewhat misleading you, though again only for the benefit of 'simulating' my original experience, that is, to make yours as much a '**naturally and fearfully humiliating experience**' as mine '**unendingly continues**' to be, and that is, as God intends (e.g., [Pro 15:33](#); [18:12](#); [22:4](#)).

And I finally did it. I '**wrote it** upon the doorposts of 'mine' house, yes, another 'plaque on the wall'. But I say "finally" because I had this **revelation** a while back, on January 28, 2013, when then I also "finally" wrote,

Enlightenment is always accompanied by the knowledge
that what you thought you knew was a flawed perspective.

But this wasn't '*scriptural*' enough to put on the wall. So it stayed in a file until, on December 6, 2016—at the time of this writing—I was inspired to make it '*door post worthy*', and wrote,

Growing in The Knowledge of God
is by divine nature
humiliating

But this wasn't as 'inspiring' as I thought '*door post worthy revelations*' should be, so the next day I replaced it with the more 'positive message',

To Seek God
IS to Seek
Humility

And '*I tell you the truth*, if you're not getting this 'message' one way or another, all the rest will do more *evil* than *good*, and will '*combustibly*' directly affect what will 'finally' *be ministered unto you*, including how *high* and *abundantly*, and with what *eternal weight of glory* God will *lift you up to for ever* have. And I mean, generally speaking, you are '*the servant of no one*' if you cannot help them *continue* to '*grow in humility*' virtually '*every step of the way*', since this is God's primary *way* that *he will lift you up* too. But this is why it is supposed to be lonely, since it is more often the best '*course*'—or '*step*'—to abandon *fellowship* that encourages *pride* and is therefore *perilous*, than to continue with it and do more *evil* than *good*, and even if this must be done without the '*ability*' to help others to *discern* the *godliness* of your *steps*.

And what should *we* have noticed in Dr. Velikovsky's last paragraph, that some of *us* may have not '*remembered*'—read, '*compartmentalized*'? It is that though *we* did *remember* the *fire, and hail*, and the *snow, and vapour*, and the *stormy wind*, and even some of the other kinds of '*ordinance*' that tend to 'fly' along with them, '*we*' left behind the *manna*, otherwise known by the Ancient Greeks as "ambrosia", and by the Ancient Scandinavians as a "bloody milk", and by Ancient Latin Americans as 'an inundating gooey substance'—all of which was originally brought to my full attention by Dr. Velikovsky.

And Sir Walter Scott brought to my attention that later Greeks, and later Byzantine Romans, held onto their military superiority by using their "secret" weapon, "greek fire", also know as "Roman fire", "sea fire", "war fire", "liquid fire", "sticky fire" or "manufactured fire", which made 'light work' of many of their naval battles, but also of all manner of other kinds of assaults where 'unquenchable fire' was an effective weapon, including "in a siege", but that is until, at least according to Sir Walter's research, Muslims finally learned this "state secret", which evidently was around the time in the Mid-15th Century when Constantinople—the last refuge of the Byzantine Roman Empire—fell (*Count Robert of Paris*, 1832, about ¾ though Chapter XXIX or 29). Another clue Sir Walter offers is that the Greeks actually acquired their "greek fire"—or evidently just the key ingredient of it—from "the holy land", otherwise then know as "Palestine".

And even more recently 'modern science' has solved this mystery, at least for me, in that it at least identifies what the main ingredient must have been. What? It must have been *manna* that was not 'electrolyzed', which is now more commonly

known as *naphtha*, though apparently also related to other forms of ‘unrefined’ *gaseous, liquid* and *semi-solid petroleum hydrocarbons*. And though I say ‘unrefined’, I really **see** they were all ‘**precisely refined**’ by God for His **purposes**, though all of them also related to the *bitumen* that Dr. Velikovsky is referring to, and that he apparently imagines “drenched” and, when *ignited*, helped *carbonize* (or *burn*) *forests*, which he apparently also thought—in whatever of its various forms—was a ‘necessary ingredient’ in this kind of *coal*.

But this cannot entirely be the case. Why? Because surely the biggest accumulations of so-called *bituminous coal* must have been ‘gathered’ by Mercury in The Flood, when there were enough *giant forests* and *giant plants* available to gather such “surprising” and “remarkable”—that is, ‘Pre-Flood-sized’—“great heaps”, and because I expect that Mercury did not likely **bring** much if any *gaseous hydrocarbons* in ‘his’ *atmosphere*, because if ‘he’ did it would have been ‘siphoned’, etc., into Earth’s *atmosphere*, and in some places *condensed* into *liquids*, and sometimes also finally into ‘partially solidified’ *semi-solids*, and likely in some places be *ignited*, including by *lightning*, and so in this way, with the various ‘**God-refined**’ forms of it, various parts of the Earth would have become “drenched [from the sky] in this bituminous [*petroleum hydrocarbon*] outpouring”.

And I mean I don’t see that this happened with Mercury, only with Venus, who also ‘**brings**’ plenty of ‘extra heating’ to ‘further darken’ the already *underground deposits* Mercury otherwise could not. And Venus is just as able to *ignite* entire *forests* just by the *heating* and *melting* of the *ground*, including *melting* entire *mountains ranges*, and therefore, at least in some places, make the *inorganic bitumen* a ‘substituable extra ingredient’ for the ‘recipe’, and one that is not likely in it when it comes to the just ‘magma-heated’ and ‘more-deeply-buried’ *coal* found inside Flood rock. And I mean if Dr. Velikovsky thought that all the largest, especially *bituminous*—‘dark and maybe also sticky’—*coal* must have always been the result of the introduction of *gaseous, liquid* and/or *semi-solid inorganic hydrocarbons* into Earth’s *atmosphere* from one of Earth’s ‘earlier visitors’, which really only includes The 1st Visit of Mercury, in this he is mistaken, because indeed the ‘ingredients’ and ‘recipes’ on this ‘menu’ of ‘light’ to ‘dark’ types of *coal*—all ‘**skillfully and precisely prepared**’ by our God—most certainly must have been much more varied than he described, or that I have described for that matter.

And I mean that since only Mercury could have been involved with the accumulation of the largest *coal deposits*, likely another thing that would add to their ‘extra darkness and/or stickiness’—besides *pressure*—is ‘oily’ *animal* and/or *plant hydrocarbons*, along with greater *underground heating* by Venus. Of course Dr. Velikovsky rightly concludes that *atmospheric gaseous petroleum hydrocarbons* became *condensed* into *liquids*, or *electrolyzed* into **manna**, or otherwise ‘partially solidified’, surely helping make the more ‘shallowly-buried’, ‘dark and/or sticky’ *coal*, but evidently otherwise more simply just ‘accumulated’ as *deposits* of *naphtha*, etc., too.

Again, I think he was missing that, besides *heat*, it must have been ‘oily’ *animal* and *plant hydrocarbons* that are responsible for helping to make the largest, ‘darker/stickier’, ‘Flood-rock-buried’ *coal deposits*, because I don’t expect there were much if any *atmospheric hydrocarbons* to speak of available then, that is, during The 1st Visit of Mercury, as Noah reported neither any **red waters**, nor any **burning waters** either, which he should have if *significant quantities* of *petroleum hydrocarbons* were then ‘entering’ Earth’s *atmosphere*.

And I mean *naphtha*, and other *forms* of *petroleum hydrocarbons*, which could be *ignited* just *falling* through Earth’s *atmosphere*, or by *lightning*, or otherwise *ignited* by *volcanic activity* either from Earth or Mercury, would have continued

burning even after landing and naturally *floating* on *water*, since many *forms* of *petroleum hydrocarbons* naturally *float*, that is, they commonly have *densities* below that of *water* (again, 1 g/cm³). One source I found, for example, has ‘ballparked’ *Naphtha* with a *density* of about .665 g/cm³ at 15 °C (60 °F), so it would readily *float*, and especially while it *burned*. And again, Noah reported nothing like this. But there are other reports that we will further examine with Dr. Velikovsky’s help, including ones that suggest that the ‘various forms’ of this supposedly *inorganic* ‘special ingredient’ may instead or otherwise be of *organic* origin too, though necessarily ‘alien’. But **be ye patient**, this investigation will take us to the end of **SECTION 10**.

And yes, especially on The Visits of Venus, the *atmosphere* must have been in places ‘thick’ with the *hydrocarbon gases* coming from Venus, that upon entering Earth’s *atmosphere* were in some cases *converted* into different *states*—that is, into *liquids*, *semi-solids*, and even possibly fully *solid compounds*, with some of these *conversions* evidently to some extent involving Earth’s and Mercury’s *electrified atmospheres*, if not just finally sufficient *cooling* in the ‘transfer’ from *planet to planet*, and that is, if not *ignited* somewhere along the way.

And to be clearer, “light” to “heavy” *naphtha* has a range of *boiling/condensing points* between about 60 to 425°F (30 to 200°C), where if sufficiently *heated* it *boils* from a *liquid* or *semi-solid* into a *gas*, but if *cooling* it *condenses* from *gas* into a *liquid* or *semi-solid*, and varying depending on how “light” or “heavy” it is. And the range of *melting/freezing points* of *naphtha* is *extremely low*, as *low* as -150°F (-100°C) or lower, where if sufficiently *heated* it *melts* from *solid* into either a *liquid* or *semi-solid*, and if sufficiently cooled it simply fully *solidifies*. And this means that by these ‘**natural ordinances**’ these *hydrocarbon gases* would have commonly *condensed* into *liquids* and/or *semi-solids* like *naphtha*, and with further *cooling*, that is, if they ended up in *extremely cold* Arctic Regions or atop ‘high enough’ *mountains*, would have naturally become *solids*, but of course they would thereafter change *states* as many times as *temperatures* reach their *phase* transition points.

But *bitumen* is defined by my dictionary as “any of various natural substances...as asphalt ...consisting mainly of hydrocarbons”. And again, something else is in all cases potentially available everywhere, and that is, *dead animals*. So I expect that the more 1) *gaseous*, *liquid* and *semi-solid atmospheric hydrocarbons*, and/or 2) ‘oily’ *animal* and/or *plant hydrocarbons*, and/or 3) *heat* that are added to a *seam* of *coal*, the ‘darker’ it becomes, or the more *bituminous* it becomes. And I mean again no, the ‘darkness’ or *bituminousness* of *coal* cannot solely depend on just the *atmospheric hydrocarbons* that are available at the time of its formation, since evidently plenty of it is “at least partially” *formed* by Mercury where likely relatively little *atmospheric hydrocarbons* are available, and that is, where only later ‘extra’ *underground heating* is available. Nonetheless, surely *gaseous*, *liquid* and *semi-solid hydrocarbons* relatively abundant in the *atmosphere* on The Visits of Venus add greatly to the ‘darkness and stickiness’ of the ‘closer-to-the-surface’ *coal* *formed* at that time, and it apparently also helps *ignite* and/or *accelerate* many of the all but ‘**unquenchable conflagrations**’, ‘unquenchable’ except by *giant tidal waves* that ‘uproot’ these, in many cases, ‘**conflagrating forests**’ and—without the need for further *heating* or *pressure*—simply ‘accumulate’ them as *coal*, that is, in ‘shallow-sediment-buried’ *seams* that, ‘in their own right’, are of “surprising” and “remarkable” size too.

And yes again, earlier in this section I led you to accept that since *plants* and *animals* are made of *hydrocarbons*—as most ‘**living things**’ are—that this is all that is needed to make the *coal* and *oil*, let alone *natural gas*, found in Earth’s *crust*. And to some extent I did I mislead you, even as I mislead myself for a while. Still it is

unlikely that *significant quantities* of *atmospheric hydrocarbons* came from Mercury, and neither so much from the Earth, as there are evidently plenty of *large*, ‘solely-pressure-cooked’, Flood rock *deposits of coal* that are not *bituminous*, and apparently there is no need of ‘pure’ *bitumen* to *form* the otherwise *bituminous deposits* found in Flood rock, as so many ‘oily’ *giant animals* and *plants* at that time are available, and so much *underground heat* is later provided by Venus.

But **remember** we are also building the case that Mercury evidently has an altogether different origin than ‘his relations’, Venus and Mars, that is, ‘he’ is not likely one of the ‘children of Jupiter’ that is ‘exploded out’ of their ‘father’, and that by this means carries with them some of Jupiter’s *atmospheric hydrocarbons*, as well as some of its internal—and ultimately *oxidized*—*iron*, where either of these two ‘siblings’, given the opportunity, could have turned Noah’s ***flood of waters red***, as well as made them *burn* too. But again, apparently that didn’t happen. So I’m guessing instead that Mercury, being clearly enough identified as the next planet to accost the Earth after The Flood, is also the **‘great instrument’** God used for The Flood too, as our guide Dr. Velikovsky—in spite of his **‘misperceptions’**—and I will further clarify next section.

And being more *dense* Mercury must instead be a ‘piece’ that is ‘broken out’ from a *inelastic collision* of larger *planets*, a *collision* evidently resulting in one of the *asteroid belts* still *orbiting* in our Solar System, which, because of Mercury’s reputation of being “the messenger of the gods”, I suspect is the Kuiper Belt, the one from which ‘he’ would have had the opportunity to literally ***visit*** all the **‘planet’ gods**, and Earth, on ‘his’ way to becoming the ‘best friend’ of the Sun. Of course I can’t yet be sure of this, as *alignments of planets*—when they are not really that close to each other—could nonetheless appear to viewers on Earth to be **‘visits’** too.

And beyond this doubt, the ‘visible existence’ of the two other major *asteroid belts*, with evidence of a still ‘mostly invisible’ third—I mean we’re apparently finally starting to identify more of it’s ‘pieces’—offers the possibility that it is only a **‘misperception’** that Mercury is the same ‘piece’ emerging from just one ‘encounter’, but may instead be a ‘piece’ that reached Earth as a result of multiple *inelastic* and *elastic collisions* and/or *perturbations*. And yeah, I mean in God’s ‘league’ of ‘demolition billiards’, He may have used one ‘ball’ to ‘hit’—or in terms of the game of pool, ‘break’—and thereby ‘put into play’ another ‘ball’, and with that ‘ball’, and by another ‘break’, yet another. And again yeah, why not a ‘double’ or ‘triple’ *inelastic* ‘break shot’ involving three or more different ‘balls’, along with ‘multiple-ball’ *elastic* ‘encounters’ too, altogether involving and/or creating many, many more, and all mainly for the **purpose** of His **great judgments?** Of course we’re evidently also talking **‘signs...in the stars’** here too, and we’re surely also talking about our **wondrous** and **marvellous, ‘immeasurably-precisely-skilled’** God. And I mean this ‘shot’ of His I’m talking about, made by **the curse**, should not even be close to entirely imaginable, **ever**. But with Dr. Velikovsky’s help we will further consider this **‘cutting-edge speculation’** about Mercury, Venus and Mars, and that is, throughout the rest of this **study**.

And **remember** we have evidence as to when any number of these ‘variables’ may apply on any given **visit**. And I mean that the evidence suggests to me that most this excess of *atmospheric hydrocarbons* must have come from the *atmosphere* of Venus, and before that from the *atmosphere* of Jupiter, but not so much from Mars, and only because the evidence also suggests that Mars on multiple occasions ‘thrusts’ a good share of ‘his’ at Venus before **‘visiting’** Earth, leaving ‘him’ much less to deposit here than ‘he’ would have otherwise, as we will also later further consider.

And yes, we're still talking about the same **'recipes'** that, by **the ordinances** that God **has created**, and then **cursed**, He **'unimaginably skilfully-prepared'** in His vast **'kitchen of heaven and earth'**, including *naphtha* ("greek fire"), or "ambrosia" ("the food of the [Greek] gods"), or "bloody milk" (to the supposedly just 2 surviving Ancient Scandinavians), or 'an inundating gooey substance' (to Ancient Latin Americans), or **manna** and **land that floweth** [or **flowing**] **with milk and honey** (to Moses and company). And this **'kitchen'** is **not yet** closed, because we will **see** that there is even **more sure** evidence that such **'recipes'** of our God are still to be **prepared** ^{H3559} (e.g. [Psa 7:13](#)), and Jesus has **promised** that by The Spirit that he **will shew us** such **things to come**, that is, in The Great Tribulation, and with this **faith** we will try to further **'rightly imagine'** them, especially in the last sections.

But there is another **oversight** ^{H4870} that I 're-exposed' through my comments in Dr. Velikovsky's last paragraph, and I mean one **'we'** have been **'overlooking'** long enough, since you now may be ready to **understand** it. And this is where you'll really need to **'follow me as I follow Christ'** the closest, because when I said, "you now may be ready", I mean, 'ready or not', it's time to expose the most 'challenging' of this section's 'partial wild goose chases', which you should have noticed are getting **'increasingly more complicated and subtle'** in that they are unavoidably 'interwoven' with **'increasingly larger heaps of precepts'**. Or to use another **'meaty precept'**, it's time for another **'corrected revelation'**, and one where a little panic may be, at least initially, unavoidable. And I mean that this is unavoidably a more **'challenging step'** not just because it's one that more heavily relies on your **'ability'** to **understand everything** we've covered so far, it's also one that will, possible more than you are **able**, **'try your hearts and reins'**, which, if you're not yet **able**, or are still otherwise **'found wanting'**, is a **'step'** you're not yet ready to make.

But surely you've **'faced'** a number of **'increasingly challenging steps'** in these **'studies'** already. And I'm talking about **steps** that are more like those 'high walls' modern soldiers are required to scale in 'obstacle courses', where if at first they are **not able**, they **learn** to **continue** to charge these walls until they become **able**, and beyond that they **continue** in such **exercise**, becoming **'stronger'** and **better** in this **work** as they **do**. And of **'course'** I mean **do** as Peter does in [2 Peter 1:10](#). But I also mean that these **'great steps'** are only **supposed** to get **higher** as you **go**. And of **'course'** I mean **go** as Paul does in [Hebrews 6:1](#). And besides, how could **increasing in the knowledge of God** be otherwise? And I mean that if you're **'on course'** in The Natural Eternal Progression of the Knowledge of God you should already be **'awake to the knowledge'** that **with** such **'continued exercise'** comes **'ever-increasing ability'**, but **only** as long as you are also becoming **'ever-increasingly worthy'** of it.

And in this case we not only need to **remember** to bring along all the **precepts**, we need to be careful to **acknowledge** speculation as speculation too. And maybe you already noticed that there may be a problem with that 'great sucking sound' I wanted you to **hear**, though I still think it is a "sounding" you really can **hear**, but one that happens in a different way than you have so far been **able to see**, which again has been at least somewhat my doing, though nonetheless **for your sakes** (i.e., [Rom 11:28](#); [2 Co 4:15](#)). And I mean in Dr. Velikovsky's last paragraph you should have had a **revelation**, or **acknowledged** ^{H3045} (e.g. [Psa 32:5](#); [Psa 51:3](#); [Pro 3:6](#)) that you previously had it, and forgotten it. And I'm talking about a **revelation** that you should now be **able to see** is a **'contradiction'** to **'our'** earlier thinking, and therefore in need of **correction** ^{H4148; G1882}, (e.g. [Pro 15:10](#); [2](#)

[Ti 3:16](#)).

What **revelation**? Since Noah's **flood of waters** must have been *turbulent* enough to "sedimentize" absolutely all the *sedimentary rock* before it all 'intermittently' *settled out* on the remaining original Genesis rock, then for a time there may have been no **storehouses** to help 'suck down' **the waters**, that is, other than what may be in Genesis rock, which could not be much if any. And I mean I now '**better see**', by what I **believe** is a '**corrected revelation**' by The Spirit, that new **storehouses** were nonetheless *formed*, evidently ones that could indeed 'suck' with a 'great sucking sound'.

But since I likely just 'disintegrated' your current '**compartmentalized imaginations**' about how God's 'great sucking' *water storehouses* during The Flood could have '**worked**', I should first say that when this '**contradiction**' finally occurred to me, and before I was **able**—and I should also add was **worthy**—to have this **revelation**, something again happened that seems always to be a prerequisite to such '**cutting edge**' **revelations**. What had to happen first? I had to **acknowledge**, once this 'disintegrated storehouse' compartmentalization came to my attention, that I had '**misunderstood**', and therefore had no **understanding** as to how such "surprising" and "remarkable" *underground* 'accumulations' of *animal* and/or *plant materials* could be so 'greatly concentrated' in one place, let alone so *deep underwater*, and ultimately become so 'deeply-buried' *underground*. I mean it seemed it would have required such *deposits* to be pulled *deep underwater* by *great turbulence* alone, which I expect was too 'erratic', 'dispersing' and 'unfocused' in and of itself to 'concentrate' so much *animal* and/or *plant remains* altogether in relatively isolated *beds*, especially given that *plants*, and especially *wood*, tend to strongly resist being *submerged* at all. But I suffered in this particular '**acknowledged confusion**' for a '**mercifully**' short time, though the day and night it lasted also seemed painfully, or I should say, '**tryingly**' long.

And I should also add that until you learn this **teaching**, and are **able** to **follow** such '**ordered steps**', and I mean to '**humbly confess**' your '**mis-understanding**' and/or **ignorance** to God, and, as appropriate, to whoever else you have '**misled**'—which in this case includes you—and do so with '**unfailing patience**' to **wait on the LORD** for **answers** as long as it takes, you won't be **able** or **worthy** to **grow** far beyond what these '**studies**' **teach**, let alone even make it **up** just all the '**visible steps**' offered in them, because this is one of the 'keys' to **gaining** ^{G2770} this '**ability**' and '**worthiness**' whereby God may **find** you **so doing**.

And I mean you should **fear God** and be **forewarned**, because I **know** that this **knowledge** has helped me '**ascend**'^{H5927: G305} many '**great steps**' that otherwise—that is, with such '**tests**' of '**mine**' **integrity** remaining only '**missteps**'—it is my **testimony** that I would not have been '**permitted**' to '**ascend**', because even though there is '**no end**' to how much **higher** that God by His **grace** can and eventually **will lift you up**, that is, if you remain one of His Immortal Sons, He always **requireth** your **humility** before He **will**. And He apparently only offers the potential for '**increasingly great reward**' for a limited time, and that is, when you're '**ascending increasingly higher great steps**' of **understanding** before **the judgment**, which in your case must be before The Rapture, an '**heavenly perspective**' **we** won't '**best see**' together until the close of the next **study**, but in any case, only **if** and '**when**' and to the extent that—in **God speed**—**we** are **ready** ^{H3559: G2093} and **able**, but also **worthy**—yes, including being **humble** enough—to **see** it. And I mean only when you are sufficiently '**approvably**' **godly** ^{H2623} (e.g. [Psa 4:3](#)) will such '**higher understanding**' be **revealed** to you, that is, besides also because you have joined **us** who **continue** to **abound** by **giving all diligence**

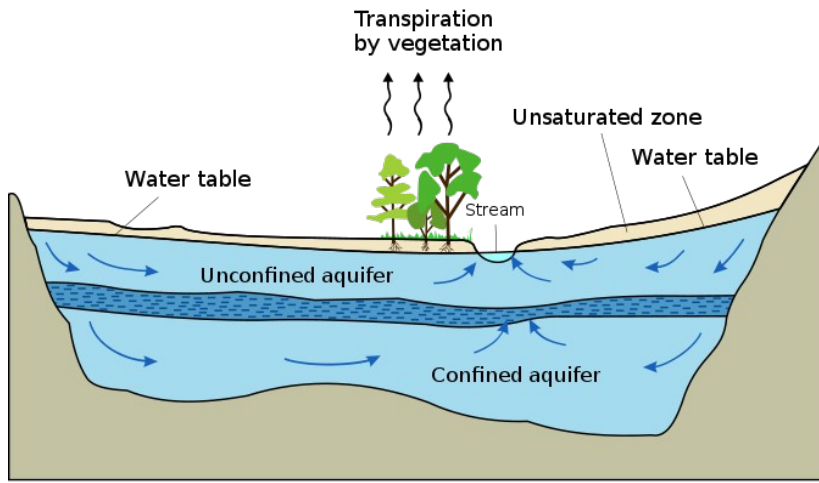
to **seek his face**.




And of '**course**' this **study** has been designed by God that you may now **be**—or with further **use** of it **become—able, worthy** and **ready** to **understand** such '**high thoughts**' and '**deep things**' (P-PAMD)—and be '**found**' **so doing** no matter the number of times you need to 'charge a wall' before you 'get up and over it', because when you finally really **do** 'fully' **understand** this particular **revelation**, you will have joined '**the very, very few of the few**' who **do**. But more specifically, I'm talking about how by The Spirit you should eventually **get** an **understanding** of how God 'collects' and so *deeply buries* such 'surprisingly and remarkably large', 'concentrated' *deposits*, and by this process also succeeds in '**cleansing**' the Earth and its **waters** of most all of the *floating, dead plants* and *animals*.

How does He do it? Besides help from ongoing 'tunnel-making' and 'crater-making' *volcanic action*, first **remember** that *underground water storehouses* today are different from the ones that existed before The Flood, before the original Genesis topsoil was completely 'disintegrated' by *turbulent water* into *sediment* above the remaining Genesis rock, and 'resettled' more according to '**God-ordained**' *fluid dynamics* and *density* than to the surely more beneficial way God had originally **created** it all to **work** in Creation Week. I even imagine some of the *small* to *microscopic organisms* beneficial to *growing plants*, etc., that used to *live* in the original Genesis topsoil became *extinct* too. And at this point I have no further speculation about what the original *underground water storehouses* were like. And whatever the case they are apparently at least mostly all gone, except what Genesis rock may or may not hold. But since what is in this *bedrock* is at least the 'smaller issue' in that it is the border between *solid* and very *hot liquid* or *semisolid rock*, and since Genesis rock is of *very low hydraulic conductivity* (VLHC) anyway, the clearly 'bigger issue' is how *sedimentary rock* is 'resupplied' with *water* in the process of The Flood.

My first impressions, after 'reintegrating' this compartmentalized, 'disintegrating detail', was that all *sedimentary rock* 'naturally' became *saturated* with *water* as it *settled*, which would have, by the *increasing pressure* of further *settling*, put even this *water* 'under' increasing *pressure* to 'escape' where it could. And at first I think the *water* did only this, and while all still *underwater*, and did so as *higher layers* continued to *settle*. But I imagine something happened along the way that would change this from being the only thing happening.

And for your information, as previously promised, **see** the diagram of how an *aquifer works* (p.182), showing where most of our usable *ground-water* now comes from. It may have been something like this in the Genesis topsoil, but I expect there must have been some differences connected to the way those **waters** were **broken up** in **fountains**. But my best guess is that these **waters** were able to be relatively quickly 'drain-sucked' back down into the newly formed —and forming —'Flood rock', this because some *layers* have *high hydraulic conductivity* (HHC), some *low hydraulic conductivity* (LHC), while others have *very low hydraulic conductivity* (VLHC), so that 'breaches' in the *layers* with LHC to VLHC become the 'drain holes' to lower levels with



-  High hydraulic-conductivity aquifer
-  Low hydraulic-conductivity confining unit
-  Very low hydraulic-conductivity bedrock

HHC, if you yet **see** what I mean.

But again, wasn't all *sediment* completely *saturated* with *water* at the point it **settled**, with the increasing **pressure** of *settling sediment* above it only making even 'less room' for it over time? Evidently not, which is the **revelation** I've been getting to, which requires another 'stretch' of your imagination, and this 'stretch' would literally be that I'm still expecting that, with the nearby presence of Mercury along with the Moon, that the Earth becomes a bit 'egg shaped', which I expect then 'squeezes', but really just 'keeps' *water* out of the 'squeezed', 'newly settled' ground, and this while together Mercury

and the Moon are also exerting a *stronger tidal force*, which likely 'further elevates' the *water* beyond where the Moon can alone.

Or in other **words**, these **instruments** of God, surely **excellent in working** (e.g. [Isa 28:29](#)) together, to a significant extent 'pull' or just 'keep' *water* from fully *saturating* the 'newly laid' *sentiments*, and when Mercury 'releases his hold' on the Earth, and that necessarily after at least some of the lower levels of *sediment* are already 'laid', then 'his departure' would allow the Earth to 're-sphere-itize', and with that 'extra' both *atomic magnetic attraction* and *tidal force* 'released', I imagine that some of the formerly 'squeezed' *lower levels* of *sediment* would somewhat 'open up', and that *higher settled* LHC to VLHC *layers* that have a HHC *layer* or *layers* below them are then 'breached' in various places, most *significantly* because of 're- sphere-itization', naturally making 'drain holes' that could 'suck' *water* and everything else that could be caught in the resulting *giant whirlpools*—but especially *floating surface objects*—down to become the 'drain plugs' previously described.

So I **see** that the 're-sphere-itizing' of the Earth likely simply 'opens up' some 'extra space', especially 'inside' the HHC *layers*, 'space' that naturally and immediately 'sucks down' *water* to fill it as fast as it can through the 'breaches' in the LHC *layers*, and all this while the remainder of *sediment*, particularly all of it that will eventually *bury* these 'whirlpool-gathered' *deposits*, is still settling, if you yet **see** what I mean.

And by this I see the possibility for some 'great whirlpooling'. And I mean the biggest *whirlpools* would *form* at any point during The Flood when a necessarily relatively 'newly formed' or 'forming' higher LHC *layer* is 'breached', allowing *water* to 'drain down' into a lower HHC *layer*, this most significantly the result of 'abrupt' *seismic* and/or *volcanic activity* along with the 're-sphere-itization' of the Earth because of the simultaneous 'release' of *atomic magnetic attraction* and its accompanying *tidal force* occurring when Mercury 'leaves' the Earth. And of course to this day smaller *whirlpools* could and would *form* whenever *seismic* or *volcanic activity* or just 'slowly-built-up' or 'released' *pressure* in HHC *layers* result in excessive differences of *pressure* that are separated by LHC *layers*. Or think of it, for example, as a *sink hole* that happens "suddenly" but *underwater*.

And if you've ever squeezed a 'rubber duck squeaky toy', or other such 'squeeze-squeak toys', you can both **see** and **hear** what I'm talking about. You squeeze them and air 'squeaks out' through the hole designed to make that 'squeaking noise', and when you let go air is sucked back inside making the same kind of noise. And I'm imagining something like that except, in addition to *fluids* 'moving in and out', there are 'great-belching-out' and 'great-sucking-in' *sounds*. And of course I mean that the 'squeezing-squeaking' is like the '**fountaining**' of *water* and air, etc.—the loudest noise happening I'd guess when just pockets of *gasses* were escaping into the *atmosphere*—and that this 'expelling-squeaking' is instead like the 'water spout action' of both water and air and whatever else, but not *gaseous hydrocarbons*, which I expect came later.

And whatever the *fluid*, and whether *liquid* or *gas*, certainly this 'upward belching' was at least occasionally noisy. And if man can design a toy duck to 'talk' through a hole when air is squeezed out or sucked in through it, surely God could have used these 'breaches' to literally **speak** if He had so **predestinated**, where His 'squeezing' and 'releasing' of the Earth's inner **storehouses**, regulated by the Moon's 'cooperation' with Mercury, with Mercury's arrival and the Moon's positioning **ordained** by God since The Fall, **...although...**, as the Apostle Paul testifies about our coming **rest**, and really then about **every thing** else,

...the ['creative'] works were finished from the foundation of the world. For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his ['creative'] works [Heb 4:3c-4...](#)

...and it is just His **judgments** that are still ongoing. But certainly, already,

...we which have believed do enter into rest... [Heb 4:3a.](#)

Though not yet entirely, because Paul '**warns**' [H2094: G5537](#) ,

Let us therefore fear, lest...you...come short of it [Heb 4:1.](#)

And he finally '**admonishes**' [H5749: G5537](#) ,

Let us labour therefore to [fully [H3615](#); like [G4845](#); [G4135](#); [G3877](#)] enter into that rest [Heb 4:11.](#)

And when I said "not entirely", I mean that such **labour**, especially **labour in the word and doctrine** [1Ti 5:17](#), is not only ultimately **worthy to receive a reward**, but even now **is the rest** presently available to **us**. I mean doesn't God through the Prophet Isaiah **promise** us that such **rest**—and **refreshing**, and even **delight**—are available now? And surely you've experienced some of this already.

But I **believe** God does '**intervene**' by **visiting** [H6485: G1980](#), most consequentially so with Adam and Eve, that is, at The Fall, and at that point '**greatly** **added** [H3254: G4369](#) to His originally '**finished work**' in Creation Week, which has been the main cause of all the '**fallout**' since then. I mean as I see it, God had to, '**for our sakes**', entirely '**re-ordain** **the ordinances of heaven and earth** at The Fall, and thereafter '**intervene**' to a lesser extent as often as He wills and has **predestinated** otherwise. But it has not changed that the Earth is God's **footstool**, though after **sin entered** it apparently also became His '**squeaky toy**' too, and otherwise, and in a variety of ways, He made it His '**voice box**' as we will further, including with Dr. Velikovsky's help, **prove**.

Of course, and whether or not He *speakeeth* intelligible *words* through LHC *layer* 'breaches', I'm on the side that *believes* God used The Flood, and other *floods*, to '*speak*' intelligible *words*, and evidently so are most 'everyone' else that *speakeeth* English, and even if compartmentalizing this idea most the time. This is because my encyclopedia informs me that,

The words [or lyrics to the 1719 Christian hymn, and since then "Christmas carol", "Joy to the World"] are by English hymn writer Isaac Watts, based on the second half of Psalm 98 in the Bible [or maybe the whole thing - it's only 9 verses].

And I say that "everyone else that *speakeeth* English" *believes* God speaks through "floods" for a couple of reasons. One is that this song has been more recently recorded in 1954 and 59 by Percy Faith, in 1965 by The Supremes, in 1974 by Andy Williams, and in 1984 by "the popular European group Boney M", who "internationally released" it in 1986. Further, it was released in a "pseudo-Handelian [classical] arrangement" by the Cambridge Singers in 1983 and 89, which has since been performed by many, many Church groups. Natalie Cole, daughter of Nat King Cole, recorded the song twice, both in 1994 and 2004. Also more recently it has been recorded in "altered" versions in 1994 by Mariah Carey, and in 2008 by The Jonas Brothers. In 1998 it was recorded by Glen Campbell, and in 1996 and 2003 by Whitney Houston. Other country artists have recorded it too. In 2002 Patty Loveless & Jon Randall recorded it as a duet, and Clay Aiken recorded it in 2004. In 2008 Faith Hill recorded it on a Christmas album of the same title. So yeah, despite the "altered" versions that don't contain all the lyrics, I think most 'everybody', at least in some 'compartment' of their brains, *believes*.

And I mean they *believe* what the lyrics say, but more specifically that "heav'n and nature" really truly and literally can, and will again, be made by God to "sing". The first verse reads,

Joy to the world, the Lord is come!
Let earth receive her King;
Let every heart prepare Him room,
[implying that 'everyone' in Creation]
And [that literally] heav'n and nature [too, will] sing,
And [that] heav'n and nature [have before and will again] sing,
And heav'n, and [that would include the *stars* of] heav'n, and nature
sing.

And Brother Isaac and I can further decompartmentalize this for you with the second verse, because it declares even more specifically how 'everyone' *believes* God can and will *speak*, even *sing* or *clap*, etc., through every part of the Earth. Brother Isaac *proclaimed* this and helps us to keep *believing* it, writing,

Joy to the World, the Savior reigns!
Let men their songs employ;
While [the 'accompanying'] fields and floods, rocks, hills and plains
[also with their *voice*] Repeat the sounding joy [of all "men"],
[Yes, literally] Repeat the sounding [of their intelligibly audible] joy,
Repeat, [and surely perfectly harmoniously] repeat, the sounding joy.

Of course Brother Isaac in these lyrics is talking about how “fields and floods, rocks, hills and plains” will literally be ‘accompanying’—in the musical sense—the “songs” that the rest of us will “employ” at The 2nd Coming of our Lord, when He “reigns”. But I expect less **joyful** messages are delivered by God by **the waters** of The Flood, but that a nonetheless literally intelligible message is given by Him at that time by this **flood of waters**, even as the **psalmist** declares,

The floods have lifted up, O LORD, the floods have lifted up their voice; [even as] **the floods lift up their waves** ([Psa 93:3](#); see also [Psalm 98](#), especially Verses 4 and 8, [Isaiah 14](#), especially Verse 7-9; [Isa 49:13](#); and again [Isa 55:12](#)).

And this brings us to the second reason we all **believe**, and I mean that **scripture** also abundantly confirms that all of Creation will finally and entirely **break forth into singing**, as well as **into** other forms of ‘**music-making**’. And besides the verses above see also [Isaiah 44:23](#), and [54:1](#) with the **understanding** that **Zion** is personified, and appropriately so since I expect that **she** (e.g. [Isa 49:15](#)) will literally, audibly, and intelligibly **sing** and **cry aloud**. And according to [Isaiah 52:9](#) a literal **voice** will be given to **Jerusalem** too, this revealed through a personification of **her** ([Verse 11](#)) where at some point **she** will also, **Break forth into joy**.

However in the case of The Flood, and in other **great judgments** of God, I instead expect the literal, audible, intelligible messages to instead only ‘**fearfully declare the glory of God**’. In other **words of God**, I expect that **the breath** [or **blast**] **of God** ([Job 37:10](#); [2Sa 22:16](#); [Psa 18:15](#); and again [Job 4:9](#)), possibly including, like ‘great lungs’, the contracting and later expanding of **underground storehouses**, are used by God for the “sounding” of any number of ‘**belching mouths**’ or ‘**whirlwinding throats**’.

And yes, I’m ‘**seeing**’ that the ‘opening’ of these lower HHC *layers*, and the ‘breaching’ of the LHC *layers* above them, may have resulted in the immediate *formation of giant*, ‘deep-throated’ *whirlpools*, apparently also marking the point when Mercury left, and when the Earth began to ‘re-sphere-itize’, and when intermittent “great heaps” of ‘floating debris’ began to be ‘pulled down’ through these *whirlpools* to ‘clog’—and finally silence—these ‘drain hole breaches’, the biggest of them evidently *forming*—and “sounding”—in the then still exposed, though then still *deep underwater*, Carboniferous Layer. Of course I’m seeing that Mercury’s **visit** initially causes the ‘belching’ of mostly *water* in ‘**great fountains**’ too, not to mention releases all the ‘**water in the sky**’ by ‘short circuiting’ Earth’s *magnetic field* enough so that it could no longer keep those **waters** from ‘**raining**’ as well as ‘**draining**’ though the ‘**magnetic pole windows**’ down to the *ground*, and I mean evidently not ‘short-circuiting’ it enough to ‘suddenly drop’ all the ‘**water in the sky**’ all at once.

And yes, *plants* and *animals* tend to *float*, which would make a *whirlpool* the likely *phenomenon* to collect them. Think about how little *whirlpools* work in the *drains* you’ve seen. When they start the bulk of the *water* only slowly starts moving toward the *drain*, while anything floating on top of the water will also start to move toward the *drain*, then increasingly faster, and when it reaches the ‘whirling water’ it is quickly ‘sucked down’. And it’s apparently because it’s *floating* that it gets moved down the *drain* ahead of a lot of the *water*. In fact *floating* items actually *float*—and *fall*—all the way down the *whirlpool*—down the ‘steeply-sloping’, ‘spinning’, ‘converging’, ‘curved walls of water’—into the *drain*. So ‘**living things**’ that naturally *float*, like *plants*, and especially *trees*, and *animals*, and especially “great

heaps” of them, would be the ‘natural’ candidates to ultimately ‘clog’ the kind of ‘Flood-sized whirlpool drains’ I’m imagining, just like hair is the likely candidate to ultimately clog a bathtub drain.

But this also further explains why some of those ‘die-hard’ **‘angel human hybrids’** that possibly missed being hit on the head with a rock, but surely were floating on something much smaller than The Ark, didn’t make it through those 150 days either. Uh-huh, I imagine they were literally ‘flushed down the drain’. But maybe you **remember** that other coming ‘flush’, one that will even more **‘fully’** involve both **the zeal of the Lord of hosts** as well as our own, and one that I have, more metaphorically speaking, called the **‘greatest flush of souls’** of all, which I expect will not be too long from now, and be one we should significantly **‘directly participate’** in, that is, as much as your **‘ready’** for it. And you’ll be **‘better ready’** for it **if ‘ye’ continue** in these **‘studies’**, but it won’t be until you’re **‘perfectly ready’** not only to **‘drink the Lord’s blood’**, but also to be **‘dripping with blood of the damned’**. But **‘be patient’**, because this is another of those **perspectives** that you should not be **able** to **‘perfect’** until the end of the next **study**.

By-the-way, one thing the aquifer diagram doesn’t make clear is that VLHC “bedrock” is commonly not too much exposed on Earth’s surface, where exposed at all. *Magma/lava*, however, that has *cooled* and *solidified*, becoming equally VLHC *igneous rock*, more often extends to the surface of Earth’s *crust*, and even, as you should remember, ‘shields’ great portions of *continents* on or near their *surfaces*.

And I’ll try from now on to call the *sedimentary rock* that was ‘laid’ by Mercury instead “Flood rock”. This would serve the purpose of distinguishing it from “diluvium”—the *sedimentary rock* ‘laid’ mostly by the **wondrous ‘water and ice works’** of Venus—which, since this term is a misnomer, I should call something else too. How about calling “diluvium” instead “Exodus rock”, that is, to indirectly, but nonetheless sincerely, honor *nuclear physicist*, and **persecuted** Christian, Mr. Robert V. Gentry, who pioneered the **study**—and **revelations**—about *polonium halos*, identifying them as residing in “Genesis rock”. And I’m so **glad** he did. So, “Flood rock” and “Exodus rock” they are.

Dr. Velokovsky continues with his nonetheless helpful “view on the origin of coal” with additional ‘supporting evidence’, reporting,

A support of this my view on the origin of coal I find in a recently published [1954] extensive work by [Dr.] Heribert Nilsson, professor emeritus of botany at Lund University [who is further identified in **SECTION 3** as originally a *uniformitarian evolutionist* who finally became his own ‘brand’ of *catastrophic-saltationist evolutionist*]. [H. Nilsson, *Synthetische Artbildung*, 2 Vols., Chpts. VII-VIII] [Note: his full name is Dr. Nils Heribert-Nilsson.] Nilsson presents the results of an inquiry into the botanical and zoological composition of the brown coal (lignite) [again, *coal* not exposed to *bitumen*, nor too *deeply buried*, nor much if at all *heated*] of Geiseltal in Germany, made by Johannes Weigelt of Halle and his group [published in *Nova Acta Leopoldina*, 1934-41]. Many plants found in Geiseltal lignite are tropical, of species that do not grow even in the subtropics. A long list of tropical families, genera, and species, discerned in Geiseltal coal, was made known (E. Hoffmann; W. Beyn). Algae and fungi on the leaves preserved in the coal [uh-huh, it’s still pretty ‘fresh’] are found presently on plants in Java [“an island in Indonesia”], Brazil [Equatorial South America], and Cameroons (Köck) [Equatorial West Africa].

Besides the dominating tropical flora in Geiseltal, plants are presented there from almost every part of the globe. The associated insect fauna of Geiseltal coal is found "in present Africa, in East Asia, and in America in various regions, preserved in almost original purity" (Walther and Weigelt). The coal of Geiseltal is rated as belonging to the beginning of the Tertiary time [or Period - read, the time of The Visits of Venus].

As to the reptilian, avian, and mammalian fauna, the coal is a "veritable graveyard." Apes, crocodiles, and marsupials (pouch animals) left their remains in this coal. An Indo-Australian bird, and American condor, tropical giant snakes, East Asian salamanders, left their remains there too (O. Kuhn). Some of the animals are of the [mostly tropical to subtropical, often semi-desert, and mostly treeless grassland] steppe habitat, and others, like crocodiles, came [or 'flew'] from swamps. [So here I imagine the *work* of Venus, including 'Post-Flood-plant-and-animal-carrying' *tidal waves* that 'shallowly-bury' successive "great heaps" on mostly *unheated* or mostly 'quickly-cooled' *ground*].

Not only do the origin and the habitats of plants and animals offer a very paradoxical picture, but so also does their state of preservation. Chlorophyll [which makes plants green] is preserved in the leaves found in the brown coal (Weigelt and Noack). The leaves must have been rather quickly excluded from the contact with air and light, or rapidly entombed [and not that long ago]: these were neither leaves falling off the plants in the fall nor leaves exposed to the action of light and atmosphere after being torn off by a storm [being too 'fresh' for that]. Entire strata of leaves from all parts of the world, counted by the billions, though torn to shreds but with their fine fibers (nervature) intact, in many cases still green, are found in the Geiseltal lignite.

It is not different with the animals. If exposed after death for any length of time to natural conditions, the structure of animals tissues loses its fineness; the muscles and the epidermis (skin) of the animals of the brown coal of Geiseltal were found to have retained their fine structure (Voigt). Also the colors of the insects are preserved in their original splendor. The very process of fossilization with silica [*sand*] invading the tissues must have occurred "fast blitzschenell" [read, they were *buried* 'in a flash']—almost instantaneously, in Nilsson's opinion. While the membranes and colors of the insects are preserved so well, it is difficult to find a complete insect: mostly only torn parts are found (Voigt).

Nilsson is convinced that the animal and plants found in Geiseltal coal were carried there by onrushing water from all parts of the world, but mainly from the coasts of the equatorial belt of the Pacific and Indian oceans—from Madagascar, Indonesia, Australia, and the west coast of the Americas. One thing is, however, evident: coal originated in cataclysmic circumstances.

And of course I attribute this Geiseltal *lignite deposit*—evidently mostly unheated and unexposed to *bitumen*, though it must have been present elsewhere, and only 'lightly-sediment-buried', 'light' *brown coal*—to the *giant tidal waves* 'raised' by Venus, and mainly for two reasons. One is that the parts constituting this *deposit*

must have traveled remarkably far, from all over the planet, so that it seems it would have taken 'Venus-class tidal waves' to carry so much so far. The other is that these constituent parts are so 'violently torn apart', which would also seem to require 'Venus-class' *tidal waves*.

But really there is another reason. It is that I don't really know how 'violently turbulent' the Flood **waters** were, though I expect that they were generally less so. But I do **know** more than I've told you so far. What else do I **know**? Well, I **know** Dr. Henry Morris' calculations for Noah's Ark. Remember he was that 'leading creationist' who '**mised**' that other 'leading creationist', John Whitcomb, into leaving out Dr. Velikovsky's contributions when they published their book that started the "Creationist Movement" a few decades back. But despite the **ignorance** that the Church suffers from today because Dr. Morris insisted we ignore Dr. Velikovsky, and therefore **ignore** and/or '**misinterpret**' all the **work** of God's **instruments of death**—and **deliverance**—Venus and Mars, let alone be **unable** to more '**perfectly interpret**' the **work** of Mercury, his calculations about Noah's Ark are helpful.

To summarize, he calculates that the dimensions of the Ark, (even if not fully to scale), are sufficient to survive ocean waves that would bring it to nearly vertical positions, that is, without overturning it. In other words, it is '**designed**' for some 'unimaginably rough water'. And with **waters** at the same time 'fountaining up', 'raining down', and 'draining from the sky', the '**Flood-waters waves**' were likely at times close to 'Venus class' too, with one exception. There was not so much 'dry ground' available, and ultimately none, for the especially "great heaps" to come so violently crashing down upon, which I expect would accomplish the kind of 'violent tearing apart' of *flora* and *fauna* observed in the Geiseltal *lignite*, not to mention that the *animal tissues* and *plant fibers* would be a millennia 'fresher' if Venus does the **work**, 'fresher' even than the *live frogs, snakes, lizards* and *beetles* that in recent time have been liberated from inside finally 'broken-open' Flood rocks.

But you should still see a lot of speculation here, just not the blatant fantasy common in the perspectives of *evolutionists*, and too often in those of Dr. Velikovsky, and even in the ones held by Christians that, for example, are still '**mised**' to see only The Flood by the somewhat '**mis-established**', Whitcomb-Morris "Creationist Movement".

But enough of *coal*, and enough of so much 'babysitting' you through these paragraphs, but never enough of the puns. And I mean I'm going to try to leave it more up to you to 'expose' Dr. Velikovsky's more and less helpful perspectives, and expect that you will restart this section, or go back as far as you need to, and as many times as you need to, until you're **able**—which includes being **worthy** by being **humble** enough—to '**make the steps**'.

And this brings us to *oil*, but from Dr. Velikovsky's perspective, really more just 'Venus-made' "asphalt", and to the next chapter, *EXTINCTION*, where in the first section, *Fossils*, he gets **right** to '**revealing**' them (P-PAMD), writing,

Millions of buffaloes [and surely lots of 'dead horses' too] have died natural deaths on the prairies of the West in the more than four hundred years since the discovery of America; their flesh has been eaten by scavengers or putrefied and disintegrated; their bones and teeth resisted for a while the decaying process, but finally weathered and crumbled to powder. No bones of these dead buffaloes became fossils in sedimentary rocks, and scarcely any are found in a state of preservation.

The evolutionary theory of the formation of fossils makes certain conditions obligatory: Sedimentary rock is formed in a slow process on the bottom of the sea, and the bones of animals buried in the sediment become fossilized. Land animals wade in the shallow waters of the sea or lakes, die when wading, and their bodies are covered with sediment. The sediment must quickly cover the animals, and this is most possible when the ground subsides. Therefore Darwin postulated such subsidence [sinking] of the sea bottom as a condition for the formation of fossils. On the other hand, the subsidence or emergence [rising] of the ground in the theory of uniformity or evolution is a very slow process, longer by far than the time necessary for a cadaver to disintegrate in water.

The giant reptiles are supposed to have lived as amphibians—on land and in the shallow sea—because of the numerous fossils remains in sedimentary rock. However, no signs of adaptation for aquatic life are found in their skeletons. Their bodies were so heavy, it is assumed, that they looked for an opportunity to wade or swim—though it would seem that if they had difficulty in carrying their bodies on land they must have experienced still more difficulty in dragging themselves out of the muddy ground of the shallow water on the beaches. Birds too are supposed to have died while wading and been buried.

When a fish dies its body floats on the surface or sinks to the bottom and is devoured rather quickly, actually in a matter of hours, by other fish. However, the fossil fish found in sedimentary rock is very often preserved with all its bones intact. Entire shoals [meaning *sandbanks* or *sandbars* on *seashores*, especially ones that daily emerge above the *water* at *low tide*, and in this case made 'entirely'] of [fossil] fish over large areas, numbering billions of specimens, are found [*fossilized*] in a state of agony, but with no mark of a scavenger's attack.

The explanation of the origin of fossils by the theory of uniformity and evolution contradicts the fundamental principles of these theories: Nothing took place in the past that does not take place in the present. Today [however] no fossils are formed.

Petrified bones of reptiles, birds, and mammals [including 'dead horses'] are often found in large unbroken areas; and since it is quite difficult to describe such areas as wading places, another explanation of the origin of fossils is sometimes offered: the animals were drowned and buried in inundations of large rivers. This explanation seems for certain cases generally closer to the truth than the wading theory; however, the size of the continental areas covered by floods imply catastrophic events on a large scale, and such events, far beyond what is observed on seasonally overflowing rivers today, again contradicts the principle of uniformity.

Finally, the very process of sediment formation is not without a problem. Sediment building is supposed to go on permanently in the sea, the building material being the detritus carried by the rivers or broken by the billows from the rocks on the coast and, mainly, the ooze, or calcareous skeletons of myriads of minute living beings, which are abundant in the sea and find their graves on the bottom. The thickness of

the sediment on the bottom of the ocean is supposed to give a timetable for the age of the ocean; but contrary to expectation, in some places on the bottom of the ocean core samples have detected almost no sedimentary rock, indicating that the bottom of the ocean was formed in those places only recently; and in other places, even on land, the sedimentary rock is enormously thick, sometimes tens of thousands of feet [up to around 20 miles thick]. If one and the same process continually and equally deposits the calcareous ooze and detritus on the sea bottom, the inequalities in the sedimentary bedrock are as little explained as the formation of fossils.

Both these phenomena are explainable by cataclysmic events in the past. The floor of the ocean was lifted in some places and dropped in others, the sediment was violently shifted, the content of the ocean depths was spilled onto the land, land animals were engulfed and buried by enormous tides carrying debris, in many places avalanches of sand and volcanic dust entombed the aquatic life, fish skeletons remains in poses of death, undevoured and undecayed.

And I have little more than nothing to add here because Dr. Velikovsky's analysis in this section is nothing but helpful, though he remains mostly **blind** to the way God actually used Mercury to make *fossils*, and though surely, even for **us**, there remain '**endless precepts**' to '**increasingly better reveal**' the picture of these **things** that are **to come** (uh-huh, another P-PAMD). In the next section in *Chapter XIV, Footprints*, Dr. Velikovsky not only 'beats' more 'dead horses', but even actually 'tracks' their "hoofprints", reporting...

In numerous places and in various formations are found footprints of animals of prehistoric times. Those of dinosaurs and other animals are clearly impressed in rock. The accepted explanation is that these animals walked on muddy ground, and their imprints were preserved as the ground became hard and stony.

This explanation cannot stand up against critical examination. On muddy ground one may find impressions of the hoofs of cattle or horses. But the very next rain will smudge these impressions. And after a short while they will be there no more.

If we do not find the hoofprints of cattle that passed along a path the season before, how is it that the toe imprints of animals of prediluvial [or 'pre-flood'] times remain intact in the mud on which they walked?

The imprints must have been made like impressions in soft sealing wax [formerly commonly used to seal letters] that hardens before they are blurred or obliterated. The ground must have been soft when the animals ran upon it, and then it quickly hardened before changes could take place. Sometimes we see imprints of animals that chanced to walk over freshly laid concrete. While the substance was soft, a dog or a bird or a large insect might have walked on it and left impressions recognizable when it hardened. Also heated sand, turning into a viscous [*semi-solid*] substance [when *heated* just right] on its way to becoming hardened glass [when it *cools* again], could [when hot] receive and [then *cool* to] preserve

imprints. [Or] The vestiges [or remains, in these cases, *footprints*] could remain in muddy, unheated ground that was soon covered by lava which filled in the imprints and later disintegrated on being weathered away. In historical times—in the volcanic destruction of Pompeii and Herculaneum—lava and volcanic ashes filled the wheel tracks in the streets of these cities and thus preserved them to our day. In the eruption of Kilauea [next to Mauna Kea] in Hawaii in 1790, when many people lost their lives, and with them a brigade of the Hawaiian army, the footprints of trapped humans and animals were retained in the hardened volcanic ash. [W. M. Agar, R. F. Flint, and C. R. Longwell, *Geology from Original Sources*, 1929, Plate XXVIII.]

Wherever footprints in the ground dating from historical or prehistoric times are found, we may assume that most probably a catastrophe took place when these vestiges were left or very shortly thereafter. If a catastrophe was in progress or was threatening, the animals must have been in terror and flight. The footprints actually show that the animals in most cases were fleeing, not wading or loitering about; sometimes the configuration of the impressions indicates that an animal was indecisive, probably trapped by some peril closing in on all sides.

The animals that were in flight for their lives may have succumbed a few moments later, crushed or burned [or “drowned” by a variety of *liquids*] in the disaster. The ground was swept by driven sand and ashes or covered by lava or asphalt [or *bitumen*, the *hydrocarbons* from the *atmosphere* of Venus], or [some type of natural] cement, or fluid silicon [*melted sand*], then possibly [quickly *cooled* and *solidified* when] covered by floods, and [so] the imprints in the heated soil that was baked to stone [or even the ones existing at the time in *cool* and *dry soil* that were then filled with ‘solidifiable liquids’] have survived to the present day. So it is that we do not find tracks of animals that peacefully walked one hundred or three hundred years ago, but we do find traces and vestiges of animals that walked and ran many [but really very few] thousands of years ago.

And yes, in all these cases I don’t think Mercury is directly involved at all. It would take the widespread *ground heating* along with the extensive *water cooling* that Venus ‘**brings**’. And I mean in these ‘fleet-footed’, ‘life-and-death stampedes’, (*horse* participation optional), Mercury only provided the *sedimentary rock* for Venus to leave ‘her footprints’ in. And it would be a good time to again check out those ‘dinosaur with human footprints’ pictures in **SECTION 3** and **4**.

In the next section, *The Caverns*, Dr. Velikovsky finds yet another ‘graveyard’ for ‘dead horses’ (– see, it’s not just me), revealing,

It has been observed that when in a great panic carnivorous animals and the animals that usually are their prey flee together without falling upon each other or being afraid of each other. So when forests burn, horses and wolves, gazelles and hyenas flee along the same paths, all gripped by the same terror, paying no attention to one another. When prairies burn or jungles are enveloped in flame, wild beasts and tame creatures in mixed herds stampede to save their lives. In earthquake or in flood, animals lose their

mutual animosity in a common fear. It has also been observed that in earthquakes and other calamities wild animals will come to the abodes of men [See [Rev 6:7-8](#)]. In their great migrations animals behave differently than when they travel singly or in small herds; so lemming [“mouselike rodents”], which scurry away from a man at the sound of his footsteps, will overrun house, town, and river when migrating in large bands, perishing in great numbers but going forward in a huge wave.

In great natural catastrophes animals seek cover from terrifying phenomena—floods, falling meteorites, burning forests, and frightening portents in the sky [see again [Rev 6:7-8](#)]. Caverns are the places of refuge most sought [see [Rev 6:12-17](#)]. An instinct in animals impels them to escape into a den, a hole in the ground, and large animals run for caverns. They may remember such places in the hour of catastrophe, and one may follow another. Of course, many animals never reach the shelter of a cave, but some of them do. And when, in the detritus [in this case, Exodus rock] on the floor of the cave, bones are found of animals that usually would not associate, and the bones are mixed together, and those of the prey animals are not crushed by the teeth of the carnivores, then it is almost certain that these animals tried to save themselves, unafraid of one another, in this cave in the face of approaching catastrophe [and surely in some cases finally involving the frightful spectacle of the ‘long flights’ of *hippos*, *pigs*, *elephants*, etc. And uh-huh, now you’ve “been done seen about everything” too].

It is possible that some of the animals in the shelter survived the catastrophe, and then their wild instincts must have returned; but in many cases all of them succumbed, overwhelmed by gases, smoke, eddying currents on the surface of the earth, and tides that buried them under sediment. [In other words, kind of like a *pyroclastic eruption*, if a *giant*, ‘violently-crashing’ *tidal wave* is involved, no one gets away, even inside *caves*.]

In numerous places of the world the bone content of caves indicates that they served as hide-outs in times of supreme danger. Lions and tigers, wolves and hyenas, gazelles and hares shared the refuge and there found their common grave. But not all places where such assemblages of bones are discovered were sought for refuge. In many cases the animals were swept from large areas by a tidal wave and thrown against rocks, and the water rushing through the fissures left behind the animals with all their bones broken within their torn bodies. From as far as China, to England and France and the islands of the Mediterranean, examples of fissures with bones, splintered and mingled together, have been presented in this book [which we will more deeply ‘spelunk’ in [SECTION 8](#)].

Not only fissures in the rocks but caverns in the hills may have been filled with bones, though the caverns might not originally have been sought for shelter. An irrupting sea or great lake, lifted from its bed and carrying its own detritus and land debris, swept hetero-geneous [or mixed] herds of animals and carried them to the farthest reaches and threw over them hills of gravel, rock, and earth. Cumberland cave, described on an

earlier page [but in this **study** instead reserved to be 'spelunked' in **SECTION 8**], is one of many examples.

If the bones are found rolled, they were most probably carried from afar, and were from animals that had died long before; if the bones are more or less intact, the chances are that the place was a shelter that failed; and if the bones are splintered, it is highly probable that the animals were smashed with a great force against rocks or resisting ground

Of course again, more "intact" *animals* that are not buried in Exodus rock, but more *deeply buried* in Flood rock, are not *buried* by '**Venus-class tidal waves**', but by '**Mercury-class flood waters**', though I'm sure the *turbulence* of Mercury's **work** to a lesser extent "smashed" and "splintered" some '**living things**' too. And I would remind you that we too have already considered 'examples' of *caves* filled with *shallow layers* of *sediment*, but also whole *systems* of *caves* that are 'completely filled' with *breccia* or *limestone*. So can you '**better rightly imagine**' the '**visitor**' and '**visits**' that produced this range of 'cavern-fill'? Dr. Velikovsky to a certain extent shows us here that he can, though he thinks that 'many' of the 'participants' in his '**mis-imagined**' "pageant" of 'visitors' did the same, when we're really only talking about Venus, and maybe a little about Mars, of which we will see more examples, again, especially in **SECTION 8**.

In the next section in *Chapter XIV, Extinction*, another named by the title of the entire chapter, Dr. Velikovsky continued to '**misplace**' most of the **work** of Mercury, as well as most of the '**lower work**' by Venus, as taking place 'before the Age of Man', while seeing rather well that all the '**higher work**' performed by these **instruments of death** occurs "in the age of man". And certainly there is a significantly '**mis-divided**' range of '**mis-imaginings**'. Still, Dr. Velikovsky's perspectives remain very helpful, where in this section he comes out of the "caves" and "caverns" for a more 'open-spaces' view of the global, 'extinction-level' destruction, including the 'beating' of still more 'dead horses', exposing that,

Many forms of life, many species and genera of animals that lived on this planet in a recent geological period, in the age of man, have utterly disappeared without leaving a single survivor. Mammals walked in fields and forests, propagated and multiplied, and then without a sign of degeneration vanished.

"A considerable group have become extinct virtually within the last few thousand years... The large mammals that died out [in America] include all the camels, all the horses [uh-huh], all the ground sloths, two genera of muskoxen, peccaries, certain antelopes, a giant bison, with a horn spread of six feet, a giant beaverlike animal [or just a *giant beaver*], a stagmoose, and several kinds of cats, some of which were of lion size [Flint, *Glacial Geology and the Pleistocene Epoch*, p.523]." Also the Imperial elephant [surely many of which, and whether remaining *waterborne* or not, surely 'flew' to their deaths] and the Columbian mammoth, animals larger than the African elephant [talk about 'jumbo flights'!] and common all over North America, disappeared [and surely in some cases by 'crash-landing']. The mastodon that inhabited the forest and ranged from Alaska to the Atlantic coast and Mexico, and the woolly mammoth that roamed in a broad area adjacent to the ice sheets [some evidently surviving at least The 1st

Visit of Venus], likewise persisted until a few thousand years ago." [L. H. Johnson, *Scientific Monthly*, October 1952.]

The dire wolf, the saber-toothed tiger, the short-faced bear, the small horse (*Equus tau*) [but certainly no 'small' contributor to 'dead horse' theories of *uniformitarian evolution*] disappeared, and are no longer found either in the Old [Europe, Asia and Africa] or in the New World [The Americas]. Many birds, too, became extinct.

These species are believed to have been destroyed "to the last specimen" in the closing Ice Age. Animals, strong and vigorous, suddenly died out without leaving a survivor. The end came, not in the course of the struggle for existence—[not] with the survival of the fittest. Fit and unfit, and mostly fit, old and young, with sharp teeth, with strong muscles, with fleet legs, with plenty of food around [it being carried along in the waves with them], all perished.

These facts, as I have already quoted [which we will finally 'tend to' in **SECTION 8**], drive "the biologist to despair as he surveys the extinction of so many species and genera in the closing Pleistocene [Ice Age]." [Eiseley, *American Anthropologist*, Vol. XLVIII, 1946, p.54.]

In the woolly mammoth the genus of elephants achieved its evolutionary perfection; as was already shown by [Dr. Hugh] Falconer [FRS, 19th century University of Edinburgh MD, geologist, botanist, paleontologist, paleoanthropologist, and Geological Society of London medal recipient, who first studied the flora, fauna, and geology of South-Central Asia, and later became a renowned researcher and 'fossil cast maker' at the British Museum, and the reportedly first to suggest the *theory* now called *punctuated equilibrium* - a century before Eldredge and Gould] and [all this being] known to Darwin [who shared Dr. Falconer's teachers at the University of Edinburgh], the teeth of the mammoth were superior to those of modern elephants; and in many other respects their adaptation was perfect [being *genetically superior* because they were more closely related to their even further "superior" and "perfect" ancestors from the 'Pre-Flood-environment', that is, compared to the '**longer-cursed**' animals of today]. The theory of evolution had in the mammoth one of the best examples of a species evolving in the struggle for survival by adaptation [na-uh, they were '**increasing in cursedness**' too]. Stone Age man made drawings of it; possibly he even domesticated some of them. In the Neolithic (Stone Age) town of Predmost in Moravia bones of eight hundred to one thousand mammoths were found; their shoulder blades were used in building tombs. On the vast plains of northern Siberia they roamed in herds. They succumbed there as if in one cold night that fell over the land and knew no recess thereafter. [Axis shift!] They did not die from starvation—their food was found in their stomachs and also between their teeth. The best-preserved body of a mammoth—with even its eyeball intact—was found in Beresovka, Siberia, eight hundred miles west of Bering Strait [which is between Siberia and Alaska]. "A fractured hip and fore limb, a great mass of clotted blood in the chest, and unswallowed grass between the clenched teeth, all point to the violence and suddenness of its passing." [R. S. Lull, *Organic Evolution*, revised edition, 1929, p.376.] Did it fall into a pit, or was it tossed by hurricanes and

floods? It appears that it was "some sudden and unexpected cataclysm" [Kuntz, *Ivory and the Elephant*, p.236] for the mammoths, together with rhinoceroses, bison, and others whose bones and teeth make the main substance of the New Siberian Islands [!], fill the bottom of the Arctic Ocean above Siberia [!!], and lie [everywhere] in the frozen earth of the Siberian tundras [!!!]. At about the same time the mammoth also perished in Europe and in America.

The mastodon, too, was exterminated at the dawn of the present era. There was no scarcity of their food—it consisted of herbs, leaves, and bark, as is known from the undigested food found within their skeletons. They lived in all parts of the Americas. Over two hundred skeletons were unearthed in New York State. It is not known what brought this widespread group to an end.

Fossil bones of horses indicate that this was a very common animal in the New World in the Ice Age. But when the soldiers of Cortes, arriving at the shores of America, rode their horses which they had brought from the Old World, the natives thought that gods had come to their country. They had never seen a horse.

Of the horses the Spaniards brought to America some went astray, became wild, and filled the prairies, traveling in herds; the land and its vegetation and its climate proved to be exceedingly well suited for the propagation of this animal.

In many parts of the Americas fossil hunters found fossilized bones of horses in great numbers, often imbedded in rock or in lava, which do not differ in shape from the bones of the present-day horse. Why did the horse become extinct with the end of the Ice Age if the climate became so favorable? [And does Dr. Velikovsky know how to 'beat a dead horse', or what?]

In earlier ages there were in America different-looking horses, with three-toed feet, also very small horses the size of cats. However, the one that looked exactly like a modern horse inhabited America and there became extinct only several [really only 2 to 3] thousand years before Cortes brought the European horse to the shores of the New World.

Was not the American horse wiped out by man? In our time the American bison (buffalo) was almost destroyed by man, but he used horses to pursue them and firearms to kill them.

C. O. Sauer has advanced the theory (1944) that the terminal Ice Age fauna was destroyed by man, by hunters making fire-drives in pursuit of game, however, Stone Age hunters [or the few survivors of civilized societies 'chased into caves' by Venus,] burning down forests would not have been able to destroy completely many species of animal, leaving not one of the kind from one coast to another and from Alaska to Tierra del Fuego [- southern tip of South America].

F. Rainey, now of the University of Pennsylvania, has observed that "in certain regions of Alaska the bones of these extinct animals lie so thickly scattered that there can be no question of human handiwork involved. Though man was on the scene of the final perishing, his was

not, then, the appetite nor the capacity for such giant slaughter." [Quoted by Eiseley, *American Antiquity*, Vol.VIII, No.3, 1943, p.214.] And because of the wholesale and rapid extermination of fauna, "it seems impossible to attribute the phenomenon to the unaided efforts of man [p.212]." "Even with the known destructiveness of man, however, it is difficult to visualize how these early hunters armed with puny flint-tipped spears, could have destroyed enough animals of the same period... The ice cliffs in the background have shriveled and gone. The trumpeting herds of mammoths and the pounding hooves of the other animals are no more." [Hibben, *Treasure in the Dust*, p.58-9.] [And yes, "well-known", 20th Century "big-game hunter", *archeologist*, Professor of Archaeology (UNM), Harvard Dr. Frank Cumming Hibben and Dr. Velikovsky '**mis-imagined**' "man" as 'evolving primitive cavemen', or 'evolving primitive hunter-gatherers', evidently not so much as the few survivors of 'superior', 'civilized societies' that are forced by Venus to live 'primitively'.]

L. C. Eiseley of the University of Kansas wrote: "we are not dealing with a single, isolated select species but with a considerable variety of [relatively "superior" and "perfect"] Pleistocene [Ice Age] forms, all of which must be accorded, in the light of cultural evidence, an approximately similar time of extinction." [Eiseley, *American Anthropologist*, Vol.VIII, No.3, 1943, p.215.]

Then could it have been a disease that caused the extinction? Or the change in climate because of the termination of the Ice Age? Professor Eiseley finds that epidemic disease or climatic events attendant on the glacial retreat "are sufficient to explain an enormous reduction in the number of a particular species, but are yet inadequate to illuminate the reason for the inability of the species to rebound, in a few years, from its decimated condition [Eiseley, *American Anthropologist*, Vol.XLVIII, 1946, p.54]." Besides, no known disease would attack so many species and genera. And as for the climatic factor, if glacial conditions are the cause, then, according to G. E. Pilgrim, "at approximately the same time we witness a similar extinction of the mammals faunas of Africa and Asia, though in their case this may not have been caused by glacial conditions." [G. E. Pilgrim, "*The Lowest Limit of the Pleistocene in Europe and Asia*", *Geological Magazine*, Vol.LXXXI, No.1, p.28.]

But even a sudden climatic catastrophe all over the world could hardly have been adequate by itself to account for an extermination so wide and, for many species, so complete. "Climate change alone is not enough to explain the extinction of the marvelous Pleistocene fauna. There have been other suggestions, such as clouds of volcanic gases which destroyed whole herds of mammals..." [Hibben, *Treasure in the Dust*, p.59.] Of what dimensions must these clouds have been? They must have covered almost the entire terrestrial globe. But all the volcanoes of the earth, erupting together, would not be sufficient to destroy so many species and genera. Many agents of destruction must have united their forces with the sudden revolution of the climate to wipe out a major part of the animal population of the earth with many genera and species leaving no survivors.

The extermination of great numbers of animals of every species, and of many species in their entirety, was the effect of recurrent global catastrophes. Of some species every animal was exterminated in one part of the world, but a number of animals succeeded in surviving in another part of the world; so the horses and camels of the Americas were destroyed without a survivor, yet in Eurasia, though decimated, they were not exterminated. But many species were completely extinguished, in the Old World as well as in the New—mammoth and mastodons and others. They expired not because of lack of food or inadequate organic evolution, inferior build or lack of adaptation. Plentiful food and superb bodies and fine adaptation and solid procreation, but no survival of the fit. They died as if a wind had snuffed life out of all of them, leaving their cadavers. With no sign of degeneration, in asphalt pits [evidently the *hydrocarbons* delivered by Venus], in bogs [the ‘water washouts’ that, after the *land* ‘settles’, are left behind by Venus], in sediments [relatively *shallow deposits* of Exodus rock, the deeper ones being Flood rock], in caverns [whether ‘chased’ or ‘washed’ there by Venus]. Some of the decimated species probably endured for a while, possible for several centuries, being represented by a few specimens of their kind; but in changed surroundings, amid climactic vicissitudes [or “tribulations”], with pastures withered [or washed away and/or buried], plants that had served as food or animals that had served as prey gone, these few followed the rest in a losing battle for existence, surrendering at last in the struggle for survival of a species [or really to The Great Judgments of God].

Burning forests, trespassing seas, erupting volcanoes, [the influx of a variety of forms of *extraterrestrial solids, liquids and gases*, especially those coming from Venus, and] submerging lands took the major toll; [the resulting] impoverished fields and burned-down forests did not offer favorable conditions for frightened and solitary survivors, and claimed their own share in the work of extinction.

Something Dr. Velikovsky gives us an **‘expanded perspective’** of here is the participation of *inundations* of “gases” and “smoke” in the *extinctions*. And whether these *inundations* come directly from a **‘visitor’**, or are otherwise caused, we may now see that all *inundations* —*solid, liquid and/or gas*—may include, or in some localities be entirely from, ‘extraterrestrial sources’, but most likely from one of the passes of The Visits of Venus, though there is quite a famous incident apparently involving a ‘mass fatal gaseous inundation’ that originates entirely from Mars, which we’ll ‘blow past’ in **SECTION 10**.

And I know I said we were done with the ‘modern’ Theory of Evolution, and we would be, except in the next chapter, *CATAclysmic Evolution*, Dr. Velikovsky is going to take us back though it all, and even force us to consider the ‘modern state of affairs’ again, one last time. Consider it your Final Exam on the Theory of Evolution. More specifically, you will be best able to ‘sweep out’ your own brain if you finally fully enough **understand** The Evolutionary Theory of Uniformitarian Geology that associates with *evolutionary mechanisms* from Lamarckian Inherited Traits to Darwinian Natural Selection to ‘genetics-based’ Modern Evolutionary Synthesis. But you also need to **understand** The Evolutionary Theory of Catastrophism Geology that associates with *evolutionary mechanisms* from

Christian Theistic or Progressive Evolution—with whatever degree of Special Creation is **'mis-imagined'** to be involved—to “Hopeful Monster” Saltationism — with whatever ‘monstrous mutations’ are **'mis-imagined'** to be involved—to Punctuated Equilibria, however ‘sharply punctuated’ the ‘sudden adaptations’ are **'mis-imagined'** to be, and however ‘ridiculously long’ the ‘interim equilibrium’ is **'mis-imagined'** to last.

Because like Christians with **prophecy**, *evolutionists*, and whether ‘truly’ Christian or not, ‘shop out’ their *theories* from all these *evolutionary* ideas, producing endless variations, and confusion. Still, and though you should see how Dr. Velikovsky still needs to ‘sweep out’ certain **'mis-imaginings'** in his own brain, he nonetheless helps us ‘sort out’ all this, starting in the first section of *Chapter XV, Catastrophism and Evolution*, teaching,

The theory of evolution dates back to the age of classic Greece, one of its proponents having been Anaximander, and from time to time philosophers have offered the evolutionary explanation of the origin of the multiple forms of life on earth, as opposed to the theory of special creation or the permanency of living forms from the day of Creation. [‘Miss-sure’] Lamarck (1744 -1829) thought that acquired characteristics were transmissible by heredity and thus might lead to the appearance of new forms of life. In 1840, the year that [Prof., Dr.] Agassiz’s Ice Age theory was published, an anonymous printed work, *Vestiges of Creation* —written by Robert Chambers— caused a stir that did not subside for years. It was bitterly attacked by every [well, you know not “every”] British scientist for teaching that human beings are "the children of apes and the breeders of monsters," [to put it] in the words of one critic, the president of the Geological Society, Adam Sedgwick. Darwin later acknowledged that the brunt of the attack against his own theory was absorbed by *Vestiges*.

What was new in Darwin’s teaching was not the principle of evolution in general but the explanation of its mechanism by natural selection. This was an adaptation to biology of the Malthusian theory about population growing more quickly than the means of existence [which is one of the major **doctrines of devils**, because it also assumes that the World will last indefinitely, and that God did not give ‘individuals’ **stewardship** over it, making it **'natural'** for the ‘elite’ to want to ‘take charge’ of it]. Darwin acknowledged his debt to Malthus, whose book he read in 1838. Herbert Spencer and Alfred R. Wallace independently came to the same views as Darwin, and the expression "survival of the fittest" was Spencer’s.

Darwin wrote his theory with the point of his pen directed against the theory of catastrophism. He hardly expected that no opposition would come from the side he attacked, otherwise he would not have expended so many arguments in combating catastrophism and in subscribing so completely to Lyell’s [uh, that’s Sir Liar’s] theory of uniformity in lifeless nature. As it turned out, most of the attacks against Darwin came from the [Protestant] Church, which could not agree that man had risen from inferior beings. The Church held to the dogmas of creation in six days less than six thousand years ago, and of the primal sin of Adam, to redeem humankind from which, the Son of Man came into this world;

also to the view that beasts have no souls and therefore a barrier stands between man and animals. [And how well, even better than most **believers**, is Dr. Velikovsky able to explain '**beliefs**' that he may not yet hold, that apparently only by The Spirit you could even **know**, which may be another of those "slips" I elude to earlier in this section].

The emotions of this protracted controversy were spent on the issue: Is there evolution or is there not? More and more scientists subscribed to evolution; religious minds clung to the belief that there had been no change since the creation of the world. Actually the debate was between liberals and conservatives in the matter of science. The radicals did not participate; for catastrophism was dying out with the generation of the founders and classicists of geological science. [Baron] Cuvier died in 1832; in England, geologists like [Rev., Dr.] Buckland of Oxford and [Rev., Professor] Sedgwick of Cambridge, set in their belief in Mosaic tradition [as explained in the Pentateuch—again, the first 5 books of the Bible], ascribed the ubiquitous [everywhere existing] vestiges of the catastrophe to the action of the Deluge. But they could not [- not knowing of The Visits of Venus and Mars -] point to a satisfactory physical cause of such catastrophe, and expert estimate made it obvious that, had all the clouds over the earth emptied themselves simultaneously, the earth would not have been covered by even one foot of water. [And apparently Dr. Velikovsky doubted that it ever entirely had been either, seeing The Work of Venus and Mars, but so much that of Mercury.]

Then the geological record showed that there had been not one but several deluges. [Uh-huh.] Lyell [or just plain Liar!] wrote in a letter: "Conebeare [*geologist* and Bishop of Bristol] admits three deluges before the Noachian [Flood of Noah] [!!!] and Buckland adds God knows how many catastrophes besides, so we have driven them out of the Mosaic record fairly." [*Life, Letters and Journals*, Vol. I, p.253.] Sedgwick, according to Lyell [the Liar!!], "decided on four or more deluges [also p.253]." In his last address as president of the Geological Society, Sedgwick admitted that his religious beliefs caused him to propagate a philosophic heresy: "I think it right, as one of my last acts before I quit this Chair, thus publicly to read my recantation. We ought, indeed, to have paused before we adopted the diluvian theory [which again, confuses The Work of Venus with The Work of Mercury], and referred all our old superficial gravel to the action of the Mosaic Flood. For of man, and the works of his hands, we have not yet found a single trace among the remnants of a former world entombed in these [Genesis or Exodus rock] deposits [- "yet" being the key word]." [C. S. Gillispie, *Genesis and Geology*, 1951, p.142-43; Sedgwick, "*Presidential Address*", 1831, *Proceedings of the Geological Society*, Vol. I, p.313.]

So where were the remains of the sinful population? [- including in the miles-deep Flood rock, as opposed to the *shallow*, so-called "diluvium", which, to honor the work of Mr. Gentry, I now prefer to call "Exodus rock", but the issue is further confused because...] Cuvier taught that man's remains were never found with those of extinct animals. [Nothing but a Liar] Lyell also declared in the first edition of his *Principles* that man was created after all the extinct animals passed away [Theistic Evolution]; and not until 1858, a year before the publication of Darwin's *Origin of Species*, did the finds in the

Brixham cave [another 'diluvium-covered find' similar to the ones discovered in 1821 in Kirkdale Cave, and in 1824 in the Kents Cavern system, both popularized decades earlier by the Rev., Dr. Buckland, but different because they did not, as did Brixham...] shatter this belief in the non-coexistence of man and extinct, or "antediluvian [Pre-Flood]," animals [though here again Dr. Velikovsky does not 'sort out' the *animals* "entombed" in Flood rock versus Exodus rock]. [However Dr. Velikovsky notes here: As early as 1832, Sir Henry T. de la Beche in his *Geological Manual*, p.173, claimed the coexistence of man with extinct animals, because caverns closed by "fragments of rock transported from a distance" contain the remains of man and extinct animals... [and that] "he existed previous to the catastrophe which overwhelmed him and them."] In the year of *Origin [of Species]*, the leading English geologists were finally convinced by J. B. de Perthes, a notary of Abbeville in France, who for twenty years found only deaf ears, that human artifacts (worked flint) and extinct animals are met in the same formations, side by side. This opened wide the doors to Darwin's theory. By that time the doubts of the catastrophists, who could not understand why there should be no human bones left of all the sinful generation that perished in the Flood, had already brought about the abandonment of the theory of catastrophism, a theory that appeared to be in conflict with the Mosaic record.

Thus it happened that the entire controversy for and against Darwinism failed to respond to the challenge of Darwin, who tried to show that what appeared to be the result of global catastrophes could be explained as the product of slow changes multiplied by time, with no violence intervening. The opposition was concentrated against the idea of evolution and in support of special creation. Insisting that all animals were created in the forms in which they are found in our days, the opponents of evolution waged their battle on geologically indefensible ground [not to mention without really knowing God well enough to **understand**, from **scripture**, His **great judgments** of The Ages of Creation].

But why did Darwin oppose the idea of great catastrophes in the past, contrary to his own field observations, and subscribe to the theory of uniformity of geological events in all ages and in the present? For species to evolve as a result of incessant competition and struggle for survival, all the way from the simplest forms to *Homo sapiens* and other advanced organisms, an enormous span of time is required. The teaching of catastrophes appeared to make the story of the world very short [and worse than that, in agreement with **scripture**]: if the Deluge occurred less than five thousand years ago, then, following the book of Genesis, Creation took place less than six thousand years ago. In order to have at the disposal of the evolutionary process the almost unlimited time needed, Darwin accepted [Liar !!!] Lyell's teaching; and whereas [Liar!!!!] Lyell tried to show that the usual agents—such as rivers carrying sediment—act with comparative speed, Darwin liked to stress their sluggishness.

He wrote: "Therefore a man should examine for himself the great piles of superimposed strata, and watch the rivulets bringing down mud, and the waves wearing away the sea-cliffs, in order to comprehend something about the

duration of past time." The waves of the sea reduce a rock particle by particle, and if a visible change is produced, it requires many thousands of years.

"Nothing impresses the mind with the vast duration of time, according to our ideas of time, more forcibly than the conviction thus gained that subaerial ['beneath the atmosphere' or "occurring on the surface of the ground"] agencies which apparently have so little power, and which seem to work so slowly, have produced great results." [*The Origin of Species, Ch.X.*] Darwin even went so far as to suggest that "he who can read Sir Charles Lyell's [that pants-on-fire, telephone-wire-hanging liar's] grand work on the Principles of Geology... and yet does not admit how vast have been the past periods of time, may at once close this volume [*Ch.X*].

But really anyone who can "close" Mr. Darwin's book, and regard it as—at best—the most '**ridiculous**' form of **foolishness**—is at least less **deceived** than both of these—at best—'**top professing fools**', that is, if they don't instead '**mis-imagine**' the same '**ridiculously**' long timeframe, and use or add other '**mis-imagined**' *evolutionary mechanisms*, such as 'relatively frequent' but 'incrementally small', *genetic, micromutations* (e.g. Modern Evolutionary Synthesis), or 'relatively infrequent' but 'incrementally monstrous', 'catastrophe-provoked' *macromutations* (e.g. Saltationism or Punctuated Equilibrium). Then again, with the **proven, faithful...testimony** of a **spiritual man** available, who has '**thoroughly tried**' all this *evolutionary foolishness* and **deceit**, it could be considered best for everyone else not to 'lift the lid' of such 'waste receptacles' at all, especially when, with Dr. Velikovsky's to some degree unwitting help, it's already plenty obvious that it's only going to 'stink to high heaven' if you do.

And certainly at least **we**, with **confidence** in our God, can 'close the book' on Mr. Darwin at this point, because we can **understand** here what he, and Sir Liar, were **not able to comprehend** [H3045: G2638](#). And I mean that it was not relatively small amounts of *water* and *sediment* over '**ridiculously**' long time "periods" that 'laid' the miles-deep Flood rock, but instead it is all 'laid' when all the original, simultaneously *waterborne* Genesis topsoil *settles out* within 150 days, that is, when for a time all this *sediment* is *suspended* above the Genesis rock, being completely 'stirred up' into all the '**flood waters**' by God's use of Mercury, with all the resulting *rising waters* coming from either *underground storehouses*—for as long as the 'ground' lasts—or from the sky, and all by the '**great preordaining power**' of our **wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible** God.

And it's not that God needed 150 days to 're-lay' all this *rock* either, except that He didn't want it 'laid' any quicker than the Ark could handle it, so His Son could keep His '**preordained appointment**' to later **come** (e.g. [Mat 18:11](#)), and that is, as The Apostle Paul puts it,

...now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself [Heb 9:26](#),

and that because...

...he is able...to save... [Heb 7:25](#),

yes, even all The Predestinated Immortal Sons of God.

But maybe you already know that this is not my favorite reason why He uses 150 days. And I mean that this timeframe also allows God to **shew us** (e.g., [Psa 85:7](#))—mostly through His '**cursed ordinances of heaven and earth**'—His '**naturally**

falling out’, but *‘immeasurably precisely’ prepared*, and nonetheless *‘unimaginably skillfully’ executed* ^{H6213} *judgments* ^{H8201}, through which He is also *able* to do so much more than just *save us*, and I mean that through them He can also give those of *us* paying the best attention *our* ‘smallest of peeks’ into how *marvellous, wondrous, great and terrible* He really is. And I say *our* ‘smallest of peeks’ only because the ‘peeks’ we now may have of Him—however *‘short-circuitingly mindboggling’*—can only be the *‘smallest in scope’* compared to the *‘increasingly greater’* ones that are *‘for evermore predestinated’ to come*.

But of course this also means that *we* presently have the most *‘limited scope’* of God that we will ever have, one where presently it is all that we can do to begin to *see*—and the most that He can do to begin to *shew us*—the *‘overwhelmingly awesome’, ‘incomparably great skill’* and *‘unimaginably vast’ power* He has, which in this case is through our *‘view’* of just one of His *wondrous, marvellous, great and terrible works*, and of just one of His *‘great instruments of life and death’*, which is just one of the *works* that keeps His 7,000 Year Plan for Mankind and Angels in *‘progression’*, and that is, just The 1st Visit of Mercury.

But *we* do, in our presently *‘most limited’ way, understand* that His *‘whole plan’*, including all His *‘great instruments’* both *of old* and *to come*, are all *ordained*—or *‘set in motion’*—at The Fall, and not just to continue to *declare the glory of God*, but from then on also to *accomplish* His *‘great saving and destroying’ judgments*, all of which neither *Satan*, nor *the world*, nor our *flesh* can *void*. Or to borrow from the Apostle Paul,

...neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature
[Rom 8:38-39...](#)

will be *able* to stop God’s *counsels* and *judgments* to *save* those *predestinated* to *be partakers* of *the increase of his government and peace* to *no end*.

And though *our* present *understanding* is still about as limited as it is ever going to be, even geniuses like Drs. Velikovsky and Einstein, who in some ways ‘understood’ all this “catastrophe” even better than we presently can, could not as fully *understand* the *great power* and *mighty hand of God*—let alone *the love of God*—anywhere near as well as *we* now can, though again I *hope* and *pray*—wanting to be seen by God as someone who *continueth in supplications and prayers night and day*—that our two dear Jewish doctors at some point have a ‘vast and powerful’ change of perspective, and that is, either in *Abraham’s Bosom*, or shortly after leaving it, necessarily including the most important *revelation* of all, *the revelation of Jesus Christ*, even as *the heavens declare* it.

And apparently most of the relatively *‘spiritually immature’* Christians of Mr. Darwin’s day ‘closed their minds’ to much of the real evidence, and therefore had no chance of *understanding* the *great power* of God as *we* now can, because if they had ‘opened their minds’, more of them would have ‘recanted’ like the Rev., Professor Sedgwick, and at least acknowledged multiple ‘floods’, not to mention multiple ‘ice ages’, and thereby may have *humbled* themselves enough to be *‘lifted up’* by God to a *‘better understanding’*. But at least they remained “opponents of evolution [who] waged their battle on geologically indefensible ground”. And even so they were more *‘right’* than the *worldly wise*, or than the likes of Sir Liar, or even than Dr. Velikovsky, and that is, by *keeping* their *faith* that *the earth*, as *scripture* clearly *revealeth*, is *created* in one literal

week, about 6,000 years ago. But apparently at that time maybe no one had, neither today have, a **'perfect understanding'** of how God through **the curse** so **'greatly and terribly'** altogether **'re-ordained'** what He had originally **created**, the ongoing result of this **ignorance** being that too often even most Christians remain among those who...

...do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God [Mat 22:23-33](#)

(most notably verse 29),

that is, as Jesus means it in this passage, which means they can't really **know** His **'plans'** that well either, if really at all. Because again, and **'I tell you the truth**, it is not just **salvation** alone that can **make** you **know the truth**, but it takes so much more, and that is, as Jesus puts it, only...

If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free [from **ignorance** and **shame**].

And certainly, because of your 'open mind'—in this case read, **'vehement desire to know God'**—and because of your **'increasing ability'**, **ye** should have a more **'corrected, improved and expanded'** **understanding** of what Jesus means about **knowing the scriptures**, and about **the power of God**, as well as about **things to come**, even **heavenly** ones, but also about how His Word can **make you free**. And **ye do well** to **call to remembrance**, and to **have considered**, and to have **made diligent search** of, and to **commune with your own heart**, and **meditate** on **all** God's **great** and **mighty works**. And beyond this, **ye** can at least have **hope** that you will eventually find others who will **have an ear** to **hear** you **talk...of, make known**, and **declare** His **doings** and **wonders**, even join you in some **singing** about them, though this is not wise if they don't yet have **ears to hear**, or are **not able** to share your **understanding**, or at least just share your **'childlike' faith** and **joy**.

However you are already now **free** to **for ever** be...

Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord [Eph 5:19](#),

which in this case, for example, could include, **A Psalm of Asaph**, and, at least **to yourself, singing**,

...I have considered the days of old, the years of ancient times. I call to remembrance my song in the night: I commune with mine own heart: and my spirit made diligent search... I will remember the works of the LORD: surely I will remember thy wonders of old. I will meditate also of all thy work, and talk of thy doings. Thy way, O God, is in the sanctuary: who is so great a God as our God? Thou art the God that doest wonders: thou hast declared thy strength among the people. Thou hast with thine arm redeemed thy people, the sons of Jacob and Joseph. Selah. The waters saw thee, O God, the waters saw thee; they were afraid: the depths also were troubled. The clouds poured out water: the skies sent out a [magnetically-induced?] sound: thine arrows also went abroad [- 'braining' some 'angel-humans' floating on such 'flood waters', no doubt]. The voice of thy

thunder was in the heaven: the lightnings lightened the world [somewhat ‘short-circuiting’ Earth’s *magnetic field*, etc.]: **the earth trembled and shook** [in the presence of *thy ‘great instruments of death’*]. **Thy way** [or *use of Your ordinances*] **is** [seen] **in the sea, and thy path** [or *currents*] **in the great waters, and thy footsteps** [or ‘how God does it’] **are not known** [but since *Jesus came* His *footsteps* may be ‘**increasingly known**’ (e.g., [John 15:15](#); [1Co 2:9-10](#)), and ‘**ever-increasingly so**’ (e.g., [Col 1:10](#))]. **Thou leddest thy people like a flock** [or like ‘**little children**’] **by the hand of Moses and Aaron** [but now *we* are **led by the Spirit** (e.g., [Rom 8:14](#))] [Psa 77:4-6,11-20](#).

And ‘**understandably**’, the **footsteps** of God, that is, how **God doeth** what He **doeth** (e.g., [Ecc 3:14](#)), were **not known** to **Asaph**, author of Psalm 77 and Chief Levite Musician under King David, nor to King David for that matter, as he similarly **testifieth** (e.g., [Psa 139](#), most notably Verse 6). However since there are **now** newly ‘**unsealed revelations**’ available, and since **knowledge** has ‘**progressively increased**’ to this **latter** point in time, and since we therefore now have even ‘**greater ability**’ by The Spirit to **be partakers** in ‘**searches**’ of **the deep things of God**, all of which are ‘**advantages**’ ^{G4053} that **Asaph** and **David** did not have—and I’m talking about what **is** being **revealed** by God through these ‘**studies**’—I **believe** God’s **footsteps** are becoming ‘**increasingly known**’ to me, and if you’re ‘keeping up’, to you too, and that by The Natural Eternal Progression of The Knowledge of God, and ‘**naturally ever-increasingly so**’. And I mean you too should be starting to get to **know, better** and **better**, that is, in ‘growing detail’, and more and more specifically, exactly what you’re **singing** about here, and especially **if ye continue**.

And I mean that, ‘**naturally and progressively**’, or **in due season** (e.g., [Mat 24:45](#)), the 2 questions the Prophet Isaiah **asketh** in a **former time**, in the first verse of Chapter 53, ones that at the beginning of this **present time** the Apostle John answers ([John 12:37-41](#)), **now have**— in this **latter...season** of this **present time**, and that is, **at the time of the end**—‘**naturally**’ become more ‘**fully understandable**’ than ever before. But of course I only mean as ‘**fully understandable**’ as these questions can be at this particular point in The Natural Eternal Progression of the Knowledge of God, (and not that there aren’t other ways to ‘**rightly divide**’ what a **time** or a **season** might otherwise be).

What questions am I talking about? Isaiah **asketh**, evidently at least somewhat rhetorically,

Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?

[Is 53:1](#)

And generally speaking these **questions** remain ‘rhetorical’, in this case read, ‘too obvious to need answers’, the ‘overly-obvious’ **answers** to both **questions** being, ‘**no one**’. But if anything at all about them is **believed** or **revealed to babes**—or even to an otherwise ‘**unskilful workman**’ —it must be in a ‘**spiritually immature**’ way, or as Dr. Velikovsky puts it, “on geologically indefensible ground”. However **we** may **now** ‘wage our battle’ on both **geologically** and ‘**spiritually defensible ground**’, and that is, on ‘higher ground’ **scientifically** as well as **spiritually** than Dr. Velikovsky could, so that to **us** these **questions** can no longer be just rhetorical, nor just ‘**immaturely understood**’, nor anywhere near as ‘**mis-imagined**’.

And I mean **we** not only **understand** that **the arm of the Lord**, that is, His

stretched out arm, is a symbol of His ***great power***, especially in ***great judgments***, and that it is also a symbol of His ***great deliverance[s]*** of His people, but ***we*** are ***now*** also ***able*** to ***'rightly imagine'***—with ***'increasingly corrected, improved and expanded meaty precepts'***—***'increasingly specifically'*** ***how*** He has used, and ***'similarly'*** will again use, His ***stretched out arm***, (not to mention identify a couple of ***'words'*** in this sentence that are P-PAMD). And I mean that ***we*** have not just ***believed*** the ***report***, but ***we*** also ***understand*** that ***the arm of the LORD*** has been ***revealed*** to ***us*** on ***'increasingly' higher*** [H1361](#); [H7311](#); [G511](#); [G5308](#) or ***deeper*** [H6012](#); [Root H6009](#); [G899](#) ***'levels'*** than heretofore ***'rightly imaginable'***. And do concordance searches of all the KJV phrases in the first sentence of this paragraph if you want to ***'better understand'*** what I mean, which is that these ***'studies'*** are ***now*** providing—by God—***'increasingly better understandable answers'*** to Isaiah's ***questions***, including ***answers*** that Asaph or David in their ***time*** could not have as fully ***'rightly imagined'***, but that we ***now*** are ***able*** to, and that is, ***if you now*** [H6258](#); [H645](#); [G3568](#) ***know*** [H3045](#); [G1097](#); [G1492](#) what I mean.

In the next section of *Chapter XV, The Geological Record and Changing Forms of Life*, Dr. Velikovsky further explained and clarified his ***'mis-imagined'*** ***catastrophic saltationist evolutionary*** perspective, and in the process further exposed his ***blindness*** [G4457](#) to how fast God actually 'laid' Flood rock, that is, being ***blind*** to the Biblical 150-day timeframe, wherein apparently the most ***dense*** and/or most ***hydrodynamic*** (the most 'smooth' and/or 'streamlined') ***particles of sediments*** naturally ***settle*** first, and the least ***dense*** and/or least ***hydrodynamic*** (the least 'smooth' and/or 'streamlined') ***particles of sediments*** naturally ***settle*** last—just like in our 'glass bathtub and firehose experiment'—wherein ***all*** the ***lifeforms settling*** in each ***layer*** were ***all alive*** before the 40 days when ***the waters increased***, and ***prevailed exceedingly*** until ***the mountains were covered***, wherein...

...all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark... [Gen 7](#)

...and wherein during the following 150 days when ***the waters asswaged***, and ***returned from off the earth***, and ***were abated*** ([Gen 8](#)), and ***all*** these ***lifeforms*** are ***buried*** in the ***settling sediment***, and end up in different ***layers*** partly because of their original ***altitude above sea level***, or ***depth below sea level***, that is, where they ***lived*** before The Flood starts, but evidently also because of the ***'precisely timed'*** and likely 'abrupt departure' of Mercury, evidently immediately preceding the 'laying' of the so-called Carboniferous Layer, which apparently creates the biggest 'whirlpooling breaches' that suck down most of the 'still-floating' ***lifeforms***, and 'plugging' them into this ***layer***, with of course many exceptions due to other earlier and later 'breaches' to HHC ***'water storehouse'***, and to the ongoing ***turbulence*** of ***the waters*** of The Flood, not to mention because of the 'vast size' and 'irregular' and 'changing shape' of this 'bathtub'.

And speaking of ***'bad eyesight'***, but hopefully eventually also of ***'improving eyesight'***, another ***'improved'*** and/or ***'expanded revelation'*** has just occurred to me—which of course will need further ***'testing'***—about how specific ***species*** of ***fauna*** ended up in the ***layers*** of Flood rock they did. And that would be ***'along the***

lines' of how more "ferns and cycads", (again, *cycads* being known for "having a thick, [less 'woody',] unbranched, columnar trunk"), tended to end up on the bottom of the Carboniferous Layer, this evidently because they were both "*lower-growing*" and "*poorer-floating*" *flora*, including being *more dense* and *more hydrodynamic* ('easier to sink' in *turbulent water*), while the more 'woody' and 'branched' *plants* ended up being *buried* at the higher levels of this *layer*, evidently because they were both "higher growing" and "better floating" *flora*, including being *less dense* and *less hydrodynamic* ('harder to sink' in *turbulent water*). And I mean that all these factors must have contributed to how quickly or slowly *species* of not just *flora*, but similarly also how *fauna settled out*, and/or were 'sucked down' too, 'naturally' resulting in what 'matching' *layers* they most commonly end up in, and even whether they are generally lower down or higher up in their 'corresponding' *layers*.

And to his credit, Dr. Velikovsky is not through with Mr. Darwin, as he further exposes his *uniformitarian theories*, writing,

Darwin supported his thesis of the origin of species by natural selection by reference to (1) variations in domestic animals, especially when the breeder deliberately develops a certain desirable feature; (2) the anatomical similarity of many related species [but remember, "*homology* is a bunch of baloney", except in the sense of God's '**design**' - SECTION 2]; and (3) the geological record. However, though breeders have created new races or variations, they have created no new animal species. [And] In the anatomy of living creatures [- though having '**naturally similar**', '**perfectly-engineered designs**' -] "the distinctness of the specific forms, and their not being blended together by innumerable transitional links, is a very obvious difficulty" (Darwin); and thus the entire weight of proof [for the '**ridiculously**' long *geological timescale*] was placed on the geological record [or on the *layers of sediment* alone] [First line of this paragraph 'edited - authoritatively - for clarity', hereafter abbreviated (*eafc*)].

This record shows, however, "The Forms of Life Changing Almost Simultaneously throughout the World"—the title of a section in *The Origin of Species*. Darwin wrote: "Scarcely any palaeontological discovery is more striking than the fact that the forms of life change almost simultaneously [from *layer* to *layer*] throughout the world." This appears baffling, because according to his theory "the process of modification must be slow, and will generally affect only a few species at the same time; for the variability of each species is independent of that of all others." Could it not have [instead] been a sudden change in physical conditions that altered the forms of life at one and the same time throughout the world? That a change in physical conditions could have occurred all over the world at one and the same time, Darwin did not even take into consideration. [In other words, he ignored Catastrophism.] What kind of an answer to his problem, therefore, could Darwin propose?

But Dr. Velikovsky too "did not even take into consideration" that when it comes to Flood rock, that all the *layers* could have, as The Word of God plainly records, *settled* "at one and the same time", which **snares** him too into some mutually exclusive, diametrical, or contradictory '**mis-imaginings**'. At the same time Dr. Velikovsky does expose Mr. Darwin's contradictory "answer" to the "almost

simultaneously", 'layer-by-layer', "change in physical conditions" that he admitted had "occurred", by quoting him as saying,

"Blank [or 'geologically invisible'] intervals of vast duration, as far as the fossils are concerned, occurred... During these long and blank intervals I suppose [read, '**mis-imagine**'] that the inhabitants of each region underwent a considerable amount of modifications and extinction..." Hence the parallelism of changes in fauna and flora [last time: *animals* and *plants*] in similar strata around the world is not a true time-parallelism. "The order would falsely appear to be strictly parallel."

And just what does this admission on Mr. Darwin's part that the *fossil* and *geological records* could not actually be "parallel" mean? (For "parallel" read, "having the same direction, course, nature, or tendency; corresponding; similar...") Apparently he meant that the 'record' of at least most "modification and extinction" is "blank" or 'geologically invisible', because it somehow "occurred" during 'periods' when no *strata* was being 'laid', and therefore no *fossils* were being 'recorded', and more specifically, that these 'geologically invisible periods' of "transmutation" were 'marked' only by the 'transitions of sediment' from one *layer* to the next. And this is "contradictory" because he '**mis-imagines**' that *rivers* must 'unchangingly' be 'slowly laying' *sedimentary rock* on *submerged land*, that is, before the *land* is, again and again, pushed back up *above sea level*, and that *rivers* must never cease doing so, though here he suggests that for "blank intervals", each of a "vast duration", *rivers* somehow stop doing so, that is, where supposedly 'sedimentless periods' intermittently "occurred".

So, something like Sir Isaac Newton 'sitting under his apple tree', who to some extent '**mis-imagined**' God's **ordinances of heaven and earth**—in his case being unaware of both the *atomic* and *cosmic forces* of *magnetism*—Mr. Darwin, 'sitting by his river', did even more so—being unaware of the involvement of "worlds" more *force*—and therefore 'saw' *sediment*, etc., moved only very slowly, and supposedly only over '**ridiculously**' long "periods" of *time*, but evidently he also 'saw' other 'periods' of "vast duration", which he must have thought were associated with favorable conditions for "transmutation", when supposedly the *sediment-carrying rivers* didn't *flow* at all. And as '**ridiculous**' as this is, it at least **sheweth 'us'** the '**spiritual blindness**' of '**top professing fools**' like Mr. Darwin, and how suchlike **fools** can so greatly '**mis-imagine**' the **ordinances of heaven and earth**, and **the power of God**, and even how —when it is right there in his Bible—that he "did not even take into consideration" that God can move a '**whole world**' of *sediment*, and therein **bury all** but an '**ark full**' of *lifeforms*, all within 150 days, or even faster if He isn't also '**planning**' to **save some**. Of course Mr. Darwin—along with most everyone else—were somewhat '**misdirected**' from **our** present '**better judgment**', because they were indeed missing "worlds" of perspective, and of course I'm talking about the by then '**forgotten**' (read, '**satantically conspiratorially suppressed**') **work** of Venus and Mars. And Dr. Velikovsky too, though he 'reveals' the **work** of Venus and Mars, as we will '**better see**' in following sections, '**misunderstood**' the **work** of Mercury, and therefore still to some degree '**mis-imagined**' the **ordinances of heaven and earth**, as well as **the power of God**, too.

But Dr. Velikovsky at least continues to further expose what Mr. Darwin had further "considered", observing,

Darwin then considered "The Absence of Numerous Intermediate Varieties in Any Single Formation," and wrote: "If we confine our attention to any one formation [or *sedimentary rock layer*], it becomes much more difficult to understand why we do not therein find closely graduated varieties between the allied species which lived at its commencement and at its close." And he found the answer in the conjecture that "although each formation may mark a very long lapse of years, each probably is short compared with the period requisite [or required] to change one species into another [read, the "blank intervals" or 'geologically invisible periods' that are 'marked' by the 'transitions' between *sedimentary rock layers* "must have been" much longer 'periods' than the ones 'marked' by the *layers* themselves]."

Furthermore, the geological record shows "The Sudden Appearance of Whole Groups of Allied Species" (the title of another section in *The Origin of Species*). "The abrupt manner in which whole groups of species suddenly appear in certain formations, has been urged by several palaeontologists—for instance, by Agassiz, Pictet, and Sedgwick—as a fatal objection to the belief in the transmutation of species. If numerous species, belonging to the same genera or families, have really started into life at once [and did not instead 'transmutate slowly' in the "blank intervals"], the fact would be fatal to the theory of evolution through natural selection. For [or because] the development by this means of a group of forms, all of which are descended from some one progenitor, must have been an extremely slow progress; and the progenitors must have lived long before their modified descendants."

Darwin explained this observation, too, by the incompleteness of the geological record, which, because of the lacunae [or *gaps* or "blank intervals" or 'sedimentless periods'], gives the appearance of sudden changes.

Yes, Mr. Darwin preferred to "suppose" that most all this "extremely slow progress" of *evolution* "must have been" accomplished during *geologically* "blank intervals". So my "conjecture"—uh-huh, guess—is that Mr. Darwin didn't want to accept **scripture**, or even **acknowledge** God more than avoidable, that is, he didn't want to 'believe' in a "mechanism" that required God's participation, therefore he wanted to 'believe' that there were 'invisible changes'—or to use his words—the "abrupt" or "sudden appearance" of "modifications and extinction" that must only "appear" to be—to use Drs. Eldredge and Gould's word—"punctuated". But really this couldn't have been just preference. By '**ignoring**', and even **denying the power** of God, he was forced to 'believe' that "transmutation" generally "occurred" when *strata*—for some reason—was not being 'laid', and that these 'geologically-recordless gap periods' had to last even '**ridiculously**' longer than the 'strata-laying periods' in order to give enough time for the "transmutation of species". But surely he also preferred to 'believe' a fantastic fantasy that did not require God's participation than to **believe** in the **marvellous** and **wondrous works** and **power** of our awesome God. And it took me a while to 'twist my thinking' enough to **understand** all this, so you may need a few 'charges at this wall' yourself. However in this case for 'wall' read, '**obstruction of truth**', or '**perversion of truth**', as well as **science** [G1108](#) **falsely so called** [G5581](#).

And this **'false science'** essentially has not changed. And I mean whether this **'mis-placed faith'** in the "extremely slow progress" of "transmutation" is **'misinterpreted'** by Mr. Darwin's "mechanism" of Natural Selection, or whether more recently instead by the *genetic transmutation* **'misrepresented'** by Modern Evolutionary Synthesis, or whether most recently, and **'misusing'** "the growth in understanding of development at a molecular level", by what is now called Evolutionary Developmental Biology, the 'belief' remains uniformitarian, where those clinging to this 'view' have all along been forced to 'believe'—and/or to **deceive**—that there really are **'ridiculously'** long, and at least mostly 'geologically-invisible periods', maybe somehow also with just too small a number of 'transitional forms' occurring in them to leave a 'geological record', which, and whatever the case, leave—after the 'transitional form misrepresentations' (or hoaxes) are finally exposed—only 'invisible gaps' of *transmutational development* in both the *geological* and *fossil records*.

But again, we know these so-called 'gaps' separating all the 'deeper-buried and thicker', 'Mercury-laid' *layers* are mostly just the record of *settling sediments* over 150 days, and that these *layers* are somewhat covered, where not later *eroded* away, by 'shallower and thinner', 'Venus-laid' *layers* that were instead 'laid' about as fast as 'waves crash on the beach', or that is, 'crash across continents', the only significant exceptions in these 'transitions' being the less-than-a-millennium gap of time between The Visits of Mercury and Venus, and to a lesser extent, the half-a-century gap between The 2 Visits of Venus. And I mean that Mars likely did not so noticeably move *sediment* around, that is, other than by the *freezing* and *melting* of a lot of *water*. *Uniformitarianists* nonetheless **'misinterpret'** these 'gaps'—the 'transitions' between *layers* of *sedimentary rock*—as marking 'eons of time', and therefore to be 'invisible records' of when the 'most-predominantly-occurring', but maybe 'too-few-to-be-geologically-recorded', "transmutations of species" took place. However remember again that from Mr. Darwin's time to today the general public nonetheless continues to be "bamboozled" (my adopted word) by hoax after hoax (read, by **'satanically-inspired, knowing misrepresentations'**) of 'fossils' of so-called "intermediate varieties", that is, of supposed 'transitional species', all along the way, even to this day.

And of course all this 'invisibility'—and continuing exposure of hoaxes—has provoked others to 'believe' in more 'suddenly-acting' *evolutionary mechanisms*, from Professor Geoffroy's "monstrosities", to Professor Goldschmidt's "Hopeful Monsters", to Drs. Eldredge and Gould's "Punctuated Equilibrium". Of course *catastrophic saltationists*, who **'misinterpret'** *evolutionary* "changes" as being the most 'sudden', though allowing equally **'ridiculously'** great amounts of time in between, **'mis-imagine'** these 'gaps' to be proof that most all "species transmutation" takes place 'very fast', that is, so fast that no *geological record* should be expected.

However evidently in Mr. Darwin's time the majority in both the Old and New World—being more or less **'Bible-believers'** who **believe** in the idea of Special Creation anyway, and that is, without the need for 'scientific verification'—were mostly denied access to *saltationist theories*, and this was evidently because such *theories* "appear" to support *special creation* by God. How were such *theories* globally repressed? It is apparent to me that it happened **'supernaturally'** through a **'satanic conspiracy'**, one that 'sided' with the rise of Uniformitarianism, and one that—from Satan's perspective—had to continue until there was no more chance of the 'popular association' of *saltation* with *special creation*, but one that only needed to continue until *saltation* could finally be 'popularly associated' instead with **'self**

idolatry’, that is, with an *evolutionary mechanism* that supposedly eventually—but when it does, suddenly—turns us all into **gods**.

And yes, I **believe** that since...

...we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places...

...and that is, **against** Satan, et al., then apparently **the world** just wasn’t yet ready—the Church being still too much in **‘revival’** because of the Protestant Reformation, and that by the growing worldwide availability of The Word of God. And I mean apparently our **adversary** needed this **‘dark doctrine’** to at least appear popular, and evidently throughout the 20th Century, including through Dr. Velikovsky’s time, in order to popularly **oppose** the **‘spiritual light’** of our Lord’s Church, and that is, by a **‘conspiracy’** for Uniformitarianism and against Catastrophic Saltationism, with this being just a part of his **‘new conspiracy’** against The Word of God, which surely most **treacherously** (e.g., [Isa 24:16](#)) includes increasingly **perverting** ‘key’ **pure words** of God through **‘impure’** modern language **‘mistranslations’** of His Word, as well as by correspondingly **perverted** ‘study aids’ of all kinds, **Lord...have mercy**.

But of course this **‘new conspiracy’** against The Word of God is not just carried out directly against God’s **pure words** and their accompanying resources, nor just by **‘sciences’** or other **‘philosophies’ falsely so-called**, but it is also at work to corrupt, invent or hide accounts of history—including adding billions of years to it, and at the same time suggesting there are billions more to come—as well as corrupting surely every other area of the **‘increasing knowledge’** known to **man**.

However I **believe** that since **the world** is now becoming ready for **‘self-idolatry’**, and since Satan knows that the **‘worst catastrophe ever’** is now relatively soon coming, preceded by a **‘rapture of Christians’**, then **it** may finally be ready for Saltationism, as well as for some Catastrophism too, though not as much as Dr. Velikovsky so dangerously—to the **devices** of Satan—proposes, and certainly not if ‘squeezed’ into just 6,000 years.

And by the way, I say **‘new conspiracy’** because the Protestant Reformation ends—or in this case ‘sidetracks’—an **‘older conspiracy’**. And I mean the Protestant Reformation was a similar problem for Satan as when **the light of the world** actually **came** into our World, that is, when **Christ Jesus came into the world**. And the **‘older conspiracy’** I’m talking about—to counter our Lord’s **light**—maybe most significantly included the rise of the Roman Catholic Church, which, besides **‘abominably perverting scripture’**, entirely removed it from public **use** by restricting it to the Latin language, which most did not speak, and where those who did were controlled by the **devices** of our **adversary** through this **great whore**, that is, through this now twice **fallen** and **‘revived’**, **MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH** so-called Church.

And I mean that similarly, when the Protestant Reformation defeated this **‘abominable conspiracy’**, that is, at least enough so that God’s **word**, which is **a lamp unto our feet, and a light unto our path** ([Psa 119:105](#)), became widely available in common languages, then a new strategy was needed to **‘obscure’** the **light** of The Word of God, with maybe the most **treacherous** parts of this **‘new conspiracy’** including the Theory of Evolution, and finally the **‘perverted’** modern language **mistranslations**, and their supporting ‘study aids’. And since the Apostle Peter **‘warns us’** about **them**, I should also again **‘remind you’** about the **false prophets** and **false teachers** [2Pe 2](#) producing and supporting all this

'perversion of the truth', especially now, as the Apostle Paul **'warns us'**, in these most **perilous times** of **the last days** ([2Ti 3:1-13](#)).

And **'thankfully'** Dr. Velikovsky continues using his steady 'horse sense' to expose *uniformitarianism*, writing and quoting,

The geological record of extinction of species is discussed under the heading, "On Extinction." Darwin wrote: "The extinction of species has been involved in the most gratuitous [or 'completely unaccounted for'] mystery." What took place is "apparently sudden extermination of whole families or orders." According to his theory, "the extinction of a whole group of species is generally a slower process than their production," and yet some groups were exterminated "wonderfully sudden." Here, once more, Darwin thought that the imperfection of the geological record may in some cases simulate the suddenness of the extinction; but he acknowledged in other cases his inability to explain the spontaneity of the extinction of some species. He still wondered, as in the days of his South American travels, why horses had disappeared in pre-Columbian America where they had every favorable condition for propagation; and in a letter to Sir Henry H. Howorth he acknowledged his inability to explain the extinction of the mammoth, a well-adapted animal. But in general the deficiency of the geological record was invoked to explain the apparent spontaneity of extinction as well as the suddenness with which new species seem to have arrived on the scene.

According to the theory of natural selection, chance variations or new characteristics among individuals of a species, if beneficial, are exploited in the struggle for survival and, being inheritable, may by accumulation lead to the origin of a new species. Because of the chance nature of these new characteristics and therefore also of the origin of the new species, Darwin assumed "that not only all the individuals of the same species have migrated from some one area, but that allied species, although now inhabiting the most distant points, have proceeded from a single area—the birthplace of their early progenitors... The belief that a single birthplace is the law [or 'the right theory'] seems to me incomparably the safest.

The point here is that otherwise the exact same *species* could have instead 'evolved separately' in 'disconnected regions' near the same time. But certainly 'multiple birthplaces' compared to the "safest" odds of "single birthplaces"—which you should remember we have already determined to be 'impossible odds' anyway—would be 'multiples of impossible'.

[So] Darwin [- to avoid 'multiples-of-impossible' odds -] explained the migration of plants from continent to continent and from mainland to islands by the transportation of seed in the intestines of birds; the migration of mollusks, by observed instances of small shells clinging to the legs of migration birds. This method of dispersion [however] does not account for the geographical distribution of larger animals unable to [- without dying -] fly or swim across the sea, or traverse climatic zones unsuitable for the species.

Since animals of such species are found in very distant parts of the globe, divided by oceans, Darwin was led to maintain that "during the vast geographical and climatal changes which have supervened since ancient times, almost any amount of migration is possible." This makes necessary the existence of land connections or "land bridges" between islands and mainlands and between all continents. But to these geographical and climatal changes, the Ice Age included, Darwin ascribed "a subordinate" role in shaping the development of the animals; they played an important role only in the migration of the animals.

Where the land is continuous, as in the Americas, Darwin accounted for the fact that identical animals live in higher latitudes of the Southern and Northern hemispheres, though they are absent in temperate and tropical latitudes, by resorting to a theory which assumes that the glacial periods in the Northern and Southern hemispheres were not simultaneous but consecutive. When a glacial period was descending upon the north, animals migrated slowly to the south, toward the equator; when the glacial period ended, and the climate in the subtropics became hot, some animals returned to the north, others remained in the subtropical regions, climbing the cool mountains. When the next glacial age—this time advancing from the south—arrived, the animals on the mountains came down, and when this age also ended, some of them moved to the south, while others again retreated to the mountains. Thus identical animals are found in the cooler regions of both the Northern and Southern hemispheres. ([However...] At present this view of consecutive glacial periods in the Northern and Southern hemispheres has hardly any adherents.)

And why "hardly any adherents" anymore to the Consecutive Glaciation Theory? First of all don't forget that all *land animals* did *migrate* from "a single area", actually all from 'a single place', that is, from Noah's Ark. And **remember** that **the earth didn't need** "land bridges" for *migration* to "very distant parts" because **it** was not **divided** into "parts", or *continents*, until the **days of Peleg**. But even though this *theory* accounts for at least some of the reasons for later *animal migration*, and even though it somewhat accounts for the evidence of massive and greatly varying *glaciations*, and *reglaciations*, it's just too *catastrophic*. But in actuality I expect there were probably half a dozen or more significant *shifts* of Earth's *axis* caused by Mercury, Venus and Mars, each of which 'shifted and increased' the *glacial zones*. And if you include the original "Ice Age" started by The 1st Visit of Mercury, there must have been altogether, by my count, a dozen major new *glaciations*, all 'naturally encouraging' the *migration* of both **man and beast**, and which would have included 2 *glaciations*, with maybe an *axis shift* between them, before **the earth was divided** in Peleg's **days**. So the popular consensus of only 4 'Ice Ages' must be another part of the '**satanic conspiracy**' to 'tone down' the evidence that there really was 'too much' Catastrophism for Uniformitarianism to be credible. Uh-huh.

Still, Dr. Velokovsky continues...

The theory of evolution by natural selection could not do well without the theory of the ice ages. It needed the Ice Age theory to explain the provenience ["origin" or "source"] of the same species in the Southern and

Northern hemispheres separated by the Torrid [or Tropical] Zone; it needed it even more to account for the phenomenon of drift. [Gigantic] Erratic blocks [somehow distantly moved from their original environs] could have been explained, with some straining, by the action of icebergs. But drift, or accumulation of clay, boulders, and sand that in many places fills valleys hundreds of feet deep, could not have been brought in by icebergs; and, finally, ice bergs, in order to be produced in great numbers, themselves required extended glaciers from which they could break off. Darwinian evolution needed the Ice Age theory in order to supplant the tidal wave theory—which [or, though it too] is a catastrophic notion. [Again, uh-huh.]

Darwin accepted Agassiz's teaching, though not in its original form with a catastrophic beginning of the ice ages. But Agassiz rejected Darwin's theory. The reason for this he saw in the skeletal remains of ancient fish, a field in which he was an authority. In many instances the fish of extinct species were better developed [read, *bigger* or *giant*] and further advanced in their evolution [read, not as long *cursed*] than later species. Among mammals, too, many better-developed [again read, *bigger* or *giant*] species became extinct. But these difficulties in the way of the evolutionary theory were less strongly felt in the heat of the fight against the [Bible-believing] opponents who insisted on a six-thousand-year-old world and the immutability of species [read, *species* that are 'specially created' by *God*, and which cannot *mutate* into other *species*, but only *reproduce after their kinds*].

So yes, in Darwin's day ***the world*** was becoming ready to give up the 6,000-years timeframe for Creation, and believe that the 'evolution of lifeforms'—except ***man***—took millions and billions of years, though still clung to the notion that it was all somehow 'originally specially created' by God. Indeed even most *evolutionists* in Darwin's day were 'creationists' in this sense, and likely some of them remained ***saved***, because just like with eschatology, you don't have to correctly ***understand*** The Creation of the World, nor ***The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation***, nor even ***believe*** that ***heaven and earth*** have only been around for less than 6,000 years, to ***be saved***. You just have to ***have kept the faith***, that is, ***the steadfastness of your faith in Christ***, and that is, ***how that Christ died for our sins and errors***.

Of course the atrocious ***errors*** in '***our***' present ***understanding*** of both *eschatology* and *creationism*—all still ***treacherously*** 'hyped' by '***satanic conspiracy***', but just as much by '***our***' ***ignorance***, '***warring flesh***', '***carnal minds***', and '***desperately wicked hearts***'—have eroded '***our***' ***faith in Christ***, where today most *evolutionists* not only tend to 'believe' in the entire 'evolution of life'—from *unicellular organisms* to *man*—but they now tend toward *atheism*, and toward ridicule of, or even hostility toward Christianity too. And this is why I think *saltationism* is back on the ***rise***, and why even fewer and fewer Christian *evolutionists* of whatever '***perversion***' are holding on to their ***salvation***, and this would be because of their close resemblance to those '***naked***' and '***sight impaired***' Laodiceans that Jesus ***warned 'us'*** about ([Rev 3:18](#)).

And next Dr. Velikovsky—***shamefully*** enough—identified his role in this ongoing '***erosion of faith***', though no more ***shamefully*** than some Christian *evolutionists* today do, but certainly less ***shamefully*** than the Apostle Paul's behavior before his

'Damascus road' conversion, and, if you'll admit it along with me, likely no more **shamefully** than our behavior before we were **saved**, or maybe even after, and that is, until we're finally taught a thing or two with the help of Dr. Velikovsky about God's Creation. However in this case he took the wrong side, though not entirely for wrong reasons, asserting,

Darwin's theory represented progress as compared with the teachings of the Church. The Church assumed a world without change in nature since the Beginning. Darwin introduced a principle of slow but steady change in one direction, from one age to another, from one eon to another. In comparison with the Church's teaching of immutability ['unchangeableness' of *species*], Darwin's theory of slow evolution [or 'slow change' of *species*] through natural selection or the survival of the fittest was an advance, though not the ultimate truth.

And in Dr. Velikovsky's case, I don't mind repeating that I am **thankful** for his contributions to **our** "advance" toward **revealing** this "ultimate truth", that is, as far he did. And you should remember that this **study** too is just another set of **steps** in the '**rightly-divided**' path that **for ever** must **continue** to '**correct, improve and expand**' our '**perspectives of God**', that is, except any that He would ultimately define as **former things**, you know, the ones that not that long from now **shall not be remembered, nor come into mind** ([Rev 21:4](#), [Isa 65:17](#)).

However Dr. Velikovsky further exposed himself by exposing another key player in this '**erosion of faith**', Mr. Thomas 'Huckster', uh, Huxley, though again, I really got it right the first time here too, didn't I, and so will he hereafter be called. Remember he was also known as "Darwin's bulldog", uh-huh, the 'master' of this "bulldog" hereafter identified as 'Chuck Duh-wind'. About 'Mr. Huckster' and his career of 'bull-dogging' what he called "the Church scientific", Dr. Velikovsky wrote,

The story of his ['Mr. Duh-wind's'] experiences is told by his contemporary and adherent, Thomas Huxley ['the Huckster']. Darwin was "held up to scorn as a 'flighty' person, who endeavours 'to prop up his utterly rotten fabric of guess and speculation,' and whose 'mode of dealing with nature' is reprobated as 'utterly dishonourable to Natural Science.'" Thus Huxley quoted from an article by Bishop Wilberforce in the Quarterly Review of July 1860. Huxley also wrote in 1887: "On the whole, then, the supporters of Mr. Darwin's [or 'Duh-wind's'] views in 1860 were numerically extremely insignificant. There is not the slightest doubt that, if a general council of the Church scientific had been held at that time, we should have been condemned by an overwhelming majority. And there is as little doubt that, if such a council gathered now, the decree would be of an exactly contrary nature."

Darwin's Origin of Species, Huxley went on, "was badly received by the generation to which it was first addressed, and the outpouring of angry nonsense to which it gave rise is sad to think upon. But the present generation will probably behave just as badly if another Darwin should arise, and inflict upon them that which the generality of mankind most hate —the necessity of revising their convictions. Let them, then, be

charitable to us ancients; and if they behave no better than the men of my day to some new benefactor, let them recollect that, after all, our wrath did not come to much, and vented itself chiefly in the bad language of sanctimonious scolds. Let them as speedily perform a strategic right-about-face, and follow the truth wherever it leads. The opponents of the new truth will discover, as those of Darwin are doing, that, after all, theories do not alter facts, and that the universe remains unaffected even though texts crumble [Thomas H. Huxley, *“On the Reception of the Origin of Species”*, printed as Chap. XIV of the first volume of *The Life and Letters of Charles Darwin*, ed. by his son Francis Darwin, in the Appleton edition of the *Works of Charles Darwin*]."

Bishop Samuel Wilberforce, by the way, Bishop of the Church of England (Anglican), debated 'Mr. Huckster', and others, most notably in their "famous debate in 1860", wherein he "supposedly asked Huxley whether it was through his grandfather or his grandmother that he claimed his descent from a monkey". And whatever was said between them in this 'multi-participant debate', (no transcript is available), he was considered "one of the greatest public speakers of his day", and is "remembered today for his opposition to Charles Darwin's theory of evolution". And the way I see it, just as Dr. Velikovsky exposes 'Mr. Duh-wind', and from what 'Mr. Huckster' said about the Bishop, apparently **our brother** Samuel got it right too, didn't he.

It is also noteworthy that he was the son of MP (Member of Parliament) William Wilberforce, "one of the leading English abolitionists". And thanks to **our brother** William's lifelong efforts, '**slavery**', which in the KJV is called **bondage**, was finally entirely peacefully abolished in his **nation** shortly after his death in 1833, over 30 years before it was not so 'peacefully' abolished in my **nation**, as apparently **the words of God** that the Apostle Paul **teacheth** on the subject—which would have at least required that the issue be handled more **peaceably**—were by then, as now, too largely **forgotten**, not to mention that the fundamental 'social dynamics' of the situation, which go back to even before The Flood, were too often '**mishandled**', '**ignored**', and/or **forgotten** too, though these 'social dynamics' now include, besides '**bad-angel blood**'—especially including Noah's **cursed** progeny through **Cainan—the power of the precious blood of Christ**, which, as we already suspect, will not leave **some** of the earlier **slaves** as the last '**marked**' and '**cursed souls**' who finally...

...overcame him [the accuser of our brethren] by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony [- and as necessary by 'hand' and/or 'head amputation']; **and they loved not their lives unto death...**
[Rev 12:11](#).

And though both now mostly unified sides—the 'Church scientific' vs. 'Duh-wind's adherents'—were missing and misusing "facts", and even though the earlier 'Church scientific' was clearly much closer to the "truth", the '**right side**' did not win the 'vocal majority', maybe most significantly because they had generally become '**perilously ignorant**' about a '**first principle**', that is, about the **great power** of God, and that is, about how in **six days** He...

...made the earth, the man and the beast... ([Jer 27:5](#); see also [Exo 20:11](#)),

and because they had generally become '**perilously ignorant**' about His **great power** to both **deliver** and **save**, but also to **scatter** and **destroy**, and to do so...

...by temptations, by signs, and by wonders, and by war, and by a mighty hand, and by a stretched out arm, and by great terrors...
([Deu 4:34](#); [Psa 144:5-7](#); [Jas 4:12](#)).

How can I see this ‘encroachment’ of **‘perilous ignorance’** about **the power of God?** It can be seen in the account ‘Mr. Huckster’ gives of the ‘long term success’ that Satan’s **‘conspiratorial devices’** apparently had **against** what he called the “general council of the Church scientific”, that is, ‘success’ in establishing the *theory* of ‘eons-old’, ‘species-transmutating’ Uniformitarianism over “six-thousand-year-old”, ‘species-immutable’, Special Creation.

And ‘Mr. Huckster’ is uncharacteristically ‘humble’ about this ‘victory’ here. But don’t be **deceived** by his ‘magnanimity in victory’ without remembering his acknowledged participation in the original “wrath” and “sanctimonious scolds”, that is, when he was first “condemned by an overwhelming majority”, because—given the **‘house-divided nature’** of the various **principalities, and powers** of **the kingdoms of this world**, whether **spiritual** or **carnal**—when they **rise**, as well as when they ultimately **fall** from **power**, it usually starts with **warring**, including within their own **‘house’**, like how Saturn and Mercury **worshippers**, and their corresponding **high, spiritual, principalities, and powers** of **darkness** and **wickedness** tried to hold on to their **strong holds** (read, **‘false religious institutions’**) long after Jupiter and Venus **worship** began to **rise up**, and in the same way Jupiter and Venus **worshippers**, et al., tried to hold on to their **strong holds** long after Mars **worship** began to **rise up**, as we will **‘better see’** in the remaining sections too.

And you may need to again consider the **precept, strong holds**, in [Daniel 11:24](#) as compared to the ultimate **strong hold** on **earth**, that is, the **sanctuary of strength** in [Verse 31](#), in order to **‘improve and expand’** your **understanding** of the particular **use** of this **precept** in these verses. And I mean **strong holds** in **scripture** are usually and mostly just ‘political’, that is, just **fortresses**, or **fenced** or **defenced cities**, etc., but in these 2 verses in Daniel the focus is not just on either **‘good or evil civil’ strong holds**, but also on either **‘light or dark spiritual’ strong holds**, be they God’s or Satan’s. And of course **we know** that our God **lives** in His **strong hold** in **heaven**, one that is in a **secret place**, but where **if ‘we’** become **able** to there **abide under the shadow of the Almighty**, having **made the LORD** our **habitation**, **then** He —or They—becomes **‘our’ refuge** and **fortress** (*gic*), and necessarily **‘unfailingly worthy’** of **‘our’ trust** ([Psa 91](#); [John 14:23](#)).

The point is that it is apparently **from** such **‘warring spiritual strong holds’**—both **earthly** and **heavenly**—that **‘spiritual warfare’** commonly ensues, including —when it comes to **‘dark strongholds’**—the **devised devices** of **‘bad angels’** to **‘tempt mankind’** to **wars and fightings among you**, and to otherwise **‘tempt us’** to give in to **the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life**, that is, unless **‘you’** otherwise have enough **stability** and **strength of salvation**, and that is, enough **fear of the LORD** and/or **perfect love** (e.g. [Isa 33:6](#); [Job 28:28](#); [1John 4:18](#)) to **resist**, and/or **flee** from, and/or otherwise **mortify** such **temptation** (e.g., [Jas 4:7](#); [1Pe 5:8](#); [2Co 10:4-6](#); [1Co 6:18](#); [1Co 10:12-14](#); [1Ti 6:8-11](#); [Rom 8:13](#); [Col 3:5](#)). But **never forget** that even when you don’t yet have ‘enough’ **stability** and **strength**, you only need **lose** some of **your reward**, because even in **‘our’ weakness** His **grace is sufficient** to **save**. Besides, it is **by** and **through faith** that **out of weakness** we are **made strong** ([Heb 11](#), especially Verse 34).

And **remember** that even the Apostle Paul admits that, because of his **flesh**, at least sometimes,

...the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. [Rom 7:14-25](#), (especially verses 15 and 19; see also [Gal 5:17](#)).

But along with him I too **thank God** that He is **able** to **deliver 'us' from the body of this death**, that is, **through Jesus Christ our Lord** [Rom 7:24-25](#), and I **thank God** even though **'we' know** that this does not entirely and completely happen until **death**, or until **the resurrection of the dead**, which for you and I may very well not actually involve **death**, just being **changed** into one of **the sons of God**, who will **inherit the kingdom of God** and **inherit incorruption** and **immortality**, and that is, at The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church (e.g. [John 1:12](#); [Phl 3:8-15](#); [1Co 15:50-58](#)). And so **'we'** may also together **understand** that **'spiritual warriors'** become **able** to be **more than conquerors** [Rom 8:37](#) not just by The Ministry of The Spirit to **'withstand'**, but also and only **if 'we' continue** to **fight the good fight of faith** [1Ti 6:12](#).

Or as Paul in other **words of God** puts it,

For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but [are potentially, and especially if ye continue in The Word,] mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds [including even spiritual wickedness in high places]... [2Co 10:3-4](#) [[John 15:5-8](#), [Eph 6:12](#)],

or wherever such **strong holds** may be.

And surely 'Mr. Huckster' finally got 'beaten down' too—I mean by some of those "facts" of Creation he mentioned, you know, the ones God is **'ever faithful'** to **'keep calling to our attention'** (e.g., for **unbelievers**, [John 16:7-11](#); and for **believers**, [John 14:26](#)), including...

...the invisible things of him from the creation of the world [that] are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse [Rom 1:20](#).

However the next verse may be applicable to 'Mr. Huckster' too.

In the next section, *The Mechanism of Evolution*, Dr. Velikovsky really puts us to the test, teaching,

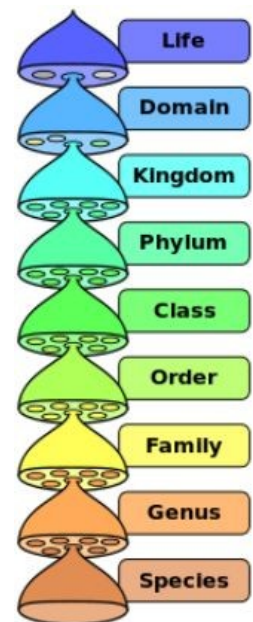
Natural selection—the Darwinian mechanism of evolution—is simultaneously destructive and constructive. In the struggle for existence it eliminates all the unfit among the members of a species; and it destroys the species that cannot compete with others for the limited resources of livelihood. The winners in this struggle are those individuals that because of some characteristic—or favorable variation—have an edge over other competitors, "Under these circumstances favourable variations would tend to be preserved, and unfavourable ones destroyed. The result of this would be the formation of new species" (Darwin).

As shown on previous pages [or in **SECTION 8** if more related to Venus than Mercury], the annihilation of many individuals and of entire species in the animal kingdom took place, not only under circumstances of competition, but under catastrophic conditions as well. Entire species with no sign of

degeneration suddenly came to their end in paroxysms [last time: ‘sudden outbursts’] of nature. Yet extinction of a species through starvation or extermination by enemies also takes place: Moa, the gigantic flightless bird of New Zealand that stood twelve feet high, was destroyed several centuries ago. The whooping cranes of North America were reduced by 1953 to twenty-one individuals. [However] Natural selection cannot account for the wholesale destruction of many genera and species at one time; it may occasionally be the agent exterminating single species. But can natural selection create new species?

The geological record presents evidence that in the past animals lived that do not live any longer; and also that, of the forms living today, many did not exist in the past. Then how did they come into being?

Of course **all species** “come into being” in Creation Week, and therefore **all** existed in the past, but evidently some haven’t yet been identified—or acknowledged—in their *fossil forms*, this evidently partly because they were **‘giant’** and **‘not-as-long-cursed’** forms compared to their present **‘same-kind’** variations. But there is another big reason why it is assumed that ‘species’ have “come into being”. It has to do with the way *evolutionists* ‘classify’ them...



The animal and plant kingdoms are subdivided into phyla, and these into classes, orders, families and genera, and finally species [classifications chart from VOLUME I, SECTION 3, p.295, reviewed here on p.211]. A species can be recognized this way; the mating of members of two different species generally does not produce offspring, and when it does, such offspring is sterile ([e.g.] horse and ass, and their offspring, the mule). Thus all the human race is but one species, and all races of dogs, so dissimilar in their body structures, are members of one species. There are hundreds of thousands of species in the animal kingdom and also in the plant kingdom.

But I assume there are actually very many fewer *species* of...

...every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind, and every fowl after his kind...

because,

...they [all] went in unto Noah into the ark, two and two of all flesh, wherein is the breath of life. And they that went in, went in male and female of all flesh, as God

had commanded him: and the LORD shut him [and them] in [Gen 7:14-16](#).

And I mean there really can't be “hundreds of thousands of species in



the animal kingdom". And Dr. Velikovsky's example of dogs can help us **see** why. *Dogs* are indeed all "one species", though "so dissimilar in their body structures", as well as "dissimilar" in *breed temperaments* too—from Basset Hound to Teacup Poodle, and from **Chihuahua** to **Great Dane** (picture, p.211), though it is possible that such "dissimilar" *variations* would never be seen "mating". But it is apparently often incorrectly assumed that such 'dissimilarities' of *variations* are proof of their inability to *reproduce fertile offspring*, and not just that this establishes no preference for it. And by the way, my encyclopedia informs me that a *breed* of *dog*, the **Basenji** (picture also p.211), commonly considered in the Hound *dog group*, and "bred from stock that originated in central Africa", "had recent admixture with Middle Eastern wolves", and also that "eastern and red wolves do intermix with coyotes", that is, they were seen "mating" and to have reproduced, the *offspring* evidently having the ability to continue to do so with *dogs*, *coyotes* and/or *wolves* of this apparently '**same**' *kind*. And I mean that though *wolves* and *coyotes* are *classified* as *different species* (*Lupis* and *Latrans*, respectively), evidently they are not, but apparently only generally do not prefer "mating" with *variations* of their **kind** that are too "dissimilar" in *structure* and/or *temperament*. And I mean there must really be very much fewer **kinds** than *evolutionists*, and '**our**' **adversary**, want us to believe, and which Dr. Velikovsky apparently was '**fooled**' to 'believe'. But you too, if you were anything like I used to be, thinking you 'knew' something about all this, must have been '**fooled**' as well.

And let's unravel this tangled 'cover-up' a little more. About *jackals* (*species Aureus*) my encyclopedia reports,

It is capable of producing fertile hybrids with both grey and African wolves.

Now "fertile hybrids" is a contradiction of terms because it implies that different *species can reproduce fertile offspring*. My encyclopedia also reveals that,

Similar matings between golden jackals and grey wolves have never been observed [that this researcher knows of], though evidence of such occurrences was discovered through mtDNA [*mitochondrial DNA*] analysis on jackals in Bulgaria. [And] Although there is no genetic evidence of grey wolf-jackal hybridization in the Caucasus Mountains, there have been cases where otherwise genetically pure golden jackals have displayed remarkably grey wolf-like phenotypes [*characteristics* or *traits*], to the point of being mistaken for wolves by trained [but **deceived**, *evolutionary*] biologists, [meaning they must be "fertile hybrids" too].

Deceived? Uh-huh, my encyclopedia also '**misreports**' that,

Canid hybrids are the result of interbreeding between different species of the canine (dog) family (genus *Canis*) [which by definition means their *offspring cannot* be "fertile", underlining mine]. They often occur in the wild, in particular between domestic or feral [*wild*] dogs and wild native canis.

And though the *offspring* of "different species", apparently they can reproduce fertile offspring.

By-the-way, *Canis*, *classified* as members of the "Canid family", include...

...domestic [and *feral*] dogs, wolves, foxes, jackals, dingoes, and many other extant and extinct dog-like mammals.

And uh-huh, they're obviously all just one **kind**. And it must be that if this example of a "family" of supposedly "many" *species* is really only just one, then, well, evidently Noah somehow did have enough room on the Ark for everything with **the breath of life** that lived **upon the earth**.

And though I've not had the chance myself, I nonetheless recommend an item for your 'bucket list', and that would be to visit the **Ark Encounter**, a "sister exhibit to Creation Museum" in Petersburg, Kentucky, (a little south of Cincinnati, Ohio), both ministries of *Answers in Genesis*, proponents of "young Earth creationism" and, despite their **shameful** 'hostile split' from other 'Creationist ministries', are recommended by me back in **SECTION 2**. This "ark" is now 'docked' in Williamstown, Kentucky, (a little further south), and is somewhat appropriately promoted as a "full size Noah's Ark" (<https://arkencounter.com>), because it's actually...

...510 feet long, 85 feet wide and 51 feet high, based on the cubit measurements God gave Noah in the biblical flood account [The Columbus Dispatch, July 8, 2016 ([link to article](#))]....

And I said "somewhat appropriately" because unfortunately it's probably not really "full size", because I did the math, and it's not big enough. And I mean that God told Noah,

...The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits, the breadth of it fifty cubits, and the height of it thirty cubits.

The problem is that though they chose a 'cubit' that was not as 'whimpy' as 18 inches, they didn't choose one as 'meaty' as Sir Isaac's 25-incher either. Apparently they chose a 20.4 *inch* 'cubit', and I don't know why. It did cost \$150 million to build as it is, but I hope this is not the reason why they went with a 'smaller cubit'. And the math doesn't lie: 300 'cubits' x 20.4 *inches*/'cubit' makes it only 510 *feet* long,



and 50 'cubits' x 20.4 inches/'cubit' makes it only 85 feet wide, and 30 'cubits' x 20.4 inches/'cubit' makes it only 51 feet high, when I **believe** the Ark's "full size", at about 25 inches/cubit, is closer to 625 feet long, 105 feet wide, and 63 feet high.

Still, and if Sir Issac is right, this makes it a little over 80% to scale, so I'm sure it's worth seeing this 'nearly full size ark', with its "three decks of exhibits", evidently appropriately including models of baby *dinosaurs*. (See pictures, [p.212.](#))

However Moses' report of Noah's adventure also implies another '**misunderstanding**' of mine—and possibly of yours too—about what God means by **creeping things**, and that is, as He means it in the passage we just looked at in [Genesis 7:14-16](#). And I mean this passage must not refer to *insects* and other 'non-breathing organisms' since the ones referred to there had **breath of life**, that is, **they** apparently had *nostrils* and *lungs*—or a *lung*—that *breathe air*. More specifically, the **creeping things** that were '**ark passengers**' must have been **things** like *rodents*, *lizards*, *snakes* (which, by the way, generally "have only one functional lung"), etc., while apparently '**all**' *species* of '**non-breathing**' **things** surviving today must have had "early progenitors" that somehow survived The Flood without going **into the ark**. And it is also now apparent to me here that *animals* with *lungs* that do not **live upon the earth**, but instead in **the waters**, like *dolphins* and *whales*, (which, by the way, may have either one *nostril* or two that are called *blowholes*), survived outside the Ark, and maybe *simiaquatic animals* like *hippos*, *alligators*, *salamanders*, etc., did too. However whether **shut...in** or not, evidently some **kinds** —especially the largest, which, if in the Ark, for economy of space, were most likely 'babies'—did not survive all the later **great judgments** of God.

And though the testimonies of men like Baron Cuvier, Rev., Dr. Buckland, and Professor, Dr. Agassiz reveal more '**godly perspectives**', apparently the reason *evolutionists* in general, even *catastrophic saltationists*, have "recognized" *species* "this way", that is, "subdivided" into *classifications*, is so they can '**mis-imagine**' them as 'links in the chain' of *evolution*. And since, according to God, *species* can only *reproduce* within **their species**, or as the Prophet Moses puts it, **after their kinds**, there appears to be no **good** reason for *species* to be "recognized this way". But really there are legitimate—that is, '**scriptural**'—reasons for such-like *classifications*.

To start with, there are some obvious similarities in the *structures* of both *plants* and *animals*, and, as has been learned more recently "at a molecular level", even in **their DNA**, so that grouping them together should have **use** for our benefit, like in the **use** of *plants* for **medicine**, etc., but more broadly, like how attention to God's Creation in this **way** can help us **grow** in our '**ability**' to...

...subdue it [the earth]: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth [Gen 1:28](#).

And clearly there is a simple 'classification system' here, including 3 'kingdoms': **the fish of the sea, the fowl of the air, and every other living thing...upon the earth**, or 4 including us, as Paul identifies them in [1Corinthians 15:39](#). And we just saw the further 'classifications' of '**sixth-day-created**' **things** with the breath of life that *live upon the earth*, including...

...every beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind,

which further implies other general ‘classifications’, including, besides the various ‘subdivisions’ of **‘fifth-day-created’ things** with **the breath of life** that instead *live* in **the waters**, also the various ‘subdivisions’ of **things** that God **created** on both **the fifth** and **sixth day** that **hath life** but not **the breath of life**, (this time including *insects*), not to mention *microscopic organisms* which apparently can *live* almost anywhere, and God knows when they were **created**, (and I mean I imagine that the ones that *live* in the *soil* may have been **created** on **the second** or **third day**), but **all** of which are within our **‘God-given’ stewardship** to **subdue**, and **have dominion over ‘them’**, and that is, for **all** our **good**.

And remember that God, according to **his law** delivered by Moses, continues to **require** of His people, the Jews, to have some **‘skill’** in ‘classifying’ *animals*, including having to distinguish certain ‘groups’ within the **fish of the sea** by **their characteristics**, and ‘groups’ within the *animals upon the earth* by **their characteristics** too, because to this day His people are—and throughout The Millennium will be—**required** by God to **not eat** certain **kinds** of *animals*, while being **‘permitted’** to **eat** others, and yes, even though in The Millennium **they** will no longer have **the fear of you and the dread of you** anymore ([Gen 9:2](#), [Isa 11:1-9](#); [65:17-25](#)).

But to take a couple of **‘steps up’** from these **‘first principles’** of the **‘good ways’** of **‘subdividing and subduing the earth’**, I mean since we’re soon expecting a relatively **‘spiritually unhindered’** Millennium when,

...the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea,

and where **‘we’** can **continue in** such **endeavours** with the **increasing...knowledge of God**, what do you think we’ll be doing **‘along these lines and precepts’** during this coming **dispensation**, and beyond it, in the New Heaven and New Earth?

Well, we’ve already seen that **Rachel** certainly **coveted** the **mandrakes** that **Leah** got from her son **Reuben**. And I mean someone had to be first to discover that they could be of such **use**, including the role this *plant* played in that ‘picnic’ described in Song of Songs 7:10-13. And I could again bring up **Jacob’s animal husbandry ‘skills’**, and that he somehow **learned** a thing or two about how to **subdue** God’s Creation ‘reproductively’, putting that **knowledge** to **use** for **good** too. So don’t you think in The Millennium we’ll **subdue** God’s Creation for **good** like never before, being **full of the knowledge of the LORD** like never before?

And we’ve **learned** a little about what’s **to come** too, as we should expect. Remember Jesus promises us that The Spirit **will shew you things to come** [John 16:13](#). For example, we **know** that at Jesus’ **house** in Millennial Jerusalem—or more specifically, in front of His **inner temple** or **inner house** [Eze 41:15,17](#)—that **waters** will be **issued out from under the threshold of the house eastward**, becoming a **river**, where **at the bank of the river** will be **very many trees on the one side and on the other**, and where **the leaf thereof** will be put to **use** specifically **for medicine** [Eze 47:1-12](#).

And this should again remind you of the **pure river of water of life...proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb**, that I **imagine** flowing on the top **‘foundation floor’** of New Jerusalem. And I would guess it will also flow the hundreds of miles downward through **the city**, and maybe also out from it eastward, but ultimately and mostly **‘westward’**, even to all **the nations of them which are saved**, which apparently will include none East of **the city**, nor any very far to the South either, ([Isa 49:12](#); [Isa 19](#); [Rev 16:12](#) as it applies to the

kings of the east and the likely end of their **nations**; [Rev 6:8](#) as it applies to The 4th Seal Judgment's likely Sub-Saharan-centered **plague**, etc, and the end of these **nations**). And on the top '**foundation floor**', (where I'll guess **the river** initially flows 'westward across the middle' of the '**floor**'), and down and probably also across each **foundations** below, (where maybe **it** flows alternately in opposite directions 'down the middle' of each '**floor**'), and probably also far outside **the city** too. And I'll guess that as far as **the river** flows, on **either side of the river** there will be **the tree[s] of life** where, like in The Millennium, **the leaves of the tree[s]** are available **for the healing of the nations** [Rev 22:1-2](#). And maybe all this also '**sheds enough light on these subjects**' to give us an idea as to what direction They '**faces**' (*gic* and the '**meaty**' P-PAMD intended).

But hey, I'm personally already aware of quite a variety of ways **leaves** can be put to **use** as **medicine**, and otherwise used **for...healing**. And like **leaves**, I only expect my **knowledge of God** about such things to '**forever grow**', (pun here not only intended, but '**thoroughly enjoyed**', as it involves a 'metaphor within a simile', arguably enough anyway).

So I can only **hope** that you too are experiencing **continuing, 'mind-transforming', 'corrected, improved and expanded' revelations**, that by '**unending infallible proofs**' do not cease to **shew you** that **increasing in the knowledge** of God's Creation—and especially His next one—will have **no end**. And I cannot **put you...in remembrance... or bring...to your remembrance** enough that,

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this [Isa 9:7](#).

And **you** already **know** that **the kingdom of God is** already **within you** [Luke 17:21](#), which means you should already be experiencing the kind of **zeal** Jesus has about **the increase of his kingdom**, and already becoming '**increasingly able**' to **delight thyself** in it too, even as much as **the desires of your heart** ([Psa 37:4](#)) will '**increasingly**' allow, God knows.

Continuing to 'bulldog the bulldog and his master', Dr. Velikovsky adorably growls,

In the theory of evolution all forms of life evolved by gradual emergence from the same most primitive, one-cell living beings. Chance variations occur in members of every species—no two individuals are entirely identical. These variations are inheritable. As already explained, favorable variations—those that are helpful in the struggle for existence —may accumulate to such a degree that, according to Darwin, a new species originates, the members of which can have no fruitful progeny with the members of the parental species.

[But] Since the first scientific observations were made, no truly new animal species has been observed to come into being [nor yet has, nor ever will, except possibly, with '**abominable consequences**', by *genetic engineering of genetically modified organisms* (GMO's) - I mean talk about **sorcery** and 'sorcerer's apprentices' !]. The year after publication of *The Origin of Species*, Thomas Huxley wrote: "But there is no positive evidence, at present, that any group of animals has, by variation and selective breeding, given rise to another group which was, even in the least degree, infertile with the

first." [Thomas H. Huxley, *"The Origin of Species"*, 1980, reprinted in his *Darwiniana, Collective Essays*, 1893, Vol.II, p.74.] A few years later Darwin wrote in a letter (to Bentham): "The belief in natural selection must at present be grounded entirely on general considerations [read, 'on nothing but fantasy']... When we descend to details, we cannot prove that a single species has changed; nor can we prove that the supposed changes are beneficial [including with GMO's], which is the groundwork of the theory." [Darwin, *Life and Letters*, ed. Francis Darwin, Vol.II, p.210.] And at the end of the century Huxley found himself compelled to make the statement: "I remain of the opinion... that until selective breeding is definitely proved to give rise to varieties infertile with one another, the logical foundation of the theory of natural selection is incomplete. We still remain very much in the dark about the causes of variation... [though the **light to see** was right in front of their faces, that is, right there in their Bibles - and they were likely KJV back then too]." [Huxley, *Darwiniana, Collective Essays*, 1893, Vol.II, *Preface*.]

In selective breeding the breeder creates conditions not found in wild life; and new races or varieties of animals created by selection and isolation revert to their ancestral unselected forms as soon as they are turned free; thus when dogs of various breeds mate they give birth to mongrels which resemble their common ancestors. Despite all their efforts, breeders have not been able to cross the true frontier of a species [and certainly most *evolutionists*, excepting the minority who are *saltationists*, have hid such news from the public]. Then how could a new species originate in chance variations and through crossbreeding in wild life? And how could so many new species be produced that they number, together with the extinct, in the millions? [Again, and whatever the "number", we **know** that there are no more of **them** that have **breath of life** and **live upon the earth** than could fit **by sevens** if **clean**, and **by two** if **not, shut...in** Noah's Ark ([Gen 7:2](#)).] And how could a human being, so complicated, evolve, not just from common ancestors with the primates (apes), but from common ancestors with winged insect and crawling worms? The evolutionists drew more checks on time [- preferring to 'believe' that with '**ridiculous**' amounts of time, **things which are impossible with men** could happen, and that is, without the involvement of God].

Then, too, the chance character of variations, when they first appear in an individual, makes the envisaged progress especially difficult. Darwin professed ignorance as to the cause of these variations or new characteristics appearing in individuals; and it was generally understood that chance variations, in the vast majority of cases, must be in the nature of defects: in a complicated and balanced organism a chance variation would probably be a hindrance, not a benefit. Then by what rare accidents could ever more perfected species have originated?

Various theories have been offered—one of them being *évolution créatrice* [Creative Evolution] by Henri Bergson—that assume the existence of a guiding principle in evolution [usually 'Someone' or 'something' other than God], which [or who 'somehow'] replaces the chance and accident in variations; these theories are often united under the name *orthogenesis*, the best known of such ideas. The adherents of orthogenesis claim the

existence of a plan and a goal [though again, usually ignoring God as much as possible]. But since, in such a theory, Providence [- being too easily confused with God -] enters into action, and [in such a way as] to make nature independent of it [or to 'independently create', and since this, for its "adherents",] was a major objective of the theory of evolution as opposed to the teaching of special creation [that is, opposed to instead directly acknowledging God], after some deliberation orthogenesis, or creative evolution, met largely with rejection [which I think was mostly because it was still too close to acknowledging God]. [However] The orthogeneticists could argue that many traits, when they first appeared, must have been entirely useless, yet not senseless if they were destined [by "Providence"] to become useful after many generations. Then why should these traits have gone on developing from age to age, finally to become an asset to the species, unless orthogenesis was in action; [e.g.,] why should the pocket of the kangaroo have increased in size through many generations until it could be used for carrying baby kangaroos? [- not that there are any fossils of such 'transitional species' to suggest such 'development' ever happened.]

But we should pause here to remember it was a couple of decades after the publication of *Earth In Upheaval* that there was a revival of sorts of what could be called Creative Evolution Theory. In **SECTION 2** I expose *chemist* Dr. Sir James Lovelock and *microbiologist* Dr. Lynn Margulis, co-developers of the Gaia Hypothesis or Theory or Principle. This "theory" proposes that *organisms* interact with their inorganic surroundings on Earth to form a self-regulating, complex system that contributes to maintaining the conditions for *life* on the *planet*, where Earth's *biosphere*—consisting of Earth's *oceans, atmosphere, crust,* and ***every living thing***—constitute a sort of 'super organism' that has *evolved*, and where *life* 'developed', for example, with the help of a 'self-regulating' *atmosphere*, altering itself as needed to protect 'living things' from the supposed ever-increasing brightness of the Sun. And yes, again, this is not really *science* but *mysticism, even spiritualism*, as well as fantasy. So why would *evolutionists* believe it? Again, there are 2 primary reasons: **1)** because "chance beneficial mutations", let alone "hopeful monsters", are even less believable, and **2)** because acknowledging ***strange gods*** is acceptable, especially to avoid acknowledging the God of the Bible, let alone our '***sin nature***'.

Of course you should also recognize this as ***idolatry***, and those who believe in such things as ***idolaters***, even the kind that the Apostle Paul identifies as being eventually '***given up on***' by God, and this would be because they ***worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator*** [Rom 1:24-25](#). And in the following sections we'll see many more reasons for the past popularity of such '***vain religion***', but also how in the 7,000-year 'scheme of things' that this '***strategy***' of '***our***' ***adversary*** becomes subordinated to another one. And I mean we will ***see*** how, generally speaking, that the dominance of '***creation worship***' before The Greek Empire finally becomes subordinated to '***self worship***, like it evidently was before The Flood.

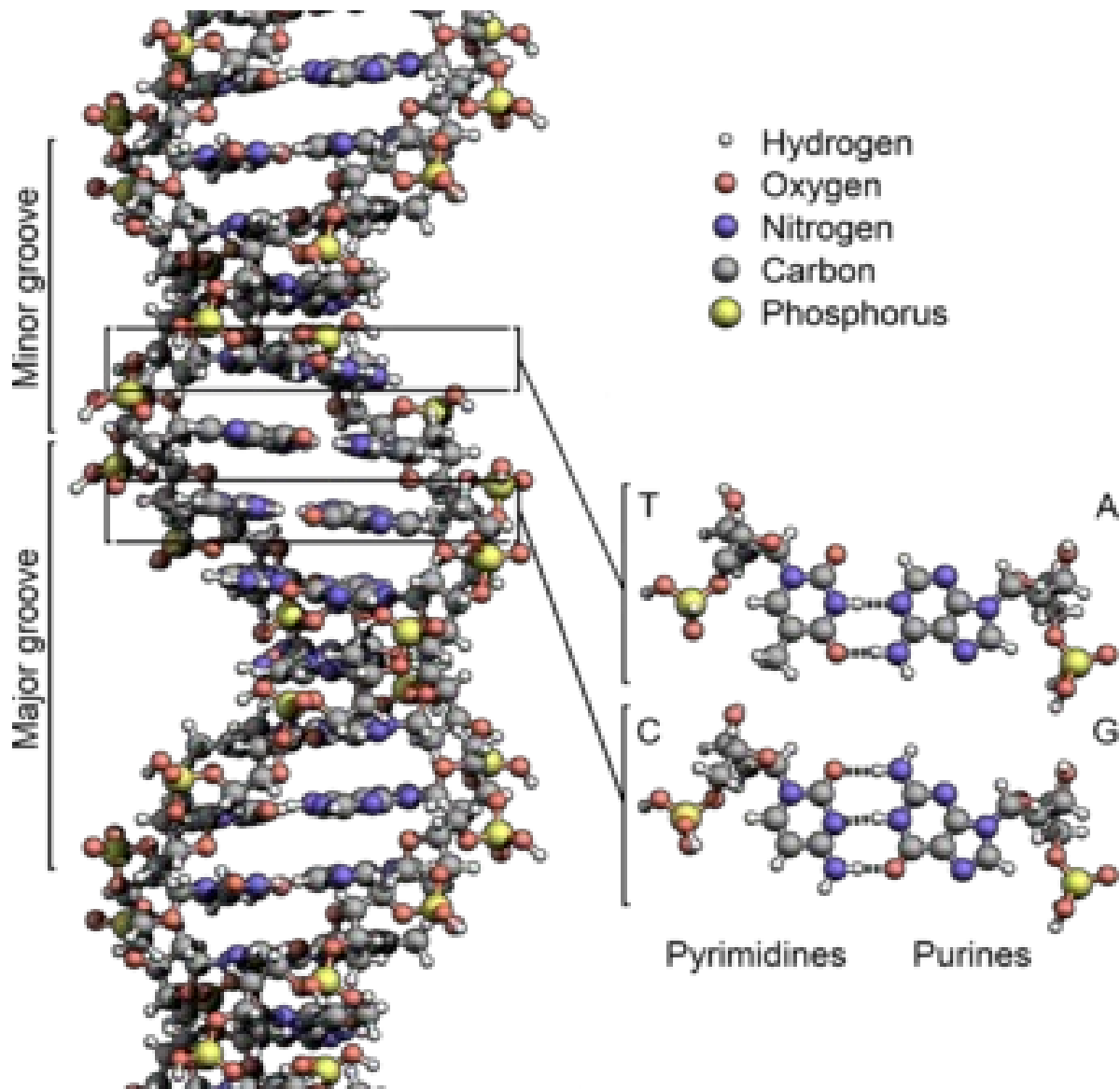
But sticking for now to our present '***first principles along these lines and precepts***', and to the 'bulldogging' on all sides about it all, Dr. Velikovsky explains,

The obvious difficulty in explaining the evolutionary process by chance variations brought about the revival of Lamarckism. In 1809, the year Darwin was born, ['Miss-sure'] Lamarck had published his *Philosophie*

zoologique, in which he offered a theory of evolution through the appearance of new traits and faculties in response to usage; usage in response to need; and need as the consequence of changes in physical surroundings. These new acquired traits, he assumed, were inheritable. ['Miss-sure'] Lamarck also taught uniformity, and thus he was an opponent of his contemporary, [Baron] Cuvier, who taught catastrophism. Charles Darwin, generous to Alfred R. Wallace, whom he declared to be an independent discoverer of the theory of natural selection, never agreed, despite the admonitions of [the liars] Lyell and Huxley, to acknowledge his debt to ['Miss-sure'] Lamarck; [but instead] in a letter to [lying] Lyell he [Darwin, evidently 'wrathfully and scoldingly',] referred to Lamarck's book as "absurd" and "rubbish," and also as a "wretched book." [Darwin, *Life and Letters*, Vol.II, p.199; L. T. More, *The Dogma of Evolution*, 1925, p.172.] However, Darwin offered the theory of pangenesis, according to which every cell in the body of an animal or plant sends a gemmule, an invisible image of the parent cell, to the germ cells. In this way Darwin intended to interpret heredity. Thus he went even farther than ['Miss-sure'] Lamarck in making the cells of the body the carriers of heredity, which amounts to hereditary transmission of acquired traits. [Uh-huh, Dr. Velikovsky just called Mr. Darwin both a plagiarist and hypocrite, grrrr-owl!] The theory of pangenesis is definitely rejected by everyone [being replaced by Mendel's Laws of Inheritance and Modern Evolutionary Synthesis, and finally by "molecular level" Evolutionary Developmental Biology].

In the battle that went on among the representatives of different schools in evolution, the neo-Darwinists [before the rise of the Mendelians or Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory], led by [Professor, Dr.] August Weismann [a German *evolutionary biologist* who Dr. Ernst ['Oscar'] Mayr ['Baloney'] ranked as the second most notable *evolutionary theorist* of the 19th century after Mr. Duh-wind, and appropriately enough referred to as 'Wise-ass-end'], attacked the neo-Lamarckists; and by cutting off the tails of mice in succeeding generations, [the 'ass-end'] Weismann could show that acquired traits are not inheritable. Actually, he did not prove that much: the loss of tails by cutting is not a habit or trait acquired through usage or need. [However] It was [the 'ass-end'] Weismann who really disproved Darwin's pangenesis theory, not ['Miss-sure'] Lamarck, but he [- 'Wise-ass-end' -] properly stressed that the carriers of hereditary traits are in the germ plasma, or in the spermatozoa and ova [or in the *sperm* and *egg cells*]; the soma, or the [whole] body [and all its *somatic cells*], is created in each successive generation by the germ

plasma [or more specifically, by the *sperm* and *egg cells* and the *DNA* inside], and [so] only changes in the plasma [or in the *DNA* within it] are inheritable. The chance variations of Darwin are such changes in the germ plasma and are therefore inherited; [so] the response of the body to external agents would not create inheritable traits and therefore must be of no value in evolution.



And this supposedly disproves *Lamarckism*, except—Newsflash!—there is now relatively new evidence—which evidently wasn't really news to the Patriarch Jacob—that though *traits, environment, or other "external agents"* do not change *DNA (deoxyribose nucleic acid)*, they evidently can affect how *DNA is expressed*. And this phenomenon that is bringing 'revival' to Lamarckism has a name: *transgenerational epigenetic inheritance (DNA diagram, p.218.)*.

Dr. Velikovsky continues,

On evolution as a geological fact all agreed, but on the mechanism of evolution the disagreement has been fundamental [that is, 'complete']. The majority of evolutionists have rejected the idea that acquired characteristics are inheritable [which is the rejection of *Lamarckism*]; but ['Missure'] Lamarck's ideas found followers in the East, in [Ivan Vladimirovich] Michurin, who experimented on plants [becoming - like Jacob with *animals* - "one of the founding fathers of scientific agricultural selection" or of 'agricultural breeding' (not necessarily '**a bad thing**')—as opposed to *agricultural genetic engineering* or 'agricultural gene modification' (certainly '**a bad thing**'), and for a time in [Professor Dr. Ivan Petrovich] Pavlov, [the Nobel-Prize-winning *psychologist*] who experimented on animals [including on his famous dogs (unavoidably '**a bad**

thing'), and [so *Lamarckism*, besides being newly 'back in consideration' by some] was not long ago in the dominant school of thought in Russia.

The neo-Darwinists deny that physical surroundings can give rise to new species; they may bring about changes in an organism, but the acquired characteristics are not inheritable. Can, then, natural selection or competition with other animals create a new species? The classic [read, '**ridiculous**'] example of a giraffe with the longest neck surviving when leaves are left only high on the trees does not prove that giraffes with longer necks would become a separate species. And, in any event, under the described conditions no new race would evolve; [because] the female giraffes, which are smaller in stature, would die out before the male competitors, and there would be no progeny; but should there be progeny, the young giraffes would probably die because they would be unable to reach the leaves. [And getting to the point, no, Natural Selection cannot create new *species* either.]

The position of Darwinists would be much stronger if a new animal species would appear, even if only in controlled breeding. Darwin claimed that the process of the appearance of new species is very slow, but he also maintained that the process of extinction of a species is even slower [*The Origin of Species, Chapter XI*]. Nevertheless, some species of animals have expired before the eyes of the naturalists, but no new one has appeared. The theory of natural selection, even the very fact of the evolvement of one species from another, needed proof. Some scientists went so far as to say that possibly the entire development plan has already reached its permanent stage, [with] evolution no longer taking place.

But the time is coming when "some scientists" will 'go even farther to say' that another 'jump' of *evolution* has occurring, one that, 'geologically speaking', 'explosively changes' the *fittest* of us (**unbelievers**) into '**gods**', and 'suddenly purges' the 'weaker' of us (**believers**) from the Earth, this 'phenomenon' also ultimately 'disclosed' as happening with the 'assistance' of already '**ascended gods**' and/or of already '**further-evolved, technologically-superior aliens**', either of which are really just '**bad angels**' that **deceive** by **lying wonders** and **doctrines of devils**. And to be '**perfectly**' clear, I mean I'm expecting that these will be just some of the **lies** about why most of 'us' are not, in the not too distant future, **taken out of the way** along with The Spirit in **The Raptures of The Great Tribulation**. And I'm not just talking about those **taken** in The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, but also about all the both '**dead and living bodies**' that will be **taken** in the various other '**raptures**' throughout The Great Tribulation too.

And Dr. Velikovsky continues to do his share of exposing such '**liars and deceivers**', reporting that,

One part of the Darwinian theory of selection has been generally abandoned [but in some ways it still has major influence]: it is the idea of sexual selection as a factor in evolution. In natural selection the competition is for the means for existence. In sexual selection—a theory developed in *The Descent of Man* (1871)—the competition is among the males for acceptance by a female. Darwin thought to explain the origin of various secondary sexual characteristics, such as ornamentation and color of

feathers in birds, by saying that they were the results of gradual selection through many generations, of traits attractive in the eyes of the female. But it was shown that when the colorful wings of male butterflies were cut off and in their stead female wings, often without the characteristic coloring, were glued to the body of the male butterfly, the female did not object to the approach of the male. She failed to discriminate against male butterflies with no wings at all. Also it was observed that some male fish fertilize the fish eggs, having all the male coloring characteristics of such season, but without the female fish being present or aware of the act of fertilization. The theory of sexual selection to a certain degree had the same fate [at least in the scientific community] as the theory of gemmules. But the theory of natural selection would not yield its position unless a better explanation of the evolutionary mechanism could be given. [And do not hold your breath.]

And the “major influence” that Chuck Duh-wind’s Sexual Selection Theory “still has” is that some still ‘believe’ that women tend to be most attracted to ‘bad boys’, or to those more likely to give them more children, in order to ‘perpetuate the species’. Or as I explain it in [SECTION 3](#),

...a subset or derivative of *sexual selection* that has survived, and that is worth a ‘smile and a shake of the head’, is the Sexy Son Hypothesis of *evolutionary biology*. It was first proposed by [*neo-Darwinist, eugenicist, and opponent of Saltationism, including of Dr. Goldschmidt’s Hopeful Monster Theory*] Sir Dr. Ronald Fisher [FRS] in 1930. The *theory* proposes that “a *female* animal’s optimal choice among potential mates is one whose genes will produce male offspring with the best chance of reproductive success”. In particular, this implies that a potential *mate’s* capacity as a “caregiver”—or any other direct benefits the *male* can offer the *female* (e.g. gifts, good territory, etc.)—are “irrelevant to his value as the potential father of the female’s offspring”, and what instead “matters” are her “sexy sons” and their “future breeding successes”—like that of their “promiscuous father”—in “creating large numbers of offspring carrying copies of the female’s genes”. And still today it is “female mating preferences” that “are widely recognized as being responsible for the rapid and divergent evolution of male secondary sexual traits”. And yeah, this is where the idea that *women* are attracted to ‘bad boys’ comes from too.

And yeah, this still popular ‘**misconception**’ (read, ‘**doctrine**’ of devils) ‘**naturally**’ followed from Mr. Duh-wind’s “generally abandoned” Theory of Sexual Selection. And it is arguably also the foundation of *modern psychology* beginning with Dr. Sigmund Freud. And this theory and its ‘derivatives’, however indirectly, evidently strongly influenced Dr. Velikovsky too, and apparently more profoundly than he was aware, as can be rather easily seen in his work, *Oedipus and Akhnaton*. But of course I’m talking about how the **lust of the flesh to sin**—including to commit **fornication** and **adultery**—is ‘theorized’ (read, ‘**perverted**’) to be just the result of a ‘healthy’ and ‘natural’ *sex drive*, and just one of the factors that helps ‘evolve’, as Dr. Velikovsky put it, “ever more perfected species”, and in this case by the supposedly ‘better odds’ accompanying “large numbers of offspring”. And so Mr. Duh-wind’s original focus on ‘species sexual selection’ has

become another one of the *devises* of *'our' adversary* which *deceiveth the whole world*.

And I mean like *every forged* ^{H2950} *lie* ^{H8267; H3577} of the Theory of Evolution—and it is nothing but *lies*—this “abandoned” *theory* is one that some still ‘believe’, or at times forget that they don’t believe it, uh-huh, when compartmentalizing. But remember that if there really is a primary reason why women tend to be attracted to ‘bad boys’, or why we would want to ‘abuse our sex drive’, it is best explained by [1 John 2:16](#), and other *'interconnecting scripture'*, and certainly not by anything else *in the world*. But of course this is also part of Satan’s new strategy—or ‘renewed strategy’, I should say—whereby he *deceiveth the whole world* not just to *worship* him, but also to become *'self worshippers'*.

But though seemingly mostly a ‘bulldog on the right track’, in the next section, *Mutation and New Species*, Dr. Velikovsky takes things another step in the wrong direction, that is, further out of touch with reality. Generally, he *'mis-imagined'* that there really are types of “rare accidents” that can ‘break through’ the ‘barriers’ God has established for *'immutable kinds'*, and which really can produce ‘new species’, that is, by *evolutionary mutations*. Hazarding into metaphors that portray ‘darkness’ as ‘light’, and ‘jumping to conclusions’ he had so far avoided, he ‘reasoned’,

The first ray of light came at the turn of the century, with [Professor] Hugo DeVries, a Dutch botanist [and, as mentioned in [SECTION 3](#), a leader of the so-called Mendelians—the *saltationists* opponents of Neo-Darwinism/Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory—who] observed spontaneous mutations in the evening primrose. The plant, without a recognizable cause, would show new characteristics unobserved in its ancestors. Although DeVries claimed that these mutations amount to what may be called “little species,” they have not caused the primrose to pass beyond the frontier of its species. However, it was demonstrated that variations within a species do appear in a spontaneous manner, and rather suddenly, and not, as Darwin thought, by minute progressions from generation to generation. Huxley was correct in urging Darwin not to adhere so dogmatically to his belief that nature does not make jumps—*natura non facit saltum* [Darwin, *Life and Letters*, Vol.II, p.27]. DeVries showed that variations are in the nature of jumps, and from this he developed the mutation theory of evolutions.

DeVries, while working on his theory, was as yet unaware of [Abbot] Gregor Mendel’s investigations in genetics, already published as a paper in 1865, only six years after *The Origin of Species*. Mendel’s work, unknown to Darwin and his followers in the nineteenth century, was rediscovered by DeVries and independently by E. Tschermak and by K. Correns in 1900, the same year that DeVries wrote down his theory of mutations. By carefully observing crossings between varieties of the garden pea and counting the strains through consecutive generations and the transmission of single traits, Mendel established the fundamental laws of genetics or inheritance of somatic [body] characteristics. The entire work on evolution since the beginning of this century is based on genetics and Mendel’s laws. Ironically, [or rather, Providentially] Mendel was an Augustine monk...

...and finally the Abbot of St Thomas's Abbey, which is Catholic, but this was some time after the start of The Protestant Reformation, when the Protestants—by the availability of The Word of God in common languages—were winning, and when apparently he became Friar Mendel mostly for the money to get an education, but was educated at a former Catholic, then relatively newly "reformed" Lutheran Protestant university...

...and [he] made his basic contribution at a time when the war between science and the Church [and to a lesser extent between Protestants and Catholics] was raging, following the publication of Darwin's main work. The spontaneous variation in mutants can be followed through as hereditary factors in successive generations of offspring. The genes in the germ plasma are the carriers of the traits, and a variation (mutation) in a gene would cause a variation (mutation) in the offspring. But, generally, only single variations appear at a time; they may lead to new races, not to new species [grrrr-owl].

Spontaneous mutations are far too few and insufficient in magnitude to bring about the appearance of new species and to explain how the world of animals came into existence. Despite all spontaneous variations no new species of mammals are known to have been created since the close of the Ice Age. In 1907, V. L. Kellogg [Professor of Entomology, (*insects* and **their** supposed *evolution*),] of Stanford University came to the following conclusion:

"The fair truth is that the Darwinian selection theories, considered with regard to their claimed capacity to be an independently sufficient mechanical explanation of descent, stand today seriously discredited in the biological world. On the other hand, it is also fair truth to say that no replacing hypothesis or theory of species forming has been offered by the opponents of selection which has met with any general or even considerable acceptance by naturalists [- and don't start holding your breath now either]. Mutations seem to be too few and far between; for orthogenesis [- that still mostly unpopular competing *theory* with Darwinism, now also called *orthoselection* or the Gaia Principle, etc., which supposes that "transmutation" is 'somehow' and/or by 'Someone' independently "predetermined"-] we can discover no satisfactory mechanism; and the same is true for the Lamarckian theories of modification by the cumulation, through inheritance, of acquired or ontogenic ['developing'] characters [V. L. Kellogg, *Darwinism Today*, 1907, P.5]."

Kellogg also observed that one group of scientist "denies in toto [or 'fully rejects'] any effectiveness or capacity for species forming on the part of natural selection, while the other group, a larger [one]... sees in natural selection an evolutionary factor capable of initiating nothing, dependent wholly for any effectiveness on some primary factor of factors controlling the origin and direction of variation, but capable of extinguishing all unadapted, unfit line[s] of development... For my part," Kellogg concluded, "it seems better to go back to the old and safe Ignoramus standpoint." Thus the entire problem was shunted back to the place it occupied before *The Origin of Species*.

Evolution is the principle. Darwin's contribution to the principle is natural selection as the mechanism of evolution. If natural selection, sharing the fate of sexual selection, is not the mechanism of the origin of species, Darwin's contribution is reduced to very little—only to the role of natural selection in weeding out the unfit.

[Dr.] H. Fairfield Osborn, [FRS, also from SECTION 3, the 25-year President of the American Museum of Natural History, and] a leading American evolutionist, wrote: "In contrast to the unity of opinion on the *law* of evolution is the wide diversity of opinion on the *causes* [or *mechanisms*] of evolution. In fact, the causes of the evolution of life are as mysterious as the law of evolution is certain." [Henry Fairfield Osborn, *The Origin and Evolution of Life*, 1917, p.ix.] And again: "It may be said that Darwin's law of selection as a natural explanation of the origin of all fitness in form and function has also lost its prestige at the present time, and all of Darwinism which now meets with universal acceptance is the law of the survival of the fittest, a limited application of Darwin's great idea as expressed by Herbert Spencer [p.xv]" [- meaning the only salvageable part of Darwin's theory, Survival of the Fittest, wasn't even his idea].

These were not the opinions of single evolutionists, but generally held views. [Cambridge Professor] William Bateson [FRS, also in SECTION 3], a leading English evolutionist [though a *saltationist*], in his address before the American Association for the Advancement of Science in 1921, said:

"When students of other sciences ask us what is now currently believed about the origin of species we have no clear answer to give. Faith has given place to agnosticism... Variation of many kinds, often considerable, we daily witness, but no origin of species... I have put before you very frankly the considerations which have made us agnostic as to the actual mode and processes of evolution. [William Bateson, *Evolutionary Faith and Modern Doubts*, *Science*, Vol. LV, p.55.]"

But good luck finding a copy of that, as well as with 'holding your breath' for a "clear answer".

Louis Trenchard More, Professor of Physics, University of Cincinnati is quoted next. And he's another whose life and work is fairly well 'scrubbed' from the internet—though I finally found his lectures in book form, entitled, *The Dogma of Evolution*, 1925, available free at Internet Archive:

<https://archive.org/stream/dogmaofevolution00more#page/n0/mode/2up>.

L. T. More, in a series of guest lectures delivered at Princeton University, asked:

"...if natural selection is a force which can destroy but cannot create species and if the reasons for this destruction are unknown, of what value is the theory to mankind? ...The collapse of the theory of natural selection leaves the philosophy of mechanistic materialism [read, 'evolution without Special Creation by God'] in a sorry plight [p.240, and of course this needs 'scrubbing' too, doesn't it]."

On DeVries's theory of evolution by mutation More said: "The idea is destructive to scientific theory, as it really does away with the whole idea

of continuity which should be the basis of an evolution theory... The thought at once occurs that each of the surprising breaks in the paleontological record [or in the 'transitions' in the *layers of sedimentary rock*], such an one as separates the reptiles from the feathered bird, may have been taken at a single ['monstrous'] leap during an overstimulated [or catastrophic] period of nature [p.214, and by-the-way, I checked - the quotes are there]."

And Professor More is so hostile to Professor DeVries' *theory*—calling it "destructive to scientific theory"—because it's really just a step away from totally eliminating "continuity", that is, it's a step too close to acknowledging that '**God created all living things suddenly**', and that is, '**all during Creation Week**'.

But here's where Dr. Velikovsky really started 'barking up the wrong tree', in this case '**mis-identifying**' the 'spontaneous powers' of certain 'agents of overstimulation'. Or more generally, he '**mis-imagined**' how the supposedly 'natural' *mechanism* of *saltation* operates, '**mistaking**' it as having 'creative power', and '**misunderstanding**' it as the 'ultimate truth'. 'Crawling past the breaking point', and that is, 'too far out on this limb', Dr. Velikovsky 'declared',

DeVries made observations of spontaneous mutations in plants; a decade later [Johns Hopkins University Dr.] T. H. [Thomas Hunt] Morgan [- that Nobel Prize winning 'turncoat' from the Mendelian/Mutation Theory *saltationists* over to the Neo-Darwinian/Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory *uniformitarianists*, also identified in **SECTION 3** -] found spontaneous mutations in *Drosophila melanogaster*, the vinegar fly [or *fruit fly*], including various colorings of the eyes and various lengths of wings, and many other changes in progeny not present in any of the ancestors. H. J. Muller [- that Columbia graduate that *atheist* Julian Huxley—grandchild of 'Mr. Huckster'—recruited to be his 'lab-rat' protégé at Rice University, again from **SECTION 3** -] by subjecting the vinegar fly [or *fruit fly*] to the action of x-rays, increased the frequency of mutations one hundred and fifty times. It was also found that some chemicals and temperatures close to the limits that the insect organism can endure may act as mutation-provoking agents.

Muller [- about whom information - and especially '**propaganda**' - is easily found -] concluded that spontaneous mutations are "usually due to an accidental individual molecular or submolecular [*atomic* and/or *subatomic*] collision, occurring in the course of thermal agitation [*heat*]," and this is indicated "by the amount of rise in the frequency of mutations that is observed when the temperature is raised, so long as temperatures normal to the organism are not transgressed. Since chemical changes similar to but more extreme than those of thermal agitation may also be produced by x-rays and other high-energy radiation and ultra-violet, it is not surprising that mutations like the so-called 'spontaneous' ones can be induced in great abundance by these means, and that the number of these mutations is, in general, proportional to the number of physical 'hits' caused by the radiation." [Muller, "*The Works of the Genes*", in H. J. Muller, C. O. Little, and L. H. Snyder, *Genetics, Medicine and Man*, 1947, p.27.]

The origin of mutations in the evening primrose, observed by DeVries, like every other spontaneous mutation, must be ascribed to one of those

irritants acting directly on the genes. It could have been the result of hits by cosmic rays; only it must be shown why the evening primrose is more susceptible to such an agent than most other plants.

But remember *radiation* is just some number of various kinds and sizes, and in some cases, as with *alpha particles*, configurations, of *subatomic particles* that can randomly 'hit' and 'break' *gene molecules* in exposed *organisms—animal or plant—* and thereby, if the *organism* survives such an 'onslaught', cause 'mutations' of unlimited variety, except not possibly *mutations*, no matter how many *collisions* occur, that result in a 'new' *reproducing species* that is incapable of *reproducing* with its *parent species*. **Right?** Well, Dr. Velikovsky was 'underinformed' (read, **deceived**) enough, and evidently preferred to 'believe' that—given enough, and not too much *heat* and/or *radiation* 'damage'—*evolutionary mutation*—that is, 'species-changing' *mutation*—could happen, whereby the "progeny" could become *infertile* with their 'parent' *species*, while remaining able to reproduce with their new 'brothers and sisters', and that is, with just the right number of 'random', 'accidental', and 'hopeful' *atomic* and/or *subatomic collisions* occurring, and/or with enough *molecular bonds* being 'reconfigured' by *heat*, and/or with the right *chemical reactions* occurring, to 'beneficially reconfigure' *gene molecules*, though really it should only be able to—at best—"harmfully deconfigure" them. And maybe you can now **see** that it would be so much easier to enlist a blind man to throw pebbles from a distance in order to 'better reconfigure' numerous dominoes that are elaborately-staged to fall in succession, and that is, without instead setting off all or part of the prepared 'chain reaction', and just knocking all or some of them down, huh.

But since Dr. Velikovsky apparently was, at least at the time of this writing, ignorant of the mindboggling complexity of *gene molecules*, and probably no 'master of the domino effect' either, he 'rationalized' further that,

The practical absence of x-rays in surrounding nature caused this powerful agent of mutations in laboratories to be regarded as not operative in spontaneous mutations and therefore also not in the process of evolution. Muller stressed this point. However, an x-ray component is present in radium radiation. At the beginning of the present century it was noticed that tadpoles or embryonic frogs in the presence of a tube containing radium give rise to various freaks [R. H. Bradbury, "*Radium and Radioactivity in General*", *Journal of the Franklin Institute*, 1905, Vol. CLIX, No. 3]. Radioactivity and cosmic radiation are agents present in nature, one of terrestrial, the other of extraterrestrial, origin[s].

If, as the experiments with the vinegar fly [or *fruit fly*] demonstrated, a mutation of some gene [by 'random hits' and 'deconfigurations' of one or more of its *gene molecules*] can produce a wingless fly, many mutations simultaneously or in quick succession would be quite able to transform an animal or plant into a new species. In the bomb craters of London new plants, not previously known on the British Isles, and previously not known anywhere, were seen to sprout. "Rare plants, unknown to modern British botany, were discovered in the bomb craters and ruins of London in 1943." [*Botany*", *Britannica Book of the Year*, 1944, p.117.] It appears that the thermal action of bomb explosions was the cause of multiple metamorphoses in the genes of seeds and pollens. If this is so, then the

statement made earlier that no new species has been observed in the process of making its first appearance must be retracted.

However it is also true that ‘new’ and ‘formerly-thought’ *extinct species* are found almost daily. And besides, this “statement” doesn’t really need to be “retracted”, because “the cause”—the ‘excavation and heating’ of *dormant seeds* by “explosions”—naturally resulted in something like the ‘excavated’ *hibernating toads, snakes, lizards, worms and insects* reported in SECTION 4, except in this case these *seeds* may have also experienced “thermal agitation”, and possibly were ‘gene-molecule-deconfigured’ *mutations* too, though necessarily still ‘**kind-restricted**’ ones, and whether or not previously seen in any ‘unmutated variations’ since The Flood.

But yes, Dr. Velikovsky wanted to believe that these ‘bomb-crater plants’ were ‘mutated’ by “explosions” and “thermal action” into ‘new species’. **But God**, with all we’ve **learned** from **‘the testimony of his word’** so far, assures us that this could not be what happened.

And Dr. Velikovsky seems to have wanted it both ways, since he quoted ‘Mr. Duh-wind’ as saying,

When we descend to details, we cannot prove that a single species has changed; nor can we prove that the supposed changes are beneficial...

And further Dr. Velikovsky himself concluded,

...it was generally understood that chance variations, in the vast majority of cases, must be in the nature of defects: in a complicated and balanced organism a chance variation would probably be a hindrance, not a benefit.

So before we go on with Dr. Velikovsky’s conclusions about what he thought was the “ultimate truth” concerning the *mechanism* for ‘the evolution of life’, we need to remind ourselves of evidence Dr. Velikovsky was not aware of, at least at the time of the writing of *Earth In Upheaval*, which we covered in SECTION 3. For convenience, I will simply reprint it here:

Other evolutionary ‘mumbo jumbo’ still popularly believed concerning *genetics* is seen in the example of *chromosomal aberrations* in *Drosophila*; otherwise known as *birth defects* in the common *fruit fly* [or *vinegar fly*]. *Evolutionists* would use *radiation* and *chemicals* to create *birth defects* in the offspring of *fruit flies*. And since the lifespan of these *fruit flies* was measured in hours, many generations could be examined to supposedly show that *genetic mutations*, though entirely useless and otherwise mostly clearly detrimental, were nonetheless proof that *evolution* took place.

For example, *evolutionist* and *geneticist* Dr. Ed Lewis famously showed that three strains of laboratory-bred, *mutant fruit flies* could be further *interbred* to produce *four-winged flies*. However they never tell you [nor told Dr. Velikovsky] that in all cases the ‘balancers’ required for flight stability in the third *thoracic* (body) segment were replaced by two new *wings*, rendering these *wings* useless. And textbooks today, though occasionally acknowledging that *mutations* are normally ‘bad’ or

'harmful', regularly claim (read **lie**) that that they could be occasionally 'good' or 'useful', and that such *mutations* would facilitate the increasing complexity of *species* by *natural selection* [or by whatever other *evolutionary mechanism*]. What the textbooks don't tell you is that there is still no example of a new species arising by such mutation, nor of any mutation that is not useless and/or harmful. [And bombs excavating holes in the ground, that *heat* and expose 'flood-buried', *dormant seeds*, that then *sprout*, and whether *mutated* by the *heat* or not, do not prove a 'new species' has *evolved*.] And this should not be confused with *genetic variation* within *species* which our Australian brother, Mr. Williams, has already explained is miraculously built into our *cells*. I mean you have to understand that neither the 'good mutations' that *evolutionists* say happen, which are expected to create new and more *evolved species*, nor the amazing God-designed capability of *genetic variation*, which each *species* (read **kind**) uses in *reproduction*, will, according to God, ever result in a *new species* that is capable of *reproducing* itself.

And there's more deception involved with this *four-winged fruit fly* in textbooks. Any acknowledgement of a problem with the *wings* is most likely vaguely referred to as *flight instability*, when really it results in complete inability to fly altogether. This is because there are no *muscles* attached to this extra set of *wings*, making these new creatures completely *non-aerodynamic*—they absolutely cannot fly. So they could not survive nor mate in purely natural conditions. It may be a 'new structure', but it comes with no functionality. God is a tough act to follow, creating unlimited *variations* of ideal *structure* and *functionality* together, but limited to the boundaries He has established for each **kind**.

But to get a little closer to seeing **his thoughts**, and **his ways**—a neverending journey remember?—it is now known that the particular *gene* involved with the *four-winged mutation* in *fruit flies* is appropriately called *ultrabithorax*. It is a huge and very complex *gene* which is composed of several "subunits", most of which are involved in regulating when and where the gene is 'turned on' in the *embryo*. This *gene* regulates an integrated network of *genes* responsible for 'flight-balancing' development. And it is this entire hierarchy of *genes*, and not just the one, that had to 'evolve' in order to be a 'good mutation'. This is a simple example why 'good mutations' are statistically impossible—as God has otherwise already made clear. Indeed the odds of a single, 'good', new gene arising by chance *mutations* [even with a "great abundance" of *gene molecule* physical 'hits' caused by...radiation", etc.] is statistically 'zero', and is even more unlikely than accidentally forming a *protein biopolymer*, but both occurrences are unimaginably far less likely than a completely structurally integrated and functional network of *genes* ever 'forming' by 'mutation' [that is, by any form of 'natural subatomic agitation']. And when I say ever, I mean if the Universe were many, many times older than it is presently misrepresented to be, it would not begin to be long enough to realistically improve the odds.

And **deceiving, wicked, evil** *evolutionists* know this [and didn't Dr.

Velikovsky at least eventually come to know this?), whether they are enforcing this **oppression** on us and against God, or whether they are **oppressed** to do so. And Lord have mercy on the **ignorant** and/or **deceived**. I mean for decades these tortured *fruit flies* have remained in textbooks as proof of *evolution*, really only proving that they still have no real evidence to support the *theory*.

By-the-way, such *experiments* were tried on other *organisms* that *reproduce* quickly, and a couple of German scientist oversaw an incredible number of lifecycles with genetic mutations—attempting to find 'that one good mutation'. But like the elusive 'missing link' *fossils*, they never confirmed a single one, though they did win a Nobel Prize for trying, which they were nice enough to share with Dr. Lewis.

Nevertheless and unfortunately, as far as I know Dr. Velikovsky never recanted—or qualified—his offering of the following '**misperception**' of Ovid, the Roman poet and 'modernizer' of Greek and Roman mythology, he being more 'self-idolater' than a 'planet-god worshipper', who was exiled by Caesar Augustus, and who died when Jesus was a teenager, and wrote,

When, therefore, the earth, covered with mud [or *sediments*] from the recent [Noahic] flood, became heated up by the hot and genial rays of the sun, she brought forth innumerable forms of life, in part of ancient shapes, and in part creatures new and strange
—Ovid, *Metamorphoses* (trans.

F. J. Miller)

This quote of Ovid, which begins the next section, *Cataclysmic Evolution*, was Dr. Velikovsky's attempt at offering a picture of what he saw as the "ultimate truth". Read it and weep.

An enormous expansion of radioactivity in bygone ages was postulated by various theorists as an explanation of great oscillations in climate in the past; the thermal effect of widespread radioactivity is likewise claimed as a motive force by the author of the modern version of the theory of drifting continents (Du Toit). It appears to me that if such radioactivity really occurred its mutation effect could not have failed to take place too.

And by-the-way, Prof. Alexander Logie du Toit was an early 20th Century *geologist* from South Africa who graduated from the Royal Technical College in Glasgow, and later studied at the Royal College of Science in London, and who began his career 'geologically mapping' Southern Africa for a geological commission for almost 2 decades, and after that was a "water geologist" for a water utility the better part of another, and who finally retired from his career having been the "chief consulting scientist" for De Beers Consolidated Mines, (yeah, the diamond miners/retailers), for yet another decade and a half. His "best-known publication", *Our Wandering Continents*, 1937, "expanded and improved" his original work on this subject, his first effort being the result of a grant he received from the Carnegie Institution of Washington, and one which "supported [German *polar researcher, geophysicist and meteorologist, Dr.] Alfred Wegener's ideas*" on the Theory of Continental Drift. But in *Our Wandering Continents* Prof. Du Toit 'drifted apart' somewhat from Dr.

Wegener, (including that he “proposed two original supercontinents separated by the Tethys Ocean”), and Mr. Du Toit’s later publication is still considered “soberingly consistent with modern principles of plate tectonics”.

But it is noteworthy that Dr. Wegener had some support too—apparently from *catastrophists*—and even though his *theory* was somewhat misunderstood and/or misrepresented. But of course and generally, his “hypothesis was initially met with skepticism from geologists who viewed Wegener as an outsider [read, a *catastrophist*], and were resistant to change” of their *uniformitarian* views, not to mention that Dr. Wegener’s “hypothesis” seemed to substantiate Moses’ account of Peleg’s experience of the *continents* being **divided**.

And in fact, my encyclopedia also informs me that,

In 1943 George Gaylord Simpson [remember him? - “the “most influential paleontologist of the twentieth century”, and “a major participant” in Modern Evolutionary Synthesis Theory, including being the author of *Tempo and Mode in Evolution*, 1944 -] wrote a vehement attack on the theory (as well as the rival theory of sunken land bridges) [- uh huh, likely including more “wrath” and “sanctimonious scolds” than anything else -] and put forward his own permanentist [read, *uniformitarianist*] views. Alexander du Toit wrote a rejoinder [read, a ‘mild rebuttal’] in the following year [which was a few years after he had retired from De Beers].

And yes, I mean there was evidently quite a ‘catastrophists v. uniformitarianists battle’ over this ‘drifting theory’ too, though it likely also remained mostly outside the scrutiny of the general public, until, like with Ice Age Theory, it could finally be ‘toned down’ to ‘uniformitarian parameters’, and sufficiently ‘stretched out’, timewise, compared to any Biblical account.

And Dr. Velikovsky, something like ‘harmful radiation bombardment’, ‘blasts on’, that is, further **‘leavening the lump’**, or that is, **‘connecting truth with lies’**, and in this case, **‘connecting reality with fantasy’**, espousing that,

Cosmic rays or charges, hitting nitrogen atoms in the atmosphere, transform this element into radiocarbon [*radioactive carbon*]. These charges, arriving from outside the earth, are very strong per particle, averaging several billions of electron volts and sometimes carrying a potential of a hundred billion electron volts. As comparatively few such rays of charges hit our atmosphere, their general effect is not spectacular. But it is conceivable that, where a cosmic ray or charge hits a gene of germ plasma [or the *DNA* in *sperm* or *egg cells*], a biological mutation takes place, comparable to the physical transmutation of the elements [- like when *nitrogen* is converted to *radioactive carbon*]. After all, the genes, like any proteins, are biochemical compounds composed of carbon, nitrogen, and a few other elements. Should a somatic chromosome [or the *DNA* in *cells* of the *body*] be hit by a powerful charge, it might at worst cause disorganized growth and be the origin of a neoplasma [*tumor*]; but if the genes of the germ plasma [last time: the *DNA* in *sperm* or *egg cells*] should be the target of a collision with a cosmic ray or secondary [*terrestrial*] radiation, a mutation in the progeny might ensue; and should many such hits occur, the origin of a new species, most probably incapable of individual or genetic life, but in some cases [or “rare accidents”] capable [of both *living* and *reproduction*], could be expected. [Or] Should an

interplanetary discharge take place between the earth and another celestial body, such as a planet, a planetoid, a trail of meteorites, or a charged cloud of gases, with possibly billions of volts of potential difference [a 'big EMP'] and nuclear fission or fusion [a 'big explosion'], the effect would be similar to that of an explosion of many hydrogen bombs with ensuing procreation of monstrosities and growth anomalies on a large scale.

Of course Dr. Velikovsky is '**mis-imagining** that more "hits" on *reproductive DNA* caused by "interplanetary discharge" and/or "nuclear fission or fusion" level *explosions*, etc., lead to "rare accidents" that make "ever more perfected species" more likely, and that such 'excessive bombardment' somehow overcomes the problem that he brought to our attention—which he seems to be compartmentalizing here—that it should instead only increasingly threaten possible survival to the point of the *extinction*, at least of the more vulnerable *species*. And I mean 'EMP barrages' by '**visiting**' *magnetic planets*, and/or "nuclear fission or fusion" level *explosions* caused by *meteor strikes*, etc., should only increase the number of casualties of *organisms*, and certainly produce nothing in the way of "ever more perfected species" or 'higher-evolved forms' of "genetic life", that is, no more than you should expect that 'an army carrying only shotguns' could somehow eventually be able to use them to 'upgrade your computer'.

But though Dr. Velikovsky acknowledged that such 'bombardment' should predominantly result in "the origin of...new species" that are "most probably incapable of individual or genetic life", that is, "incapable" of *living* or *reproduction*, his '**misplaced faith**' in "rare accidents" is not shaken, because in the following paragraph, (*efac* in the 2nd sentence minor), he somewhat again hypocritically concluded,

What matters is that the principle that *can* cause the origin of species exists in nature. The irony lies in the circumstances that Darwin saw catastrophism as the chief adversary of his theory of the origin of species, being led by the conviction that new species could evolve as a result of competition with accidental characteristics serving as weapons only if almost limitless time were at the disposal of that competition, with no catastrophes intervening. Now exactly the opposite is true: competition cannot cause new species to evolve. Mutations in single traits and the resulting new varieties within a species are caused by radiation hitting some gene, as did the x-rays in the experiments on the vinegar [or *fruit*] fly; it is a hit, or a collision or a miniature catastrophe. In order for a simultaneous mutation of many characteristics to occur, with a new species as a resultant [or a supposed 'possible result'], a radiation shower of terrestrial or extraterrestrial origin must take place. Therefore we are led to the belief that evolution is a process initiated in catastrophes. Numerous catastrophes of bursts of effective radiation must have taken place in the geological past in order to change so radically the living forms on earth, as the record of fossils embedded in lava and sediment bears witness.

But **remember** that *fossils* were predominantly formed by the **work** of Mercury, and to a lesser and shallower extent by Venus, and Dr. Velikovsky himself acknowledges that only very few *fossils* are any longer being formed since Venus

came by, as it takes ‘big catastrophes’—bigger ones than The 2nd Visit of Mercury and any that The Visits of Mars caused—to form a lot of them. However remember that Dr. Velikovsky also thought that each *layer* was ‘laid’ separately, and each at the beginning of a ‘**ridiculously**’ long *geological age*, and that each of them was ‘laid’ something like the ‘shallower’ ones Venus left behind with all ‘her’ ‘**pushing and sloshing of water**’, etc. However **we know** Mercury ‘laid’ most of them, separately, but all within 150 days.

So actually, the ‘radical changes’ in “living forms” can be generally simplified into just three phases, and that is, by comparing the *organisms* that are 1) ‘more shielded and enhanced’, and ‘not so long cursed’ before being ‘more deeply buried’ by Mercury, with 2) *organisms* that are ‘less shielded and enhanced’, and ‘longer cursed’ before being ‘more shallowly buried’ by Venus, and with 3) *organisms* that are ‘less shielded and enhanced’, ‘even longer cursed’, and that are still alive today. And let’s not compartmentalize about the present condition of our *DNA*. Remember that some *geneticists* ‘think’ that time for our *species*, because of our ‘ever-weakening genes’, is running out, and others really ‘believe’ that ‘space aliens’ are showing up to steal our *DNA*—as ‘weakened’ as it is—to ‘repair’ theirs.

And could there really be “effective radiation”, which, if you’ll pardon the pun, has to include being ‘effective’ in causing “rare accidents” that allow *species* to *evolve*? Not really, as it can only really cause *genetic defects*. And is Dr. Velikovsky’s perspective really “exactly the opposite” of Mr. Duh-wind’s? Not really, since Dr. Velikovsky, like Mr. Duh-wind, is also “led by the conviction” that there really are “rare accidents”, and though more ‘suddenly-occurring’, or that is, initiated by “Worlds in Collision” instead of ‘species in competition’, they nonetheless, just like Mr. Duh-wind’s “rare accidents”, also require—or just take—the same “almost limitless time” to eventually ‘successfully occur’. However we may acknowledge Dr. Velikovsky’s help here too, and I mean that his conclusions are to some extent “true”, that is, there really were “numerous catastrophes” causing ‘excessive molecular, atomic and/or subatomic agitation’ by *electrical discharge*, etc., that really did, at the *subatomic level*, permanently “change so radically the living forms on earth”, but only “change” within the limits of each *kind* that is **created** Creation Week, and only, because of God’s **work** through **the curse**, for the worse.

And still, Dr. Velikovsky’s “understanding” is to some extent ‘right’, and ‘helpful’, in other ways, as he demonstrates in the following ‘comparisons’ of his perspective with Mr. Duh-wind’s:

How would this understanding of evolution meet the facts, and especially those facts that always appeared to be in discord with the theory of natural selection?

The fact that some organisms, like foraminifera, [which are *amoebas*, *unicellular organisms*, “the majority of which live on or within the seafloor sediment”, and therefore are greatly *shielded* from all forms of *radiation*,] survived all geological ages without participating in evolution, a point of perplexity in the theory of natural selection, would be explained by catastrophic evolution in which many species would be destroyed [especially the ones with the most ‘direct’ and ‘excessive’ *exposure* to *radiation* and/or *heat*], others would be subjected to multiple mutations [being exposed to ‘extreme’ but not ‘excessive’ *radiation* and/or *heat*], and some specimens of species would escape

mutations and procreate their old form [- especially ones that live or have refuge *underground* or *underwater*].

The fact that the geological record shows a sudden emergence of many new forms at the beginning of each geological age does not require the artificial explanation that the records are always defective; the geological records truly reflect the changes in the animal and plant worlds from one period of geological time to the next. Many of the new species evolved in the wake of a global catastrophe, at the beginning of a new age, [and their progeny] were entombed in a subsequent paroxysm of nature at the end of that age.

Again no, the species “entombed” in the “geological record” instead “reflect” the individual ‘elevation of habitat’ and *hydrodynamics* of the *species* ‘recorded’ therein, and, like with the *sediments* themselves, other reasons why each generally *sank* and *settled* when and where they did. And the “sudden” and ‘radical changes’ that really did take place were not really seen ‘layer by layer’ in *fossils*, but really more in the *expressed*, ‘**kind-restricted**’ *variations* following each actual “paroxysm of nature”, that is, as, and as ‘Miss-sure’ Lamarck might have put it, different *genes* were *expressed* because of ‘catastrophically changed’ *environments*, with this to some extent including *mutation* by ‘subatomic agitation’ of *reproductive DNA* too. And I must be clear here, finding it ‘personally unavoidable’ to again clarify, that each *sedimentary layer* is not “a new age”, but all of them together are a record of the single cataclysm that took place because Mercury brought the *water canopy* down. However it is a record that is ‘altered’ and/or ‘added to’ by the later **works** of Venus and Mars, which were further used by God to **judge the earth**.

But at least Dr. Velikovsky admits that there is no such thing as “intermediary links”, also known as “missing links”, when he otherwise erroneously concluded,

The fact that in many [- really all -] cases the intermediary links between present-day species are missing, as well as those between various species are missing, as well as those between various species of the geological record, a vexing problem, is understandable in the light of sudden and multiple variations that gave rise to new species.

But no, the absence of “missing links” is not “understandable” because of the “catastrophic” and “sudden” so-called “rise” of “new species”. It’s “understandable” because God created all **kinds** during Creation Week, and drowned and buried them all in The Flood—except what was in the Ark, and what survived in **the waters**—and because He **created** them with the ‘**fearfully-and-wonderfully-made**’, God-given ability and limitation for *variation only* within **their** own **kind**, where such ‘**kind-restricted**’ *forms* of “genetic life” are absolutely immutable, and that is, outside ‘**abominable sorcery**’, but certainly whenever tested by ‘catastrophic agents’ of the *environment*, including incidents of *extreme radiation*, whatever the form. And the real and only *mechanism* or ‘**agent of radical kind-variation**’—there being none for ‘species evolution’—is just God’s ‘**abracadabra**’ **curse**, including its ‘**effective, ever-worsening corruption of all things**’, along with the ‘**curse-initiated**’ various ‘**natural**’ **great judgments**, including the ‘extreme subatomic agitation’ of *reproductive DNA*, which evidently really is the most significant contributor to ‘ever-increasing-and-worsening genetic defects’ by *mutations*. However **remember** that God’s **great judgments**—

because they are His—also to some extent ‘re-energize’ us too, and there will be a significant ‘reprieve’ from this **‘present rate of corruption’** in The Millennium. And **at the end of the world** all **corruption** will **‘disappear’**, and only **incorruption** and **immortality** will remain, **forever and ever**, well, at least above ground. And of course then below ground any ‘shielding’ or ‘enhancements’ will no longer be of any benefit.

And Dr. Velikovsky erroneously concluded further that,

It was objected that if a new characteristic appeared in only a single animal, as the theory of natural selection claims, or even in a few animals of the same species, it would disappear in succeeding generations through interbreeding unless the new animal had been protected by isolation on secluded islands. However, in catastrophic evolution, the simultaneous mutation of many genes could [- if you “could” ever ‘upgrade a computer with shotguns’ -] produce a new species at the first fertilization; all the offspring of a litter could be affected similarly. And it is not inconceivable [an unintentional pun?] that in more than one creature of the same species, under similar circumstances of radiation, similar changes in the genes would occur; so in the x-ray experiments on *Drosophila*, similar mutations occurred in more than one fly.

But again, no possibly ‘beneficial’, ‘kind-evolving’ *mutations* “would occur” when *genes* are ‘bombarded’ by *radiation*—no more than computer hardware could be improved by being ‘fired upon by shotguns’—because computers are much too complicated, and far above them, **kinds** are much too **‘fearfully and wonderfully made’** to be able to be ‘better rewired’ by ‘random bombardment’ and ‘accidental hits’. And the fact that scientists ‘modify’ *organisms* ‘in the lab’ by ‘unnatural’ means can really only further **prove** that this can never be accomplished by ‘random accidents’, and such **sorcery** does not **prove** that any ‘good modifications’ are ever produced. I mean how can **‘defiance’** of God’s **word**—whether **ignorantly** or not—that **every living thing** can only **reproduce after their kinds** ever lead to anything good?

However Dr. Velikovsky does admit there still remains some mystery to be sorted out, saying,

The objection to the theory of natural selection, that the developed plan in a new species must appear suddenly or the race would expire—as in the case of the kangaroo pockets—is answerable within the framework of catastrophic evolution; however, the purposefulness of animal structures will remain a problem deserving of as much wonder as, for instance, the purposeful behavior of leucocytes in the blood that rush to combat a noxious intruder.

And “wonder” is the **‘right word’**. And this may be another example that reveals that he believes in God much more than he generally lets on. And he ‘hits’ more than ‘misses’ by arguing that,

The fact stressed by [Prof., Dr.] Agassiz that numerous earlier species of fish showed a more highly developed organism [being generally ‘double-shielded’ from *cosmic radiation* by *water*, and ‘more enhanced’ by the *hyperbaric atmosphere* of the Pre-Flood World, including higher O₂ and CO₂ concentrations] when

compared with later species of fish [being generally only ‘single-shielded’ from *cosmic radiation*, and ‘less barometrically-enhanced’] can be explained by the destruction of earlier forms, not in the process of competition, but in upheavals against which superior structure is no defense [which is all “true” enough].

The observation that healthy species of animals, like mammoths, with no sign of degeneration suddenly became extinct greatly troubled the evolutionists. This fact is unexplainable by natural selection or the principle of competition; not so by the catastrophic intervention of nature. [Uh-huh.]

The fact that at several stages of the past many animals of various species and many species in toto were rather suddenly exterminated, in conflict with the idea of slow extinction in natural selection, conforms with the theory of cataclysmic evolution [- also “true” enough].

The enigmatic [or mysterious] observation that the larger animals were particularly subject to extinction—the giant mammals that succumbed at the end of the Tertiary [read, after *The Visits of Venus*, because ‘she’ is the one that did most of the “tertiary movement”, that is, “mountain building”), and again in the Pleistocene [though ‘she’ made most the *ice* then too], as earlier the dinosaurs did [and in this case read, after *The Visits of Mercury*, since “dinosaurs”, like Agassiz’s “more highly developed” *fish*, thrived in their “more highly developed” forms in The Pre-Flood Age too]—is comprehensible if one thinks of the better chances smaller animals have of finding refuge from the ravages of nature [and of finding enough food, which again, is “true” enough].

Natural selection had its role, too, but not in procreating new species; it was a decisive factor in the survival or dying out of new forms, in the struggle for existence, not only between individuals, races, species, and orders, but also against the elements. In natural selection all those forms were weeded out that could not meet competition or the rapidly changing conditions of a world in upheaval [which, to a considerable extent, is “true” too].

[But getting back to ‘fantasyland’...] The origin of new species from old could be caused by processes that can be duplicated in laboratories—by excessive radiation or some other irritant in abnormal doses, thermal or chemical, all of which must have taken part in natural catastrophes of the past, and could have played a role in building new species, as the case of new plants in the bomb craters appear to indicate [- if you compartmentalize enough, that is].

And of course he’s not talking about the ‘extremely complicated’ and ‘creative modifications’ involved in producing GMO’s, but, however unwittingly, about the kind of ‘labwork’ that would be comparable to ‘random acts of violence against computers with shotguns’, because really only with sufficient ignorance and/or compartmentalization of many details is this ‘believable’ as anything but **‘kind-restricted’ mutation**, and even in a ‘laboratory’ of the “scale” of one of the **great judgments** of God. But Dr. Velikovsky nevertheless somewhat rightly concludes,

The theory of evolution is vindicated by catastrophic events in the earth’s past; the proclaimed enemy of this theory proved to be its only

ally. The real enemy of the theory of evolution[- besides its most formidable “enemy”, Special Creation -] is the teaching of uniformity, or the non-occurrence of any extraordinary events in the past. This teaching, called by Darwin the mainstay of the theory of evolution, almost[or has] set the theory apart from reality.

And though arguably ‘a step in the **right** direction’, Catastrophism is much like Uniformitarianism in that it also “almost [or has] set the theory [of ‘the origin of life’] apart from reality”, because it too is a “teaching” that is unrealistically limited, and that is, limited to just natural “extraordinary events, and the non-occurrence of any extraordinary events” that are otherwise ‘**supernatural**’ or ‘**abracadabra-style**’ ones. And it too may be rescued by “its only ally”, that is, Special Creation, and that is, by the **understanding** that there have been ‘occurrences’ of far more “extraordinary events in the past” than Catastrophism alone could ever account for. Surely the **fearfully and wonderfully made** complexity of *life*, even in the supposed *simplest forms*, makes this “reality” undeniable, and makes any “enemy” of such **precepts** vastly far “apart from reality”.

But Dr. Velikovsky’s perspective of Catastrophism is not entirely ‘**mis-imagined**’, because it’s certainly a realistic perspective that,

Great catastrophes of the past accompanied by electrical discharges and followed by radioactivity could have produced sudden and multiple mutations of the kind achieved today by experimenters, but on an immense scale. The past of mankind, and of the animal and plant kingdoms, too, must now be viewed in the light of the experiences of Hiroshima and no longer from the portholes of the *Beagle*.

The *Beagle*, as you may remember, is the ship on which Chuck Duh-wind sailed around the Earth as a young ‘naturalist’, and uh-huh, in his case for ‘naturalist’ you can double the meaning to include, ‘people who **walk after the flesh**’, if you want.

And yes, ‘large scale’ *mutations* must have occurred following God’s **great judgments** of the past, however, all such surviving *mutations* could only have been entirely ‘**kind-restricted**’ *mutations*, almost entirely harmful and/or functionless, and otherwise certainly not ‘evolution’, that is, certainly not resulting in ‘new’, ‘evolved’, ‘higher-developed’, *reproducing species*, who could no longer *reproduce* with their *parent species*. And of course with the *water canopy* down, and **the curse** continuing to ‘do its damage’, sure *species* ‘changed’, but mostly by ‘shrinking’, and always ‘for the worst’, because God told us He did all His ‘**creative work**’ Creation Week, about 6,000 years ago, and that not too long after that came **the curse**. And though Dr. Velikovsky may not yet, you should **see** that God is the only One who really could **do** such ‘**creative work**’. And again, I expect that what’s going on in *GMO labs* around the World right now is at best the work of ‘sorcerer’s apprentices’, who are more than anything else just **signs** of our Lord’s soon **coming**, and only hastening the unavoidable **end of the world**.

In the last chapter, Chapter XVI, entitled, *THE END*, Dr. Velikovsky helpfully concludes,

In the present book the testimony of stone and bone has been written down. We have listened to witnesses of various epochs, old and recent, of different latitudes, north and south, of various origins, from mountain peak and ocean bottom—skeletons, and ashes, and lava. Long before the

crowd of witnesses finished filing by, we know that we would not be able to evade the conclusion that global catastrophes have shaken this world of ours. I have not included here testimony of ancient literary sources of folklore. Shall I be confronted with the argument that, though the geological and archaeological records speak for catastrophic occurrences in the past, the absence of human testimony contradicts this interpretation of the geological record of recent date? And was not this testimony [in *Worlds In Collisions*] disputed because, first of all, of a presumed conflict with the findings of geology?

Although no references to historical inscriptions or to literary monuments of ancient times have been adduced here to show correspondence between the geological and historical records, no attentive reader, not even a cursory peruser of these pages, could have read them without associating their content with that of many chapters of *Worlds In Collision*, if he had read the other book too. Here [in both volumes] the story was told of hurricanes of global magnitude, of forests burning and swept away, of dust, stones, fire, and ashes falling from the sky, of mountains melting like wax, of lava flowing from riven [split apart] ground, of boiling seas, of bituminous rain, of shaking ground and destroyed cities, of humans seeking refuge in caverns and fissures of the rock in the mountains, of oceans upheaved and falling on the land, of tidal waves moving toward the poles and back, of land becoming sea by submersion and the expanse of sea turning into desert, islands born and others drowned, mountain ridges leveled and others rising, of crowds of rivers seeking new beds, of sources that disappeared and others that became bitter, of great destructions in the animal kingdom, of decimated mankind, of migrations, of heavy clouds of dust coving the face of the earth for decades [particularly following the time of The Exodus, and with everything else in this sentence so far mostly the **work** of Venus too], of magnetic disturbances, of changed climates, of displaced cardinal [compass and stellar] points and altered latitudes, of disrupted calendars, and of sundials and water clocks that point to changed length of day, month, and year, or a new polar star [- these being 'trespasses' that all our '**visitors**' participated in].

All this was presented in *Worlds in Collision* [which we'll see in **SECTION 9** and **10**] as having taken place in two series of events, the first [The Visits of Venus] in the fifteenth century before the present era, or thirty-four centuries ago, and the other [The Visits of Mars], of lesser intensity, in the eighth century and the beginning of the seventh, twenty-seven centuries ago. Events of a similar nature and on an even more grandiose scale took place also in earlier ages [being actually almost entirely the result of The 1st Visit of Mercury, and actually, by my present estimate, in the 23rd century BC or, adding the 'rounded' century since the time of Dr. Velikovsky's estimates, about 43 centuries ago]. The narration of some of these events, as far as human memory retained their recollection, is reserved for another volume, a sequel to *Worlds in Collision*.

Of course again, all the supposedly separate "events" of "earlier ages" of "more grandiose scale" than that of Venus and Mars—since 'they' left behind much deeper and distinguishably 'separate' *layers of sediment*—were actually near entirely the

result of The 1st Visit of Mercury.

And this “sequel”, and other ‘promised volumes’ were never formally published, though thankfully some otherwise finally were after Dr. Velikovsky’s death, and I mean in arguably incomplete forms, being edited only as appropriate by his assistant. And happily, included among them is the particular “unpublished manuscript” about the “human memory” of these supposedly “more grandiose” catastrophes of much “earlier ages”, and it is the main feature of the next section.

But next, see if you can distinguish the **work** of our various ‘**visitors**’ as Dr. Velikovsky further summarizes his conclusions from *Earth In Upheaval* as follows:

Whenever we investigate the geological and paleontological records of this earth we find signs of catastrophes and upheaval, old and recent [- though again, all are relatively “recent” really]. Mountains sprang from plains, and other mountains were leveled; strata of the terrestrial crust were folded and pressed together and overturned and moved and put on top of other formations; igneous rock [originally *lava*] melted and flooded enormous areas of land [or *magma* ‘infiltrated’ previous-laid *layers* of *sediments*] with miles-thick sheets; the ocean bed flowed [both on and within] with molten rock; ashes showered down and built layers many yards thick on the ground and on the bottom of the ocean in their expanse [including as *layers* were *settling* in The Flood]; shores of ancient lakes were tilted and are no longer horizontal; seacoasts show subsidence of emergence, [being elevated] in some places over one thousand feet; rocks of the earth are filled with remains of life extinguished in a state of agony; sedimentary rocks are one vast graveyard, and the granite and basalt, too, have embedded in them numberless living organisms; and shells have closed valves as they do in a living state, so unexpectedly came the entombment; and vast forests were burned and washed away and covered with the waters of the seas and with sand and turned to coal; and animals were swept to the far north and thrown into heaps and were soaked by bituminous outpourings; and broken bones and torn ligaments and the skins of animals of living species and extinct were smashed together with splintered forests into huge piles; and whales [as well as *hippos*, *pigs*, and *elephants*] were cast out of the oceans [or “cast” by *tidal waves* - uh-huh, being seen by survivors ‘flying’, as I guess they may soon again be seen - and/or **‘washed like waterfalls across land’** (e.g., [Amos 5:8](#)) and into *caves* or] onto mountains; and [also by these **‘rushing waters’** enormous] rocks from disintegrating mountain ridges were carried over vast stretches of land, from Norway to the Carpathians, and into the Harz Mountains, and into Scotland, and from Mount Blanc to the Juras, and from Labrador to the Poconos; and the Rocky Mountains [themselves] moved many leagues from their place, and the Alps traveled a hundred miles northward, and the Himalayas and the Andes climbed ever higher [evidently because of repeated **‘visits’** and *orbits*]; and the mountain lakes emptied themselves over barriers [**‘slosh’!**], and continents were torn by rifts [leaving what could be called ‘stretch marks’ in Earth’s crust, one of them being The Great Rift, which “runs” the nearly 4,000 miles “from northern Syria...to central Mozambique”], and the sea

bottom [similarly “torn”] by canyons; and land disappeared under the sea, and the sea pushed [or ‘lava-pillared’] new islands from its bottom, and sea beds were turned into high mountains bearing sea shells, and shoals of fish were poisoned and boiled in the seas, and numberless rivers lost their channels, were dammed by lava and turned upstream [including when uphill and downhill ‘switched directions’], and the climate suddenly changed, tillable land and meadows tuned into vast deserts. Reindeer from Lapland and polar fox and arctic bears from the snowy tundras and rhinoceroses and hippopotami from the African jungles, and lions from the desert and ostriches, and seals, [and surely some more *elephants*, and *pigs*] were thrown into piles and covered with gravel, clay, and guff, and the fissures of multitudes of rocks are filled with broken bones [because *tidal waves* full of **creatures** crashed into them]; regions where the palm grew were moved into the Arctic, and oceans steamed, and the evaporated seas condensed under clouds of dust and built mountainous covers of ice over great stretches of continents on heated ground [where *rock* is *melted* below it] and cast icebergs into the oceans in enormous fleets [- and yeah, making *continental sheets of ice* would first require *evaporating* and/or *boiling a lot* of water into the *air* so it could *recondense*, then *freeze*, and *precipitate* out in *colder regions* as *ice*], and the ice melted [in the newly *warmer regions*]; and all volcanoes erupted, and all human dwellings were shattered and burned, and animals tame and fierce and human beings with them ran for refuge to mountain caves, and mountains swallowed and entombed those that reached the refuge, and many species and genera and families of the animal kingdom were annihilated down to the very last one; and the earth and the sea and the sly again and again united their elements in one great work of destruction. [But again, most of this too is the work of Venus which we’ll cover mostly in **SECTION 8** and **9**.]

Following the trail of geology, we were led by the merciless logic of facts and figures to the conclusion that the earth was more than once a stage on which acts of a great drama took place, and no place on earth was free of its effects.

However again, and as Dr. Velikovsky would term them, there have really only been 3 ‘grandiose-scale events’: The 1st Visit of Mercury and The 2 Visits of Venus. And there is one more ‘event’ of this scale to come, which Jesus has instead termed, **great tribulation**, but it will be **such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**.

In the face of the evidence we were also compelled to concede that the most recent paroxysms of nature happened in historical times, [but again, the ‘earlier one’ did too, there being no other “paroxysms” of the ‘grandiose scale’, as the next section will reveal—at least to us—and that is, all such “catastrophes” happened] only a few thousand years ago, when in some parts of the world civilization was already entering the Iron Age, but in other parts still lingering in the Neolithic or Paleolithic, or rude stone, Age [- though this was really because some were too, let’s say, ‘Chicken Little’, and therefore slower to come out of their *caves* because of Venus, and *iron* was not really progress, but a regression, as it is much easier to make than the previously popular *alloy* before Venus came, *brass*]. The laminations [or ‘layering’] of [the bottoms] of lakes, the salt

content of those without outflow, the retreat [or moving upriver] of waterfalls, the [greatly increased or decreased] elevation of mountains, pollen analysis, and archaeological finds, as well as the recent drop of the ocean level, all show how close to our time must have occurred the more recent paroxysms of nature.

The evidence is also overwhelming that the great global catastrophes were either accompanied or caused by shifting of the terrestrial axis or by a disturbance in the diurnal [rotational] and annual [orbital] motions of the earth. The shifting of the axis could not have been brought about by internal causes, as the proponents of the Ice Age theory in the nineteenth century assumed it was [- and that is, including assuming there was “almost limitless time” to do so]; it must have occurred, and repeatedly, under the impact [or *interaction*] of external forces. The state of lavas with [repeatedly] reversed magnetization, hundreds of time more intensive than [just] the inverted terrestrial magnetic field could impart, reveals the nature of the forces that were in action [which again, we’ll get to, especially in [SECTION 8](#)].

Thus from the geological evidence we came to the conclusion to which we had also arrived traveling the road of the historical and literary traditions of the peoples of the world—that the earth repeatedly went through cataclysmic events on a global scale, that the cause of these events was an extraterrestrial agent, and that some [- again, really all -] of these cosmic catastrophes took place only a few thousand years ago, in historical times.

And I mean thanks to the Prophet Moses, concerning the Earth there really are only “historical times”, including absolutely reliable records of its most **ancient** [H6924](#) **times** [H3117](#) (or [H5769](#)). And except for “the appearance of new species”, Dr. Velikovsky sums it all up *geologically* quite well.

Many world-wide phenomena, for each of which the cause is vainly sought, are explained by a single cause: The sudden changes of climate, transgression of the sea, vast volcanic and seismic activities, formation of ice cover, pluvial [water] crises, emergence of mountains and their dislocation, rising and subsidence of coasts, tilting of lakes, sedimentation, fossilization, the provenience [or “provenance”, meaning “origin”] of tropical animals and plants in polar regions, conglomerates of fossils of animals of various latitudes and habitats, the extinction of species and genera, the appearance of new species, the reversal of the earth’s magnetic field, and a score of other world-wide phenomena [to be covered further, especially in [SECTION 8](#)].

However Dr. Velikovsky predictably comes to his final “conclusion” on the wrong foot by again not just imagining relatively ‘recent catastrophes’, but by **‘mis-imagining’** that there are ‘ridiculously long-past’ ones too, ones he **‘misunderstands’** to be millions and billions of years “old”. And he also, while, appropriately enough, ‘drifting out into the vastness of space’, missed that this vastness is symbolic of God character. And so he closed, writing,

As important as the "world catastrophe" conclusion is, it grows in significance for almost every branch of science when, to the ensuing question, "of old or of recent time?", the answer is given, "Of old and recent." [underlining mine] There were global catastrophes in prehuman times, in prehistoric times, and in historical times. We are descendants of survivors, them-selves descendants of survivors. We read here a few pages from the logbook of the earth, a rock rolling in space, circling with its attendant lifeless satellite around a fire-breathing star, moving with this its primary and other revolving planets through the galaxy of the Milky Way of hundreds of millions of burning stars, and together with this entire host, through the void of the universe.

Of course really the first "world catastrophe" happened about 4300 years ago, and about 1650 years before that **God created the heaven and earth, 'abracadabra-style'**, and in that first literal week **God created man in his own image** too, all necessarily less than 6,000 years ago, according to His 7 Day - 7,000 Year Plan. But again, it is my **hope** that Dr. Velikovsky already has or soon will figure all this out, and even if I have to finally explain it to him myself, even as I have, **by the grace of God, patiently** explained it to you.

In the 1975 edition of *Earth In Upheaval* there is, beside several other appendages, "An Address..." that Dr. Velikovsky gave at Princeton University in 1953, where he recites updated evidence that supports his, and often also our perspectives. But we have already gone beyond his conclusions, and so far beyond, with the potential to go so much further, that since he does not in the process correct his *theory* from billions of years of 'Accidental Endless Catastrophic Saltationistic Evolution' to the actual thousands of years of 'Predestinated though Subsequently Cursed Special Creation', let alone recognize the 'lost', original few years of 'Permanent Special Creation' before that, and let alone the 'New Eternal Incorruptible Creation' to come, then I will leave this sidetrack, for whatever improvement to your perspective it may offer, to you. And by the way, starting over before going on, beginning maybe with **SECTION 2**—though, and as this section well enough shows, the '**admonitions**' of **SECTION 1** still apply—would be far '**better use**' of this **study**, and '**better exercise of your senses**' for '**strengthening your perspective**' as you **continue** beyond this point.

However we are not even close to being through with Dr. Velikovsky's work, not even in *Earth In Upheaval*. But we are now through with the Theory of Evolution—really—I meant at least as far as these '**studies**', God willing, will go, and except for the unavoidable and necessary further 'decompartmentalization' and 're-departmentalization', that is, the 'sweeping-away' of **imaginations** that we should have already disposed of, as well as the 're-sweeping-away' of **imaginations** that were previously 'trash-heaped', but that because of ongoing **worldly** programming, and the accompanying 'debris-filled' conditions of our '**minds**', where these '**mis-imaginings**' of ours too often end up again and again in the very places we had previously removed them from—and since we will remain **for ever** 'finite', and need to **continue in** the '**disposal**' and '**redisposal**' of such '**finite thought errors**', and remain **exercised** in the **diligence** of our duty to navigate such '**leaven minefields**' as many times as is necessary until such '**down-castable imagination**' are really **for ever** gone—we remain committed

for ever to the **'correction, improvement and expansion'** of our **'perspective in God and in Christ'**, and *for ever* on **'increasingly higher levels'**, oh, and of course—inescapably in these **'studies'**— to pursue such **'precepts and perspectives'** whenever it is 'personally unavoidable' for me. Otherwise, and besides what **new revelations** bring, 'stick a fork in it', my exposé on the Theory of Evolution is really finally done.

However—and you knew that was going to be the next word, didn't you—since our **'continuing fight'** involves Dr. Velikovsky, who, though without **helmet, shield** or **sword**, nonetheless 'battles on', so shall we by his side, but in our case, with the advantage of **the whole armour of God**. And yes we have these advantages, but **especially** if we take advantage of them. What do I mean? I mean such **'advantages'** may only be claimed if we also have **integrity, diligence, zeal** and **vehement desire** to **seek to know** God, as well as the **faith** to not only **believe** that **he shall teach you all things**, but also that **he will shew you things to come**. But why wouldn't you **believe** it, and get excited about it, since Jesus tells us Himself that these are among The Ministries of The Spirit of God. And **verily**, without these **'advantages'** we cannot always—if at all — **'rightly grow' in the knowledge of God**. And I'm sure God makes sure of that. I mean you should remember what happens to those who **'mishandle'** His Word, **the blood of Jesus** to some extent still **'withstanding'**, and if not also for **our glory** and **reward**, then at least for **the salvation of your souls, Lord...have mercy**.

Of course we can also now **'better see'** that though we have benefited from Dr. Velikovsky's help, the **strong meat** within his 'doctrine' he himself cannot **see**, because such **higher**—or **deep things**—can only be **seen** by those who with **integrity, diligence, zeal**, and **vehement desire** **'unceasingly' continue to seek to know** God. And I mean that the **strong meat** 'hidden' in Dr. Velikovsky's 'doctrine' we must continue to expect to **discern** and **learn** for ourselves.

And I mean it's kind of like my favorite analogy about **'growing' in the knowledge of God**, that is, about 'climbing staircases'. But let's take this analogy a little further, to the idea of **'becoming able'** to **'climb faster'**, where to do so you first have to **learn to 'live on the step'** that you have **'ascended'** to. And I mean that **revelations** are the experiences that happen upon **'reaching a higher step'**, where from it you have a **'better view'**, and a **'higher perspective'**, and at the same time it is also from such **'better'** and **'higher vantage points'** that you're **able** to discover **'flaws in your perspective'** which from the **'poorer'** and **'lower views'** you could not **see**. But unavoidably also at **'every step up'** you're also **'set up'** (P-PAMD) by God to make **'missteps'**, ones you won't be **able to see** until you **'climb'** yet **higher**. And I mean you're not **rightly** ready to climb another 'step' until you have considered both **'improved and corrected perspectives'**, if not also **'expanded'** ones too, because a **'higher perspective'** is not only supposed to **shew you** what you were **'missing'**, but also what you were **'misunderstanding'** or **'misinterpreting'** or otherwise just **'mishandling'**. And if all these things are not happening in your experience most **'every ordered step of the way'**, then you are not yet **'rightly growing' in the knowledge of God**. Na-uh.

And so I say, **'live on each step'**, that is, learn to increasingly **'stand corrected'** by your **better** and **higher 'perspectives'** each and **'every ordered step of the way'**. Got it? If so we're ready to **continue**. But it wouldn't hurt if you also actually became fond of the 'sound' of the 'honking of a wild goose' now and then, huh.

And don't get me wrong. Some of my perspectives are to some degree still just speculation—and fantasy—too, where some **'fantasy-exposing'** and **'reality-establishing'** **'correction, improvement and expansion of perspective'** cannot be far ahead. But given the attention we have given to both **godly** and **ungodly** 'world-class scientific perspectives'—which is mostly and increasingly fantasy—maybe now you're at least beginning to **see** that it is only **'boasting in the Lord'** that I simply have no better 'perspective' available to me than my own, that is, none with less fantasy-distortion of reality, or that is more **'spiritually mature'**. But this doesn't just apply to me anymore, because if you're coming with me, you're a **'mark-of-the-prize presser'** too, that is, you're **increasing in the knowledge of God** at a **'high calling level'** too, and are at least beginning to **understand** a **'better corrected, improved and expanded reality'** than any 'world-class scientist' that ever lived could, and certainly much **'better'** than the **vain babblings** that only **will increase unto more ungodliness** commonly occurring today ([2Ti 2:16](#)). Of course we're also benefiting from this **'late-age'** time in The Natural Progression of The Knowledge of God.

So finally here I ask. Where does this **'Natural Progression of The Knowledge of God'** really **promise** to **lead us**? The Prophet Isaiah assures us about our **'leader'**, Jesus, that,

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end... from henceforth even for ever... [Isa 9:7](#).

And this is indeed a **wonderful** place to be **'led'**, especially since it must be a neverending journey. But again, why and how will there be **increase of his government and peace**? The Apostle Peter gives the short answer, saying,

Grace and peace [will] be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord... [2Pe 1:2](#)

And according to the Apostle Paul's **burden**, and mine, we **desire...**

...that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God [Col 1:10](#).

And yes, already, even now, at least for everyone who now **hath an ear** to **hear**,

The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this (also [Isa 9:7](#)).

And connected to this, and already happening, **the LORD** says,

So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it [Isa 55:11](#).

So again, are you feeling the **zeal** yet? Are you feeling that you're part of God's mission to **accomplish** His **word** at a **'high calling level'**, that is, feeling really ready to **live... by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**? Well, hopefully you will be by the time you're finished with this **study** anyway, because that's when we really start talking about how to **live**, and **what manner of persons ought ye to be**, ready or not.

And let me remind you yet again about what we **know** is already happening. Remember Jesus also **said**—yes, past tense—that,

...the kingdom of God is within you... [Luke 17:21](#).

So this **henceforth** that is **prophesied** by the Prophet Isaiah has already started too. It's started **within** me. Hasn't it **within you**?

In the next section we will look at what Dr. Velikovsky has collected of "human memory" of the "earlier ages". And yeah, it's going to be a '**big step**', in this case really the biggest one we can make, one that will take us backward in time about as far as we can go.

SECTION 7 GJAC I & II, Part 2: Saturn, Mercury, Noah & Nimrod - *In the Beginning*

Begun Spring 2017

If you've chosen to **continue** beyond this point, I can't stress enough the importance of eventually **'mastering'**, (read, becoming **apt to teach**), the preceding sections of this **study**, one of many reasons being that my goal is to let Dr. Velikovsky's **work** do increasingly more of the 'talking', even more than I last promised, except as before, when personally unavoidable, which may make it continue to seem as if I'm not restraining myself at all. Nonetheless, and in other words, I will increasingly attempt to leave it to you to **interpret** his work, that is, to be **able** to make **use** of the evidence he 'serves up', and to make **use** of your **'increasingly better skill'** in this **'kitchen'** to **'cook up'** your own **strong meat** - like I've mostly been doing for you so far.

However this will just as much as before require explanation to clarify what he means, while giving me greater opportunity to establish the background and/or perspectives of those offering the information he cites, which should help me to increasingly abbreviate my failures to further restrain myself - when personally avoidable - and to instead increasingly use clues or hints rather than doing most all the **work** for you. And I admit I seem to be on poor ground to make such a claim. And again, it may seem to continue this way. But you may **be comforted** that I am **'spirit-gifted'** by God for this particular **ministry**, which makes me **'better'** for it than others who are not as **'gifted'** in **teaching**, nor as **'spiritually perfect'**. And I mean I **believe** God has made it my primary mission to **teach** you how to **'increasingly' prove 'your' own work**. And you should **trust** that my **'God-given', 'vehemently-felt' desire** really is to **continue** to **work** myself out of a job, because these **'studies'**, like this Earth's **ages**, really do have an **end**.

And fortunately for your **'spiritual safety'**, since **salvation** requires no **'spiritual' understanding** of history, eschatology, or Creation, and since this **study** is not so much yet directly related to **'how we should then live'**, or to **things that pertain unto life and godliness**, now more to the **admonition**, **'encouragement'** and **instruction** in the **use** of **strong meat** needed for that, then this is not yet especially **'perilous work'**. However again, similar but especially **'consequential'** and **'perilous work'** is coming, especially in the next **study**. And if you **fail** [H5737](#): [G1587](#): [G2673](#): [G5302](#) to **attain** this **experience**, and that is, remain **'unexercised'** and **unskilful** in the **use** of the **strong meat** in this **'less perilous' study**, you will not be ready for the **'more perilous' dividing, handling** and **interpretation** to come. And worse, your **'unskilful use'** of **'it'** - whether more **perilous** [G5467](#) or not - will **do** more **evil** than **good**, and that is, with unavoidable **'eternal consequences'**.

Not **apt to teach** what we've covered in both **'studies'** so far yet? Before you **'continue higher'**, go back, even to the start of "The Beginning Study" if needed, and whenever otherwise **reproved** by The Spirit to do so, until you are. And if you **'go up'** without **'mastery'**, or without enough **spiritual understanding**, and then **repent**, you'll **remember** you were **forewarned**. And I mean the more you **'handle'** this **study** as a 'simulation of what it's like to grow in the knowledge of God', which should include being ready for each **'step of the way'**, and following more of my suggestions than not - I mean it is a 'simulation' of how I **attained** [H3201](#) and [G5348](#) and [G2638](#) and [G3877](#) such **knowledge** - the fewer **'eternal consequences'** you can expect.

But 'unlike' our Lord, I must expect to **'lose some'**, I mean **if God permit** that **some** really do attempt to **'follow me as I follow Christ' unto the end**, as this

would be to **'follow me'** all the **way** to the ultimate failure of **the gates of hell** to **prevail against** the **revelation of Jesus Christ**, and the failure of these **gates** to **prevail against "whatsoever"** else God has **sent** his **word** to **accomplish** and **prosper** of His **will** and **pleasure**, as verses like [Psalm 115:3](#) and Isaiah 46:9-10 confirm. And revisit [Isaiah 55](#) and Psalm 1 while your at it.

Dr. Velikovsky's "unpublished work", *In the Beginning*, with my 'amplifications', is reprinted in this section, as well as at <http://www.varchive.org/index.htm>. And from this homepage you can navigate to many other of his "unpublished" works, essays, lectures, etc., too.

In Part III he focuses, somewhat unwittingly, on just The 2nd Visit of Mercury, and points to "many" culturally isolated "myths" that, besides the 'universal shock' at Babel, include a "mighty wind" and "confusions of languages and dispersals of peoples". And from it I introduced - in my last section - a 16th Century astronomer's account of an Ancient Egyptian 'view' of this "event":

In the year of the world one thousand nine hundred and forty-four, two hundred and eighty-eight years after the Deluge [1656 + 288 = 1944 - yes!], a comet was seen in Egypt of the nature of Saturn [or as bright as Saturn], in the vicinity of Cairo, in the constellation of Capricorn, and within the space of sixty-five days it traversed three [Zodiac] signs in the sky. Confusions of languages and dispersals of peoples followed. On this the text of the eleventh chapter of Genesis speaks in more detail.

And this account must be mostly of Mercury's approach, that is, of just before **'his visit'**, when there was 'leisure' to record such 'astronomical observations'; there evidently was not as much 'leisure time' afterward, when the "confusions" and "dispersals" hindered such 'record keeping'.

Also from Part III we have already learned from the 2nd Century Patriarch of Antioch, Theophilus of Antioch, who relayed to us an account "prophesied" by "the Sibyl", one of the "prophetesses" of the 2nd to 6th Century that are otherwise recorded in the in *Oracula Sibyllina* (*The Sibylline Oracles*), that,

When are fulfilled the threats of the great God
With which he threatened men, when formerly
In the Assyrian land they built a tower,
And all were of one speech, and wished to rise
Even till they climbed unto the starry heaven,
Then the Immortal raised a mighty wind
And laid upon them strong necessity;
For when the wind threw down the mighty tower,
Then rose among mankind fierce strife and hate.
One speech was changed into many dialects,
And earth was filled with divers tribes and kings

And as to the 'shock' involved, in Part III Dr. Velikovsky also informs us that,

According to a tradition [uh-huh, "folklore" or "myth"] known to the twelfth century traveler Benjamin of Tudela, "fire from heaven fell in the midst of the tower and broke it asunder." In the Tractate Sanhedrin of the Babylonian *Talmud* it is said: "A third of the tower was burnt, a third

sank [into the earth] and a third is still standing [until later *great judgments* finished it off]."

But none of these accounts seem to give us a clear indication of a 'universal shock', neither of the role *brimstone* may have played in the destruction of "the tower", only that it – being in the center of a 'one world civilization', and on a 'single land mass' not yet *divided* – got awesomely '*lightning stuck*' and/or '*fire and brimstone targeted*'. But Dr. Velikovsky thinks it got 'electrically blasted', because he has "the impression that a strong electrical discharge – possibly from an overcharged ionosphere – found a contact body in the high structure." And this reads – and probably not entirely as he intended – as if he thought it was only our own *ionosphere* that was the culprit, that it alone produced such a "discharge". But whether or not he really thought so, I think that it could not have been just our "overcharged ionosphere", but really 'two electrically-interacting' *magnetic planets*, with the biggest "discharge" – apparently opposite 'his' 1st Visit – going from Mercury to the Earth, and this time one which '*naturally*' also "found contact in the high structure". Otherwise I'm guessing this 'shock' would not have been powerful enough to have "burnt" the top "third", nor to have *melted* the ground and destroyed the bottom third of a "tower" that "climbed unto the starry heaven", and that is, it could not otherwise have entirely destroyed two thirds of this by-far tallest "structure" ever erected.

And I mean, as we will further see when we get to Part III, it had to be taller than the then 'Mercury-class' *mountains*, because according to other "myths" this "tower" was built primarily in order to save them from 'future global floods', though surely also to worship Mercury and Saturn. And surely Mercury did not have nearly as much of the *ground melting* capability that Venus did, which limits the need for *fire and brimstone* in this case, because I think that the extra *heat* needed – beyond how much Mercury could *heat* the *ground* – may instead have come from an *electrical induction discharge*, that is, and as you may also *remember* from last section, from "the process by which a body having electric or magnetic properties produces...an electric charge", and in this case likely one of the biggest ever to *strike* the Earth. And I say 'one of the biggest', because we will 'witness' other possibly 'bigger ones' in later sections.

But do we *know* how tall this "tower" really was, and therefore how short 'Mercury-class' *mountains* must have been? We know the limits of 'Venus-class' *mountains* today. They reach over 5 *miles* above *sea level*, and over 6 *miles* above the *sea floor*, *remember*? And there is an account giving the dimensions of this "tower" in The Book of Jubilees, an 'extrabiblical' (or pseudepigraphal, pronounced 'sue-duh-pig-raf-ical') source, though not necessarily apocryphal (again, 'untrue' or 'false') as it does not appear to contradict canonical *scripture* (the 66 *books* of the Old and New Testaments). This "book" is quoted in my encyclopedia as follows:

And they began to build, and in the fourth week they made brick with fire, and the bricks served them for stone, and the clay with which they cemented them together was asphalt which comes out of the sea, and out of the fountains of water in the land of Shinar. And they built it: forty and three years were they building it; its breadth was 203 bricks, and the height [of a brick] was the third of one; its height amounted to 5433 cubits and 2 palms, and [the extent of one wall was] thirteen stades [and of the other thirty stades]. (Jubilees 10:20–21, Prof., Dr. Robert Henry Charles' 1913 translation) [finally to be bio'ed next paragraph].

And using Sir Isaac's about 25-inch **cubits** this would be about 11,320 feet tall, or well over 2 miles high. Uh-huh, I'm guessing this was plenty tall enough to allow at least the elite, if they could somehow reach the upper levels of this "tower", to be 'comfortably' above the tallest 'Mercury-class' *mountains*, especially since Mercury had made only one '**visit**' by this time. And remember we determined the length of **stadia** or **furlongs** from the distance from Bethany to Jerusalem in [John 11:18](#), where $1\frac{3}{4}$ miles = 15 **furlongs** or **stadia**, so 1 furlong or "stade" = 1/8 mile, and therefore its base was (13 x 1/8) by (30 x 1/8) = 1.625 miles by 3.75 miles. And by-the-way, the World's tallest buildings today have not yet surpassed 3,000 feet tall.

Archdeacon, Professor, Dr. Robert Henry "Charles"... translation", also by-the-way, seems trustworthy, as he was a late 19th and early 20th Century "Irish biblical scholar and theologian". He is known for English translations of apocryphal and pseudepigraphal (again, 'extrabiblical') works, including *Jubilees* (1895 and 1913), the *Book of Enoch* (1906), and the *Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs* (1908) which "have been widely used", and he wrote the 1911 Encyclopedia Britannica articles attributed to the initials "R. H. C." Educated at the Belfast Academy, Queen's College, Belfast and Trinity College, Dublin, with periods in Germany and Switzerland, he gained his D.D. (Doctor of Divinity) and became Professor of Biblical Greek at Trinity College. He later became Canon (or Chapter, that is, an 'ecclesiastical governor') of Westminster, and finally Archdeacon of Westminster, serving until his death. He is also buried in Westminster Abbey, one of England's "most notable religious buildings", near the royal Palace of Westminster. It is an "abbey church", since 1560 more particularly the Collegiate Church of St Peter - the abbot (or dean) of which serves in the House of Lords - and it is where the kings and queens of England are crowned, wedded and temporarily buried. And if you need to remind yourself about what I mean by "temporarily", see again [1Thessalonians 4:13-18](#) and [Revelation 20:11-15](#).

And yes, as 'shocking' as this '**planetary visit**' sounds, these are conditions you should expect when a *charged planet* larger than the Moon passes close to the Earth. And though Mercury does not seem to be as much a '**planet-god**' that chased its **worshippers** into caves, 'he' is apparently the first to provoke the "dispersals of peoples". But again, the "confusions of languages" had to be more than just the '**naturally occurring fallout**' from **the curse**. However it may have been 'facilitated' by some '**naturally occurring discharge**' (e.g., [Job 28:20-28](#), especially Verse 26). And I mean that this **great 'natural' judgment** was clearly accompanied by one of God's '**great abracadabras**' too. And it took **the world** 'back to square one', again, and that is, it altogether **made a shew of Satan openly, triumphing over him in it**, again.

And yes, I'm suggesting here that, like the difference between God's **great 'natural' judgments** and his more localized and/or individualized ones - a 'larger' than most but '**lesser judgment**' occurring at Sodom and Gomorrah, for example - that there have also been several incidences of '**great abracadabras**' too, as opposed to the more 'localized' or 'individualized' variety, which could be otherwise called 'larger' or 'smaller' **miracles**. And more specifically, by '**great abracadabras**' I mean ones that have or will affect **the whole world**, of which, and though I have previously accounted for fewer of them, and besides **the resurrection of the Lord**, I can only now confidently point to 5 'events', or 10 if divided by **days**, the 1st and '**greatest**' past 'event' - or 6 'events' if divided by **days** - being Creation Week, the 2nd - or 7th - **the curse**, the 3rd - or 8th - when They **did there confound the language** into "many" at Babel, and the future two - and maybe others—that '**hopefully**' we'll get to more in later sections.

And remember Dr. Velikovsky, usually more helpfully than not, has 'seen' – or '***mis-imagined***' – other 'early comets' and 'events'. However it has been and will be by such 'observations' that we will attempt to further '***correct, improve and expand***' our own ***understanding*** of what must have really happened. And here we go.

IN THE BEGINNING

PART I: THE EARLY AGES

A Technical Note

I have been asked by the compilers of the Velikovsky archive to briefly describe the present condition of Velikovsky's unpublished manuscript entitled *In the Beginning*. As Velikovsky explains, parts of this volume were already complete in the 1940s and originally formed part of *Worlds in Collision*. The present manuscript also incorporates material written for a volume entitled *The Test of Time*, which dealt with the new information on the planets

coming from the space probes, and contained frequent allusions to the earlier catastrophes; this work will probably never see publication. Other material included in this manuscript comes from Velikovsky's lectures and other scattered writings. During the time that I worked for Velikovsky (1976-1978) one of my tasks was to complete the cataloguing of his library notes, mostly from the 1940s. The headings of the catalogue generally corresponded to the section headings in *Worlds in Collision* and *In the Beginning*. The completion of *In the Beginning* was a cooperative effort between Velikovsky and myself. After Velikovsky's passing, when I returned to Princeton to work on his archive, I systematically moved the parts contributed by me into the notes apparatus [which in this volume will be replaced into the text within "square brackets", as with Dr. Velikovsky's footnotes, except being further identified with this color red,] and this is how this material appears in the unpublished manuscript. —
Jan Sammer

In this edition Jan Sammer's annotations are distinguished from Dr. Velikovsky's text by being placed in square brackets and displayed in red letters [and my perspectives, etc., both within and without and from now on, in colors such as 'bio' or 'opinion' blue or 'alternative' purple or green, as well as 'defining' green or 'alternative' brown – though more often 'warning turd' brown is used (uh-huh, you'll be able to tell the difference) – and sometimes, for absolute clarity, when personally unavoidable, 'hellfire' orange]. For the reader's interest we reproduce here the title page of Velikovsky's manuscript [which includes the first paragraph of his *INTRODUCTION*, on p.242].

... perhaps use the words of the first
the universe use the universe of the
the beginning of the
1.1.1919

In the Beginning

by

Immanuel Velikovsky
author of Worlds in Collision and
Epochs in Chaos

This volume carries the name *In the Beginning* - the words with which the book of Genesis starts. This name is appropriate because it for this volume - because it describes the events of cosmic events which are narrated in the first book of the Hebrew Bible; but also because in it I speak of events that preceded those which were described by me in *Worlds in Collision* - thus the name of the book conveys to the reader that here is an earlier history of the world compared with the story which started in the middle of the second millennium before the present era of *Worlds in Collision*; although it is the second volume of that series, in some sense it is the first volume, being the earlier story.

INTRODUCTION

This volume carries the name *In the Beginning* - the words with which the book of Genesis starts. The name seems appropriate because it describes the cosmic events which are narrated in the first book of the Hebrew Bible; but also because in it I speak of events that preceded those described by me in *Worlds in Collision* - thus the name of the book conveys to the reader the notion that here is an earlier history of the world compared with the story of *Worlds in Collision*; although it is the second volume in that series, in some sense it is the first volume, being the earlier story.

When the manuscript of *Worlds in Collision* was first offered to the publisher (Macmillan Company, New York) it contained a brief story of

the Deluge and of the cataclysm that terminated the Old Kingdom in Egypt. But after one of the publisher's readers suggested that the book should concentrate on one event, we compromised in presenting in the published volume two series of cataclysms – those that took place in the fifteenth century before the present era and were caused by the near-approaches of Venus, and those that occurred in the eighth century before this era and were caused by the near-approaches of Mars. The unused material was left for elaboration in a separate work on "Saturn and the Flood" and "Jupiter of the Thunderbolt." The reception of *Worlds in Collision*, however, made me understand that I had already offered more than was palatable. And so I did not hurry with what I consider to be the heritage of our common ancestors, an inheritance of which my contemporaries in the scientific circles preferred not to partake.

Researching and writing this book, I would sit at the feet of the sages of many ancient civilizations—one day of the Egyptian learned scribes, another of the Hebrew ancient rabbis, the next of the Hindus, Chinese, or the Pythagoreans. But then, rising to my feet, I would confer with present-day scientific knowledge. At times I came to understand what perplexed the ancients, and at other times I found answers to what perplexes the moderns. This shuttle back and forth was a daily occupation for a decade or more, and it became a way [- maybe a better one than any of the "moderns" before Dr. Velikovsky -] to understand the phenomena: to listen to those who lived close to the events of the past, even to witnesses, and to try to understand them in the light of the theoretical and experimental knowledge of the last few centuries, in this manner confronting witnesses and experts.

I realized very soon that the ancient sages lived in a frightened state of mind, justified by the events they or their close ancestors had witnessed. The ancients' message was an anguished effort to communicate their awe engendered at seeing nature with its elements unchained. The moderns, however, denied their ancestors' wisdom, even their integrity [by calling their accounts entirely "myths"], because of an all-embracing fear of facing the past [though really more because of a '**conspiracy of Satan**'], even [denying] the historically documented experiences of our progenitors [about The Visits of Mars], as recent as four score [or 80] generations ago.

Dr. Velikovsky's calculation determining "four score" or 80 "generations ago" is based on his definition of a 'generation', a popular one from my dictionary being that it is "roughly 30" years, or from the otherwise **perverted** BLB, "a space of 30-33 years" [G1074](#). But it's the math that confirms that Dr. Velikovsky chose an average of about 33 years since $33 \times 80 = 2640$, this being about the number of years before his time to The Last Visit of Mars. But I'm going to guess that "generations" average closer to 40 years – originally much longer but now near half this average – and that there would therefore be no more than $6000/40$ or about 150 generations all the way back to Adam. And I mean I count only 62 **generations** from Adam to Jesus ([Gen 5](#); [11:10-26](#); [Mat 1:17](#)), so the average **generation** for the period preceding Jesus was about 65 years ($4000/62$ rounds to 65), but surely it has been less than half of that in the period since.

Dr. Velikovsky continues,

I have deliberately described the catastrophes of the second and first millennia before this era before I describe the catastrophes of the previous ages. The reason is obvious: the history of catastrophes is extremely unsettling to the historians, evolutionists, geologists, astronomers, and physicists [and too much exposes **our adversary Satan's 'conspiracies'**]. Therefore it is preferable to start from the better known and then proceed to the less known [or like in these **'studies', from 'lower' and 'less perilous' to 'higher' and 'more perilous' knowledge**]. For the last catastrophe caused by the contact of Mars and the Earth I could establish the year, the month, and even the day; not so for the catastrophes in which Venus and the Earth participated, when only the approximate time in the space of a definite century could be established. Still, I found it advisable to narrate the story of [The Visits of Venus in] the second millennium first: it was possible to write the story of the contacts with Venus with a fair amount of detail. But each cataclysm is not only more remote in time from us, it is also obscured by the catastrophes that followed. As we seek to penetrate ever deeper into the past, we can see the foregoing periods through the veil of the catastrophes; dimmer and dimmer is the light behind every veil, till our eye can distinguish no more behind the veil that hangs over the period when the Earth was Moonless [?!], though already inhabited by human life. We do not know the beginning; [but you and I do **know**, and **we also know** that the Moon was there as **the lesser light to rule the night since the fourth day**, but at the same time "we can" accept that from Dr. Velikovsky's perspective] we can only enter the theater at what may have been the third or fourth act [which is really at 'the first act', or at The 1st Visit of Mercury].

The Hebrew Cosmogony [or The Cosmological Myths of the Jews]

This world came into existence out of a chaos of fluid driven by a divine blast: this is the epic beginning of the Book of Genesis: "The earth was chaotic and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep; and God's wind moved upon the face of the fluid." [See! Again he acknowledges "Providence", and quotes a lot of **scripture** too as we will see, and maybe he just more often otherwise compartmentalizes his **faith**.] From this primeval matter, in a process of subsequent creations [or "catastrophes"], was born the home of the living.

Already before the birth of our Earth, worlds were shaped and brought into existence, only to be destroyed in the course of time: "Nor is this world inhabited by man the first of things earthly created by God [or that is, 'This Earth is not the first one God created']. He made several worlds before ours, but he destroyed them all" [L. Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews*, (Philadelphia, 1925), Vol. I, p.4]. The Earth underwent re-shaping: six consecutive remouldings. Heaven and Earth were changed in every catastrophe. Six times the Earth was rebuilt - without entire extirpation

of life on it, but with major catastrophes. Six ages have passed into the great beyond; this is the seventh [or 6th?] creation, the time in which we live.

And whether the 6th or 7th, the idea seems to be that after each **'planetary visit'** a 'new creation' or 'age' starts. However if you count all the actual **'visits'** there would be about 12 'creations' so far, so evidently "six ages" here is more related to the **'most catastrophic visits'**, ones that included 'axis shifts', and therefore changed perspectives of the Sun and stars. And similarly,

According to another tradition [keep reading "myth"], several heavens were created, seven in fact [or 5 or 6 involving changed views of the sky]. Also [6 or] seven earths were created: the most removed [or 1st] being the seventh Erez, followed by the sixth Adamah [Adamic World?], the fifth Arka [Nimrodic World?], the fourth Harabbah [Abrahamic World?], the third Yabbashah [Mosaic World?], the second Tebel [Davidic World?] and our own land called Heled [Modern World], and like the others, it is separated from the foregoing by abyss, chaos, and waters [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 10 f].

And I'm also guessing there was no 'earth' before "Adamah", unless "Erez" is The Edenic World.

The description permits an interpretation that all the seven earths exist simultaneously; but a deeper insight will allow us to recognize that the original idea did not admit seven concurrent but separate firmaments and worlds in space, but only consecutive in time, and built one out of another: "The seven heavens form a unity, the seven kinds of earth form a unity, and the heavens and the earth together also form a unity" [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 11]. The Hebrew cosmogony in its true sense is a conception of worlds built and reshaped with the purpose of bringing creation closer to perfection [though really, so far, each is only further **'fallen apart'**]. The separation of one world from another by abyss and chaos evidently refers to the cataclysms that separated the ages.

[The notion of a succession of worlds created and destroyed is common to many nations of antiquity. Vicentius (or Vincenzo) Sangermano [late 18th/early 19th Century "Italian Barnabite", Catholic priest of the "religious order of the Clerics Regular of St. Paul", C.R.S.P., "who traveled to South-East Asia... and worked in Burma"], (*Cosmographia Burmana*, quoted by Dr. Francis Buchanan (FRS, FRSE, FLS, FAS, FSA, DL, late 18th/early 19th Century "Scottish physician, later known as Francis Hamilton" or "Francis Buchanan-Hamilton", and "who made significant contributions as a geographer, zoologist, and botanist while living in India"), "*On the Religion and Literature of the Burmas*," *Asiatick Researches* VI [1799], p.174, 180) wrote: "The Universe is called by the Burmas *Logha*, which signifies successive destruction and reproduction... The Burma writings do not conceive of one world, but of an infinite number, one constantly succeeding another; so that when one is destroyed, another of the same form and structure arises..."]

Rabbi Louis Ginzberg (or Levy Gintzburg), repeatedly referenced above, and throughout Dr. Velikovsky's works, was a Lithuanian-born Talmudist, from a long line of them "whose piety and erudition was well known", and he was a "leading

figure in the Conservative Movement of Judaism” in America up to the time Israel became a **nation** again. His tenure as a teacher at the Jewish Theological Seminary of America (JTS) in New York City lasted fully half a century, and because of his “impressive scholarship in Jewish studies, Ginzberg was one of sixty scholars honored with a doctorate by Harvard University in celebration of its tercentenary [300th anniversary in 1936]”. However JTS “explicitly encouraged its faculty and students to study rabbinical literature within its social and historical context, which is otherwise known as the “scientific study of Judaism”, and though surely Dr. Velikovsky’s approved, “most Orthodox Jews viewed his works as unacceptable, and virtually none refer to them, much less rely on them today.”

But worse than this **schism** ^{G4978} in Judaism, the Talmut itself, which Rabbi Dr. Ginzberg honored above other ‘commentary’, is nonetheless just ‘pseudepigraphical commentary’ at best, and however “central” to Rabbinic Judaism it is. And of course I should point out that Jesus ‘took issue’ with how **perfect** such ‘commentary’ was, (e.g., [Mat 5:31-48](#)), and sometimes had even stronger objections to such **tradition of the elders**, and that is, **tradition of men** (e.g., [Mark 7:1-16](#); [Mat 15:1-11](#)). We will consider much more about all this in later sections.

The Planet Ages

The ages of the past, between the successive catastrophes, are called in many diverse sources “sun ages.” I have tried to show why this designation is meaningful [*Worlds in Collision*, sections “*The World Ages*”, “*The Sun Ages*”]. But the ancients also maintained that the successive ages were initiated by planets: Moon, Saturn, Mercury, Jupiter, Venus, Mars. Therefore the sun-ages could also have been called planet ages.

And though the Moon, Jupiter, and Saturn were not actually ‘**visitors**’, we will see that they were sometimes confused as such, probably because of the *magnified* and/or *distorted views* of Mercury and the Moon both before and after the *water canopy* came down, the two being very similar in appearance and possibly easily confused with each other, especially if Mercury *orbited* a little farther from the Earth and/or more *elliptically* than the Moon does, (can you see it?), and Jupiter because ‘he’ was known to have ‘sent’ Venus – via *volcanic bomb* – and Saturn because ‘he’ may have at least appeared to have done likewise with Mercury. And in cases where there is no or different sorts of ‘confusion by perspective’, evidently sometimes the ‘visitor’ is credited, and otherwise the ‘sender’, ‘whoever’ is considered ‘greater’ at “the time”.

Hesiod ascribed the Golden age [[The Adamic or Pre-Flood World](#)] to the time when the planet Saturn was ruling [[and who maybe appeared to ‘send’ Mercury](#)], and the Silver and Iron ages to the time of the planet Jupiter [[who ‘sent’ Venus, and maybe Mars too](#)] [*Works and Days*, transl. by H. Evelyn-White (*Loeb Classical Library*: London, 1914), lines 109-201]...

...The same concept is found in Vergil, who says that “before Jove’s [and that is, Jupiter’s] day [i.e., in the Golden age when Saturn reigned] no tillers subdued the land—even to mark the field or divide it with bounds was unlawful”. [*Georgics* I, 125, transl. by H. R. Fairclough (*Loeb Classical Library*: London, 1920).]

No plowing or fences before The Flood? **'Naturally'** not, because under the *water canopy* evidently everything grew abundantly and continually, and that is, 'seasonlessly' because of the *greenhouse effect*, and because of the other 'naturally' resulting 'protection' and 'enhancements', where the variety was accessible to everyone if not 'fenced in'.

The idea that the Earth was under the sway of different planets at different ages is also the teaching of the Pythagoreans, the Magi, Gnostic sects and other secret societies.

In numerous astrological texts the same concept is repeated, that seven millennia were dominated by seven planets, one after the other.

[*"L'idée de sept périodes soumises aux sept planètes est commune à plusieurs religions."* ["The idea of seven periods subject to the seven planets is common to many religions."] (Dr. Franz Cumont, *La Fin du monde selon les mages occidentaux* [*The End of the World According to Western Magi*], *Revue de l'Histoire des Religions* [1931], p.48). See also Wilhelm Bousset [late 19th/early 20th Century German theologian and New Testament scholar" and "professor of New Testament exegesis at Göttingen, later relocating to the University of Giessen", whose "better known work involved comparative studies between the Early Christian Church and other religious beliefs, particularly Hellenistic Judaism", and who "demonstrated that Christian thought was profoundly influenced by neighboring cultures and belief systems"], *Die Himmelsreise der Seele* ["*The Journey of the Soul*"], *Archiv für Religionswissenschaft* [*Archive for Religious Science*], Vol. IV (1901), pp.240-244. Similarly writes F. Boll), *Stern Glaube und Sterndeutung* [*Star Belief and Star Interpretation*], fourth ed. by W. Gundel [?] (Berlin,1931), p.158: "*Die übliche chaldäische Lehre unterscheidet sieben Welt-alter; jeder Planet, darunter also auch Sonne und Mond, herrscht als Chronokrator über eine Periode von tausend Jahren.*" ["The usual Chaldean doctrine identifies seven ages; Every planet, including the sun and the moon, rules as a chronocrat [or 'time king'] over a period of a thousand years."]]

Franz Boll, by the way, was a late 19th/early 20th Century "German scholar and contemporary of Cumont" (which I'll 'bio' a little later), and "Professor of Classical Philology ["the study of literary texts and of written records"] at the University of Heidelberg", and is "known for his editorial and biographical work on Claudius Ptolemy". My encyclopedia further informs me that,

He also wrote on astrology. He is quoted as saying "Astrology wants to be religion and science at the same time; that marks its essence", and "Mankind measures time using the stars. Lay people, whose knowledge is based on belief, rather than science, say: "The course of the stars determines Time", and from this, [and from] religious people... [comes] the saying that "Heaven guides everything on Earth."

Boll is also known for his claim that the Book of Revelation includes an allegorical depiction of the changes of astrological ages from the Age of Pisces to the Age of Aquarius where instead of the end of the world, the Apocalypse is really the end of an aeon [or *eon* or *age*]...

So "religious people" simply lack "science"? The 'devil' they do, or as Dr. Velikovsky puts it,

The worshipers of the devil, the Syrian sect of the Yezidis, believed that seven thousand years had passed since the Deluge; at the end of every millennium one of the seven planet-gods descends on the earth, establishes a new order and new laws, and then retreats to his place [Dr. Franz Cumont, *“La Fin du monde selon les mages occidentaux”*, [*“The End of the World According to Western Magi”*], p.49].

And **the whole world** is now about ‘set up’ for yet another ‘pattern change’, from when it **worshipped and served** Creation **more than the Creator**, to **‘self idolatry’**, to finally adding **worshipping** Satan himself, and with all the “science” Professor Boll could have wanted.

An identical tradition is found in the writings of Julius Africanus [- *“celebrated orator”* in the reign of Roman Emperor Nero, Mid 1st Century AD]: the ages of the ancestors passed under the government of the planets, each in its turn. [H. Gelzer, *Sextus Julius Africanus* (Leipzig,1898), p.?.; see also E. Hommel in *Journal of the Society of Oriental Research* [*“Oriental”* meaning, ‘Eastern World’, in the original sense, “especially Southwest Asian and Northeast African”](1927), p.183]...

...Also according to the Ethiopian text of the *First Book of Enoch*, the seven world-ages were each dominated by one planet [R. H. Charles transl. and ed., *The Book of Enoch, or 1 Enoch* (Oxford,1912), LII 2-9 (pp.102 ff.) [*“ff.”* or just *“f.”*, by-the-way, abbreviates *“and the following pages”*], Bousset, *“Die Himmelreise der Seele”* [*“The Journey of the Soul”*], p.244].

The gnostic sect of the Mandaeans [- from the Aramaic *manda*, as the Greek *gnosis*, meaning “knowledge” - who evidently were “pre-Islamic pagan Arabs” who “revere Adam, Abel, Seth, Enos, Noah, Shem, Aram, and especially John the Baptist, but reject Abraham, Moses and Jesus -] taught in its holy book *Sidra Rabba* [*“The Great Directory”* or really *‘Misdirectory’*] that the history of mankind is composed of seven epochs, that these epochs were terminated by catastrophes, and that one of the planets ruled in each epoch. [*Ginza: Codex Nasareus, Liber Adami Apellatus* [which is evidently a translation of *“The Ginza Rba”* or *“Ginza Rabba”*; Modern Mandaic translation: *“Ginzā Rabbā”*; literally *“The Great Treasury”*, or *“Siddra Rabba”*, *“The Great Book”* - *“rabba”* meaning ‘great’ - and formerly, the *“Codex Nazaraeus”*, and occasionally referred to as *“The Book of Adam”*, and “the longest of the many holy scriptures of the Mandaean religion”], M. Norberg transl. and ed., Vol. III (London,1815), pp.69-73; K. Kessler [?], *“Mandäer,” Realencyclopädie für protestantische Theologie*, [entry for *“Mandaeans”*, *Encyclopedia of Protestant Theology*], Herzog-Nauck, 3rd ed. (1903), Vol.12, pp.170 ff [again, *“ff.”* or *“f.”* abbreviates *“and the following pages”*].]

The length of the ages in the *Sidra Rabba* [*“The Great Directory”*] is made very long [- evidently meaning that the “Mandaeans” were *catastrophic evolutionists* too], but the concept [of 7 ages] is, nevertheless, common to many ancient creeds.

Sabbath

The idea of naming the days of the week in honor of the seven planets was, according to Eusebius, introduced by the Persians at the time of the war of Xerxes against Greece. [*Praeparatio Evangelica* IV [*Preparation of the Gospel* 4]]...

...Dio Cassius [or Cassius Dio], the Roman author ["of Greek origin"] of the fourth century [who "published 80 volumes of history on Ancient Rome"], wrote that the division of the week into seven days in honor of the seven planets originated with the Egyptians, and then spread to other peoples. [*Dio Cassius* 37.186; cf. Aulus Gellius, *Noctes Atticae* [*Attic Nights*] III,10; Petronius, *Satyricon* [*The Book of Satyrlike Adventures*], 30: "lunae cursum stellarumque septem imagines" ["Seven Images of the Moon and Stars"] ["cf." is "short for the Latin word *confer* and instructs the reader to compare one thing with another"].]

Eusebius of Caesarea or Eusebius Pamphili, the late 3rd and early 4th Century "Greek historian of Christianity" and "scholar of the Biblical canon", (meaning he helped decide which Books belonged in the Bible and which did not), is, because of his historical works, considered the "Father of Church History".

Even today the names of the days of the week in European languages [including English] can be traced to the names of the planets. Thus the Roman *dies Solis* (Sun), or Sunday, is *Sonntag* in German; *dies Lunae* (Moon), or Monday, is *lundi* in French and *Montag* in German; *dies Martis* (Mars), or Tuesday, is *mardi* in French and *martes* in Spanish; *dies Jovis* (Jupiter), or Thursday, is *jeudi* in French and *Donnerstag* in German [*Donnar*, or *Thor* was the name for Jupiter among the Nordic peoples]; Friday is *dies Veneris* (Venus), or *vendredi* in French, while Saturday is *dies Saturnis*, the day of Saturn. [Cf. Hermann Gunkel, *Schoepfung und Chaos in Urzeit und Endzeit*, [*Creation and Chaos in Primordial and End Times*], (1895).]

[The same system was in use in Babylonia and is still current in India and Tibet. See Tsepon Wangchuk Deden Shakabpa [a 20th Century "Tibetan nobleman, scholar and former Finance Minister of the government of Tibet", and Tibetan historian, who, among his writings about Tibet's religious "Relics", "Ancient Monasteries and Temples" and Tibet's "Political History", wrote the 1977 entry in *Encyclopedia Britannica* entitled, "Tibet"], *Tibet, A Political History* (Yale University Press,1967), p.16: "The seven days of the week are named, as in the Western system, for the sun, moon, and the five visible planets..." The people of Burma "also use a week of seven days, named after the planets." F. Buchanan, "*On the Religion and Literature of the Burmas*", *Asiatick Researches* VI (1799), p.169.]

Actually, I'm tempted to slightly adjust Dr. Velikovsky's contribution to my understanding here, because he left out Wednesday, and Mercury, and because I think Tuesday might actually be 'Thothday', as "Thoth" was the planet Mercury of the Egyptian pantheon, and, if you remember from last section, it is "the theophoric part of the name Thutmose or Tut-ankh-amen", leaving Wednesday, *Mercredi* in French, and *Mittwoch* in German, open for Mars. Of course it makes even more sense that different languages may have slightly different orders of the '**planet**' **gods** that are honored in their given weeks, given their different 'perspectives' of them, which the reference to the "people of Burma" (now Myanmar) in the last reference seems to imply.

Then again, my dictionary informs me that "before 950" Wednesday in Middle English was *Wednesdai*, and in Old English *Wēdnesdæg*, which was a "mutated

variant" of *Wōdnesdæg* or Woden's day, a cognate with Dutch *Woensdag*, Danish *onsdag*, which translates in Latin to *Mercurii diēs* or "day of Mercury", completing Dr. Velikovsky's interpretation quite nicely. And let's not stop there. According to my dictionary "before 1050" Tuesday in Middle English was *tewesday*, and in Old English *tīwesdæg*, a cognate with Old High German *zīestac*, Old Norse *týsdagr*, these the origins of *Tīwes daeg* or *Tiu's day*, which translates in Latin to *diēs Mārtis* or "day of Mars". Shall I go on, or do you already know that better dictionaries offer an etymology (word origin/history) for most of the words they contain (e.g., <http://www.dictionary.com>).

Dr. Velikovsky explains further that,

The naming of the seven days of the week in honor of the seven planets is not only an act of reverence apportioned to these gods, but also a memorial to the seven ages that were governed by each of the seven planets in succession. This idea can be traced in the establishment of the Jewish week with its Sabbath. Although [underlining mine] the social significance of the Sabbath as the universal day of rest for man, his servant, and the domestic animal working for him is so apparent from many passages in the Scriptures and especially from the beneficent application of a weekly day of rest by all civilized nations that took this precept from the Hebrew Bible, [nevertheless] the cosmological meaning of the Sabbath must not remain overlooked.

In [5 or] six ages the world and mankind went through the pangs of genesis or creation with its metamorphoses. It is not by mistake that the ages which were brought to their end in the catastrophes of the Deluge [on The 1st Visit of Mercury, not so identified, nonetheless 'covered' in Part II], of the Confusion of Languages [on The 2nd Visit of Mercury, 'covered' in Part III] or of the Overturning of the Plain [at The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, which I'm guessing isn't really one of the **great judgments** - or "metamorphoses" - but nonetheless 'covered' in Part IV], are described in the book of Genesis: the time of Genesis or creation was not over until the Sabbath of the Universe arrived. With the end of the world age simultaneous with the end of the Middle Kingdom and the Exodus, the Sabbath of the Universe should have begun.

But I count only 4 "ages" at most—with at most 3 'sky-changing catastrophes' or "metamorphoses" - up to and including "the Exodus". I mean if Creation Week initiates The 1st Age, and if The 1st Visit of Mercury initiates The 2nd Age, and if The 2nd Visit of Mercury initiates The 3rd Age, and if The 1st Visit of Venus at The Exodus initiates The 4th, (because The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah likely doesn't), and The 2nd Visit of Venus - on "Joshua's Day" - The 5th, and The Visits of Mars altogether The 6th, then The Great Tribulation must initiate The 7th, where The Millennium will span the real "Sabbath of the Universe", that is, of this still existing "Universe", making The Creation of the New Heaven and Earth an event more in the class with Creation Week, that is, an event that establishes both a 'new universe' and its 'first age', though in the case of this latest event, its 'only age'.

Still we could '**speculate**' - it's a form of '**asking, seeking and knocking**', after all - about the '**right interpretation**' here a little differently too by, for example, supposing that both of The Visits of Venus, like The Visits of Mars, being so close together too, may also only initiate one 'new age', and that therefore The Great Tribulation will instead mark the initiation of The 6th Age, and The Creation of

a New Heaven and Earth The 7th, making it the real, and in this case an actually **everlasting**, "Sabbath of the Universe". I'm open, but I think this is generally the **right** idea, one way or another. And by-the-way, thinking that this present universe could have '**lasted**' **for ever** is not such a strange idea. **Remember** Adam and Eve had one, until they lost it.

And Dr. Velikovsky 'weighs in' on some of this 'misnumbering of ages' too, seeing that,

The destruction of the world in the days of the Exodus closed, in the [mis-]conception of the Hebrews, the age [or "ages"] of creation. It was [supposed] to signify the end of the time when the Earth and men were to be shaped and reshaped. [And this is understood by...] The traditional and very old Hebrew prayer at the beginning of the Sabbath [which] opens with these words: "The sixth day. And the heavens and the earth were established. And the Lord finished in the seventh day the entire work that He did and rested from all the work that He did."

The [somewhat '**misunderstood**'] meaning of this passage is that in six world ages the heavens and the earth were finally established, and that now, in the seventh age, no further changes in the cosmic order should be expected. The Lord is actually [or evidently at least used to be popularly] implored [evidently generally by prayer] to refrain from further reshaping the Earth.

The idea that God's day is a millennium is often met in Talmudic literature; the apostle Peter also says: "One day is with the Lord as a thousand years" [2 Pe 3:8]. Thus the seven days of the week represent seven world ages; and the day of the Sabbath represents the seventh world age, which is our age. According to the rabbis of the Tractate Shabbat of the Babylonian Talmud, "Sabbath" is to be interpreted as *sabbatu* - cessation of the divine wrath. [Tractate Shabbat [which contains the Talmudic laws relating to Shabbat, or to "the weekly day of rest"] 24 13B. Salomon Reinach [a late 19th/early 20th Century "French archaeologist" who "made valuable archaeo-logical discoveries" and "received honours from the chief learned societies of Europe"... [and who] also became "curator of the national museums" of France", "editor" of "*Revue archéologique*", and published a dozen well received academic, historical and 'religious' works, including], *Cults, Myths, Religion* (1912), pp.168 ff [- last time, "ff." or just "f." abbreviates "and the following pages"].] This fits exactly our idea of the Sabbath as the age of rest when the heavens and the earth are established and are not to be disturbed again.

Well again, kind of, except that God's "divine wrath" doesn't 'cease' for good at The Exodus. However it will end after The Great Tribulation, except for The Last Rebellion, and except that this "last" judgment isn't really for "further reshaping the Earth". It just marks the end of it, and when God will finally **create** an entirely **new, incorruptible, and everlasting** one.

And by-the-way, when God says **everlasting**, He specifically tells us that this does not just include **an everlasting covenant, kingdom, possession and dominion** (especially for the **great in the kingdom**), nor just the opportunity to participate in an **everlasting priesthood**, whereby we may **for ever** participate in the '**neverending**' **increase** of His **everlasting kingdom** and **peace**, and I mean

except that there will also be **everlasting statute[s]**, including the ones for continuing the multiple annual **feasts**, etc., and there won't just be all the **everlasting hills, mountain, 'hundred-mile-high' gates or doors**, and such phenomenon as **'self-originating' everlasting light**, because we will also have **the everlasting God**, Who has **everlasting arms of strength**, and who is our **everlasting Father**, and we will have His Son as our **everlasting king**, who will **'establish' everlasting righteousness**, and **remembrance** or **'honoring of the righteous**, as well as other **everlasting sign[s]** that distinguish **honour**, and He will **lead** everyone **in the way everlasting**, and that is, He will give us all **everlasting salvation, mercy, grace, consolation, hope, kindness, joy, love, life**, and, if that's not enough - as this couldn't be even the half of it - **an everlasting name** too.

Dr. Vekikovsky next attempts to clear up the logical question, concluding,

Many exegetes [Biblical scholars] have wondered as to why the prayer of benediction to the Sabbath starts with the words: "The sixth day," expecting to find there the words "The seventh day." The words "the sixth day" are not necessarily wrong here: the meaning may be that with the expiration of the sixth age the heaven and the earth become unchangeable. But it may be that the prayer originated in pre-Exodus days when only six ages were counted...

An "exegete", to again be more specific, but this time according to my dictionary, is "skilled in exegesis", that is, "skilled" in the "critical explanation or interpretation of a text or portion of a text, especially of the Bible." And may God **ble**ss** them** every one, even as **we hope** God will **ble**ss** us** is this **endeavor**. However we have already too often witnessed that they are more **unskilled** than they think they are. And aren't we all at some level? And **O** the **everlasting reproach** and **perpetual shame** that awaits us, even if only beyond the **judgment seat**, for such **'misused unskilfulness'**, that is, opposed to the **'everlasting honour'** I spoke of in my last paragraph (e.g., [Psalm 4](#); [Psalm 33](#), especially from Verse 13 on; [Psalm 83](#), especially Verses 12 and 16; [Psalm 119](#), especially Verse 31; and [Jeremiah 23](#), especially the first and last verses).

But "six ages" would only be possible "in pre-Exodus days" if you count such 'events' as The Fall of Adam and Eve, and The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah too, and I mean 'events' that probably did not so much change the perspective of the sky, and even then we're still an 'event' short. And otherwise, just counting possible 'changed views of the sky', I count no more than 3 "pre-Exodus...ages". Dr. Velikovsky nevertheless proceeds, saying,

...The prayer next refers to the Sabbath as "the day of rest, the [1] memorial to the act of genesis, because this day is [2] the beginning of the reckoning of days, [and 3] memory of the Exodus from Egypt." The assembling of three different causes for the establishment of the Sabbath would appear confusing were it not for the fact that the three occurrences were [**'mis-imagined' to be**] simultaneous: [1] the last act of creation, [2] the new [**or no longer "disturbed"**] flow of time, [and 3] the Exodus from Egypt.

Uh huh, again this is maybe the right idea, except again, when it come to The Exodus, I demand a recount. And I mean the count of "six ["reshaped"] ages", including the original one following Creation Week, making 7 altogether, only works

if we add what we already **know is to come, and only if** we're talking about 'significantly-enough-time-separated', 'changed views of the sky', at least including all The Visits of Mars as counting as just one of these "metamorphoses", **and only if** the "three occurrences" marking the 'arrival' of The 7th Age, or "the Sabbath of the Universe", include, instead of The Exodus, The Great Tribulation, or maybe instead The Creation of the New Heaven and Earth, where then The 2 Visits of Venus and the entire Great Tribulation must be counted as just single 'age initiations' too. But whether The Millennium is really the 7th "Earth" or "creation" or "age" of this still existing Heaven, or really just The 6th Age - I mean to God - it will be 'on the clock' too, but it will be followed by The Creation of the New Heaven and Earth, and by The Eternal Age of The Kingdom of God and of Christ.

And Dr. Velikovsky sees more of these problems himself, conceding and explaining,

Although [or even though] after the beginning of the ['mis-counted'] seventh age new world catastrophes disrupted the established order - [by The Visits of Mars] in the eighth and seventh centuries before the present era - the idea of the Sabbath of the Universe was already so deeply rooted that the new world catastrophes were not counted, so as not to discredit the establishment of the Sabbath [and even though Mars is usually included in "the days of the week"]. But the return of the sun's shadow ten degrees in the days of Hezekiah and Isaiah [with the help of apparently The 6th Visit of Mars] was registered as "the seventh world wonder" [Ginzberg, *Legends*, VI. 367], and thus actually the eighth world age started [na-uh]. The difference in the magnitude of the catastrophes caused also some nations of antiquity to count six, seven (as most nations), or eight, or nine, or even ten ages [- and counting all the 'visits', do I hear 11?] [See *Worlds In Collision*, Chapter 2, section "The World Ages" and "The Sun Ages" [which we'll cover in SECTION 9]]; one and the same people, like the Mayas, had traditions of [both] five and seven ages in diverse books of theirs. Also, catastrophes recurring at short intervals [or that are not 'significantly-enough-time-separated'], as those which took place in the eighth and beginning of the seventh century before the present era [- The 7 Visits of Mars in 90 years], could be regarded as the closing of [just] one age, or a few short additional ages could be conceived. Catastrophes, variable as they were in their magnitude and consequences, could have had a subjective appraisal [- that is, viewed and accounted for differently by different peoples and perspectives]. Even the encounter of the earth with a lesser comet, which appeared very bright, in the days when Octavian Augustus observed the mortuary activities in honor of Julius Caesar, and which dispersed its gases in the atmosphere of the Earth, was regarded by one contemporary author as the end of a world age and the beginning of a new one, although no perceptible changes in the motion of the earth [and therefore no 'change in the view of the sky'] and no greater calamity than a year-long gloom were observed. [This comet of -44 was also observed in China. See De Cambre, *Histoire de l'astronomie chinoise* (Paris,1817), p.358.]

And though Mars is popularly included in the names of "the days of the week", I just discovered, (these '**studies**' becoming increasingly less a 'simulation' as we '**progress**' together), that no '**planet**' **gods** are used in the names of the Hebrew

“days of the week”. Their names instead are – translated into English, and starting with Sunday – “first day”, “second day”, “third day”, “fourth day”, “fifth day”, “sixth day”, and Saturday, the ‘seventh day’, in Hebrew is *Yom Shabbat* (or just *Shabbat*), but would be more literally translated as “rest day”.

And it occurs to me then that, like the Seventh Day Adventists, Christians should best **keep the Sabbath...holy** too ([Exo 20:8](#); [Exo 31:14](#)) – instead of the **day** more popularly **kept** [H4931](#); [H6213](#); [H8104](#); [H5341](#), which is “first day”, apparently not the **day** we’ll **keep** in The Millennium and beyond. But to make a long ‘exegesis’ short – and really just ‘kick this can further down the road’ – I no longer think of condemning Christians for celebrating Christmas, with all its ‘**planet-god-worshipping**’ ‘trappings’, as long as the focus remains on the birth of Christ, and neither do I condemn others who **esteemeth one day above another** [Rom 14:5](#), whatever **day** it is, or was, and even though I **believe** the popular Sunday **esteem** [H6186](#); [H2803](#); [G2233](#) is the result of ‘**planet-god-worshipping**’ ‘trappings’ too. And I mean I learned from the Seventh Day Adventists that the ‘earliest Church’ **worshipped** on Saturday originally, but then increasing numbers of people – I would guess mostly because of ‘scheduling conflicts’ involving **worshipping** some ‘**planet-god**’ or another, but evidently mostly Saturn – made common the practice of **worshipping** on both Saturday and, to support those otherwise occupied on Saturday, on Sunday too, until the Sunday **worshippers** finally won out, and Saturday **worship** became rare to non-existent, at least until Ellen G. White began pointing out this arguably less appropriate **esteem**.

However, yes, and it’s a big however, mostly because of what I **discern** as a ‘**spirit of divisiveness**’ dominating this Seventh Day Adventists so-called ‘denomination’ – or call it too much resistance to Church **unity** – I don’t rate Ellen G. White’s exegesis, and certainly not her eschatology, very highly otherwise, but certainly very low indeed if claiming to have the Lord’s **inspiration** when surely she does not. Nevertheless I imagine 12 ‘**floors**’ in New Jerusalem, with only a very ‘**few of the few**’ that **live** closer to the top. So again, and as **instructed** by the Apostle Paul, none of this is necessarily **condemnation**, just more ‘**spiritually perfect exegesis**’, or **the power which the Lord hath given ‘me’ to edification**, if you will, though since these topics are too briefly addressed here, they too become, besides ‘**implied-documented saints’ supplication**’, more of those ‘**implied-documented asking-seeking-knocking questions**’ that we’re **waiting** on the Lord for ‘**better corrected, improved, and expanded answers**’ to, ones reserved—or **predestinated**—for further attention on a subsequent “rest day”.

And Dr. Velikovsky, not yet ready to ‘rest his case’ either, presses this issue further, saying,

The Sabbath being a day of rest in the social order, its cosmic meaning in the great fear of the end of the world can be suspected also in view of the rigor with which it was observed; at the beginning of the Christian era, members of some sects among the Jews would not even move, and would remain in the place and position in which the beginning of the Sabbath found them [Josephus, *The Jewish War*]. Social institutions are generally not observed with such an awe and with such rigor. It was actually not [just] the Deity, having worked during six ages and reposed in the seventh who gives example to man; it is [also] man, by abstaining from work on the seventh day, the symbol of the seventh world age, who

invites the Supreme Being to keep the established order of the heaven and earth, and not to submit them to new revolutions.

The same idea is found in the prayer of the Chinese Emperor Shun, who lived shortly after the Emperor Yahu [who we will hear from again in SECTION 9]. This prayer, declaimed by him, reads: "The sun and moon are [at last] constant; the stars and other heavenly bodies have their [finally 'undisturbed'] motions; the four seasons observe their [henceforth 'unchanging'] rule." [J. Legge, *The Chinese Classics* (Hong Kong, 1865), Vol. III, p.1.]

Or in the words of present-day 'folklore', Emperor Shun was saying, "Calm down Chicken Little, the sky is falling no more." However Dr. Velikovsky acknowledges that,

A number of centuries thereafter, in the days of the Emperor Kwei [and because of Mars], the order of the celestial sphere was again disrupted: "the planets went out of their courses" [*Ibid.* ["*Ibid*" meaning, "referring to a [or the] book, article, chapter, or page previously cited"], p.125].

Also Hebrew psalmists and prophets tried to suggest to nature [or plead with God] to abstain from revolt; but at the same time they expressed their fear [or prophesied] of changes in the future comparable to those in the past. After more than two thousand five hundred years [since The Exodus], one of the two original ideas of the Sabbath, its cosmic meaning [which was that to **keep the Sabbath** kept God from 'further disrupting' His Creation], was lost to mankind, leaving [only] the social idea [of **rest**] conscious and triumphant the world over [and even if **kept** on 'the wrong day'].

But if the Prophets of God did not make it clear enough, Jesus surely set us all straight about this issue of 'further disruption', saying,

...great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be [is coming] [Mat 24:21](#) [[John 5:28](#)].

And don't forget we already **know** that King David, when he returned the Ark of the Covenant to Jerusalem, when Isreal is then still united in 12 tribes, sings about the time that is coming when God will have to **save, gather** and **deliver** His people by **great, wondrous** and **marvellous works** [1Ch 16](#); [Psa 105](#). And he couldn't have been singing about Mars, because though it was to some extent used to **save** some of God's people, it was otherwise used by Him to help **judge, scatter** and make **captives** of His people, as we will '**better see**' in [SECTION 10](#).

Deification of the Planets

The Sun and the Moon are two great luminaries, and it is easily understandable that the imagination of the peoples should be preoccupied with them and should ascribe to them mythological deeds. Yet the ancient mythologies of the Chaldeans, the Greeks, the Romans, the Hindus, the Mayans, preoccupy themselves not with the Sun or the Moon, but *prima facie* [or clearly] with the planets. Marduk, the great god of the Babylonians, was the planet Jupiter [which I '**mis-imagined**' as Mars in

RGT]; so was Amon of the Egyptians, Zeus of the Greeks and Jupiter of the Romans. [These identifications are discussed below, Part IV: "Jupiter of the Thunderbolt".] It was much superior to Shamash-Helios, the Sun. Why was it revered by all peoples? Why was the planet Mars chosen to be the personification of the god of war? Why did Kronos of the Greeks, Saturn of the Romans, play a part in hundreds of myths and legends? Thoth [Mercury] of the Egyptians, Nebo [Mercury] and Nergal [Mars] of the Babylonians, Mithra [Saturn] and Mazda [Jupiter] of the [Medo-]Persians, Vishnu [Saturn] and Shiva [Jupiter] of the Hindus, Huitzilopochtli [Mars] and Quetzalcoatl [Quetzal-coatl, Quetzal-cohuatl or Quezalcohatl - Venus] of the Mexicans, were personifications of planets; innumerable hymns were dedicated to them and adventures and exploits ascribed to them.

"The life of our planet has its real source in the Sun," wrote E. Renan. "All force is a transformation of the Sun. Before religion had gone so far as to proclaim that God must be placed in the absolute and the ideal, that is to say, outside of the world, one cult only was reasonable and scientific, and that was the cult of the Sun." [*Dialogues et fragments philoso-phiques* [*Dialogues and Philosophical Fragments*] (Paris,1876), p.168]; [Cf. Macrobius [again, "cf.", or "Cf.", is "short for...confer and instructs the reader to compare one thing with another"].] But the Sun was subordinate to the planets, even though they are not conspicuous, poor sources of light, and no sources of warmth.

My encyclopedia 'informs' me that Macrobius Ambrosius Theodosius, (cited by Mr. Renan above), also just Theodosius, was a Roman "who lived during the early 5th Century", though possibly of Greek descent from Egypt, (and though Dr. Velikovsky places some of his writing in the 4th Century too), and that otherwise, like many of these "ancients", "Little is known for certain about Macrobius". But he evidently lived "at the transition of the Roman to the Byzantine Empire, and when Latin was as widespread as Greek among the elite". "He is primarily known for his writings", including "the widely copied and read", *Commentarii in Somnium Scipionis* (*Commentary on the Dream of Scipio*), "one of the most important sources for Platonism [- the 'original' Gnosticism or "know-it-all-ism",] in the Latin West during the Middle Ages", and including the *Saturnalia*, "a compendium of ancient Roman religious and antiquarian ['ancient artifact'] lore", and that is, 'an inventory of folklore and myth'.

And the 19th Century French prodigy, Ernest Renan, a Catholic "philosopher" and "historian" who was an "expert of Semitic languages and civilizations", has a story in my encyclopedia that reads a little like Charles Chiniquy's, (author of *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*), except that Mr. Renan spent his life in France, and too much time in Paris, and too much emulating his German predecessors, including the 18th/early 19th Century, already **corrupt** Protestant philosophers Hegel and Kant, and that is, not enough influenced by more **spiritual** Protestants, so he apparently didn't, as hard as he may otherwise have fought to, make it **out of her**.

And by-the-way, and to remind you, my favorite encyclopedia is the source of most of my otherwise unreferenced quotes and information, but of course may not always agree with the 'information' available to you, and whatever the source. But I will also make clear that I tend to better respect the 'more loudly disrespected' sources, and tend to less respect the sources more openly praised as more respectable. And

by now you should know the **worldly** reason why. But they certainly all disagree with each other, even more so than 'modern translations of scripture'. And I mean I just find that my favorite encyclopedia generally offers 'better-accounted-for information', being so far somewhat less controlled by the bias of the authors, and is in a format that is better designed and supplied for 'digging deeper' into topics than others.

Still I have to remind you of this most important point, that nothing but **scripture—'pure scripture'**—is free from the need to be 'filtered', though even **it** is not free from the need of '**spiritual handing and dividing**'. And again I mean that, **There is a way which [or that] seemeth right** to the **carnal** - even to **carnal** Christians, which may include anyone not long **exercised** in the **use of strong meat - but the end thereof are the ways of death**, because only **he that is spiritual** is **able to discern both evil and good**, and therefore most will **choose** - from their '**ignorant and deceived perspective**' - **the way that leadeth to destruction**, though **Christ** Who **hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God** is nevertheless always '**withstanding**'.

And Dr. Velikovsky is not out of 'bright ideas', 'spotlighting' for us that,

The night sky illuminated by stars is majestic. The geometrical figures of the constellations, such as the Pleiades [or the Seven Sisters - which actually only look like 7 stars, but is a *star cluster* with "over 1,000 statistically confirmed members"], Orion ['wearing' his 3-star, tilted "belt"], or the Great Bear [otherwise known as the Big Dipper], rolling from the east in the evening to the west before morning, are favorite motifs in poetry, no less than the Sun and the Moon. But the discrepancy in the choice of motifs by the ancients becomes still more obvious. The constellations of the sky took only a minor and incidental part in the mythology of the ancient peoples. The *planets* were the major gods, and they rule the universe.

[For ancient planetary worship among the **Babylonians**, see Bartel L. van der Waerden, *Science Awakening*, Vol. II (Leyden, 1974), p.59; among the **Egyptians**, see Heinrich Karl Brugsch [a 19th Century "German Egyptologist... associated with Auguste Mariette in his excavations at Memphis", who "became director of the School of Egyptology at Cairo, producing numerous very valuable works and pioneering the decipherment of Demotic, the simplified script of the later Egyptian periods"], *Astronomische und astrologische Inschriften altaegyptischer Denkmäler* [*Astronomical and Astrological Inscriptions of Ancient Egyptian Monuments*] (Leipzig, 1883); Dr. Henri Édouard Naville [a late 19th/early 20th Century "Swiss archaeologist, Egyptologist and Biblical scholar... [who] studied at the University of Geneva, King's College, London, and the Universities of Bonn, Paris, and Berlin... [who] first visited Egypt in 1865, where he copied the Horus texts in the temple at Edfu... [and during] the Franco-Prussian War he served as a captain in the Swiss army... [and his] early work concerned the solar texts and the Book of the Dead... [and in] 1882 he was invited to work for the newly founded Egypt Exploration Fund... [and he] excavated a number of sites in the Nile Delta... [and] objects he found in his Delta excavations are preserved in the Cairo Museum, British Museum, and the Museum of Fine Arts, Boston"... [and he] also "excavated" near Luxor and Abydos in Upper Egypt along the Nile [map, SECTION 8, p.274], and "he was criticized by W. M. Flinders Petrie for his ['undetailed'] archaeological methods", though by others for being too 'Biblically focused', "*La Destruction des hommes par les dieux*" [*The Destruction of Men by the Gods*], *Transactions of the Society for Biblical Archaeology* IV (1875), pp.1-18; Otto Eduard Neugebauer [a 20th Century "Austrian American mathematician and historian of science... known for his research on the history of astronomy and the other exact sciences in antiquity and into the Middle Ages... [and by] studying clay tablets, he discovered that the ancient Babylonians knew

much more about mathematics and astronomy than had been previously realized... [and the] National Academy of Sciences has called Neugebauer "the most original and productive scholar of the history of the exact sciences, perhaps of the history of science, of our age", and Dr. Richard Anthony Parker [FBA, a 20th Century "prominent Egyptologist and professor of Egyptology... A.B. from Dartmouth College in 1930, and a Ph.D. in Egyptology from the University of Chicago in 1938... [and he] then went to Luxor, Egypt to work as an epigrapher with the University of Chicago's Epigraphic and Architectural Survey, studying the mortuary temple of Ramses III... [but] World War II necessitated a temporary halt to the project... [so he] came back to Chicago to teach Egyptology at the university... [and in] 1946, he returned to Egypt to continue his work on the epigraphic survey, and soon rose to the position of field director... [and in] 1948, he founded the Department of Egyptology at Brown University and became its first chairman, and also assumed the newly created position of the Charles Edwin Wilbour Professorship.. [and he that year] also began his service as a founding trustee of the American Research Center in Egypt", and his "primary interests were in ancient science and mathematics. In 1951, he traveled to Egypt to examine monuments linked to ancient astronomy, and in subsequent years studied papyri at Paris, Florence, Vienna, Copenhagen and Oxford, in Britain... [his] major contributions... [being] significant work in the areas of Egyptian... astronomy, and chronology"], *Egyptian Astronomical Texts* (London, 1969); among the **Hebrews**, see Max Seligsohn [a late 19th/early 20th Century "American Orientalist ['Eastern studies'], born in Imperial Russia... [and having] received his rabbinical training... went in 1888 to New York City, where he studied modern languages till 1894, in which year he went to Paris to study Oriental [Eastern] languages, especially Semitic studies... [and in] 1898 he was sent by the Alliance Israélite Universelle to Abyssinia to inquire into the conditions of the Falashas [Jewish communities]; but, certain difficulties arising, he was able to proceed no farther than Cairo, where he taught for eighteen months... [and returning] to Paris, he was invited in 1902 to go to New York to become a member of the staff of office editors of *The Jewish Encyclopedia*"], "*Star Worship*" in *The Jewish Encyclopaedia* (New York, 1905); cf. L. Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews* (Philadelphia, 1925), vol. III, p.371; vol. VI, pp.66 f.; among the **Persians**, see *The Dabistan*, transl. by David Shea ["of the Oriental Department in the Honorable East India Company's College"] and Anthony Troyer ["Member of the Royal Asiatic Societies of Great Britain and Ireland, of Calcutta and Paris, and of the Ethnological Society of Paris"] (Washington, 1901); among the **Finns**, see [triple medical] Dr. and Professor John Martin Crawford's preface to [his translation of] *The Kalevala* [who is also notable for being "appointed by President Benjamin Harrison as consul-general of the United States to Russia"], (Cincinnati, 1904), p.xiv.]

"It is not easy to understand the idea which was the basis for the identification of the Babylonian gods with the planets," writes an author [Peter Christian Albrecht Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* [*The Cosmology of the Babylonians*] (Strassburg, 1890), p.134]; but the same process of identification of major gods with the planets can be found in the religions of the peoples in all parts of the world. The planets were not affiliated to the gods, or symbols of the gods – they *were* the gods. In prayers and liturgies they were invoked as gods. "The greater gods, even when addressed by name in prayer, were regarded as astral powers." [L. W. King, *Babylonian Magic and Sorcery*, (London, 1896), Section V; cf. Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride* [*On Isis and Osiris* which are Jupiter and Saturn], 48; and it will help to consider the different definitions of "astral": <http://www.dictionary.com/browse/astral?s=t>.] This or that planet is selected, according to the text of the prayer, from "the multitude of the stars of heaven" to receive a gift.

"The planetary gods are much [or by far] the most powerful of all. Their positions in the sky, their reciprocal relations... have a decisive influence on all physical and moral phenomena of the world." [Dr. Franz Cumont, *Astrology and Religion among the Greeks and Romans*, (1912), p.120; cf. idem ["cf." - for the last time - means "confer and instructs the reader to compare one thing with another", and "idem" is the abbreviation for "same as previous" source], "*Le mysticisme astral*" [*"Astral Mysticism"*], *Bull. Acad. de Belgique* (1909); also idem, "*Les noms des planetes et l'astro-latrie chez les Grecs*" [*"The Names of the Planets and the Astrology of the Greeks"*], *Antiquite Classique IV [Classical Antiquity 4]* (1935), pp.6 ff.]

The great majority of us moderns pay no attention to these points in the night sky, and probably not one in ten or even in a hundred is able to point to Jupiter or Mars in the firmament. The planets change their places, but not conspicuously. Were they indebted for their deification to this slow movement, by which they differ from the fixed stars? Did Zeus-Jupiter-Marduk-Amon become the supreme deity, the thunderer and dreadful lord of the universe, only because of his slow movement - he passes in twelve years the circle of the zodiac [or completes one orbit of the Sun], traversed by the Sun in twenty-four hours, and by the Moon even quicker? When seen with the naked eye the planet Jupiter distinguishes itself from the fixed stars of first magnitude only by this slow change of position.

Augustine [of Hippo, a Roman North African Berber, and "Early Church Father"], confused by the problem of the deification of the planets, wrote in the fourth century: "But possibly these stars which have been called by their names are these gods. They call a certain star Mercury, and likewise a certain other star Mars. But among those stars which are called by the name of gods, is that one which they call Jupiter, and yet with them Jupiter is the world. There also is that one they call Saturn, and yet they give him no small property beside, namely all seeds [or 'the father of all planets']" [*The City of God*, transl. by M. Dods (1907), Book VII, ch.15].

Principal (Dean), Professor, Rev., (Honorary) Dr. Marcus Dods was a late 19th/early 20th

Century "Scottish divine and biblical scholar", and son of Rev. Dr. Marcus Dods, a minister of the Church of Scotland (read, Scottish Presbyterian). And the younger Dods was a minister of the Free Church of Scotland, a denomination formed in 1843 by "a large withdrawal from the Church of Scotland in a schism known as the Disruption of 1843". Then in 1900 "the vast majority of the Free Church of Scotland joined with the United Presbyterian Church of Scotland", ending both's about half century of independent existence, to form the United Free Church of Scotland, which in 1929 re-united with the Church of Scotland again. Got to **love** these Scottish Presbyterians though, because, like the Methodists and Wales Presbyterians, they evidently finally 'agreed to disagree' too. And in 1889 the younger Dods, after ministering in a "Free Church" in Glasgow for 25 years, was appointed Professor of New Testament Exegesis in the New College in the University of Edinburgh, this college originally founded by the short-lived Free Church of Scotland, of which he became Principal, (yes, Dean), in 1907. Less than 2 years later he died, but was nonetheless buried in the Dean Cemetery, "a historically important Victorian cemetery north of the Dean Village, west of Edinburgh". Also

according to my encyclopedia there was a “monument to Dods erected at Belford”, but that is, to the older Dods.

Dr. Velikovsky puzzles further, both informing us and questioning,

Mercury, the closest to the Sun, is barely visible, being hidden in the Sun’s rays. But the ancients made the planet Mercury into a great god – Hermes or Nebo. Why was it feared and worshiped? What is there generally in the planets to inspire awe, so as to influence people to build temples for them, to sing liturgies, to bring sacrifices, to narrate legends, and to dedicate to them the domain of science, of war, of agriculture?

The ancients [- at least the ones after [The Visits of Mars](#) -] were sufficiently enlightened to know [being closer to the testimony of eye witnesses] that the planets are large rocks like the Earth that circle on orbits. [This was the teaching of Anaxagoras as reported by Diogenes Laertius, *Lives of the Famous Philosophers*, II, 8.] And this makes the modern scholars wonder: knowing that the planets are rocks, why did the ancients believe that they are gods? [E. Pfeiffer, *Gestirne und Wetter im griechischen Volksglauben* [[Stars and Weather in Greek Folklore](#)] (Leipzig, 1914), pp. 24 f]; [The deification of the planets is advocated in the Platonic *Epinomis* [‘Epic Heroes’] 471; cf. also Cicero, *De Natura Deorum* [[On the Nature of the Gods](#)] II, 21, 54-55.]

Anaxagoras lived after [The Visits of Mars](#) in the late 6th/early 5th Century BC – the closest to these ‘[visits](#)’ so far – and “brought philosophy and the spirit of scientific inquiry from Ionia [Coastal Turkey] to Athens”. Besides being a philosopher, he was an astronomer and mathematician too, and like others identified so far, will be referenced by Dr. Velikovsky further.

The key to this problem, which is the major problem of all classical mythology, is already in our hands. The planet Venus was deified because of its dramatic appearance, and because of the havoc it brought to the world, as described in *Worlds In Collision*, I illuminated also the events which made Mars a feared god [most of which we’ll get to in [SECTION 10](#)]. Divine qualities were [just as much] ascribed to the other planets because of the catastrophes they wrought in earlier ages. [However as he has also explained, “catastrophes... wrought in earlier ages” cannot be as completely identified being behind ‘the veils’ of subsequent “catastrophes”.]

Marcus Tullius Cicero was a 1st Century BC...

...Roman philosopher, politician, lawyer, orator, political theorist, consul, and

constitutionalist. He came from a wealthy municipal family of the Roman equestrian order [- “the lower of the two aristocratic classes of ancient Rome”], and is considered one of Rome’s greatest orators and prose stylists. His influence on the Latin language was so immense that the subsequent history of prose in, not only Latin but European languages up to the 19th century, was said to be either a reaction against or a return to his style...

Though he was an accomplished orator and successful lawyer, Cicero believed his political career was his most important achievement. It was during his consulship that the second Catilinarian conspiracy attempted

to overthrow the government through an attack on the city by outside forces, and Cicero suppressed the revolt by executing five conspirators without due process. [And Senator Catiline, the leader of this conspiracy, formerly Praetor ("the commander of an army (in the field or, less often, before the army had been mustered) [and/] or, an elected *magistratus* (magistrate)") in 68 BC, "and for the following two years was the propraetorian governor for Africa", who was defended as such by Julius, but in conspiring to be Consul in Cicero's place, was finally killed along with his entire, much-dwindled, but still 3,000 strong, and reputedly uncommonly brave army.] During the chaotic latter half of the 1st century BC marked by civil wars and the dictatorship of Gaius Julius Caesar, Cicero championed a return to the traditional republican government. Following Julius Caesar's death [in 44 BC], Cicero became an enemy of Mark Antony in the ensuing power struggle, attacking him in a series of speeches. He was proscribed [which is a "decree of condemnation to death or banishment", and in his case,] as an enemy of the state by the Second Triumvirate and consequently executed by soldiers operating on their behalf in 43 BC after having been intercepted during attempted flight from the Italian peninsula. His severed hands and head were then, as a final revenge of Mark Antony, displayed in the Roman Forum.

Petrarch's rediscovery of Cicero's letters [in 1345] is often credited for initiating the 14th-century Renaissance in public affairs, humanism, and classical Roman culture...

Petrarch is often considered the founder of Humanism [or "one of the earliest humanists"].

Was Consul Cicero responsible for "initiating...humanism"? Not directly. Not with the way he died. And certainly not as much as **'the father of lies'**. But Consul Cicero does seem to have been indirectly used by this **liar** for this purpose, and that would be for the change in his strategy from **'worshipping creation'** to **'self idolatry'**, where we can now mark another key event in 1345 AD. However, according to Dr. Velikovsky, not everyone was inspired by Cicero.

In the Persian holy books it is said that "on the planets depends the existence or non-existence of the world - wherefore are they especially to be venerated" [*Yasnavi*. 307. See J. Scheftelowitz, *Die Zeit als Schicksalgottheit in der indischen und iranischen Religion* [*The Time as Fate Deity in Indian and Iranian Religion*] (Stuttgart,1929), p.2]. "The seven planets rule the universe," says a Nabatean inscription. ["Nabataea" is "an ancient Arab kingdom of SW Asia, in the area of present-day Jordan".] [D. Chwolson, *Die Ssabier und der Ssabismus* [*The Sabeans and Satisism* - a "Sabean" being an "inhabitant of the region of Arabia now known as Yemen", though "Saba" is also associated - or confused - with the Biblical **Sheba**] (St. Petersburg,1856), Vol. II, pp.604f.] The Greeks and Romans believed that "everything is, in fact, subject to the changes brought about by the revolutions of the stars."

[Cumont, *Astrology and Religion among the Greeks and Romans*, pp.113-114] [cf. Martin Persson Nilsson [late19th/early 20th Century "Swedish philologist, mythographer ["collects or records myths in writing"], and a scholar of the Greek, Hellenistic and Roman religious systems", and Professor of Ancient Greek, Classical Archaeology and Ancient History at [the University of] Lund", who "combined the literary evidence with

the archaeological evidence, linking historic and prehistoric evidence for the evolution of the Greek mythological cycles”], *“The Origin of Belief among the Greeks in the Divinity of the Heavenly Bodies”*, *Harvard Tr. Rel.* 33 (1940), pp.1ff. and idem [last time, “same as previous” source], *“Symbolisme astronomique et mystique dans certains cultes publics grecs”* [“*Astronomical and Mystical Symbolism in Some Greek Public Cults*”], *Homages Bidez-Cumont* (1949), pp.217 ff. Cf. also P. Boyance [20th Century “specialist in Latin literature and its Greek sources”, who “taught at the Faculty of Arts of Bordeaux, then was appointed professor at the Sorbonne”, otherwise known as the University of Paris, and then a “member of the Institute” of France, and finally “Director of the French School of Rome”, which is an “institute of research in history, archeology and humanities and social sciences, under the tutelage of the Academy of Inscriptions and Belles-Lettres”, and “part of the network of French Schools Abroad”], *“La religion astrale de Platon a Ciceron”* [“*The Astral Religion of Plato in Ciceron*”], *Revue des Etudes Grecques* LXV [*Greek Studies Review* 65] (1952), pp.312-350.]

Professor, Dr. Franz Cumont, who we’ve heard from several times already, was a late 19th/ early 20th Century “Belgian archaeologist and historian”, and also “a philologist and student of epigraphy”, that is, both a ‘language and inscription expert’, “who brought these often isolated specialties to bear on the syncretic [‘different but related’] mystery religions of Late Antiquity, [most] notably [on] Mithraism”, the Roman worship of Saturn. (Bidez to be bio’ed much later.)

"The celestial orbs by their combined movements are the authors of all that was, and is, and is to come." According to ancient Hebrew traditions, "there are seven archangels, each of whom is associated with a planet." [J. Trachtenberg, *Jewish Magic and Superstition* (New York, 1939), p.98.] "The seven archangels were believed to play an important part in the universal order through their associations with the planets..." [or through their roles in the **administration** of the various **great judgments** using the **planet**] [*Ibid* [or ‘previous citing’], p.250].

I could mention here that thus far – and to some extent intentionally – I have given **angels** little credit in the **administration** ^{G1248} of God’s **great judgments**, and really given it all to God, and most of that because of that ‘**great abracadabra**’ which was **the curse**. And though the here mentioned “archangels” are more mythical than Biblical, Dr. Velikovsky, along with **scripture**, will help us to ‘**correct, improve and expand**’ our **understanding** of the role that **the angels of God** apparently did and will ‘perform’ in His **great judgments** from here on.

The reason for the deification of the planets lay in the fact that the planets only a short time ago were not faultlessly circling celestial bodies, nor were they harmless. This is also expressed in a Mandaean text: "How cruel are the planets that stay there and conspire evil in their rage... the planets conspire in rage against us." [M. Lidzbarski, *“Ein mandaeischer Amulett”* [“*A Mandaean Amulet*”], *Florilegium* [which means, “a collection of literary pieces”], pp.350 f.]



Uranus

The seven planets of the ancients comprised the Sun, the Moon, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn.

However, the ancients' religions and mythology speak for their knowledge of Uranus; the dynasty [or succession] of gods had Uranus followed by Saturn, and the latter by Jupiter. In the clear sky of Babylonia the planet Uranus could have been observed by an unaided eye; but since it was known as a deposed deity, it would seem that at some later time the planet lost much of its brightness [and/or it was better seen through the *water canopy lens*]. [Uranus was discovered in 1781 by William Herschel, but he first announced it to be a *comet*.]

Sir John Frederick William Herschel, FRS, was the renowned late 18th/early 19th Century “British astronomer and composer of German origin”, and brother to Caroline Herschel, his “assistant” *astronomer*, who is credited with many discoveries of her own (portrait of this pair, p.258). He “constructed his first large telescope in 1774, and spent nine years carrying out sky surveys to investigate double stars.” The *resolving power* of his *telescopes* revealed that *nebulae* were *clusters of stars*, and ‘he’ published catalogues of them – all written by Caroline – including thousands of distinguished *objects*, which in 1864 were used, after further additions and compiling by Caroline, her nephew John, and others, to publish ‘his’ *General Catalogue of Nebulae and Clusters of Stars* (CN), this publication appearing 42 years after Sir William’s death and a decade after Caroline’s. And this “list was eventually enlarged and renamed” the *New General Catalogue of Nebulae and Clusters of Stars* (NGC), which is essentially still being used – and added to – today, except “Revised” was finally added in front of this already long title (RNGC), and Caroline – who clearly laid the groundwork for it, and arguably did the most work on it, even to this day, no longer gets any credit for it.

During “an observation on 13 March 1781”, he – with Caroline as his full-time “assistant” for about a decade by then – realized that one celestial body wasn’t a *star*, and though he originally identified it as a “comet” – Caroline found 8 of them in her career – he ultimately, with the help of another *astronomer*, identified “the first planet to be discovered since antiquity”, which eventually came to be known as Uranus. As a result of this discovery, King George III appointed him Court Astronomer, and “grants were provided for the construction of new telescopes”. He was also elected as a Fellow of the Royal Society. And along the way he “pioneered the use of astronomical spectrophotometry as a diagnostic tool, using prisms and temperature measuring equipment to measure the wavelength distribution of stellar spectra.” This was the precursor to *electromagnetic spectroscopy*, but done entirely with *visible light*, and without it being “time resolved”, that is, without accounting for *red or blue shift*. “Other work included an improved determination of the rotation period of Mars, the discovery that the Martian polar caps vary seasonally, the discovery of Titania and Oberon (moons of Uranus) and Enceladus and Mimas (moons of Saturn).” He also “discovered infrared radiation”, this over a decade and a half before he became Sir William, having made the discovery in 1800, and having been made a Knight of the Royal Guelphic Order (KH) in 1816. In 1820, along with his son John and others, he founded the Royal Astronomical Society, and became its first President. And John too, in 1931, was knighted Sir John Herschel (also KH), and ultimately became a 3-time president and multiple award winner of the Royal Astronomical Society. And when Sir William died in 1822, besides Caroline, his work was continued by his only, but multiple-award-winning son.

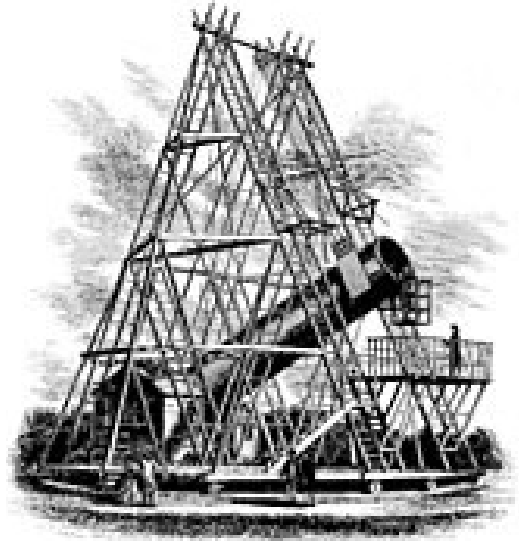
And Caroline wasn't entirely ignored. She was, "For her work as William's assistant... granted an annual salary of £50 (equivalent to £5,700 in 2016 [or \$7,000 in 2017])" by King George III, making her "the first female in England to be honored with a government position". And in 1828 "she was awarded the Royal Astronomical Society's Gold Medal for her work", and "no woman would be awarded it again until... 1996." And there's an



asteroid, ("Lucretia", her second name), and a Moon crater named after her, and she is honored in both poetry and art, and "with a [Google Doodle](#) on her 266th birthday"

(3/16/2016 - see it on [p.259](#)).

During his career, Sir William "constructed more than four hundred telescopes. The largest and most famous of these" being a *reflecting telescope* "with a 49½-inch-diameter (1.26 m) primary mirror and a 40-foot (12 m) focal length." Due to the poor *reflectivity* of the *speculum mirrors* of that time, "he eliminated the small diagonal mirror of a standard newtonian reflector from his design and tilted his primary mirror so he could view the formed image directly", this design now known as the [Herschelian telescope](#) (drawing [p.259](#)). "In 1789, shortly after this instrument was operational, he discovered a new moon of Saturn."



In the town he spent most his life, and where he died, Slough, "there are several memorials to him and his discoveries". An epitaph reads, "He broke through the barriers of the heavens."

And about atheist, "M. Laplace", (uh-huh, read, 'Miss-sure' Laplace, as he was 'lost' - pun intended), a more 'Christian friendly' encyclopedia informs me that Sir William wrote in his diary:

The difference was occasioned by an exclamation of the First Consul's [\[evidently Napoléon Bonaparte's, 'serving' in this position from 1799-1804\]](#), who asked in a tone of exclamation or admiration, (when we were speaking of the extent of the sidereal [\[or starry\]](#) heavens), "and who is the author of all this?" M. de La Place wished to shew that a chain of natural causes would account for the construction and preservation of the wonderful system; this the First Consul rather opposed. Much may be said on the subject; by joining the arguments of both we shall be led to "Nature and Nature's God" [*eaſc minor*].

However my favorite encyclopedia informs me that Sir William also believed that "other planets were populated", including Mars, as well as the Moon, which he "compared...to the English countryside", and it also informs me that such ideas were "in line with most of his contemporary scientists". Then again I've suggested that they weren't entirely wrong, as, with Dr, Velikovsky's help, I will eventually explain.

And we might also infer from the diary that the First Consul, Napoleon Bonaparte (1799-1804), and finally Emperor Napoleon I (1804-14), wasn't all bad.

And Sir William's son, Sir John, 1st Baronet, KH, FRS, and otherwise "the great English astronomer, chemist, mathematician, and physicist", gives me another occasion to reference my favorite 'Christian high school biology textbook', published by A Beka Book (1986), subtitled, *God's Living Creation* - and remember I mean I taught (and still would teach) classes using this book - because in it Sir John is quoted as calling Mr. Duhwind's *theory* the "law of higgledy piggledy" (p.348). Uh-huh, that would be 'nonsense', which would be 'accurate'.

And speaking of such 'nonsense', if you could 'regurgitate such swill', or was otherwise an exceptional contortionist, then you could - at least metaphorically - be someone with your head up, uh, a particular *planet*, but one that at this particular point will go unnamed, one reason being that we need to get back to the "sidereal heavens", and specifically to that *planet*.

It is quite possible that the planet Uranus is the very planet known by this name to the ancients. The age of Uranus [in various "traditions"] preceded the age of Saturn; it came to an end with the "removal" of Uranus by Saturn [probably when Uranus ended up 'barreling on its side']. Saturn is said to have emasculated his father Uranus. [Hesiod, *Theogony* 133-187; cf. lines 616-623; Cf. also the Hittite myth of "*Kingship in Heaven*" in J. Pritchard ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament* (Princeton, 1950), pp.120-121.] The similar story of Jupiter emasculating his father Saturn may be "transfer" or borrowing, but may [instead] be a reflection in mythology of similar [or comparably catastrophic] events. [Apollonius Rhodius, *Argonautica* IV.984 with scholium; scholium to Lycophron's *Cassandra* 76 [- "scholium" means, "an explanatory note or comment"]; Proclus, *In Timaeo*, transl. by A. J. Festugière, (Paris, 1967), Vol. III, p.255.]

Apollonius of Rhodes (Latin: *Apollonius Rhodius*) lived in the "first half of 3rd century" BC, about 4 centuries after The Visits of Mars, and "is best known as the author of the *Argonautica*, an epic poem about Jason and the Argonauts and their quest for the Golden Fleece." There are few surviving comparable works, but it is known to have had some influence - arguably involving plagiarism - on 1st Century BC "Roman poet" Virgil, (or 'correctly spelled', Vergil), and 1st Century AD "Roman poet" Gaius Valerius Flaccus (or Setinus Balbus). Apollonius' other poems, "which survive only in small fragments, concerned the beginnings or foundations of cities, such as Alexandria and Cnidus - places of interest to the Ptolemies [I - III, because the reign of IV begins in 221 BC, too late in the 3rd Century], whom he served as a scholar and librarian at the Library of Alexandria." And however much Apollonius also - to borrow from my encyclopedia - "makes special use" of Homer's epic poems, and evidently no more so than some others did of both his and Homer's, it is Homer's 2 surviving epic poems - which have made him "the preeminent author of classical epic" poetry - that offer us 'accounts' from the closest available 'witnesses' of The Visits of Mars, which we'll further consider in **SECTION 10**.

Behind this story [of "emasculatation" or 'castration'] there might have been a scene in the sky. In one theory of the origin of the solar system a sideswiping star tears out from the sun a long filament of gaseous material [which was how it was '*mis-imagined*' that the *planets were formed in the first place - Planetesimal or Tidal Theory*]. Similarly, Saturn may at one time have "emasculated" Uranus - Saturn was represented by the Romans with a sickle in his hands.

And if I may **'improve'** Dr. Velikovsky's thinking here, he is speculating about an *object* striking or otherwise 'interacting' with Uranus that actually may have caused this *giant planet* to expel and/or to have pulled from it a 'debris trail' or 'gaseous stalk' into its sky, one that could have been seen from Earth through the *water canopy lens*, and one that might not be that different from the one that will be created at the time that **the kings** and **merchants of the earth**, etc. – when **they shall see** such a 'stalk' on the horizon – **shall** have their 'pity party', that is, when **they shall see the smoke of her burning** rising into the *upper atmosphere*.

And to further **'improve your understanding'**, here are further **'mis-imaginings'** of Tidal Theory, which include the "Planetesimal Hypothesis" and subsequent "tidal theories", otherwise considered "encounter or collision theories". These *theories*,

...in which a star passes close by or actually collides with the sun, try to explain the distribution of angular momentum [or why everything is supposedly spinning in the same direction]. According to the planetesimal theory developed by Dr. Thomas Chrowder Chamberlin and Dr. Forest Ray Moulton in the early part of the 20th cent., a star passed close to the sun. Huge tides were raised on the surface; some of this erupted matter was torn free and, by a cross-pull from the star, was thrust into elliptical orbits around the sun. The smaller masses quickly cooled to become solid bodies, called planetesimals. As their orbits crossed, the larger bodies grew by absorbing the planetesimals, thus becoming planets.

The tidal theory, proposed by James Jeans and Harold Jeffreys in 1918, is a variation of the planetesimal concept: it suggests that a huge tidal wave, raised on the sun by a passing star, was drawn into a long filament and became detached from the principal mass. As the stream of gaseous material condensed, it separated into masses of various sizes, which, by further condensation, took the form of the planets. Serious objections against [both of] the encounter theories remain; the angular momentum problem is not fully explained [as too many *objects* are *spinning* in the wrong direction]...

[So] Contemporary theories return to a form [or forms] of the nebular hypothesis [of Miss-sure Laplace, but these "theories" either do] not explain adequately the chemical and physical differences of the planets [or, and despite Dr. Harold Urey's added 'mumbo jumbo', do not explain the] discovery of [entirely different configurations of] extrasolar planetary systems [especially the predominantly "large" sizes of the *exoplanets*, their "highly elliptical orbits", and that "many orbit their star at distances less than that of Mercury", including one "much closer than Mercury does the Sun", yet nonetheless "sits smack in the middle of the ["cool"] star's habitable zone"]... All this has caused planetary scientists to revisit the contemporary ['Miss-sure' Laplacian] theories of planetary formation [- meaning there's really no acceptable "theory of planetary formation", besides Special Creation and The Advent of The Curse; "*Earth's Surprise Neighbor Hints at Exoplanet Abundance*", <http://www.infoplease.com/encyclopedia/science/solar-system-origin-solar-system.html>], *Discover*, Jan/Feb, 2017, p.10-11].

Still I think these **'mis-imaginings'** can be helpful, especially when instead **'imagining'** (read,

'speculating about') the "encounter or collision" of *planets* since **the curse**, including ones where *filaments* and/or *rings*, etc., *form* due to 'expelled' and/or 'pulled' *debris* and/or *gases*, "events" that really could give viewers of such 'interactions' a variety of ideas. For example,

Circumcision may have originated as an emulation of the acts displayed in the sky - when it appeared that Saturn with a sickle emasculated Uranus, the Egyptians, and so also the Hebrews, introduced circumcision, the removal of the foreskin being *pars per toto*, or instead of castration. [Circumcision has a hygienic value; it could have been found out and sanctified by the astral events. Having been "commanded" in the days of the patriarch Abraham (Genesis 17:10ff.) it may [\[but I would guess does not\]](#) reflect the latter event, i.e., Jupiter's emasculation of Saturn, Cf. Sanchuniathon's *Phoenician History in Eusebius, Praeparatio Evangelica [Preparation of the Gospel]* I, ix: "[\[Saturn\]](#) was circumcis'd in his privities and forced his followers to do the same" (transl. by R. Cumberland [London,1720], p.38).]

Of course Dr. Velikovsky doesn't seem to realize here that "ancients" that lived after the *water canopy lens* 'drained' could not likely have seen *filaments* forming on Saturn, let alone on Uranus, nor such *filaments* being 'sickled off'. I mean I don't think Abraham could have witnessed such distant "events". Still, as **stiffnecked** as so many of "the Hebrews" were, some of them may have more willingly kept this **covenant**, and the later **statute of the law** ([Lev 12:3](#)), and I mean because of the by-then already 'ages-old' belief in the 'castrations' of both Uranus by Saturn, and Saturn by Jupiter, as witnessed with the aid of the *water canopy lens*, and as passed along afterward, the most likely original human source of such Post-Flood **'propaganda'** being Ham's wife.

And speaking of what Ham's wife 'propagated', Sanchuniathon, or Sancuniates, "is the purported Phoenician author of three lost works originally in the Phoenician language, surviving only in partial paraphrase and summary of a Greek translation by Philo of Byblos, according to the Christian bishop Eusebius of Caesarea. These few fragments comprise the most extended literary source concerning Phoenician religion in either Greek or Latin: Phoenician sources, along with... [their] literature, were lost with the parchment on which they were habitually written", as evidently so most of the 'pirating' Canaanite-Phoenicians were themselves, because, after being all but chased into the sea by King David, et al., they must have fared even worse thereafter, because 'huddling on seacoasts', when not otherwise sailing the sea, are bad places to be when **great judgments** of God finally come along, and especially with God wanting to further 'thin out' the **evil** resulting from *heretarily expressed 'Canaanite-angel' DNA*.

But this is where we also learn that there at least used to be Platonists - again read, Gnostics or 'know-it-all-ists' - at Cambridge, because my encyclopedia says about Richard Cumberland, late 17th/early 18th Century "English philosopher, and [Anglican] Bishop of Peterborough", that in 1672, "he published his major work, *De legibus naturae [On Natural Laws]*, propounding utilitarian-ism and opposing the egoistic ethics [of Oxford educated, "political philosopher", Mr.] Thomas Hobbes," which, to again make a long exegesis short, means he not only discounted "moral virtues", he even recommended abandoning them as much as society 'benefited' by it. Entirely on the other hand, Mr. Hobbes, and the governments 'by the consent of the people' his philosophy helped found, regarded "moral virtues" as essential for

guidance. However “moral virtues” may be ‘poorly’ to ‘abominably defined’ by the **‘spiritually immature’**, and this surely in at least some cases applies to Mr. Hobbes too.

But talk about ‘pricks’, and to again be entirely appropriately and unreservedly derogatory, that is, to **abhor that which is evil**, and that is, to feel as the Apostle Paul did when he says,

I would they were even cut off which trouble you [Gal 5:12](#),

‘I’ too **would** that this Bishop ‘En-Cumberbrance’ **were** ultimately **cut off**, and in the most vulgar terms imaginable, because – to borrow from **Jude** – he evidently was one of those **‘God-provoking’ spots**, and one of those **clouds...without water, carried about of winds, and trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots**, and like the **raging waves of the sea, foaming out ‘his’ own shame**, and as the “cruel” and “evil” **wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever**.

And if you think Paul, Jude and/or I are being a little harsh – or that Jesus wouldn’t be even harsher (e.g. [Mat 3:7](#); [12:22-37](#); [23](#)) – I should add that this Bishop ‘En-Cumbrance’, yes, an encumbrance to the Church of England, was also a prominent member of the Latitudinarian Movement, which even the Catholics eventually rejected, and which, still using brevity, and quoting my encyclopedia, meant that he considered Church “doctrine” to be “of relatively little importance”. But worse still –worse in that it at least borders on Satanism—he was “closely allied with the Cambridge Platonists”, who were “a group of ecclesiastical philosophers [you can read, **‘God-provoking’ spots**] centered on Cambridge University in the mid 17th [to early 18th] century”, and who were, like earlier Gnostics, more of those who “believed that reason is the proper judge of disagreements”, and also believed in “by-passing... the basic theological issues of atonement and justification by faith”, the likes of which John Bunyan, (author of *The Pilgrim’s Progress*), “complained” about in detail in his writings too.

But getting back again to Dr. Velikovsky’s “theory of planetary formation”, and how such considerations might actually be useful...

It is not unthinkable that sometime before the age [to which] the record of ancient civilizations reaches, Uranus, together with Neptune, Saturn and Jupiter, formed a quadruple system that was captured by the sun and from which the planets of the solar system had their origin [[which means he ‘mis-imagines’ that all the planets in this solar system are in one way or another the result of “encounter or collision”](#)] – but here nothing but [[sometimes useful](#)] imagination takes over where tradition based on witnessing does not reach.

And if he means that there used to be only the 4 *gas giants* ‘out there’, and that the rest of the smaller *objects* now ‘out there’ are the result of ‘encounters and collisions’ that have since occurred, I would essentially agree with him, except I still think that this **‘fallout’** is really mostly the result of **the curse**, and except that we now know that there are *objects* ‘out there’ beyond Neptune, meaning there may instead have been at least 5 ‘original players’ instead of just 4, or more likely 6 or more unless all the *TNO’s* – including the *KBO’s*, *SDO’s*, *E-SDO’s*, *DDO’s*, and *OCO’s* – are the result of some *object* entering our Solar System such that this ‘outsider’ had a “collision” with our ‘outside’, still ‘out-of-sight’ *planet*, which may now just be mostly one or two other yet unseen *asteroid belts*, or what is otherwise ‘imagined’ as the Oort Cloud, if you can yet ‘wrap your head around’ what I mean.

[According to Hesiod, the catastrophe described as the removal of Uranus by Saturn gave birth to Aphrodite. In *Worlds in Collision* Aphrodite was identified with the Moon.] [Velikovsky's identification of Aphrodite with the Moon has been disputed by several writers [as she is also "identified" with Venus]; but in the fourth century A.D. Macrobius was able to refer to ancient authorities who affirmed that Aphrodite was the Moon. *Saturnalia* VIII.1-3 [- though again this is just one 'perspective'.]

So here's where the plot thickens, again...

The Earth Without the Moon

The period when the Earth was Moonless is probably the most remote recollection of mankind. Democritus and [his older 5th Century BC contemporary] Anaxagoras taught that there was a time when the Earth was without the Moon [Hippolytus, *Refutatio Omnium Haeresium* V [*Refutation of All Heresies* 5, one of a set of 10 volumes that "catalogues both pagan beliefs and 33 gnostic Christian systems"], ii]. Aristotle wrote that Arcadia in Greece, before being inhabited by the Hellenes, had a population of Pelasgians, and that these aborigines occupied the land already before there was a moon in the sky above the Earth; for this reason they were [also] called Proselenes. [Aristotle, fr. 591 (ed. V. Rose [Teubner: Tuebingen, 1886]), Cf. Pauly's *Realencyclopaedie der classischen Altertumswissenschaft* [*Encyclopedia of Classical Antiquity*], article "Mond" [entry "Moon"]; Dr. Wilhelm Heinrich Roscher, [late 19th/early 20th Century "German classical scholar", who "specialized in studies of Greek and Roman mythology", educated "at the Universities of Göttingen and Leipzig", and a close associate of his fellow student, the originator of the phrase, "God is dead", Friedrich Nietzsche], *Ausführliches Lexikon der griech. und roemisch. Mythologie* [*Extensive Lexicon of Greek and Roman Mythology*], article "Proselenes" [which means people from a time "before the moon"].]

Apollonius of Rhodes mentioned the time "when not all the orbs were yet in the heavens, before the Danaï and Deukalion races came into existence, and only the Arcadians [or "Pelasgians" or "Proselenes"] lived, of whom it is said that they dwelt on mountains and fed on acorns, before there was a moon" [*Argonautica* IV, 264].

But to be more specific, and to further '**correct and improve our perspective**', I **believe** that before The Fall, in our Solar System, 7 or more *planets*, and only one *moon* - **the lesser light to rule the night** - existed, including 1) Earth, 2) Jupiter, 3) Saturn, 4) Uranus, 5) Neptune, plus the 2 or more beyond Neptune, which, being the most *unstable*, by some *collision* - likely not involving an 'outsider' - became *fragmented* in two major *collisions*, the first making the Oort Cloud far beyond Neptune, and 'larger pieces' of this first *collision* later *colliding* near Neptune to make the Kuiper Belt and Scattered Disc, and probably also, besides the *fragment* that became Mercury, and the one that hit Uranus and 'knocked it on its side', that 'piece' of a *planet* that ended up *orbiting* between Mars and Jupiter that was later hit, maybe by an 'outsider', or just by another 'piece' from a prior *collision* that was making its way toward the Sun, resulting in the Main Asteroid Belt. And so before The Fall the *objects* in our Solar System did not include the *planets* Mercury, Venus, nor Mars, nor any *asteroids*, *comets*, or *moons* other than our own.

However 'outsider events' of "encounter or collision" in our Solar System seem unlikely. I mean anything far enough outside our Solar System, that is, even coming from 'the closest stars', and that is, an *object* somehow 'broken loose' at **the curse** and sent our way, would not seem to have had enough time to get here. Math: an *asteroid/comet* traveling at an average of about 100,000 *mph*, (remember the average speed of a meteor entering our atmosphere is about 80,000 *mph*), for 4 *lightyears*, (the distance to the nearest 'solar system'), would take nearly 7,000 years to get here. In other words, if 'pieces' could escape at all, none may have yet gotten here, but especially in the first couple thousand years. And did I hear a 'honk' or not?

But so many of this Solar System's *fragmented objects* are now out there, *asteroid belts* full of them and more. So the '**wondrous spectacles**' of the 'encounters and collisions' of the outer 2 *planets* with themselves, and the resulting additional 'encounters and collisions', apparently all visible through the *water canopy lens*, evidently well enough to see *filaments* on Uranus, and maybe also the larger *objects* beyond Uranus too, all of which Adam's World could **marvel...at**, and with all these **wondrous works 'naturally falling out' to 'precisely deliver'** Gods **great instruments of death**, and to '**precisely administer'** His **great judgments** upon the Earth since then, we can only really just begin to '**imagine**', let alone '**rightly speculate**' about.

And Dr. Velikovsky does not so 'rightly speculates' further, noting that,

Plutarch wrote in *The Roman Questions*: "There were Arcadians of Evander's following, the so-called pre-Lunar people." [Plutarch, *Moralia* ['accepted folkways', or 'situation ethics']], transl. by F. C. Babbit [?], sect.76.] Similarly wrote [that 'modernizer of Greek and Roman myth']...

...Ovid: "The Arcadians are said to have possessed their land before the birth of Jove [Jupiter], and the folk is older than the Moon." [*Fasti* ['*Diachronology*', a 'record of events over time'], transl. by Sir J. Frazer, II, 290.]...

...Hippolytus refers to a legend that "Arcadia brought forth Pelasgus, of greater antiquity than the moon." [*Refutatio Omnium Haeresium* V. ii]. Lucian in his *Astrology* says that "the Arcadians affirm in their folly that they are older than the moon" [Lucian, *Astrology*, transl. by A. M. Harmon (1936), p.367, par.26 [<https://archive.org/details/lucianha01luciuoft>].]

Plutarch, "later named, upon becoming a Roman citizen, Lucius Mestrius Plutarchus" was a late 1st/early 2nd Century "Greek biographer and essayist, known primarily for his *Parallel Lives* and *Moralia*. He is classified as a Middle Platonist", meaning he espoused '1st Century BC through 2nd Century AD' Platonism, as opposed the later "Neoplatonism", or the earlier 'just plain' "Platonism" that goes back to Plato in the 4th Century BC, and that is, back as far as Apollonius of Rhodes, but not back to Anaxagoras or Homer. But from Plato on it's all "Gnosticism", which, to 'boil down' the conclusions of this so-called "founder of Western political philosophy" that are suggested in his still influential "Socratic dialogue", *Republic*, is "elitism", or more specifically, the rule of a "philosopher king", (read, a 'know-it-all tyrant/dictator'), which, as we will continue to see, marks a change in Satan's ongoing strategy of '**beastism**', (read, '**tyranny**'), and that is, it initiates a 'new form' of '**beastly totalitarian rule**', though one that still operates by **oppression**, and is still **a way that seemeth right unto** such 'absolutely powerful', 'philosopher kings'.

Lucian of Samosata was a 2nd Century Greek “rhetorician”, meaning he wrote in a style not that different from mine, that is, using “the art of discourse, wherein a writer... strives to inform, persuade or motivate particular audiences in specific situations”, like **disciples** of Christ, for example, and “satirist”, meaning he often wrote in a tone not that different from mine, or in “a genre of literature... in which vices, follies, abuses, and shortcomings are held up to ridicule, ideally with the intent of shaming individuals [in my case **‘Immortal Sons of God’**], corporations [in my case **‘churches’**], government [in my case **‘denominations’**], or society itself [in my case **the whole family in heaven**] into improvement” – and “who [for ‘similar’ purposes] wrote in the Greek language during the Second Sophistic”, this period marked to start in the reign of Emperor Nero in the 1st Century (54 to 68 AD), after Rome conquered Greece, this transition involving more than just The Battle of Pydna in 168 BC (see [RGT](#)), though it was “a crushing victory” for Rome. And I mean Greece’s ‘fall’ to Rome transpired from the early 2nd to early 1st Century BC. And it was during the subsequent Second Sophist that Rome began “following many of the traditions of the Greeks [including]... Mirroring some of their architectural styles and adapting a similar religious cult... [to the extent that] the Empire held the Greek culture with reverence to its customs. [It also]...incorporated the Greeks into their society and imperial life”. And it wasn’t until the 5th Century that “Byzantine rhetoric” or the “Third Sophistic” began.

The ‘First Sophistic’, then – though apparently not so named, and though, “It was in Plato’s dialogue, *Sophist*, that the first record of an attempt to answer the question “What is a Sophist?” is made” – was the first recorded period of Ancient Greek culture, from Homer to Plato and “his teacher, Socrates”, who was “sentenced to death” for opposing “sophism”, though more directly found guilty of “corrupting the minds of the youth of Athens and of impiety”, that is, “not believing in the gods of the state”. So it appears that the reason ‘the people’ publicly poisoned him was because he wasn’t a ‘just plain’ **‘planet-god-worshipper beastismist’**, but instead an ‘upstart’ **‘self-idolatry beastismist’**, which made him an early ‘martyr’ to this revived ‘world-dominating cause’, (read, an early ‘casualty’ and ‘seed’ of Satan’s current ‘master strategy’).

And I mean Socrates was like **Israel** was **before there reigned any king over** them, because after the ¼-century Peloponnesian War, when Athens surrendered to Sparta in 404 BC, (this with more ‘Biblically unwarranted’ help from Medo-Persia that Daniel **prophesieth** about), “He praises Sparta, archrival to Athens, directly and indirectly in various dialogues” evidently in order to raise “doubts about democracy as an efficient form of government”. But he was apparently just a ‘political elitist’, and apparently not an ‘educational’ one, as he, at least in Plato’s “dialogues” including him, condemned ‘sophists’ because of their “practice of charging money for education and providing wisdom only to those who could pay”. And despite these “condemnations” – by ‘Socrates’ and others – including that ‘sophism’ was “specious” and “deceptive”, (which became the “modern meaning of the term”), it flourished in Rome, again, especially in the 1st and 2nd Centuries, though evidently hidden from anyone who couldn’t “pay”.

So again, “sophism” is a manifestation of “elitism”, and an ‘expression’ of **‘self-idolatry’**, which **‘naturally’** manifests, like with **‘planet-god worship’**, in some form – or under the later **heads** – of **‘beastism’**, and apparently it’s not dead yet, though, because of the rise of “elitism” pioneered by Socrates, and perverted by Plato, and by “his most famous student”, Aristotle, (mentioned at the beginning of this ‘subsection’), **‘planet-god’ worship** is. And maybe you can also **see** here why Satan **‘conspired’** to ‘make a martyr of Socrates. Although it forced **his** ‘elite’ strategy ‘into the shadows’, it motivated an ‘uptick in the polls’ for **‘beastism’** – I

mean you could argue it finally **led** to **beasts** like Alexander and Demetrius – and eliminated Socrates as an opponent to ‘sophism’. So for Satan it was a ‘win, win’ for this ‘covert change of strategy’.

And here I could point out that the human **beasts** who were the **Pharaoh[s]** or **king[s] of Egypt** under The 1st Prince/Head of the 7-Headed Beast, and the human **beasts** who were **the kings of Assyria** under the 2nd Prince/Head of the 7-Headed Beast were ‘believing’ **‘planet-god’ worshippers**, considering themselves ‘sons’ of **‘planet’ gods**, and, with more **angel DNA** back then, were more likely **giants**. But Alexander, the first human **beast** under The 5th Prince/Head of the 7-Headed Beast, must also mark this ‘transition of strategy’, as he lived a couple centuries after Socrates. And I mean to say that, though **‘naturally’** continuing to exploit ‘slow-to-die’, **‘planet-god’ worship** ‘for all it was worth’, he likely secretly, or ‘sophistically’, and unlike Socrates did openly, practiced “impiety” – yeah, “not believing in the gods of the state” – or was likely as much a **‘self-idolatry beastismist’** as a **‘planet-god-worshipper beastismist’**.

I could also point out that this transition – ‘into the shadows’ – may be the beginning of what is now ‘Satanism’, with it’s many ‘tentacles’ of ‘secret societies’, all ‘fronted’ by all manner of supposedly ‘legitimate organizations or institutions’, or ones ‘infiltrated’ by **his** ‘double agents’, which will finally all be **led** – as much of them that survive – by the “Anti-Catholic insiders” that Daniel 11 exposes. And these **‘not yet come’**, ‘philosopher kings’ – like past ones willing to use **‘planet-god’ worship** ‘for all it was worth’ – will use and finally abuse **‘false Christianity’** ‘for all it’s worth’ too, and that is, when **he**, the Antichrist, **shall cause them – his ‘insiders’** that are **in the most strong hold** – both to **‘worship’ a strange god**, and to **hate the whore**.

However evidently Octavian, or Caesar Augustus, helped revive **‘planet-god-worshipper beastism’** to some extent. Remember that we learned from Dr. Velikovsky that,

Even the encounter of the earth with a lesser [“very bright”] comet, ...in the days when Octavian Augustus observed the mortuary activities in honor of Julius Caesar, ...was regarded by one contemporary author as the end of a world age and the beginning of a new one...

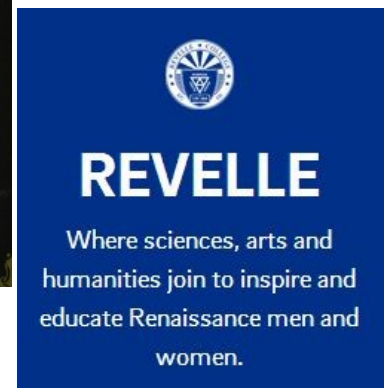
Well, I learned from a **teacher** on an American Family Radio (AFR) broadcast (<https://afr.net>, a ‘Southern-Baptist-style’, ‘talk radio’ **ministry** that I ‘generally recommend’, especially most their various news programs, which I only recently discovered by moving out of California, though I was saved in a Southern Baptist church in California), that the Romans were nonetheless **led** to believe that this “comet” actually was Julius, in the form of a **‘planet’ god**, ‘departing’ from Earth into the Heavens, which gave Octavian, his nephew and designated heir, the opportunity to declare himself the next “god”, and so this ‘revival’ of **‘planet-god-worshipper beastism’** to some degree continued, that is, as long as Rome did. But now **‘planet-god’ worship**, at least with any real **fear** of the **planets**, is long dead. And I don’t think the coming **red planet** will revive **‘planet-god’ worship** over **‘self-idolatry’**, nor over ‘just plain’ **‘beast/dragon’ worship**.

But who am I to give such ‘political analysis’. Well, I am minimally qualified by worldly standards. I mean my minor to my degree in Literature at UCSD is Political Science, though I got more C’s than not in these classes, and at the time I considered C’s failure. I mean I didn’t get any C’s in high school, just 6 B’s, and the rest A’s. However I did end up with just short of a ‘B average’ at UCSD, and about half a grade below that in just the Political Science classes.

And what I am really learning to appreciate is that I had the ‘opportunity’, like the Apostle Paul – and only figuratively speaking – to have been **‘brought up...at the feet of Gamaliel’**, who was, by-the-way, “a leading [“early 1st century AD”] authority in the Sanhedrin”, which, besides his participation in “courts of judges”, he was one of the “leading” teachers of his day. Or maybe a closer comparison would be that I had the opportunity, something like Moses, to be **‘learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians’**. Of course I’m mostly talking about the value of ‘reconnaissance’, where you ‘spy behind enemy lines’, though then I was **‘unequally yoked’** with these **unbelievers**. But I also mean that at my graduation the “Provost” (read, ‘Dean’), Dr. Roger Revelle, another top founder of UCSD, told us that the unique mission of Revelle College, (1 of 4 when I attended, and presently 1 of 6 colleges of UCSD, with altogether 12 colleges still planned to eventually surround the ‘space-age-looking’, ‘stepped-pyramidal’, “Geisel Library”, and so in stages become a ‘multi-college system’ similar to Cambridge or Oxford), was to produce graduating classes of “Renaissance men and women”, which would be

people “proficient in a wide range of fields”, the ‘prime example’ being that late 15th/early 16th Century, ‘Renaissance-initiating’, “Italian polymath”, Leonardo da

Vinci, who inspired the idea.



And so it’s still ‘billed’. **Giesel Library**, my **UCSD Diploma**, and the current **Revelle College ‘bill’** (<http://ucsd.edu/academics.html>, scroll down) are featured on **p.267**.

Hence my transcript lists classes from Calculus to Atomic Physics, The Cell and Introduction to Chemistry (which, though I got A’s in all my science classes, including Chemistry, in high

school, I failed the chemistry class on my first try – my only “F” ever – and otherwise got all C’s in these classes), and from Economics to Political Science, (for which I got only one “A” and “B” and the rest either C’s or “Pass”), and from upper-division French Literature, (including a ‘term paper’ written in French on the 17th Century “French philosopher” – who I will call ‘a founding father of modern atheism’ – René Descartes, famous for the phrase, *Cogito ergo sum*, Latin for “I think, therefore I am”, and for which I got a “B”), to all forms of classical to modern philosophy and literature, (these being the majority of my classes, and for which I got mostly B’s, but twice as many A’s as C’s, however the “B” I got in the one graduate-level literature course I took – because I couldn’t ‘stomach’ any of the undergraduate ones then available – though counting for a required class, may not have counted toward my undergraduate GPA). And I mean I’m talking about being ‘exposed’ to literature and philosophy from the Ancient Greeks to Sigmund Freud, and a grueling lot in-between and beyond. But I did ‘get away with’ taking

'Beginning Acting', which actually met a requirement, for which I got an A, by-the-way ☺.

Still and again, all of this was the most valuable as 'reconnaissance', because such 'opportunities' can only really be of any *use* for *good* if you are also - at least eventually - ***transformed by the renewing of your mind in all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of God by The Spirit of God.*** Otherwise it's just one of the '***expressways of death***, which is where most end up who take such ***courses*** ^{H4256}. And I mean like the Apostle James says, ***...be not many masters***, and remember you can read, ***teachers***. But I only mean that I recommend that even most ***disciples***, in choosing '***courses***' to help them to become ***apt to teach***, should instead start with '***handling***' only ***doctrine*** from '***gifted teachers***' that is '***proved***' to be ***profitable***, rather than any ***science falsely so-called*** and other ***doctrine of vanities of Satan and the world***, which is about all that is available in most classrooms and lecture halls, and nowadays, too often whether labeled 'Christian' or not.

And I mean if you aren't yet '***skilled***' in the *use* and *handling of the word of God*, and that is, in ***rightly dividing the word of truth and of righteousness***, then trying to choose your own ***courses of study*** will too often not ***lead you in the paths of righteousness***, but more likely to ***shame***, or even to your ***death***. And I mean if all our ***churches*** were as ***perfect*** as Jesus' ***teaching*** seems to suggest they should be, it would be ***better*** to first choose a '***gifted teacher***', and let '***him***' - qualifications forthcoming - choose your ***courses***, while ***you*** nonetheless remain responsible to ***continue to prove your own selves and work***.

Of ***course*** our ***churches*** - at least generally - aren't ***perfect***. And I mean that way too early in my ***walk*** with God, though always ***hoping*** and ***seeking*** ^{G2212} - including on the 'radio' - to find ***masters***, I found myself left pretty much 'on my own', ***God knoweth***. And in such cases it is appropriate to entirely ***trust*** that God, His Son and The Spirit alone, (in that ***they*** is ***one, gic***)...

...shall teach you all things... bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever... [Jesus]...said unto you... [and] guide you into all truth... [as well as] shew you things to come... [even] things...kept secret from the foundation of the world,

all of this being my personal ***testimony***, and ***God willing*** also becoming yours, except that maybe now you ***know*** you have a '***master***', and some ***courses*** that he recommends - to ***all*** - that should be completed before ***endeavouring*** ^{G4704} too 'far-afield' otherwise 'on your own'.

Because we must never forget the ***testimony*** and ***prophecy*** of Jesus that is inseparably connected to all this, the one whereby ***we know*** - limited to our perspective - that no one is entirely ***safe*** from being ***entangled*** or ***taken captive in the snare of the devil***, who ***as a roaring lion can devour*** pretty much anyone, whereby ***they shall fall away*** and, ***God forbid, for ever be lost***. And I'm talking about the ***testimony*** and ***prophecy*** whereby ***we*** also ***know*** that this ***way, that leadeth*** ^{G520} ***to destruction***, is where '***most***' are ***led*** ^{G71}, and this despite all the ***ministry*** of ***God***. And of course I'm referring to when Jesus, Who often ***testifieth*** that He never fails to ***speak*** for His Father, is heard ***saying to the multitudes*** from a certain ***mountain***,

Enter ye in at the strait [or narrow] gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the

way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. (See also [Luke 13:23-30](#), [Pro 20:6](#), [Hos 14:9](#), and [Nah 1:3](#).)

And I don't mean God's **ministry** to every **soul** on this **planet** is not **powerful** ^{H3581: G1756}, **'convincing'** ^{H7561: G1651}, **'omnipresent'** (e.g., [Psa 139:7-12](#)), and done **well** ^{H3651: H2895: G2570} and ⁷³. I mean He **has made us** to **perceive** that choices in this **life** are all ours, and even after they no longer really are, which would be when **some**, **having their conscience seared with a hot iron, God 'gives' over to a reprobate mind**, where **they** remain **'unknown'** to Jesus **for ever**.

And of course I say "let **'him'** choose your **courses**" because of what the Apostle Paul **teacheth** ([1Ti 2:12](#)), with the exception that he also **teacheth** that the **aged women** should **teach the young women** ([Tit 2:3-4](#)), and with the exceptions of **women** like **Deborah**, the **prophetess** who **judged Israel**, and **grandmother Lois** and **mother Eunice** who with **unfeigned** ^{G505} **faith** evidently **taught** their **child**, who apparently became the **'bishop of Corinth'**, and also **Lydia**, possibly an orphan and virgin or widow, but nonetheless...

...a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God... whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul. And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought [to be found **faithful** enough by Paul to be **constrained** to accept **her** hospitality, as apparently **she** had the **means**, **'ability'**, and **authority** by God to both **teach** and **rule** in **her household**].

But this is a topic for the next **study**, and too 'far-afield' for where we are in our present **course**.

So getting back to the "folly" – the Arcadian's being the least of it – Sir James George Frazer, OM (which I fully identify much later), FRS, FRSE, FBA, a late 19th/early 20th Century "Scottish social anthropologist", was "influential in the early stages of the modern studies of mythology and comparative religion. He is often considered one of the founding fathers of modern anthropology. His most famous work, *The Golden Bough* (1890), documents and details the similarities among magical and religious beliefs around the globe. Frazer posited that human belief progressed through three stages: primitive magic, replaced by religion, in turn replaced by science." Uh-huh, and he alone is sufficient evidence that the "Cambridge Gnostics" really never died out, because his graduation "with honours" from Trinity College, (and that's in Cambridge, not the one in Dublin or London), included his dissertation that was finally published and titled, *The Growth of Plato's Ideal Theory*. Now there's an oxymoron for you, and a 'personally unavoidable' pun for me.

And before you praise "the most important 3rd-century theologian in the Christian Church in Rome", Hippolytus – though he was 'a disciple of a disciple' of the famous 2nd-Century-martyred, Bishop of Smyrna, Polycarp, who was a direct "disciple of St. John the Evangelist", that is, of the Apostle John – and that is, before praising Hippolytus for his work on *Refutation of All Heresies*, (also called the *Elenchus* or *Philosophumena*), you should know that my encyclopedia identifies these 10 Books as "a compendious ['catalogue-like'] Christian polemical ['apologetic' or 'oppositional'] work... now generally attributed to Hippolytus of Rome (formerly to Origen [another 3rd Century 'Gnostic' yet to be bio'ed]). It catalogues both pagan beliefs and 33 gnostic Christian systems deemed heretical making it a major source of information on contemporary opponents of Catholic orthodoxy." So I'm **seeing** it as helping start the **hate** between Satan's **'insiders'** and the 'rising-again' **whore**, but worse, though initially helping many escape the Pagans and

Gnostics (read, *'insiders'*), it apparently **led** to even more being captured by **her**.

And to further express my concerns along these 'disciplining lines', the 'disciple of the disciple' of the Apostle John, who in turn 'discipled' Hippolytus, was Irenaeus, "Bishop of Lugdunum in Gaul" (now Lyon or Lyons, France), a 2nd Century "Early Church Father", who is also known for his "polemical work", *Adversus Haereses* or *Against Heresies* (c.180), which "is a detailed attack on Gnosticism, which he considered a serious threat to the Church." (Note: "c." abbreviates "circa", meaning "about", but Dr. Velikovsky uses "ca.", and my dictionary lists "ca, ca., c., c, cir., circ." as all correct alternative abbreviations.)

And the problem I see with Irenaeus is identified by my encyclopedia, which tells me that,

As one of the first great Christian theologians, he emphasized the traditional elements in the Church, especially [1] the episcopate [the collective body of all the bishops of a church], [2] Scripture, and [3] tradition. Against the Gnostics, who said that they possessed a secret oral tradition from Jesus himself, Irenaeus maintained that the bishops in different cities are known as far back as the Apostles and that the bishops provided the only safe guide to the interpretation of Scripture. His polemical work is credited for laying out the "orthodoxies of the Christian church, its faith, its preaching and the books that it held as sacred authority." His writings, with those of Clement [I, or Clement of Rome, "the first Apostolic Father of the Church", or 'the first Pope', and that is, after the Apostle Peter] and Ignatius [of Antioch, who coined the phrase "catholic church"], are taken as among the earliest signs of the doctrine of the primacy of the Roman see [that is, the absolute authority of the 'Roman pope' over the "catholic church"].

And if you 'see' what I mean, apparently the 'polemics' of "Early Christianity" **led** to some fundamentally 'bad counseling' (including increasingly *'bad counseling'*, MP-PAMD), because,

The first seven Ecumenical Councils [which were the First & Second Councils of Nicaea (1st & 7th), the First, Second & Third Councils of Constantinople (2nd, 5th & 6th), the Council of Ephesus (3rd), and the Council of Chalcedon (4th),] were held between the years of 325 and 787 [and like the "many more ecumenical councils after the first seven",] with the aim of formalizing [read, the **perverting of judgment** little by little to conform with **MYSTERY, BABYLON**] accepted doctrines...

[These "Councils" and **counsels**] ...represented an attempt by Church leaders to reach an orthodox consensus [with "adherence to correct or accepted creeds"], restore peace [- including by force -] and develop a unified [or essentially 'enslaved'] Christendom. Eastern Orthodox, Oriental Orthodox, Nestorian [the Assyrians], and Roman Catholics, all trace the legitimacy of their clergy by apostolic succession back to this period and beyond, to the earlier period referred to as Early Christianity.

So I **hope** you can now **see** my "concern" for this 'emphasis' by Irenaeus on 'city-wide bishops' who he "maintained" had "provided the only safe guide to the interpretation of Scripture", and my "concern" for his "polemical work" for "orthodoxies" too, because these have at least been *'misused'* by our **adversary** to establish "apostolic succession" in the "catholic church".

But I've admitted I'm biased. I mean I told you that I'm "more like one of those 'Anabaptist' types...", the branch of the Protestant Reformation that, like all Protestants, rejected 'salvation' by any other way than faith, but unlike other branches also rejected transubstantiation..., and infant baptism (which gave them their name), and more significantly, they also rejected a church-wide hierarchy of ruling clergy too", and evidently because all these "doctrines" resulted in 'bad counseling', all of this making me even more a fan of "Radical Reformationist", Menno Simons.

But there were other Roman 'loonies' - or 'loony exposers' - too, including...

Censorinus [- "a Roman grammarian and miscellaneous writer from the 3rd century AD", likely a "Neoplatonist" or "Neo-platonist", who] also alludes to the time in the past when there was no moon in the sky [*Liber de die natali* 19 [Birthday Book 19]; also scholium [again, "an explanatory note or comment"] on Aristophanes' [- late 5th/early 4th Century BC "comic playwright of ancient Athens", contemporary of Socrates, Plato and Aristotle, only Socrates being his elder,] *Clouds*, line 398].

Some allusions to the time before there was a Moon may be found also in the Scriptures. In [Job 25:5](#) the grandeur of the Lord who "Makes peace in the heights" is praised and the time is mentioned "before [there was] a moon and it did not shine." Also in [Psalm 72:5](#) it is said: "Thou wast feared since [the time of] the sun and before [the time of] the moon, a generation of generations." A "generation of generations" means a very long time. Of course, it is of no use to counter this psalm with the myth of the first chapter of Genesis, a tale brought down from exotic and later sources.

But was Genesis "a tale brought down from exotic ['foreign'] and later [more recent] sources"? You could put it that way. Except that Noah and his family are not really 'foreign' to anyone, and except that every "tale" actually originating from The Flood and before, and whether true or not - and if not otherwise fabricated "later" - was "brought down" by the **eight souls** on the Ark. Still we must admit that Moses writes his "tale" about Creation to The Flood and beyond almost a millennium after The Flood. So there is surely many a "tale" originally written much earlier that more or less disagree with Moses' account. But none of this means that Moses did not use 'the oldest and most reliable' information available to 'craft' his "tale".

And this reminds me of how I learned from Josh McDowell in *Evidence that Demands a Verdict*, (to which he added *New Evidence that Demands a Verdict*), though apparently he himself didn't fully make this '**preceptual connection**' - that 'modern translators' misrepresent the authority of their 'modern translations' by the fact that they are derived from physically older manuscripts - evidently ones held by Gnostics - surviving longer only because they were less 'handled' than the '**faithfully handled**' ones (P-PAMD) used by true **believers**. And I mean I **believe** there is no way to change **one jot or one tittle** of a 'copy' that God intends to **keep** and **preserve**. You know, like a copy of the KJV with that "tale" by Moses of Special Creation, The Fall, and The Flood in it.

And I don't know what translation Dr. Velikovsky was using here. He may have translated directly from the Hebrew himself - he is obviously talented in translating languages - but I do "counter" his interpretation of both of these "Scriptures" in that I find only one translation of these verses, (the Young's Literal Translation, YLT, with which I so far have no 'major quarrel'), of the more than a dozen in my **use**, that

could be confused in this way, and that is, only if you take it entirely out of context. And I mean that there is really no way to confuse any of these verses of **scripture** with an “allusion to the time before there was a Moon”, because they really are instead, as all the other translations more clearly agree, making comparisons of the ‘inferior glory’ of the Moon compared to the ‘superior glory’ of God. More specifically, in the YLT translation of Psalm 75:5, “before” means ‘more than’, not ‘earlier than’. And in Job 25:5 of the YLT, “the moon... shineth not”, but only as compared to the **glory of God**. But check it out for yourself, and let’s move on, because Dr. Velikovsky next informs us that,

The memory [read, ‘mythology’ or ‘folklore’] of a world without a moon lives in oral tradition among the Indians. The Indians of the Bogota highlands in the eastern Cordilleras of Colombia relate some of their tribal reminiscences [read, ‘past-along rumors’] to the time before there was a moon. "In the earliest times, when the moon was not yet in the heavens," say the tribesmen of Chibchas [or of “the Muisca”, “a now extinct tribe of South American Indians, having an advanced culture, who lived on a high plateau of Bogotá, Colombia”]. [A. von Humboldt [“the renowned Prussian *naturalist*, [read, *deist*, *materialist*, and *rationalist*, and likely also secretly *atheist*”], but mentor to Dr. Agassiz, mentioned in SECTION 5 & 6), *Vues des Cordillères* [*Views of the Cordilleras* - “A cordillera ...[being] an extensive chain of mountains or mountain ranges”, in particular it refers to “the mountain ranges forming the western backbone of North America and South America”, from the Cascades to the Andes, but more often, probably because the term is of Spanish origin, meaning “rope”, is only “applied to the various ranges of the Andes of South America”] (1816), English transl., *Researches Concerning the Institutions and Monuments of the Ancient Inhabitants of America*, (1814), Vol. I, p.87; cf. H. Fischer [?], *In mondener Welt* [*In the Modern World*] (1930), p.145.]

[So...] There are currently three theories of the origin of the moon:

- 1) The Moon originated at the same time as the Earth, being formed substantially from the same material, aggregating and solidifying.
- 2) The Moon was formed not in the vicinity of the Earth, but in a different part of the solar system, and was later captured by the Earth.
- 3) The Moon was originally a portion of the terrestrial crust and was torn out, leaving behind the bed of the Pacific.

All three theories claim the presence of the Moon on an orbit around the Earth for billions of years. Mythology may supply each of these views with some support (Genesis I for the first view; the birth of Aphrodite from the sea for the third view [including versions where this happens after the ‘splashdown’ into the sea of the ‘castrated parts’ of Kronos (Cronos or Cronus) or Uranus]; [but to Dr. Velikovsky] Aphrodite’s origin in the disruption of Uranus, and also the violence of Sin – the Babylonian Moon – seems to support the second view [of ‘capture’]).

Since mankind on both sides of the Atlantic preserved the memory of a time when the Earth was without the Moon [or without one that looks like the one we see today], the first hypothesis, namely, of the Moon originating simultaneously with the Earth and in its vicinity, is to be excluded

[especially since this might imply Special Creation], leaving the other two hypotheses to compete between themselves [and to help us figure out how this **'misunderstanding'** happened].

We have seen that the traditions of diverse peoples offer corroborative testimony to the effect that in a very early age, but still in the memory of mankind, no moon accompanied the Earth.

[In addition to the sources cited above, cf. *The Nihongi Chronicles of Japan* [*The 'Arrival' Chronicles or The Chronicles of Japan from the Earliest Times*] (I. ii, in *Transactions and Proceedings of the Japanese Society*, Vol. I [1896]) which recount how "Heaven and Earth... produced the Moon-god." The *Kalevala* of the Finns recalls a time "when the Moon was placed in orbit." (Rune III.35).]

Since human beings already peopled the Earth, it is improbable that the Moon sprang from it:

[any "memory" of such an event could only be when] there must have existed a solid lithosphere, not a liquid earth [where an "encounter" might only have 'ripped-out', not 'splashed-out' the material to make our Moon - and besides, Earth was never entirely *molten*, **remember?**]. Thus while I do not claim to know the origin of the Moon, I find it more probable that the Moon was captured by the Earth [or at least appeared to be]. Such an event would have occurred as a catastrophe [including an "encounter" involving the Moon and Mercury that began with the *water canopy* still 'enhancing' the view of the sky, but ending without this 'enhancement']...

[Cf. the effects of such an event on the Earth's rotation calculated by H. Gerstenkorn in *Zeitschrift fuer Astrophysik* [*Journal of Astrophysics*], 36 (1955) ("Prior to the discovery that the Moon has an Oxygen isotope ratio very close to that of the Earth and very small iron core, a number of researchers (Gerstenkorn 1955, 1969, Singer 1968, Öpik 1972, Mitler 1975 [etc., see next set of citations]) worked out details of a possible capture process."; "A New Disintegrative Capture Theory for the Origin of the Moon", Peter D. Noerdlinger ["Consultant, Technology Advancements, Inc., Playa del Rey, CA"], p.245; cf. idem, in *Mantles of the Earth and the Terrestrial Planets*, S. K. Runcorn ed., (New York, 1967); also idem in *Icarus* 9 (1968), p.94.]

If the Moon's formation took place away from the Earth [or if the *planet* that was confused with it did], its composition may be quite different [- which is **'bad speculation'** since we know God created **the lesser light to rule the night on the fourth day**, and that all other 'moons' are **'fallout'**].

[Cf. H. Alfvén and G. Arrhenius, "Two Alternatives for the History of the Moon", *Science* 165 (1969), 11 ff; S. F. Singer and L. W. Banderman, "Where was the Moon Formed?" *Science* 170 (1970), 438-439: "...The moon was formed independently of the earth and later captured, presumably by a three-body interaction [!!!], and these events were followed by the dissipation of the excess energy through tidal friction [**the sea and the waves roaring'**] in a close encounter [and where not long after the 2nd "encounter" the *continents* were **divided**]." More recently, a study of lunar paleotides has shown that "the Moon could not have been formed in orbit around the Earth" [well, not 'naturally' anyway, only by Special Creation] (A. J. Anderson [?], "Lunar Paleotides and the Origin of the Earth-Moon System", *The Moon and the Planets*, 19 [1978], 409-417). Because of a certain degree of instability in the Sun-Earth-Moon system, "the planetary origin and capture of the Moon by the Earth becomes a strong dynamic

possibility.” [Of course this also implies that this ‘unstable system’ can’t go on too long without **‘fallout’**, which exposes the compartmentalization that it can’t have gone on for millions or billions of years.] Sir Victor Szebehely [an Hungarian-born, Dutch-knighted, American engineer, who was “a key figure in the development and success of the Apollo program”, and author of *The Theory of Orbits*, “an important work in orbital mechanics, being the definitive text on the restricted three-body problem as applicable to an Earth-Moon spacecraft system such as Apollo”] and R. McKenzie [?], “*Stability of the Sun-Earth-Moon System*”, *The Astronomical Journal* 82 (1977), 303 ff.]

Of course I think there is more than “a strong dynamic possibility” that the Earth could “capture” other *objects* **‘falling out’** in our Solar System. Most the other *planets* have, and now have their share of the “dozens upon dozens of moons in the Solar System, ranging from airless worlds like Earth’s Moon to those with an atmosphere (most notably, Saturn’s Titan)”, but also *icy* and “geologically active” Enceladus. Even Pluto has 6 moons. And only Mercury and Venus don’t have any, evidently having done more ‘comet-like’ **‘falling-out’**. But even “Mars has a couple of small asteroid-like ones”. And we know the Earth has temporarily ‘captured’ or at least ‘encountered’ Mercury twice, Venus twice, and Mars several times.

I also think that the different ‘views’ of our Moon before and after the *water canopy* came down, and the confusion of it with Mercury on it’s 1st Visit, accounts for all the **‘misconceptions’** and ‘passed-along’, supposedly ‘biblically contradicting’, ‘folkloric adjustments’ of any “tale” involving an originally ‘moonless’ Earth. And I mean that the phrase quoted and repeated by Dr. Velikovsky and others, “before there was a moon”, surely was the result of understandably **‘misconceived’**, ‘passed-along’, and over time, ‘rumor-milled’ earlier phrases, maybe originally something more like, ‘before the moon arrived, and the brighter light left’. And I use the word “understandably” not only because of the confusion, nor just because it was a believable interpretation of what was seen, nor just because it must have inevitably become ‘rumor-milled’ over time, but also because it is now a story that contradicts Genesis 1, and therefore must have been a ‘story’ – read, **lie** – that has been ‘adjusted’ since the **‘fallout’** from **the curse** began, and all this to fit Satan’s second ‘master strategy’, which was to **work deceitfully** to establish **‘planet-god’ worship** as a distraction from **worshipping** The Creator.

The Kalevala or *The Kalewala* is “a 19th-century work of epic poetry... from Karelian and Finnish oral folklore and mythology”, which my dictionary defines as “compiled and arranged by Elias Lönnrot from popular lays [“short narrative[s] or other poem[s], especially one[s] to be sung”] of the Middle Ages”. It also identifies Kalevala as referring to “Finland”, but also to a region on the boarder of Finland and Russia, one now mostly controlled by the Russian Republic of Karelia, but otherwise Finland and Karelia together are identified with “the land of the hero [read, **‘demigod’** or **‘angel-human’**] Kaleva, who performed legendary exploits”.

There are also similarities in this “epic” with mythology and folklore from other cultures.

For example, the character Kullervo is similar to the Greek Oedipus. And the virgin maiden Marjatta’s resemblance to the **virgin** Mary “is also striking”. And the arrival of Marjatta’s son in the final song, which brings an end to Väinämöinen’s reign over Kalevala, appears to be a symbolic foreshadowing of the arrival of Christianity, which brings an end to the dominance of Paganism in Finland and the rest of Europe.

And according to my encyclopedia, *The Kalevala*...

...begins with the traditional Finnish creation myth, leading into stories of the creation of the earth, plants, creatures and the sky. Creation,

healing, combat and internal story telling are often accomplished by the character(s) involved singing of their exploits or desires. Many parts of the stories involve a character hunting or requesting lyrics (spells) to acquire some skill, such as boat-building or the mastery of iron making... As well as magical spell casting and singing, there are many stories of lust, romance, kidnapping and seduction. The protagonists of the stories often have to accomplish feats that are unreasonable or impossible which they often fail to achieve leading to tragedy and humiliation. [And it sounds a lot like an RPG (“role-playing game”), huh.]

And the character Ukko, who “corresponds to Thor and Zeus”, Ahti, who is sometimes considered the “god of the sea and of fishing”, Ilmatar, whose name literally means “female air spirit”, Päivätär ('Maiden of the Day') or Kuutar ('Maiden of the Moon'), who is both “the goddess of the Sun and Moon”, or “the same goddess with two aspects”, and Tuoni, “the god of death”, and Tuonetar, “the underworld queen”, seeming matches for Hades and Persephone, and other **gods** and **‘demigods’** (or **angels** and **‘angel-humans’**), all play their parts in this “epic”.

But Dr. Velikovsky concedes that,

There is no evidence to suggest whether the Moon was a planet, a satellite of another planet, or a comet at the time of its capture by the Earth. Whatever atmosphere it may have had...

[Cf. Yu. B. Chernyak [late 20th Century (and early 21st Century?) Russian scientist, with “affiliations” with the Institute for Space Research, Academy of Sciences of the U.S.S.R., and later with the Massachusetts Institute of Technology], “On Recent Lunar Atmosphere”, *Nature*, 273 (15 June, 1978), pp.497ff. The author found “strong theoretical evidence of a considerable atmosphere on the Moon during the greater part of its history.”]

...[its atmosphere] was pulled away [1] by the Earth, [2] by other contacting [or ‘encountering’] bodies [i.e., Mercury, Venus and Mars], or [3] dissipated in some other way [- with such ‘contact’ surely accompanied by, and this should come as a ‘shock’, *electromagnetic discharges*].

By-the-way, my encyclopedia informs me that presently, “The magnetic field of the Moon is very weak in comparison to that of the Earth”, and – supposedly because of its “small...core” – is “not...dipolar”, but instead, “...the largest crustal magnetizations appear to be located near the antipodes [‘bottoms’] of the giant impact basins”. Yeah, and each “giant impact” must have originally also produced a really big EMP too. Or as my encyclopedia adds,

It has been proposed that such a phenomenon [of “magnetizations... located near... giant impact basins”] could result from the free expansion of an impact-generated plasma cloud around the Moon in the presence of an ambient [or an otherwise existing] magnetic field.

Note: “plasma” is the *highest molecular energy phase of matter: solids are frozen (lowest molecular energy and movement), liquids are melted (medium molecular energy and movement), gases are boiled (high molecular energy and movement), and plasma is, well,*



It can simply be considered as a gaseous mixture of negatively charged electrons and highly charged positive ions, being created by heating a gas or by subjecting gas to a strong electromagnetic field. However, true plasma production is from the distinct separation of these [positive] ions and [negative] electrons that produces an electric field, which in turn, produces electric currents and magnetic fields [and *electromagnetic pulses*, such as *lightning*, which is “a powerful EMP event”, photo, p.274].

Or as Dr. Velikovsky puts it,

Since the time the Moon began [or reappeared] to accompany the Earth, it underwent the influence of contacts with comets and planets that passed near the Earth in subsequent ages. The mass of the Moon being less than that of the Earth, the Moon must have suffered greater disturbances in cosmic contacts. During these contacts the Moon was not carried away: this is [mostly] due to the fact that no body more powerful than the Earth came sufficiently close to the Moon to take it away from the Earth for good [and yes, Venus, while sharing a “similarity in... density”, is indeed “slightly smaller” than the Earth]; but in the contacts that took place the Moon was removed repeatedly from one orbit to another.

The variations in the position of the Moon can be read in the variations in the length of the month. The length of the month repeatedly changed in subsequent catastrophic events – and for this there exists a large amount of supporting evidence [which Dr. Velikovsky and I will cover in later sections]. In these later occurrences the Moon played a passive role, and Zeus in the *Iliad* [by Homer] advised it ([in this case speaking to] Aphrodite) to stay out of the battle in which Athene [or Athena] and Ares (Venus and Mars) were the main contestants.

A Brighter Moon

Many traditions persist that at some time in the past the Moon was much brighter than it is now, and larger in appearance than the Sun. In many rabbinical sources it is stated that the Sun and the Moon were equally bright at first...

[*Targum Yerushalmi* [*Targum Pseudo-Jonathan*, “a western targum [translation] of the Torah [Pentateuch]”], Genesis 1:16 [**greater light and lesser light?** – how’s that “equally bright”?] and Numbers 28:15 [???]; *Hullin* [or *Kodoshim*, “the fifth Order of the Mishnah” [also the *Tosefta* and *Talmud*]” 60b; *Midrash Breishith Rabba* [or *B'reshith Rabba* or *Genesis Rabba*, “a religious text from Judaism's classical period, probably written between 300 and 500 CE [AD] with some later additions. It is a midrash [teaching] comprising a collection of ancient rabbinical homiletical [‘for preaching’] interpretations of the Book of Genesis]. Other sources in Ginzberg, *Legends* V. 34ff.]

...The same statement [that “the Moon was much brighter than it is now”] was made to de Sahagun by the aborigines of the New World: “the Sun and the moon had equal light in the past”. [B. de Sahagun [16th Century Bernardino de Sahagún, (not to be confused with 15th Century Juan or John of Sahagún, though also born in Sahagún, Spain), “a Franciscan friar, missionary priest and pioneering

ethnographer ["a branch of anthropology dealing with the scientific description of individual cultures",] who participated in the Catholic evangelization of colonial New Spain (now Mexico) – Booooooo!, *Historia general de las cosas de la Nueva Espana* [*General History of Things in New Spain*], Cf. the Peruvian tradition recorded by Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa in the sixteenth century, [a "Spanish explorer, author, historian, mathematician, astronomer, and scientist"] according to which Viracocha ["the great creator deity in the pre-Inca and Inca mythology in the Andes region of South America"] created the Moon brighter than the Sun: *Historia de los Incas* [*History of the Incas*], ch.7.]

At the other end of the world the Japanese asserted the same: the Nihongi ['Arrival'] Chronicle says that in the past "the radiance of the moon was next to that of the sun in splendor". [Again, sounds more like 'almost as bright' [Nihongi, [meaning, 'The Arrival', the English translation being,] *Chronicles of Japan from the Earliest Times*, transl. by W. G. Aston (1896), Book I, pt.1.]

Traditions of many peoples maintain that the Moon lost a large part of its light and became much dimmer than it had been in earlier ages. [Cf. S. Thompson, *Motif-index of Folk Literature* (1932); cf. Ginzberg, *Legends* VI. 35; *Handbook of South American Indians* (American Bureau of Ethnology [Washington,1948], Vol. II, p.515).]

In order that the Sun and the Moon should give off [nearly] comparable light, the Moon must have had an atmosphere with a high albedo (refracting power [or high reflectance]) [see above section, "The Earth Without the Moon", n.13] or it must have been much closer to the earth [and/or it must have been better magnified with the water canopy lens than the present atmosphere alone can]. In the latter case [- if it were closer -] the Moon would have appeared larger than the Sun. In fact, the Babylonian astronomers computed the visible diameter of the Sun as only two-thirds of the visible diameter of the Moon, which makes a relation [or ratio] of four to nine [or 9 to 4 if instead comparing the larger to the smaller] for the illuminating surfaces.

However remember the *surface area* of a *circle* is $2\pi r$ (or πd), where r is the *radius*, or half the *diameter*, (or d is the diameter). And I mean it appears his math needs correcting here. To explain by example, if the larger *circle* has a *diameter* of $1\frac{1}{2}$ 'Solar Units', and the smaller *circle* a *diameter* of 1 'Solar Unit', (with the *diameter* of the smaller being "two-thirds" that of the larger, and where we're using, instead of *feet* or *miles*, Solar Units equal to the diameter of the Sun, which, like *AU* (*astronomical units*), I'll abbreviate *SU*), then the "visible" *surface area* of the larger *circle* would be $3.14 \times 1.5 \text{ SU} = 4.71 \text{ SU}$, and the "visible" *surface area* of the smaller would be $3.14 \times 1 \text{ SU} = 3.14 \text{ SU}$. And so the *ratio* of their "visible" *surface areas* – in this example the larger to the smaller – is 1.5 or 3 to 2, not 2.25 or $4\frac{1}{2}$ to 2, which is the same as 9 to 4. Still evidently at one time the Moon – whether by the changing perspectives of it offered through the *water canopy*, or later by one of its 'closer orbits' – appeared 1.5 times 'bigger' than the Sun, (unless I'm mistaken somewhere and it really did appear as much as $9/4$ or 2.25 times bigger), though even at its 'biggest' probably not fully as bright since it only *reflects light*, unless its former 'closeness', and/or its 'positioning' for 'maximum magnification' and/or its *albedo* ("reflectance or optical brightness") actually made it look, at least at times, both bigger and brighter.

And whatever the case,

This measure surprised modern scholars, who are aware of the exactness of the measurements made by the Babylonian astronomers [otherwise] and who reason that during the eclipses one can easily [at least since the *water canopy came down*] observe the approximate equality of the visible disks [in “visible diameter”].

[Ernst Friedrich Weidner [19th Century “German assyriologist, astronomy historian and an early Asian archaeologist”, who “at the University of Leipzig... promoted the subject of the Babylonian fixed star sky... [and the] stars of the zodiac belt”, and, “Until 1942, he worked as a journalist in Berlin and, in this position, founded the scientific magazine *Archiv für Keilschriftforschung* [*Archive for Cuneiform Research*], which became the *Archive for Oriental Research* in 1926”, where, “He remained the editor until his death”, and his “Habilitation [“highest-ranking university examinations in Germany, Austria, France, Liechtenstein, Switzerland and some Eastern European countries... used as an academic examination to determine the facultative docenti” or ‘the ability to teach’] took place in 1942 on [or given on the subject of] *The Reliefs of the Assyrian Kings, Part 1: The Reliefs in England, in the Vatican City and in Italy*”, resulting in him being “appointed professor of Orient Research at the Karl Franzens University of Graz”, where “first he dealt with assyriology and astronomy, and later on he also turned to the field of Early Asiatic archeology”, and he is noteworthy because, “Several volumes of the cuneiform inscriptions from Boghazköi were edited by him”, and, “He also collected... more than 50 Neo-Assyrian reliefs from palace and temple complexes, scattered around many museums around the world”, and so he is considered “one of the most important cuneiform writers of his time”], *Beitraege zur Assyriologie* [*Contributions to Assyriology*] VII, Heft 4 [Book 4] (1911), p.99; cf. idem, *Handbuch der Babylonischen Astronomie* [*Handbook of Babylonian Astronomy*] (1915), p.131. Cf. “*Gewichte*” by Dr. Carl Ferdinand Friedrich Lehmann-Haupt [late 19th/early 20th Century “German orientalist [‘Eastern World authority’, especially about Southwest Asia and Northeast Africa] and historian”, and finally Professor at the University of Berlin, who also received a year’s “appointment as a representative to the chair of ancient history at... Oxford”] in *Pauly-Wissowa* [both authors’ names being used as the short title for the 2nd version of the *Encyclopedia of Classical Antiquity* that the late 19th/early 20th Century “German classical philologist” and “leading authority on Roman antiquities”, Professor Georg Wissowa, expanded from the original version by the early 19th Century “German educator and classical philologist”, Professor August Pauly], *Supplements*.]

And talk about associating the Moon with being ‘loony’. All this suggests that there was at least a time or two when a *full moon* could exert *tidal force* on our perfectly ‘squishy brains’ that was significantly more powerful than it presently can.

The Worship of the Moon

Because of its size and also because of the events which accompanied the first appearance of the Moon, many ancient peoples regarded the Moon as the chief of the two luminaries. “The sun was of smaller importance than the moon in the eyes of the Babylonian astrologers.” [Honorary Dr. Carl Bezold [a late 19th/early 20th Century, “Assyriologist”, who “became a full professor at the University of Heidelberg”, and this after he “spent several years working at the British Museum in London”, including being the one who “recorded the clay tablets of El-Amarna”, which we’ll get to in SECTION 11] in F. Boll, *Sternglaube und Sterndeutung* [*Star Beliefs and Star Interpretations*], p.4.]

[In Babylonian cosmology the Moon-god Sin (Nanna) was considered to be the father of the Sun-god Shamash (Utu) and was commonly addressed as “father Sin” (S. Langdon, *Sumerian and Babylonian Psalms* [1909], p.193. Dr. Franz Cumont noted the prominence of Sin in the earliest historical period in Babylonia and found it “remarkable that at first the primacy was assigned to the Moon.” (*Astrology and Religion among the Greeks and Romans*, p.124; cf. Lewy, “*The Late Assyro-Babylonian Cult of the Moon*”). According to the *Dabistan* (ch. 29), a Persian work of early Islamic times, the Ka’abah of Mecca was originally dedicated to the worship of the Moon. On Moon worship among the ancient Arabs, cf. also Johann Christian Friedrich Tuch [19th Century “German Orientalist [‘Eastern World authority’, especially of Southwest Asia and Northeast Africa] and theologian”, who “studied at [The Martin Luther] University of Halle[Wittenberg – MLU]”, “became an associate professor”, and after “relocating to the University of Leipzig... a full professor of theology and Oriental studies” [“Oriental” again then meaning, ‘Eastern World’, especially Southwest Asia and Northeast Africa], and he finally became “university rector”], “*Sinaitische Inschriften*” [or, “*Ein und zwanzig sinaitische Inschriften: Versuch einer Erklärung*”, “*One and Twenty Sinai Inscriptions: An Attempt at an Explanation*”], *Zeitschrift des Deutschen Morgenlaendisches Gesellschaft* [*Journal of the German Oriental Society*] III (1849), p.202, and Andreas Osiander [16th Century “German Lutheran theologian”, “*Vorislamische Religion der Araber*” [“*Pre-Islamic Religion of the Arabs*”], *ibid*, VII (1853), p.483. Cf. Ignác Goldziger [“Hungarian scholar of Islam [who along with two others]... is considered the founder of modern Islamic studies in Europe”], *Mythology among the Hebrews and its Historical Development* (1877), p.72ff. The Greeks regarded the Moon as of greater importance than the Sun: “The sun’s subordination to the moon... is a remarkable feature of early Greek myth. Helios was not even an Olympian, but a mere Titan’s [or Hyperion’s] son.” (Robert Graves [“English poet, novelist, critic and classicist”], *The Greek Myths* [“which retells a large body of Greek myths”] [London,1955] Vol.I, sec.42.1). Christoval de Molina [?] (*An Account of the Fables and Rites of the Yncas*, transl. by Sir Clements Robert Markham [KCB, FRS, “English geographer, explorer, and writer... [and] secretary of the Royal Geographical Society”] [London,1873], p.56) described sacrifices to the Moon by the natives of Peru in the sixteenth century. Also the Indians of Vancouver Island assigned greater importance to the Moon than to the Sun (Edward Burnett Tylor [“English anthropologist, the founder of cultural anthropology”, and “the first Professor of Anthropology at Oxford University”], *Primitive Culture* [New York,1929], p.299), as did several tribes in Brazil (*ibid, loc. cit.* [“same as previous”, “in the place cited”]).]

And by the way, according to my encyclopedia, Andreas Osiander...

...studied at the University of Ingolstadt before being ordained as a [Catholic] priest in 1520 in Nuremberg. In the same year he began work at an Augustinian convent in Nuremberg as a Hebrew tutor. In 1522, he was appointed to the church of St. Lorenz in Nuremberg, and at the same time publicly declared himself to be a Lutheran [and that is, a Protestant 😊]. During the First Diet of Nuremberg (1522) [- not one of the ‘Ecumenical (bad) Councils’ of the Pope with his Roman Catholic Church, but one of the ‘Political (bad) Councils’ of the ‘popo-approved’, Holy Roman Emperor with his Empire], he met Albert of Prussia, Grand Master of the Teutonic Knights [- the German branch of the ‘Catholic-Church-defending’, former Crusaders, Knights Templar], and played an important role in converting him to Lutheranism [Yea!]. He also played a prominent role in the debate which led to the city of Nuremberg's adoption of the Reformation in 1525 [YEA!!!].

The University of Ingolstadt was founded in 1472... It consisted of five

faculties: humanities, sciences, theology, law and medicine... The university was modeled after the University of Vienna. Its chief goal was the propagation of the Christian faith. The university closed in May 1800... [And certainly this was at least partly because...] The 18th century gave rise to the Enlightenment, [another oxymoron, it being] a movement that in some quarters was opposed to the church-run universities of which Ingolstadt was a prime example.

Of course if by the time this institution “closed” the ‘reformed’ students and faculty had already **left** their **first love**, as well as their **hot** Protestant **zeal**, then this may only be a case of Satan’s **‘self-idolatry insiders’** gaining ground on their ultimate rival, that **‘whack-a-mole’ whore**.

And that would be Professor Dr. Stephen Herbert Langdon...

...[who] was an American-born British Assyriologist... [that] studied at the University of Michigan, participating in Phi Beta Kappa [- “the nation’s most prestigious honor society”,] and earning an A. B. [or B.A.] in 1898 and an A. M. [or M.A.] in 1899. Following this he went to New York’s Union Theological Seminary, graduating in 1903, and then on to Columbia University to obtain a Ph.D. in 1904. Langdon then became a fellow of Columbia in France (1904-1906), during which time he was ordained as a deacon of the Church of England (1905) in Paris. Subsequently, he moved to Oxford University in England, becoming a Shillito reader in Assyriology in 1908, a British citizen in 1913, and after the retirement of [Rev.] Archibald Sayce... [Dr. Langdon became] a Professor of Assyriology in 1919 [and continued to be for 3 decades, and so is considered “a pioneer British Assyriologist and linguist”].

And that would be Dr. Julius Lewy,

...Semitic philologist and Assyriologist... [who] began Assyriological studies with [late 19th/early 20th Century Professor of Assyriology] Heinrich Zimmern [who is “considered the founder of the discipline of the history of the ancient Near Eastern religions in Germany”] at Leipzig... [“one of the world’s oldest universities and the second-oldest university (by consecutive years of existence) in Germany”, and he continued] with [University of Berlin Professors] Friedrich Delitzsch [of Assyriology] and Eduard Meyer [of Ancient History] and received his Ph.D. He taught at the University of Giessen from 1922 (professor, 1930). From 1929 to 1936, he was curator of the Hilprecht collection of cuneiform [or Sumerian writing] tablets at the University of Jena [which is one of “the ten oldest universities in Germany”, and “is affiliated with six Nobel Prize winners”]...

Late 19th/early 20th Century German *assyriologist*, Professor, Dr. Hermann Volrath Hilprecht, by-the-way, who “received his Ph.D. from Leipzig”, but spent most of his career in the U.S., including “professor of Assyrian” at the University of Pennsylvania, and adding doctorates from there and Princeton, and finally becoming a U.S. citizen, really did ‘find’ all these “tablets”. However the most notable of them were ‘darkened’ by “controversy” because of the dispute (involving one or two ‘glory hogs’) over who should get the credit. But they were nonetheless discovered by the “excavation” of the city of Nippur in Sumer, or Sumeria, where Dr. Hilprecht was the second “expedition director”. And so the “tablets” were

inscribed by Sumerians, which supposedly “was the first urban civilization in the historical region of southern Mesopotamia, modern-day southern Iraq, during the Chalcolithic and Early Bronze ages”, (‘loop-dated’ to as early as “5000” BC), “and arguably the first civilization in the world [along] with Ancient Egypt and the Indus Valley”, with inhabitants living “along the valleys of the Tigris and Euphrates...”

And it was evidently Dr. Lewy, after Dr. Hilprecht died and his wife donated his “collection” to the University of Jena, who did the ‘better handing’ of these “tablets”. And after that, being...

Dismissed from his post by the Nazis, he left Germany in 1933 and taught at the Sorbonne in Paris in 1933-34. He then came to the United States and taught at Johns Hopkins in 1934... Lewy became professor at Hebrew Union College, Cincinnati in 1936 and taught Semitic Languages and Bible there until 1963... In this branch of Assyriology, Lewy was one of the most important modern researchers. In several of his works, he discussed problems arising out of the study of the ancient history of the Jewish people and biblical questions... His wife, Hildegard Lewy, was also an Assyriologist. She replaced her husband at Hebrew Union College following his death [<http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/lewy-julius>].

And yes, the Moon must have been something to see before the *water canopy* came down, and even more so before **the curse**, and probably after The Flood too, and that is, whenever it had a significantly ‘closer orbit’ to the Earth – however temporarily – than it does now...

The Assyrians and the Chaldeans referred to the time of the Moon-god as the oldest period in the memory of the people: before other planetary gods came to dominate the world ages, the Moon was the supreme deity. Such references are found in the inscriptions of Sargon II [**king of Assyria** [Isa 20:1](#), “son of Shalmaneser, and father of Sennacherib”] (ca. -720 [“-” signifies BC])...

[See Sargon II’s “*Display Inscription*”, lines 110 and 146: “since the distant days of the age of Nannaru [[the Moon God](#)]”. Cf. Dr. Hugo Winckler [late 19th/early 20th Century “German archaeologist and [Pan-Babylonianist] historian” and “Extraordinary Professor of Oriental languages” [usually Assyrian – including Hebrew, Sumerian, Babylonian, etc. – and/or Egyptian, but not Chinese] at the University of Berlin, “who uncovered the capital of the Hittite Empire (Hattusa) at Boğazkale, Turkey”, (well, there really were **Hittites** ^{H2850} anyway), and who “translated both the Code of Hammurabi [Ancient Mesopotamian/Babylonian “law” etched in “a seven and a half foot stone stele [[“monument”](#)] and various clay tablets” by King Hammurabi, “dating back to about 1754 BC”] and the [El-]Amarna letters”, the ones we’re getting to in [SECTION 11](#)], *Himmels und Weltenbild der Babylonier* [[Heaven and World Image of the Babylonians](#)] (Leipzig,1901), p.31: “*Die aeltere Zeit bezeichnet Sargon II als die Zeit der Nannar – eine Erscheinungsform des Mondgottes.*” [“The older period referred to by Sargon II as the time of the Nannar – is a manifestation of the Moon-Gods.][A cuneiform text [Sumerian writing, but it was also used by later civilizations,] describes the first appearance of the Moon: “When the gods ... fixed the crescent of the moon, to cause the new moon to shine forth, to create the month... The new moon, which was created in heaven with majesty, in the midst of heaven arose.” R. W. Rogers, *Cuneiform Parallels to the Old Testament* (New York,1912), p.46.]

...and [“such references” to “the time of the Moon-god as the oldest period in the memory of the

people”, and being “before other planetary gods came to dominate the world ages” are also “found in the inscriptions of” Nabonidus [remember him?] (ca. -550).

[Daniel David Luckenbill [early 20th Century “American assyriologist and professor at the University of Chicago”], *Ancient Records of Assyria* (1926-27), II. 870; cf. J. Lewy, “The Late Assyro-Babylonian Cult of the Moon and its Culmination in the Time of Nabonidus”, *Hebrew Union College Annual*, Vol.19, (1945-46), pp.443, 461 ff., 486, [<https://www.jstor.org/stable/23503682?seq=1>].]

The Babylonian Sin – the Moon was a very ancient deity: Mount Sinai owes its name to Sin.

And all this further suggest why after The Flood the Moon was thought to be ‘newly arrived’, especially if this was also an occasion of an *axis shift* – as it likely was – where views of the Moon’s *phases* – from “crescent” to “new moon” – either started for the first time, or just radically changed, and that is, where its varying appearances before Noah and his family got into the Ark, and what it looked like afterward, became completely different, including being in a completely different *orbit*, and in a completely different sky, making it appear to be, though surely not the first, an entirely different, and surely the greatest **‘planet’ god** up to that time. And I mean ‘the first moonrise’ after The Flood must have really appeared to be so.

And that would be The Rev., Dr. Robert William Rogers, B.A., Ph.D., Litt.D., D.D., LL.D,

...Professor of Hebrew and Old Testament Exegesis, 1893-1929; Professor Emeritus and Lecturer on History of the Ancient Orient [yes, of Southwest Asia and Northeast Africa, but in his case evidently especially including Palestine or Israel] 1929-1930... [who] arrived at Drew in 1893 to fill the chair in exegetical theology. He had received his B.A. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1886 [which was the same year Dr. Hilprecht became “professor of Assyrian” there], a second B.A. from Johns Hopkins, and a Ph.D. from Haverford in 1890, as well as other earned and honorary degrees. Rogers had an international reputation for scholarship and he remained a distinguished faculty member at Drew for thirty-six years. [[https://uknow.drew.edu/confluence/display/DrewHistory/Robert+William+Rogers - app-switcher](https://uknow.drew.edu/confluence/display/DrewHistory/Robert+William+Rogers+app-switcher)].

Drew University, by-the-way,

...was conceived in 1866 when there arose a growing demand for organized theological education in the Methodist Episcopal Church (...also the centenary of American Methodism). In response..., Daniel Drew, a Wall Street financier and steamboat tycoon, offered \$250,000 to found the Drew Theological Seminary. In 1867, the first students arrived at "The Forest," the former Gibbons estate in Madison, New Jersey... The first class of all-male Brothers College [a liberal arts college] began study in September 1928. With the addition of the aptly named Brothers College, Drew Theological Seminary became Drew University [<https://uknow.drew.edu/confluence/display/DrewHistory/A+Short+History+of+Drew+University>].

Yes, “aptly named” indeed. But enough about those **‘lovable’** Methodist, when we have something more from Dr. Velikovsky that is arguably more ‘pressing’ to ‘moon over’...

The Moon, [when it was] appearing as a body larger than the Sun, was endowed by the imagination of the peoples with a masculine role, while the Sun was assigned a feminine role. Many languages reserved a masculine name for the Moon [*Yoreach* in Hebrew, *Sin* in Assyrian, *der Mond* in German, *Mesiatz* in Russian, and so on]. It was probably when the Moon was removed to a greater distance from the earth and became smaller to observers on the earth, that another name, usually feminine, came to designate the Moon in most languages.

[[Feminine names for the Moon include] *Levana* in Hebrew, *Luna* in Latin and several of the Romance languages, as well as Russian [plus *Aphrodite* in Greek, who has mixed associations,] and so on]. [Macrobius (*Saturnalia* VIII. 3) quotes Philochorus as having said that “men offer sacrifices to the moon dressed as women and women dressed as men, because the moon is thought to be both male and female [that is, appearing to vary in size, and this apparently either in the course of its orbits, or, and more dramatically, after **‘visits’** from other **‘planet gods’**]” (Transl. by Percival Vaughan Davies) [? - https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/7443270.Percival_Vaughan_Davies].]

Philochorus of Athens, a late 4th/early 3rd BC “Greek historian and Atthidographer”, (means he “wrote an *Atthis*”, which is “a work on the history of Athens”), was “a member of a priestly family. He was a seer and interpreter of signs, and a man of considerable influence”, and though living in the period of ‘just plain’ Platonism, (born less than a decade after Plato’s death), since he is described as “strongly anti-Macedonian in politics”, then I’m thinking he was more **‘pro-planet-god** but **‘anti-beast’**, because he is also called “a bitter opponent of Demetrius Poliorcetes” (The Besieger), “son of Antigonos I Monophthalmus”, who “finally [became] king of Macedon (294-288 BC)”, and otherwise known as Demetrius I of Macedon. And I have not read his *Atthis*, nor care to, so I’m just guessing he was **‘strongly anti-beast’**, and likely just as much **‘anti-Creator-God’** too, that is, one of the then still popular, ‘just plain’ **‘planet-god’ worshippers** who preferred “democracy”. Either that, or maybe he was **‘pro-beast’**, and a ‘just plain’ Platonist, as long as the **beast** was King Cassander or his son.

What do I mean? Do you remember how Lysimachus – one of the 4 Diadochi, the ‘successor generals’ of Alexander the Great – when Alexander’s kingdom, after the Battle of Ipsus (301 BC), became **broken** into **four notable ones**, and Lysimachus became the first king of one of these 4 kingdoms, the one which “failed first” (Thrace and Lydia, now Bulgaria and Western Turkey), but who is “responsible before it did for insuring that Alexander’s kingdom is not reunited under Antigonos I Monophthalmus (The One-Eyed) because Lysimachus is instrumental in Antigonos’ defeat [and death] in The Battle of Ipsus”? And remember that the Antigonid Dynasty ‘kingdom-hopped’ over to Macedon? Well, since you should now know that the father of Demetrius had just one good eye, guess who killed the son of Cassander and took over the Macedon Kingdom? Yeah, and he would naturally be the one to defeat Lysimachus for killing his father too, and to pacify Seleucus for his trouble with his father by splitting the kingdom of Lysimachus with him.

But looking for **higher ‘spiritual interpretations’**, which we should more and more **do**, what I really **see** in all this is the **truth** of our Lord’s **words**, when he repeatedly generally declares,

Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand [Mat 12:25-28](#);
[Mark 3:22-30](#); [Luke 11:17](#)

And of course I agree with our Lord that – generally – when it comes to ‘**commanding**’ and ‘**casting out**’ **unclean spirits**, and the general operation of Satan’s **kingdom**, **Satan** [generally doesn’t] **cast out Satan**. But when it comes to any **house**, **city**, **kingdom**, or even **principality and power**, especially **the rulers of the darkness of this world**, and their **wickedness in high places**, Jesus is apparently saying that the **divisions** within them will eventually be the reason that each of them ultimately **faileth** and **shall not stand**. I mean none of the 7 ‘**angel-princes**’ have taken their ‘plunge’ into **the second death** yet. So why did there need to be **seven heads** anyway? As I **see** it, 6 of the **seven** have only been demoted, with **the other** still awaiting his promotion, but one that he must ultimately at least share with **the eighth**. And I can’t imagine any of them were or will be very happy about the **divisions** that brought or bring about their inevitable – including **prophesied** – **fall down** ^{H7812} (e.g., [Isa 45:22-23](#); [Rom 14:11-12](#); [Phl 2:10-11](#)).

And speaking of those possibly worthy of ‘**millstone necklaces**’ – because we are talking about a lot of **offences** and **shame** here – we may as well talk about that 17th Century English “poet” and “polemicist”, John Milton, whose “poetry and prose reflect deep personal convictions, a passion for freedom and self-determination”, and who is unfortunately “best known for his epic poem *Paradise Lost*”. And yeah, I’m calling him ‘Mr. Millstone’ from now on, because look what he did to Dr. Velikovskiy’s perspective, as well as to the perspective of **the whole world**.

The Pre-Adamite Age

An ancient tradition ascribed the establishment of Moon worship to Adam, the first man. The medieval [“(c. 1105-1185)”] Arab scholar Abubacer [or *Ibn Tufail* or *Abubekar* or *Abu Jaafar Ebn Tophail*, etc., an “Arab Andalusian Muslim”, (Andalucía being “a region in S Spain, bordering on the Atlantic Ocean and the Mediterranean Sea” – remember there was that early 2nd Millennium AD Crusaders v. Muslims “shuffleboard game”?), and “polymath” (– a multi-talented genius like Leonardo da Vinci),] wrote: They [the Sabaeans] say [or ‘passed along the rumor’] that Adam was born from male and female, just like the rest of mankind, but they honored him greatly, and said that he had come from the Moon, that he was the prophet and apostle of the Moon, and that he had exhorted the nations that they should serve the Moon... They also related about Adam that when he had left the Moon and proceeded from the area of India towards Babylonia, that he brought many wonders with him [and surely suchlike ‘gossip’ originated from people otherwise appropriately described as **talebearer[s]**, and **tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not**, and that is, as Ham’s wife must have].

[Quoted in Athanasius Kircher [a 17th Century “German [necessarily **desperately wicked**] Jesuit scholar and polymath”, who actually “has been compared...to Leonardo da Vinci”], *Turris Babel sive Archonotologia* [*Tower of Babel* or *Archonotologia* – evidently meaning something like ‘archetypal metaphysics’, and both these words – and a few or more that define them – probably need ‘looking up’ if you’re going to have any chance of understanding their combined meaning, one definition of “metaphysics” from

my dictionary, for example, being that it's the title of "a treatise [or of "a formal and systematic exposition in writing of the principles of a subject", in this case, from the] 4th century b.c... by Aristotle, dealing with first principles, the relation of universals to particulars, and the teleological doctrine of causation", which, also according to my dictionary, is "the philosophical doctrine that final causes, design, and purpose exist in nature", and of course Aristotle, as other soon to be 'twice dead' *metaphysicists*, 'espoused' that "causes", "design", and "purpose" somehow "exist" separate from The Creator of "nature", if you can somehow '**mis-imagine**' that,] (Amsterdam,1679), p.134.]

The Adamites, the ante-diluvial men [or antediluvian, or prediluvian, meaning, "of or belonging to the period before the Flood. Gen. 7, 8", or as I generally define it, "Pre-Flood"], were most probably [- especially to '**scripture deniers**' -] not the first human beings on the planet. Even admitting [and supposing] that by "expulsion from the Garden of Eden" is allegorized a catastrophe which quite destroyed mankind prior to the Deluge [- though really it was just the 'initiation' of **the curse**], it is impossible to declare that it was the first catastrophe [or even "declare" the 'nature' of this "catastrophe", that is, without **scripture**]. It depends [- if not on **scripture** -] on the memory [read, 'folklore' or 'rumors'] of the peoples [as to] which catastrophe they consider as the act of creation [and that is, whether it happened at The Curse or The Flood, though this "memory" also too much "depends" on Ham's wife's '**talebearing**', and that on Satan's '**propaganda**']. [But whichever event is 'co-opted' for this 'rumor', it **seemeth right that...**] Human beings, rising from some catastrophe, bereft of memory of what had happened [and/or later misinformed about it], regarded themselves as created from the dust of the earth [- and it apparently really was Adam's testimony after all]. All knowledge about the [supposed 'Pre-Creation'] ancestors, who they were and in what interstellar space they lived, was wiped away [- or again, 'propagandized away' -] from the memory of the [progeny of the] few survivors. The talmudic-rabbinical tradition believes that before Adam was created, the world was more than once inhabited and more than once destroyed.

And what did he mean by "knowledge" supposedly "wiped away" apparently "about the ancestors" allegedly from "interstellar space"? This must be the question of where *life* in our Solar System supposedly 'originally' came from, and that is, other than from Earth, as he just suggested it may have come from the Moon, or from pretty much anywhere. And remember 'top scientist' even to the time of Sir William Herschel's day believed, and a growing number today believe, that the Moon and other planets at least used to or may still harbor *life*.

But if the 'average Orthodox Jew', because of the "talmudic-rabbinical tradition", really "believes", in spite of **scripture**, "that before Adam... the world was more than once inhabited... and destroyed", all I can say is, 'cylindrical groundwater aperture', (read, 'O well'). And by that I mean that the "knowledge" about the Pre-Fall and Pre-Flood World wasn't really "wiped from the memory of the few survivors". Moses' account should **prove** that, especially to 'Orthodox Jews'. And questions about 'Pre-Creation Ancestors' don't really come from **scripture**, but from this '**false doctrine**' that more likely originated with one of those "few survivors" of The Flood, with this '**propaganda**' - and however later 'folklorically adjusted' - being 'built-up' by Satan into an 'impressively towering' **lie**, which if it's human 'promoters' hadn't by God been - with The 2nd Visit of Mercury - '**divided**', including both linguistically and lithically, the results could have been beyond

apocalyptic, both cosmologically and chronically, **thank God**.

And **thank God** that He instead again **made a shew of them openly** – yes, of Satan, et al. – which again resulted in God’s **triumphing over them in it**. However this also goes to **shew** that ‘Mr. Millstone’ doesn’t deserve all the blame, only that he too was **deceived** by our **adversary** to ‘repopularize’ such ‘pre-adamnable’ ideas, PAMD personally unavoidable.

And Dr. Velikovsky too, believing that the ‘memory’ of ‘Pre-Creation Ancestors’ had been “wiped away” at “The Fall” by “a catastrophe which quite destroyed mankind”, concluded,

It was at the end of the first age, symbolized by the expulsion of man from the blessed Garden of Eden, that the moon lost its brightness [“The very angels and the celestial beings were grieved by the transgression of Adam. The moon alone laughed [-] wherefore God... obscured her light.” Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 80]. It was not just a single human pair – the tradition ascribes to Adam the invention of seventy languages [- which were not likely really ‘invented’ until Mercury’s 2nd Visit].

And besides the Pre-Flood **‘propaganda’**, are you hearing what I’m hearing? Dr. Velikovsky somewhat unwittingly implied that at the ‘initiation’ of **the curse** somehow the Moon noticeably “lost its brightness”. But whether the Moon actually did ‘visibly shake’ at the ‘initiation’ of **the curse**, and looked like it “laughed”, or whether it only appeared to do so as the *water canopy* ‘rippled’, after which maybe the Moon’s *atmosphere*, say, by some kind of *eruption*, was significantly clouded, whereby it really looked like it “lost its brightness”, I can only **‘speculate’**.

Still Dr. Velikovsky added more metaphorical **fuel** ^{H3980: H402} to this possibly literally ‘smoking’ **‘speculation’**, and ‘stoked it up’ further, saying,

Hebrew mythology assigns to the period preceding Adam’s expulsion different geophysical and biological conditions. The sun shone permanently on the Earth, and the Garden of Eden, placed in the East, was, it must be conceived, under perpetual rays of the Dawn [and to him “it must be conceived” as a “perpetual...Dawn” because, having apparently overlooked the possibility that a *water canopy* could have ‘globally-moderated’ the *temperature* of the *atmosphere*, he evidently **‘misunderstood’** that it would have gotten too *hot* if Adam lived where the Sun was “permanently” too ‘high in the sky’.] The earth was not watered by rain, but mist ascending from the ground condensed as dew upon the leaves. "The plants looked only to the earth for nourishment" [which he also apparently did not realize was another effect of Earth’s then *stronger magnetic field*, one evidently then strong enough to support a *water canopy*]. Man was of exceedingly great stature: "The dimensions of man’s body were gigantic [which is yet another *magnetic field/water canopy*, but also an **‘angel DNA’ effect**]." His appearance was unlike that of later men: "His body was overlaid with a horny skin." But a day came and the celestial illumination ceased: "The sun... had grown dark the instant Adam became guilty of disobedience" [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 79]. The flames of the ever-turning sword terrified Adam (Genesis 3:24). In another legend it is told that the celestial light shone a little in the darkness. And then "the celestial light ceased, to the consternation of Adam." [Was this the first perceived sunset?] The illumination of the first period never returned. The sky that man was

used to seeing never appeared before him again: "The firmament is not the same as the heavens of the first day." The "day" of Genesis, as I have already noted, is said to be equal to a thousand years.

And again, na-uh. Peter's **thousand years** has nothing to do with this. And Peter's statement, by-the-way, is likely inspired by [Psalm 90:4](#), a **psalm** that is **A Prayer of Moses**. And I can't pass up the excellent **supplication** of Moses in this '**prayer-psalm**', which is that since...

The days of our years are threescore years and ten [70]; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore [80] years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. Who knoweth the power of thine anger? even according to thy fear, so is thy wrath. So teach us to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom.

And so it is by these '**studies**' given to me by God - wherein '**we**' **work, strive, press, run** and **fight** to **learn** to **apply our hearts unto wisdom**, and by **so doing** also '**increasingly**' **awake to righteousness** and '**increasingly**' **get understanding** - that we **hope** to **attain unto** '**increasingly**' **greater love**, and that would be **love** that is **ministered** with **joy and gladness**, and wherewith the **minister** is **able** to **lay down his life for his friends**, and that is, with the **purpose** to **obtain** and become **exercised** in the **use** of the **permission** from God to **be servant of all**, and **be** one of the close **friends** of Jesus, and that **for ever**.

And speaking of a "day", either Montana or Madagascar **dinosaur DNA alone** - I mean even without all the **insects, amphibians** and **reptiles** found 'incased in rock' alive - **prove** Genesis 1 has to be talking about regular days, and a literal week that took place about 6,000 years ago. However at first glance, all I **see** going on at this transition from a potentially '**permanent**' and '**uncorrupted**' Creation to the **cursed** and **corrupted** one, besides '**abracadabra adjustments**' to the **ordinances of heaven and earth**, is an **axis shift**, possibly along with the **clouding** for a short period of the Moon's and Earth's **atmospheres**. Still, I expect further **thoughts** and **meditations** '**along these lines**' will **continue** to be 'personally unavoidable'.

And 'glancing just a bit farther', Dr. Velikovsky further suggests that,

It was after the fall of man, according to Hebrew tradition, that the sun set for the first time: "The first time Adam witnessed the sinking of the sun, he was seized with anxious fears. All the night he spent in tears. When day began to dawn, he understood that what he had deplored was but the course of nature." It was also then that the seasons began. This is told in the following story: "Adam noticed that the days were growing shorter and feared lest the world be darkened... but after the winter solstice he saw that the days grew longer again."

And this 'glance' also seems to imply that Earth originally 'barreled on it side', without sunsets or seasons, something like Uranus does now, or maybe it just kept the same face toward the sun like the Moon now does to the Earth, so that before The Fall Adam could always see the Sun overhead, and not necessarily just "under the perpetual rays of the Dawn". But whatever the case, the **water canopy** must have 'greenhoused' Earth's atmosphere, and that is, kind of like the mostly **carbon dioxide atmosphere** of Venus now does, which would have established a **stable**

atmospheric temperature worldwide, even on any prolonged or perpetually dark side. And yes, under the *water canopy* it was not noticeably cooler in the shade. So it's not the temperature that would have provoked anyone to seek **the darkness of the shadows**.

Of course Genesis 1 is rather repetitive of the fact that, from **the evening and the morning of the first day**, there have always been – every **day** since – **evenings** and **mornings**. And Genesis 1 is also clear that **the stars** have always been, among other things, **for** determining **seasons**, well, except of course in 'bad weather', and especially in 'particularly nasty weather', like the kind accompanying Plagues of Darkness, where evidently the stirred up *particulate matter* in the *atmosphere* – which Moses described as **darkness which may be felt** or **thick darkness** – can pin you down for **days** or, as **prophesied** with '**precept-interconnectivity**', even for weeks. And from **time to time** the **stars** otherwise become temporarily useless **for** determining **seasons**, and I mean just after occasions when **evenings** and/or **mornings** come early or are delayed, and that is, when 'reorientations' of **the greater light**, **the lesser light** and **the stars** occur, and that is, until the new way that their altered processions correspond to the changed **seasons** can be redetermined. And come to think of it, it must have taken even Adam a short time to originally determine, and as necessary redetermine, these 'orientations'.

But the point is that since **the first day**, at least generally speaking, **evenings**, **mornings** and **seasons**, (and before The Flood we're talking just *astronomical seasons*, not yet *meteorological* ones), as well as that '**six-days-shall-ye-work**' plus one '**rest-day**' week, have not **ceased** ^{H7673}. And hopefully you didn't let your imagination decompartmentalize you too far out into 'fantasy spacetime', and I mean hopefully not too much more than I ventured before I – while being 'loudly mocked by a formidable gaggle' – 'crash-landed' back in Genesis 1 again.

And I mean though Dr. Velikovsky is right that "it is impossible to declare" the exact 'nature' of the "catastrophe" that occurred at the time of the "expulsion from the Garden of Eden", he was wrong about not being able to "declare" that it is "the first", I mean except that it could be argued – as I do, (though he does make my case weaker) – that The Fall doesn't fit the criteria for one of God's Great Natural Judgments, and mostly because it is instead more importantly distinguished as the 'initiation' and 'delivery system' of them all, and that is, however much they are all otherwise thereafter 'guided' and 'targeted', 'redirected' or 'diverted', 'softened' or 'escalated', or sometimes even altogether 'aborted' by Him as He **willeth** ^{G2309}.

And of course God's 'interventions' into this '**natural fallout**' of **his judgments** include the involvement of **angels**, which are **ministering spirits, sent forth to minister**, who in such cases may be used by God and/or His Son to '**target**' and **destroy all** the **enemies of his people**, including sometimes the ones living among them, but certainly in **ways** that **all those that put their trust in Him** may **know** that He **defendest them**, and that **he shall give his angels charge over 'them', to keep 'them' in all 'their' ways**, including '**providing**' **provision** ^{H3740: H6720: H6718: H3899: (flesh) H7607} for their needs, and whether in **chastisement** or **deliverance**, which might, if it's the '**happiest**' kind, involve '**their**' death, (I mean **God** – evidently by the **service** of **angels** – **took** Enoch and Elijah, and He apparently similarly accommodates anyone **not accepting deliverance...that they might obtain a better resurrection**, of which '**our martyr Stephen** comes to mind in that he apparently had **angels** awaiting who **took** him too), though all of this **ministering** of **angels** applies **to the Jew first**, but **also to the Gentile**, and that is, to anyone otherwise **accepted with him**,

(like Jewish converts to Christianity, who are then technically Gentiles, and Gentile proselytes to Judaism, who are then technically Jews). And I mean with maybe only around 100 million **'good angels'** left to **minister** to **mankind**, I assume 'the Jews' get by far the most **ministering** out of them (e.g., [2Sa 24:16](#)/[1Ch 21:12](#); [1Ki 19:1-8](#); [Psa 34:7](#); [35:5-6](#); [Isa 37:36](#); [Dan 3:28](#); [6:22](#); [Zec 3](#), though in this chapter one of the **angels** appears to be Jesus, Who of course will always – as should we – **speak** for **our Father**); [Mat 28:2](#); [Act 5:19-20](#); [Act 12:7-11](#); [Act 12:21-23](#); [Rev 7:2-3](#); [Rev 8:5](#); [Rev 20:1-3](#); also consider all the **angels** that are **prophesied** to help **'administer'** The Judgments of The Great Tribulation).

And the Apostle Paul puts this message about **angels** 'in a nutshell', asking rhetorically,

Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation? [Heb 1:13-14](#)

And as sure as it is that **God knoweth** each and every **'predestinated soul'**, and that nothing can happen to them that is not **predestinated**, then surely the **predestinated cannot lose** their **'eternal soul'**, though from our perspective we can only **see** enough to **work out our own salvation with fear and trembling**, huh. And I mean if your perspective includes genuine **fear and trembling** for your **salvation**, then it must be so because **it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure**, which indeed is a way to **know** you are indeed **predestinated**, well, as long as you **continue** to **will** to **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling** anyway. And yeah, this should be at least a little 'dizzying' at times. And by-the-way, Psalms 2 can help with the **comfort** and **hope** to **rejoice** through the **trembling**, and with the **patience** and **strength** to **trust** till you're **blessed**, as needed.

And besides weakening my case that The Fall was not so much a "cataclysm", and though apparently somewhat confusing the "cataclysms" – in this case The Fall with The Flood – Dr. Velikovsky does correctly distinguish that,

The earth also underwent [Post-Flood] changes: "Independent before, she was hereafter to wait to be watered by the rain from above" [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 79]. The variety of species diminished. Man, according to Hebrew legends, decreased in size; there was a "vast difference between his later and his former state – between his supernatural size then, and his shrunken size now" [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I, 76]. He also lost his horny skin. The whole of nature altered its ways [[again, and I mean both after The Fall and after The Flood](#)].

But though the "vast difference" in the "size" of "Man" before The Flood was most significantly "supernatural", and that is, where **'angel DNA'** was involved, his "former state" – and longevity – was otherwise just the natural result of the presence of the *water canopy*, and that is, the result of **1) hyperoxygenation** (by *hyperbaric atmospheric O₂*) of all *oxygen-breathing* (or using) *organisms*, including *humanity*, *fauna*, etc., and **2) hypercarbon-dioxygenation** (by *hyperbaric atmospheric CO₂*) of all 'carbon dioxide-using' *organisms*, including *flora*, various *planktons*, etc., **3) 'enhanced' cosmic radiation shielding** (by *upperatmospheric liquid H₂O*) of all *lifeforms*, not to mention, **4) whatever cognitive 'enhancements' existed** (because of the then *stronger magnetic field*) that 'benefited' *brain* and *nervous system functions*.

And I imagine, as maybe you can now too, that such ‘enhancements’ will resume some **day** soon. But I also **see** that at the end of this **day** – and this **time** solely because of **the flesh** – that such ‘enhancements’ will mostly only help **‘plunge’ a number of whom is as the sand of the sea ‘into a vast lake’ of eternal destruction**. And yeah, it’s **‘for ever unavoidable’** too, that...

...in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge
[indeed] **increaseth sorrow** [Ecc 1:18](#),

which must mean that the **‘neverending ministry’** of The Spirit to **shew ‘us’ thing to come** – in **‘our’** case in advance of most all others, **God willing** – always has its ‘downside’, though the **zeal** ^{H7068} **‘we’ hope** to share with Jesus, as among his close **friends**, should also always still **provoke ‘us’ to press toward ‘ever-increasing’ greater love**, and to **‘ever-increasingly’ higher ‘upsides’, ‘praise, thank, glorify and sing unto God with joy and gladness’**.

And to again borrow Dr. Velikovsky’s phrase, “it is impossible to declare” in all cases what really happened, and what is just Ham’s wife’s **‘talebearing’**, except we **know** that such **lies** originated with her, or with her “ancestors”, and that this **‘propaganda’** brought down The Tower of Babel, and that surely it was our **adversary** ‘spinning’ of this “story” every step of the way, as much as allowed, which really only resulted in God **triumphing over them in it**.

And as far as “men” being “of exceedingly great stature”, where, “The dimensions of man’s body were gigantic”, compared to “his shrunken size now”, especially when any **expressed ‘angel DNA’** was involved, and where there was “furry” or “horny skin”, this brings us back to...

Giants

The traditions of peoples all over the world are quite unanimous in asserting that [1] at an earlier time a race of giants lived on the earth, that [2] most of the race were destroyed in great catastrophes; that [3] they were of cruel nature and were furiously fighting among themselves [uh-huh]; [and] that [4] the last of them were exterminated when after a cataclysm a migration of peoples brought the forebears of the peoples of today to their new homelands.

And of course before The Flood it was a seriously **‘house-divided’, ‘every imagination of the thoughts of...heart[s]...only evil continually’** kind of ‘furious fighting’. And in The Flood they were all “destroyed”, which actually means that they became **‘disembodied’, ‘body-seeking’, unclean spirits**, and that is, evidently all but one of them, with all their **‘angelic parents’** apparently being remanded in **chains** to the **spiritual** – though nonetheless subterranean – **darkness** of *Tartarus*, which evidently the Greeks ‘mythologized’ as the imprisonment of the Titans when their king, Kronos (Saturn to the Romans) fell to Zeus (Jupiter to the Romans).

And after The Flood, when by Ham’s wife new generations of them rose to dominance at Babel, The 2nd Visit of Mercury forced “migration”, and was likely the cause that shortly thereafter **the earth was divided** into continents, which apparently somewhat ‘corralled’ them, making them vulnerable to being “exterminated” again, except for a few who escaped, and a few others, evidently like Ham’s wife, who didn’t so much **express** their “gigantic” **genes**, because somehow some of them survived, including those later finished off by Joshua and David, et al., and those they evidently chased across the Atlantic, who apparently

became 'another wave' of **giants** that oppressed the American Natives, and that is, before they too banded together and "exterminated" them all, as their folklore, and at least some of those "burial mounds" testify.

And apparently some surviving **giants** 'migrated' to the Far East too, because,

The Japanese narrate that when their forefathers after a great catastrophe about two and a half or three thousand years ago [which would be about the time of The Visits of Venus], came from the continent [of Asia] and invaded the isles, they found there long-legged, furry giants. These giants were called Ainu [or **Anak?** e.g., Num 13:33; Jdg 1:20]. The forefathers of the Japanese were defeated in the first encounter, but in the second encounter they were victorious.

And as for the ones that 'migrated' to the West across the Atlantic Ocean,

Ixtlilxochitl described the wandering of peoples of the western hemisphere in the four ages of the world. The first age came to its end in the Flood. In the second age [ending with The 2nd Visit of Mercury?], called "the sun of the earthquake," there lived the [Post-Flood] generation of the giants, which was [all but] destroyed in the cataclysm that terminated this age [or when they were 'divided' by this "cataclysm" and thereby 'conquered']. The third period [ending with one or both Visits of Venus?] was "the sun of the wind," called so because at the end of this period terrible hurricanes annihilated everything. The new inhabitants of the new world were Ulme and Xicalauca who came from the east to find a foothold at Potouchan: here they met a number of giants, the last survivors of the second catastrophe. [And a Scandinavian legend also tells of "only two" survivors, but apparently they survived The Visits of Venus, whose 'annihilating destructiveness' we have further to consider, especially in SECTION 8 & 9.] The fourth age [ending with The 2nd Visit of Venus or The Visits of Mars?] was called "the fire sun," because of the great fire that put an end to this epoch. At that time the Toltecs arrived in the land of Anahuac, put to flight by the catastrophe: they wandered for 104 years before they settled in their new home.

My dictionary defines Anáhuac as...

the central plateau of Mexico, between the Sierra Madre Occidental [Western] and the Sierra Madre Oriental [Eastern] ranges (3700 to 9000 feet...): center of former Aztec civilization.

And that a Toltec is...

a member of an Indian people living in central Mexico before the advent of the Aztecs and traditionally credited with laying the foundation of Aztec culture.

And though there was only about 52 years between The Visits of Venus - not 104 years - there is ample room for confusion here about which **visit** inspired the corresponding "sun" or "age". For example, remember that in the first couple decades between The Visits of Venus it might have been difficult to account for time, with **the shadow of death** and all. And you might imagine that where you were on the Earth would account for whether you survived "terrible hurricanes" and/or

“great fire”. And surely both occurred over vast regions on both **‘visits’**. So maybe on The 1st Visit of Venus they survived “terrible hurricanes” which marked “the end” of the “third period”, while on The 2nd Visit they endured “great fire” which ended the “fourth age”.

Or maybe both **‘visits’** of Venus only brought them “great hurricanes”, but where they nonetheless may have “wandered” over a century before finally settling down – or more likely ‘settling up’ on some high plateau to avoid future “great hurricanes”. And I just mean it would have been understandable to wait another 52 years after The 2nd Visit of Venus to be sure ‘she’ had really settled into her present harmless *orbit*. And however long they actually “wandered”, ‘her’ **‘visits’** may only relate to “the end” of the “third period”, or to “the sun of the wind”.

Or the “104 years” of “wandering” could instead have been in response to The 7 Visits of Mars over 90 years, where ‘his’ **‘visits’** may have started one or more conflagrations that chased them away from Potouchan and toward Anáhuac, making this “period” to them “the fire sun”. And these 104 years may very well have ended almost 15 years after Mars came by for the last time, when ‘he’ too appeared to have finally settled into ‘his’ present harmless *orbit*.

But in any case ‘they’ must have been looking for some ‘highground’, preferably a *high*

plateau bordered on both the east and west by *mountain ranges*, which I’m guessing is the kind of altitude and terrain that the ‘last surviving giants’ would have sought out too, and if not because of **‘Mercury-class waterworks’**, then because of the **‘Venus-class’** kind. And however these “ages” are **‘divided’**, this account is at least somewhat credible. And by the way, remember ***Moses was an hundred and twenty years when he died***, and he climbed ***mount Nebo*** on that day. So Ulme and Xicalauca, and whether they were contemporaries of Moses or Homer (who may have been alive during one or more of The Visit of Mars), could have had some good years left when they finally ‘settled up’.

But I finally concluded, (I mean I told you I’m just a ‘zealously-pressing turtle’, meaning that no ‘slack jackrabbit’ can catch me, or you either unless ***ye continue in these ‘studies’***), that it was more likely that Ulme and Xicalauca survived The Visits of Venus, which would be the “end” of the “third period” of “the sun of the wind”, and that Toltecs survived The Visits of Mars, which would be the “end” of the “fourth period” of “the fire sun”. And I mean it must have been the Toltecs – apparently the “ancestors” of Ulme and Xicalauca who “wandered for 104 years” – who after they were “put to flight” from Potouchan or thereabouts – wherever that was – by the “great fire” caused by The Visits of Mars, finally ‘settle up’ in “the land of Anáhuac”

And by the way, by this reckoning we would presently be in the ‘fifth period’ or ‘sun’, which so far should be nameless as there is yet to be a “cataclysm” at its “end” by which to name it, though I have it on very good authority that one is indeed coming, and that very soon. And I also ***know*** that depending on your location on Earth, it could be given quite a variety of names.

But I should admit it’s possible that the Toltecs were instead “put to flight” by The 2nd Visit of Venus, since Mars generally caused ‘lesser disruptions’, and that is, compared to The Visits of Venus. And I mean they might have thought, given their vantage point, that ‘he’ deserved no part in this “story” about “cataclysms”, except that The Visits of Mars happened several centuries after The Visits of Venus, with these later **‘visits’** providing at least a couple of new orientations of the Sun, and where those experiencing these **‘earthshaking, continental rollercoaster rides’** must have thought them plenty “cataclysmic” enough to rename this ‘repeatedly reoriented sun’. And I mean even if they missed all the “great fires” Mars started,

and all **the waters** that were '**slashed and pushed around**', then they would have at least considered it a new or returning "sun of the earthquake". And yeah, I'm trying to make you 'dizzy' again, but again it's not really me, because remember, God really is **past finding out**. And you can **thank God** that 'dizziness' too will **for ever** be another normal, recurring, unavoidable experience accompanying the '**neverending**' **increase of his government and peace**.

Governor Fernando de Alva Cortés Ixtlilxóchitl was a "descendant of Ixtlilxochitl I and II". Ixtlilxochitl I was the early 15th Century "*tlatoni* (ruler) of the Central Mexican [Aztec] city-state of Texcoco", "situated on the eastern bank of Lake Texcoco". And Ixtlilxochitl II was the early 16th Century ruler of this "city-state", though by then he was just a 'puppet' of New Spain, but nonetheless the "great-grandson of Ixtlilxochitl I". Their "descendant", the Governor, was a late 16th/early 17th Century "indigenous Mexican nobleman, historian and author", but also "the great-great-grandson of Cuitláhuac", 16th Century "*tlatoni* [ruler] of the Aztec city of Tenochtitlan", "located on an island in Lake Texcoco", who temporarily drove out the forces of the Spanish Conquistador, Hernán Cortés, before shortly thereafter dying of small pox, after which, with the help of a small pox epidemic among the Aztecs, Cortés conquered New Spain, and finally became Marquis, a regional governor, but because of his transgressions against the Spanish crown, he was denied the title of Viceroy, the Spanish-appointed 'ruler of New Spain'.

And I should note that now "Mexico City primarily rests on what was Lake Texcoco... [meaning it]... was drained starting from the 17th century", and "none of the lake waters remain, [though] the city rests on the lake bed's heavily saturated clay".

And it might seem ironic, given his heritage, that the Governor had among his namesakes the Marquis Cortés, except that he is also identified as "a Castizo Novohispanic historian", and that is, a "pure" or "genuine", or 'loyal', New Spain historian. However my dictionary adds that,

On the death of his eldest brother in 1602, he was declared by a royal decree heir to the titles and possessions of his family. The property, however, does not appear to have been large, as he complained in 1608 of the deplorable state of misery to which the posterity of the kings of Texcoco were reduced.

He was a distinguished student at the Imperial Colegio de Santa Cruz de Tlatelolco, where he was educated in both Nahuatl [or Aztec] and Spanish...

In 1608, he was employed as interpreter by the viceroy [of New Spain], which appointment he owed to his learning and skill in explaining the hieroglyphic pictures of the ancient Mexicans. He had also a profound knowledge of the traditions of his ancestors which were preserved in the national songs, and "was intimate with several old Native Americans famous for their knowledge of Mexican history." He turned his own labors and those of his friends to account in composing works on the history of his country. They remained unknown until their importance was revealed by [Francisco Javier Clavijero](#) [[Echegaray](#), "sometimes *Francesco Saverio Clavigero*", who "was a Mexican [**desperately wicked**] Jesuit teacher, scholar and historian", who, "After the expulsion of the Jesuits from Spanish colonies (1767)" [- that I'm sure Mr. Paris, author of *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, would agree, were

as *evil*, and as commonly 'chased out' of nations, as the "giants"], he went to Italy, where he wrote a valuable work on the pre-Columbian history ...[of Central American civilizations",] and afterward [his "works" were discovered] by [the "renowned Prussian *naturalist*" / 'closet atheist'] Humboldt. The former [Clavijero] says that they were written in Spanish by command of the viceroy, and were deposited in...[various] libraries.

In 1612 he was governor of Texcoco, and in 1613 governor of Tlalmanalco ["in the far south-eastern part of...Mexico"]. In spite of his illustrious birth, good education and obvious ability, he lived most of his life in dire poverty. Most of his works were written to relieve his wants.

And besides Governor Ixtlilxochitl,

Also F. L. Gomara in his *Conquista de Mexico* [Conquest of Mexico], in the chapter about "cinco soles que son edades" ["five suns that are ages"], wrote:

The second sun [- the Post-Curse, Pre-Flood Sun? - which would add a "sun" to our last reckoning,] perished when the sky fell upon the earth [and literally so as the *water canopy* came down, though it may have seemed as if "the sky fell" in other "cataclysms" too]; [but only on the 1st Visit of Mercury, and maybe on one or both of The Visits of Venus would it be appropriate to say that] the collapse killed all the people and every living thing; and they say that giants lived in those days [- the most formidable, of course, before The Flood, but to some extent afterward too], and that to them belong the bones that our Spaniards have found while digging mines and tombs. From their measure and proportion it seems that those men were twenty hands tall - a very great stature, but quite certain [*Historia de la conquista de Mexico*, (Mexico City,1943), Vol. II, p.261].

Presently "hands", according to my dictionary, are *units* of "linear measure", each of which is "equal to 4 inches". So 20 of them would only be a little over 6½ feet. However back when the "giants" were still alive the average 'hand' must have been bigger too. So for example, 6 inch wide hands would account for 10 foot tall "giants". But remember north and east of these "mines and tombs" we have accounted for some even bigger "giants" buried in "mounds", which I'm guessing were actually very similar in their "great stature" to their southern 'contemporaries'.

And the "bones...found while digging...tombs", by-the-way, are more likely from "giants" propagated since The Flood, being evidently more recently and shallowly *buried*, but if from "mines" they may be prediluvian, being evidently more deeply and possibly less recently *buried*.

But I shouldn't leave out my encyclopedia's disclaimer that,

Francisco López de Gómara (c.1511 -c.1566) was a Spanish historian who worked in Seville [Spain, which was then "one of the economic centres of the Spanish Empire"], particularly noted for his works in which he described the early 16th century expedition undertaken by Hernán Cortés in the Spanish conquest of the New World. Although Gómara himself did not accompany Cortés, and had in fact never been to the Americas, he had firsthand access to Cortés and others of the returning *conquistadores* as the sources of his account. However other contemporaries, among them

most notably Bernal Díaz del Castillo, criticised his work as being full of inaccuracies, and one which unjustifiably sanitised the events and aggrandised Cortés' role. As such, the reliability of his works may be called into question; yet they remain a valuable and oft-cited record of these events.

And apparently seeing no "reliability" issues between "Hebrew scriptures" and other Hebrew traditional writings, Dr. Velikovsky observes,

The Hebrew scriptures as preserved in the Old Testament and in the Talmud and Midrashim, narrate that among the races of the world in a previous age were races of giants, "men of great size and tremendous strength and ferocity" [- and to include some actual *scripture* here, **mighty men... [and] men of renown**], who were destroying other races, but also were turning upon each other and destroying themselves.

The Book of Genesis (6:4) narrates that in the antediluvian time "there were giants in the earth in those days." The Greek Book of Baruch narrates that over four hundred thousand of the race of giants were destroyed by the Flood. After the Flood there were only a few districts where some of them remained alive [and evidently this 'repopulation' originated with Ham's wife].

When after a number of centuries [or closer to a millennium] another catastrophe [almost entirely] ruined the world and the Israelites left Egypt and sent a few men to explore Palestine, those reported that the people of the land were generally of tall stature, and that besides "there we saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which came of the giants, and we were in our own sight as grasshoppers, and so were we in their sight [Num 13:32-33]."

Note: Far be it from me to tell a Jew what to call his own 'homeland', but to clarify, it is my 'understanding' that "Palestine" became a popular name for The Holy Land sometime after the **children of Zion** (or **Sion**) were last **scattered** (see also **scatter**) to **the nations**, and therefore is less appropriate both before this **scattering** occurred, as well as after **they** begin to be **gathered** (see also **gather**) back, and especially after **they** 'redeclared' their statehood. And I mean The Holy Land is most appropriately referred to as Palestine between 70 and 1948 AD.

My dictionary's etymology ("word origin and history") adds that Palestine is...

...from Latin *Palestina* (name of a Roman province), from Greek *Palaistina* (Herodotus), from Hebrew *Pelesheth* "Philistia, land of the Philistines." Revived as an official political

threatening Saracens - a 'Crusades-era' name for Muslims - and so the story is set in the 12th Century Byzantine Empire capital of Constantinople, and based mostly on the reputedly biased, (and who isn't?), but otherwise historical writings of the daughter whose father is the Byzantine Emperor, and particularly her record related to the 'visit' they receive from Count Robert and company on their way to aid in the ongoing "Crusades" intended to 'liberate' Palestine from those **evil** Saracens.

Additional **revelation**: Got to hate those raping, pillaging Muslims, right? Well, maybe not so much as you might think, because though Catholic leadership is more **'surreptitious'** about it - I mean it's **prophesied** that **by 'her' sorceries were all nations deceived - she** is plainly enough identified by God as worse than the Muslims. And if it wasn't for the Muslims, The Holy Land would have long ago fallen under **her** control, where it could have taken until our Lord's return to make Israel a **nation** again. So we can evidently see here that God chose to **create** one **evil** (e.g., [Isa 45:7](#)) to temporarily 'stand' against a worse one, the worse one evidently **created** by Him long before, and which by previous **'open showings'** has already twice **fallen**, but is now 'standing' again, though evidently not for much longer, and for the **'last' time**. I mean many more Jews will be **saved** as things now 'stand', and that is, as God has **predestinated**, and as His Word **prophesieth**. And evidently Muslim **strong holds** remain so to this day as an example of just one of the **things** God can **do** (again, [Isa 45:7](#)) that **'withholdeth'** the Antichrist that **he might be revealed in his time**, and certainly God is now allowing Muslims to control the regions surrounding The Holy Land until those particular **forty and two months** of **his time** comes, and only for a very short and **'bloody'** time thereafter (e.g., [Isa 34](#), particularly Verses 5-8, and where again **Idumea**, or "the land of Edom", is the region of Esau's descendants, and generally speaking is the present day Arab Muslims; [Eze 35](#), where **mount Seir** ^{H8165} also refers to "the Edomites"; and [Jer 48-51](#), as best as you're **able** to **discern** past from still future **judgments** in these chapters anyway), which, to finally 'tie up a loose end' from last **study**, we will further consider in the last section of this one.

And doesn't this too say something about the **'house-divided'** condition of Satan's **'wicked world'**? I mean the **'children of angels'** had a reputation for "furiously fighting". And I don't think the fact that their **'angel-parents'** are now hopelessly incarcerated is a sufficient deterrent to keep their still free fellow **conspirators** ^{H7194} from at least occasionally "furiously fighting" too.

But getting back to Dr. Velikovsky's 'tall tales', he's again noticed something I missed. And I mean in his reference to [Numbers 13:32-33](#) he recognizes that,

This description clearly differentiates between the people of a tall stature and the giants, and [\[so the idea\]](#) that the Israelites found in Palestine a [\[single\]](#) normal race only [that was] taller than themselves, and thought [\[or exaggerated\]](#) them [\[all\]](#) to be giants, is not supported by the text.

So again, and to remove all doubt, Joshua and Caleb indeed testify that,

...all the people that we saw in it [or in **Canaan**, which is what Israel was appropriately called before God gave it to them] **are men of a great stature. And [moreover] there we** [also] **saw the giants, the sons of Anak, which come of the giants: and we were in our own sight as grasshoppers, and so we were in their sight** [Num 13:32-33](#).

A similar distinction is made in Deuteronomy ([1:28](#)): "The people is greater and taller than we... and moreover we have seen the sons of the

Anakim [giants] there." They - a few families - lived in Hebron ([Numbers 13:22](#)).

At the time when the Israelites approached the fields of Bashan in the Transjordan, "only Og king of Bashan" remained of the remnant of the giants ([Joshua 13:12](#) and [Deut. 3:11](#)). The other individuals of monstrous size had been annihilated in the meantime. "Behold, his bedstead was a bedstead of iron; is it not in Rabbath of the children of Ammon? nine cubits is the length thereof, and four cubits the breadth of it, after the cubit of a man." The text implies that at the time the book of Deuteronomy was written the bedstead of Og was still in existence and was a wonder for the onlookers [- 18 feet long x 8 feet wide].

The giants were the remnant of a race close to extinction. Og was "of the remnant of the giants that dwelt in Ashtaroth and Edrel" ([Joshua 12:4](#)). They were also called Emim [or in the KJV, *Emims*^{H368}], or the furious ones [or "terrors"]. "The Emim dwelt therein [in Moab of the Transjordan] in times past, a people great and many, and tall as the Anakim, which also were accounted giants, as the Anakim [or in the KJV, *Anakims*^{H6062} meaning "long necked"]; but Moab calls them Emim" ([Deu 2:8-12](#)). This branch of the giants was already extinct; but two cosmic ages earlier, in the days of Amraphel, king of Shinar, and Abraham the Patriarch, Eimim flourished in the Transjordan ([Genesis 14:5](#)).

And it should be clearer now why that racist Abraham sent his servant so far away to find an 'acceptable' wife for his son. And apparently Noah didn't do so well in this respect, at least for Ham. Of course "giants" surely "flourished" much more so before The Flood than after.

Nefilim

The present state of the Moon and of Mars and other celestial bodies does not imply that in the past they were equally desolate. [Uh-huh.] Concerning Mars and [the] Moon we have the testimony [and/or 'rumors'] of our ancestors, supported by modern observations, that these bodies were engaged in near-collisions only a few thousand years ago. It is not excluded that under conditions prevailing on their surfaces prior to these events [and thereafter], [**created**] life could have developed [read, survived] there or elsewhere in the solar system to an advanced stage [and that is, even on volcanic bombs, or after collisions, from **creation** to the present].

And I can to a certain extent agree with this speculation, because all **life** that God **created**, including every *unicellular organism*, is **fearfully and wonderfully** "advanced", and because there is 'evidence' in the form of 'rumors' suggesting that either 1) Mars acquired **life** from Earth and later 'returned' some of it back to 'her', or 2) '**in the beginning God created**' forms of **life** on the *planet* that Mars came from, (probably Jupiter or Saturn), which when (likely volcanically) expelled 'he carried' some away with 'him', (likely originally in 'his' *atmosphere*), and then 'delivered' some to us, or 3) '**God-created** **life** was otherwise 'delivered' to Mars

in 'his travels', and then by 'him' to us. And I have reasons beyond 'rumor' to believe that 'he' wasn't the only source of such 'deliveries', as I have already suggested, and as we will further consider.

And I mean I can only hope you like surprises, and so much so you don't mind **waiting** for them. But either **way**, this is unavoidably God's **way**, because it is unavoidable as we **for ever 'ascend'** in our **knowledge** of Him, yes, in '**The Natural Eternal Progression of the Knowledge of God**'. So it is my intention in this '**high calling**', 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style' **study** to help you to at least start getting used to surprises, as well as start developing the **patience** for **waiting** for them. And again, it's not just 'my intention'. It's God's **way**. And I mean that surprises are an unavoidable part of my ever-ongoing experience too, which includes my **path** in the writing of this **study**, from first '**step**' to last.

And speaking of surprises...

Working in the early 1940's on *Worlds in Collision*, which in its original form covered also the cataclysmic events preceding the Exodus, I wondered [[surprise!](#)] at a certain description that sounded like a visit from space...

[Because the story seemed so fantastic, I made up my mind at that time not to publish anything on the subject when discussing the Deluge and still earlier events. I came to this idea in 1940-41. In the 1950's many people reported sighting UFO's, which were claimed to be vehicles of visitors from other planets (a view which does not find any credence with me). In 1957 the space age began, and by the late 1960's, when the proposal that there were ancient visitors to Earth from other star systems found its way into print, the idea provoked little ridicule.]

[This "description" or "story" which was "so fantastic", and which is found in...] The sixth chapter of the book of Genesis starts this way:

And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, that the sons of God [*bnei Elim*] saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose [[Genesis 6:1-2](#)].

The story told in Genesis VI about the sons of God (*bnei Elim*) coming to the daughters of men is usually explained as referring to an advanced priesthood that mingled with backward tribesmen. [Cf. Samuel Rolles [[Screw-](#)]Driver, *The Book of Genesis*, 6th ed. (New York, 1907), pp.82 f., [Johann Karl Simon](#) Morgenstern, however, considered them to be heavenly beings ("The Mythological Background of Psalm 82", *Hebrew Union College Annual* XIV, 1939, p.95)]...

...When Columbus discovered America, the natives, according to the diary of his first voyage, regarded him and his crew as having arrived from the sky. [*The Journal of Christopher Columbus*, tr. by C. R. Markham (London, 1893) - October 14th, 1892: "They asked us if we had come from heaven. One old man came into the boat... to come and see the men who had come from heaven]...

...A similar occurrence could have taken place in prediluvial times, when some [[angel](#)]

invaders from a remote part of the world [or maybe literally floating down from the sky] came and were regarded as "sons of God."

Professor Morgenstern was a late 18th/early 19th Century "German philologist" educated at the University of Halle", (before its "merger" in 1817 with the University of Wittenberg created The Martin Luther University of Halle-Wittenberg), who moved to Livonia, (which has since been "divided between the Republic of Latvia and the Republic of Estonia"), where he "held the chair for rhetoric, classical philology, aesthetics, and history of art and literature", and became "the first director of the library of the Imperial University of Dorpat", (now "The University of Tartu... in...Estonia", though nonetheless "established...in 1632"). And though his former professor attacked his character for it, he "discontinued his Plato studies and wrote about literature, art, philology, and philosophy", however he "bequeathed his 12,000-volume library, containing many manuscripts and a good part of the [Immanuel] Kant estate, to the university".

The late 18th/early 19th Century, evidently highly influential, German philosopher, Professor Immanuel Kant, "finally appointed Full Professor of Logic and Metaphysics...at the University of Königsberg", ("founded in 1544 as second Protestant academy" after the University of Marburg, which after World War II, when it came under Russian control, "closed"), was, if I had to guess, "an early and radical exponent of atheism [or at least an "agnostic"] who finally exploded [read, 'entirely defeated'] the ontological argument for God's existence", an "ontological argument" being "a philosophical argument for the existence of God that uses ontology", where...

Ontology is the philosophical study of the nature of being, becoming, existence or reality as well as the basic categories of being and their relations. Traditionally listed as a part of the major branch of philosophy known as metaphysics, ontology often deals with questions concerning what entities [such as God] exist...

But to his credit Kant was criticized by that "God is dead" advocate, Friedrich Nietzsche, (referred to hereafter, appropriately enough, as 'Fried-pitch Niche' - the 'niche' being that '**hellhole**' where he's presently 'frying', and getting 'the tar cooked out of him', and where he's likely rethinking his stance on God's 'viability', between screams, that is), who claimed that Professor Kant had "theologian blood", and that "Kant was merely a sophisticated apologist for traditional Christian religious belief", and wrote that "Kant wanted to prove, in a way that would dumbfound the common man, that the common man was right: that was the secret joke of this soul". But my guess would be that where both these men ended up is no "joke".

And **hell** yes, it's that same late 19th/early 20th Century Dr. Samuel Rolles 'Screw-Driver', who "in collaboration" with 'Brown-nose' and 'Pigs' **perverted** the most important verses of Isaiah 28, and key verses in the whole Word of God, and who is here again caught **perverting** another important passage in Genesis 6. How was he able to 'help' get away with such '**perversion**' [H5557](#); [G1294](#)? Well, 'Screw-Driver' was educated at Oxford at a time when men like 'Tom Huckster', 'Sir Liar', and 'Chuck Duhwind' were rising in the ranks of the 'academic ecclesiarchy' - which by then was apparently heavily infiltrated by elite '**self-idolatry insiders**'.

And remember we're talking about a time in England when 'monarchical government', 'church doctrine', and 'academic authority' were all still mostly inseparable, and when this 'Screw-Driver' became one of these 'authorities',

specifically the “Regius [‘king’s chair’] Professor of Hebrew and canon [Anglican priest] of Christ Church, [a college of the University of] Oxford”. And ‘honours’ for such **reprobates** were becoming common, as he also “received the honorary degrees of doctor of literature of the University of Dublin (1892), doctor of divinity of the University of Glasgow (1901), doctor of literature of the University of Cambridge (1905); and was elected a fellow of the British Academy [FBA] in 1902”, paving the way for the **perverted** BDB *Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament* to be published in 1906, and in the next year – in yet another of his several, surely **‘increasingly’ perverted** editions of his ‘teaching’ on *The Book of Genesis* – getting away with further ‘humanizing’ and ‘rationalizing’ Moses’ account of Creation, etc., including **‘misteaching’** the passage where **the sons of god [took] the daughters of men** to be just “an advanced priesthood that mingled with backward tribesmen”.

And I don’t care or need to know any other **perversion[s]** of God’s Word he is responsible for, except that the harm he has done to the Church is still ongoing, and so must eventually be addressed one way or another as **‘we’ continue**.

And speaking of mistranslations, and ongoing harm, his son, Sir Godfrey Rolles ‘Screw-’ Driver, CBE, FBA, “was also educated at Oxford, and “was an English Orientalist noted for his studies of Semitic languages and Assyriology”, and a “president of the Society for Old Testament Study”, who “directed the translation of the Old Testament for the New English Bible from its inception in 1949, completed and first published in 1970”, which was mostly only popular in England, and led to the Revised English Bible in 1989, which was not as popular, even in England, as it was unsuccessfully “aimed to be more accessible to an American audience”, but surely no less **perverted**, though if **‘rightly handled’** – and that would be with one eye on a KJV – no less ‘useful’ than some of the more popular American ‘modern mistranslations’ I suppose.

‘Spacing out’ even further, Dr. Velikovsky argued,

But if we are today on the eve of interplanetary travel, we must not declare as absolutely impossible the thought that this Earth was visited, ages ago, by some people from another planet. Or was this earth alone populated by intelligent beings? In my understanding this passage from the book of Genesis [\[6:1-2\]](#) is a literary relic dealing with a visit of intelligent beings from another planet [\[or really from another ‘realm’\]](#). It appears that the extraterrestrial visitors made their landing as if in advance knowledge of the impending catastrophe of the Deluge. [\[Their story in fact precedes that of the of Deluge in the Scriptures \[which again is misleading, as it was God’s choice to wait the better part of a millennium after The Flood to use Moses to tell this **beginning** “story”\].\]](#) "It could be that Jupiter and Saturn were approaching each other ever closer on their orbits and that a disruption of one of them was expected" [\[and ‘misrepresented’ as forcing an “escape”\]](#). [\[Later in this book Velikovsky \[offers evidence he ‘believes’\] traces the \[sole\] cause of the Deluge to a disruption of Saturn by Jupiter. See below, Part II: Saturn and the Flood.\]](#)

Possibly many centuries, or even millennia, passed between the [\[‘alien-angels’\]](#) landing and the Deluge [\[though if Satan’s “landing” in the Garden of Eden was ‘first contact’, it was only about a millennium and a half\]](#). The mission could have been [\[‘misrepresented’ as\]](#) undertaken to ascertain [\[or ‘scout out’\]](#) the conditions on Earth. [\[And\] If it was \[‘misrepresented’ – and maybe not originally, but to later generations – as\]](#) an escape it could also have been

[**'misrepresented'** as] from another catastrophe in the solar system, one of those [**"catastrophes"** that was seen through the *water canopy lens*] that preceded the Deluge, like the one described as the dethronement and emasculation of Uranus by Kronos [**Saturn**]. If the ancient legends of a battle between the gods and titans, so persistent in the Greek world, but also in the mythologies of other civilizations, have any historical value, we may try to find what may have been the substratum [**or underlying reasons**] of this fantasy [**based on facts**]. It seems that following great convulsions of nature observable in the celestial sphere, giant bodies were hurled on the earth. They arrived burned and were crushed by impact...

[Velikovsky [**evidently as an example**] seems to be referring to the passage in Ovid's *Metamorphoses* describing the crushed bodies of the defeated giants: "The terrible bodies of the giants lay crushed beneath their own massive structures." Transl. by Mary M. Innes [?] (London,1955).]

Uh-huh, but Dr. Velikovsky apparently thought these "ancients" saw and "described" this "emasculation of Uranus by Kronos" – supposedly "a long filament of gaseous material" protruding from Uranus that appeared to be 'cut off' by Saturn – without the *magnification* and/or *optical distortions* of the *water canopy lens*. Does he think they had telescopes? Or how could they have 'seen' this 'finer detail' otherwise? According to my encyclopedia, at about 20 AU, Uranus is "just within the limit of naked eye visibility". So just like today, these "ancients", with just "naked eye visibility", could not have 'seen' any of this 'finer detail', not even on a planet as close as Mars, not without the *magnification* and/or *optical distortions* of the *water canopy lens*.

And Dr. Velikovsky, being an *evolutionist*, further reveals his vulnerability for such 'distortions' of thought, finding it 'reasonable' to 'believe',

But at least one group of escapees succeeded in safely reaching the earth. [**Analogous accounts** are reported from the New World. Cf. the Inca account recorded by Pedro Cieza de Leon [16th Century "Spanish conquistador... known primarily for his history and description of Peru"] in the fifty-second chapter of his *La Cronica del Peru* [*The Chronicles of Peru*].] They descended on Mount Hermon or Anti-Lebanon [**which borders Syria and Lebanon, and is near Baalbek, Lebanon**]...

[In 1960 a [**Jewish**] Russian physicist and mathematician Mates (Matest) Mendelevich Agrest [- who received a Leningrad State University, (now Saint Petersburg State University), "PhD in Science, Physics and Mathematics", was "a proponent of the paleocontact hypothesis", the theory that various "**ancient astronauts**" visited Earth, and he would surely "assert that the "**petroglyphs**" or 'rock carvings' from Val Camonica, Italy "resemble modern astronauts"... [and he also] came to the conclusion that the **Baalbek stone** [at just over



1,000 tons] was a platform for ascent [- a *teleport?* -] by ancient space travelers [photos, p.295], and that Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed by atomic weapons. [(*Literarnaya Gazeta*, [*Literary Newspaper*], February 9th, 1960); At the time I saw some alluring points in this thesis - but I would strongly question the implication that extraterrestrial visitors came to Earth as late as the Old Kingdom in Egypt, because this is the time to which the Patriarch Abraham, a contemporary of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, belongs.]

Why Dr. Velikovsky would “strongly question the implication that extraterrestrial visitors came to Earth as late as the Old Kingdom in Egypt” at “the time to which the Patriarch Abraham... belongs” is not clear to me. But surely they never stopped from **‘coming’** and **going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it**, though they’ve surely also ‘adjusted’ their ‘stories’ - and therefore the folklore - by their ‘ever-evolving masquerades’ on these visits.

The Baalbek Stone, however, contrary to Dr. Agrest’s conclusion, and otherwise known as The Stone of the Pregnant Woman or Stone of the South...

...is a Roman monolith [which is “a single block or piece of stone of considerable size”] in Baalbek (ancient Heliopolis [or “Sun City”]), Lebanon... [and] among the largest monoliths ever quarried... [but supposedly] intended for the nearby Roman temple complex... [and likely so even though it is] characterised by a monolithic [‘single rock’] gigantism that was unparalleled in antiquity [and even though it’s in the vicinity where “ancient space travelers” supposedly “landed”, because it most likely remained where it is simply because it proved to be too heavy to move].

But the fact that the city of Baalbek was earlier known as Heliopolis is worth noting because...

Heliopolis is the latinisation of the Greek *Hēliópolis*..., meaning "Sun City" in reference to the solar cult there. It is the earlier attested of the two names, appearing under the Seleucids and Ptolemies [- if you remember that “tug of war”]. [4th Century “Roman soldier and historian”] Ammianus Marcellinus [who wrote a partially surviving “major historical account” on “the history of Rome” - should we call this a ‘Romthis’?], however, does note that earlier "Assyrian" names of Levantine [or, Fertile Crescent] towns continued to be used alongside the official Greek ones imposed by the [‘tug-of-warring’] successors of Alexander. In Greek religion, Helios was both the sun in the sky and its personification as a god. The local Semitic [in this case, Canaanite, but evidently also Jewish-adopted] god Ba’al Haddu was more often equated with Zeus or Jupiter [though before The Visits of Venus may have instead been “more often equated with” Kronos/Saturn] or simply called the "Great God of Heliopolis", but the name may refer to the Egyptians' association of Ba’al with their great god Ra [- also a ‘sungod’, and more likely an “association” made after The Visits of Venus]... [So] The gods that [after The Visits of Venus] were worshipped there (Jupiter...[and] Venus...) were equivalents of the Canaanite deities Hadad [and] Atargatis...

According to my encyclopedia “Atargatis or Atarathē”, or in the KJV, **Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians** (e.g., [1Ki 11:33](#), and yeah, that’s **Zidon** or **Sidon**, now Sidon or Saida, Lebanon), was primarily “a goddess of fertility” or “the Love-Goddess”, and “equated with” Venus, “the Roman equivalent of the Greek goddess

Aphrodite”, though again, Venus was otherwise also “equated with” Athene or Athena too, and Aphrodite otherwise with the Moon.

Also, Hadad or “Haddu”, which is “Ugaritic” (‘Hebrew-Phoenician’), or...

...**Adad, Haddad** (Akkadian [Assyro-Babylonian]) or **Iškur** (Sumerian) was the storm and rain god in the Northwest Semitic [again Canaanite, but again eventually also Jewish] and ancient Mesopotamian [Sumerian] religions. It [-the god’s name -] was attested [or evidently frequently enough found inscribed in stone] in [the ruins of] Ebla as "Hadda" in c. 2500 BC [which apparently is after The Flood, and likely before The 2nd Visit of Mercury, but certainly before The Visits of Venus, and therefore most likely “equated with” Kronos/Saturn at that time]. From the Levant [‘most ancient, coastal Assyria’, and further identified shortly], Hadad was introduced to Mesopotamia [‘most ancient, inland Assyria’, more specifically the Tigris and Euphrates River Valleys region] by the Amorites, where it [or ‘he’] became known as the Akkadian (Assyrian-Babylonian) god Adad ...

Hadad was also called "Pidar", "Rapiu" [**Remphan/Moloch/Chiun** (?) [Act 7:43/Amos 5:26](#)], "Baal-Zephon" [or **Baalzephon** [Exo 14:2,9](#)], or often simply Ba‘al (**Lord**), but this title was also used for [and evidently confused with] other gods. The bull was the symbolic animal of Hadad. He appeared bearded, often holding a club and thunderbolt while wearing a bull-horned headdress [all of which are characteristics directly or indirectly relatable to Saturn, Mercury, Jupiter and/or Venus]. Hadad was equated with the Indo-European Nasite Hittite [Ancient Turkish - Northern Assyrian] storm-god Teshub; the Egyptian god Set; the Rigvedic [Hindu Indian] god Indra; the Greek god Zeus; the Roman god Jupiter [though again, before The Visits of Venus ‘he’ may instead have been “equated with” Kronos/Saturn]...

And **Hadad**, besides being the name of *an adversary to Israel*, (who was given asylum in **Egypt**, and who **found great favour in the sight of Pharaoh**, and finally **reigned over Syria** [1Ki 11:14-25](#), which in this case would be where that “Northwest Semitic” religion had **strong holds**), evidently also was a name used in Israel for this **god**, because **Hadadrimmon** ^{H1910} ([Zec 12:11](#)), is defined in my BLB lexicon as...

Hadad-rimmon = "Hadad of the pomegranates", a place in the valley of Megiddo where a national lamentation was held for the death of King Josiah; named after two Syrian gods.

Ugaritic, by-the-way, is an “extinct” Northern Syria ‘Hebrew-Phoenician’ language and people. And Ugarit was “an ancient city in Syria... destroyed by an earthquake early in the 13th century b.c. [during or following The Visits of Venus]; excavations have yielded tablets written in cuneiform and hieroglyphic script that reveal important information on Canaanite mythology”.

Ebla too...

...was one of the earliest kingdoms in Syria. Its remains constitute a tell [or “an artificial mound consisting of the accumulated remains of one or more ancient settlements”] located about 55 km (34 mi) southwest of Aleppo near the village of Mardikh. Ebla was an important center throughout the third millennium BC and in the first half of the second millennium BC [or from after The 2nd Visit of Mercury

up to The Visits of Venus]. Its discovery proved the Levant [- “a large area in the Eastern Mediterranean... [including] its islands”,] was a center of ancient, centralized civilization equal to Egypt and Mesopotamia [Sumeria], and ruled out the view that the latter two were the only important centers in the Near East [or in the Orient, “Near East” of Europe]... [as] the first Eblaite kingdom [is now “described”] as the first recorded world power.

But **‘hopefully’** you’re starting to **see** that before The Flood the **‘chief of the gods’** was first “equated with” the Moon, until The Fall when apparently **‘his** laughing’ significantly “obscured **her** light””, which seems to suggest the sudden **destabilization** of the entire Universe by **the curse**. And after the Moon ‘dimmed’, evidently the second **‘chief planet-god’**, ‘who’ was apparently originally much brighter too, was “equated with” Uranus, and third, and likely still long before The Flood, “with” Saturn, evidently when Uranus was ‘rendered impotent’ and ‘rolled over’, and when ‘viewing’ the ‘finer details’ of this ‘event’ would have required the **water canopy lens** still to be in the sky, and this also apparently when Mercury, probably then thought to be Saturn’s son, was **‘rising’**, and doing ‘lots of messengering’, and when the Moon was further ‘slipping from prominence’, and by this time finally – and fully – ‘transgendered’ to a **goddess**.

And finally Jupiter became **‘chief’** when Saturn was similarly ‘cut off’, though maybe the **water canopy lens** wasn’t needed to ‘see’ the ‘finer details’ this time, because ‘his’ surely ‘naked-eye-visible explosion’ – which we’ll get to eventually – could be assumed to include ‘his’ “emasculatation”, or as Dr. Velikovsky and I earlier put it, it may have simply been “a reflection in mythology of similar [or comparably catastrophic] events”. However I think it more likely that this ‘event’ happened before The Flood too, and if so, apparently just before it, and likely when Mercury was seen to be finally ‘on his way’ to Earth, and where it may have been assumed that Jupiter and ‘sons’ – and ‘daughters’ – preemptively attacked Saturn and ‘his offspring’, the Titans, because Saturn sent Mercury to punish or destroy Earth, while Jupiter did what ‘he’ did to steal **worship** for himself, that is, to gain and keep it, if you get the **‘spin’**, which would be Satan’s.

Jupiter’s **‘rise’** was also associated with the ‘imprisonment’ of the Titans, though with no surviving **false witnesses** of any of these ‘events’ except Ham’s wife, maybe this was more just well-coordinated, Post-Flood **‘propaganda’** than not. Still Jupiter **‘rose’** further because of the exploits of his ‘daughter’ Venus, and also because of the victories of his ‘son’ Mars, while the Moon only further **‘fell’**, and Mercury – by then likely considered to be Jupiter’s ‘son’ – **‘fell’** or ‘retired’ to ‘hiding out’ with the Sun, while ‘his rivals’ remained **‘on the rise’**, fighting over the Earth. Of course Venus and Mars finally **‘fell’** or ‘retired’ to harmless **orbits** too, making even Jupiter seem powerless, and so in time they were all more or less forgotten, forcing Satan to find a new strategy – or ‘revive’ the **‘original’** one – so **mankind** would **worship** him again.

And I mean when “catastrophic events” in the Solar System starting from the **‘fall-out’** of **the curse** were better visible through the **water canopy lens**, and later when **planets** were directly assaulting the Earth at least twice every millennium, and when after each of these more ‘regular’ **‘visits’** everyone was keeping an eye on the sky for the next time it might “fall”, Satan could use these spectacles, or any unusual occurrences in the sky, and even the regular ones, to intimidate and motivate **mankind** into **servicing** [G1398](#) and **worshipping** [H7812](#); [G2356](#) both **him** and their own **flesh**. But now it’s approaching 3 millennia since a **planet** has assaulted the Earth. And The Spirit has been here – **‘in’ the way** of both Satan and our **flesh**

- most of this time. So there's been a change of plans. And evidently his new strategy is to somehow get **mankind** to believe again that - like before The Fall - **things** aren't really **cursed**, nor are they going to be 'thrown into chaos' by '**planet**' **gods**, nor are they ever going to '**fall apart**', and that all such 'talk' is just myth, and that where it can't be hidden that **things** really are '**falling-apart**', we are told the **lie** that it will take 'ridiculous amounts' of time to happen, and that in the meantime **life** is *evolving* to higher and higher levels, and sometimes 'punctuatedly' or 'explosively' so.

And so, though it's been a long time coming - though certainly not 'ridiculously long' - the stage is finally reset to more or less leave behind '**planet-god**' **worship**, and go back to the '**original lie**', which is '**self-idolatry**', though this time including God's 'adjustment' to '**planet-god**' **worship** originating with The Tower of Babel, '**beastism**', making this latest strategy better named '**self-idolatry beastism**', and where this time Satan will '**spin**' God's use of His Creation for **judgments**, etc., to be more his doing - as much he can get away with it anyway - and I mean he will drop most his disguises, and finally stand up openly as the '**chief beast god**', but this can only really fully happen after The Spirit - and **we** - are **taken out of the way** of this '**beastmaster**', and after this **God of forces** is through 'hiding behind the skirts' of **the whore**, which means he will only finally reign over the Earth - openly, (and except where **the kings of the east** reign) - for the remaining maybe year or so of **his** last **forty and two months**, though this will also include the genuflection of all the 'newly disclosed' **gods** too. And that would be the ones that will appear to be 'won over' to **worship** Satan in The Great Tribulation too, and that would be the ones we now call 'aliens' or 'extraterrestrials', as well as 'extra-dimensional beings' of all kinds. And yeah, that would just be **his** subordinate, 'multiple-masquerading' **angels**, the ones who must know that they too are part of God's plan, the one which ends with them beating most of **mankind** into the Lake of Fire. But did I say it "ends"? Actually their **end** is '**endless**' too, as God promises this '**splash and burn**' will **torment** them **for ever and ever**.

And I also mean that surely 'modern scholars' oftentimes - and sometimes also Dr. Velikovsky - confuse or otherwise misidentify these earlier and later '**planet**' **gods**, and mostly because they aren't enough aware of the nature and sequence of events, nor of the motives and disinformation of '**our**' **adversary** who '**spins**' their '**rises**' and '**falls**'. And there remains some confusion for us too, but in '**our**' case there is '**well-founded**' **hope** that there will be less and less of it as '**we**' **continue** to **grow** in the '**ability**' to '**rightly divide**', and to **discern**, and to **know the truth**, and that is, as '**we**' **continue** in God's Word.

And for some more pseudepigraphica about "extraterrestrial visitors" from Dr. Velikovsky, hopefully without too much more 'pseudoscience' and/or 'psychobabble'...

Of the extra-biblical [or pseudepigraphical] traditions dealing with the subject, some reach hoary antiquity [or 'some are very old'], [and are] antecedent [or originate prior] to the composition of the Biblical texts [again, meaningless!]. The Book of Enoch narrates that the [**'alien-angel'**] group was composed of males only, two hundred in number, under the leadership of one by the name of Shemhazai. [*The Book of Enoch* VI. 6-7, transl. by R. H. Charles (Oxford, 1912).] The Aggadic literature says that the "sons of God" tried to return to heaven from where they had come, but could not [and apparently finally, no later than at the time of The Flood, were '**imprisoned**' in **Tartarus**]. [Ginzberg, *Legends* V. 172; *Aggadat Bereshit* ["a homiletic

Midrash ['a teaching used for preaching'] on the Book of Genesis written in Hebrew, about the 10th century" AD).]

The new [**angel**] arrivals were probably of gigantic stature – their progeny with women of the earth were giants:

The Nephilim were on earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. These were the mighty men that were of old, the men of renown [[Genesis 6:4](#)].

Having fathered giants, they themselves must have been not of human size. [Previously several correspondents engaged me on the subject; one correctly observed that in order to procreate the visitors must have been of the same species as man [- and either that or **angels**].]

The planet from which they came I would not know to determine. El would [or could, besides referring just to God, be '**misused**' to] refer to Saturn [and later to Jupiter too].

[Eusebius, *Praeparatio Evangelica* [*Preparation of the Gospel*] IV. xvi; *bnei Elim* would more correctly be rendered as "Sons of the Gods" [if meaning "sons of The Father, Son and Holy Spirit"] and may possibly be [mis]taken in the sense of "Sons of the Planets," or "Those who Came from the Planets".]

The great size of the visitors would suggest a smaller body [on their 'home planet'-?]) where the gravitational influence would be less [- this being pure science fiction, unless concerning **angels**].]

So is he 'suggesting' that these "visitors" came from the Moon where there was 'less gravity' and as a result 'grew' and/or 'expanded' in "size" on Earth because it has 'more gravity', or instead that they came from a planet with 'more gravity' – like Jupiter or Saturn – and that after arriving on Earth they 'grew' and/or 'expanded' because of Earth's 'lesser gravity'? Whatever he means along these lines, it doesn't much matter, because it surely wouldn't work either way. I mean such dramatic changes in 'gravity' and/or *pressure* would not make such "beings" – if they were somewhat *elastic* – dramatically *expand* or *contract*, but instead, *if* really 'natural beings', and similar enough to us for *reproduction*, then such changes should cause them to either *explode* or *implode*, as their *tissue elasticity* should only be suited to the 'gravity' and *pressure* of their 'native planet', just like us. And besides, their "great size" more likely "would suggest" their '**angelic ability to manifest themselves into whatever form they desire**'.

[Several sources, including *The Book of Enoch* and Clement of Alexandria (*Eclog. Proph.* iii. 474, Dindorf ed.) maintain that the Nephilim brought with them much astronomical and technical knowledge which they imparted to mankind.] [And there are plenty of rumors about 'back-engineered' or 'treaty-traded' alien technology 'floating around' today. And regular enough listeners to Coast to Coast AM, Dreamland, Ground Zero, and/or Dark Matter radio or internet broadcasts have heard them all.]

Titus Flavius Clemens, not the Roman Consul, but...

...known as Clement of Alexandria to distinguish him from the earlier Clement of Rome [or Pope Clement I, the 'first Pope' after Peter], was a [late 2nd/early 3rd Century] Christian theologian who taught at the Catechetical School of Alexandria. A convert to Christianity, he was an educated man who was familiar with classical Greek philosophy and literature. As his three major works demonstrate, Clement was influenced by Hellenistic philosophy to a greater extent than any other [evidently 'Pre-Catholic'] Christian thinker of his time, and in particular by Plato and the Stoics. His secret works, which exist only in fragments, suggest that he was also familiar with pre-Christian Jewish esotericism and Gnosticism [uh-huh, read, 'elitism' or 'know-it-all-ism']. In one of his works he argued that Greek philosophy had its origin among non-Greeks, claiming that both Plato and Pythagoras were taught by Egyptian scholars. Among his pupils [was] Origen... [which I'm still promising to eventually 'bio'].

The "Stoics", by-the-way, arose from the "Cynics", both 'branches' of Platonism, the most popular version of these 'money-hating', 'simple-living', and 'virtue-loving' philosophies being popularized by Zeno of Citium, who was a student of a student (Crates of Thebes) of a student (Diogenes of Sinope) of a student (Antisthenes) of Plato, though Crates, a contemporary of Plato and Socrates, (though just a child when Socrates died), publicly condemned them both, with this 'branching' evidently occurring because he thought they weren't near 'money-hating', 'simple-living', and 'virtue-loving' enough.

And further revealing his vulnerability for 'ridiculously distorted' conclusions because of his 'faith' in *evolution*, Dr. Velikovsky '**mis-imagined**' that,

Ten thousand years is only an instant in the life of the cosmos; ten thousand years ago man was only in a rude stone age; today he contemplates to visit other planets. If such progress is made in a time as short as this, who knows what secrets are concealed in the past or in the future?

But overlooking - with Dr. Velikovsky - that we're actually still experiencing **the curse**, which is the exact opposite of what is vainly hoped for by *evolutionists*, he has a point about how "progress" in the **increase** of **knowledge** goes, and especially if you're not overlooking the soon coming time when we shed our '**flesh-limited**' pursuit of it for the '**immortally-unlimited**' kind.

Astronomical Knowledge Before the Deluge

In the Deluge a civilization was destroyed, the real value of which is incalculable [*ea fc* minor].

Hebrew tradition estimates that the population of the ante-diluvian world "amounted to millions." Adam is said to have invented seventy languages; Cain, his son, built cities and monuments and ruled over kings. They were representatives of generations. According to Hebrew legends the Deluge and its time had already been predicted by Enoch, and even more ancient generations were said to have erected tablets with calendric and astronomical calculations predicting the catastrophe. [It is said that the real period of grace

[before The Fall] endured not for seven days, but for 120 years. During this time the flood was over mankind as a threat. (Sanhedrin 108b)] This [supposed “knowledge” of the impending collapse of the *water canopy*] might have been the knowledge of months, of years [or of a millennium and a half], and of the periods of comets that the remote generations had acquired [and could easily see].

It seems to me, however, that Noah couldn't convince anyone outside his family to act on this supposed “knowledge”, implying, at least, that no one else really believed it. Or maybe they thought they couldn't do anything about it. But if they really did know and believe it, then why doesn't Noah's 'surviving' report tell us that others tried to build 'arks' too?

Why? Jesus tells us why. He makes clear that **the flood** was one of the events – like His 2nd Coming and The End of the World will be – that **cometh not with observation**, meaning they really couldn't know what was coming, or at least when it was, because He says,

But of that day and hour [of The End of the World] knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only. But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the [second] coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be
[Mat 24:35-44](#); [Luke 17:20-30](#).

And yeah, these are not the kind of surprises that I recommend that you remain unprepared for. However with the time you have left in your present **body**, all you can do is **work, strive, press, fight** and **run** as fast as you can to get **ready** (e.g., [Mat 24:44](#); [Luke 12:40](#)), which can only leave you wishing you had more time when time is finally 'up'. Uh-huh.

Nevertheless, and especially after The Flood, Dr. Velikovsky correctly observed that...

It was in the celestial harmony and disharmony that the secrets of the upheavals were conceived to lie. The science about the times in which calamity could return and fall on our Earth [and eventually also the '**false science**' of *astrology* wherewith it is believed that everyone's 'fate' may be understandably 'charted' in the movement of the stars] was cultivated among populations that had a vivid remembrance of days of misfortune or of lucky escape.

And I guess I may as well clarify here that all this '**planet-god**' **worship** was a change of Satan's strategy too, a change that was the result of going from a '**permanently sustained**' Creation before The Fall, to one '**falling apart**' thereafter, because certainly before The Fall Satan employed the **lie** that 'ye shall be as gods', though surely more fully implying the **lie** that, 'ye shall be as gods, and live for ever, and for ever serve me', and surely this was no longer as believable when they knew they were dying. And they must have known it because they found themselves in a Universe, and World, and, especially in Adam and Eve's case, bodies, that were clearly slowly '**falling apart**' compared to their original '**stability**'. So in this undeniably '**dying universe**' Satan needed a new **lie** to fit it. Accordingly he changed the focus from '**self-idolatry**' to the **worship** of imaginary, troublemaking '**planet**' **gods**, a strategy very effectively used by him to intimidate and motivate

mankind – however indirectly – into **worshipping** and **servicing** him, as well as to indulge their own **flesh**.

And I mean though I think he’s always had his elite, **‘self-idolatry insiders’**, I also think that after The Fall and before The Flood – and generally speaking – that Satan did not, as his primary strategy, use **‘the false promise of immortal godhood’**, but instead primarily controlled **mankind** with **‘the flesh-tempting scare tactic of worshipping evil planet-gods’**, along with the tyranny of **angels** posing in **‘manesfested flesh’** as **‘planet’ gods**, and their offspring the **‘angel-humans’** posing as **‘demigods’**, and after The Flood with **‘angel-humans’** and just humans posing as **‘demigods’**, and with many of them **servicing** – covertly – as **‘self-idolatry insiders’** too, but otherwise they were generally the **‘absolutely beastly’** kind. And this evidently continued up to the time of Jesus, and certainly, as the Apostle Paul’s testimony in [Romans 1:18-32](#) indicates, to some extent beyond His time, at least popularly.

And I mean it appears Satan’s new strategy only ‘sprouted’ a few centuries before Jesus came, sometime after The Visits of Mars, when Satan could see that there wasn’t anything left in the sky with a threatening enough *orbit* for him to keep his **‘planet-god’ lie** going. And this would coincide with when Anaxagoras “brought philosophy and the spirit of scientific inquiry from Ionia [Coastal Turkey] to Athens”, which is apparently when the preference for **‘science falsely so-called’** over **‘bullying planet-gods’** began to grow, and another century or so after that Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, et al., somehow recognized that **‘beasts’** and their **‘elite self-idolaters’** would also be needed – however ‘sophistically’ – to bring this change of strategy about, a strategy that has apparently increasingly succeeded, as such “philosophy” finally became popular, and just as popular as **‘planet-gods’ worship** used to be.

However all that just covers Satan’s perspective. God’s perspective, being The One to **create** and **permit** this **evil** I’m calling **‘beastism’**, must be that it’s just one of the **ways** He limits both **Satan** and **mankind** from blocking access to that **‘door where Jesus stands and knocks’**, and thereby keeps making it possible to **by any** and **by all means save some**.

But there is a **‘vital’** development only a few centuries after the ‘sprouting’ of Satan’s new strategy that was **‘raised’**. Jesus. And I mean that His **‘advent’** also forced Satan’s hand to advance his new, or arguably just ‘revived’ strategy, though **with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven** too ([1Pe 1:12](#)), it’s no longer any **‘mystery...hid in God’** why it took Satan so long to bring about the present popularity of his **‘self-idolatry-beastism’ lie**.

And still I could clarify that before The Flood, as Dr. Velikovsky’s research also, however unwittingly, suggests, it must have been harder, even for **angels**, to control people under the *water canopy greenhouse*. I mean there must have been so much freely-available *plant food* that access to the full variety of it really might have made fences ‘against the law’, and certainly made ‘confining yourself to a farm’, or ever ‘ploughing the ground to plant’, unnecessary. And ‘normal sized’ people hiding from **giants** in the abundantly dense vegetation – even if escaping from cities as needed to do so – would have been harder to find and catch than field mice.

And Dr. Velikovsky’s report of “stories” about Adam and Enoch also imply that this ‘tyrannical angelic rule’ could not have been dominant until sometime after God **took** Enoch. He reports,

It is told about the children of Seth, the son of Adam [born when Adam was 130], that they were the inventors of that peculiar sort of wisdom which is concerned with the heavenly bodies and their order.

And that their inventions might not be lost before they were sufficiently known, they made two [evidently 'time-keeping'/'star-watching'] pillars upon Adam's prediction that the world was to be destroyed at one time by the force of fire and at another time by the violence and quantity of water.

The one was of brick, the other of stone, and they inscribed their discoveries on both, that in case the pillar of brick should be destroyed by the flood, the pillar of stone might remain, and exhibit these discoveries to mankind and also inform them that there was another pillar, of brick, erected by them [Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews* II. 8, borrowed by *Yashar Bereshit* 10a].

This means that stelae [or stela, plural for stele, "an upright... slab or pillar bearing an inscription or design and serving as a monument, marker, or the like"] with calendric and astronomical calculations were made public knowledge in that early age [though apparently not including the "knowledge" of how to save themselves from The Flood, neither from the conflagrations and inundations Venus brought, because surely, and in all cases, **they...knew not until the flood [or fire] came, and took them all away [and/or burned them all up]**. According to the Aggada it was the pious Enoch (the seventh generation) who achieved the deepest knowledge of the celestial secret. He was the man who "walked with God: and he was not; for God took him" [[Genesis 5:24](#)]. In this ascension to heaven was taken away the man who more than any other knew the plan of the world and of its creation. Enoch was a great man of his generation.

Of course I would believe that one of the reasons that God **took** Enoch is that otherwise he might have told them how to survive The Flood, which evidently God did not allow to happen. I mean it seems to me to be like another of those occasions where The Father, Jesus and The Spirit had one of Their 'meetings' - like the one after Adam and Eve **did eat** of **the fruit** of **the tree of the knowledge of good and evil**, and like the later one when **the whole earth... of one language** was building **a tower**, where in such cases it could be expected, if God had not intervened, that thereafter **nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do**. So I imagine that at least part of the 'meeting' about **'taking'** Enoch went similarly, and that God said something like...

If we let Enoch stay, and he is forced by evil men to show them how to escape the coming judgment, and they survive it...

And therefore - besides that Enoch was surely without peers as a conversationalist - I'm guessing that They **took him** because not doing so would have been a 'game-ender' too. And apparently it wasn't enough to take just Enoch, because Dr. Velikovsky also informs us that,

Kings and princes, not less than one hundred and thirty in number, assembled about him, and submitted themselves to his dominion, to be taught and guided by him. Peace reigned thus over the whole world [and

evidently without yet much *evil 'angelic' or 'angel-human' oppression*] for all the two hundred and forty three years during which the influence of Enoch prevailed.

In the story of Enoch's ascension it is said that he predicted the disaster.

And sure, he may have "predicted the disaster", but evidently without revealing how to survive or prepare for it. And other *prophets* in *scripture 'predict'* coming '*disasters*' too, but few seem to be '*directed*' - or *able* - to give much if any '*God-inspired*' attention as to how to prepare for them. And in the case of The Flood, apparently the only way there was to 'prepare' for it, and avoid a oneway trip to *hell* in the process, would have been to 'prepare to die' while *fearing God*, that is, *before* it happened, and wait it out in *Abraham's bosom*, because this apparently included dying *before* the 'mindset' of everyone left on Earth became one where *every imagination of the thoughts of 'their' heart[s] was only evil continually*.

And the rest of the testimony suggesting that "it wasn't enough to take just Enoch" comes in a description of Enoch's evacuation site, where it may be assumed that the "not less than one hundred and thirty in number, [who] assembled about him, and submitted themselves to his dominion, to be taught and guided by him", were evidently *carried by the angels* away too...

Enoch was carried into the heavens in a fiery chariot drawn by fiery chargers. The day thereafter the kings who had turned back in good time sent messengers to inquire into the fate of the men who had refused to separate themselves from Enoch, for they had noted the number of them. They found snow and great hailstones upon the spot whence Enoch had risen, and, when they searched beneath, they discovered the bodies of all who had remained behind with Enoch; he alone was not among them: he [*body and spirit*] was high in heaven [*and the spirits of his friends were carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom, and later to paradise*].

What the Aggada means to tell [*us*] is that a human being - and one gifted with the greatest "wisdom concerning the heavenly bodies and their order," was brought away in a fiery storm which killed [*but also 'anticipatorily' saved*] many, brought snow and meteorites, and which had been predicted by the one who disappeared [*- and maybe no meteorites 'plunged through' the water canopy at this time, unless such a 'temporary breach' was the cause of the snow*].

And it occurs to me that this event, if it really happened this way, would have had a similar effect on the World as the coming Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church will have, and that is, it may very well have sent the World into 'The First Great Apostasy'. And I'm *hoping* other similarities with this 'extraction' to The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, and to other 'extractions' by God, and whether '*anticipatory*' or '*fully redemptive*', occur to you too.

And besides *angels*, God may very well have used some kind of 'naturally occurring' *vortex*, maybe due to a 'temporary breach' in the *water canopy*, to 'naturally accompany' this 'extraction', or maybe it was more like what happened with Elijah, but yes, surely both 'extractions' involved some kind of '*sign in the heavens*' and/or *visit* too. So Dr. Velikovsky appropriately concludes,

Some exact knowledge of the revolution of the bodies in the sky is ascribed here to the antediluvian generations.

PART II: SATURN AND THE FLOOD

Deluge

The scriptural deluge is regarded by historians and critical exegetes [read, **fools**] as a legendary product. "The legend of a universal deluge is in itself a myth and cannot be anything else". It [[The Creation Story](#)] is "most nakedly and unreservedly mythological."

[Alfred Firmin Loisy, [a late 19th/early 20th Century "French Roman Catholic priest, professor and theo-logian generally credited as a founder of Biblical Modernism [read, 'Biblical Evolutionary Humanism'] in the Roman Catholic Church... [and he] was a critic of traditional views of the biblical creation, and argued that biblical criticism could be applied to interpreting Sacred Scripture [evidently believing that **scripture** is only 'rationally and scientifically interpreted' using the Philosophy of Humanism and the Theory of Evolution]... [and his] theological positions brought him into conflict with the [Catholic] Church's conservatives, including Pope Leo XIII and Pope Pius X. In 1893, he was dismissed as a professor from the Institut Catholique de Paris... [and his] books were condemned by the Vatican, and in 1908 he was excommunicated", while his 'Protestant' contemporaries, including 'Brown-nose', 'ScrewDriver', and 'Pigs', who were guilty of similar kinds of '**perversion**', were being rewarded with honorary degrees and high academic and Church status], [Les mythes babyloniens et les premiers chapitres de la genese \[The Babylonian Myths and the First Chapters of Genesis\]](#) (Paris,1901).]

The tradition of a universal deluge is told by all ancient civilizations, and also by races that never reached the ability to express themselves in the written symbols of a language. It is found all over the world, on all continents, on the islands of the Pacific and Atlantic, everywhere. Usually it is explained as a local experience carried from race to race by word of mouth. The work of collating such material has repeatedly been done, and it would only fatigue the reader were I to repeat these stories as told in all parts of the world, even in places never visited by missionaries.

[[Richard Andree](#), [Die Flutsagen \[The Floods\]](#) (1891); Sir [James George Frazer](#), [Folklore in the Old Testament](#) (London,1918); M. Winternitz, [Die Flutsagen des Alterthums und des Natuervoelker \[The Flood Seasons of Antiquity and the Indigenous Peoples\]](#).]

Late 19th/early 20th Century Professor, Dr. Moriz Winternitz, a "Jewish", Austrian-born...

...German Orientalist [again, 'Eastern Studies', i.e., mostly Near East of Europe - especially Turkey, Israel and Egypt, but in his case expanding to India]... in 1880 entered the University of Vienna, receiving the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in 1886. In 1888 he went to Oxford, where until 1892 he assisted the preparation of the second edition of the *Rig-Veda* ["an ancient Indian collection of Vedic Sanskrit hymns", i.e., 'ancient Indian language hymns']... Winternitz remained in Oxford until 1898, acting in various educational

capacities, such as German lecturer to the Association for Promoting the Higher Education of Women (1891-98), librarian of the Indian Institute at Oxford (1895), and frequently as examiner in German and Sanskrit [- “a philosophical language of Hinduism, Buddhism, and Jainism, and a literary language ... of ancient and medieval South Asia”,] both for the university and for the Indian Civil Service.

In 1899 he went to Karl-Ferdinands-Universität in Prague as *privatdozent* [‘adjunct professor’] for Indology [or “South Asian studies”] and general ethnology, and in 1902 was appointed to the professorship of Sanskrit... and of ethnology [where he remained “for nearly thirty years”, his most notable contribution being “*Geschichte der indischen Literatur* [*History of Indian Literature*]... a major and comprehensive literary history of Sanskrit texts” which has remained “an influential resource for modern era studies on Hinduism, Buddhism and Jainism”, Jainism being “traditionally known as Jain Dharma... an ancient Indian religion [whose]... central tenet is non-violence and respect towards all living beings”. [And it may be just coincidence that the...] Winternitz family were friendly with Albert Einstein, when he was in Prague around 1911.

Prague, by-the-way, is “the capital and largest city of the Czech Republic”, and formerly, from the 12th-17th Centuries, “the capital of the kingdom of Bohemia and the main residence of several Holy Roman Emperors”, and in the 15th to early 17th Centuries it “played major roles in the Bohemian and Protestant Reformation[s], the Thirty Years' War, and in 20th-century history as the capital of Czechoslovakia, during both World Wars and the post-war Communist era”.

My encyclopedia calls The Thirty Years War, 1618 to 48, “the deadliest European religious war in history”. It was originally just “crusades” of Catholics against Protestants, but finally “became less about religion and more of a continuation of the France-Habsburg [Austria] rivalry for European political pre-eminence”, and that is, to be the ‘head’ of the Holy Roman Empire, and it all “began when the newly elected [and pope-approved] Holy Roman Emperor, Ferdinand II [of Austria], tried to impose [Catholic] religious uniformity on his [Hussite Protestant] domains”.

And The Bohemian, or Czech, or Hussite Reformation, and yes, named after John Huss or *Jan Hus*, who my encyclopedia identifies as “a key predecessor to Protestantism”...

...was a Christian movement in the late medieval and early modern Kingdom and Crown of Bohemia (present-day Czech Republic) striving for a reform of the Roman Catholic Church. Lasting for more than 200 years [from ‘our’ martyr Jan being “burned at the stake for heresy” in 1415 to Ferdinand II’s ‘imposition’ of Catholic “religious uniformity” in 1620], it had a significant impact on the historical development of Central Europe, and is considered one of the most important religious, social, intellectual and political movements of the early modern period. The Bohemian [Czech, or Hussite] Reformation produced the first national church separate from Roman authority, [one of] the first apocalyptic [or Premillennial] religious movements of the early modern period [including some of the first real Protestants to ‘point fingers at the Pope’, crying, “Antichrist! !”], and the first pacifist [though sometimes ‘defensive’] Protestant church [as opposed to the overtly ‘offensive’ Catholic kind which routinely used “crusades” against its enemies]...

How did this “First Reformation” start?

Responding with horror to the execution of Hus [in 1415], the people of Bohemia moved even more rapidly away from Papal teachings, provoking Rome to pronounce a crusade against them (1 March 1420): Pope Martin V issued a [**'load' of**] Papal bull authorising the killing of all supporters of reformers like Hus and Wycliffe.

John Wycliffe, by the way, died on the last day of 1384, having “completed a translation directly from the Vulgate [Latin Bible] into Middle English in...1382”, and otherwise...

...was an English scholastic philosopher, theologian, Biblical translator, reformer, and seminary professor at Oxford. He was an influential dissident within the Roman Catholic priesthood during the 14th century...

Wycliffe's followers were known as Lollards and followed his lead in advocating Predestination [or **'Pre-Calvinism'**], Iconoclasm [- “belief in the importance of the destruction of... religious icons... images or monuments”], and the notion of Caesaropapism [- “combining the power of... government with the religious power...”], while attacking the veneration of Saints, the Sacraments, Requiem Masses, Transubstantiation, monasticism [- a “way of life...[that] renounces worldly pursuits to devote oneself fully to spiritual work”], and the very existence of the Papacy.

And on these issues I'd give him a 9 out of 10, and that is, with **'predestination'** and **'free will'** (the latter not included) worth half a point each, with Caesaropapism, (this being a later coined term), with there being both **good** and **bad** kinds, also worth half a point each (e.g., [Isaiah 9:7](#)), with “attacking... monasticism” getting a full point since it must only have been ‘attacks’ against Catholic varieties of it, and not against **'discipleship'**, (also not included, e.g., [Mat 10:34-42](#)); [Luke 14:26-33](#)), and with “attacking...the very existence of the Papacy” getting an extra bonus point. And don't you just **love** this ‘pioneer finger-pointer’? His ‘followers’ did too, because...

Beginning in the 16th century, the Lollard [**'discipleship'**] movement [[where Mat 10:39 and Luke 14:26-27,33 applies because certainly many of them, besides 'losing family', literally 'lost their lives' too as martyrs](#)] was regarded as the precursor to the Protestant Reformation. Wycliffe was accordingly [also] characterised as the evening star of scholasticism...

...which “is not so much a philosophy or a theology... [but] a method of learning, as it places a strong emphasis on dialectical reasoning to extend knowledge by inference and to resolve contradictions”. Sound familiar? It should, because it's really still a “method” of Satan's for the **perverting** of **scripture** in a way that only **seemeth right**, though now apparently not restricted just to **scripture**, but popularly used in all **'philosophy'** or **science falsely so-called**. And so it is here, in the middle of a paragraph from my encyclopedia about John, that I must remind you that in the last section I defined “dialectics” as “**'deceiving propaganda'**, or **'seemeth-right'**, supposedly logical arguments that really are not, but are nonetheless very effectively used by **'professing fools'**”. And here I should

also admit that my dictionary more simply defines “dialectic” as “...logical augmentation”, and that this could also generally define **‘line upon line, precept upon precept reasoning’**, except that we may easily enough **discern** the difference between the **godly** and **worldly** approaches to such “augmentation”: this World offers us **truth** mixed with **lies**, while God’s Word offers us nothing but **truth**. And **‘worldly logic’** – at best – joins **truth** with **lies**, where only varying degrees of the **‘corruption of truth’** can follow. But **‘godly logic’** – whenever The Spirit of God **shall teach you all things** and **guide you into all truth** – only lays **‘truth upon truth’**, so that **‘true deductions’** from such **‘rightly divided connections’** may expose **lies**, and **‘neverendingly’** **guide you into** further **‘true deductions’**. And getting back to John, we can now more **‘heartily’** thank God for using him to be...

“the evening star of scholasticism”...

...and the Morning Star of the English [Protestant] Reformation. Wycliffe's writings in Latin greatly influenced the philosophy and teaching of Czech reformer Jan Hus, whose execution in 1415 sparked a revolt and led to the Hussite Wars [which were really Catholic “crusades”, with the Pope “authorising the killing of all supporters of reformers like [our brothers] Hus and Wycliffe”]...

However, and **praise the Lord**...

The Hussite community included most of the Czech population of the Kingdom of Bohemia, and became a major military power... [And] the Hussites defeated the crusade and the three crusades that followed (1419-1434). Fighting ended after a compromise between the Utraquist Hussites and the Council of Basel in 1436. A century later, as much as ninety percent of the inhabitants of the Czech Crown lands still followed Hussite teachings...

And did you think Protestants never had to **‘rightly fight’** to **come out of her**? Then it was under the Kingdom of Bohemia, where surely the **admonition** of Jesus to the **soldiers** that ask, **what shall we do?**, applies. He simply tells them to be good, honest **soldiers**, or in His **words**,

Do violence to no man [implying, **learn war, ‘but don’t misuse it’**], **neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages** [Luke 3:14](#).

And we **know** the time when no one will **learn war any more** ([Isa 2:4](#); [Mic 4:3](#)), is **coming**.

And were the wars The US and UK had to **‘rightly fight’** – as Protestant nations against Catholics in Europe – any different than the “Hussite Wars”? Only in that it wasn’t to **come out of her**, but instead to **‘stay’ out of her**. And there is still yet another ‘Thirty Years War’ to come, except it will only take 7 years, and except that it will be PIHO’s and new converts that take the beating in it, because **we** will miss most of it, and that is, until our Lord returns to end The White and Red Revolutions, and we then join Him in the more ‘local clean-up operation’, this being one of those ‘loose ends’ from the last **study** that we will ‘tie-up’ at the end of this one.

But now I will remind you again of Avro Manhattan’s book, *The Vatican, Moscow, Washington Alliance*. and Edmond Paris’ book, *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, and Joseph Carr’s book, *The Twisted Cross*, (referring to the swastika symbol), subtitled, *The Occultic Religion of Hitler and the New Age Nazism of*

the Third Reich, as these books offer evidence of an inescapable conclusion, which is that if Hitler had won, we would not only all be speaking German, but we would also have all been forced into the “religious uniformity” of Catholicism, the immeasurably **better** alternative being to instead be made into more of the **wine** – or really **blood**, ‘in **her** cup’.

And of course God’s Word tells us a lot about this now **‘repeatedly-risen’, ‘blood-guzzling’ whore**, including that,

...in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth [Rev 18:24](#).

And yes, again, this really means – generally speaking – that from **her** first **‘rise’** at Babel to **her ‘coming’** last **‘fall’** in Rome that **all that were slain upon the earth** die – to some extent – by **her** instigation. And this always includes – and whether covertly or openly – **her** ‘jealous frenzy’ to **devour** all **prophets** and **saints** whenever and wherever **she** may. Of course this doesn’t apply before The Flood, or as much when **she** is **fallen** and unable to do so as **‘bloodthirstily’**. And of course it’s God’s **‘fishhooks’** and other **evil** He chooses to **create** that makes it all possible. But there was surely a high price in **blood** to pay for that Bohemian **press** to **come out of her**, especially for the **faithful brethren in Christ**, because I’m talking about **the whore...**

...With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

And just to give you a little more perspective, this Bohemian **press** can’t be the first **‘mass exit’** from **her**. The first one must have been at The Tower of Babel. And we now **know** that God used Mercury, and surely **angels**, to do all the **work** which brought about The 1st Fall of the Whore, and The 1st Mass Exit Out of the Whore. However **her** next **‘rise’** or **‘rises’**, and the following associated **‘mass exit’** or **‘exits’**, are not as easy to define as I originally thought, though I now assume God was able to facilitate **‘mass exits’** through His subsequent **great judgments**, and through the downfalls of every **beast that carrieth her**, evidently including **persuading** – God can be very **‘persuasive’** – **Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon**, (at what I used to be sure was the peak of **her** second **‘rise’**), to **‘exit’** to our side too.

And I mean maybe **she** has had as many **‘rises’** after Babel as **she** has had **beasts** to **‘carry’ her**, and maybe her second **‘rise’** began in Egypt, and her second **‘fall’** at The Exodus, etc., except I don’t think there would have been a **‘fall’** when God – and His **angels** – defeated **Sennacherib’s** army using Mars, but instead that **she** would have just transferred from being **‘carried’** by Assyria to being **‘carried’** by Babylon, and then, when **she** and **Darius** lost patience, by Medo-Persia, (though ‘full participation’ by **Cyrus** with **her** is also questionable), and next by Greece, under that **he goat** with that **notable horn**, Alexander, and subsequently **four notable ones**, etc., and then by Rome ultimately under the Emperors of the Roman Empire, after which when Rome **fell**, and maybe not until the middle of the 15th Century when Constantinople fell, or as late as 1870 when the Papal States fell, (this last ‘fall’ made possible with the assistance of the Bohemian Reformation, and by earlier and later other Protestant Reformations), **she** finally suffered at least **her** second **‘fall’**, and since ‘then’ – whenever that really was – **she** has again **‘re-risen’** and grown more or less independently, awaiting **her** time to finally **‘ride’** that last and most formidable **beast**, The Antichrist Kingdom.

And I mean **her** middle **'rise'** may have lasted beyond The Fall of the Roman Empire, which may also mean it may not have started under Roman Emperor Constantine, but maybe as early as with The 1st Head of the Beast, Egypt. And if **she** finally **'fell'** the second time at the complete collapse of the Papal States in 1870, then her middle **'fall'** may have gone something like this...



The **Papal States**, officially the State of the Church... were territories in the Italian Peninsula under the sovereign direct rule of the pope, from the 8th century until 1870 [though it grew from what Emperor Constantine gave **her** in the 4th Century, and though it really took till near the 14th Century before these states became “effectively independent” from outside control]. They were among the major states of Italy... until the Italian Peninsula was unified in 1861 by the Kingdom of Piedmont-Sardinia. At their zenith, they covered most of the modern Italian regions of Lazio (which includes Rome), Marche, Umbria and Romagna, and portions of Emilia. These

holdings were considered to be a manifestation of the temporal [or earthly] power of the pope, as opposed to his ecclesiastical primacy [or “apostolic succession” - map, p.307].

By 1861, much of the Papal States' territory had been conquered by the Kingdom of Italy. Only Lazio, including Rome, remained under the Pope's temporal control. In 1870, the pope lost Lazio and Rome and had no physical territory at all, not even the Vatican. Italian Fascist leader [and ally of Hitler] Benito Mussolini ended the crisis between unified Italy and the Holy See by signing the Lateran Treaty in 1929, thus granting the Vatican City State sovereignty.

The Kingdom of Piedmont-Sardinia (or Savoy-Sardinia) and The Kingdom of Italy, by-the way, are arguably just one kingdom in two stages of its growth, where in the ‘Piedmont-Sardinia’ stage - with some ‘help’ from both Napoleon I and III (III being I’s “nephew and heir”) - they finally escape the control of the Austrian/Habsburg ‘whoremongers’, and in the ‘Italy’ stage experience a big expansion, otherwise known as “Italian unification”. (See maps p.308-9.)

In The French Revolution at the end of the 18th Century, the French people “overthrew the [Catholic] monarchy” and “established a republic”, and in due course this “revolution” came under the ‘direction’ of Napoleon Bonaparte, who “brought many of its principles to Western Europe and beyond... [and] profoundly altered the course of modern history, triggering the global decline of absolute [Catholic] monarchies while replacing them with [‘less Catholic’] republics and liberal democracies”. This was possible in “Europe and beyond” because first General Napoleon (1793), then Consul Napoleon (1799), and finally Emperor Napoleon I (1804) defeated “coalitions” of the Austrian/Habsburg Holy Roman Empire, and others, multiple times, “which led to the elimination of the thousand year-old Holy Roman Empire”.

General Napoleon’s first campaign involved “conquering” the entire Italian Peninsula, much of which included what I will call the ‘imposed Catholic allies’ of Austria, (to some degree like Bohemia was Austria’s ‘ally’ after 1620, the most resistant ‘ally’ being the formidable and

Around 1500

The Italian Peninsula

Around 1800

dominant **Duchy of Savoy**, which then included the neighboring regions of Piedmont to the east, and a “swath” of present day Southeastern France including Lyon and Nice to the west. But after Emperor Napoleon picked a fight with the Iberian Peninsula (Spain and Portugal), and Britain supported them, and for the first time he lost, the rest of Europe rallied, and finally chased all his armies back into France, forcing him into exile. And a year later his attempted ‘comeback’ failed at the Battle of Waterloo. (See **The Italian Peninsula** maps on p.308.)

In the wrap up of all this, at the Congress of Vienna (Austria) in 1815, whose purpose was to establish a “long-term peace plan for Europe”, uh-huh, at least Savoy got their country back, but along with it came renewed Austrian Catholic oppression.

But in 1859 Napoleon III rescued Savoy by helping to defeat Austria yet again, the price for this being that the “Savoyard state” was transferred – really in name only – from Savoy to then relatively harmless Sardinia. Nevertheless, and shortly thereafter, with finally no more threat of Austrian oppression, (at least not until WW I and II), this new Kingdom of Piedmont-Sardinia started to rapidly expand. This is when Napoleon III, “who feared a strong Savoyard state on his south-eastern border... insisted that if the Kingdom of Sardinia were to keep the new acquisitions they would have to cede [French-speaking] Savoy and Nice to France”, which the



people of these regions apparently approved of by “referenda” (voting).

Or to put it another way, (and as usual there are many, often conflicting ways), The Kingdom of Italy would be the

second to last of very many 'changes' of 'kingdoms' in this region, the third to last being the Kingdom of Piedmont-Sardinia, also called Sardinia-Piedmont, or just Sardinia, etc. The Savoy/Piedmont part of this "kingdom" continued to more or less dominate the region of these maps till the mid-20th Century, it being generally in the northeast of present day Italy, though its "historical territory is shared between the modern countries of France, Italy, and Switzerland", with some of this "territory" being "incorporated" into France in 1860, though nonetheless remaining the homeland of the "ruling dynasty of Italy", who after this "annexation" (now "incorporation") retained control of their capital in Savoy, the city of Turin, (famous for its "shroud"), and neighboring Piedmont. Sardinia had mostly a supporting role, being before this "unification" mostly limited to the largest island east of the Italian mainland and subordinate to Savoy. But they together, besides eliminating all papal control of land, further expanded their territory and/or control - much of this by "plebiscites" (voting) - and in this process they became the **Kingdom of Italy** (map, p.309).

(Note: a "referendum" (plural "referenda") is "the principle or practice of referring measures proposed or passed by a legislative body, head of state, etc., to the vote of the electorate for approval or rejection", and a "referendum" is more generally a "plebiscite" or "a direct vote of the qualified voters of a state in regard to some important public question", but a "plebiscite" that is not initiated by 'government' is technically not a "referendum".)

And this "kingdom" - established as much by 'voting' as 'fighting' - might have lasted till this day, but at it's beginning the promise of eliminating all the pope's "temporal power" over land - which was accomplished only by fighting - was mostly, but not fully kept, as Vatican City and its sovereignty was returned to **her** in 1929. And there was also the promise of establishing a republic, like the ones in America and France, which was mostly, but not fully kept either, as their first "king", Victor Emmanuel II, in the long continuing dynasty of the House of Savoy,

...decided to continue on as King Victor Emmanuel II instead of Victor Emmanuel I of Italy. This was a terrible move as far as public relations went as it was not indicative of the fresh start [\[as a republic\]](#) that the Italian people wanted [\[and were promised\]](#) and suggested that Sardinia-Piedmont had taken over the Italian Peninsula, rather than unifying it... His role in day-to-day governing [nonetheless] gradually dwindled, as it became increasingly apparent that a king could no longer keep a government in office against the will of Parliament... [And though] the wording of the Statuto Albertino [- ultimately "the constitution of the unified Kingdom of Italy",] stipulating that ministers were solely responsible to the crown remained unchanged, in practice they were now responsible to Parliament.

So The Kingdom of Italy lasted only until the inevitable establishment of the present Republic of Italy in 1946. But there is some even better news.

Victor Emmanuel died in Rome in 1878 [- the capital by then, having been moved from Turin and finally to Rome], after refusing to meet with Pope Pius IX's envoys, who could have reversed the excommunication [\[and certainly damned his 'immortal soul', that is, if it wasn't yet otherwise\]](#).

But where did King Victor's "refusing to meet" **her** "envoys", and this "will of Parliament" - surely involving the will of the peoples of Italy to remove from

themselves **her** 1500-year-long oppression – come from? Jesus of course, but I have reason to believe that, besides the Apostle Paul and company, that the Apostle John is directly connected to all of this too.

The origin of the culture of the Savoy region is associated with the “legend” of the martyrdom of the Theban Legion, so-called because they were a Roman Legion “quartered” in “the city of Thebes in Egypt... until [apparently] the emperor Maximian ordered them to march to Gaul (France), to assist him against the rebels of Burgundy”, and where “in 286”, before they could cross the Alps into Gaul, in the city of Agaunum, which since has been renamed Saint-Maurice, (the name of this legion’s leader), this “entire Roman legion” of “six thousand six hundred and sixty-six men”, who “had converted en masse to Christianity... were martyred together”, and that “by putting to death a tenth of its men... repeated[ly] until none were left”. Why? Because they “had [repeatedly] refused to sacrifice to the Emperor”, which would have been to **worship** the supposed ‘**demigod**’ Maximian, supposedly a ‘**son of one of the planet-gods**’, which would have been the same as denying Jesus.

And who is the **preacher** that supposedly “converted” these **soldiers**? I don’t know, but Savoy used to be the (Second) Kingdom of the Burgundians (or Burgundy), also known as the Kingdom of Arles, which included Lyon, which was originally the Roman city of Lugdunum. And apparently it was 1st Century “Roman Consul, statesman, general [- whose “important military victories” include “the Battle of Actium in 31 BC against the forces of Mark Antony” -] and architect”, Marcus Vipsanius Agrippa, who “recognised that Lugdunum's position on the natural highway from northern to south-eastern France made it a natural communications hub, and he made Lyon the starting point of the principal Roman roads throughout Gaul”, which led to it being the capital of Gaul. So from this Theban Legion we could go back a century to Irenaeus, “the second Bishop of Lyon”, (then Lugdunum), and from him directly to Polycarp, who supposedly “sent” Irenaeus “out of Asia” – likely through Savoy – to Lyon, and from Polycarp to the Apostle John, and finally to Jesus Himself. Or as my encyclopedia puts it,

...a large number of the Christians in the area of Vienne and [nearby] Lyons were Greeks from Asia. A violent persecution was there against them while Pothinus was bishop of Lyons, and Irenæus, who had been sent there by Polycarp out of Asia, was a priest of that city. [Note: “Lyons” is spelled without an “s” in French, and sometimes in English too.]

And Irenaeus apparently replaced ‘**our**’ martyr Pothinus. No, not that Greek regent who supposedly decapitated Mark Antony for Julius, but “the first bishop of Lyon”, who, “during the persecution of [2nd Century Roman Emperor] Marcus Aurelius”, along with 5 others, “was martyred”, and who “is believed to have died from the abuse he suffered in prison, while the others were [‘**happily**’] killed by wild beasts in the local amphitheater”, as apparently others at other times were.

And whether there’s a connection from John, Polycarp, Irenaeus and ‘**our**’ **martyrs** in Lyon to this ‘**happily**’ martyred Theban Legion, and from them to the tenacity of this region’s “Savoyard State” and the fall of the Papal States or not, the year 1870 may nonetheless mark **her** second ‘**fall**’. And I mean maybe **her** last ‘**rise**’ didn’t start with Constantine’s ‘generosity’ to **her** in the 4th Century, that is, when he...

...made Christianity legal within the Roman Empire... restoring to it any properties that had been confiscated (in the larger cities of the empire this would have been quite considerable and the Roman patrimony not

least among them). [Note: The Patrimony of Saint Peter (*Patrimonium Sancti Petri*) “originally designated the landed possessions and revenues of various kinds that belonged to the Church of St. Peter (i.e., the Pope) at Rome”. And, “Until the middle of the 8th century this consisted wholly of private property]. The Lateran Palace [being an earlier “confiscation” when a member of the Laterani family “had been accused by Nero of conspiracy against the emperor... [and it] resulted in the confiscation and redistribution of his properties”, ‘*naturally*’] was the first significant new donation to the Church, most probably a gift from Constantine himself [since no one else wanted a palace that formerly belonged to a traitor]...

From the fourth century, the [Lateran] palace was the principal residence of the popes, and continued so for about a thousand years until the seat ultimately moved to the Vatican...

But the Lateran Palace was repeatedly irreparably damaged by fire, and for other reasons extensively renovated, and Pope “Sixtus V, more concerned with rationalized urban planning than the preservation of antiquities, then destroyed what still remained of the ancient palace of the Lateran in 1586, preserving only the Sancta Sanctorum [which is essentially its glorified, two-towered ‘foyer’], and erected the present much smaller edifice in its place”, which is now used as a museum of the Papal States, among other uses.

And “the Vatican”, also known as the Apostolic or Papal or Vatican Palace, first built in the 5th Century as “an alternative residence to the Lateran Palace... and extensively modified... in the twelfth century”, was in 1447 “razed to erect a new building, the current Apostolic Palace”.

And with all this background I’m suggesting that the start of *her* final ‘*rise*’ may have instead

coincided with the establishment in 1929 of Vatican City – yes, *that great city* of Revelation 17 and 18 – which would make Constantine’s ‘favors’ more just help in the ‘coordinated’ change of strategy from ‘*intimidation*’ and *temptation* through imaginary ‘*planet*’ *gods* to *deceiving* the World and ‘*excusing sin*’ though *her* many *doctrines of devils*, and that is, since openly *persecuting the church* wasn’t working anyway.

At the same time – and like trying to define God’s *great judgments* – this appears to be just one of the *ways* to portray *her* various ‘*rises*’ and ‘*falls*’, not to mention the history of them. And I mean surely there’s been a lot of ‘them’. Nevertheless *her* first two biggest ‘*falls*’ – at Babel and wherever the second one was – could be seen to limit them to just three. And I mean *her* ‘*rides*’ seem to involve lots of ‘peaks and valleys’ instead of just three distinct ‘peaks’ with two distinct ‘valleys’ unless your perspective is broad enough. However mine evidently isn’t yet because I’m no longer sure where the supposed second ‘*fall*’ best fits. Is it at the Exodus because of God’s work using Venus, (which would mean there are more than 3 altogether), or is it at The Fall of Babylon because it is the kingdom *she* most identifies with since Babel, or is it at The Fall of Rome because it is the most formidable *beast* she last ‘*rides*’, or at The Fall of Constantinople, certainly still ‘*beastly*’ enough until it falls, or at The Fall of the Papal States, that till this ‘end’ *she* has various suitably ‘*beastly*’ Holy Roman Empires to *sit upon*?

Still it may be appropriate to identify only The 3 Rises of the Whore if we assume that when God brings down Egypt, and the ‘*Hyksos-Amalekites-Assyrians*’ flood in, that this is simply the first of *her* transfers – in *her* second ‘*rise*’ – to the back of the next *beast* (and one that Dr. Velikovsky and I better clarify in SECTION 11 and 12, but also when you get back around again to here), and so *she* simply

endures a long, up-and-down, second **'rise'**, never really being without a formidable **'beast'** to **'ride'**, even when the Byzantine Empire falls, because then there are Holy Roman Empires to **'ride'**, and so **she** may have avoided being fully **fallen** for the second time till 1870, making 1929 the year that **her** final **'great city rise'** begins.

The biggest Holy Roman Empire, by-the-way, peaked under Charlemagne, King of the Franks, in the later part of The First Millennium, that is, before there was a 'German/Austrian' one, and later an 'Austrian/German' one, which the Napoleons of France finally brought down, but that Hitler of Germany, with Austria-Hungary and Italy as 'allies', almost re-established. So yes, there really has been – since The Roman Empire fell and starting before the Byzantine Empire fell – more than a millennium of Holy Roman Empires, with the shifting of empires mostly because of the French–German/Austrian “rivalry for European political pre-eminence”.

Also by-the-way, “In 2001, about 74% of Austria's population were registered as Roman Catholic [which doesn't include the 5-10% that were Eastern Orthodox], while about 5% considered themselves Protestants”. And though in 1955 Austria, formerly German Austria, and before that Austria-Hungary, etc., “re-established Austria as a sovereign state, ending the occupation [by Germany]”, and also “created the Declaration of Neutrality which declared that the Second Austrian Republic would become permanently neutral”, it was the first country to declare war in 1914, essentially starting World War I, and readily sided with Hitler in World War II. So I see their “Declaration of Neutrality” as being more propaganda than not, and that is, to 'mask' their reputation as 'war starters'. And I'm thinking the Antichrist will less likely **come in** to the former French Empire, but that **he** will **come in** to the former Austrian one, meaning that **the prince of the covenant** may be a 'ruler' and/or 'royal' in 'neutral' Austria, and that this could be where the Antichrist...

...shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries. And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, also the prince of the covenant. And after the league made with him [which at least includes **the ten] he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people [Dan 11:21-23](#).**

The **they** in this passage are **three of the first [ten] horns** [or **three** of the **ten kings** that are metaphorically] **plucked up by the roots [Dan 7:8,20,24](#)**. But I have been unsure if **also** here means 'including' or 'in addition to'. However I just saw more clearly that the Antichrist...

...shall rise after them [the **ten kings]; and he shall be diverse from the first [again, **from** the **ten kings**], and he shall subdue three [of these **ten**] kings [Dan 7:24](#).**

So I'm leaning even further toward the conclusion that only 3 of **the ten** kingdoms are **plucked up** or **'flooded'** by the Antichrist, the rest of **the ten** evidently joining **him** willingly, and all this happening after **he shall** [first] **come in** to one of these 3 – the one where **the prince of the covenant** 'rules' – **peaceably, and obtain...by flatteries** the means to militarily **flood** and **subdue** the first **three**, then **obtain** – by **the league made with him** – the whole **'ten-horned' kingdom**, probably in 7 'landslide' plebiscites, but surely also using both 'above board' and 'under the table' **lies**, including the ones to the minorities of Jews, Protestants, and Muslims in these **nations**, which he will shortly thereafter doublecross, and to his

supporters **scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches** of these minorities. And of course it still fits that this **small people**, and their **diverse** ^{H8133} leader, (who is nonetheless likely 'educated' at a prestigious university in Europe), are the now "full communion" Catholics known as the Assyrians.

And if you're still waiting for the 'honk', remember that primarily we should be defining **her**

'rises' and **'falls'** by that **BABYLON MYSTERY 'religion'** that uses 'confession control' and the accompanying popularity of **'planet-god' worship** - or more recently, **'false-Christ' worship** - that involves a 'mother goddess and godchild', and secondarily by looking for the **'world-ruling' beasts** that actually **'carry' her**, and not so much the ones using other versions of **'planet-god' worship**. And with these additional parameters I count 3 scripturally-identified, **'world-ruling' beasts** that primarily **'carry' her**: 1) Babel, 2) Babylon, and 3) the coming Antichrist Empire.

And yes, I'm assuming here that Egypt, Assyria, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome - when **'world-ruling'** - were mostly, and however covertly, led by Satan's **'self-idolatry insiders'**, (and isn't this what the "Egyptian scholars" apparently "taught" Pythagoras and Plato to be), or less covertly by real **'planet-god' worshippers**, neither primarily promoting the **BABYLON MYSTERY 'religion'**, so there may not have been a **'world-ruling' beast** that primarily **'carried' her** since The Second Babylon, or since The Reign of The Third Head of the Beast.

And again, it appears that the dominance of the **BABYLON MYSTERY 'religion'** together

with a **'world-ruling beast'** is only seen at The 1st and 2nd Babylons, and won't be seen again until the Antichrist Empire, though **her** now worldwide **BABYLON MYSTERY 'religion'** has been growing and redeveloping since "Early Christianity", which is when **she** stops faking **her** authority using imaginary **'planet-god mothers, children and fathers'** - because **'planet-gods'** aren't so **'intimidating'** or **'tempting'** anymore - and starts using a **'false-Mary'**, **'false-Christ'**, and **'false-Father-God'**. But we will much further clarify both these strategies as we **continue**.

And for now I rest my case among yet another 'gaggle of confused geese'. And I mean defining **her** is like how we're 'defining' God's **great judgments**, or The Coming Red and White Revolutions, or Calvinism v. Arminianism for that matter, because various focuses on **her** give varying perspectives, but all of them God's, Who cannot be **known** nearly so well when limiting your perspectives of Him. I mean **gracious**, He's so far beyond complicated it will take beyond **for ever** to figure out all **his thoughts** and **ways**. Still **the Spirit...beareth witness** with me that **we** are on **the path of life**, but that **we** can only remain on it **if we continue** to **grow in grace, and in the knowledge our Lord Jesus Christ**, and that **for evermore**.

Note: I am adding to my recommendations Avro Manhattan's book, *The Vatican Billions*, though this book and *The Vatican, Moscow, Washington Alliance* are no longer available at Chick Publications. However the second to last of his 18 books now is. And Edmond Paris' book, *The Secret History of the Jesuits*, still is. And Charles Chiniquy's book, *Fifty Years in the Church of Rome*, still is. Joseph Carr's book, *The Twisted Cross*, never was. But I nonetheless recommend the first of these books as an overall history of The Church of Rome because it follows **her** 'money trail', (including that timely stock market crash of 1929, resulting in The Great Depression, but also in **her** more recent 'rise' to **riches**), and the other books (and just the ones I named) because, besides detailing **her** more recent history,

they reveal details about how ***the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and...have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.***

But I will also emphasize that it is more than enough to read just the books I recommend for now, and even wait on those, that is, until you are through with these ***'studies'***, because an overabundance of too-narrowly-focused specifics too often fosters erroneous conclusions, while a broad perspective best limits them. And I mean it's ***better*** to trust your ***'God-given, gifted teacher'*** to give you the 'big picture' first, and that is, before you start distracting yourself with details that you're not yet ***able*** to ***'handle'***, ***'rightly divide'*** or even ***discern*** as ***good*** or ***evil***. And yes, you need to read these ***'studies'*** first, because they can and will prepare you for everything else you read, but most importantly, ***prepare*** you to ***'better understand' scripture.***

And getting back to those formidable enemies of ***the whore***, the Hussites, who – ***thank... Jesus*** – played such a major role in one of ***her*** 'setbacks', let's further consider two questions: who were they, and how did their "Reformation" end? My encyclopedia reports that...

...Although it split into many groups, some characteristics were shared by all of them – communion under both kinds [meaning "both bread and wine, as opposed to the bread alone"], distaste for the wealth and power of the [Catholic] church, emphasis on the Bible preached in a vernacular [or common] language and on an immediate relationship between man and God, [and that is, without an 'intermediary priest' always prodding for 'compromising confessions' to be used for control and oppression of the people].

Together with the Waldensians and the Lollards (led by John Wycliffe), the Bohemian Reformation is considered to be the precursor to the Protestant Reformation. These movements are sometimes referred to as the *First Reformation* in the Czech historiography. Despite the influence of the German and Swiss Reformations, the Bohemian Reformation did not [apparently] bleed into them, although many Czech Utraquists grew closer and closer to the Lutherans. The Bohemian Reformation kept its own development until the suppression of the Bohemian Revolt in 1620. The victorious restored [Austrian "Catholic Habsburg"] King Ferdinand II decided to force every inhabitant of Bohemia and Moravia to become Roman Catholic... The Bohemian Reformation ended up being diffused in the Protestant world and gradually lost its distinctiveness. The Patent of Toleration issued in 1781 by Emperor Joseph II did not lead to a restoration of the Bohemian Reformation. Joseph II did not respect the Bohemian religious tradition and therefore only Lutheran, Calvinist and Eastern Orthodox faiths were made legal in the Crown of Bohemia and other parts of his realm. In spite of the extinction of the Bohemian Reformation as a distinctive Christian movement, its tradition did not disappear. Many churches (not only in the Czech Republic) do not forget their legacy, refer to the Bohemian Reformation, and try to continue its tradition...

The Waldensians are the 'earliest known Pre-Reformation Protestants' who "first appeared" in the 12th Century "in Lyon", uh-huh, and are reported to have "influenced early Swiss reformers", and probably also John Wycliffe too, as their

'origin' predates him by a couple centuries. The "movement" is supposedly named after Peter Waldo, who around 1170 "began to preach and teach publicly, based on his ideas of simplicity and poverty", including that, "No man can serve two masters, God and Mammon.", and "he condemned Papal excesses and Catholic dogmas, including purgatory and transubstantiation", and this at a time "when it was considered a capital crime to do it". But I say 'supposedly' because there are references to this "movement" being "condemned" by some pope a few decades before Peter's time that were recorded by an historian who condemned it too - this historian being "cited" in Foxe's Book of Martyrs - but otherwise these 'condemners' are not worth identifying, as they are soon to forever be forgotten anyway. This "movement" however still exists in a variety of places worldwide, but "is centered on Piedmont in northern Italy". Again, uh-huh.

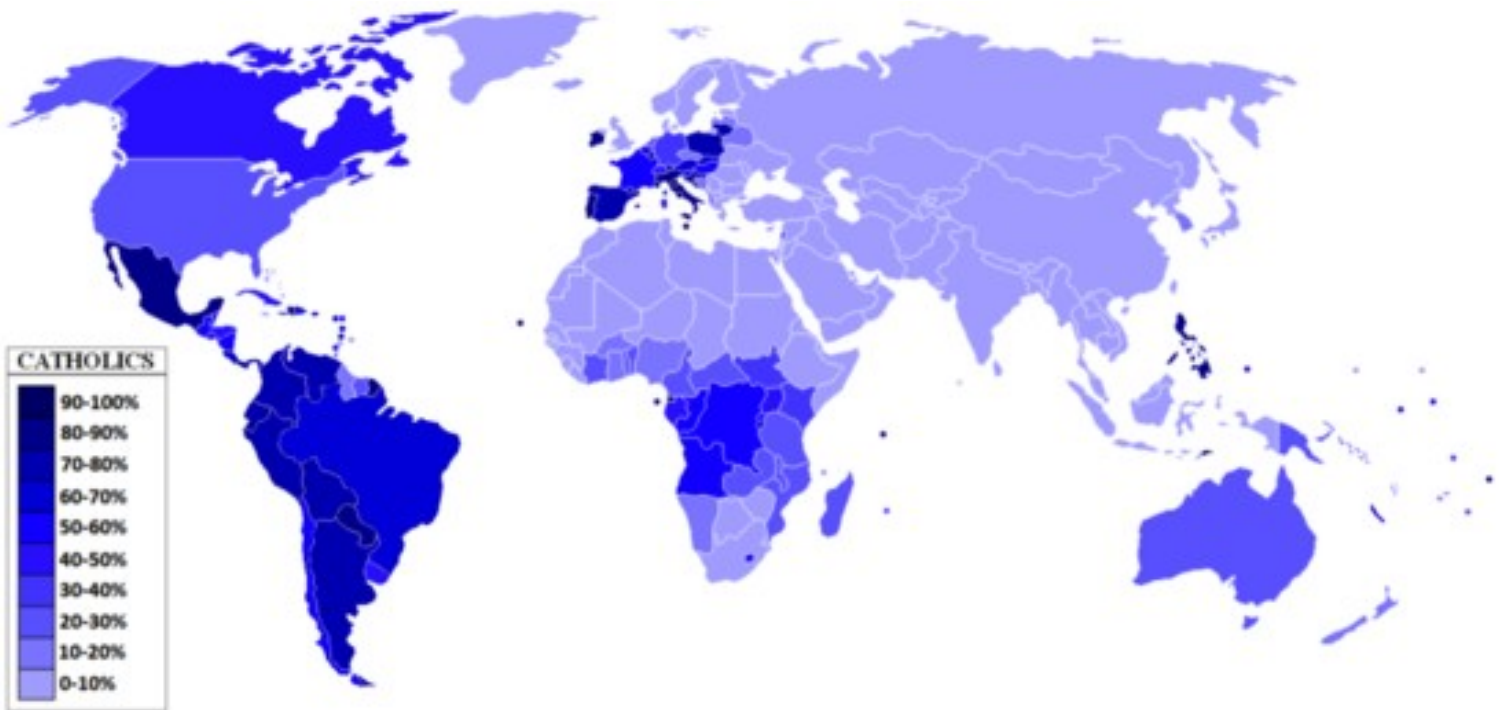
The German Reformation, as well as the greater 'Second' Protestant Reformation, was led - or at least initiated - by Martin Luther starting early in the 16th Century. And the fact that one of his enemies "branded Luther a new Jan Hus" should tell us a lot, and I mean that as John taught Jan, surely they in turn taught Martin, who - 'standing on their shoulders' - further devised even better '**ways and means**' to **come out of her**. And I have to mention that Martin - being himself a "prolific hymnodist" - composed my favorite hymn, my favorite translation being, "[A Mighty Fortress Is Our God](#)", which is apparently a loose "paraphrase of Psalm 46".

The Swiss Reformation, besides being influenced by Waldensians, was "promoted initially by Huldrych [or Ulrich] Zwingli, who gained the support of the magistrate (Mark Reust) and [the] population of Zürich", this also early in the 16th Century, though it finally fairly evenly divided the country between Protestants and Catholics, which apparently a century later kept Switzerland out of the Thirty Years' War. Huldrych met with Martin and several other reformers in 1529 at the Marburg Colloquy ("a conversational exchange; dialogue"). It "was a meeting at Marburg Castle... [in] Germany which attempted to solve a disputation between Martin Luther and Ulrich Zwingli over the Real Presence of Christ in the Lord's Supper" ("transubstantiation"). But it didn't because Martin wouldn't give this up. Later John Calvin (born *Jehan Cauvin*), being exiled from France, and after that from Geneva, Switzerland too, finally gained an 'ecclesiastical foothold' back in Geneva. Still it's apparently mostly this 'division' between Protestants and Catholics that continues to be the main reason for Switzerland's world famous neutrality, or why there is never enough agreement on which side she should fight.

But I should point out that with the Swiss Reformation we're talking about that part of the former kingdoms of Burgundy and Savoy, whose descendants helped unite The Kingdom of Italy, and ended the Pope's "temporal" control of any land. However Hitler's ally Mussolini gave some back to **her**, and though not much, plainly enough to allow **her** to eventually 'roll the heads' of anyone not **deceived** enough by **her**, and that is, to give up **life eternal**, and end up participating in that big 'ker-ploosh', and finally 'take the plunge' into **everlasting punishment**.

And there were other 'European Protestant Reformations', but it can be **understood** that the efforts of **the whore** to end the Reformations of John and Jan, et al., were a significant and necessary 'distraction' for the start of the Reformations of Martin and Huldrych and others.

Countries by percentage of Catholics



The bad news is that...

Although Bohemia was the site of one of the most significant pre-reformation movements, there are only few Protestant adherents remaining in modern times; mainly due to historical reasons such as persecution of Protestants by the [Austrian] Catholic Habsburgs [including Ferdinand II who effectively ended the Hussite Reformation]; restrictions during the Communist rule; and also the ongoing [humanistic, evolutionary, 'self-idolizing'] secularization.

And apparently it's not just the Hussite Reformation that has suffered significant 'decline' in Europe, though things appear to have somewhat 'shifted'. See the newer map of this 'decline' on p.315. ("Countries by percentage of Catholics", [Distribution of Catholics.png](#), author, [Starfunker236](#); "Most of the figures are taken from the CIA Factbook or PEW Research Center Surveys", 20 June 2010; "According to the Census of the 2017 *Annuario Pontificio* (Pontifical Yearbook), the number of Catholics in the world was about 1.285 billion at the end of 2015."; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Catholic_Church_by_country.)

Still in the 'monstrous sea' of darker blue (more Catholic) countries in Mainland Europe on this map, the lightest one (least Catholic), large enough to easily distinguish, is the Czech Republic, which, by this accounting, is about 10% Catholic, while it's 'neighbor' Poland to the north is over 85%, Slovakia to the east over 60%, Austria to the south still near 60%, and Germany to the west - thanks to Martin, et al. - less than 30%, putting both Germany and the Czech Republic in perceivably perilous positions. And I mean they'll soon 'fill her cup' yet again, especially since these percentages don't include the Orthodox Churches that will eventually 'fully' side with **her**, or other '**natural enemies**' of Protestants, you know, anyone who would '**naturally**' side against those who **hear the word of the ['two step'] gospel, and believe**. Other

European countries likely in or assimilated into **the ten** are Italy, Portugal, and Spain at over or near 80%, Belgium and Luxembourg at around 60%, France with a clear majority, and Switzerland – thanks to Huldrych, Jehan, and company – with only an uncomfortably strong minority of Catholics, which puts it in a particularly precarious predicament too. And it's also pretty profoundly problematic that the UK has less than 10%, in that its close 'neighbor' Ireland has near 80%, and because the time is coming when all Protestants – wherever they are – will be **'hard pressed'** by **peril** from these...

...treacherous dealers [that] **have dealt treacherously; yea, the treacherous dealers** [that] **have dealt very treacherously** [Isa 24:16b](#).

Of course Isaiah and I are mostly talking about the Catholics and Communists, and their coming White and Red Revolutions, but also all manner of **'dealings' dealt very treacherously**.

Yet all this current, curious to crazy, or cute to confusing, carrying-on, or more curtly and concisely, this carried-away cloning of consonants (otherwise known as alliteration), particularly the plentiful, profuse and persisting, plus possibly potentially perpetual, plethora in print of the letter "p", presently popping up to patently purvey, portray, purport and pronounce that any point of panic promoted or propagandized by that polluted, pruriently promiscuous profligate – yes, I'm talking about **her** – should be purposely purged from 'ye ol' brainpan, as any and all alike apparent and appalling appraisals and apprehensions are precisely in that population of perceptions properly expeditiously expelled. And I mean all this admittedly asinine and altogether absurdly adventurous alliteration, (and now assonance too, that is, the repetition of vowel sounds, and not knowing of a name for the repetition of consonant-vowel blends, which for now I'll call 'alliterance' if starting with consonants, and 'assoneration' if with vowels), is my perfectly puerile plan to prop-up this prerequisite **precept** that **we** must persistently propound, propagate, promulgate, and **preach**, or in other **words of God**, and that is, as Jesus puts it,

...fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell [Mat 10:28](#).

And how can I possibly perceive it as personally preventable, petulant, precocious, or presumptuous to even more prominently posit the prophetic premise that a period is pending when the predominant part of the population of the planet – who do not personally prescribe to this predictably **'pressing'** [G1377](#) program – will, latently land **'locked'** [H3369](#); [H5367](#) and literally **lost** [H6](#); [G622](#) in languishing lapses of lunacy, likely lastly left lethargically lamenting in limitless lifelessness, pose primarily and principally as posterchildren of **perdition**, poached past the point of preposterous and pitiful to instead, inevitably, instruments of inquietude, 'incomparably' (infer, 'indubitably incalculably insufficiently and inadequately') incorporated into my intendedly infantile, inscribed inclinations included in this instead indispensable **instruction**. Huh.

And speaking of **'dealing with dealings' dealt very treacherously**, and of the **thanks** due to the Reformation Leaders for it (e.g., [Rom 16:4](#)), and of the coming **very treacherously 'dealt dealings'** that are 'distinguishable' on this

map, don't forget my favorite reformer is Menno Simons, "a former Catholic priest from the Friesland region", which is "a province in the northwest of the Netherlands", otherwise known as Holland, which, at less than 25%, is also presently prime **prey**, perturbingly pressed against the North Sea by 'neighboring' Belgium and Germany, and this evidently because Menno "became an influential Anabaptist religious leader" there, who essentially **preached, be baptized after ye believe**, and not before, and to abandon all The Doctrines of the Whore'. Menno "was a contemporary of the Protestant Reformers", whose "followers became known as Mennonites", and also as Amish or Amish Mennonites. But is Menno 'the father of all Baptists'? Probably not. However my encyclopedia tells me that,

Historians trace the earliest church labeled "Baptist" back to 1609 in Amsterdam [yes, in the Netherlands, "in the province of North Holland", neighboring the home province of Menno Simons of Friesland], with English Separatist ['separated' from the Anglicans] John Smyth as its pastor...

...[He was] educated... in Christ's College, Cambridge, where he became a Fellow in 1594...

...[And he] was ordained as an Anglican priest in 1594 in England... Soon after his ordination, he broke with the Church of England and left for Holland where he and his small congregation began to study the Bible ardently...

In 1609, [less than half a century after Menno died,] Smyth, along with a group in Holland [in Menno's 'neighborhood'], came to believe in believer's baptism [including that full "immersion is...symbolic of the cleansing from sin and of the spiritual regeneration"] (thereby rejecting infant baptism) and they came together to form one of the earliest Baptist churches.

So it appears Menno, (and evidently also Melchior, bio'ed later), at least indirectly, "greatly influenced the philosophy and teaching" of Pastor Smyth too. In fact since Menno's followers were originally mostly Dutch and German, we could call Pastor Smyth's followers English Mennonites. But who influenced Menno? My encyclopedia informs me that, "Through his writings, Simons articulated and formalized the teachings of earlier Swiss founders". Uh-huh.

So I have to admit I'm biased, and not only because my personal '**confession of faith**' was in due course followed by a 'full immersion', "believer's baptism" inside my "Baptist Church" in front of the whole congregation, and about as far as you can get from Menno's neighborhood, and neither just because Menno's presently doing even better than Martin in his home country against Catholics, but also because - on the other hand - that evidently no one is doing better than Jan in his home country except John, and because I can't avoid mentioning that since Menno was a Catholic priest who could likely read Latin, and since John's "writings in Latin" made it all the way to Prague, Bohemia, then they likely also made it just across the North Sea to Menno too, or if not then probably indirectly through Huldrych and company in Switzerland, and/or by way of Jehan in France or Switzerland. And can I leave out Peter, or Polycarp and Irenaeus, or the Apostles John and Paul for that matter? No. So I can't avoid admitting that I'm biased, because evidently all these "writings" - either directly or in turn - must have "greatly influenced the philosophy and teaching" of my favorite, the leader of The Radical Reformation.

And I mean surely the **apostles** Paul, John, and Polycarp, (who “sent” a **bishop** named Irenaeus, didn’t he?), and, foregoing titles, Peter, John, Jan, Huldrych, Martin and Jehan, (who died in this order), all did their share – in “writings” – to help give Menno, (who died just before Jehan), his **‘rightly fighting’** chance against **the whore** that he would not otherwise have had.

But getting out of this ‘monstrous eddy’ and back in Dr. Velikovsky’s ‘greater flow’, evidently Dr. Winternitz was ‘innundated’ with Sanskrit texts about ‘Flood myth’ too. And otherwise...

The rest of the collected traditions are also not identical in detail, and are sometimes very different in their setting from the Noah story, but all agree that the earth was covered to the mountain tops by the water of the deluge coming from above, and that only a few human beings escaped death in the flood. The stories are often accompanied by details about a simultaneous cleavage [or a ‘great rift’ in the *crust*] of the earth [E.g., the Malaya story in Andree, *Die Flutsagen* [*The Flushing Days*, a title which may imply ‘great whirlpools’ too], p.29, s].

Richard Andree was the late 19th Century...

...son of geographer Karl Andree [who was “educated at Jena, Göttingen, and Berlin” Universities]. He followed in the footsteps of his father, studied natural sciences at the Braunschweig Collegium Carolinum and Leipzig University, and temporarily worked in a Bohemian ironworks. As a director of the geography bureau of publisher Velhagen & Klasing in Leipzig from 1873 to 1890, he also took up cartography, having a chief share in the production of... [the *Physical-Statistical Atlas of the German Reich*, and the *General Historical Atlas*], as well as school atlases.

Andree's main work, however, is his *Allgemeiner Handatlas* [*General Atlas*] (Leipzig, first edition 1881, final edition 1937), one of the most comprehensive world atlases of all times. The early editions of the *Times Atlas of the World* (1895-1900) are based on this atlas, as was Cassell's *Universal Atlas*. Andree became an elected member of the Academy of Sciences Leopoldina in 1886. In 1890 he moved to Heidelberg, where he continued the editorship of the academic journal *Globus* [*Globe*] from 1891 until 1903. Andree made important contributions to comparative ethnographic studies of countries and people, advocating Adolf Bastian's ideas of a common basic mental framework shared by all humans.

And Adolf Bastian was...

...a 19th-century polymath best remembered for his contributions to the development of ethnography [a “branch of anthropology dealing with the scientific description of individual cultures”] and the development of anthropology as a discipline. Modern psychology owes him a great debt, because of his theory of the *Elementargedanke* [‘Elementary Thought’ or ‘Pathos’, a theory that made him “one of the pioneers of the concept of the ‘psychic unity of mankind’ – the idea that all humans share a basic mental framework”], which led to [“Swiss

psychiatrist and psychoanalyst”, and founder of “analytical psychology”.] Carl Jung's development of the theory of *archetypes*...

And Mr. Jung's “theory of archetypes” is, as I define it, the **‘misunderstanding’** that ‘similarities in global thought’ – especially as expressed in myth and folklore around the world, such as in ‘Flood Myth’ – are indicators of mankind's “collective unconsciousness”, and not so much actual testimony of the peoples of the World about ‘mutually experienced global cataclysms’, etc.

And since Mr. Jung's “principal theories” originated – according to my encyclopedia – by a “confrontation with the unconscious”, where he “saw visions and heard voices”, and became “worried at times” that he was “menaced by a psychosis”, or was “doing a schizophrenia”, but nonetheless “decided that it was valuable experience and, in private, he induced hallucinations or, in his words, “active imaginations” [and in my and my dictionary's words, “séances”, or “spiritualist attempts to communicate with the spirits”, which, using my Bible's **words**, was the direct means used by Satan to “communicate” **doctrines of devils**], from which he “recorded everything he felt [and “heard”] in small journals”, and finally “into a large red leather-bound book”, now called “The Red Book”, “on which he worked intermittently for sixteen years”, and yes, I mean since “his principal theories” were more or less, and by other reports ‘shouted’ at him by **devils**, we won't concern ourselves any further with his credentials, etc., in this volume, and be thankful that he must not so much have “greatly influenced the philosophy and teaching” of his younger contemporary, Dr. Velikovsky, who instead at least usually saw ‘similar global testimony’ as the result of ‘mutually experienced actual global events’.

And moving on to more ‘similar global testimony’ about The Flood,

In pre-Columbian America the story of a universal flood was very persistent; the first world-age was called Atonatiuh, or the age that was brought to its end by a universal deluge. This is written and illustrated in the ancient codices of the Mexicans and was narrated to the Spaniards who came to the New Continent [Cf. the *Vatican Codex*, first published by Humboldt, and the accounts of Ixtlilxochitl and Veytia among others.]. The natives of Australia, Polynesia, and Tasmania, discovered in the seventeenth century, related almost identical traditions.

[Cf. A. C. Caillot, *Mythes, legendes, et traditions des Polynesiens [Myths, Legends, and Traditions of the Polynesians]* (Paris,1914); Sir Henry Hoyle Howorth, KCIE, FRS, [late 19th/early 20th Century “British Conservative politician, barrister and amateur historian and geologist”], *The Mammoth and the Flood* (London,1887), pp.455 ff.]

And evidently A. C. Caillot is also known as Eugène Caillot, late 19th/early 20th Century, French operatic composer, explorer and historian specializing in Polynesia, who, (as I translate it),

...studied at the Conservatoire de Paris... [and] at the Museum of Natural History and... [afterward] traveled to Japan... [and] around the world... [where he] visited Tahiti, the Tuamotu and the Marquesas Islands, and gathered important documents enabling him to publish in 1909 his first

books on the history of Polynesia. Noting the decline of Polynesian culture due to contact with Europeans, he condemned the colonial system.

[After becoming a] Gold medalist of the Paris Geography Society after this first trip around the world, he returned to the Pacific... He conducted research, collected ethnographic material and took many photographs. He devoted his next works to the myths, legends and traditions of Polynesia.

His collections have been preserved since 1949 at the Musée de l'Homme [[Museum of Man](#)].

Meanwhile, on the other side of the World from Polynesia,

Clay tablets with inscriptions concerning the early ages and the deluge were found in Mesopotamia. Their similarity to the biblical account, and to the story of the Chaldean priest Berosus, who lived in the Hellenistic age, caused a great sensation at the end of the last century and the beginning of the current one. On this sensational discovery was based the sensational pamphlet *Babel und Bibel* [[Babel and Bible](#)] by Friedrich Delitsch (1902) who tried to show in it that the Hebrews had simply borrowed this story, along with many others, from the Babylonian store of legends. [Berosus' story of the Deluge is quoted in Eusebius' *Praeparatio Evangelica*, Bk. IX, ch.12, and in Cyril's *Contra Julianum* [[Against Julian](#)], Bk. I.]

The name Berosus was "possibly derived from Akkadian", *Bēl-rē'u-šū*, "Bel is his shepherd", where Bel too is synonymous with *Baal* or *El*, meaning 'Lord'. And besides being a "Hellenistic-era Babylonian writer", he was "a priest of Bel Marduk [Lord Jupiter] and astronomer who wrote in the Koine Greek language, and who was active at the beginning of the 3rd century BC..."

Cyril (Bishop) of Jerusalem was a 4th Century "distinguished theologian of the Church", who evidently wrote lots of liturgy, and evidently fought a lot with the Roman Emperor Julian too.

And I think Dr. Velikovsky rightly concludes...

But if here and there the story of the flood could be said to have been borrowed by the scriptural writer from the Babylonians, and by some natives from the missionaries, in other cases no such explanation could be offered. The indigenous [[read, 'local'](#)] character of the stories in many regions of the world makes the borrowing theory seem very fragile. Geologists see vestiges of diluvial rains all over the world; folklorists hear the story of a universal flood wherever folklore is collected; historians read of a universal flood in American manuscripts, in Babylonian clay tablets and in the annals of practically all cultured peoples. But the climatologists make it very clear that even should the entire water content of the atmosphere pour down as rain, the resulting flood could not have covered even the lowland

slopes, far less the peaks of the mountains, as all accounts insist that this deluge did.

And Dr. Velikovsky seems to be implying here that there could not have been a 'global flood', but instead that the **'sloshing and pushing'** of the *oceans* over *land* - because of the close proximity of a certain 'comet' to the Earth - may have made it seem like one. But remember that Dr. Velikovsky believes that water actually came from the sky too, just from much higher in the sky than I think, and that is, from Saturn, as he will soon explain. And certainly a global flood "could... have covered...the peaks of mountains", and not just by **'sloshing and pushing'** *oceans* of *water* over the tops of them, but by entirely submerging them all at one time, if you just **understand** that with only Mercury's **'pull'** you should be 'making molehills out of these mountains', and that with **'magnetically-sustained sky-water'** you should also be making **'cosmic-radiation shielded'** and otherwise **'enhanced' giants** out of the 'moles', etc.

But we are in the process of making the cases for both kinds of **floods**, and with this **understanding** we can benefit from the version of The Flood that Dr. Velikovsky chose.

William Whiston and the Deluge

The years 1680 and 1682 were years of unusually bright comets. Many pamphlets were printed, especially in Germany, on the imminent end of the world; at the very least, great catastrophes were expected. There was nothing new in such prognostications. In earlier centuries and also earlier in the seventeenth century, comets were regarded with awe and every possible evil effect was ascribed to them. Thus a scholarly author, David Herlicius, published in 1619 a discourse on a comet that had appeared shortly before, in 1618, and enumerated the calamities that this comet, and comets in general, bring with them or presage:

Desiccation [or **'withering'**] of the crops and barrenness, pestilence, great stormy winds, great inundations, shipwrecks, defeat of armies or destruction of kingdoms... decease of potentates and scholars, schisms and rifts in religion, etc. The portents of comets are threefold - great in part natural [or **physical**], in part political [or **secular**], and in part theological [or **hysterical**].

["Ausduerrung des Erdbodens und unfruchtbarkeit, Pestilenz, grosse mechtige Sturmwinde, Erdleiden, grosse Wasserfluthen, Schiffbruch, verenderung der Regimenten, oder verstoerung der Koenigreich... abgang grosser Potentaten und gelaerter Leute, Rotten und Secten in Religion, etc. Sind also die significaciones oder Bedeutungen der Cometen dreyerley, etliche sind Naturales oder natuerlich, etliche Political oder weltlich, etliche Theological oder gestlich." [translation above]]

David Herlicius [who I'll 'bio' in a bit] also quoted Cicero: "From the remotest remembrance of antiquity it is known that comets have always presaged disasters." [Cicero, *De Natura Deorum* [**On the Nature of the Gods**]: "*Ab ultima antiquitatis memoria notatum cometas semper calamitatum praenuntios fuisse.*" The

Pythagoreans believed that great comets [or 'visiting planets'] appear at great intervals of time. Posidonius, Fg.131b, L. Edelstein and I. G. Kidd eds., (Cambridge,1972), p.123.]

According to my encyclopedia,

Pythagoreanism originated in the 6th century BC, based on the teachings and beliefs held by Pythagoras and his followers, the Pythagoreans, who were considerably influenced by mathematics and mysticism. [And remember supposedly "both Plato and Pythagoras were taught by Egyptian scholars".] Later revivals of Pythagorean doctrines led to what is now called Neopythagoreanism or Neoplatonism. Pythagorean ideas exercised a marked influence on Aristotle, and Plato, and through them, all of Western philosophy.

And from another entry I'm informed that...

From the thirteenth century, the work of Aristotle was adapted rather rigidly into Christian philosophy, particularly by Thomas Aquinas ["an Italian Dominican friar, Catholic priest, and Doctor of the Church", and contemporary of John Wycliffe, who "was an immensely influential philosopher, theologian, and jurist in the tradition of scholasticism", (read, 'scripture manipulation')], forming the basis for natural theology [entry: "Natural History"].

And my encyclopedia defines "mysticism" as "becoming one with God or the Absolute, but may refer to any kind of ecstasy or altered state of consciousness which is given a religious or spiritual meaning". And I presume that such 'metaphysical experiences' decreasingly involved genuine submission to any pesky '**planet**' **god**, and were more the kind where participants believed that they themselves were 'becoming gods'.

So this "marked influence" of "mathematics and mysticism" by Pythagoras on "Aristotle, and Plato", and on "all of Western philosophy", makes him an even earlier 'root' of '**science falsely so-called**' and '**self-idolatry**' than Anaxagoras, who was still a teenager when Pythagoras died, and evidently not yet in Athens, but still over in Ionia, which today is Coastal Turkey.

However evidently Pythagoras had a teacher too, and supposedly one who came from the same 'neighborhood' that Anaxagoras did...

Anaximander...was [a 6th Century BC]...pre-Socratic Greek philosopher who lived in Miletus, a city of [Greek] Ionia (in modern-day Turkey). He belonged to the Milesian school and learned the teachings of his master Thales. He succeeded Thales and became the second master of that school where he counted Anaximenes and, arguably, Pythagoras amongst his pupils.

Miletus was down the coast from Clazomenae, which is "now...Urla near Izmir", the "native town" of Anaxagoras, and both these cities were in the Ionian League, "a confederation formed... in the mid-7th century BC" of 12 cities, ("a dodecapolis, of which there were many others"), that "were listed by Herodotus". Mostly on the coast of present day Turkey, but also on islands off the coast in the Aegean and Mediterranean Seas, these cities being full of the Greeks who about a century earlier had fled Greece about the time of The 1st Visit of Mars.

And Thales of Miletus was a late 7th/early 6th Century BC "pre-Socratic Greek/Phoenician philosopher, mathematician and astronomer from Miletus...

(present-day Milet in Turkey)", who was "one of the Seven Sages of Greece", or one of "seven early-6th-century BC philosophers, statesmen, and law-givers who were renowned in the following centuries for their wisdom".

But instead of going into the rest of these 7 'wise guys', I'm instead jumping back several centuries to one of the real ones, Moses, who was used by God to really 'reset' the World, and who evidently – like Pythagoras and Plato, and the rest of these 'wise guys' – **was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians** too. And I mean yes, God's various 'resets' of the World were needed, and each time slowed down Satan's progress, but evidently '**self-idolatry insiders**' continued to be raised up, including after The Visits of Venus and Mars, and to this day. And evidently since The Visits of Venus the 'credit' should go to **the wisdom of the Egyptians**, or "Egyptian scholars", though now it more often goes to 'Greek scholars' such as Pythagoras, Socrates, Plato and Aristotle. But of course the 'credit' doesn't really belong to "Egyptian scholars", but to Satan, whose latest primary strategy should have 'sprouted' not too long after he realized that no more '**trouble-making planet-gods**' were coming back for the 'foreseeable' future, which would be not too long after The Visit of Mars, or about when those 'seven Greek wise guys' started '**foolishly professing themselves to be wise**'.

And speaking of just one more '**foolishly professing wise guy**', Posidonius,

...meaning "of Poseidon" [or "of Neptune"]... [either] of Apameia [his birthplace in Syria]... or of

Rhodes [an island off the southern coast of Turkey where he landed after his 'dust up' with the Stoics of Athens for choosing to follow Plato and Aristotle's 'less stoical' teachings]... was a [late 2nd/early 1st Century BC] Greek...philosopher, politician [- Rhodes being the capital of a '12-island confederation' where he "attained the highest public office as one of the Prytaneis ["presidents"]... [and he] served as an ambassador to Rome"], astronomer, geographer, historian and teacher...

He was acclaimed as the greatest polymath of his age. His vast body of work exists today only in fragments [kind of like his own **body** does now, and how he must wish his **spirit** did too].

Writers such as Strabo and Seneca provide most of the information, from history, about his life. [And we'll metaphorically temporarily 'defragment' Seneca shortly and Strabo later.]

And finally getting back to those 'stellar' examples of 'what goes around comes around'...

The fear and even horror caused by the comet of 1680 was just beginning to calm down when in 1682 another great comet appeared.

Edmund [or Edmond] Halley [FRS, "an English astronomer, geophysicist, mathematician, meteorologist, and physicist... [and] the second Astronomer Royal in Britain"] was twenty-six years old when this comet of 1682 appeared. He had experience in astronomical observations and calculations, having spent time on the island of St. Helena, cataloguing there 341 southern stars; he had observed the transit of Mercury [across the Sun], and made pendulum observations. Now he calculated the orbit of the comet of 1682, and predicted its return in 1759. Actually, the periodicity of comets was not first discovered by Halley. The ancient authors knew that

comets have their time of revolution. Seneca wrote in his treatise *De Cometis* - in some respects still the most advanced discussion of this subject - that the Chaldeans counted the comets among the planets [because they witnessed or had ancient testimony of the comets Mercury, Venus and Mars becoming planets, not to mention there must have been even more ancient testimony - from before the water canopy lens came down - of "comets" being 'swallowed' or becoming moons too]. [*Quaestiones Naturales* IV.1. The same opinion was ascribed to Hippocrates.] A comet with a periodicity of about 70 years was known to the rabbis. [In the second century of this era, Rabbi Joshua said "There is a star which appears every 70 years and misleads the captains of boats." It has been suggested that this statement is a reference to Halley's comet.(W. M. Feldman [?], *Rabbinical Mathematics and Astronomy* (New York,1931), pp.11, 216.)

Seneca, and that is...

Seneca the Younger, [as opposed to his father, "Seneca the Elder"], fully Lucius Annaeus Seneca and also known simply as Seneca... [who was born very near the time Jesus], was a Roman Stoic philosopher, statesman, dramatist [or playwright], and - in one work - humorist of the Silver Age of Latin literature [otherwise known as "the Imperial Latin period", "from the death of Augustus to the death of Trajan", a period that spans most the 1st and the early 2nd Century]. As a tragedian, he is best-known for his [plays] *Medea* [whose father, King Aetes, was thought to be the son of the sun god Helios, who was "the son of the Titan Hyperion", who was "the son of Uranus", but as "time passed, Helios was increasingly identified with the god of light, Apollo", son of Zeus] and *Thyestes* [to be bio'ed shortly - and hereafter "to be bio'ed" will be abbreviated, *tbb*].

He [Seneca] was a tutor and later advisor to emperor Nero. He was forced to take his own life for alleged complicity in the Pisonian conspiracy to assassinate Nero. [This "conspiracy" was named for its leader, "Roman senator" Gaius Calpurnius Piso, and was an assassination "plot" which "reflected the growing discontent among the ruling class of the Roman state with Nero's increasingly despotic leadership, and as a result is a significant event on the road towards his eventual suicide and the chaos of the Year of Four Emperors which followed."] However, some sources state that he [Seneca] may have been innocent.

Dr. Hippocrates, or...

Hippocrates of Kos..., also known as Hippocrates II, was a [late 5th/early 4th Century BC] Greek physician of the Age of Pericles (Classical Greece), and is considered one of the most outstanding figures in the history of medicine. He is referred to as the "Father of Modern Medicine" in recognition of his lasting contributions to the field as the founder of the Hippocratic School of Medicine. This intellectual school revolutionized medicine in ancient Greece, establishing it as a discipline distinct from other fields with which it had traditionally been associated (theurgy [- "a system of beneficent magic practiced by the Egyptian Platonists and others",] and philosophy), thus establishing medicine as a profession.

However, the achievements of the writers of the Corpus, the practitioners of Hippocratic

medicine, and the actions of Hippocrates himself were often commingled; thus very little is known about what Hippocrates actually thought, wrote, and did. Hippocrates is commonly portrayed as the paragon of the ancient physician, and credited with coining the Hippocratic Oath, still relevant and in use today. He is also credited with greatly advancing the systematic study of clinical medicine, summing up the medical knowledge of previous schools, and prescribing practices for physicians through the Hippocratic Corpus and other works.

But look, it's Halley's Comet !

Nevertheless, only little aware of the works of the ancients, the modern world acclaimed Halley to be the discoverer of the periodicity of comets; however, this acclaim came only after his prognostication realized itself. The comet of 1682, or Halley's comet, returned in 1759. It came somewhat retarded [being *perturbed*] on account of its passage near the planets Jupiter and Saturn. This delay had been calculated, though not quite accurately, by Halley. On the grave of Halley these words are engraved: "Under this marble peacefully rests... Edmundus Halleus, LL.D., unquestionably the greatest astronomer of his age."

But when Halley offered his theory of the periodicity of comets, and of the return of the observed comet after seventy-five years [where apparently the best calculations today give it an "orbital period...[that] has varied between 74-79 years"], this theory was not received immediately with enthusiasm. Yet in the mind of a contemporary mathematician [yes, William Whiston] the idea of a periodic return of comets was the beginning of a broadly-developed theory of the origin of the world and of the nature of the deluge.

William Whiston, born in 1667, published in 1696 his *New Theory of the Earth*. In this book he claimed that the comet of 1682 was of a 575 & half year periodicity [1682 and not 1680? If so, we must assume those *perturbations* by Jupiter and Saturn reduced its *periodicity* from 575 ½ to just 75 years, and the following dates do agree with the year 1682]; that the same comet had appeared in February of 1106, in +531 in the consulate of Lampadius and Orestes, and in September of -44, the year of [Julius] Caesar's assassination. [The 575 & half year periodicity of the comet of 1682 [again, apparently not 1680], and its previous returns beginning in -44, were first proposed by Halley and accepted by Newton (*Philosophiae Naturalis Principia Mathematica* [*Mathematical Principles of Natural Philosophy*] third ed., 1726, Book III, Proposition XLI, Problem XXI).]...

...Whiston further asserted that this comet had met the earth in -2346, and caused the Deluge. [*The Cause of the Deluge Demonstrated*, being an Appendix to the 2nd edition of the *New Theory of the Earth*" (London, 1708). Whiston changed the date calculated by the earlier cometographers so as to have a multiple of 575 ½ years. David Rockenbach [- though Dr. Velikovsky must mean Abraham Rockenbach, *tbb* next section], Seth Calvisius, and Christopher Helvicus had fixed the date [of The Flood] at -2292, and Henricus Eckstormius and David Herlicius at -2312.]

As I translate it, Seth Calvisius or Sethus Calvisius was a late 16th/early 17th Century German "composer, music theorist and cantor ["an official whose duty is to lead the

singing in a cathedral or in a collegiate or parish church"] in Schulpforta and Leipzig, as well as an astronomer and a mathematician", who "begged and earned by church service his financial resources to study", and finally "received a scholarship... and went to the University of Leipzig in 1580", where "he studied mathematics, chronology, astronomy and... music..." Ultimately he declined "a professorship for mathematics at the University of Wittenberg in 1611 and a professorship at the University of Frankfurt/Oder", and "remained in Leipzig" where "he also maintained friendly relations with great figures of his time, such as Johannes Kepler".

The famous late 16th/early 17th Century "German mathematician, astronomer, and astrologer", Johannes Kepler, "best known for his laws of planetary motion", and who inspired Sir Isaac's "laws of gravitation", and whose invention of the "Keplerian [*refracting*] telescope" was evidently helpful to his contemporary Galileo, and who was that 'most valuable assistant' to that 'unrivaled star-charter' in Prague, Tycho Brahe, (except of course there were those later two other Germans in England, and I mean that other arguably 'most valuable assistant' to her also arguably 'unrivaled star-charter' brother). And kind of like Galileo's conflicts with the Catholic Church, Johannes had his with the "Lutheran Church", where finally,

...he was excluded from Eucharist [which remember Martin wouldn't give up, and which I described in the last study as "the chowing down on the Lord's body and blood"], by his Lutheran church over his theological scruples [but really more likely "over" his '**cutting-edge increased knowledge**', and kind of like you and I should expect to experience]. It was also during his time in Linz that Kepler had to deal with the accusation and ultimate verdict of witchcraft against his mother Katharina in the Protestant town of Leonberg. That blow happening only a few years after Kepler's excommunication is not seen as a coincidence but as a symptom of the full-fledged assault waged by the Lutherans against Kepler.

'Cylindrical groundwater aperture', (uh-huh, read, 'O well'). However today,

Kepler is honored together with Nicolaus Copernicus [- the famous late 15th/early 16th Century "mathematician and astronomer" who "formulated" a *heliocentric model of the universe*,] with a feast day on the liturgical calendar of the Episcopal Church (USA) on May 23 [and the Episcopal Church still practices the "Eucharist" too].

Christopher Helvicus or Christoph Helvig or Helwig lived in the late 16th/early 17th Centuries too, and was a "German chronologist and historian, theologian and linguist..." who "studied at the University of Marburg", was "professor of Greek and Oriental languages and of theology at the University of Giessen", (which is "among the oldest institutions of higher educations in the German-speaking world"), and he "remained an authority cited well into the eighteenth century".

Another late 16th/early 17th Century German, Henricus Eckstormius or Heinrich Eckstorm was, (again as I translate it), a "priest and rector" (or 'dean'), educated at "the University of Wittenberg, the University of Jena and the University of Leipzig. In addition to studying the arts, he completed theological studies... His work was mainly concerned with history and astronomy".

David Herlicius or Herlitzius or Herlitz, (who "a bit" ago I promised to get to, and yet again, as I translate it), was a late 16th-mid 17th Century "German mathematician, physician, historian and Latin poet", who "attended the University

of Wittenberg, then moved to the University of Leipzig and moved to the University of Rostock”, and afterward “became a rector” and/or “professor of mathematics” and/or “physics” and/or “Doctor of Medicine”, etc., at various universities. He also “established...[medical] practice[s] and made a name for himself as a medical and mathematical writer”. In addition he wrote “a yearly calendar since 1590, sometimes several editions per year in different content orientations, in Stettin, Magdeburg, Wittenberg, Frankfurt a. d. Or [or Frankfurt/Oder, “a town [and university]... located on the Oder River” in Brandenburg, this to “distinguish it from the larger city [and University] of Frankfurt” in Hesse] and Nuremberg until 1655... Several of his writings were devoted to astronomical themes, including direct guidance on astronomical phenomena such as eclipses and comets”. And he also was “commissioned to record the horoscope of King Gustav Adolf of Sweden”.

But given the way I ‘test the waters’, and intend to ‘rudder our course’, my ‘voyage’, ‘of course’, is instead ‘steering’ us to the conclusion that it was mainly Mercury that “caused the Deluge”, and not, at least mainly, “the comet of 1682”, though I’m open to the idea that it was part of the ‘team effort’, the ‘team’ being the Earth, the Moon, Mercury and Saturn, and this particular “comet” too. And I mean I don’t think a “comet” significantly smaller, or redder, than Mercury could have done the job alone. And you should already be able to list some reasons why, and beyond that, reasons why this “575 & half year” *comet* isn’t likely The Coming Red Planet either. But we’ll get to such other “reasons why” in due ‘periodicity’. Nevertheless remember that I too, in **SECTION 4**, and though using just **scripture**, place The Flood in the ‘ballpark’ of about 2300 BC.

Whiston found in classical literature references to the change in inclination of the terrestrial axis and, ascribing it to a displacement of the poles by the comet of the Deluge, concluded that before this catastrophe the planes of daily rotation and yearly revolution coincided [read, Earth was ‘barreling on it side’] and that, therefore, there had been no seasons. He also found references to a year consisting of 360 days only, and although the Greek authors referred the change [as corresponding] to the time of Atreus and Thyestes [- brothers whose father’s (Pelops) father’s (Tantalus) father was supposedly Zeus (or Tmolus, “King of Lydia... [and] son of Ares [Mars]”), though more likely these brothers were inspired by real ‘**angel-humans**’, and maybe were Egyptian, as Dr. Velikovsky’s work, *Oedipus and Akhnaton*, at least indirectly suggests)], and the Romans [“referred the change” as corresponding] to the time of Numa [Marcius, “first Pontifex Maximus of Ancient Rome”, or “the high priest of the College of Pontiffs” – sound familiar?], ca. -700 [which is during the time of The Visits of Mars too], [and] Whiston ascribed these changes to the effect of the Earth’s encounter with the comet of the Deluge [and not - as these ‘references’ indicate - to Earth’s ‘encounters’ with Mars]. Whiston [also] thought that the Earth itself was once a comet.

Whiston was chosen by Isaac Newton to take over his chair of mathematics at Trinity College in Cambridge when Newton, after many years, retired in order to dedicate himself to the duties of the president of the Royal Society. Whiston, like Newton, was a Unitarian [which is, quite ironically, “a person who maintains that God is one being, rejecting the doctrine of the Trinity”, thereby the both of them “rejecting” a doctrine evidently at least originally foundational to Trinity College]. He was also close to being a fundamentalist [- again, “strict belief in the literal interpretation of religious texts”, i.e., The Bible]. He

was certain that only one global catastrophe was described in the Scripture – that of the Deluge [as most back then were]. Of the phenomenon described in the book of Joshua, he wrote: "The Scripture did not intend to teach men philosophy [read, 'natural philosophy' or 'science'], or accommodate itself to the true and Pythagoric [which more or less means, 'scientifically measurable'] system of the world."

So here's another example showing that Satan was able to use men like Sir Isaac – we all get used sometimes – to change strategies, and that is, by hiding from him our 'catastrophic past' – except The Flood, which cannot be hid – so as to make *uniformitarianism*, then *evolution*, and finally '**self-idolatry**' more believable. And I mean if Sir Isaac opposed *catastrophism*, then...

It is [not really so] difficult to say what caused Newton, who selected Whiston as his successor [at Cambridge], to oppose Whiston's election to the membership of the Royal Society. We have another similar instance a century later, when Sir Humphry Davy, the mentor of Michael Faraday, conducted a strenuous campaign to keep Faraday from being admitted to the Royal Society, of which Davy was president.

However Sir Humphry seems to have been a jealous, inferior, rival 'electrician' to the comparatively 'positively electric', Professor, Dr. Faraday, and I mean it appears Sir Humphry was just resisting greater talent, while Sir Isaac resisted a 'radical' *catastrophist*.

But the very idea of a periodicity of comets, gleaned by Whiston from Halley, was not yet accepted. In 1744 a German author wrote: "It is well known that Whiston and others like him who wish to predict the comings and goings of comets, deceive themselves, and have become an object of ridicule by the entire world" [S. Suschken, *Unvorgreifliche Kometen-Gedanke [Unthinkable Comet-Thought]* (1744), p.8. "Gewiss ist es, dass Whiston und andere, welche den Auf- und Untergang der Cometen vorher sagen wollen, sich selbst betrogen, und vor aller Welt zu Spott gem-acht haben." [Translation above, and I'm guessing he was a 'Eucharist-chowing' Lutheran too].]

Still later Whiston was ridiculed by Georges Cuvier, himself a proponent of a catastrophist theory [though evidently trying not to stray too far from "Genesis", or as my encyclopedia puts it: "Cuvier attempted to explain this paleontological phenomenon he envisioned [including the "sacred immutability of species" – which would be readdressed more than a century later by "punctuated equilibrium" –] and to harmonize it with the *Bible*... [and he] attributed the different time periods... as intervals between major catastrophes, the last of which [he too thought] is found in *Genesis*"]:]

Whiston [who apparently strayed from Genesis according to Sir Isaac, Baron Georges, and most others of his time] fancied that the earth was created [or 'reset'] from the atmosphere of one comet, and that it was deluged by the tail of another. The [geothermal] heat which remained from its first origin [or from the first 'resetting visit'], in his opinion, excited the whole [surviving] antediluvian population, men and animals, to sin [or in other words, it caused The Fall], for

which they were all drowned in the deluge [in the next 'resetting visit'], excepting the fish, whose passions were apparently less violent.

Of course it would take a 'comet' of significant size - a *giant comet* - to produce significant enough 'mountain-raising', *geothermal* heat in the Earth's *crust*. And such a 'comet' could do so by strength of *atomic magnetic attraction* alone, and with or without at the same time dumping a lot of water. It would also take quite a *giant comet* to carry enough water to submerge the entire Earth - if Earth didn't have a *water canopy* - and even if the newly raised mountains were just 'molehills' compared to what Venus later raised. And such a 'water-covered comet' would also somehow have to have 'exploded' and/or 'collided' its way to Earth. So I'm thinking its not likely that enough *liquid water* to 'engulf' Earth was '**naturally**' carried by a 'small-planet-sized', 'volcanically-expelled', 'lava-blob', nor by a 'broken piece' from a 'shattered planet'. Are you?

And by-the-way, both 'a lava blob' that is 'volcanically-expelled' from a *planet* and 'a piece broken-out by collision' from one containing *magma* must naturally tend to become 'sphere-itized' *objects*, or *volcanic bombs*, and that is, when they originally are all or mostly *molten rock objects* that 'escape' into *space*, and while traveling through it, *cool* and 'crust-over' into 'spheres'.

Deluge and Comet

The idea that a comet heralded the Deluge was not new with William Whiston: it is found in several earlier [so far mostly 'Protestant-Reformation-influenced' German] authors, the so-called cometographers and chronologists of the seventeenth century. But they only described the appearance of the comet at the time of the Deluge as a matter of fact, and did not deduce any theory from it. No causal relation was seen: it was more in the nature of a coincidence. New in Whiston was [1] the identification of the comet of 1680 as the comet of the Deluge, and [2] the perturbatory effects on the position and motion of our planet, ascribed by him to the activities of the comet; finally, [3] his general theory that the Earth itself was once a comet.

Not 1682? So this suggests that there were previous errors, and that we may now assume that "the comet of 1680" was "the comet of the Deluge" and has always had a *period* of about 575½ years, while the one in 1682, Halley's Comet, always about 75 years.

And by-the-way, Halley's Comet is a *TNO*, with an *aphelion* (farthest distance from the Sun) just over 35 *AU*, and since it takes about 75 years to make its round trip, I'm thinking that - proportionally - a 575-year trip must have an *aphelion* in the ballpark of over 250 *AU*.

(This is algebra: $35 \text{ AU} / 75 \text{ years} = x \text{ AU} / 575 \text{ years}$, where we solve for x by cross multiplying, which is a 'math trick' for finding an unknown value in equivalent proportions. First multiply the numerator of the first proportion (35) by the denominator of the second proportion (575), then multiply the denominator of the first proportion (75) by the numerator of the second proportion (x), then set them as equal, and solve for x, where $(35)(575) = (75)(x)$, or $20,125 = 75x$, and after dividing both sides by 75, to isolate x and leave them equal, $x = 268.3 \text{ AU}$).

So this may be an *object* 'sent' by one or more '**curse-initiated**' *collisions*,

explosions and/or *perturbations* starting over 250 AU out. And apparently the Oort Cloud - which you might guess is the 'space debris' created by this farthest-out, '**curse-initiated**' destabilization of the Solar System - extends much further out than formerly thought, and certainly farther than I first thought. My encyclopedia now says that, besides the "disc-shaped inner Oort cloud", the "[supposedly] spherical outer Oort cloud" is "believed to surround the Sun to as far as somewhere between 50,000 and 200,000 AU (0.8 and 3.2 ly [*lightyears*])", which may be most of the way to Proxima Centauri, the Sun's nearest neighboring *star*.

The author whom Whiston names as his source was Johannes Hevelius [or Hevel or Jan Heweliusz, a 17th Century "councillor and mayor of Danzig (Gdańsk), then part of the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth", "an astronomer" who "gained a reputation" as "the founder of lunar top-ography", and who "described ten new constellations, seven of which are still recognized by astro-nomers"), [and] whose *Cometographia [About Comets]* was published in 1668. Apparently Whiston did not go further back to the sources of Hevelius: to Abraham Rockenbach (15??-16??), Seth Calvisius (1556-1615), Henricus Ecstormius, Christopher Helvicus (1581-1617) and David Herlicius (1557-1636). [Herlicius wrote in 1619 (*Kurzer Discurs vom Cometen [Short Discourse on Comets]*, etc.): "Man liest in den Historien dass im God. Jahr Alters Nohae, in welchem die Strafreife Welt mit der Suendfluth vordorben, ein Comet in der Fischen erschienen sey unter der Gubernation Jovis, welcher 29 Tagen alle Signa oder Zeichen des Zodiacs durchgangen, und aller Welt Erschienen sey ["One reads in the histories of God [in the Bible]: in the years of Noah, about when, in the midst of the flood, a comet appeared in the fish [evidently in the constellation Pisces] under the Gubernation of Jovis [or 'governorship of Jupiter'], which had passed through all the Zodiac signs [as the "messenger god"'], and appeared to all the world"]. Abraham [evidently not David] Rockenbach was a scholar of the late Renaissance, a man of broad interests, already evident from that fact that he occupied both the chair of Greek and of Mathematics at the University of Frankfurt, and later taught law and became Dean of the Philosophical College at that University. In 1602 he published a short treatise in Latin, *De cometis tractatus novus Methodicus [A New Methodical Treatise on Comets]*, and in it he had the following entry concerning the Deluge:

In the year of the creation of the world 1656, after Noah had attained the age of 600 years, three days before the death of Methusalem [or in the KJV, **Methuselah**], a comet appeared in the constellation Pisces, was seen by the entire world as it traversed the twelve signs of the zodiac in the space of a month; on the sixteenth of April it again disappeared. After this the Deluge immediately followed, in which all creatures which live on earth and creep on the ground were drowned, with the exception of Noah and the rest of the creatures that had gone with him into the ark. About these things is written in Genesis, chapter 7.

[Anno a conditu mundi, millesimo, sexcentesimo, quinquagesimo sexto, postquam Noa annum aetatis sexcentimum attingit, triduo ante obitum Methusalem, Cometa in duodecatemorio piscium, a toto terrarum orbe, conspectus est, quid duodecim signa coeli, unius mensis spatio percurrit, dicimq; sexto Aprilis die rursus evanuit. Post hunc, diluvium statim secutum est, in quo omnia viventia humiq; serpentina animalia, Noa excepto, reliquisque creaturis cum Noa in arcam ingressis, suffocata sunt. De quibus Genesis cap. 7 scriptum est [translation above].]

Rockenbach lived and wrote nearly a hundred years before Whiston. What were Rockenbach's sources? He did not let us know. He referred to them at the beginning of his treatise, claiming that it was based on information *ex probatissimis & antiquissimis veterum scriptoribus*—"from the most trustworthy and the most ancient of the early writers." We have already had occasion to quote from Rockenbach in connection with the comet that shone during the Exodus [*Worlds in Collision*, section "*The Comet Typhon*"]. There he refers only to Pliny [tbb], although he probably used other sources besides: [1] Lydus [no, not the one that was supposedly a mythological character, 'supposedly' because his grandfather, Manes, the first king of Maeonia, "was believed to be a son of Gaia [Earth] and Zeus", with Maeonia being the kingdom that was later renamed Lydia after its third king Lydus, this line of kings likely all '**angel-humans**' who likely lived closer to The Visits of Venus than Mars, but instead, *Johannis Laurentii Lydi*, or "John the Lydian or John Lydus... a 6th-century Byzantine administrator and writer on antiquarian [or "ancient"] subjects], [2] Servius [the late 4th/early 5th Century "grammarian, with the contemporary reputation of being the most learned man of his generation in Italy"], [3] Hephaestion [4th Century "nobleman and a general in the army of Alexander the Great", and his "dearest of...friends"], and [4] Junctinus [16th Century "Italian astrologer... author... theologian and mathematician", as well as "a medical doctor and the teacher of [the wife and mother of a few French kings,] Catherine de Medici", and also "worked for 20 years on his magnum opus ["great work"], "*Speculum Astrologiae*" [*"Glass Astronomy*", read, 'Mirror Astronomy' or 'Telescope Astronomy'], which contained the data and charts of the figures of his day", and he too] wrote about comets, and Servius mentions also the writings of [5] Campester [?] and [6] Petosiris [4th Century "high priest of Thoth [Mercury] at Hermopolis" when "under Persian rule", "located near the boundary between Lower and Upper Egypt", it being a "provincial capital since the Old Kingdom period... [which] developed into a major city of Roman Egypt, and an early Christian center from the 3rd century... [but was] "abandoned after the Muslim invasion" in the 7th Century].

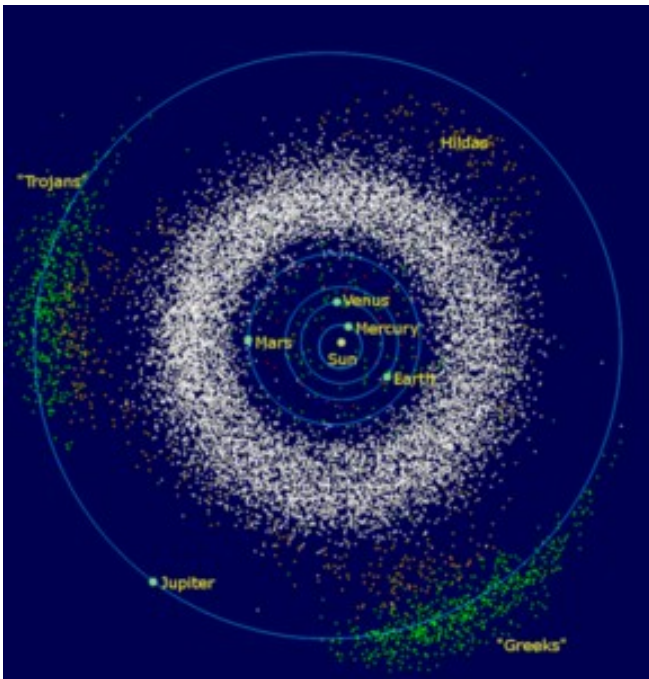
Although we may never be certain of the sources on which Abraham Rockenbach and other cometographers drew in mentioning a comet in connection with the Deluge, the great medieval rabbinical authority Rashi was probably among them...

["Rashi" is an abbreviation for Rabbi Isaac ben Solomon; he lived in the south of France in the eleventh century. His commentary to the Bible and to some parts of the Talmud is still regarded as the most authoritative in the field of rabbinical knowledge, which has great authorities in every one of the twenty centuries since the beginning of rabbinical learning. Till today Rashi's commentary is supplied to many Hebrew editions of the Scriptures and Talmud, with supracommentary on Rashi by later authorities added as well.]

...Rashi wrote concerning *Khima*, a celestial body mentioned in Job 9:9 and 38:31, and in Amos 5:8, that it is "a star with a tail," or a comet. In the Talmud, *Khima* is associated with the Deluge, and this seems to have been the source of the cometographers' assertion that a comet appeared in conjunction with that event.

The question now is, what was Khima, and what was its role in the Deluge? Was it really a comet as Rashi thought?

But I should remind you here that many 'broken loose' or 'volcanically expelled' *objects* in the Solar System that once were *comets* with *tails*, now don't have one, and that would '**naturally**' happen when all their *melting, boiling* and/or *burning* of their *volatiles*, (mostly of *water, carbon monoxide, carbon dioxide, methane* and *ammonia*), finally significantly subsides, at which point they become "extinct comets". And there are '**naturally**' various other attributes that *comets* sometimes share with *meteors*, and vice versa. For example, *comets* are thought to generally travel on their own, though Kreutz Sungrazers, (being a strong majority of all "sungrazers", and a third of all known *comets*), are 'exceptions', and though you

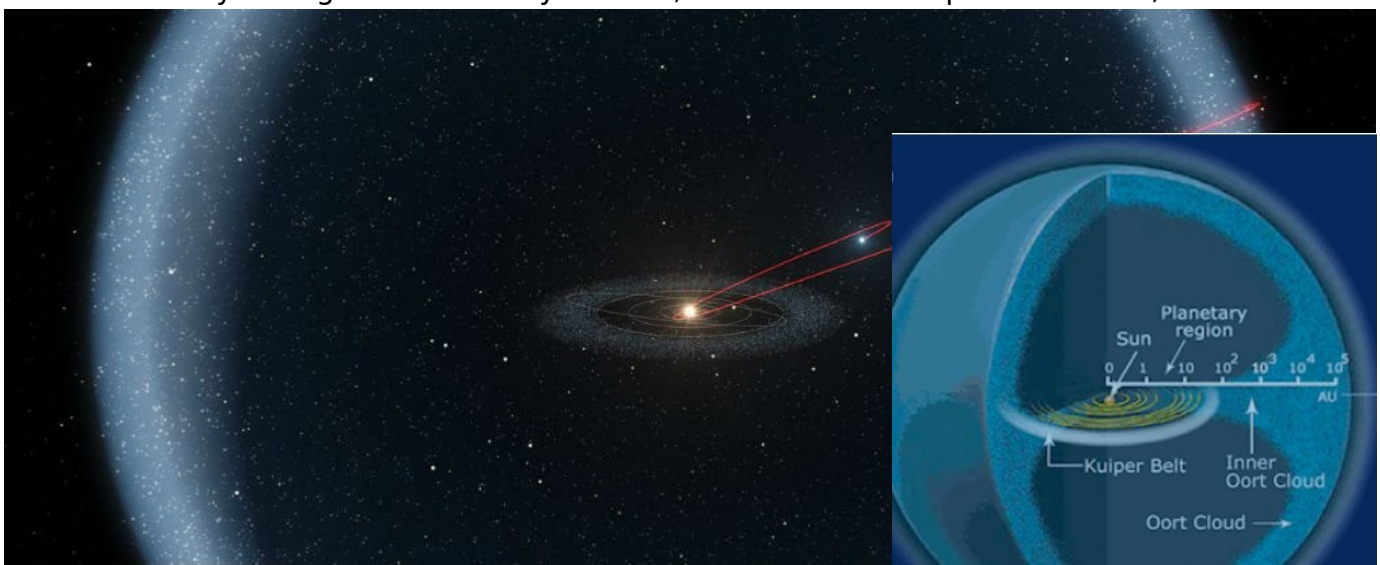


may remember that this 'group' is "believed to be fragments of one large comet that broke up several centuries ago", while *meteors* are more often expected to 'line up in formation', most commonly in *asteroid belts*, or in 'regiments' of "leading" **Greeks**, "trailing" **Trojans**, or the more 'out-scouting' **Hildas**, (the white dots being the Main Asteroid Belt, and the few red ones a "selection" of "**Near-Earth objects**", p.328), these 'groups' surely the result of major *collisions* where the pieces end up more or less 'sharing' the *orbits* of *planets* or *comets*, including the *orbits* of the ones now only existing in 'pieces'. By-the-way, there are also *meteors* in *belts* and elsewhere with "tails" which are now called *active asteroids*: "they show comae, tails, or other visual evidence of mass-loss (like a comet)".

And the Moon also has a "tail" of "sodium atoms [that is] too faint to be detected by the human eye... hundreds of thousands of kilometers long", as it "is constantly releasing atomic sodium from its surface", while "solar radiation pressure [or *solar wind*] accelerates the sodium atoms in the anti-sunward direction, forming an elongated tail that points away from the Sun".

And again yes, some *comets* traveling solo don't have *tails*, even when passing close to the Sun, in most cases because they're *extinct comets*, having "been around the sun too many times and... getting ready to fall apart". But there is now also what you might call a "rocky comet", which is "made up of solid rock, like an

And the Moon also has a "tail" of "sodium atoms [that is] too faint to be detected by the human eye... hundreds of thousands of kilometers long", as it "is constantly releasing atomic sodium from its surface", while "solar radiation pressure [or *solar wind*] accelerates the sodium atoms in the anti-sunward direction, forming an elongated tail that points away from the Sun".



asteroid”, and recently ‘recategorized’ as a “Manx comet”, (“after a breed of cat with no tail”). See the [artist rendering of a Manx comet](#)

where the ‘inner’ *asteroid belt* depicted is the Kuiper Belt, including Pluto, plus a depiction of what must be Halley’s Comet and its *orbit* mostly inside this *belt*, with all this far inside the “spherical outer Oort cloud”, the “inner Oort Cloud” not so clearly depicted except by *objects* apparently in it, (<https://www.sciencealert.com/astronomers-have-discovered-the-first-ever-comet-without-a-tail>), and to help you make even more sense of it see the [diagram of the Solar System](#) also on [p.329](#). And *comets* don’t all quickly “fall apart” when they’re mostly done *outgassing*. Mercury, Venus and Mars didn’t. And we’ll further confirm these *planets* to be former *giant comets* as we **continue**.

Khima [or *Kiymah* ^{H3598}]

In the Tractate Brakhot of the *Babylonian Talmud* it is said that the Deluge was caused by two stars that fell from Khima [or *Kiymah*] toward the earth. The statement reads:

When the Holy One... wanted to bring a flood upon the world, He took two stars from *Khima* and brought a flood upon the world. [*Tractate Brakhot* (Seder Zerafim) [\[or Seder Zera'im, "Order of Seeds", which "is the first and shortest Seder \["Order"\] of the Mishnah \[or Mishna, "to study and review"\]\], the first major work of Jewish law" that was "written by the rabbis to inform religious Jews what must be done to fulfill their biblical obligations of prayer and commandments about food", only partially included in the Babylonian Talmud, but entirely "included in the Jerusalem Talmud"\]](#) chapter IX, Fol. [[abbreviation for "folio"](#)] 59a, transl. by Maurice Simon [\[?\]](#), ed. by I. Epstein [\[?\]](#) (London,1948).]

I have already mentioned that Rashi, the medieval exegete whose authority is unsurpassed among the rabbis, says that in the quoted sentence Khima means a star with a tail, or a comet. This explanation found its way into the works of several gentile theologians [Cf. for instance J. B. Wiedeburg [\[?\]](#), *Astronomische Bedenken ueber die Frage ob der vorstehende Untergang der Welt natuerlicher Weise entstehen, insbesondere durch Annaeherung eines Cometen zur Erde werde before-dert werden. [Astronomical Considerations About Whether the World's End Would Naturally Arise, Especially by the Appearance of a Comet]* (Jena,1744), pp.80,157]. Should it be understood so that two large meteorites fell from a comet and falling on Earth caused tidal waves? Instances when meteorites fell while a comet was glowing in the sky are known, and the classic case is found in Aristotle. [The meteorite fell at Aegospotami, near the Bosphorus. See Spyridon Marinatos, *Two Interplanetary Phenomena of 468 B.C.* (Athens,1963).] Should a meteorite equal in mass to the one which by its impact formed the Arizona crater fall into the ocean, tidal waves of a wide spread would result, possibly circling the globe. Then are we to understand the Deluge as a huge tidal wave rushing across the continents [\[or as a 'push and slosh' kind of flood\]](#)? This picture differs widely from the story in Genesis, according to which water was falling for a long period from [\[windows and rain in\]](#) the sky [\[and rising out of 'the fountains of the deep' too\]](#) and [\[so\]](#) the

waters of the depths [for **forty days**] rose, covering the surface of the earth.

Spyridon Marinatos, a contemporary of Dr. Velikovsky, was a “Greek archaeologist” who...

...began his career in [the Mediterranean island of] Crete as director of the Haralson Museum [- “one of the greatest museums in Greece and the best in the world for Minoan... [with] the most notable and complete collection of artifacts of the Minoan civilization of Crete,] in 1929 where he met Sir Arthur Evans [FRS, FEng (Fellowship of the Royal Academy of Engineering), “English archaeologist and pioneer in the study of Aegean civilization in the Bronze Age”]. He conducted several excavations on Crete... all of which resulted in spectacular finds. In 1937, he became director of the Antiquities service in Greece for the first time. Shortly afterwards, he became professor at the University of Athens. He turned his attention to the Mycenaeans next, regarding them as the first Greeks. He excavated many Mycenaean sites in the Peloponnese

[“a peninsula and geographic region in southern Greece” where the Spartans lived]... He also dug at Thermopylae and Marathon uncovering the sites where the famous battles had occurred.

He was director-general of antiquities for the Greek Ministry of Culture during the Greek military junta of 1967-74 [read, “The Dictatorship”, a period when “far-right military juntas [dictators]... ruled Greece following the 1967 Greek coup d'état led by a group of colonels”]... The acquaintance he cultivated with the colonels who were in power in Greece, especially the leader... Georgios Papadopoulos, was ideologically based. Professor Marinatos was a nationalist in many regards whose ideals, some of his political opponents allege, influenced his archaeological work. Although no evidence of so-called “ideological influence” regarding his actual work (which was highly respected, and world-renowned to this day) has ever been proven, his political affiliation created controversy among his academic peers nonetheless, since most of his peers who had political affiliations with communists or criticized the military junta, were fired or legally persecuted... Eventually, Marinatos was fired too, by the... [next] dictator...

Sound familiar? And though his “work” is “highly respected” and “world-renowned to this day”, the reports about his death are strangely familiar too, being more like reports of how much more ancient figures died, ones whose “artifacts” he dug up. And I mean we’re told that he “began excavations... and died at the site... after suffering a massive stroke”, but in “...another version, he died during the excavation as he was hit by a collapsing wall.” Of course I’m thinking of the multiple accounts of how Cambyses and ‘Mr. Greaseball’ died, which was over 2 millennia before Professor Marinatos, who died in my lifetime, less than half a century ago.

The Tractate Brakhot so explicitly points to the cause [though not so much to the kind] of the Deluge that before classifying the narrative in Genesis in its entirety as folkloristic imagery (which in part it most certainly is [and which it must eventually fully embarrass Dr. Velikovsky for having once thought so]),

and also before following Rashi's idea any further, we ought to inquire: Which celestial body is Khima? Is it correctly explained as a comet?

In the Old Testament Khima is mentioned in several instances. In Job, Chapter 9, the Lord is He who "removes the mountains... and overturns them... and shakes the earth out of her place... which commands the sun and it rises not... which alone spreads the heaven... which makes Aish and Kesil, and Khima [!!!], and the chambers of the south..." In the King James Version these names are [mis-]translated [!!!] as Arcturus, Orion, and Pleiades. Chambers of the South are usually explained as constellations of the south.

Leaving nothing out, the KJV, in [Job 9:5-10](#), , reads that The Lord is He...

...Which removeth the mountains, and they know not: which overturneth them in his anger. Which shaketh the earth out of her place, and the pillars thereof tremble. Which commandeth the sun, and it riseth not; and seaeth up the stars. Which alone spreadeth out the heavens, and treadeth upon the waves of the sea. Which maketh Arcturus [Aish or Ayish ^{H5906}], Orion [Kesil or Kěciyl ^{H3685}], and Pleiades [Khima or Kiyimah ^{H3598}], and the chambers of the south. Which doeth great things past finding out; yea, and wonders without number.

And it is important here, (worth 3 exclamation points), to notice that God apparently doesn't **'make'** these 3 particular heavenly bodies – or groups of them – when He **spreadeth out the heavens** on The 4th Day, but evidently **maketh** them sometime later, because they apparently connect to later performed **great things past finding out**, and **wonders without number**. Also, (and worth 3 more exclamation points), we are about to confirm that these 'bodies' names are **'mistranslated'** in the KJV, not that any other translation gets it right, except in concept.

Khima and Kesil are also named in Job, chapter 38, here again in a text that deals with the violent acts to which the Earth was once subjected: "...Who shut up the sea with doors [barriers], when it brake forth, as if it had issued out of the womb? [[Verse 8](#)] ...[Who] might take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it? [[Verse 13](#)]..." The Lord asks Job [-evidently related to such "violent acts"]: "Canst thou bind the chains [fetters [or "bonds" or "bands" ^{H457}] of Khima [or Kiyimah ^{H3598}] and loosen the reins [or "cord[s]" ^{H4189}] of Kesil [or Kěciyl ^{H3685}]? Canst thou lead forth the Mazzaroth [or mazzarah ^{H4216}] in its season? [[Verses 31-32](#)]..." Davidson and Lanchester wonder at the meaning of this passage: like the King James Version they translate Pleiades for Khima and Orion for Kesil [[Professor Andrew Bruce Davidson \[late 19th Century "DD LLD DLit... ordained minister in the Free Church of Scotland and Professor of Hebrew and Oriental languages in New College, University of Edinburgh"\]](#)] suppl. by H. C. Lanchester [?], to Job 38:31 in *The Cambridge Bible* (Cambridge,1926)]. Mazzaroth is left untranslated.

In Amos, chapter 5 [[Verse 8](#)], once more, Khima and Kesil are mentioned in a verse that reveals the great acts of the Lord who "makes Khima and Kesil, and turns the shadow of death into morning, and makes the day dark with night: that calls for the waters of the sea, and pours them upon the face of the earth..."

Of course such '**axis-shifting**' and '**pushing and sloshing**' of **the waters of the sea**, where

God **poureth them out upon the face of the earth** would not have been reported by those drowned in The Flood, nor seen by the **eight 'shut inside'** the Ark who survived, but maybe by some on The 2nd Visit of Mercury, and surely by some on The Visits of Venus and Mars. But remember Amos **prophesied** or...

...saw [these coming **great things** and **wonders**] **concerning Israel in the days of Uzziah king of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash king of Israel, two years before the earthquake** [Amos 1:1](#).

Yes, **before**. So I'm guessing that his **prophesying** relating to this notable but then still **coming earthquake** - I'm guessing a result of The 1st Visit of Mars - must have happened, remembering the history we've already covered and doing the math, in about 778 BC. And I mean apparently Chapter 5, Verse 8, and other similar verses, are about **past wonders** God has performed, ones which evidently only **imply** that God's use of Mars would **cause** similar **wonders**, since at the time of this **prophecy** I'm guessing 'he' was still on the way for 'his' first **visit**.

However I'm also guessing that by then that Mars already had some 'pre-visit battles' - involving Venus - making Mars plenty 'notable' enough before 'his' first **visit**, though we won't really get to these 'recurring celestial encounters' till **SECTION 10**.

And some of the **wonders** promised by God through Amos to be coming - evidently beginning with that notable **earthquake** - included that God would **send fire** ([Amos 1:4,7,10,12](#); [2:2,5](#)), **tempest** ^{H5591} **in the day of the whirlwind** ^{H549} ([1:14](#)), and **cause the sun to go down at noon** and **darken the earth in the clear day** ([8:9](#); and for more character references, [4:13](#); [5:20](#))). But let's **see** where Dr. Velikovsky's analysis about these "violent acts" takes us...

Hieronymus, also known as St. Jerome, the fourth century author of the *Vulgate*, the Latin [or Roman Catholic] version of the Old Testament, translates Khima as Arcturus in one instance (Amos 5), as Pleiades in another (Job 38), and as Hyades in the third (Job 9):

	KHIMA	KESIL	AISH
Job 9:9	Hyades	Orion	Arcturus
Job 38:31	Pleiades	Arcturus	
Amos 5:8	Arcturus	Orion	

Similarly Kesil was translated by the *Septuagint*, the Greek version of the Old Testament that dates back to third century before the present

	KHIMA	KESIL	AISH
Job 9:9	Arcturus	Hesperus	Pleiades
Job 38:31	Pleiades	Orion	
Amos 5:8	not given	not given	

era, as Hesperus, or the Evening Star, and in another instance as Orion. Aish, trans-lated as Arcturus in the Vulgate, is rendered as Pleiades by the Septuagint:

Obviously the true meaning of these names was lost, because one and the same authority in various instances used different star constellations or planets for each of them: Kesil, Khima, Mazzaroth, Aish. Later interpreters groped in the dark; so Calmet, the eminent French commentator and exegete of the early eighteenth century translated Khima as Great Bear [the “Big Dipper”]. Others rendered it as Sirius (Canis Major [“greater dog” in “a binary star system”]). [Antoine Augustin Calmet [“a French Benedictine monk... born...into the Holy Roman Empire...in the region of Lorraine... was a pious monk as well as a learned man, and one of the most distinguished members of the Congregation of St. Vanne”, who in “recognition of these qualities... was elected prior ... in 1715, Abbot... in 1718, ...Senones Abbey in 1729” and “was twice entrusted with the office of Abbot General of the congregation”, and “Pope Benedict XIII wished to confer episcopal dignity upon him, but his humility could not be brought to accept the honor”], *Commentaire litteral sur tous les livres de l’ancien et du nouveau Testament* [*Literal Commentary on All Books of the Old and New Testaments*], “*Les XII petits prophets*” [“*The 12 Minor Prophets*”] (Paris,1715).]

And since it’s easier to find **abominable** [H8581](#): [G111](#): [G947](#): [G948](#) Catholics than ‘good’ ones, I’ll point out another one who Jesus might have included in the ones He would call, **my people**, albeit nonetheless **lost** inside **her**. I’m talking about Pope Benedict XIII, who evidently was...

Not a man of worldly matters... [but] made an effort to maintain his monastic [or evidently ‘inextrravagant’] lifestyle. He endeavoured to put a stop to the decadent lifestyles of the Italian priesthood and of the cardinalate. He also abolished the lottery in Rome and the Papal States, which only served to profit the neighboring states that maintained the public lottery. A man fond above all of asceticism [- “the doctrine that a person can attain a high spiritual and moral state by practicing self-denial, self-mortification, and the like” -] and religious celebrations, he built several hospitals, but according to Cardinal Lambertini (later Pope Benedict XIV) "did not have any idea about how to rule".

And as to the mysterious ‘characters’ and “identities” of these celestial bodies...

The interpreters were especially intrigued by the description in Job 38. The Lord asks Job whether he can bind the chains of Khima or loosen the reins of Kesil. "The word in the second clause [“loosen” - *pathach* [H6605](#)] is from a root always meaning to draw..." [*The Cambridge Bible*] Which star is in chains? And which star is drawn by reins, as if by horses? [Note: though in this case I agree *pathach* could mean “draw”, as well as also **loose**, in its 133 uses in the KJV it much more often means “open”, and near as often “engrave”.]

The identities of Khima and Kesil, Aish and Mazzaroth, were of lesser importance when it amounted to finding their meaning for their own sake

in the poetical sentences of Amos and Job. But such identification, especially of Khima, grows in importance if the quoted sentence from the Tractate Brakhot may contribute to an understanding of the etiology of the Deluge, as the ancients knew or thought to know it [- “etiology”, “alternatively aetiology or ætiology... [being] the study of causation, or origination... derived from the Greek... meaning, “giving a reason for”].

In *Worlds in Collision* I have already explained that Mazzaroth signifies the Morning ([and] Evening) star [Venus]; the Vulgate has Lucifer for Mazzaroth and the Septuagint reads: “Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth [yes, Venus] in his season and guide the Evening Star by his long hair? [Job 38:32?!]” I have already shown [- though we won’t **see** it till SECTION 9 -] why the Morning-Evening star was described as having hair or coma, and why Venus did not appear in its seasons. [But can you already ‘**rightly imagine**’ why?]

There’s a serious issue here I can’t avoid. [Job 38:32b](#), in the KJV, does not read, “... and guide the Evening Star by his long hair?”, but instead, **...or canst thou guide Arcturus** [“Aish” or *Ayish*^{H5906}, not “Mazzaroth” or *mazzarah*^{H4216}] **with his sons?** Still it’s true that Venus is known in myth and folklore the World over as having “long hair” – or long “feathers” – which was surely suggested by ‘her’ unusually long and full *cometary tail*, and which we will eventually much further confirm. And I mean despite this mistranslation of [Job 38:32b](#), I accept that *mazzarah* is Venus, especially since my lexicon tells me that this word is “apparently from [רַן \(H5144\)](#) in the sense of distinction”, and it means “to dedicate oneself, devote oneself” or “to keep sacredly separate” or “to be [or “live as”] a Nazarite”, which would include never cutting your hair. And not only does this apply to Jesus, you should also remember that he calls Himself **the bright and morning star** [Rev 22:16](#). Uh-huh, Venus is an ongoing symbolic and prophetic **sign** in the **stars** of a ‘type of Christ’, in this case that He is ‘the bringer of judgment to those who deny God’, but also ‘the bringer of deliverance and hope to those who fear God’.

But then who is “Aish” here? I could make the case for it being a ‘type of Christ’ too, in this case likely the one portraying Jesus as King, and beyond that I could make the case that The Constellations of the Zodiac are full of such ongoing symbolic and prophetic **signs** of ‘types of Christ’, and further the case that individual **stars** in the **heavens** are ongoing symbolic and prophetic **signs**—visible to the naked eye or not – of ‘types’ representing each of us. But the book by Dr. Joseph Seiss, *The Gospel in the Stars*, not to mention the presentation by Attorney Mr. Frederick A. Larson, *The Star of Bethlehem*, are better places to start for these ‘cases’. And for now, because we’re following Dr. Velikovsky’s analysis, our investigation is best directed toward uncovering how Satan has made many ‘**false religions**’ by **perverting** such **signs**, turning them from symbols of God’s plans for us into intimidating, controlling ‘**planet gods**’.

So taking the hint we have here – that “Aish” has **sons** – and since Dr. Velikovsky will account for Saturn otherwise shortly, at this point I’m thinking “Aish” is Jupiter, because otherwise this dominating ‘king’ *planet* would be – unexpectedly – left out of this conversation. Or as Dr. Velikovsky explains,

Apparently the other members of the group were planets, too. And actually we could have started by the disclosure [- yes, he ‘buried the lead’ -] that in the rabbinical literature Khima is referred to as Mazal Khima...

[Jacob Levy, *Wörterbuch über die Talmudim und Midrashim* [*Dictionary of the Talmudim and Midrashim*] 2nd ed. (Berlin, Vienna, 1924): entry "Khima."]

...In Hebrew *mazal* means "planet." Then which planet is Khima? If we can find out which of the planets is Khima, then we may know also to which planet the Talmud assigned the physical cause of the world inundation. As we have seen, the Biblical texts by themselves do not contain the means to determine which of the planets Khima and Kesil are.

Dr. Jacob Meyer Levy, another contemporary to the younger Dr. Velikovsky, "was an Israeli educator, historian, translator and writer".

Born in the Ukrainian village of Nesolon (then in the Russian Empire) to a religious Jewish family. At the early age of 12 he was studying at the Novograd-Volynsky Yeshiva (usually attended by much older students) but at the age of 19 he became an ardent Zionist and immigrated to Ottoman [Muslim] Palestine. In 1914 he enrolled at the Herzliya Hebrew Gymnasium ["a historic high school in Tel Aviv, Israel"], where he studied for two years (grades X and XI). In 1916, presented with the choice of becoming an Ottoman citizen [- yes, until World War I (July 1914 - November 1918) the Ottoman Empire still existed and controlled this region -] or being deported back to Ukraine, he chose the former and was promptly drafted into the Ottoman army and sent, along with his classmates, to officers' school in Istanbul [formerly Constantinople or Byzantium]. Following World War I he led a school for abandoned children, war orphans in Turkey. In 1925, after completing his studies at the Sorbonne in Paris, he was invited by the Jewish Consistory of Bulgaria to be the superintendent of the Jewish schools in Bulgaria. At the end of his term he returned to Paris to continue his studies and in 1935 received his PhD in educational psychology from the Sorbonne. In addition to education-related essays published in professional journals... he published short stories (under the pseudonym "Aaron Aharoni") in the most important Hebrew periodicals of the period...

Between 1938 and 1956 he was the editor of "Hachinuch" (החינוך) - the Pedagogy and Psychology quarterly of the Israeli Teachers Association and during that time he published many books, including "Israel Ba-Amim" ("Israel Among the Nations") - a series of history textbooks used extensively in Israeli schools, especially in the kibbutz movement. He was an editor of the Encyclopedia Chinuchit" (Educational Encyclopedia (אנציקלופדיה חינוכית) and published a series of teacher training books - "Guides" to elementary school grades.

...In writing his history textbooks, Dr. Levy's viewpoint was that studying historical dates is

less important than learning the *processes* that led to historical events. Indeed, in his series "Israel Among the Nations" one could hardly find dates, and history is told in a narrative, compelling way.

And I would say he stole this "narrative" style of 'history-telling' from me, that is, if he hadn't died a few years before I was born. But hopefully I'll nonetheless get the chance to falsely accuse him for this crime. I mean I don't think even Parisian "educational psychology" can keep one of

God's **chosen** from their place in **Abraham's bosom**, if you know what I mean.

And of course **if** "the Biblical texts by themselves do not contain the means to determine which of the planets Khima and Kesil are", 'next best' sources are available, one saying that,

"Were it not for the heat of Kesil the world could not endure the cold of Khima; and were it not for the cold of Khima, the world could not endure the heat of Kesil." This sentence is found, too, in the *Babylonian Talmud*, in the Tractate Brakhot [or "**Berakhot, Brachot, or Brochos**", *Op. cit.* [which means "in the work cited"], Fol. [abbreviation for "folio"] 58b].

Kesil means in Hebrew "fool [*Kěciy*]^{H3685} being "the same as" *kěciy* ^{H3688}]."

From the biblical texts it is not apparent why one of the planets received this adverse name, or, why, more probably, the word "fool" was derived from the name of the planet [S. R. ['Screw-']Driver to [Amos 5:8](#) in *The Cambridge Bible* (Cambridge,1918)].

In the *Iliad* Ares-Mars is called "fool." Pallas Athena [or Venus] said to him: "Fool, not even yet hast thou learned how much mightier than thou I avow me to be, that thou matchest thy strength with mine" [*Iliad*, Book XXI, line 400]. These words explain also why Mars was called fool: it clashed repeatedly with the planet-comet Venus, much more massive and stronger than itself. To the peoples of the world this prolonged combat must have appeared either as a very valiant action on the part of Mars, not resting but coming up again and again to attack the stupendous Venus, or it must have appeared as a foolish action of going again and again against the stronger planet. Homer described the celestial battles as actions of foolishness on the part of Mars. Thus Kesil, or "fool," among the planets named in the Old Testament, is most probably Mars [and yes, in **SECTION 10** we will see "described" these "celestial battles", and the otherwise "prolonged combat", wherein Venus and Mars "clashed repeatedly"].

In Pliny [next *tbb*] we find a sentence which reads: "The star Mars has a fiery glow... owing to its excessive heat and [opposite to] Saturn's frost, [while] Jupiter being situated between them combines the influence of each and renders it healthy" [Pliny, *Natural History* II. 34: "*Saturni sidus gelidae ac rigentis esse naturae... tertium Martis ignei, ardentis a solis vicinitate... hujus ardore nimio et rigore Saturni, interjectum duobus ex utroque temperari Jovem salutarmque fieri...*" *De Natura Deorum* II [[On the Nature of the Gods](#) 2], 46]. The heating effect ascribed in the Talmud to Kesil is ascribed by Pliny to Mars, and the cooling effect of Khima to Saturn. By this sentence of Pliny we are strengthened in our identification of Kesil as the planet Mars; it

corroborates the conclusion we just made with the help of the *Iliad*. But what is even more important, Pliny helps to identify the "planet Khima": it is Saturn.

Gaius Plinius Secundus,

...better known as Pliny the Elder [as opposed to Pliny the Younger, "his nephew"], was a [1st Century] Roman author, naturalist, and natural philosopher, as well as naval and army commander of the early Roman Empire, and personal friend of the emperor Vespasian. Spending most of his spare time studying, writing or investigating natural and geographic phenomena in the field, he wrote an encyclopedic work, *Naturalis Historia* [*Natural History*], which became a model for all other encyclopedias.

And getting back to these 'heated' or 'frosty', and in various ways interacting '**planet' gods**...

Cicero also wrote that "Saturn has a cooling influence," whereas Mars "imparts heat" [L. Thorndike, *A History of Magic and Experimental Science*, Vol. I (New York, 1920), p.43]. Porphyry

[yes, 'Mr. Pompous-ass'], an author of the third century, wrote similarly with Pliny and Cicero:

"The power of Kronos [Saturn] they perceive to be sluggish and slow and cold. The power of Ares [Mars] they perceive to be fiery."

[Plotinus [3rd Century, "major Greek-speaking philosopher... of the Platonic tradition", for whom "historians of the 19th century invented the term Neoplatonism and applied it to... his philosophy"], *Is Astrology of Value?* transl. by K. Guthrie (London, 1918). Similarly wrote the astrologer Dorotheus ["of Sidon... a 1st-century Hellenistic astrologer"] - see J. Haeg [?] in *Hermes XLV [Mercury 45]* (1910), pp.315-319. In Babylonian astrology the conjunction of the two planets was deemed favorable (J. Oppert, *Fragments mythologiques [Mythological Fragments]* (Paris, 1882), p.37.)

Julius Oppert "was a French-German Assyriologist, born in Hamburg of Jewish parents".

After studying at Heidelberg, Bonn and Berlin, he graduated at Kiel in 1847, and the next year went to France, where he was teacher of German at Laval and at Reims. His leisure was given to Oriental studies, in which he had made great progress in Germany.

In 1851 he joined the French archaeological mission to Mesopotamia and Media under Fulgence Fresnel. On his return in 1854, he was naturalized as a French citizen in recognition of his services. He occupied himself with analyzing the results of the expedition, with special attention to the cuneiform inscriptions he had collected.

In 1855 he published *Écriture Anarienne* [*Anarean* [Aryan or Semitic?] *Writing*], advancing the theory that the language spoken originally in Assyria was... related to Turkish and Mongolian ... rather than Aryan or

Semitic in origin, and that its speakers had invented the cuneiform writing system. Although... [this] classification... would later be rejected by scholars, research would confirm Oppert in his identification of the distinctness of the Sumerian language (as he renamed it in 1869) and the origin of its script.

In 1856 he published *Chronologie des Assyriens et des Babyloniens* [*Chronology of the Assyrians and Babylonians*].

In 1857 he was appointed professor of Sanskrit and comparative philology in the school of languages connected with the National Library of France, and in this capacity he produced his *Grammaire Sanscrite* [*Sanskrit Grammar*] (1859). But his attention was chiefly given to Assyrian and cognate subjects.

His account of the Fresnel mission and the results of his consequent study were published as *Expédition Scientifique en Mésopotamie* [*Scientific Expedition to Mesopotamia*] (1859-1863), with the second volume entitled *Déchiffrement des inscriptions cuneiforms* [*Description of Cuneiform Inscriptions*].

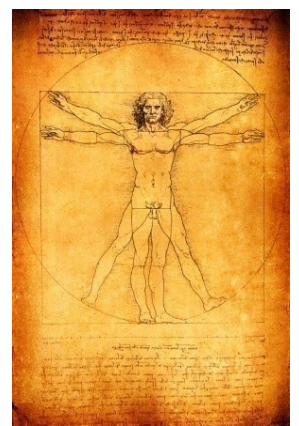
In 1865 he published a history of Assyria and Chaldaea (*Histoire des Empires de Chaldée et d'Assyrie*) in the context of new archaeological findings. His Assyrian grammar, *Éléments de la grammaire assyrienne*, was published in 1868. In 1869 Oppert was appointed professor of Assyrian philology and archaeology at the College de France.

In 1876 Oppert began to focus on the antiquities of ancient Media and its language, writing *Le Peuple et la langue des Médes* [*The People and the Language of the Medes*] (1879).

In 1881 he was admitted to the Academy of Inscriptions [- "a French learned society devoted to the humanities, founded in February 1663 as one of the five academies of the Institut de France",] and in 1890, he was elected to its presidency.

He died [for the first and hopefully last time, **God willing**, I mean since at the time he was apparently at least a JIHO ('Jew in heritage only')] in Paris on August 21, 1905. And it was that 'Pompous-ass'...

Porphyry's contemporary Plotinus [who] wrote: "When the cold planet [Saturn] is in opposition to the warm planet [Mars], both become harmful." [*De Architectura* IX [*On Architecture 9*, in English "published as [the 9th of the] *Ten Books on Architecture*], 1, par.16: "*Martis stella, itaque fervens ab ardore solis efficitur. Saturni autem... vehementer est frigida. Ex eo Iovis cum inter utriusque circumfitiones habeat cursum, a refrigeratione caloreque earum medio convenientes temperatissimoque habere videtur effectus.*" ["Mars star is heated up by the heat of the sun alone. Saturn... is noticeably cold. From this it has a circumference of Jupiter, and with the difference between their [Mars' and Saturn's] paths, he [Jupiter] appears to



have profited from cold and heat in the middle of these joined thermological effects.”] Other statements to the same effect are found in Vitruvius [footnote missing], and Proclus. [Proclus Diadochus, *In Timaeo* Vol. IV, p.92: “The Stars” iii.1: “Saturn and Mars are the extremes and in opposition to one another... one being the principle of cooling, the other of heating... Jupiter holds the center and brings to a happy mix the creative activities of the other two.”] [Cf. also Proclus’ summary of the system of Philolaos in his *In Euclide [On Nature or ‘On Euclidian Space’]*, I 402.21: “Cronos [Saturn] in fact sustains all humid and cold substances, and Ares [Mars] all the nature of fire.”] In these sentences, as in those of Pliny and of the Talmud, Mars is regarded as being a fiery planet, Saturn as being a cold planet. [The other name for Mars in rabbinical Hebrew – Maadim – signifies “red” or “reddening.” Mars has a reddish color.] [These astrological qualities of the two planets are described at length in Ptolemy’s *Tetrabiblos [Four Books]* II.9. Cf. R. Klibansky, E. Panofsky, and F. Saxl [all *tbb*], *Saturn and Melancholy* (London, 1964); also D. Cardona, “*The Mystery of the Pleiades*,” *KRONOS*, [- a ‘Velikovskiy-inspired’ periodical, “founded, with no apologies, to deal with Velikovskiy’s work”; its “wide range of subjects” including “ancient history, catastrophism and mythology”, and it “ran 44 issues from the Spring of 1975 to the Spring of 1988”], Vol.3 no.4 (1978), pp.24-44.]

Marcus Vitruvius Pollio, also known as just “Vitruvius or Vitruvi or Vitruvio” ...

...was a [1st Century BC] Roman author, architect, civil engineer and military engineer... known for his...[ten] volume work... *De architectura [Ten Books on Architecture]*. His discussion of perfect proportion in architecture, and the human body, led to the famous Renaissance drawing by Da Vinci of *Vitruvian Man* [drawing, p.337].

And the repeatedly cited Proclus Diadochus or Proklos the Successor,

...was a [5th Century Greek] Neoplatonist philosopher, one of the last major Classical philosophers... He set forth one of the most elaborate and fully developed systems of Neoplatonism. He stands near the end of the classical development of philosophy, and was very influential on Western medieval philosophy.

Philolaos, or Philolaus, though supposedly born in the same year as Socrates (470 BC), and contemporary to the younger Plato, is nonetheless considered a...

...Greek Pythagorean and Presocratic philosopher... [who is] credited with originating the theory that the Earth was not the center of the universe [- his version similar to the one ‘Nick’ Copernicus is now known for]... [maybe the best reason he is characterized as “Pythagorean and Presocratic” being that he is cited as the successor of Pythagoras.

And by the way, Classical (“Western”) Philosophy is generally considered to extend from as early as Socrates in the 5th Century BC to as late as the fall of the Western Roman Empire in the 5th Century AD. Medieval (“Western”) Philosophy fits “in the era now known as medieval or the Middle Ages [or, especially by Protestants, The Dark Ages], the period roughly extending from the fall of the Western Roman Empire in the 5th century... to the Renaissance in the 16th century”, with this “dark” period ending and Modern (“Western”) Philosophy obviously beginning because of The Protestant Reformation.

The passage in the Book of Job ([38:31](#)) can now be read: "Canst thou bind the bonds of Saturn and loosen the reins of Mars?" The bonds of Saturn [[its rings](#)] can be seen even today with a small telescope [[and apparently originally through the water canopy lens](#)]. The reins of Kesil I discussed in *Worlds in Collision*, section "The Steeds of Mars." The two small moons of Mars, Phobos and Deimos, were known to Homer [*Iliad* XV. 119-120] and are mentioned by Vergi [*Georgica[s] [or Georgics]* III.91: "Martis equi biuges" [["Mars' steeds"](#)].] They were regarded by the peoples of antiquity as steeds yoked to Mars' chariot. [[And we'll 'rein them in' much more securely than the fabled Lilliputians did giants, including being quite 'Swift' about it, in SECTION 10.](#)]

The *Georgics*, (Latin: *Georgica* or *Georgicas*), from "the Augustan period", otherwise known as "the Golden Age of Latin literature"...

...is a poem by Latin poet Virgil [[Publius Vergilius](#) [["corrupted to Virgilius"](#)] [Maro](#), "traditionally ranked as one of Rome's greatest poets", otherwise known as [Virgili](#), [Vergi](#) or [Virgil](#)], likely published in 29 BC. As the name suggests (from the Greek word... *geōrgika*, i.e. "agricultural (things)") the subject of the poem is agriculture; but far from being an example of peaceful rural poetry, it is a work characterized by [[antiestablishmentarian](#)] tensions in both theme and purpose...

...[*Georgics*] is considered Virgil's second major work, following his *Eclogues* [[also apparently including some antiestablishmentarian "tensions"](#)] and preceding the *Aeneid*. The poem... has influenced many later authors from antiquity to the present...

...The two predominant philosophical schools in Rome during Virgil's lifetime were Stoicism and Epicureanism. Of these two, the Epicurean strain is predominant not only in the *Georgics* but also in Virgil's social and intellectual milieu [[or "surroundings", including his friends](#)]...

...Epicureanism is a system of philosophy based upon the teachings of the ancient Greek philosopher Epicurus, founded around 307 BC. Epicurus was an atomic materialist, following in the steps of Democritus [[- the younger contemporary to Anaxagoras who was the younger contemporary to Pythagoras](#)]. His materialism led him to a general attack on superstition and divine intervention [[read, 'a general attack on the power and/or existence of planet-gods', uh-huh](#)]. ...Epicurus believed that what he called "pleasure" was the greatest good, but that the way to attain such pleasure was to live modestly, to gain knowledge of the workings of the world, and to limit one's desires [[which we may nonetheless identify as a 'step down' from Stoicism, and a perspective Satan could use and abuse to continue his change of strategies to 'self idolatry'](#)]...

...Beginning with Caesar's assassination in 44 BC and ending with Octavian's victory over Anthony and Cleopatra at Actium in 31 BC, Rome had been engaged in a series of almost constant civil wars. After almost 15 years of political and social upheaval, Octavian, the sole surviving

member of the Second Triumvirate, became firmly established as the new leader of the Roman world. Under Octavian, Rome enjoyed a long period of relative peace and prosperity. However, Octavian's victory at Actium also sounded the death knell of the Republic. With Octavian as the sole ruler of the Roman world, the Roman Empire was born.

It was during this period, and against this backdrop of civil war, that Virgil composed the *Georgics*. While not containing any overtly political passages, politics are not absent from the *Georgics*. Not only is Octavian addressed in the poem both directly and indirectly [as he was in *Eclogues* too], but the poem also contains several passages that include references and images that could be interpreted as political [read, antiestablishmentarian]... [and] it would not be inconceivable that Virgil was in some way influenced by the years of civil war [likely including "lost land as part of a confiscation" - "expropriated" for Octavian's "veterans"]. Whether... intentional or not... these references did not seem to trouble Octavian, to whom Virgil is said to have recited the *Georgics* in 29 BC. We can be fairly sure that if Octavian had been displeased by these references, they would not have been included in the published poem...

...[On the contrary, Virgil] became part of the circle of Maecenas, [Gaius Cilnius Maecenas being the "ally, friend and political advisor to Octavian", as well as] Octavian's capable *agent d'affaires* who sought to counter sympathy for Antony among the leading families by rallying Roman literary figures to Octavian's side. Virgil came to know many of the other leading literary figures of the time, including Horace [- also an Epicurean, and evidently the originator of "the Epicurean sentiment *carpe diem*", ("seize the day"), which might be called a 'secret handshake' of Epicureans and the like], in whose poetry he [Virgil] is often mentioned, and Varius Rufus, who later helped finish the *Aeneid*... [evidently because Virgil died before the *Aeneid* was finished, it being an "epic poem" that is "widely regarded as Virgil's masterpiece, and one of the greatest works of Latin literature", in which the "gods", no matter how hard they try, are portrayed as being no more able to influence 'fated outcomes' than the human characters can, clearly making one of it's major themes 'the futility of divine intervention'. Uh huh.]

So, reading between the lines, though publicly - to pacify the ignorant masses - Octavian pretended to commit himself to being a '**son of a planet god**', especially after his uncle Julius appeared to leave the Earth as a 'comet-star' at his funeral, privately, with his '**insiders**', Octavian was more likely an Epicurean, in his case a 1st Century BC and AD '**self-idolatry beastismist**', who, increasing since Epicurus and continuing in the line of Plato's 'know-it-all', 'dictator-type', "philosopher kings", led the then still mostly 'behind the scenes' and then still more subtle "general attack on superstition and divine intervention", which included rejecting the intimidation and control of the '**planet** gods, and instead fully pursuing "pleasure" as "the greatest good" - though in his case not likely by living "modestly" - and further than this, believing he was becoming a **god** as fast as he could "gain knowledge of the workings of the world", which would be a good strategy for making '**carnal souls**' into '**self-idolatry beastismist**', who don't know their **conscience** has been **seared**, and aren't aware that as a result **God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient**, and so **gave them over to eternal damnation**.

...Most of the literature periodized as Augustan [by-the-way] was in fact written by men -

Vergil, Horace, Propertius [- "a Latin elegiac poet", identified by poems of "serious reflection", and "a friend of...Virgil" that also "had as his patron Maecenas"], Livy [who "wrote a monumental history of Rome ...covering the period from the earliest legends of Rome before the traditional foundation in 753 BC through the reign of Augustus in Livy's own lifetime ...[and he being] on familiar terms with members of the Julio-Claudian dynasty", as he was 'loosely related' to Augustus' wife - and that is, men] whose careers were established during the triumviral years, before Octavian assumed the title *Augustus*. Strictly speaking, Ovid [- again, that 'modernizer of Greek and Roman myth', and thereby one of the 'tamers' of these '**roaring lions**', the '**planet**' **gods** -] is the poet whose work is most thoroughly embedded in the Augustan regime.

And now for Dr. Velikovsky's 'celestial punch line'...

The passage in the Talmud that makes the planet Khima responsible for the Deluge means:

"Two stars erupted [and/or were otherwise 'blown away' and/or 'redirected'] from the planet Saturn and caused the Deluge."

And along with such formidable research and deduction, you might expect that Dr. Velikovsky would have also guessed that this 'flood-causing' *comet* might have been the 'far-and-wide-traveling', 'highly worshipped', *blue planet*, Mercury. But what could we **see** without 'standing on his shoulders'? However the suggestion so far seems to be that one of these "two stars" that at least appears to have "erupted" from Saturn, and thereafter initiated "the Deluge", did so with just one pass around or by the Earth, and then "again disappeared".

And though we must acknowledge that these "two stars" may have actually "erupted" from Saturn, we should also admit that one or both may have instead originated much further out, and later got "captured" by Saturn, and then somehow got 'blown' and/or 'knocked loose' and/or otherwise *perturbed* by 'him', where evidently still later just one of these "two" is 'governed' or otherwise 'redirected' by Jupiter to Earth prior to its 'flood-causing' **visit** [H6485](#); [G1980](#).

And by the way, it makes sense to me that the most likely time that these "two" *eruptions* would occur, (if they were indeed 'eruptions'), was when Jupiter and Saturn - and likely other planets - were in *conjunction*, that is, *aligned* with Earth, and when for a brief time from Earth these two *giants* may have looked like just one **star** in the sky, or just very close to each other, because this is when their combined *forces* 'assisting' such *eruptions* would have been greatest. And I mean in such circumstances, if it appeared that "two *comets*" had "erupted" from Saturn, how could you really be sure they "erupted" from Saturn and not Jupiter? Or maybe each may have helped to 'pull a star out' of the other.

And whatever the case, bear in mind that these are isolated, limited, changing, and surely somewhat **deceived** [H5377](#); [H6601](#); [H7411](#); [G4105](#); [G1818](#); [G538](#) perspectives. And besides that it's all just 'hearsay', most likely originating with Ham's wife, and/or to some degree 'rumor-milled' from the accounts from Noah and the rest of his family, but also to some degree 'strategically adjusted' by our **adversary the devil** so he could 'spin it' to his supposed 'advantage'. And surely such accounts at best offer much less

than all of God's 'angles of perspective'. Still, and nonetheless attempting to add together all the 'evidence' available to us so far, we should at least suspect that some saw Mercury as an extension of the '**chief of the gods**', which evidently at the time of The Flood was Saturn. And I mean since neither Jupiter nor Saturn could have directly **visited** [H6485](#); [G1980](#) Earth, Mercury was likely confused and/or connected with Saturn, just like Venus later was with Jupiter.

Saturnian Comets

Before searching ancient traditions for any possible association of Saturn with the Deluge, let us notice that the idea that Saturn may have anything to do with the origin of some of the comets of the solar system is not without a theoretical foundation. A group of short-period comets carries the name of "Saturnian family of comets"; they revolve [or *orbit* the Sun] on ellipses that [at *aphelion*] approach closely the orbit of Saturn. A larger family of short-period comets carries the name "Jovian" and Jupiter is regarded as having something to do with their origin: their orbits [at *aphelion*] come close to the orbit of Jupiter.

The usual explanation for the Saturnian and Jovian families of comets is that they had originally traveled on extremely elongated [*eccentric*] or even parabolic orbits and, passing close to one of the large planets, were changed into short-period comets, traveling on ellipses – it is usual to say that they were "captured." However, the Russian astronomer K. Vshekhsviatsky of the Kiev Observatory, one of the leading authorities on comets, has brought strong arguments to show that the comets of the solar system are very youthful bodies – only a few thousand years old – and that they originated in explosions [as *volcanic bombs*] from the planets, especially from the major planets Saturn and Jupiter or their moons. By comparing the observed luminosity of the periodic comets on their subsequent returns, he found it failing [or '*dimming*'] and their masses rapidly diminishing by loss of matter to the space through which they travel; the head of the comet emits tails on each passage close to the sun and then dissipates the matter of the tails without recovery. Thus Vshekhsviatsky concluded that comets of short duration originated in the solar system, were not captured from outside of that system – a point to which the majority of astronomers still adhere – and that they came into existence by explosion from Jupiter and Saturn [or from Uranus or Neptune, or possibly from the *collision* that resulted in the Kuiper Belt and/or Scattered Disc, or – and evidently to disagree with Drs. Velikovsky and Vshekhsviatsky – by a *collision* or *collisions* that supposedly produced the Oort Cloud], and to a smaller extent by explosion[s] [via *collisions*] from [or of] the smaller planets, like Venus and Mars. [S. K. Vshekhsviatsky, *Publications of the Astronomical Society of the Pacific* Vol. 74 (1962), p.106 [\[http://iopscience.iop.org/article/10.1086/127768\]](http://iopscience.iop.org/article/10.1086/127768).]

And to be clear, it's not that I "disagree" that some 'volcanic expulsion' of *comets* by the *giant planets* occurred, and may occur again, it's that these good doctors seem to have overlooked the fact that these "rapidly diminishing" *cometary* "masses", as suggested when their "luminosity ... on their subsequent returns" appears to be "failing", and therefore suggesting "loss of matter to the space

through which they travel”, really only experience significant “diminishing” when they approach and leave the close proximity of the Sun, not so much when they are far from it. So I’m not sure why they apparently didn’t see that – no matter how long it takes – a *comet* originating from as far out as the supposed Oort Cloud would travel all the way into the Inner Solar System without experiencing any significant amount of *solar wind*, and that is, not until relatively very close to the Sun, and therefore wouldn’t be “rapidly diminishing” at all until its first close approach and pass around the Sun, at which point it would then be vulnerable to being “captured” on its way back out, especially by the *giant planets*, and especially if also significantly *perturbed* by one or more of these ‘big boys’ on the way in, don’t you think? Or to put it another way, *comets only* have *tails*, and experience their *atmospheres* and/or *surfaces* being significantly ‘blown off’ by *solar wind* when they are relatively close to the Sun. Outside the *giant planets* *comets* don’t have *tails*. Halley’s Comet at *aphelion* certainly doesn’t.

However if it takes 500 years for one that travels around 250 AU out to make a round trip, (like “the comet of 1680”), and therefore, (given an *eccentric* or ‘extremely elliptical’ *orbit*, and assuming similar average speeds for such ‘longer travelers’), travels a circuit of about 500 AU altogether, then the farthest out any of them could start and still reach the Sun before 6,000 AC – and that is, traveling toward the Sun from the beginning of ***the curse*** to the beginning of the Great Tribulation – is about 6,000 AU, unless of course their average speed was faster.

The math being: $6000 \text{ years} \times 500 \text{ AU} / 500 \text{ years} = 6,000 \text{ AU}$, the “average speed” here being about 1 AU/year, and if you round 1 AU to 90 million miles, (remember it’s actually 92,956,229.4 miles, the *distance* from the Sun to the Earth), and multiply 90 million miles/AU by 6000 AU, it converts this distance to 540 billion miles, the *average speed* then converting to 540 billion miles/6000 years, which reduces to 90 million miles/year, and when we multiply this by 1 year/365 days, (which is the same as multiplying by 1), converts this speed, (with more rounding), to about 250,000 miles/day, and when we multiply this by 1 day/24 hours, (again, the same as multiplying by 1), converts this speed, (rounding yet again, and if I got all this math right), to around 10,000 miles/hour, a few times faster than the previously cited “average speed” of our Solar System’s known *asteroids* and *comets*, but certainly, with longer distances to *accelerate*, possible, even to the point – leaving the math – of ‘pinching closed’, or otherwise just somewhat ‘muffling the beak’ of any goose allegedly doing any serious ‘honking’ against the idea of *objects* reaching us from our nearest neighboring solar systems. Just be careful with your fingers if compelled to perform such a procedure. And at least metaphorically, you will be.

In order [for a *comet*] to originate [or “erupt”] in this manner from a planet [and carry with it a substantial amount of *water*, and evidently mostly originally *liquid* because *liquid rock* would not likely carry with it any *ice*, and because *gaseous water*, or *water vapor*, apparently to some degree *magnetically repels* all other *molecules* and *atoms*,] the exploded mass must overcome the gravitational pull of the parent body [and it would also seem necessary that this ‘molten blob’ “must” be *ejected* from an *underwater volcanic explosion* in order for there to be the opportunity for an appreciable amount of *adhesion* of *liquid water* to it during such an “escape”, and that is, assuming there would be any appreciable *adhesion* at such speeds, and assuming such a *bomb* could “escape” the *planet* if originating *underwater*]; the larger the mass of the planet, the greater [and *hotter*] must be the initial [‘*volcanically-accelerated*’] velocity of the exploding [originally mostly *molten*] matter, [and that is, in order to reach] the velocity of escape [otherwise known as

escape velocity]. For this reason the idea of explosion of comets from the planets [and not necessarily ones that carry appreciable amounts of *water* with them] is preferred to the idea of their explosion from the sun. Due to the great mass of the sun the velocity of escape from there must be in the approximation of xxx kilometers [between 100 and 1000 kilometers] in the first second, and from Saturn only 35 km. But even these velocities are rather high, so that Professor Vshekhsviatsky acknowledged that there must have been unusual circumstances which he did not try to determine, but the existence of which he claimed on the basis of the effects produced, namely the short-lived comets reaching to the orbits of Jupiter and Saturn every time these comets [accelerate toward and 'whip around' the Sun at top speed, and then] recede [decelerating away] from the sun to their farthest points (aphelia [the plural of *aphelion*, an *object's* slowest point in each *orbit*, when it begins again 'falling back' toward the Sun]).

[Su-ma Chien, the Chinese historian (ca. -145 to ca. -80) wrote that the planet Jupiter, "if it is not in the place where it should be" may produce different types of cometary bodies. (*Les gouverneurs du ciel* [*The Governors of the Sky*], transl. by E. Chavannes). The origin of comets from conjunctions of planets [- when they were at their closest distances to each other -] was postulated by several Greek philosophers, among them Democritus and Anaxagoras. (Aristotle, *Meteorologica* [*Meteorology*] I, 6; Diogenes Laertius; Seneca, *Quaestiones Naturales*).]

And again, I'm not saying that some or most Saturn and Jupiter Family Comets were not "originated in explosions" from one or more of these *giant planets*, just that some of these 'family members' could have originated farther out, and later could have been "captured" by Saturn and/or Jupiter. And I am saying that none of them that were "originated in explosions" of *molten rock* likely carried with them enough *water* to entirely "deluge" the Earth.

And remember I have guessed that such "unusual circumstances" producing these "explosions" may include the 'pull' of a close-passing *object*, and maybe one in the process of being "captured", resulting in "extraordinary" *volcanic action*, though it now occurs to me that it even more likely happens by 'group efforts', and that is, *captures* during *conjunctions*, with maybe the accompanying assistance of previously *captured moons*, uh-huh, an event that is also more likely - but I should say, surely - **predestinated** (read in this case, '**planned**') by God. And just like - or just as surely as - this should now be happening to you, this is not an entirely new **revelation** to me. It's just a little more '**improved**' and '**expanded**', again.

And to give you just a little example of what this 'group effort' can do - it's called *syzygy*, (from the Ancient Greek...*suzugos* meaning, "yoked together"), on Earth it "causes a bimonthly phenomena of "spring tides" and "neap tides". At the new and full moon, the Sun and Moon are in *syzygy* [or in *alignment* with the Earth]. Their tidal forces act to reinforce each other, and the ocean both rises higher and falls lower than the average". So imagine what the Sun, *aligned* with two or more *giant planets*, and an *orbiting moon* or two, could do to the involved *giant planets*, and to smaller ones too - surely more than just cause *rising tides*, not to mention some serious 'squishy-brain lunacy', as well as help '**improve**' and '**expand**' your **revelations**, I'd guess.

The sentence in the Tractate Brakhot that ascribes the cause of the Deluge to the cometary bodies that erupted from the planet Saturn no longer appears as fantastic as when we first understood the meaning of

Khima in that sentence [though it's surely much more "fantastic" than Drs. Velikovsky and Vshekhsviatsky imagined, because it happened exactly as scheduled in God's 7,000-year Plan to specifically and precisely execute His both '*small*' and *great judgments*, etc].

The explosion of cometary bodies from Saturn and Jupiter is claimed on the basis of purely astronomical observations and calculations; the circumstances of such explosions must have been admittedly extraordinary [and likely involving some '*well planned*', '*timely*', '*group efforts*']; the time when this happened must be measured in thousands of years, not tens of thousands or millions [mostly because it's not quite yet 6,000 AC]. Will we also be able to establish with the help of collective human memory what were the extraordinary conditions?

But should we not first, as intended, place ourselves on firmer ground by showing that the statement in the Tractate Brakhot [or again, "**Berakhot, Brachot, or Brochos**"] is not a lone testimony unsupported in the traditions and beliefs of the ancient races of the world?

Saturn and the Deluge

Following the rabbinical sources which declare that the Deluge was caused by two comets ejected by the planet Khima, and our interpretation of the planet Khima as Saturn, we begin to understand the astrological texts, such as certain passages in the *Tetrabiblos* of Ptolemy, which attribute to the planet Saturn floods and all catastrophes caused by high water. [*Tetrabiblos* II. 8. 84. Similar statements may be found in Hephaestion [again, 4th Century "nobleman and a general in the army of Alexander the Great", and one of his "dearest of...friends"] I. 20.]

Ptolemy's already cited, *Tetrabiblos* (or *Tetrabyblos*), which means...

...'four books', also known in Greek as *Apotelesmatiká*... "Effects", and in Latin as *Quadripartitum* "Four Parts", is a text on the philosophy and practice of astrology, written in the 2nd century AD by the Alexandrian scholar Claudius Ptolemy...

Ptolemy's *Almagest* was an authoritative text on astronomy for more than a thousand years, and the *Tetrabiblos*, its companion volume, was equally influential in astrology, the study of the effects of astronomical cycles on earthly matters. But whilst the *Almagest* as an astronomical authority was superseded by acceptance of the heliocentric model of the solar system [when 'rediscovered' by Copernicus in the 16th Century - I mean I'm sure Adam and Enoch, for examples, knew it], the *Tetrabiblos* remains an important theoretical work for astrology.

And 'getting our feet wet', and apparently most everything else, plunging into such "astrology",

The planet's [that is, Saturn's] presence in Aquarius especially brought expectations of heavy rains and flooding [Dr. Auguste Bouché-Leclercq [late 19th/early 20th Century "French historian" and distinguished "professor of ancient literature", and *tbb* further later], *L'astrologie grecque* [*Greek Astronomy*] (Paris,1899), p.96 and n.1; cf. Karl Heinrich Johannes Geffcken [late 19th/early 20th Century German "professor at the University of Rostock, most noted for his edition [translation] of the *Oracula Sibyllina*"], "*Eine gnostische Vision*," [*"A Gnostic Vision"*] *Sitzungsberichte der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften* [*Meeting Reports of the Prussian Academy of Sciences*] (1899), p.699] as is attested, among others, by the first-century Roman author Lucan...

[Lucan [- not to be confused with that 2nd Century Greek "rhetorician" Lucian - was, "Despite his short life... regarded as one of the outstanding figures of the Imperial Latin period [again, the "Silver Age of Latin literature", "from... Augustus to... Trajan", a period that spans most the 1st and the early 2nd Century "], and whose "youth and speed of composition set him apart from other poets ", as well as that he was "one of the...close friends" of Emperor Nero, and author of the "Roman epic poem" *Pharsalia*], *Pharsalia*, [also known as *On the Civil War*, "a...telling of the civil war between Julius Caesar and the forces of the Roman Senate led by Pompey the Great"], transl. by R. Graves (London,1956), Bk. I, 11. 640ff: [in which Lucan reveals Saturn's 'character' writing,] "It is not as though this were the Watercarrier's month, and the cold and malicious planet Saturn had lighted his dusky fires aloft, thereby raising a truly Deucalionian Flood to overwhelm these lands", [Deucalion being, from "Classic Mythology", "a son of Prometheus who [supposedly] survived the Deluge to regenerate the human race"].]

...Many of the ancient astrologers were in agreement on this point.

[*Catalogus Codicum*

Astrologorum Graecorum X, [*Catalogued Manuscripts of Greek Astronomers* 10] 249, 2 ff]...

...In a work entitled *Speculum astrologiae*, Junctinus ascribes inundations to the action of Saturn's comets. [Junctinus, *Speculum astrologiae* [again, '*Telescope Astronomy*'] p. 317a. Cf. F. Boll, *Stern Glaube und Sterndeutung* [again, *Star Belief and Star Interpretation*], 4th ed. by W. Gundel [still ?] (Leipzig,1931), p.114]...

...Cuneiform texts contain prophecies of a deluge [or more specifically, "high tide"] taking place when a comet assumes a direction with its head towards the Earth. [*Die Keilschriften prophezien bereits, dass eine Hochflut eintritt, wenn der Komet diese Richtung [mit dem Kopfe nach der Erde] einnimmt.* F. Boll, *op. cit.* [means, "in the work cited"], p.114; Cf. Jastrow, *Die Religion Babylonien und Assyriens* [*The Religion of the Babylonians and Assyrians*] (Giessen,19??), Vol. II, p.696, n.1.]

Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr. has an unfortunate, though hopefully not eternally tragic story...

...born in Warsaw, Poland [no, not this part], and came to Philadelphia in 1866 [nor this part] when his father, Marcus Jastrow, a renowned Talmudic scholar, accepted a position as Rabbi of Congregation Rodeph Shalom ["founded in 1795... the oldest Ashkenazic synagogue ["a Jewish diaspora ['dispersed'] population who [first] coalesced as a distinct community in the Holy Roman Empire around the end of the first millennium... [and are] noted historically for its leadership of the Reform Judaism among American Hebrew congregations, [and] for its

["international"] spiritual influence..."]. He was educated in the schools of Philadelphia [and not really this part], and graduated from the University of Pennsylvania in 1881 [which, being 5 years before Dr. Rogers did, it couldn't be this part either]. His original intention was to become a rabbi. [And as you may remember Dr. Roberts ended up at Drew Theological Seminary.] For this purpose, he [missed meeting the future Dr. Roberts and] carried on theological studies at the Jewish Seminary of Breslau in Germany while pursuing the study of Semitic languages at German universities. He traveled to Europe and studied at the University of Leipzig, where he received his Ph.D. in 1884. He then spent another year in the study of Semitic languages at the Sorbonne, the Collège de France and the École des Langues Orientales Levant Vivantes [School of Levant Oriental Living Languages (where Levant means "the lands bordering the Eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea")].

On his return to the United States in 1885, he was appointed assistant to his father in Philadelphia, which position he voluntarily resigned after one year. His farewell sermon, entitled "Jews and Judaism" was generally understood to be a personal repudiation of traditional Judaism. [Uh-huh, this is the "unfortunate" part, apparently caused by his time at "German universities" including in Leipzig, in Paris, and likely also at his "theological studies at the Jewish Seminary of Breslau in Germany".] He went on to devote himself entirely to linguistic and archaeological studies. He gradually extended his field to include the history of religions. He joined the University of Pennsylvania in 1885 as an instructor of Semitic languages [when he may have in some way encountered the future Dr. Rogers during his senior year there], and became professor of Semitic languages in 1891. In 1888, he became a librarian at the University of Pennsylvania, becoming librarian-in-chief in 1898.

He was president of the American Oriental Society 1914-15, and [- alarmingly enough -] of the Society of Biblical Literature in 1916. He died in Jenkintown, Pennsylvania, in 1921.

And I have to ask, does someone like him make it into **Abraham's bosom** anyway? I can only **hope** so, even as I also **hope** that many **ashamed** Christians will enter God's Eternal kingdom, **yet so as by fire**, since after this brief '**trying fire**' there is an eternal supply of **living waters**.

And speaking again of 'waters', Dr. Velikovsky appropriately adds,

Philosophers of antiquity who were not astrologers also expressed their belief that Saturn is in some way related to moisture – among them the pre-Socratics Philolaus [or Philolaos] and Philodemus [or *Philodēmos*, meaning "love of the people", who wasn't one of the "pre-Socratics", or else he shared the name with a late 2nd/early 1st Century BC "Epicurean philosopher and poet"]. [Cf. Klibansky *et al.*, *Saturn and Melancholy*, p.138, n.39], and, somewhat later [than Philolaus], Plato...

[*Cratylus* ["an ancient Athenian philosopher from the mid-late 5th century BCE, known mostly through his portrayal in Plato's dialogue *Cratylus*... [who] was a radical proponent of Heraclitean philosophy [tbb shortly] and influenced the young Plato"] 402b.]

...The elder Pliny wrote in his *Natural History* that it is well known that heavy rains follow transitions of Saturn [and that is, “through the Sign of Sagittarius”, and evidently through other “signs” of the Zodiac too] [Pliny, *Natural History* II.106: “Igitur (sidera) in suo quaeque motu naturam suam exercent, quod manifestum Saturni maxime transitu imbribus faciunt.” [“Therefore (stars) in their own natural motion exercise their showers to make a clear Sunday best transit [from sign to sign [?]].”]...]

...Servius asserted that "Saturn is a god of rains... When in the sign of Capricorn, he causes very heavy rains, especially in Italy" [Servius, *Commentarii in Virgili Georgicas* I. 336: “Saturnus deus pluviarium est, unde etiam senex fingitur... Hic autem in Capricorno facit gravissimas pluvias, praecipue in Italia.”]

...

...and again [“Servius asserted”]: "Saturn is the god of all that is humid and cold."

[*Ibid*, I.12: “Quod Saturnus humoris totius et frigoris deus sit.” Cf. Pauly’s *Realencyclopaedie* XI. 1987-1988, where Kronos is described as representing rivers and water. The ninth-century Arab astrologer Abu Ma’sar wrote: “[Saturn] presides over works of moisture... lakes and rivers.” (*Introduction to Astrology*, Bk. IV, quoted in Klibansky *et al.*, *Saturn and Melancholy*, p.130.)]

...Proclus recorded the beliefs of the Pythagoreans: "Again, in the heavens, Ares is fire, Jupiter air, Kronos water." [Proclus Diadochus, *In Timaeo* 32b.] [In his commentary to Euclid’s *Geometry* (I.402.21), Proclus ascribes a similar conception to the pre-Socratic philosopher Philolaos.]

...Nonnos referred to "ancient Kronos, heavy-kneed, pouring rain."

[Nonnos [or “Nonnus of Panopolis... a Greek epic poet of Hellenized Egypt of the Imperial Roman era [the period from Octavian’s coup d’état in the 1st Century BC to the fall of the Western Roman Empire in the 5th Century AD]... [who] probably lived at the end of the 4th or in the 5th century... [and] is known as the “composer of the *Dionysiaca*, an epic tale of the god Dionysus [“god of... wine, of ritual madness, fertility [including sex], theatre and religious ecstasy [including orgies, etc.]”, and of the *Metabole*, a [surely Gnostic/Neoplatonistic] paraphrase of the *Gospel of John*”], *Dionysiaca* VI, 175-178.]

...Hippolytus wrote of the beliefs of a member of the Peratae sect: "But water, he says, is destruction; nor did the world, he says, perish by any other thing quicker than by water.

Water, however... they assert (it to be) Cronus." [Hippolytus, *Refutatio Omnium Haeresium*, Book V, chapter 11 in *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Vol.V. Hippolytus lived between the years 170 and 236.]

...We recognize that the astrological connection between Saturn and catastrophes created by high water has a very ancient origin.

And again, working backward on the *tbb*'s for no particular reason, Abu Ma’sar”, or...

...Abu Ma'shar, Latinized as *Albumasar* (also *Albusar*, *Albuxar* [etc.]...) was an early Persian Muslim astrologer, thought to be the greatest astrologer of the Abbasid court in Baghdad. While he was not a major innovator, his practical manuals for training astrologers profoundly influenced Muslim intellectual history and, through translations, that of western Europe and Byzantium [- yes, otherwise known as Constantinople and including the Eastern Roman Empire].)

Dr. Raymond Klibansky, CC, GOQ (Order of Canada, National Order of Quebec) was a 20th Century "German-Canadian historian of philosophy and art", who was...

Born in Paris... [and] educated at the University of Kiel, University of Hamburg and Ruprecht Karl University of Heidelberg, where he received a Ph.D. in 1928. From 1927 to 1933 he was an assistant at the Heidelberg Academy and from 1931 until 1933 he was a lecturer in philosophy at the University of Heidelberg. In 1933 he was no longer able to teach since he was a Jew.

In 1933 he moved [or fled] with his family to Italy and then to Brussels [Belgium] finally setting in [or chased to] Oxford [England], where he was a lecturer at Oriel College, Oxford from 1936 until 1946. He became a British citizen in 1938, and during the Second World War was attached to the Political Warfare Executive, based at Woburn Abbey. He worked at first on Germany, then on preparation for the allied invasion of Italy, and after the war on the denazification programme in Germany.

In 1946 Klibansky became the Frothingham Professor of Logic and Metaphysics at McGill University [Montreal, Quebec]; he also lectured at the Université de Montréal.

From 1966 to 1969 he was President of the International Institute of Philosophy, and subsequently its honorary president. He was a fellow of Wolfson College, Oxford from 1981 to 1995 and thereafter an honorary fellow of that college.

...he was made a Grand Officer of the National Order of Quebec [1999]... [then] Companion of the Order of Canada in recognition for being "one of the greatest intellectuals of our time".

And as previously cited, the "et al." to Dr. Raymond Klibansky, who are the other authors of *Saturn and Melancholy* - includes Dr. Klibansky's elder,

Erwin Panofsky... [who] was a German-Jewish art historian, whose academic career was pursued mostly in the U.S. after the rise of the Nazi regime. Panofsky's work represents a high point in the modern academic study of iconography [- "a branch of art history... [that] studies the identification, description, and the interpretation of the content of images: the subjects depicted, the particular compositions and details used to do so, and other elements that are distinct from artistic style"], which he used in hugely influential works like his "little

book" *Renaissance and Renascences in Western Art* and his masterpiece, *Early Netherlandish Painting*.

Many of his works are still in print, including *Studies in Iconology: Humanist Themes in the Art of the Renaissance* (1939), *Meaning in the Visual Arts* (1955), [etc.]... Panofsky's ideas were also highly influential in intellectual history in general, particularly in his use of historical ideas to interpret artworks and vice versa.

The "et al." also includes another of Dr. Klibansky's elders,

Friedrich "Fritz" Saxl ...the art historian who was the guiding light of the **Warburg**

Institute [photo, p.346]... [now "a research institution associated with the University of London... [and a] member of the School of Advanced Study, its focus... [being] the study of cultural history and the role of images in culture – cross-disciplinary and global... It is concerned with the histories of art and science, and their relationship with superstition, magic, and popular beliefs], [and "Fritz"]... succeeded as director...[the original Jewish founder, Abraham Moritz ("Aby") Warburg, and moved the institute to England in 1933 to 'save' it from falling into Nazi control]...



And going further back in a couple of ways, the originator of "Heraclitean philosophy", Heraclitus of Ephesus, (his "disciple" being Cratylus, who is known mainly through Plato's "dialogue", and is said to have "influenced the young Plato"), was a late 6th/early 5th Century BC contemporary to his elder, Pythagoras, and to the younger Anaxagoras, and therefore was...

...a pre-Socratic Greek philosopher, and a native of the city of Ephesus, then part of the [Medo-]Persian Empire... Little is known about his early life and education [too], but he regarded himself as self-taught and a pioneer of wisdom. From the lonely life he led, and still more from the apparently riddled [or "cryptic"] and allegedly paradoxical [or "contrary"] nature of his philosophy and his stress upon the needless unconsciousness of humankind, he was called "The Obscure" and the "Weeping Philosopher".

Heraclitus was famous for his insistence on ever-present change as being the fundamental essence of the universe [this surely to some extent inspired by the then relatively recent and frequent 'visits' of the 'planet' god Mars], as stated in the famous saying, "No man ever steps in the same river twice" [because the 'planet' gods are constantly changing and rerouting them]... This position was complemented by his stark commitment to a unity of opposites in the world [like the Ancient Chinese, "yin and yang" ("dark-bright") philosophy, which evidently "began about the beginning of the -4th century" [or 4th Century BC], and to which, with the rise of "the ethics of Confucianism... most notably in the philosophy of Dong Zhongshu (c. 2nd century BC), a moral dimension is attached to the idea of yin and

yang", with both this Ancient Oriental and Ancient Occidental Philosophy likely related to the 'behavior' of God-controlled, 'planet-sized', variously composed, 'ball magnets' that both *attracted* and *repelled*, and otherwise supported and/or opposed each other in **the heavens**, but which, by the evidently then still ongoing but now passé global '**satanic strategy**' of '**planet-god**' worship, was instead 'confused' with the 'nature' of '**planet**' gods], stating [and concluding from such **wonders in the heavens**] that "the path up and down are one and the same". Through these doctrines Heraclitus characterized all existing entities by pairs of contrary properties, whereby no entity may ever occupy a single state at a single time. This, along with his cryptic utterance that "all entities come to be in accordance with this *Logos*" (literally, "word", "reason", or "account" [and meaning – and I don't **see** it to be that "riddled" or "cryptic" – the 'word'/'plan' of the '**planet**' gods])... [though, nevertheless and understandably, it is] the subject of numerous interpretations.

And getting back in the "water"...

In the Chaldean story of the Deluge, as told by Berossos [or Berosus, that "Hellenistic-era Babylonian writer... priest of Bel Marduk [Lord Jupiter] and astronomer"], Kronos (Saturn) disclosed to the king Xisuthros that a universal flood would begin on the 15th of the month Dasios. Abydenos [an "ancient writer" referred to by that late 3rd/early 4th Century "Greek historian of Christianity" and "scholar of the Biblical canon", Eusebius,] says: "Kronos announced to Sisithros [or "king Xisuthros"] that a flood would pour from above".

[Cyril, *Contra Julianum* I. 5. Cf. George Syncellus [or Synkellos, a late 8th/early 9th Century "Byzantine chronicler and ecclesiastic... [who] lived many years in Palestine... as a monk, before coming to Constantinople, where he was appointed *synkellos* (literally, "cell-mate") to Tarasius, patriarch of Constantinople... [and] later retired to a monastery to write what was intended to be his great work, a chronicle of world history"], *Chronicon* ["*Extract of Chronography*"] 28 and Eusebius, *Praeparatio Evangelica* IX.12. Cf. also the account of Alexander Polyhistor in Cyril, *Contra Julianum*, *loc. cit.*]...

...[The traditions of the Hindus assign the Deluge to the end of the Satya yuga [Pre-Flood Age] and to

the reign of Satyavrata, who is acknowledged to be Saturn (Edward Moor [late 18th/early 19th Century "British soldier and Indologist, known for his book *The Hindu Pantheon*, an early treatment in English of Hinduism as a religion"], *The Hindu Pantheon* [1864], p.108). Cf. Sir William Jones [FRS, FRSE, an 18th Century "Anglo-Welsh philologist, a puisne judge ["regular member of a court"] on the Supreme Court of Judicature at Fort William in Bengal, and a scholar of ancient India, particularly known for his proposition of the existence of a relationship among European and Indian languages, which would later be known as Indo-European languages", and one of three who "founded the Asiatic Society of Bengal in 1784, and started a journal called *Asiatick Researches*"], "*On the Gods of Greece, Italy and India*," *Asiatick Researches* Vol. I (1799), p.234: "The Satya, or (if we may call it) the Saturnian, age was, in truth, the age of the *general* flood..." [Manu or 'King God'] Brahma (i.e., the planet Saturn – see below, section "*The Worship of Saturn*," n.5), is said to have warned Manu [– the successor 'King God', Mercury] of the Deluge soon to



engulf the world (*The Mahabharata* ["one of the two major Sanskrit epics of ancient India, the other being the *Rāmāyaṇa*"], XXXX); and when the waters of the deluge covered the earth, Brahma is described as floating over the expanse of the ocean (*Agneya Purana*, chapter IV; cf. Satya Vrat (or Satyavrat) Shastri ["a highly decorated Sanskrit scholar", who ultimately became the "Head of the Department of Sanskrit and the Dean of the Faculty of Arts at the University of Delhi... (1970-1995)", *The Flood Legend in Sanscrit Literature* [Delhi,1950], p.51). An ancient woodcut published by Athanasius Kircher (*China Illustrata* [Amsterdam,1667], p.158) portrays Brahma (identifiable by his four faces, or *chatra mukha*) as seated on a rayed disk, apparently Saturn, that hovers over the waters of the Deluge. Cf. F. Maurice [?], *Indian Antiquities* (London,1800), Vol.II, opp. p.352. The woodcut illustrates the third avatar of Vishnu and, more specifically, may be inspired by the words of the *Padma Purana*: "then the lord... floated over the vast ocean, void of the sun and the moon..." (Shastri, *The Flood Legend*, p.41; compare also Psalm 29: "the Lord sitteth upon the flood").] [Image on p.348 of Brahma is from <https://hinduism.stackexchange.com/questions/11750/what-tilak-or-namam-does-lord-brahma-have-on-his-forehead>, but it's unfortunately not the "woodcut" from *China Illustrated*.]

...The *Padma* [or "Lotus"] *Purana*... is one of the eighteen major Puranas [- the 18 most "important" and "ancient... [of] myths, legends and other traditional lore" in this "genre of texts of Hinduism".] It is an encyclopedic text, named after the lotus in which [and to give you a 'crash course' in Hinduism, the "formless"] creator god Brahma [Saturn] appeared [- though "he" is more "the ultimate metaphysical reality and cosmic soul [or "Atman"] of the universe"], and includes large sections dedicated to Vishnu [who instead "takes various avatars", ("incarnations"), and so "he" too is associated with Saturn, and other planets, except in the role of "protector" and "preserver in the Hindu trinity (Trimurti) that includes Brahma and Shiva",] as well as significant sections on Shiva [Jupiter, and other planets, and in her case in the role of "destroyer and transformer", where "she" too is a "formless, limitless, transcendent and unchanging absolute Brahman [read, 'channeler' of Shakti (*tbb* next)], and the prima Atman (soul, self) of the universe",] and Shakti [also identified as feminine and that she "represents the dynamic forces that are thought to move through the entire universe...", and through the Trimurti, who by performing "the cosmic functions of creation [Brahma], maintenance [Vishnu], and destruction [Shiva] are personified as a triad of deities", (underlining mine)].

And Lucius Cornelius Alexander Polyhistor...

...flourished in the first half of the 1st century BC; also called Alexander of Miletus... [he] was a Greek scholar who was enslaved by the Romans during the Mithridatic War and taken to Rome as a tutor. After his release, he continued to live in Italy as a Roman citizen. He was so productive a writer that he earned the surname *polyhistor* (very learned). The majority of his writings are now lost, but the fragments that remain shed valuable light on antiquarian and eastern Mediterranean subjects. Among his works were historical and geographical accounts of nearly all the countries of the ancient world, and the book *Upon the Jews*... excerpted many works which might otherwise be unknown...

...There were [by-the-way] three Mithridatic Wars between Rome and the Kingdom of Pontus in the 1st century BC... [Pontus being the kingdom whose origin "may have been directly related to Darius the Great and the Achaemenid dynasty", (the dynasty originally "founded by Cyrus the Great"), and basically covered most of present-day Turkey, and it was the "swift victory" of Julius over this kingdom that "inspires his famous writing, "I came, I saw, I conquered...", where he "mocks Pompey's earlier performance in this region"]. They [- the wars Pompey starts and Julius finally ends when he 'came, saw, and conquered',] are named for Mithridates VI who was King of Pontus at the time.

And of course again, all Saturn's 'waterworks' could be explained by his relationship to his 'messenger' Mercury, and not because Mercury 'carried' *water* to Earth, but because he 'short-circuited' Earth's *magnetic field* and 'released' *water* to "pour from" its *upper atmosphere*. But like I was, you've just been 'goosed' a bit too if you thought Dr. Velikovsky thought that *water* was 'carried' to Earth by a *comet*, because he instead imagined, and maybe to some extent correctly imagines, that it got directly '**spewed**' ^{H7022} here from Saturn, as we are about to **see**.

The Light of the Seven Days

Isaiah in describing the days to come, when great changes in nature will take place, says that the earth will give its increase in abundance, and "the light of the moon shall be as the light of the sun, and the light of the sun shall be sevenfold, as the light of the seven days..." [Isaiah 30:26].

I agree with Dr. Velikovsky that in [Isaiah 30:26](#) the 'described' events "will take place" in "the days to come", but I'm **able** to add that it's the time of The Great Tribulation, and that in this verse God is likely 'pre-describing' The 4th Plague (Bowl or Vial) Judgment, where, evidently because **the sun** greatly increases in brightness, **men were scorched with great heat** [Rev 16:8-9](#). And I think so because it "appears to me" that this happens **in the day of the great slaughter, when the towers fall** [Verse 25](#), which most significantly happens, reverse-respectively, in The 7th Plague Judgment, and, **Immediately after the tribulation of those days**.

But I think so also because preceding these 'glaring' and 'devastating' references in this chapter are 'gap-spanning' ones directed to **Judah** and **Benjamin** (the '**two tribes**', e.g., [1Ki 12:1-24](#); [2Ch 10:1-11:4](#)) about their then soon as well as later-coming '**scatterings**' ^{H6327: H5311} ([Verses 1-17](#)), and then some to really all 12 **tribes** referring to their subsequent '**re-gatherings**' ^{H6908: H3349: G1997}, including in The Pretribulation Period ([Verses 18-25](#)). And following is a reference to **Armageddon** ([Verses 27-28](#)), then one hinting at the 'inaugural festivities' of The Millennium ([Verse 29](#)), and next one about God's general intent to again and finally **judge** the World with **the indignation of his anger, and with the flame of a devouring fire, with scattering, and tempest, and hailstones** ([Verse 30](#)), then another more specific reference to God's intent to put a '**beat down**' with a **rod** on the Antichrist ([Verse 31-32](#)), after which God again more generally alludes to the mortals **that have transgressed** at this time by confirming where they end up, evidently referring to The Valley of Hinnom, The Pit of Hell ([Isa 66:23-24](#)), which is that "place in the southeast end of the valley... of Hinnom south of Jerusalem", otherwise known as **Tophet** ^{H8613}, or the "place of fire", and yes, apparently when it's an open entrance to **hell** in The Millennium, where Jesus, and maybe **we** too, may literally

'toss' **transgressors** [H6586](#) into **hell**.

And have you noticed yet that my chosen placement of **Tophet** on The Map of Millennial Israel is on the wrong corner of the city? (Hint: turn the map upside down to find true **south**.)

And Sir Walter Scott, that early 19th Century Scottish 'historical novelist', uses his Scottish characters to refer to **hell** by using the term **Tophet**, but more specifically – and especially in his novel, *Old Mortality* – he uses Scots who were also literally and knowingly **fighting** [H3898](#) against **doctrines of devils** like 1) "Popery" ("Roman Catholicism"), 2) "Prelacy" ("the system of church government by prelates" which is used by Catholics, and similarly by Anglicans, who outside England became known as Episcopalians, and who from the 17th Century in England and Scotland have generally supported the more 'liberal' political party known as the "Tories", and this system is used to a lesser extent by Presbyterians, who originated in Scotland, who are instead "governed by representative assemblies of elders", and who have generally supported the more 'conservative' party called the "Whigs", and were certainly less "Erastian" – defined next – and though 'prelacy' was briefly abolished by Elizabeth I in 1559, it was reestablished by a conspiracy of Catholics pretending to be Anglicans later that year, Prelacy being essentially another one of the Catholic 'doctrines' our **brother** Menno rejected, otherwise known as "Church visible", as opposed to "invisible", which, as you may remember, would be Church organization "by a learned-elite over the entire Church v. autonomous small communities of believers"), 3) "Erastianism" ("the supremacy of the state over the church in ecclesiastical matters", which, according to one of Sir Walter's characters who was supposedly referring to statements of an actual martyr, "was as bad as Prelacy"), 4) "Indulgence" ("a partial remission of the temporal punishment, especially purgatorial atonement, that is still due for a sin or sins after absolution", and according to that same character and martyr, "was as bad as Erastianism"), 5) "Socinianism" (foundational Unitarian doctrine that rejects The '**Trinity**' and Christ's '**divinity**' [e.g., G2304](#)), 6) "Lapsarianism" (a "Calvinist" doctrine with "several opposing positions... all of which have names with the Latin root *lapsus* meaning fall", "Lapsarianism" being...

...the study... of the logical order (in God's mind, before Creation) of the decree to ordain or allow the fall of man in relation to his decree to save some sinners (election) and condemn the others (reprobation)... [while] Supralapsarianism (also called antelapsarianism, pre-lapsarian or prelapsarian) is the view that God's decrees of election and reprobation logically *preceded* [not Creation but just] the decree of the fall while infralapsarianism (also called postlapsarianism and sublapsarianism) asserts that God's decrees of election and reprobation logically *succeeded* the decree of the fall.

And maybe you would guess that I'm no 'lap dog' for any one of these 'lap' theories, and that I don't think they really, or entirely, 'oppose' each other, because I think that they all apply to some extent, meaning that I would instead consider myself an '**omni-cinematarian**' (e.g., [Psa 90:4](#)), which I define as someone who thinks that The Father is always just 're-watching' the things that at various points – like at Creation or The Fall – He 'sets in motion', which from the human perspective would include Him simultaneously 'post-watching' the past, 'watching' the present, and 'pre-watching' the future. And this 'omni-screen cinema' of His surely spans all of

eternity. And of course I'm not calling God a 'cosmic couch potato'. Surely He can **watch** ^{H682} and **do all these things** [Isa 45:7](#) at the same 'time'.

These most **zealous** Protestant Scots, by-the-way, were known as "Covenanters". They were a faction of Presbyterians who believed, maybe to some degree unjustly, that it was **right to go and smite... and utterly destroy** everyone supporting the establishment of any one of the above **doctrines of devils**. And they evidently also had some 'contention' - probably also both justly and unjustly - with 7) "Antinomianism", an "antinomian" being "one who takes the principle of salvation by faith and divine grace to the point of asserting that the saved are not bound to follow the [moral] Law of Moses", and as some argue have "carried their belief in justification by faith further than was customary", which ultimately "makes antinomianism an exaggeration of justification by faith alone", which I too would say deserves - and justly so - some 'contention', except when this 'contention' becomes 8) "Legalism", or the opposite "exaggeration" of "putting the Law of Moses above [the] gospel".

And like the Covenanters, I too believe there are times to **go and smite... and utterly destroy** everyone who submits to such **doctrines of devils**, such as when the Israelites, under King Saul, when they were told by God through Judge Samuel concerning **Amalek** to...

...spare ^{H2550} **them not; but slay** ^{H4191} **both man and woman, infant and suckling, ox and sheep, camel and ass** [1Sa 15:3](#).

And like the still coming time, the one the Prophet Joel '**speaks for God**' about in [Joel 2](#), which is apparently when King Jesus commands the Immortal Sons of God to do essentially the same thing, to **go and smite... and utterly destroy** all of **Idumea** (i.e., [Isa 34:5-6](#); [Eze 36:1-7](#)), with the rhetorical question found in [Verse 11](#) implying that such a command is indeed given by King Jesus. And Jesus would certainly not consider these Covenanters either **cold** or **lukewarm**, but instead especially **hot**, some of them having gladly accepted martyrdom for their faith, and who now are waiting in **paradise**, some likely more eager for their coming '**horse ride**' than the **marriage** that will precede it, because apparently they, and maybe just the ones who were not **martyred**, will eventually get the chance to so '**zealously fight**' again, and that is, along with the rest of **us** at our Lord's side. But **be...patient**, because like I eventually began to resolve the 'apparent contradictions' of Calvinism v. Arminianism last **study**, as well as have **continued** ^{H5975: H7235: H2388} to further '**correct, improve and expand**' the 'appropriate applications' of '**predestination**' v. '**whosoever will**' in this one, so I **hope to do** the same with Antinomianism v. Legalism, especially in the next **study**, as well as further expound on our Lord's coming '**call to war**', especially near the end of this one, and I mean as much as God is willing.

But you too, besides rejecting just 'parenthetical knowledge' as sufficient, should also want to look up "Calvinism" ("emphasizing predestination, the sovereignty of God, the supreme authority of the Scriptures, and the irresistibility of grace", though supposedly only to the **predestinated**.), as well as "Arminianism" (originating in the early 17th Century in The Netherlands, by-the-way, a while after our **brother** Menno's ministry there, but more popularly disseminated in the form of "Wesleyan Arminianism", including the ideas that, "Atonement is intended for all", but that, "Man has a freed will to respond or resist"). And you should want to know more about "Thomas Erastus" (founder of Erastianism), and "Fausto Sozzini (Latin: Faustus Socinus)" (founder of Socinianism, the popular association to his first name being entirely appropriate), and though mentioned last in [RGT](#), about Archbishop of

Canterbury, Thomas Cranmer, yes, a 'top prelate', but **'fortunately'** or **'happily'** [G3107](#) finally a **martyr** of the Anglican Church.

And still speaking of that "place of fire" – that **'receptacle'** for **transgressors**, where all who **love not the truth**, and continue to be **deceived** in their **lust** and/or **pride** to **'believe the lies'** and **doctrines** of both **mortal** and **'angelic devils'**, will finally be 'tossed' – as well as speaking again of 'alignments' of 'heavenly objects'...

It has recently come to my attention – from my estranged **wife**, (who, understandably and by permission, so far will not **follow** me as I do Christ) – that, like in Mr. Larson's 'star-charting program' presentation of *The Star of Bethlehem*, on September 23, 2017, (it now being August), the **woman** – the Constellation Virgo (Latin for virgin) – will once again rise **'clothed with the sun'**, the Sun rising with Virgo. And it is also reported that there will be an unusually long morning **eclipse** that will cause 3-hours of **darkness** in Jerusalem which will expose this **'great sign'** to **her** inhabitants, and that late in that day the **moon**, by then **'clothed with the sun'** as well, passes **'under her feet'**. And the Constellation Leo (Latin for lion), its "brightest star" being Regulus (Latin for 'prince' or 'little king'), will as usual be **'on her head'**, having 9 **stars**, except that on this day there will be 3 **wandering stars** in 'his' proximity, evidently effectively putting **'on her head a crown of twelve stars'**, but maybe not, as reported, for the first and only time, except that this time the 3 **'wanderers'** will include an *alignment* or *conjunction* of Mercury, Venus and Mars (e.g., <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=d9TwYvoBncc>).

And by 'maybe not for the first and last time' I mean that 'star-charting programs' – which assume the *orbits* of Mercury, Venus, Mars, etc., have not repeatedly changed, and that would be all such programs – can only be 'entirely accurate' back to a little after The Last Visit of Mars to Earth, when 'he' again changed 'his' *orbit* – as Earth's must then have a little too – which was only about 2700 years ago. Neither do such programs take into account that in the soon-coming Great Tribulation that another *iron-rich, red planet*, with a *dense hydrocarbon atmosphere* will **'fall-out'**, and be used by God to **judge the earth**, and change *orbits* again at least a little bit more.

And I say "another...*red planet*", possibly or even likely another *volcanic bomb* from Jupiter – like Venus, but not Venus or Mars – because remember that most of the *atmosphere* of Venus has been burned up into mostly *carbon dioxide* (CO₂), except the part 'she' left on Earth in various forms, only some of which *burned* into CO₂, while some *electrolyzied* into *edible* – and if mixed with *water*, *potable* – *hydrocarbons*, etc. And evidently most of the *atmosphere* of Mars was siphoned to Venus or Earth during their many encounters with 'him', with what little that's left now 'blowing off', as 'he' no longer has enough *magnetic field strength* to hold it against the *solar wind*. So though 'they' could still provide the *iron oxide* (Fe₂O₃, etc.) needed to **'turn' waters into blood**, etc., neither is any longer able to provide what's needed for **the mountains to drop down** [H5197](#) **new wine** [H6071](#) (evidently a semi-sweet, *water-and-hydrocarbons*, probably red, 'iron-oxide-dyed', *potable liquid*), **and the hills... flow** [H3212](#) **with milk** (evidently a semi-sweet, *water-and-hydrocarbons*, white, 'not-iron-oxide-dyed', *potable liquid*), as the next **'visitor'** is plainly **prophesied** to do ([Joel 3:18](#)).

So we're evidently going to need a fresh *volcanic bomb* with a fresh supply of *hydrocarbons* in its *atmosphere*, and evidently from Jupiter, because Saturn, as we'll soon **see**, cannot provide what's needed either. And besides that, I hear there's an *alignment* involving Jupiter coming up, one which just might produce that new *volcanic bomb* I'm uncertainly expecting, the uncertainty being that surely a new *volcanic bomb* from Jupiter is not God's only option. And if you don't fully

understand all this yet, you may need to go all the way back to the beginning of [RGT](#). All the details work together and are needed to help you see this 'big picture'. And we are not yet even close to done with filling in all the details that Dr. Velikovsky and I hope to include in it.

And speaking of *alignments* of Jupiter, on September 23rd apparently 'he' will have just finished about 9 months of *retrograde motion* in respect to the Earth, which is an optical illusion – like spokes appearing to spin backward in a bicycle wheel or car hubcap – which we see from Earth as we pass the relatively much slower moving Jupiter, which you may remember takes 11 years to our 1 to *orbit* the Sun, and which is a phenomenon characteristic of all **wandering stars**, yes, now more commonly known as *planets*. And astoundingly enough, from our view Jupiter is presently finishing its second 'retrograde loop' inside Virgo's 'belly', with these 'little loops' transpiring in about the time it takes the Moon to *orbit* the Earth 9 times, which is a period of about 9 months, where on the 23rd of September Jupiter will finally be seen leaving Virgo's 'belly' between her legs, and hence, on that day will be 'born'.

What else is happening on September 23, 2017? Besides that supposed full 3-hour 'eclipse' of the Sun over Jerusalem that morning, where **darkness** will be over the city the entire time, it also just happens to be the day of The Feast of Trumpets, and not unlike The Festival of First Fruits marking the day of our Lord's '**crucifixion**', when then there was also a 3-hour 'eclipse' ([Mat 27:45](#), etc.). It's also a Sabbath Day, and the day of the Fall Equinox.

And of course it's not just something happening in the **stars**, as they prophetically 'mark' actual events involving actual **peoples, nations and tongues**, in this case again, and primarily, events involving Israel and the Jews. And the prophetic symbolism here is undeniable, but the specifics of it are surely debatable. For example, the Moon – only visible as a very thin *crescent* – does not *rise* entirely under Virgo, but instead finally begins to sink '**under her feet**' at the end of the day, evidently some time after the 'eclipse' supposedly seen in at least Jerusalem is over. And a *comet* passes Virgo and the Moon on this day too.

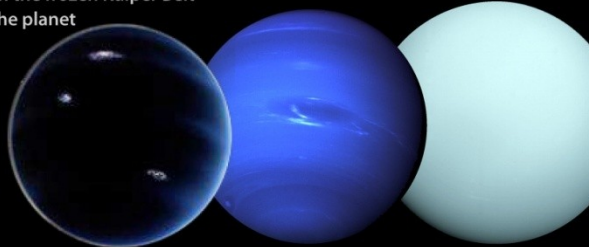
And even more extraordinary, some believe that on this day, supposedly including a 3-hour *eclipse* over Jerusalem, that it will somehow be caused by the elusive "Planet X", somehow emerging from hiding behind the Sun, or maybe otherwise known or confused with "**Planet Nine**", so called because Pluto has been demoted. And either that or – and to stay more in line with the scientific evidence currently available – this mysterious planet just somehow 'shows up', also in *conjunction* with Virgo, to symbolize **the dragon** Satan, doing so because it is needed to represent him as he **stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born**. See the charts sourced from Caltech and UB at [Space.com](#) on [p.353](#), and the following websites: <https://www.space.com/31671-planet-nine-discovery-explained-infographic.html> and <https://www.unsealed.org/2017/01/the-revelation-12-sign-compendium.html>.

And all these supposed details – however they actually apply – must surely be significant to the **interpretation**. And I mean it's possible that God did not yet, nor may ever, inform anyone for sure as to exactly what all these details mean on this particular day. But it is entirely sure that events so plainly 'marked' by such **signs** have a detailed **interpretation** by God, including at least in the **strong meat** of His Word, and that sometime after their fulfillment they may be, along with the **stars**, '**rightly interpreted**' by **us** too.

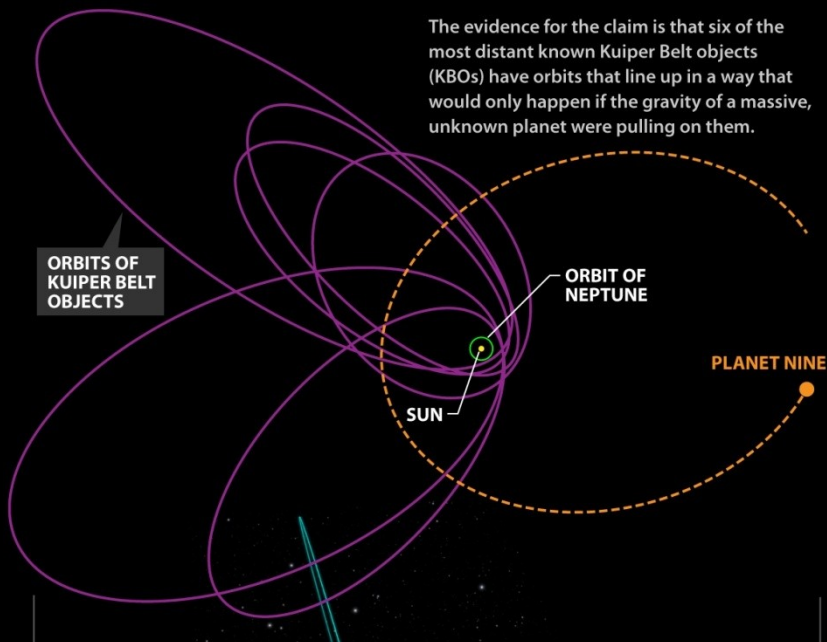
PLANET NINE

Researchers claim that a huge planet almost the size of Neptune probably exists in the frozen Kuiper Belt region of our solar system. The planet has not yet been located or photographed.

Planet Nine would be about the same size as the most commonly found exoplanets orbiting other stars.



	Earth	Planet Nine	Neptune	Uranus
MASS (EARTH = 1)	1	10	17	14.5
RADIUS	1	3.7	3.9	4
LENGTH OF YEAR (EARTH YEARS)	1	between 10,000 and 20,000	164.8	84
AVERAGE TEMPERATURE	59 degrees F (15 degrees C)	minus 374.8 degrees F (minus 226 degrees C)	minus 360.4 degrees F (minus 218 degrees C)	minus 357 degrees F (minus 216 degrees C)



The evidence for the claim is that six of the most distant known Kuiper Belt objects (KBOs) have orbits that line up in a way that would only happen if the gravity of a massive, unknown planet were pulling on them.

ORBITS OF KUIPER BELT OBJECTS

ORBIT OF NEPTUNE

PLANET NINE

SUN

PERPENDICULAR KBOs

The researchers predicted that Planet Nine's gravity would cause another set of Kuiper Belt objects to be forced into orbits perpendicular to Planet Nine's orbit (green ellipses).

Five objects have already been discovered that fit this condition precisely.

SOURCES: CALTECH; UNIVERSITY OF BERN

KARL TATE / © Space.com

SPACE.com

And we may **understand** that all the **stars** in God's **heavens** are '**prophetic**', and are '**foretelling**' the detailed story of God's Creation, day by day, including the stories of each of us. Indeed you should have no doubt about this, as there are plenty of **stars** up there to accomplish the job, except that only a relatively very small number are **bright** enough to be visible to the naked eye, which, as I will also **continue** to try to '**increasingly illuminate**', is another aspect of their **prophecy** in itself.

But since I'm seeing only 'uncertainly definable symbolism', involving only 2 **constellations**, and only 4 or 5 **planets**, and on only 1 - however important - day, how can I expect to 'pre-read' all the **stars** on any given day, let alone specifically **interpret** even this '**great sign**', as so many too '**poorly exercised**' in the **use** of **prophecy** too often try to do, and especially when I instead **rightly** expect, as with other **mysteries of God**, that we're only supposed to fully **understand** it all after the fact. So no, **we** shouldn't be so confident in our **interpretations** unless we are truly '**speaking for God**', because and after all, and whether a **dream** or a **great wonder in heaven**, all **interpretations belong to God** [Gen 40:8](#).

And to be clear, unless you can '**speak for God**', or are '**enabled**' by The Spirit otherwise, you should not. And even then, in this case, you can only really do so to the degree to which the **day star** has '**arisen in your heart**', and

then only to the extent that by the **'exercised use'** of **prophecy** you are **able** to **'rightly divide'**, **'handle'**, and **'perfectly interpret'** God's Word. However in this case, as in too many others, **shamefully** enough, there's lots of talk that on this day The Rapture 'will' or 'may' take place, and that then The Great Tribulation 'will' or 'may' start, etc. But this is not possible because, for one glaring reason, The Rapture cannot be imminent until Isreal has "recovered from war", and has become 'long known' as...

...the land of unwalled villages... that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates
[Eze 38:11](#).

And this must be at least a couple decades away.

And my best guess - not **'speaking for God'**, but **'using'** more **understanding** than any I've heard, or am likely to for that matter - about what this **'great wonder'** could mean, is that this is a **sign** relating to the beginning of **the time of the end** (see Daniel 8, 11, and 12, and/or [RGT](#)), which is a period that would include what is now prophetically imminent, which would be 1) The Establishment of Israeli Military and Civil Technological Invulnerability ([Zec 12:1-6](#) in context with all of Chapters 12 and 13), then 2) The Removal of All Israeli Security Walls ([Eze 38:8-12](#)), after which begins 3) The Longtime Israeli Enforcement of Prosperity, Peace and Safety ([Eze 38:1-12](#) in context with this entire **prophecy**), where The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church cannot be imminent for at least a generation or so after this **rest** period starts, and just after it, along with The Spirit then being **taken out of the way** [2Th 2:7](#), 4) The Rapture will take place, and then 5) Jesus Himself will open The 1st Seal Judgment beginning The Great Tribulation, after which, 6) the Antichrist (the **Assyrian**, see [RGT](#)) will be unhindered to end all this **'peace and safety'**, and that is, just after **he shall come in peaceably, and obtain** the control of Europe **by flatteries** [Dan 11:21](#), etc., all of which is explained in [RGT](#).

And it's not until a while after this - about 3½ years later - that this **woman** (Isreal, e.g. [Gen 37:9-10](#)) **being with child** (The 144,000 Jews - and YES!!! it's about the Jews, not the Church!!!, see [RGT](#)) **cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered**, and these 144,000 then become **the firstfruits unto God and to the lamb** by their **conversion** to Christ and by **'rapture'** to Heaven ([Rev 12:1-2, 5-6; 14:1-4](#)), this happening at the midpoint of The Great Tribulation, just before the Abomination of Desolation, and thus they are **born again**, meaning they are the **firstfruits** of the Jews, or the first 'real Jews' to get the **revelation** of their **messiah**, Jesus, and to be **transformed** and **redeemed** by **'rapture'**.

Of course because **the dispensation of the grace of God... Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men**, remained **hid in God** and a **mystery** until finally **revealed by the holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit**, and that is, when The Spirit was **'put in the way'** of Satan at Pentecost ([Eph 3](#), etc.), then some of the Jews to be **saved** otherwise - before the 144,000, and in other ways, though all by the **blood of Christ** - were unavoidably until Pentecost kept secret. But **by the Spirit** we now **know** that there were Jews first **saved** when Jesus **went and preached to the spirits in prison (Abraham's bosom)** evidently just before His Resurrection ([1Pe 3:19](#), etc.), who are apparently now in **paradise** (e.g., [Luke 23:43](#)). And we **know** more have followed them in this **dispensation**. And there are also those somewhat mysterious Jews that Jesus mentions in [Matthew 24:9-13](#), etc., the ones which evidently Gabriel first 'identifies' in [Daniel 11:32-35](#) - at least for Jesus, and for us evidently much later, because it really took until very recently, till when this last **prophecy** of Daniel finally became

no longer **closed up and sealed**, for us to fully identify and distinguish all the potential **'rapture'**^{G726}, **'captivity'**^{G162; H7628}, and **'station destinations'**^{G5117; H4725} – including the **heavenly, earthly,** and **'subterranean'** – for all Jews and Gentiles.

And in this way the 144,000 **firstfruits** – their unique **'station'** making them the first 'real Jews' to be **saved** – help show why the **salvation** of 'earlier Jews' had to be **hid** too. Why? Because **'hiding'** The Age of Gentile Salvation evidently required **'hiding'** the **ways** and **'dispensations'** in which some 'earlier Jews' were to be **saved** like 'Gentiles'. And apparently the last of these 'earlier Gentile-Jews' to be **saved** – the ones both Daniel and Jesus mention – remained at least somewhat **'misunderstood'** until Daniel's last **prophecy** was no longer **closed up and sealed**, its **'opening'** being a marker of the beginning of **the time of the end**.

And the **end** of this **time of the end** happens a little more than 3½ and/or 6½ years later, after Jesus' 2nd Coming, and Armageddon, etc., at The Inauguration of The Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ in Millennial Jerusalem, and that is, either a **thousand three hundred and five and thirty days** after The Abomination of Desolation ([Dan 12:11-12](#)), which is evidently also just after many **'mortals'** and **'immortals'** get the chance to join King Jesus in wearing **blood...sprinkled... garments**, or like Him be **clothed with a vesture dipped in blood**, and when then there are finally **set thrones of judgment** in Jerusalem (e.g., [Psa 122:5](#); [Rev 20:4](#)), and/or **two thousand and three hundred days** after The Abomination of Desolation ([Dan 8:13-14](#)), when **then shall the** [Millennial Temple] **sanctuary be** [both built and] **cleansed** to begin operations. And yes again, go back to [RGT](#) if you don't **understand** absolutely all of this as well.

But I say all this now because I want to testify that it's this **'great wonder'** that has helped me see yet another astounding 'alignment', and that is, one happening in 'my view' at this point of my **study**. Here's what I mean. There are only 9 known **planets** (if you include Planet Nine). But Sir Walter Scott has written over two dozen novels of which I am presently just finished with 11, and have not, serendipitously enough, read but a few of them in the order he wrote them, and that is, mostly not in the order that they were intended to be read. And Dr. Velikovsky, besides *Worlds In Collision* and *Earth In Upheaval*, has written 4 published works, and 3 others not conventionally published, in his *Ages In Chaos* ('historical reconstruction') series. And after **'studying'** all 6 of his published works, I happen to just now be **'studying'** the first of his 'unpublished' ones. And yes, I have read little more of *In the Beginning* at this point than I have covered so far in this section, so in a sense **we** are **'studying'** it for the first time together, going for that 'simulation-of-what-it's-like-to-grow-in-the-knowledge-of-God-style' **exercise**. And the awesome 'personal alignment' I'm talking about is that just when I reach the point in this **study** when Dr. Velikovsky directs me to Isaiah 30, which results in us now being **able to understand** the whole chapter, including the role of **Tophet** in it, this is also when I am – and in my perspective randomly – finishing another of Sir Walter's novels involving **zealous** Scottish Protestants, which includes their **understanding** of various **doctrines of devils**, ones still plaguing the Church to this day, whereby God – in His obviously not random but actually **'marvellously planned'** way – sets before me the ever-hereafter, ongoing task, or **'first step'**, of resolving 'apparent contradictions' of Antinomianism v. Legalism, **thank and praise the LORD**.

And of course it's **good** to stop and **thank** and **praise** Him in such 'circumstances', one reason being, and especially when God **hath dealt wondrously**^{H6381} **with you**, that **if...**

In all thy ways [you] acknowledge him... he shall direct thy paths.

For indeed,

The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD: and he delighteth in his way.

So I'd like to also testify - and whether I have already or not - that such increasingly **wondrous**

'alignments' related to my **study** in God's Word are increasingly regularly - now seemingly daily - happening to me, and ever since God was still 'spoon-feeding' me starting back in 1986.

And I say again, this soon coming '**great sign**' is mostly being **shamefully** used, because

prophecy does not indicate that The Rapture is imminent, which when it doesn't happen - and

it won't on September 23rd, and only at worst will 'mark' an event that finally results in the absolute defeat of attacking Muslims surrounding Isreal, where not long thereafter '**peace and safety**' must ensue, and without any major worldwide conflict - then some will **stumble**, and maybe **fall**, especially the ones that 'run to the altar' because of such 'Peter-and-the-Wolf-like', 'false alarms' and 'false-trumpeting' of the 'imminent end of the World'. And yes, I see all this '**vain talk**' doing more '**meat grinding**' than anything else. (For '**meat grinding**', besides reviewing **SECTION 4**, see the "To BFF's" document at my Internet Archive [RGT](#) site).

But to you, and **God willing** to many others, I **hope** and **pray** that this **knowledge** may only increase **the stability** ^{H530} **of thy times**, ^{H6256} and the **strength** ^{H2633} of your **salvation** [Isa 33:6](#).

And if you think me a hypocrite for 'guessing' too, well, in a way I am because there have

been times that I have been guilty of '**trumpeting**' when I should not have been, which may be worse than to **trumpet... an uncertain sound** [1Co 14:8](#), but I would make you to **understand** why I am no longer a hypocrite or guilty, and why others 'sounding the alarm' - again - for The Rapture and/or the "End of the World" have no **right** to **speak** about these things, while I now do. It is because others who **sound** such 'false alarms' will soon **prove** by doing so that they cannot in such matters '**speak for God**'. But I am **able** to **speak** for Him because I have for decades been '**gifted**' by Him in the **teaching** of His Word, and have by '**continued use**' of His Word been **exercised to discern** how to '**rightly divide**' and '**handle**' the **prophecy** of God, which, along with the accompanying decades of **labour in the word and doctrine** of the whole **word of God**, '**enables**' me to '**rightly interpret**' that this '**great wonder**' must have a different meaning than is popularly 'taught' and 'believed', and that it likely instead is just one of the indications that **the time of the end** has finally come, which may soon allow Israel to finally reveal her absolute military and civil technological invulnerability to **her** surrounding Muslim neighbors, who will surely test and prove it, and thereby prove it to everyone, including to the Russians.

Yes, it now being August, 2017, 'soon' Isreal will end all major and minor threats, especially in **her** region, even the threat of suicide bombers within Israel. And **she** will 'soon thereafter' start tearing down **her** 100's of miles of security walls, with **her** resulting **rest** period - which I presume generally reaches worldwide - lasting at least a generation, and that is, at least a couple decades or so, making it at least nearly that long before The Rapture could be imminent.

Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen [Rev 7:12](#).
(See also [Rev 19:1](#))

But does Dr. Velikovsky *understand* Isaiah 30? Like **Tophet** he does, saying next that,

One could think that "the light of the seven days" refers to the seven days of creation – however, the actual explanation appears to me to be different: the expression "the light of the seven days" refers [or 'makes an allusion'], in my view, to the seven days preceding the Flood that are referred to in the verse: "For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth. ...And it came to pass after seven days, that the waters of the Flood were upon the earth." ([Genesis 7:4,10](#)) It is not explained in the text – after seven days of what? But the rabbinical tradition relates that for seven days before the Deluge "the people heard a great commotion in the heaven," that signified "the end of the age."

But hold on a minute, because maybe Dr. Velikovsky is on to something here...

The Talmudic tradition that often reaches much farther into the past than better known sources, like the books of the Scriptures, reveals in this instance a memory not suspected at the [modern] reading of the seventh chapter of Genesis. But in view of what we have brought out until now, and what we intend to illuminate on the following pages, the blinding light preceding the Deluge by seven days is an interesting and important detail. The world was [supposedly] in a dazzling light, sevenfold stronger than the light of the sun; the light was so strong and so brilliant day and night alike, that the sun was entirely overpowered by it; and in the days of Isaiah, thousands of years later, the memory of the light of the seven days was vivid in tradition, so that the prophet could refer to it in desiring to describe [and compare it to] the solar light of the messianic age.

Well, this Pre-Flood "light of seven days" does not likely compare to and therefore help to "describe the solar light of the [entire] messianic age", and that is, of the entire Millennium, but it certainly may compare to and help "describe" a comparable event that helps initiate "the messianic age", The 4th Plague Judgment, and even though The 4th Plague involves the Sun's 'temporary brightness' instead of Saturn's.

And to be '**perfectly**' clear, an "allusion" in literature (or **scripture**) is, "An indirect reference to some piece of knowledge not actually mentioned... [which will] usually come from a body of information that the author presumes the reader will know. For example, an author who writes, "She was another Helen," is alluding to the proverbial beauty of Helen of Troy." And to cite an example in **scripture**, Paul refers to Jesus as the '**second Adam**', alluding to Adam who was **natural** and **earthly** and **unable to resist the devil** or the **flesh**, while Jesus, being **spiritual** and **heavenly**, has **victory** over all ([1Co 15:45-58](#)). And in this present case Dr. Velikovsky thinks (or thought) that Isaiah – or really God – is "describing" the coming "light of the messianic age" by "alluding" to the "light" in the **seven days** before The Flood, which it seems fair to 'presume' that "the readers" at the time of this **prophecy** may have still 'known' about.

[A memory of the light of the seven days may be preserved in the Babylonian account of “flaming torches, lighting up the land with their brightness” just prior to the arrival of the waters of the Deluge. (*The Epic of Gilgamesh*, transl. by A. Heidel, tablet XI).]

And by-the-way, from my 1970 translation of the apparently oldest ‘epic poem’ of all, *Gilgamesh*, (transl. by Dr. Herbert Mason, “doctorate from Harvard University in Near East Languages and Literature”), though my edition does not include the “tablets” of “sequel” stories, I understand that this most ancient hero, King Gilgamesh, who is identified as “two-thirds god”, (read, 2/3 **angel**), has interactions with “the gods”, evidently not long after the time of The Flood.

There was Anu, their aging and weak-minded father [god],
The military Enlil, his [son and] advisor [- “The war god”, who “from his mouth
springs fire,
That scorches the earth in a moment, There is nothing left alive, No tree, no
insect...”],
Ishtar, the sensation-craving one [and “Goddess of love, And fruitfulness, And
war” too],
And all the rest...

And it is apparently after The Flood that Gilgamesh, to prove his courage, convinces his reluctant but loyal friend Enkidu to go on a quest to “the forest of Humbaba”, (which was to some “Hell” and to others “Paradise”), to “kill the Evil One, Humbaba”, who evidently has the power to ‘paralyze’ people in their dreams and otherwise, and whose great “head” is, “Like a water buffalo’s bellowing down the path”, and who seriously wounds Enkidu before Gilgamesh recovers from his ‘paralysis’ and kills and beheads Humbaba with an ax, And after that Ishtar tries to convince Gilgamesh to marry her, for “Love... and peace”, but he rejects her, and so she sends “the Bull of Heaven” (Enlil) to kill him. However Enkidu, evidently also part “god”, though seriously wounded, “Found strength” and “killed” it, which makes her at first “enraged”, but...

Then she withdrew among the prostitutes [- her ‘priestesses’?]
And mourned with them the Bull of Heaven’s death.

But this is also when Enkidu dies from the wound inflicted by Humbaba, after which Gilgamesh “grieves”, having “never looked at death before”, as “the gods” evidently only fairly recently became responsible for “Creating...old age itself...” However it was still a time when “grief... could go on... for centuries”. So Gilgamesh goes on a quest to find Utnapishtim...

The one who had survived the flood,
And death itself, the one who knew the secret.

And yes, Utnapishtim is like Noah, but certainly not a perfect match. To see him Gilgamesh must cross the apparently ‘acidic’ (‘Mercury-polluted’?) “sea of death”, (see the movie, *Dante’s Peak*, 1997), after which Utnapishtim tells his ‘Noah-like’ story, including that before The Flood,

There was a city...
On the bank of the Euphrates.
It was very old and so many were the gods
Within it. They converged in their complex hearts

On the idea of creating a great flood...
...Ea, who was present
At their council, came to my house...

...and “said” to Utnapishtim,

...build a ship. Abandon your possessions
And the works you find beautiful and crave
And save your life instead. Into the ship
Bring the seed of all living creatures...
...[and] Ea said, ...Enlil
The war god despises you and will not
Give you access to the city anymore.
[And] ...for this Ea will bring the rains.

And finally...

...Ea ordered me to close
The door. The time of the great rains had come...
...it was terrifying... Buildings
Blown by the winds for miles like desert brush.
People clung to branches of trees until
Roots gave way...

And it fits that “Sin, the moon god”, is once mentioned, and “prayed” to. But how could any “desert brush” have existed in the *hyperbaric greenhouse environment* before The Flood? This may be part of Satan’s subterfuge, and that is, part of his strategy to make people begin to forget that there really were **waters... above the firmament**, and forget – as most of Noah’s family surely testified – that *deserts* didn’t used to exist, and forget the ‘environmental benefits’ that were lost in The Flood too, maybe part of this strategy being to also avoid the blame for it all.

And of course with the ‘disintegrated’ **garden of Eden** buried within miles of *sediment* after The Flood, the **Cherubims**, evidently each with **a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life**, would no longer be needed, as none of its ‘fruit’ would still be accessible. Nevertheless this supposedly still ‘untasted’, ‘**forbidden fruit**’ of the **tree of life** is apparently alluded to near the end of the story when Utnapishtim tells Gilgamesh that he can find a “plant in the river” that “will give to you new life”, which Gilgamesh, by tying rocks to his ankles, finds, though just after that a “snake” steals it, and so he returns home ‘empty-handed’.

And though Gilgamesh arrives home not that long after leaving, no one any more remembers Enkidu. And this is where you would sigh, and think, ‘Satan wins again’, and maybe also realize that *existentialism*, the philosophy that ‘life is meaningless’, (popularized most recently by 20th Century French philosophers), evidently had a much earlier origin.

Ea – about whom, “Students of Babylonian astronomy are well aware that “by ‘Star of the god Ea’ Mercury is meant”” – was ‘originally’ known as...



...**Enki**... a god in Sumerian mythology, later known as **Ea** in Akkadian mythology and Babylonian [- see following note]. He was originally patron god of the city of Eridu [- “an archaeological site in southern Mesopotamia (modern Dhi Qar

Governorate, Iraq)... long considered the earliest city in southern Mesopotamia and is still today argued to be the oldest city in the world”], but later the influence of his cult spread throughout Mesopotamia and to the Canaanites, Hittites and Hurrians. He was the deity of crafts... mischief... water, seawater, lakewater... intelligence... and creation...

See the “[Detail of Enki from the Adda Seal](#) [on [p.358](#)], an ancient Akkadian cylinder seal dating to circa 2300 BC”, which if anywhere near accurately dated must have been used shortly after The Flood, maybe into the life of Abraham. (Note: since the Akkadians have been identified as the ‘Pre-Moon’ people, they must have preceded the Sumerians, **Accad** (or “Akkad”) being a city founded at **the beginning of his** [Nimrod’s] **kingdom** [Gen 10:10](#)), but it’s also reported that the “Akkadian Empire” succeeded and assimilated the Sumerians, this being a topic apparently needing further **study**.)

And of course you should be able to recognize characteristics of all the planets in these “gods”. But the Akkadian, Sumerian, and then Babylonian, as well as Hindu and Buddhists versions of them, are not perfect matches for the later Greek or Roman ones, just obviously expose some of the inspiration for Satan’s earlier propaganda, and that is, after the cultural and strategic adjustments made by our **adversary the devil** over time to his supposed ‘advantage’.

And throwing back on the sunglasses...

Numerous Sanscrit texts assert that seven or even twelve suns shone just before the Deluge.

"Being ignited, all of a sudden, the entire terrestrial sphere blazed forth." Twelve suns shone with "dazzling radiance" and consumed the world. (*The Skanda Purana in Shastri, The Flood Legend in Sanscrit Literature*, p. 86; Cf. similar accounts in the *Matsya Purana*, ch. ii, the *Padma Purana*, ch. xxxvi, the *Vishnu Purana*, ch. iii, the *Kalika Purana*, ch. xxv, and in the *Mahabharata*, chapter "Matsyopakhyaana.")

The light of the seven days was not of solar origin. Of what origin was it? Was it caused by brightly illuminated clouds of ionized hydrogen, or protons, hurled throughout the solar system and poured on earth? In the latter case they [- these “protons” -] could have arrived from the present distance of Saturn in about a week, considering that the proton particles - ionized hydrogen - arrive from the sun in the space of twenty-five hours. [The distance of Saturn from the Sun is about 9.5 astronomical units. See below, section “*Saturn’s Golden Age*.”] This is the time which elapses from a flare-up on the sun (protuberance) to the display of the polar lights - the aurora borealis [- otherwise known as the “northern lights”].

And yes, my encyclopedia tells me that *solar wind*, which carries the ‘big guns’ of *solar radiation*, “consists of mostly electrons, protons and alpha particles”. And Dr. Velikovsky probably also knows that the biggest of these particles, *alpha particles*, “are identical to helium nuclei”, and are identified by the chemical symbol, ${}^4\text{He}^{2+}$, 4 in the left superscript position being the *mass number* or *nucleon number* which gives the total number of *protons* and *neutrons*, and the 2+ in the right superscript “indicating a helium ion with a +2 charge (missing its two electrons)”, and, by-the-way, “the proton number (atomic number) may be indicated in the left subscript position” (e.g., ${}^4_2\text{He}$), while the “number of atoms of an

element in a molecule or chemical compound is shown in the right subscript position" (e.g., H₂ or Fe₂O₃).” So *alpha particles*, being the same as “helium nuclei”, would not be much help in making *water*, H₂O.

And what’s really needed are *hydrogen nuclei*, or pairs of them, which is what “ionized hydrogen” ‘normally’ is, except that Dr. Velikovsky is talking about *hydrogen isotope ions* – which in this case are “bare” individual *protons* without any *neutrons* or *electrons*. And yes, *ionized hydrogen* is generally defined as *atoms* that consist of one *proton*, one *neutron*, and ‘extra’ or no *electrons*. But an independent *proton* without an accompanying *neutron* or *electron* could be called a *hydrogen ion* too, but more specifically it’s a *hydrogen isotope ion*, an *isotope* because it’s also missing its neutron. And independent *protons* are “stable”, while independent *neutrons* are not, as they evidently ‘**naturally**’ decay to the *lower energy state* of *protons*. So maybe he’s thinking that since 2 *protons* and *neutrons* are needed for the *hydrogen* component of *water* (H₂O), and since he must know that a “bare hydrogen ion [in this case a *proton* and *neutron* without an *electron*] cannot exist freely in [a water-based] solution as it readily hydrates, i.e., bonds quickly”, and commonly with just *oxygen* to form *water molecules*, then apparently he expects that “ionized *hydrogen* [*isotopes*], or *protons*” (without *electrons* or *neutrons*) will “in solution”, or just in the presence of *oxygen*, somehow ‘**naturally**’ 1) ‘power-up’ to become *neutrons*, 2) ‘pair up’ with other *protons*, 3) ‘catch’ or ‘steal’ needed *electrons*, then finally 4) ‘attach’ to *oxygen atoms* to form *water molecules*.

And I mean I don’t know if all this

would ‘**naturally**’ happen, especially the ‘powering-up’ of *neutrons* into *protons* part, because

it evidently more ‘**naturally**’ works the other way. Of course if the *neutrons* could be provided

somehow, and if in the presence of “bare” *protons* these ‘somehow-provided’ *neutrons* wouldn’t decay but instead ‘attach’ to *protons*, then it all seems ‘**natural**’ enough to me.

Whatever the case, and ‘**knowing**’ God, surely He “deluged” Earth mostly ‘**naturally**’, that is, mostly with just His originally **appointed... ordinances of heaven and earth**, and that is, along with the ‘**supernatural**’ corruption of these **ordinances** by **the curse**, where The Flood mostly just ‘**naturally fell out**’, being **predestinated** in due course, which should ‘make your head swim’, (or ‘spin’, such **edifying** puns being personally unavoidable – regular, double, and/or ‘**preceptual**’ ones included – and no ‘E’ for **edifying** is needed as I hope all my puns are).

However I still think that most of **the waters** in The Flood came from Earth’s *sky* or from *underground*. But I’m now open to the idea that part of these **waters** may have been ‘constituted’ in Earth’s *atmosphere* from *protons* ‘**spewed**’ from Saturn, and open to the idea that this ‘alien water’ may have contributed to the long **rain** that may have significantly added to what ‘drained’ from the *sky*, and what was ‘squeezed’ from *underground*.

And whatever the case, ‘**endeavor**’ to **continue** to **increase** your **understanding** of the following accepted *chemistry* terms, symbols and definitions:

Ionization is the process by which an atom or a molecule [**‘normally’** consisting of both *protons* and *neutrons* which are both made of *quarks*] acquires a negative or positive charge by gaining or losing electrons [**– a flavor of leptons –**] to form ions.

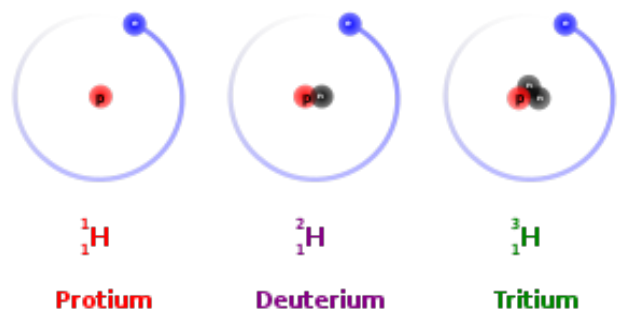
Isotopes are variants of a particular chemical element which differ in neutron number... [but all] isotopes of a given element [**though varying in the**

number of *neutrons*] have the same number of protons in each atom [- so it's the number of *protons* that differentiates *elements*]...

The number of protons within the atom's nucleus is called the atomic number [or the "proton number", which is the number in the left subscript, but on the [Periodic Table of the Elements, p.361](#), it's the number in the top left corner of each element's box] and is ['normally'] equal to the number of electrons [and that is] in the neutral (non-ionized) atom [or when the *negatively charged electrons* are equal in number to the *positively charged protons*]. Each atomic number identifies a specific element, but not the isotope [- so again, it's the number of *protons* that determines the *element*]; an atom of a given element may have a wide range in its number of neutrons. The number of nucleons (both protons and neutrons) in the nucleus is the atom's mass number [- *electrons* excluded as they have comparatively very little *mass*, being about 2,000 times 'lighter' than *protons* and *neutrons*], and [so] each isotope of a given element has a different mass number.

For example, carbon-12, carbon-13 and carbon-14 are three isotopes of the element carbon with mass numbers 12, 13 and 14 respectively. The atomic number of carbon is 6, which means that every carbon atom has 6 protons, so that the neutron numbers of these isotopes are 6 ['normal'], 7 [1 'extra' *neutron*] and 8 [2 'extra' *neutrons*] respectively.

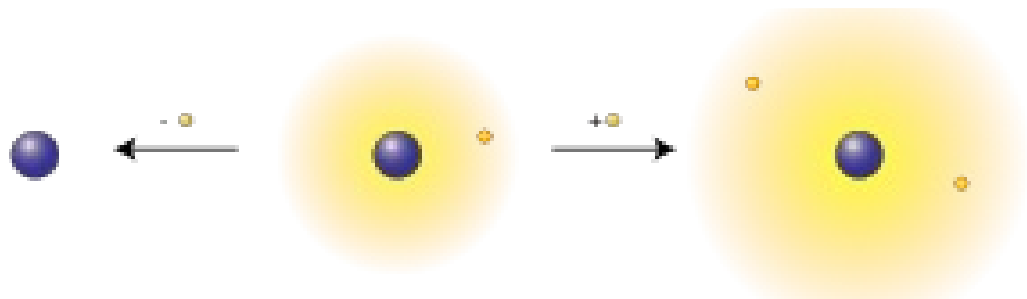
And the chemical symbols for these 3 *isotopes* of *carbon* are ^{12}C , ^{13}C , and ^{14}C . And you should now **understand** that more or less *neutrons* don't change the *charge* because they exist as "electrically neutral" *particles*. Also the 3 *stable isotopes and chemical symbols of hydrogen* are shown in the diagram on [p.360](#), **Deuterium** being the *isotope* with 1 *neutron*, **Protium** with no *neutrons*, and the one with 2 *neutrons* is **Tritium**.



And Dr. Velikovsky is apparently suggesting that *ionized hydrogen isotopes*, or more specifically, *protium ions* or "bare" *protons*, are what Saturn '**spewed**' to Earth to make *water*. **Understand?**

A review of [SECTION 2](#) may help. I needed a few.

And there are also *cations* and *anions*. See the [hydrogen isotope diagram](#) on [p.361](#).



Since the electric charge on a proton is equal in magnitude to the charge on an electron [only opposite], the net electric charge on an ion is equal to

the number of protons in the ion minus the number of electrons [and the number of *neutrons—*isotopes—would not change this].

An **anion** (-) ...is an ion with more electrons than protons, giving it a net negative charge...

A **cation** (+) ...is an ion with fewer electrons than protons, giving it a positive charge...

There are additional names used for ions with multiple charges. For example, an ion with a -2 charge is known as a dianion and an ion with a +2 charge is known as a dication. A zwitterion is a neutral molecule with positive and negative charges at different locations within that molecule... [which may make your head 'zwitter']... Cations and anions are measured by their ionic radius and they differ in relative size: "Cations are small, most of them less than 10^{-10} m (10^{-8} cm) in radius. But most anions are [relatively] large, as is the most common Earth anion, oxygen [- but you need an *electron microscope* to see one, photo, p.361]...



And *hydrogen isotope cations* - "bare" protons - are indicated by $^1\text{H}^+$.

But you don't have to **understand** all this your first time through. I didn't, and to some extent still don't. However you should know that this is just the 'bare basics', with 'zwitterions' more to learn, and of course I mean 'endlessly' more, including the endless possible interactions of literally hundreds more varyingly *charged, colored* and *spinning subatomic particles*.

PERIODIC TABLE OF THE ELEMENTS

<http://www.ktf-split.hr/periodni/en/>

GROUP	1 IA	2 IIA	3 IIIB	4 IVB	5 VB	6 VIB	7 VIIB	8 VIII	9 VIII	10 VIII	11 IB	12 IIB	13 IIIA	14 IVA	15 VA	16 VIA	17 VIIA	18 VIIIA
PERIOD 1	1 1.0079 H HYDROGEN																	2 4.0026 He HELIUM
PERIOD 2	3 6.941 Li LITHIUM	4 9.0122 Be BERYLLIUM											5 10.811 B BORON	6 12.011 C CARBON	7 14.007 N NITROGEN	8 15.999 O OXYGEN	9 18.998 F FLUORINE	10 20.180 Ne NEON
PERIOD 3	11 22.990 Na SODIUM	12 24.305 Mg MAGNESIUM											13 26.982 Al ALUMINIUM	14 28.086 Si SILICON	15 30.974 P PHOSPHORUS	16 32.065 S SULPHUR	17 35.453 Cl CHLORINE	18 39.948 Ar ARGON
PERIOD 4	19 39.098 K POTASSIUM	20 40.078 Ca CALCIUM	21 44.956 Sc SCANDIUM	22 47.867 Ti TITANIUM	23 50.942 V VANADIUM	24 51.996 Cr CHROMIUM	25 54.938 Mn MANGANESE	26 55.845 Fe IRON	27 58.933 Co COBALT	28 58.693 Ni NICKEL	29 63.546 Cu COPPER	30 65.39 Zn ZINC	31 69.723 Ga GALLIUM	32 72.64 Ge GERMANIUM	33 74.922 As ARSENIC	34 78.96 Se SELENIUM	35 79.904 Br BROMINE	36 83.80 Kr KRYPTON
PERIOD 5	37 85.468 Rb RUBIDIUM	38 87.62 Sr STRONTIUM	39 88.906 Y YTTRIUM	40 91.224 Zr ZIRCONIUM	41 92.906 Nb NIObIUM	42 95.94 Mo MOLYBDENUM	43 (98) Tc TECHNETIUM	44 101.07 Ru RUTHENIUM	45 102.91 Rh RHODIUM	46 106.42 Pd PALLADIUM	47 107.87 Ag SILVER	48 112.41 Cd CADMIUM	49 114.82 In INDIUM	50 118.71 Sn TIN	51 121.76 Sb ANTIMONY	52 127.60 Te TELLURIUM	53 126.90 I IODINE	54 131.29 Xe XENON
PERIOD 6	55 132.91 Cs CAESIUM	56 137.33 Ba BARIUM	57-71 La-Lu Lanthanide	72 178.49 Hf HAFNIUM	73 180.95 Ta TANTALUM	74 183.84 W TUNGSTEN	75 186.21 Re RHENIUM	76 190.23 Os OSMIUM	77 192.22 Ir IRIDIUM	78 195.08 Pt PLATINIUM	79 196.97 Au GOLD	80 200.59 Hg MERCURY	81 204.38 Tl THALLIUM	82 207.2 Pb LEAD	83 208.98 Bi BISMUTH	84 (209) Po POLONIUM	85 (210) At ASTATINE	86 (222) Rn RADON
PERIOD 7	87 (223) Fr FRANCIUM	88 (226) Ra RADIUM	89-103 Ac-Lr Actinide	104 (261) Rf RUTHERFORDIUM	105 (262) Db DUBNIUM	106 (266) Sg SEABORGIUM	107 (264) Bh BOHRIUM	108 (277) Hs HASSIUM	109 (268) Mt MEITNERIUM	110 (281) Uun UNUNNIUM	111 (272) Uuu UNUNUNIUM	112 (285) Uub UNUNBIUM	114 (289) Uuq UNUNQUADIUM					

LANTHANIDE										
57 138.91 La LANTHANUM	58 140.12 Ce CERIUM	59 140.91 Pr PRASEODYMIUM	60 144.24 Nd NEODYMIUM	61 (145) Pm PROMETHIUM	62 150.36 Sm SAMARIUM	63 151.96 Eu EUROPIUM	64 157.25 Gd GADOLINIUM	65 158.93 Tb TERBIUM	66 162.50 Dy DYSPROSIUM	67 164.93 Ho HOLMIUM

ACTINIDE										
89 (227) Ac ACTINIUM	90 232.04 Th THORIUM	91 231.04 Pa PROTACTINIUM	92 238.03 U URANIUM	93 (237) Np NEPTUNIUM	94 (244) Pu PLUTONIUM	95 (243) Am AMERICIUM	96 (247) Cm CURIUM	97 (247) Bk BERKELIUM	98 (251) Cf CALIFORNIUM	99 (252) Es EINSTEINIUM

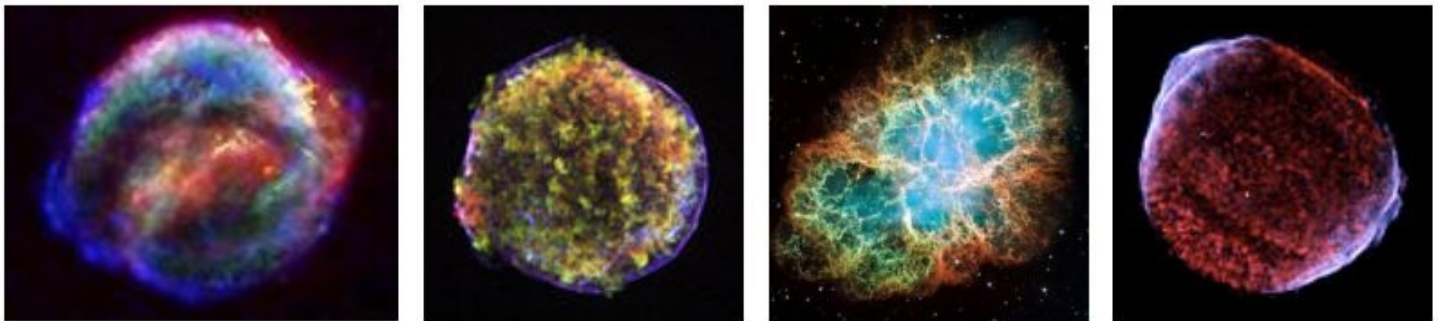
Editor: Aditya Vardhan (advivar@netlinx.com)

And don't feel too bad, because you're already 'lightyears' ahead of most 'rocket scientists', most of whom think they already 'know it all', but don't know it's a matter of time before **we** start leaving them increasing further behind, and that is, if they don't **seek** God's **mercy**, and end up **for ever** far 'beneath' **us**, (**'terrifying'** pun intended, e.g., [2Co 5:11](#)). And you should even now **see** that 'turtle speed' is fastest if you're the only one **running** ^{G5143} in the **right** direction, and **see** that these '**studies**' are designed by God in **God speed**, and that **there is none else, none beside, none other, none like** nor **greater** than **his way** (e.g., [2Sa 22:31](#); [Psa 18:30](#); [37:23,34](#)).

And I should emphasis here that moving through these '**studies**' of God's the first few times too fast or slow is not good. You need to move at a pace where you're making regular progress towards the end, because you need at least a 'peek' at the whole 'big picture' before you are **able** to safely process the more minor details anyway. And at first you only need to move slow enough to at least start getting those 'peeks', which would be to only **understand** some to most - not all - of what you read. Remember I referred to **RGT** as an "exercise machine". Both these '**studies**' are intended to be '**used**' in this **way**, where first you get through the entire '**work out**' of a **study** as fast as you '**profitably**' can, after which, on the next '**work out**' through it, you are **able** to **work** faster and **understand** more. And like with **bodily exercise** [1Ti 4:8](#), these kind of '**spiritual exercises**' have **no end** either, and that is, **if ye** want to **continue** to **increase** the **strength** of your **salvation**. And by-the-way, there will come a point **if ye continue** where most all your '**new**' **revelations** in any of these '**studies**' will be "beyond" what is in the text, which, **verily, verily**, is a still '**higher level**' of being **approved unto God**.

The light of the seven days served the population of the world as a warning of some extraordinary events. [A warning of seven days' duration is also a feature of several of the Sanscrit accounts. See S. Shastri, *The Flood Legend in Sanscrit Literature* (Delhi,1950), p.30.]

Nova



From time to time, once in a decade or once in a century, a dimly shining or invisible star flares with brilliant light; it may become brighter than any of the fixed stars, or any of the planets in the sky; it may be seen not only in the nocturnal sky, but in some cases in full daylight; it burns for weeks or months, then loses its brilliance, and finally becomes once more a hardly visible star. Such a blazing star is called a nova...

[It is thought that as many as twenty novae occur in our galaxy each year [- uh-huh, it's all '**falling apart**' faster now], but only rarely does one become so prominent as to approach even a third magnitude brightness. A supernova in the part of our galaxy

observable from the Earth may occur once [or twice] in several hundred years: Kepler's nova (1604) was the last such event.]

The *stella nova* seen in 1572 [Tycho Supernova, middle left on p.362] in the days of Tycho de Brahe belonged actually to the supernova category. De Brahe observed that the nova did not belong to the solar system but was one of the fixed stars. It was brighter than Jupiter and Venus and was seen at midday - for months it remained visible to the naked eye. Another supernova... [Kepler's Supernova, far left] was observed by Johannes Kepler in 1604. An earlier such event, recorded in the Chinese annals for the year 1054, gave rise to the Crab Nebula [middle right]. Other observations indicate that a supernova also occurred in 1006 [far right].

And yes, this alone shows that though there's really only about a 1,000 years left before **heaven and earth** will have **fled away**, that if this Universe lasted just a few tens of thousands years more, then few if any 'still working', and that is, 'potentially life-supporting' *stars* would be left. And I mean that unlike Dr. Velikovsky and other *evolutionists*, I expect that the rate of *nova explosions* must not be 'stable' over 'ridiculously-long' time periods, but that, since **stars** started 'popping' less than 2 millennia after **the curse** (as Saturn supposedly did), then I can only expect that such 'popping' will only exponentially increase, kind of like how popcorn pops, infrequently at first, but then explosively, except that for **stars** this 'explosive popping phase' evidently won't occur, since surely **heaven and earth shall pass away** a little before that.

Isaac Newton suggested a collision between two stars as the cause of the formation of a nova. The prevalent view is that a nova results from the interaction of two stars in a binary system when the two members disrupt one another on close approach. In such a case filaments of the [first] disrupted star are torn out of its body and hurled [or 'spewed'] in great spurts, to be absorbed by the companion star [which apparently may or may not cause it to *explode* too, though in these pictures I think I detect 4 out of 4 'double supernovas', the Supernova of 1006 being most questionable, if you see what I see]. The sudden transfer of matter is thought to set off the star's cataclysmic explosion [which, again, may "set off" its companion star's explosion too, or just supply the latter with 'fuel' to extend its 'life', which I guess is what Saturn may have done for our Sun]. [In the case of small novae [plural of *nova*] the increase in brightness is about a hundredfold. See J. S. Gallagher *et al.*, *Astrophysical Letters* Aug. 15, 1976 [each minor as well as untraditional].]

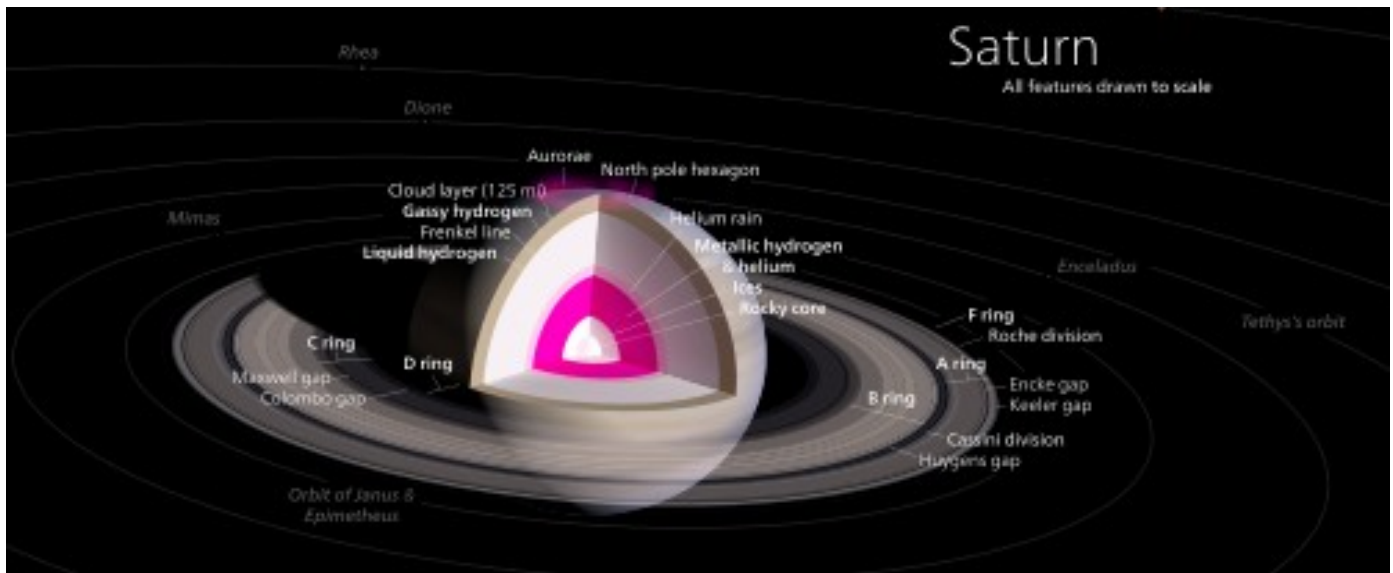
Dr. John (Jay) S. Gallagher III is an American astronomer who received his undergraduate...

...education at Princeton University... performed his graduate work at the University of Wisconsin-Madison, and was awarded a Ph.D in 1972. After graduating he held positions at the National Optical Astronomy Observatory and at the University of Illinois, and was the director of the Lowell Observatory. He is currently a Professor of Astronomy at the University of Wisconsin-Madison and the Editor of the *Astronomical Journal*.

...major scientific contributions include a review article he [co-]wrote... that convinced most astronomers that dark matter was real. [Also in collaboration] he made the first substantial studies of dwarf irregular galaxies... [and] made major contributions towards our [mis]understanding of star formation in galaxies, the formation and evolution of low mass galaxies and stellar nova.

And as usual Dr. Velikovsky 'finds the tools' that 'focus the perspective', informing us that,

With the development of spectroscopy in the nineteenth century it was found by the displacement of the spectral lines that the gases of a nova move rapidly toward the observer, as also in all other directions; the star's atmosphere expands with a velocity reaching at times over three thousand kilometers per second. [More commonly the velocities range from 1,300 to 2,500 km/sec. And this implies that "the gases" of Nova Saturn traveled the 8.5 AU to Earth in not 8 or 9, but in about 7 days. But this time no, I'm not going to do the math. Feel free.]



While the star's outer gases are hurled into space, much of the inner core remains.

And what's in Saturn's "inner core"? Evidently it's not called a *gas giant* for nothing, and what's supposedly inside makes doubtful that it could have ever 'expelled' Mercury.

As you can see by the "to scale" diagram on p.364, evidently like our Sun and many other *stars*, Saturn is believed to be made of mostly *hydrogen* and *helium*. And by its *rings* and "hexagon-shaped" *pole auroras* you can tell it's also a big *ball magnet*. And though it's size makes it likely it could *capture* a 'messenger comet' like Mercury apparently once was, being made of mostly just *hydrogen* and *helium* would seem to make it impossible for it to 'volcanically expel' such a *dense planet*, nor any *comet* that isn't mostly just *hydrogen* and/or *helium ice*. But such a *planet* could be expected to have been - in the past - a 'working star', and one

Active Volcanoes, Plate Tectonics, and the "Ring of Fire"



that has since gone *nova*. And hold on, again, because - with the help of those 'rocket scientists' - here comes the 'bare basics' of why I think so.

The diagram of **Earth's structure** on p.364 shows that Earth never used to be a *star*, except in the sense of being another one of the **wandering stars**, it's "structure" described as having...

...an outer silicate [sandy] solid crust, a highly viscous [or very thick fluid] mantle, a liquid outer core that is much less viscous [or thinner fluid] than the mantle, and a solid inner core. Scientific understanding of the internal structure of the Earth is based on observations of [1] topography and [2] bathymetry [which is the "study of underwater depth"], [3] observations of rock in outcrop [or rock 'pushed up' from underground], [4] samples ["brought to the surface from greater depths by volcanoes or volcanic activity"], [5] analysis of the seismic waves that pass through the Earth, [6] measurements of the gravitational and magnetic fields of the Earth [for determining composition by density, etc.], and [7] experiments with crystalline solids at pressures and temperatures [supposedly] characteristic of the Earth's deep interior... The ["Stiffer"] mantle is composed of silicate rocks that are rich in iron and magnesium relative to the overlying crust. Although solid, the high temperatures within the mantle cause the silicate material to be sufficiently ductile [or "to deform under tensile stress"]... [so] it can flow [very slowly] on very long timescales [and in the process really 'tug' on the 'plates' of the crust above]. Convection [or "heat transfer due to bulk movement...[including circulation] of... fluids"] of the ["Stiffer"] mantle is expressed at the surface through the motions of tectonic plates...

See the map of **Active Volcanoes, Plate Tectonics, and the "Ring of Fire"** (USGS, 1997) showing these presently "expressed" 'plate patterns' on p.365. This "bulk movement" or really *circulation* of *underground semifluid-semisolid rock* in the "Stiffer mantle", and of fully *liquid rock* in the "Outer core" is apparently not entirely

unlike *thermohaline circulation* in the *oceans*, except it's not the *circulation* of *water* above the *crust*, but of *rock* under it, and where the *rising heat* isn't because of greater *equatorial sunlight*, but it's evidently instead 1) *radiated* upward because of Earth's both *attractively* and 'gravitationally' *pressurized, very hot* "Inner core", (read, because of Earth's 'gravitational collapse', but where, as Dr. Velikovsky and I suppose, *atomic magnetic attraction* as opposed to 'gravity' is the most *significant* part of this *force*), and from there 2) the *heat circulates* upward in *liquid rock* in the "Outer core", and above that 3) the *heat circulates* further upward much more slowly in the "Stiffer mantle", this *underground circulation* being finally "expressed" in the even slower "plate movement" in the "Rigid mantle" or *crust*, which I'll call altogether *phased thermometallic radiation and convection*, these 3 phases, in other words, being: 1) the *heat radiation* phase where from the *solid* "inner core" *heat radiates* upward into 2) the 1st *heat convection* phase of *circulating liquid rock* in the "Outer core", taking it up to 3) the 2nd *heat convection* phase of *circulating semiliquid-semisolid rock* in the "Stiffer mantle", and where the 'phase 1' *solid rock*, 'phase 2' *liquid rock*, and 'phase 3' *semifluid-semisolid rock* involved is either mostly *metallic* (*iron, nickel* and/or *magnesium*) or *semimetallic* (*silicon*) *rock*. And of course this *heat radiation* and *circulation* must have *significantly cooled* and 'slowed' since The Visits of Venus and Mars last *heated* and 'stirred' Earth's *core* up so *hot*, and that is, in proportion to God's '**hot wrath**' (e.g. [Exo 22:24](#); [32:10-11](#); [Deu 9:19](#)) on those '**visits**'. But He's evidently going to be '**bringing the heat**' again sometime soon (P-PAMD).

...The inner core... is generally believed to be composed primarily of iron and some nickel. It is not necessarily a solid, but, because it is able to deflect seismic waves, it must behave as a solid in some fashion [[supposedly including radiating heat rather than transferring it by convection](#)]...

And that sounds pretty 'unstarlike' to me. Now let's look at the 'innards' of Saturn. Its *outer layer* is "gassy hydrogen". Next is seen a deep, white layer described as "liquid hydrogen". Then there is a relatively shallow, pink layer designated as "helium rain", and after that a deeper and darker pink layer identified as "metallic hydrogen", then another relatively shallow white layer of presumably *hydrogen* and/or *helium* "ices", and finally a surprisingly small, "rocky core".

And though it's true that *scientists* don't know exactly what's inside Saturn - or Earth - they aren't just taking wild guesses either. They are - wittingly or not - using **the ordinances of heaven and earth** as their guide, more commonly known as "scientific laws", using, for example,

The Ideal Gas Law: $PV = nRT$

- **P** is the pressure of the gas,
- **V** is the volume of the gas,
- **n** is the amount of gas (in *moles*, a standard number of *atoms* or *molecules*),
- **R** is the ideal, or universal, gas constant,
- **T** is the absolute temperature of the gas.

And the Ideal Gas Law, by-the-way, is derived from Boyle's Law, (hereafter referred to as **our brother** Bob's Law, and it's because I'd like to get to know him that I'm calling him 'Bob'), who discovered that the *pressure* of a *gas* is *inversely proportional* to its *volume*, which again, is integral to **the ordinances of heaven and earth**. And you may **remember** that it was later discovered that this *inverse proportionality* in Bob's Law and the Ideal Gas Law only works within the "ideal"

range of *temperatures* and *pressures*. Outside this range, at extreme *temperatures* and *pressures*, these *laws* fail, which again just further **'expanded'** our **'neverendingly growing' revelations** about God's **ordinances of heaven and earth**.

And for a brief introduction, Robert ('Bob') William Boyle, FRS, was a 17th Century...

...Anglo-Irish natural philosopher [which back then just meant 'scientist'], chemist, physicist...

largely regarded today as the first modern chemist, and therefore one of the founders of modern chemistry, and one of the pioneers of modern experimental scientific method. He is best known for Boyle's law, which describes the inversely proportional relationship between the absolute pressure and volume of a gas... Among his works, *The Sceptical Chymist* is seen as a cornerstone book in the field of chemistry. He was a devout and pious Anglican and is noted for his writings in theology [evidently largely thanks to The Protestant Reformation].

Also concerning *chemistry* **we** talked about *melting* and *boiling points*, or the different *points* where *solids* (made of *atoms*, and some *compounds* made of *molecules*) *melt* into *liquids*, and the next *points* where *liquids* *boil* into *gases*, and the 3rd *points* - leading to the *fourth phase* or *state of matter*, *plasma* - achieved by further raising *temperature* and/or *pressure*. And you should know, even if you can't see it in the Ideal Gas Law *equation*, that if the *temperature* of a *volume* of *gas* - or a *liquid* too for that matter - rises, the *pressure* does too, and vice versa.

And again, even though Dr. Velikovsky and I think our beloved 'rocket scientists', etc., have an 'outdated view' of 'gravity', the *magnitude* of this actual *force of attraction* of *solids* and *liquids*, (though not of *gases*), is not really in dispute, because by being able to measure and account for this *attracting force* - if not the cause of it - it nonetheless allows them to amazingly accurately measure the *mass* and *density* of *planets*, etc. Evidence of this skill is seen in how amazing *aerospace engineers* are. And yes, that would be 'rocket scientists'. Remember they have used a *spacecraft* to 'blast a crater' in a relatively tiny *comet* traveling thousands of miles an hour in order to collect samples, and such *spacecrafts* have *orbited comets*, and have landed a "lander module" on a *comet*. And to make such 'shots' they have to know all the variables - including the *mass* and *orbits* of all major *objects* in our Solar System, because these *objects* would to some extent all be *attracting* such 'far-ranging' *spacecrafts*.

And remember that some of this is a review of **SECTION 2**, including of the Stardust space-craft launched in February 1999, which collected particles from the *coma* of Comet Wild 2 and returned the samples to Earth in January 2006, and of the Deep Impact *probe* that in July 2005 "blasted a crater" on Comet Tempel 1 to study its interior, after which it was renamed EPOXI and made a "flyby" of Comet Hartley 2 in 2010. And since my early draft of **SECTION 2**, the European Space Agency's Rosetta *probe* that was en route to Comet Churyumov-Gerasimenko has since gone into *orbit* around the *comet* and "placed a small lander on its surface", it being the *comet* that will be passing Virgo September 23rd. Also **OSIRIS-REx** (Origins, Spectral Interpretation, Resource Identification, Security, Regolith Explorer - rendering, p.367), NASA's first "comet harpoon", which I indirectly mentioned in **SECTION 2** as still "developing", and which is actually an 'asteroid harpoon', but nonetheless for returning samples to Earth, was launched in 2016, and is now headed for 101955 Benu, "a carbonaceous asteroid", and is projected to "return a



sample to Earth in 2023 for detailed analysis". "Regolith" is defined as "mantle rock", or "the layer of disintegrated and decomposed rock fragments, including soil, just above the solid rock". By "Resource Identification" they mean they're looking for 'building blocks of life', but maybe they're also thinking of ultimately mining this flying, oversized 'charcoal briquette'. And remember one of the *probes* functions is named "Security". I wonder what that could be about?

And maybe you knew that in just a 'Moon shot', a *rocket* takes off in a direction no where near directly 'aimed at the Moon', because the 'rocket scientists' take into account that the *rocket* will be leaving Earth at the *velocity* the Earth is 'spinning' under it, and at takeoff it switches to instead being primarily influenced by *rocket thrust*, and secondarily by the *atomic magnetic attraction/ gravity* of Earth, which is how they must 'aim' for the Moon. Or in other words, its course to the Moon isn't a straight line, but a spiral one.

And I can't resist inserting another brief review of *chemistry* basics here too, and that is, of the fundamentals of *atoms*, or groups of *atoms* called *molecules*. By 'weight' they are mostly made of just *protons* and *neutrons*, (which 'usually' consist of 3 *quarks* each, and 'reside' in the *nucleus* of *atoms*), and to a much lesser extent *electrons*, (which have "wave mass" and 'reside' outside the *nucleus*, the *protons* and *neutrons* - or *nucleons* - being a couple thousand times 'heavier' than *electrons* and their 'cousins', the other 5 "flavors" of *leptons*, each of which have 'alter egos' with the opposite charge, except 'debatably' *neutrinos* which are *neutral leptons*).

And even more broadly, it's really the "family" of *hadrons*, *particles* made of *quarks*, including the *baryons* (the "family" of *nucleons*), and the 'extremely-short-existing' *mesons*, added to the 'significantly-lighter' *lepton* "family" that account for most all the *significant or measurable mass*, which covers the 'bulk' of the *fermions* (the "family" of *particles* with *mass*), leaving a 'crowd' of 'extremely-difficult-to-measure' *particles* - I mean it takes facilities like CERN, where *hadrons* *accelerated* to near *light speed* 'crash' into each other, and very briefly 'break out' such elusive little 'particles' - all of which are generally classified as in the "family" of *bosons*, and generally considered "massless if not in motion", and that is, near to faster than *light speed* "motion".

And you should **know** that *hydrogen atoms* (chemical symbol: H) are the 'lightest' of all the 100+ *elements* on the Periodic Table (read, 'the table of all the *atoms* God **created** to make and operate His Creation') because it 'normally' has just one *proton*, one *neutron*, and one *electron*. *Helium* (He), the second 'lightest', has 2 *protons*, 2 *neutrons*, and 2 *electrons*. *Lithium* (Li) is third with 3 of each, and so on, to where *iron* (Fe) has 26 of each, and is therefore over 26 times 'heavier' than *hydrogen*, (and evidently plentiful in Earth's *core*). Jumping to *lead* (Pb) reveals an *element* with 82 of each, which is 82 times 'heavier' than *hydrogen*, and which reminds me

again of that 1980's *Science News* article I read, which informed me that 2 *feet* of *lead* can stop all 'solar-blown' *alpha particles* 'dead in their tracks', and that 20 *feet* of *water* can as well.

And I said all that to say that *cosmochemists* really do know at what *temperatures* and *pressures* *hydrogen* and *helium* will exist as *gas*, *liquid*, *metal*, *ice*, etc. according to the corresponding known and/or calculable conditions, and especially when given additional extraterrestrially-obtained *data* with the help of *aerospace engineers*. And *spectrographic light* converted after coming from *objects* in *space* really does tell them what the *objects* are made of, and somewhat how fast and in what direction they are traveling too. So all you need are *cosmochemists* and *aerospace engineers* who can do the math, which at this point I'm 'forced' to

leave to them, but surely they can identify at various depths in a 'hydrogen-helium ball' the *states* of these *elements*, and can accurately determine by its *attraction* to and of neighboring *objects* how strong that *force* is, and thereby also approximately determine its *mass* and *size*.

And I say "approximately" only because Dr. Velikovsky and I expect that 'masses' and 'size' may be slightly miscalculated due to using only the 'out-dated' concept of 'gravity', and due to the incomplete consideration given to the concept and effects of our Sun's 'Solar-System-spanning' *magnetic field*, and due to the ignorance of the concept and effects of *atomic magnetic attraction* and *repulsion*, evidently the *more significant force* involved in the *attraction of matter*. However again, they are apparently already accurately enough measuring the 'net magnitude' of this so-called 'gravitational force', exceptions being where *small meteors* 'bounce off' our *atmosphere*, and where it is expected that *space* can be 'bent' enough to make 'wormholes' or 'stargates' big enough to 'drive' supposed 'alien spaceships' through them.

And by the way, the January/February 2017 edition of *Discover* magazine reported that *scientists* dug a couple deep holes, one in Washington State and one in Louisiana, to build the Laser Interferometer Gravitational Observatory (LIGO), an *interferometer* because "LIGO is akin to a new kind of [double-linked] telescope", which by "extremely sensitive laser measurements inside miles-long tunnels caught the [*gravity*] waves' tiny stretches and squeezes of space-time". And they don't hide how "tiny" these "stretches and squeezes" are, revealing that, "The disturbance [or *gravity wave*] was so small, it would warp the 25 trillion miles of the nearest star system by just the width of a human hair - but LIGO saw it." And what *force* was required for LIGO to 'see' such a "tiny...disturbance". Well, "The first colliding binary black holes that LIGO detected were 36 and 29 solar masses - far bigger than expected. The second were [of *smaller black holes* that were] more in line with current theories." In other words, *scientists* now suppose that it took the *collision* of the most powerful *objects* in the Universe, of two, "bigger than expected" *black holes*, to get a 'human-hair width', 'star-system wide', *gravity wave*.

And I mean that though apparently the writer of the article, and most all his readers are duped, surely the *scientists* involved more likely are not, because if I can 'see it', how could they not realize - though choosing to ignore it - that they actually just confirmed that there's no *force* 'out there' big enough to 'bend' *space* into 'wormholes' or 'stargates'. And we already know that *space* doesn't really 'bend' *light* around *stars*, because we know that this instead happens because of another *force*, the one that maintains *magnetic fields* around them - though since **the curse** at an **ordained rate of decay** - and that would be *fields our brother* Dr. Faraday long ago proved work just fine for 'bending' the *light* that passes through them.

And I also mean - putting together what CERN has confirmed about the existence of *higgs bosons* and therefore *gravitons*, and what LIGO has about their relative strength - that they've apparently only together helped confirm that *gravity* plays a much smaller part in the 'net force' that *attracts matter* to itself than is popularly 'believed'. However I should expect that there are still unconfirmed 'ranges' wherein these *subatomic gravity particles* operate differently too.

Nevertheless, by 'understanding' these God-created 'parameters' - as much as they do and whether **acknowledging** God in the process or not - these *cosmochemists* and *aerospace engineers* provide invaluable information about Creation. And though too many nowadays who are **unbelievers**, and even some who are **believers**, do not report findings against their faith in the Theory of

Evolution, **we can** nonetheless – as needed – dig through their ‘trash’ for the ‘elements’ of **truth** therein, in order to better **understand** our God, kind of like we’re doing with Dr. Velikovsky, because **by the Spirit** this **can** ‘**insure**’ ^{H983: G4136}, at least for **us**, that ‘**increasingly brighter lights**’ are ahead (uh-huh, MP-PAMD at that).

"Star of the Sun"

Saturn is not a conspicuous planet in the sky. Were it not for its sluggish movement, an unaided eye would hardly distinguish it from the surrounding stars. In many ancient sources Saturn is called "sun." The usual name for Saturn in Chaldean astronomy was Alap-Shamas, meaning "Star of the Sun"...

[Joachim Menant [17th Century “French magistrate and orientalist”, who “became best known by his studies on cuneiform inscriptions”], *La bibliotheque du Palais du Ninive* [*The Library of the Palace of Nineveh*] (Paris,1890), p.99.]

...Diodorus of Sicily reported that the Chaldeans [- the most “dominant” of which were the Babylonians who spoke “Aramaic” -] called Cronos (Saturn) by the name Helios, or the sun, and he explained that this was because Saturn was the most conspicuous of the planets.

[He calls Saturn “*epiphanestaton*” – the most conspicuous (II. 30. 3-4).] [Dr. Joseph Marie Auguste Bidez, [late 19th/early 20th Century “classical philologist and a Belgian historian” who was “a professor at the University of Ghent”, and “one of the most prominent scholars of Hellenism and of the history of late antiquity, especially of the third and fourth centuries...”, and who became “a member of the Institut de France, the British Academy, the Academy of Berlin, the Academies of Copenhagen and Gothenburg”, and “received the title of Doctor honoris causa from the universities of Athens, Brussels, Lille, Paris and Utrecht], *Revue de Philologie* XXIX (1905), pp.319-320 drew attention to the fact that one of the best manuscripts of the Platonic *Epinomis*, the *Parisinus* 1807A, has “Sun” where “Saturn” would be expected, and in the passage where the role of the planets is discussed Bidez commented: “...a designation qui fait du Saturne ‘l’astre du soleil’ se trouve attestee par un temoignage nouveau, extremement remarquable a cause de son anciennete.” [“...a designation that makes Saturn ‘the star of the sun’ is witnessed by a new, extremely remarkable testimony because of its oldness”] Cf. F. Boll, “*Kronos-Helios*,” [“Saturn-Sun”] *Archiv fuer Religionswissenschaft* XIX [*Archive for Religious Science* 19] (1919), p.344. The author cites also other examples. In 1869 a stele dedicated to “Kronos-Helios” [again, “Saturn-Sun”] was found in Beirut [Lebanon]. See Georges Colonna Ceccaldi, [19th Century younger brother to Tiburce Colonna Ceccaldi, who was “Consul in Larnaca (Cyprus) from 1866 to 1869” and “led his excavations at Idalion and Golgoi with his brother Georges (1840-1879), attached to the Consulate of Beirut from 1866 to 1871”, where they “make stampings of inscriptions, drawings and photographs”, and where “Georges receives free access to his collections”, “Tiburce” becoming the name of “a collection of sculptures, terracotta and vases that is now preserved in the Louvre”], “*Stele inedite de Beyrouth*,” [“Stele Inscription of Beirut”], *Revue Archeologique* 23 [*Archeological Review* 23] (1872), Vol. I, pp.253-256. On the solar aspect of Saturn’s cult in Roman Africa, see Marcel Leglay, [or Le Glay, “20th-century French historian and archaeologist, specializing in ancient Rome”, who “focused in particular on Roman religion and North Africa during Antiquity, especially from Latin epigraphic literature”, (read, ‘writing in Latin about epigraphics’, i.e., about “inscription, especially on a building, statue, or the like”), “his monumental thesis [- pun

intended?], dedicated to the cult of Saturn in Africa... [fits within] his three favorite areas”, *Saturne Africain* [*African Saturn*] (Paris,1966), pp.183-187, 229.]

Diodorus of Sicily, or...

Diodorus Siculus... was a Greek historian. He is known for writing the monumental universal history *Bibliotheca historica*, much of which survives, between 60 and 30 BC. It is arranged in three parts. The first covers mythic history up to the destruction of Troy, arranged geographically, describing regions around the world from Egypt, India and Arabia to Greece and Europe. The second covers the Trojan War [ending in “the destruction of Troy” by the Greeks, [evidently with a little help from Mars](#)] to the death of Alexander the Great. The third covers the period to about 60 BC. *Bibliotheca*, meaning 'library', acknowledges that he was drawing on the work of many other authors.

But getting back to the supposedly former, “Shining Star”, Saturn,

...Hyginus also wrote that Saturn was called “Sol.”

[“*Secunda stella dicitur solis quam alii Saturni dixerunt. Hanc Eratosthenes a Solis filio Phaethonta appellatam dicit*”. [“The second is called a star other than the sun said Saturni [?]. This Eratosthenes, nicknamed *Pentathlos*, makes the case.”] Gaius Julius Hyginus [“a Latin author, a pupil of the famous [Lucius] Cornelius Alexander Polyhistor, and a freedman of Caesar Augustus”, who was “elected superintendent of the Palatine library by Augustus”], *De Astronomia* II. 42, 8-10. Cf. Prof., Dr. Auguste Bouche-Leclercq [- that late 19th/early 20th Century “professor of ancient literature” here *tbh* further: “... educated at seminaries... in Paris”, after which he traveled as a “private tutor... through Italian and German cities”, then settled as a “grammar school teacher at Meaux (near Paris)”, until he “received his doctorate in philosophy” and became “professor of ancient literature at the philosophical faculty of Montpellier”, “one of the oldest universities in Europe” in the “south-east of France”, after which he became “professor of ancient history in Paris in 1887, member of the Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres in 1898 and officer of the Legion of Honour in 1903”, his “research centred on the ancient history of religion and the history of Hellenism” including “important works about the Ptolemaic dynasty and the Seleucid Empire”, and he “translated the works of German historians into French”], *L’astrologie grecque* (Paris,1899), p.93, n.2.]...

And I’m not sure who Saturni, or Saturnus was, but my encyclopedia tells me that Eratosthenes of Cyrene, the late 3rd/early 2nd Century BC Greek polymath, was nicknamed *Pentathlos* (Latin: *Phaethonta*) because, like the Pentathlon competitors in the Olympics, he was “knowledgeable in every area of learning”. He also became “chief librarian at the Library of Alexandria... [and] invented the discipline of geography, including the terminology used today”, but is...

...best known for being the first [[post-Visits-of-Mars](#)] person to calculate the circumference of the Earth, which he did by applying a measuring system using stadia, a standard unit of measure during that time period. His calculation was remarkably accurate. He was also the first to calculate the [[new](#)] tilt of the Earth's axis (again with remarkable accuracy). Additionally, he may have accurately calculated the [[new](#)] distance from the Earth to the Sun and invented the [[now needed](#)] leap day. He created the first map of the world, incorporating parallels and meridians based on the available geographic knowledge of his era.

And there's more 'babel' about that "Shining Star", Saturn, Dr. Velikovsky reporting that...

...In the Babylonian astrological texts the word Shamash (Sun) was used to designate Saturn: "We learn from the notes written by the astrologers that by the word 'sun' we must understand the 'star of the sun,' i.e., Saturn"...

[R. C. Thompson, *The Reports of the Magicians and Astrologers of Nineveh and Babylon in the British Museum* [<https://warburg.sas.ac.uk/pdf/FAH10b2344403v2.pdf>], Vol. II (London,1900), pp.xxv-xxvi (nos.174 and 176).] [Cf. Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, "Sun and Saturn," *Revue d'Assyriologie et d'Archeologie Orientale* [*Review of Assyriology and Eastern Archeology*] VII (1910); and idem, *Die Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens* (Giessen,1905), Vol.II, p.483 n.4; 578, n.4.]

Professor Dr. Reginald Campbell Thompson...

...was a British archaeologist, assyriologist, and cuneiformist. He excavated at Nineveh, Ur [Abraham's hometown], Nebo [evidently not finding Moses] and Carchemish [where Nebuchadnezzar and Ramses II fought, a "revolutionary reconstruction of the past" that Dr. Velikovsky handles in his last published work in his *Ages In Chaos* series, *Ramses II and His Time*], among many other sites.

[He was] ...educated at Colet Court, St. Paul's School and Caius College, Cambridge, where he read oriental (Hebrew and Aramaic) languages.

In 1918 [the region of] Mesopotamia fell into British hands, and the trustees of the British Museum applied to have an archaeologist attached to the army in the field to protect antiquities from injury. As a captain in the Intelligence Service serving in the region and a former assistant in the British Museum, R. C. Thompson was commissioned to start the work. After a short investigation of Ur, he dug at Shahrain [or Tell Abu Shahrain, otherwise known as Eridu, where that Akkadian seal of the god Ea was also found] and the mounds at Tell al-Lahm [or Kuara, Kisiga or Ku'ara, "an archaeological site in

Dhi Qar Province (Iraq)", where, "According to the Sumerian king list, Kuara was also the home of Dumuzid, the fisher-man, legendary third king of Uruk", and this "city's patron deity was Meslamtaea (Nergal ["related to the planet Mars", a "fiery god of destruction and war"])", and, "In Sumerian mythology, Kuara was also considered the birthplace of the god Marduk Asarluhi [later Jupiter], Enki's [or Ea's] son" [See the "**Bronze head of an Akkadian king** unearthed in Nineveh by Campbell Thompson's team" on p.371; **Accad... in the land of Shinar**, [Gen 10:10](#), (or "Akkad" in other 'modern translations'), is the original city of the Akkadians].



After the First World War he held a fellowship at Merton College, Oxford...

He died in 1941 aged 64 while serving in the Home Guard River Patrol on the River Thames.

And in the first sentence of his *Introduction to Ramses II and His Time*, Dr. Velikovsky writes,

The more proper title for this volume would have been *Ramses II and Nebuchadnezzar*, since both of them play dominant roles in this volume, or in this part of history. But revealing in this way the subject of the book – and the contemporaneity of two well-known figures of antiquity, separated in conventionally written history by seven hundred years – would have added sensation to what is perforce [or already] a revolutionary reconstruction of the past.

And continuing with the ‘babel’ about ‘illustrious’, ‘forceful’, as well as ‘stormy careers’...

...Ninib was the Babylonian name for Saturn: "Ninib in various places is said to shine like the sun." He was known as UT-GAL-LU, the "great sun of storms."

[Peter Christian Albrecht] Jensen, [late 19th/early 20th Century “German altarientist [or Assyriologist] and professor at the Philipps-University of Marburg”], *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* (Strassburg, 1890), pp.116,140.[Cf. Dr. Morris Jastrow, *Die Religion Babylonien und Assyriens*, Vol.I, pp.57,154.]

Note (translated from a German encyclopedia): “Ancient Near Eastern Studies” or...

Ancient Oriental Studies is the science of language and culture of the ancient Orient. Their areas of research ranges from the appearance of the first cuneiform texts in the late 4th millennium BC [- a little over 3,000 years before Christ]... up to the last handed out ciphertext [cuneiform texts that were translated into less ancient languages such as Greek and Latin] in the first century [AD]... Since the first major texts were from ancient Assyria, the ancient oriental tradition in Germany is commonly also called asyriology. The geographic research area of the ancient oriental traditions covers the areas of ancient Mesopotamia [or Sumer or Sumeria] (today in the area of Iraq and Syria) as well as the Levantine coast (today Syria and Lebanon). More marginal areas of research interest include Kleinasien (especially Anatolia) and Persia (now Iran) as well as the so-called Amarna period [which provided ‘correspondences’ relating to the ‘split-tribes’ period in Israel that Dr. Velikovsky and I will get to in SECTION 11] as well as Egypt.

And though Jupiter inevitably took over this ‘**chief**’ role, even ‘latercomers’ like...

The Greeks used to call Saturn *Phaenon*, "the shining one."

[Cicero, *De Natura Deorum* II. 52.] [Cf. Manetho, *Apotelesmaticorum libri sex [Astrological Causality Book 6, is my best guess] IV. 14 [https://archive.org/details/bub_gb_nOvnYRYt9KkC]*. Cf. also J. Geffcken, “Eine gnostische Vision,” *op. cit.*, p.699. “The Shining Star” was a designation for Saturn in Babylonia. See for instance, an inscription of Nabonidus in James B. Pritchard ed.,

Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament (Princeton, 1950), p.310. In India the appellation of the sun, *arki*, was also applied to Saturn. Robert Kyle Grenville Temple ["an American author best known for his controversial book *The Sirius Mystery: New Scientific Evidence of Alien Contact 5,000 Years Ago...* first published in 1976 though he began writing it in 1967, with a second edition in 1998 with a new title... [the book presenting] the hypothesis that the Dogon people [today "an ethnic group living in the central plateau region of Mali, in West Africa"] preserve a tradition of contact with intelligent extraterrestrial beings from the Sirius star system", and that they were aware that Sirius is a *binary star system* millennia before *telescopes* revealed it, though certainly not before the *water canopy lens* did], writes (*The Sirius Mystery*, [New York, 1976], p.180): In Sanskrit again *arka* means "belonging or relating to the sun." *Arkam* means "as far as the sun, even to the sun inclusively." *Arki* has become a name for Saturn, thought at that time to be the most distant planet. *Arc* means "to shine, be brilliant," and can mean "to cause to shine." *Arkin* means "radiant with light." Arkaja, the name often applied to Saturn, designates it as an offspring of the Sun (*Markandeya Purana*).]

A French encyclopedia describes Manetho, or...

Manethon of Sebennytos... (3rd century BC)... [as] an Egyptian priest who wrote a History of Egypt (*Aegyptiaca*) in three volumes in Greek during the reign of Ptolemy II, but no doubt at the request of his predecessor Ptolemy I Soter. Manetho was an Egyptian from Sebennytos, a city in the Nile delta [in Lower Egypt] and the last capital of the Nectanebo [- associated with the worship of the Egyptian god Horus, inspired by the Babylonian god Tammuz, who was believed to be the reincarnation of his father Nimrod, and the son of Semiramis, this 'couple' inspiring the Egyptian god Osiris and his wife Isis, where, "The most commonly encountered family relationship describes Horus as the son of Isis and Osiris"]. As a priest, he [Manetho] probably had access to the royal lists of temple libraries, but also to folk tales about various mythical pharaohs. It is to Manetho that we owe the division into thirty dynasties the sovereigns [or pharaohs] of Egypt, always used by Egyptologists with some modifications [or 'adjustments', which would be more '*scripturally defined*' as *wicked devices*], as it makes the analysis of Egyptian history more convenient [- especially to 'discredit' *scripture*]...

And this is a mess that **we**, with your **patience**, must now confront, as it has been used by 'historians' to 'distort' ancient history by hundreds of years, including misplacing Ramses II, the contemporary of Nebuchadnezzar, "by seven hundred years" before his actual time. And I mean suchlike and other **wicked devices**, all surely inspired by our **adversary the devil**, are relentlessly used to 'discredit' **scripture**. However my favorite American encyclopedia does a **good** ^{G18} job '**overcomng**' ^{G3528} this particular **evil** ^{G2556} ([Rom 12:21](#)) by confronting the enigma that is Manetho, and that is, by 'qualifying' his 'identity' by informing us that...

...[He] is believed to have been an Egyptian priest from Sebennytus... who lived during the Ptolemaic era in the early 3rd century BC.

The original Egyptian version of Manetho's name is lost, but some speculate it means "Gift of Thoth" [[Mercury](#)], "Beloved of Thoth", "Truth of

Thoth", "Beloved of Neith" ["a great mother goddess", which apparently was inspired by Semiramis too], or "Lover of Neith" [etc.]... In the Greek language, the earliest fragments ([1] the inscription of uncertain date on the base of a marble bust from the temple of Serapis at Carthage [- "The cult of Serapis... [being] introduced during the 3rd century BC on the orders of Ptolemy I of Egypt as a means to unify the Greeks and Egyptians in his realm", where, "The god was depicted as Greek in appearance, but with Egyptian trappings, and combined iconography from a great many cults, signifying both abundance and resurrection" or reincarnation,] and [2] the ["rendering" of] Jewish historian Flavius Josephus of the 1st century CE)... [with both "fragments" alike "rendering"] his name as... *Manethōn*, so the Latinised rendering of his name here is given as Manetho (the same way that *Platōn* is rendered "Plato"). Other Greek [and Latin] renderings [abound]...

Although no sources for the dates of his life and death remain, Manetho is associated with the reigns of Ptolemy I Soter (323-283 BC) by Plutarch (c.46-120 AD) and according to George Syncellus [again, that late 8th/early 9th Century "Byzantine [read, 'Orthodox Catholic'] chronicler and ecclesiastic"], Manetho links himself directly with Ptolemy II Philadelphus (285-246 BC). If [and it's a big "if",] the mention of someone named Manetho in the *Hibeh Papyri*, dated to 241/40 BC, is in fact the celebrated author of the *Aegyptiaca*, then Manetho may well have been working during the reign of Ptolemy III Euergetes (246-222 BC) as well, but at a very advanced age. [HOWEVER, yes, it's a big one too...] Though the historicity of Manetho of Sebennytus was taken for granted by Josephus and later authors the question as to whether he actually existed remains problematic [at best]. The Manetho of the *Hibeh Papyri* has no title [which apparently means that the remains of his "letter" doesn't reveal him as a priest, or as holding any other particular office,] and this letter deals with affairs in Upper Egypt [Southern 'upper elevation' Egypt] not Lower Egypt [including the Nile Delta] where our Manetho is thought to have functioned as a chief priest. The name Manetho is rare but there is no reason *a priori* [read, 'logically' or 'necessarily'] to assume that the Manetho of the ['unofficial'] *Hibeh Papyri* ["letter"] is the historian from Sebennytus who is thought [or alleged] to have authored the *Aegyptiaca* for Ptolemy Philadelphus [and there are lots of reasons why not to think so].

Manetho is described as a native Egyptian and Egyptian would have been his mother tongue. Though the topics he supposedly wrote about dealt with Egyptian matters, he is said to have written exclusively in the Greek language for a Greek-speaking audience. Other literary works attributed to him include *Against Herodotus* [- the 5th Century BC "Greek historian"], *The Sacred Book, On Antiquity and Religion, On Festivals, On the Preparation of Kyphi* [- *Kyphi* being an "incense that was used in Ancient Egypt for religious and medical purposes"], and the *Digest of Physics*. The treatise *Book of Sothis* has also been attributed to Manetho. It is important to note that not one of these works are actually attested [or referenced by another author] during the Ptolemaic period when Manetho of Sebennytus is said to have lived. In fact, they are not mentioned in any source prior to the 1st century AD. This would be a gap of three centuries between the

time the *Aegyptiaca* was supposedly composed and its first attestation. The gap is even larger for the other works attributed to Manetho such as *The Sacred Book* which is mentioned for the very first time by Eusebius [- that "Greek historian of Christianity, exegete, and Christian polemicist", and "scholar of the Biblical canon",] in the 4th century AD.

If [- another big "If" -] Manetho of Sebennytus was an historical figure he was probably a priest of the sun god Ra at Heliopolis (according to George Syncellus, he was the chief priest). He was considered by Plutarch [- that late 1st/early 2nd Century "Greek biographer and essayist",] to be an authority on the cult of Serapis (a derivation of Osiris [and Horus,] and Apis [and Osorapis, both earlier Egyptian versions of Nimrod and Tammuz]). Serapis itself was a Greco-Macedonian version of the Egyptian cult, probably started after Alexander the Great's establishment of Alexandria in Egypt. A statue of the god was imported in 286 by Ptolemy I Soter (or in 278 by Ptolemy II Philadelphus) as [Publius (or Gaius) Cornelius] Tacitus [- that late 1st/early 2nd Century "senator and a historian of the Roman Empire",] and Plutarch attest...

The earliest known mention of the *Aegyptiaca* is by the [1st Century] Jewish historian Josephus in his work *Contra Apionem* ("Against Apion"), which can be dated after C.E. 94. Before this, no writer whose work survives mentions the *Aegyptiaca* in at least 300 years; this raises a serious question and legitimate doubt as to its real date and authorship. The notion that an official and authoritative history of Egypt composed in Greek at the request of Ptolemy II Philadelphus could go unnoticed or ignored by several professional scholars and Alexandrian librarians for centuries until Josephus is hardly credible. The work may have instead been written in the Roman period and not that long before it is first mentioned. If so, the real author, who some scholars speculate was the historian Ptolemy of Mendes, an educated Greek who was born and raised in Egypt and became a priest, attributed the contents of the three-volume history to Manetho in order to give the work credibility [and to 'discredit' *scripture*]. According to Clement of Alexandria (c. 150-c.215 AD) [- that "Christian theologian" who was "familiar with classical Greek philosophy and literature", and was "influenced by Hellenistic philosophy to a greater extent than any other Christian thinker of his time, and in particular by Plato and the Stoics"], Ptolemy of Mendes composed a history of Egypt in three books, during the time of emperor Augustus. Clement cites numerous authors in his writings and he had access to the library of Alexandria but he never mentions Manetho or Manetho's history in three books. The same may be said for Tatian [of Adiabene, Tatian the Syrian, or Tatian the Assyrian] (c. 120-c. 180 AD) ["a Syrian Christian writer and theologian of the 2nd century... [whose] most influential work is the Diatessaron, a Biblical paraphrase, or "harmony", of the four gospels that became the standard text of the four gospels in the Syriac-speaking churches until the 5th-century"], [and he was] another extremely well read Christian author of the 2nd century AD. In his *Oratio ad Graecos* (Address to the Greeks), Tatian mentions only Ptolemy of Mendes as "the interpreter of their [Egyptian] affairs." He mentions virtually every writer who touched upon his

subjects of interest, such as historical chronology, but no direct mention of Manetho is ever made. Tatian writes:

Of the Egyptians also there are [reportedly] accurate chronicles. Ptolemy, not the king, but a priest of Mendes, is the interpreter [read, 'distorter'] of their affairs. This writer, narrating the acts of the kings [or pharaohs], says that the departure of the Jews from Egypt to the places whither they went occurred in the time of king Amosis, under the leadership of Moses. He thus speaks: "Amosis lived in the time of king Inachus." After him, Apion the grammarian, a man most highly esteemed [especially by himself, *tbb* shortly], in the fourth book of his *Aegyptiaca* (there are [not 3 but] five books of his), besides many other things, says that Amosis destroyed Avaris in the time of the Argive Inachus, as the Mendesian Ptolemy [and that is, Ptolemy of Mendes] wrote in his annals.

The name *Amosis* (Ἀμωσις) is the Greek rendering of the royal Egyptian name of Ahmose [who allied with King Saul to defeat the 'Amalekite-Assyrian', "Hyksos", "king-shepherds" at Avaris], and it [the name Ahmose] was used for the first king of the XVIIIth [18th] dynasty in the edition of the *Aegyptiaca* that Eusebius consulted in order to make his epitome [or "condensed account"] of the work. [And this story is accurate enough, except the 'fabricated kings list' attached to it is used to greatly 'displace' when it actually occurred, as Dr. Velikovsky reveals in *Ages In Chaos*, which we'll cover in SECTION 11.] According to Tertullian (c. 155-c. 240 AD), Ptolemy of Mendes wrote later than and "followed" Manetho. [Uh-huh.] This statement has usually been [mis]taken to mean that Ptolemy of Mendes consulted and commented on Manetho in his writings. It may also [or instead] mean that Ptolemy of Mendes is responsible for everything we currently think we know about Manetho. It is very unlikely that Tatian, Apion, and Clement were unaware of Manetho's history in three books, but according to Tatian, Apion read and followed Ptolemy of Mendes when he wrote his own history of Egypt in five books. Hence it may be plausibly suggested that Tatian, Apion, and Clement all understood that Ptolemy of Mendes was the actual composer of the work entitled the *Aegyptiaca* in three books and that Ptolemy of Mendes claimed to be the transmitter [read, 'impersonator'] of Manetho's words. In this case the work was not an anonymous or pseudonymous work, but one wherein Ptolemy of Mendes explicitly [and falsely] claimed he was reproducing the words of an important Egyptian high priest who [allegedly] lived three centuries earlier.

And this is where I pause to say that Apion was a late 1st Century BC/early 1st Century AD "Hellenized Egyptian grammarian, sophist, and [or but] commentator on [his "love" of] Homer", who evidently had "an extraordinary reputation for his extensive knowledge and his versatility as an orator", but by all testimony was overcome by his "ostentatious vanity". And I said "but" because by identifying him as a "sophist", I'm guessing he was another in the growing number of "elite" who were guilty of "corrupting the minds of the youth... and of impiety", and that is, another subverter of society in general, as he was likely another '*insider*' of his *master* Satan *working deceitfully* to diminish '*planet-god*' *worship* and

advance **'self idolatry'**, and he apparently did so in spite of his "love" of Homer, who I'd have to guess from his "epic poems", *The Iliad* and *The Odyssey*, and because he likely lived in the 7th Century BC, and within a century of The Last Visit of Mars, was a fully committed **'planet-god' worshipper**. But I should acknowledge that his character Odysseus' long quarrel with Poseidon (Neptune), causing his long "odyssey" wherein he struggles to get back home to Ithica after his 'gift-horse' victory in the Trojan War, was all because he took all the credit and didn't acknowledge Poseidon's help, and that this is arguably the **'deceitfully worked'** basis for the beginning of the rise of 'elite impiety' in otherwise 'uncorrupted society', and that is, the beginning of the rise of **'self-idolatry'** over **'planet-god' worship**.

And I have to introduce **our brother** Tertullian, who was "a prolific early Christian author from Carthage [in present day Tunisia, the closest land across the Mediterranean Sea to Italy] in the Roman province of Africa", and who was "an early Christian apologist and a polemicist against heresy, including contemporary Christian Gnosticism", and he has been called "the father of Latin Christianity" and "the founder of Western theology.", which, **'unfortunately'**, "is a term referring to the scope of Christianity which developed in the areas of the former Western Roman Empire", consisting "of the Latin... Roman Catholic Church (in contrast to the Eastern churches in communion with Rome [or not]), [this Roman Catholic **leaven** [G2219](#) inappropriately **'lumped'** [G5445](#) together with] the Waldensians, Hussites, and a wide variety of Protestant denominations, including the Anglicans, Anabaptists, Calvinists, Lutherans, and others", and so this "name is [**'deceptively'**] applied in order to distinguish these [both Catholic and Protestant churches] from Eastern [Orthodox] Christianity".

Tertullian "is perhaps most famous for being the first writer in Latin known to use the term *trinity* (Latin: *trinitas*)", but also for being "influenced by" a so-called "Stoic [read, 'ascetic' or 'modest and self-denying'] philosophy", who, tellingly enough, "wrote his understanding of the three members of the trinity after becoming a Montanist", or after becoming a "defender" of this so-called "cult", one "known by its adherents as the New Prophecy... [which was actually] an early Christian movement of the late 2nd [to at least the 8th] century", and that is, at least until Byzantine "Emperor Leo III ordered the conversion and baptism of its members... [who reportedly] refused, locked themselves in their houses of worship, set the buildings on fire and perished", or more likely, since the author of this entry acknowledges that "much of what is known about Montanism comes from anti-Montanist sources", these "members", read, **martyrs**, were instead burned alive inside their dwellings by order of Emperor Leo.

And these "adherents" were at some point "referred to by the name of its founder, Montanus", who evidently "held the basic tenets of Christian doctrine of the wider Church, although believing in new revelations and ecstasies [- hopefully, and at least originally, involving actually being **filled with the Spirit** or **the Holy Ghost**], [and so they were mostly] unapproved by the wider Church; the Bishop of Rome ultimately condemned the movement as heretical and excommunicated its adherents [which, when and if this really happened, may have been a **'stamp of God's approval'**, as it was] "a prophetic movement that called for a reliance on the spontaneity of the Holy Spirit and a more conservative [or 'ascetic'] personal ethic. Parallels have been drawn between Montanism and modern-day movements such as Pentecostalism, and the charismatic movement".

About Montanism my encyclopedia also reports that, besides originating in Phrygia in Central Asia Minor (Turkey), it is further traced back to "the daughters of Philip the Evangelist". It also informs me that, "The leaders of the churches of Lyons

and Vienne in Gaul [the region where Polycarp sent Irenaeus] responded to the New Prophecy in 177", a 'response' Irenaeus was likely personally involved with, and that, "Their decision was communicated to the churches in Asia [Minor] and [to] Eleuterus, the Bishop of Rome [who evidently earlier was "in support of Montanism", but "was later persuaded" against it], but it is not known what this ['response'] consisted of, only that it was", quote, "prudent and most orthodox", but it "likely... called for moderation [including the withholding of condemnation] in dealing with the movement".

And on a **'graver'** note, my encyclopedia reports that, "The imperial [Roman] government carried out sporadic executions of Christians under the reign of Marcus Aurelius, circa AD 161-180, which coincides with the [early] spread of Montanism." But on the **happy** side, a generation or so later, "Tertullian, undoubtedly the best-known defender of the New Prophecy, believed that the claims of Montanus were genuine", and "He believed in the validity of the New Prophecy and admired the movement's discipline and ascetic standards", however reportedly, "A common misconception is that Tertullian decisively left the orthodox church and joined a separate Montanist sect; in fact, he remained an early-catholic trinitarian Christian". However it is also reported that...

Jerome [or Hieronymus, late 4th/early 5th century Italian Catholic "priest, confessor, theologian and historian... best known for his translation of most of the Bible into Latin (the Vulgate)... [but also for] his commentaries on the Gospels", and "extensive" other "writings", which are surely badly **'misused'** by **her**, and far beyond his original intentions,] says that Tertullian lived to a great age, but there is no reliable source attesting to his survival beyond the estimated year 225 AD. In spite of his [by some reported] schism from the Church [- again, maybe a **'stamp of God's approval'**], he continued to write against heresy, especially Gnosticism. Thus, by the doctrinal works he published, Tertullian became the teacher of Cyprian [- 3rd Century "bishop of Carthage and a notable Early Christian writer... many of whose Latin works are extant", and a "controversial figure during his lifetime... [whose] eventual martyrdom at Carthage vindicated his reputation and proved his sanctity in the eyes of the [then 'Pre-Catholic'] Church", and so his "skillful Latin rhetoric led to his being considered the pre-eminent Latin writer of Western Christianity",] and [he was] the predecessor of Augustine [also from North Africa], who, in turn, became the chief founder of Latin theology [and however much **'misused'** by the Catholic Church, "Many Protestants, especially Calvinists and Lutherans, consider him [Augustine] to be one of the theological fathers of the Protestant Reformation due to his teachings on salvation and divine grace", and maybe none of these particular "Church fathers" were actually **'in her'**, though they're all still being **'misused'** by **her**, **God knoweth**].

And maybe the most **'reassuring news'** about Tertullian is that...

Unlike many [so-called] Church fathers, he was never recognized as a saint by the Eastern or Western catholic tradition churches, as several of his teachings on issues such as the clear subordination of the Son and Spirit to the Father, and his condemnation of remarriage for widows and of fleeing from persecution, contradicted the doctrines of these traditions.

But getting back to the mess that is Manetho...

The above theory of [false] authorship and [fraudulent] date of composition is further supported by a confusion in the Suda, a massive Byzantine encyclopedia made during the 10th century. According to the Suda, there were two authors named Manetho: one from Mendes and one from either Sebennytus or Despoils (Thebes). Yet the Suda does not attribute the *Aegyptiaca* to either one. The Mendesian Manetho wrote about the preparation of *kepi*, while the Manetho of Sebennytus or Despoils wrote "*Enquiries into Nature; Apotelesmatica* in verse [or as cited above, *Apotelesmaticorum*, perhaps translated, *Astrological Causality*]; and other astrological works." The Suda [or Suda] mentions authors who composed works in Greek during the time of Ptolemy II Philadelphus (such as the comic poet Aristonymos) but does not include Manetho. Hence the most that can be said is that the author of the Suda confused Ptolemy of Mendes with Manetho of Sebennytus and that he did not agree with the story repeated by Syncellus that the *Aegyptiaca* dates to the time of Ptolemy II Philadelphus in the 3rd century BC. The work is [again] first attested in the Roman period. Nor are any of the other literary works in Greek that have been attributed to Manetho ever attested during the Ptolemaic period...

Book 1 of Manetho's history began with an introduction or preamble that undoubtedly gave a brief [fictitious or mythological] biography of Manetho and stated the purpose for writing the work. In the preamble the author stated that the first Hermes [Mercury] who is identified as the god Thoth invented writing. The writings of this first Hermes were then translated into a new script called hieroglyphics by his [supposedly 'demigod'] son Hermes Trismegistus who is the second Hermes. The books written by this second Hermes were later collected and arranged by his son, the [demi]god Agathodaemon. According to the author, Agathodaemon only finished his editorial work of arranging the "sacred books" written by his father Hermes Trismegistus *after* the accession of Ptolemy [II] Philadelphus. It was only at this point that Manetho was given access to these sources and then he utilized them to write his own detailed history of Egypt in Greek for the reigning Ptolemaic king. Syncellus writes:

In the time of Ptolemy Philadelphus he was styled high-priest of the pagan temples of Egypt, and wrote from inscriptions in the Seriadic land [where they honored the "cult of Serapis"], traced, he says, in sacred language and holy characters by Thoth, the first Hermes, and translated [by the second Hermes] in hieroglyphic characters. When the work had been arranged in books by Agathodaemon, son of the second Hermes and father of Tat, in the temple-shrines of Egypt, Manetho dedicated it to the above King Ptolemy II Philadelphus in his *Book of Sothis*...

By *Book of Sothis* Syncellus must mean the *Aegyptiaca* by another title, for the actual *Book*

of Sothis does not discuss the mythic reigns of the gods, demigods, and the spirits of the dead. Nor does it group the kings of Egypt into thirty dynasties as Syncellus says the *Book of Sothis* does. It appears Syncellus preferred to call Manetho's *Aegyptiaca* by the alternative title *Book of Sothis* but the reasons are not clear [other than fraud and/or ineptitude]. A close study of the material in the actual *Book of Sothis* reveals that its author relied upon but intentionally deviated from the *Aegyptiaca* and is likely a [different] forgery or hoax of unknown date. Every king in the *Book of Sothis* after Menes is irreconcilable with the versions of Africanus [- that 1st Century "celebrated orator" in the reign of Nero,] and Eusebius.

Despite this confusion caused by Syncellus, the inferences being made in the preamble of the *Aegyptiaca* are nonetheless clear: the accession of Ptolemy II Philadelphus was considered [or propagandized] by the author to be a major turning point in Egypt's history because it was only during this king's reign that the [demi]god Agathodaemon completed editing the "sacred books," and this was a prerequisite for Manetho to compose a history of Egypt in Greek. The chain of cultural transmission spans three generations of gods (Thoth, Hermes Trismegistus, and Agathodaemon) to the priest Manetho and the Greek script is now on a par with the hieroglyphs. Greek has now become [or in this way was propagandized to be] the language and script through which Egypt's entire history is to be officially recorded in three books for Ptolemy II Philadelphus. It is as if the goal of Egyptian civilization was that it was destined to become the property of Greek civilization and be eclipsed by Hellenism. The author depicts Manetho as having helped facilitate this transfer in a most significant way by translating the contents of the "sacred books" of supernatural authorship into Greek, something which had not been done in any of the languages spoken by the various foreigners who dominated Egypt before the Greek conquest. Greek is now Egypt's new language and divinely ordained for translating the hieroglyphic writings of the god Hermes Trismegistus. After this the author reproduces a letter supposedly written by Manetho to Ptolemy II Philadelphus:

To the great King Ptolemy Philadelphus Augustus. Greeting to my lord Ptolemy from Manetho, high-priest and scribe of the sacred shrines of Egypt, born at Sebennytus and dwelling at Heliopolis. It is my duty, almighty king, to reflect upon all such matters as you may desire me to investigate. So, as you are making researches concerning the future of the universe, in obedience to your command I shall place before you the sacred books which I have studied, written by your forefather, Hermes Trismegistus. Farewell, I pray, my lord King.

The letter is obviously a forgery, because in it Manetho addresses Ptolemy Philadelphus with the title Augustus, which was not used for Ptolemaic kings. This slip of the pen allows one to determine the *terminus post quem* or earliest possible date of composition, which is the reign of emperor Augustus (BC 28-14 AD) when Ptolemy of Mendes was active. After this letter the

author proceeded to discuss the earliest times in Egypt, listing the reigns of the gods and demigods and the spirits of the dead as kings of Egypt. There were seven [angel] god-kings [or "kings" who had 'higher percentages' of angel to human DNA], then four lines of demigods [with 'lower percentages' of angel to human DNA?], and then the spirits of the dead (evidently another type or different class of demigods [possibly including unclean spirits or 'demons']) but the number and their names are not preserved in the fragmenta.

And by all means try to 'crack' this 'nut case' known as Manetho if you can. However what we really need is Dr. Velikovsky's help in 'reconstructing' all the 'misconstructed' history, and especially his help with sorting out all these 'misordered' and 'misidentified' dynasties, which we won't really 'get cracking' into until **SECTION 11**.

And jumping back before this now exposed 'charade' that is Manetho, the previously referenced but not yet bio'ed Honorary Dr. James Bennett Pritchard was...

...an American archeologist whose work explicated the interrelationships of the religions of ancient Palestine, Canaan, Egypt, Assyria, and Babylon. Pritchard was honored with the Gold Medal Award for Distinguished Archaeological Achievement in 1983 from the Archaeological Institute of America.

He had a long association with the University of Pennsylvania... [as] professor of religious thought and the first curator of Biblical archaeology at the University Museum. Pritchard's strength lay in setting the Bible within its broader cultural contexts in the Ancient Near East. In 1977 Pritchard received an honorary doctorate from the Faculty of Theology at Uppsala University, Sweden.

Pritchard authored the book *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament*, which was released in three editions (1950, 1955, 1969), universally referred to as *ANET*, which provided reliable translations of texts that threw light on the context of Ancient Near Eastern history and the Hebrew Bible.

And the apparent 'sunset' of Saturn, thanks to Dr. Velikovsky, is neither any longer a 'mysterious penumbra' nor an 'unsolvable conundrum'.

If Saturn was always as inconspicuous as it is at present, what could have caused the races of antiquity, as if by common consent, to give to Saturn the appellation "sun" or "the shining one"? "The astrologers certainly must have found it increasingly contrary to reason to associate the star that gives us light and life with one of the palest, and the slowest of the planets."

[Bidez, *Revue de Philologie*, op. cit., p.320: "Les astrologues trouverent sans doute de plus en plus deraisonnable de donner en appanage a l'astre d'ou nous vient la lumiere et la vie, une des plus pales et la plus lente des planetes." [Translated by Dr. Velikovsky in the previous paragraph.]]

The folk etymology of the Hebrews explained the name Khima as meaning "about a hundred (*ke'me-ah*) stars." [Rabbi Samuel in *Tractate Brakhot, Seder Zera'im* of the *Babylonian Talmud*, IX, fol.59.]

The *Bhagavat Gita* contains the following description of a deity: "If the radiance of a thousand suns were to burst at once into the sky, that would be like the splendor of the mighty one... the shatterer of worlds." [*The Bhagavat Gita*, ch.2 [- evidently referring to Shiva's use of Saturn].]

All that we have considered up to now indicates that Saturn once exploded in a nova-like burst of light. The date of this event I would be hard-put to specify, even approximately, but possibly it took place about ten thousand [though more likely about 4,300] years ago. The solar system and reaches beyond it were illuminated by the exploded star, and in a matter of a week the Earth was possibly enveloped in waters of Saturnian origin [eafc].

And besides "possibly" a 'spray' of *protons*, etc., the far greater part of which was not directed at Earth, with what relatively little was directed here "possibly" to some degree 'supplementing' Earth's H₂O supply, and "possibly" contributing to making Earth's *waters acidic*, maybe even temporarily lethal (since *hydrochloric acid*, HCl, "is very soluble in water"), and "possibly" also the *force* of this 'spray' helped to 'push' on Earth's *water canopy*, and maybe adding this 'force' gently enough to help it 'drain' at the *poles* as opposed to collapsing it worldwide.

However the 'legendary', evidently extreme *volcanic activity* at this time - likely more *significantly* contributing to the 'legendary' *acidity* and *saltiness* (NaCl, etc.) of the seas - would not be caused by a 'strong spray' of *protons*, but instead by a 'close-by', and *significant* enough, *atomic magnetic attractive force*, one most likely provided by the then close proximity of Mercury. And there's also the 'possibility' - or likelihood - that Jupiter was *aligned* with the Earth between us and Saturn at the time of this "explosion", where in this case Jupiter may have helped shield the Earth from the worse of this 'blast'. But let's finish hearing Dr. Velikovsky out.

Arrival of the Waters

Following the "seven days" when the world appeared to be ablaze in "the radiance of a thousand suns" the Deluge started.

First, according to the Hindu account, vast clouds gathered which "overshadowed the entire world." [Skanda Purana in S. Shastri, *The Flood Legend in Sanscrit Literature* (Delhi,1950), p.87.]

"These ominous clouds... rumbling and shooting lightning, overspread the sky." [*Agneya Purana* in *ibid.*, p.50.] They were "as vast as mountains." "Some were dusky, some crimson, some white, some brilliant (in hue). [*Kalika Purana* in *ibid.*, p.103.] Other sources describe them as yellow, or azure, or red. "Loud in roar and mighty in size they fill the entire sky." [*Vishnu Purana* in *ibid.*, p.50.] They were "fringed with lightning, meteors and thunderbolts." [*Skanda Purana* in *ibid.*, p.88.] [All of this supposedly suggests not just the 'proton spray', but also the accompanying '**Mercury-class volcanic activity**', along with the corresponding 'optics' of such conditions.] Then, "rumbling aloud with lightning [they] poured torrential streams thick like chariot

wheels." [*Bhagavata Purana* in *ibid.*, p.61.] They "rained with a sullen roar, [seemingly] inundating the three worlds [the Earth, the Moon, and Mercury?] with ceaseless downpour of torrents..." [*Kalika Purana* in *ibid.*, p.103.] "And then there were seen on all sides the four oceans engulfing with tempestuous waves the whole surface of the earth." [*Bhagavata Purana* in *ibid.*, p.61.] All creation was "smitten by the luminous dense floods." [*Ibid.*, *loc. cit.* ["in the place cited"].] In the beginning of the deluge the nova in the sky shone through the splendor of the illuminated skies and through the sheets of rain, ever increasing in intensity. [Cf. the Babylonian expression in the wailings for Tammuz: "The shining ocean to thy perditions has taken thee." [Professor Dr. Stephen Herbert Langdon [bio, p.278], *Tammuz and Ishtar* (Oxford,1914), p.15).] The Biblical expression "the Lord sitteth upon the flood" [[Psalm 29](#)] was an apt description of the blazing nova above the waters of the Deluge [or is "possibly" what [Verse 3](#) intends]. It has a Babylonian counterpart in the title of Tammuz as *bel girsu*: "lord of the flood." [Professor Dr. Stephen Herbert Langdon, *Babylonian Liturgies* (Paris,1913), p.96.] The nova blazed terrifically, but soon the light became diffused, the shadows grew ever dimmer, the world that was all splendor and light turned gloomier and gloomier; the outpouring waters grew ever thicker; the clouds of [apparently *volcanic*] dust darkened ever more the sky, and finally the drama of what was taking place on earth went on in darkness.

The Deluge was not a peaceful though abundant rain, filling the earth with water, rising ever higher. Ancient sources give a description of the Deluge that differs greatly from the pageant of showers pouring from above on a peaceful land and peaceful sea.

But we must give precedence to the accounts in the KJV. They are the ones we **know** are in no way adjusted, exaggerated, or otherwise erroneous, just possibly '**misinterpreted**'. However I'm willing to consider some of the 'elements' of this 'myth and folklore', including in Hebrew tradition, alongside the Biblical account, to see what 'washes out'.

The Deluge in Rabbinical Sources

During the "seven days" when the world was flooded by sheets of light, and terrifying signs and commotion filled the heavens, "the Holy One... reversed the order of nature, the sun rising in the west and setting in the east." [Uh-huh, supposedly the Earth 'flips over'.]

[*Tractat Sanhedrin* 108B of the *Babylonian Talmud*, ed. by Rabbi Ezekiel Isidore Epstein [20th

Century "Orthodox rabbi and rabbinical scholar in England", who "served as rabbi of Middlesbrough Hebrew Congregation (1920-1928), following which he joined the teaching staff of Jews' College, London ["founded in 1855", renamed the London School of Jewish Studies in 1999]", where, "In 1945 he was appointed Director of Studies and subsequently principal", retiring in 1961, and being from Lithuania, he originally studied at the Pressburg Yeshiva [- a "yeshiva" being "a Jewish institution ['grade school' or 'undergraduate school'] that focuses on the study of traditional religious texts, primarily the Talmud and the Torah", the Pressburg Yeshiva being "the largest and most influential Yeshiva in Central Europe in the 19th century... founded in the city of Pressburg, Austrian Empire (today Bratislava, Slovakia) by Rabbi Moshe Sofer (known as

the *Chasam Sofer*) and was considered the largest Yeshiva since the time of the Babylonian Talmud]... as well as in Paris under Rabbi Zadoc Kahn, chief rabbi of France”, and “He received *semikhah* (ordination) from Rabbi Abraham Isaac Kook, Rabbi Isaiah Silberstein of Vacz, and Rabbi Yisrael Chaim Daiches of Leeds, England”, and he “is best known for serving as the editor of the first complete English translation of the Babylonian Talmud, by the Soncino Press (London, 36 volumes, 1935-1952)”, and in the process he “recruited many rabbis and scholars for the massive project, personally reviewing all of the work as it was produced, and co-coordinating the many details of notation and transliteration of Hebrew words”, and he “was also the author of numerous scholarly books relating to Judaism”.] (19xx).] [Taken literally, this statement [of “the sun rising in the west and setting in the east”] implies a reversal of the Earth’s rotation, or [and more likely] a “tippe-top”-type reversal of its poles. For a discussion of the latter possibility, see Peter Warlow, *The Reversing Earth* (London, 1982) and discussion by V. J. Slabinski and C. I. Ellenberger in *KRONOS* VII. 2 (1982), pp.86-96; cf. also *KRONOS* VIII. 3 (1983), pp.84-89. In the electromagnetic model proposed by Velikovsky in *Cosmos without Gravitation* (1946) or such as that conceived by Ralph E. Juergens [“a civil engineer”, who “received a B.S from Case Western Reserve University”, who is “notable for his contributions documenting the so-called “Velikovsky Affair”, with co-authors [Dr.] Alfred de Grazia and Livio Stecchini”, who “subsequently developed a hypothesis in which the Sun and stars are [and have for a ‘ridiculously-long’ time been] electrically powered, contrary to the standard view that the Sun [is] powered by [‘ridiculously-long-lasting’] nuclear fusion”, this “Electric Sun” hypothesis receiving “unfavourable review”, though it is now “a core component of the non-mainstream Electric Universe hypothesis”, and he “worked as an editor in the publications division of McGraw-Hill, inc., and was an Associate Editor of *Pensée* magazine, and a Senior Editor of *Kronos* journal”] (“*On the Convection of Electrical Charge by the Rotating Earth,*” *KRONOS* II.3 [1977], pp.12-30) and Earl Richard Vincent Milton [“a founding member of the Society for Interdisciplinary Studies [SIS], and also of the Canadian Society for Interdisciplinary Studies”, who “published papers in the *Journal of Physical Chemistry*, the *Journal of Chemical Physics*, the *Journal of the Royal Astronomical Society of Great Britain*, in *Kronos*, in the *Society for Interdisciplinary Studies SIS Review*, [and] in *Aeon: A Journal of Myth, Science, and Ancient History*” [*Kronos*, *SIS Review* and *Aeon* all being ‘interdisciplinary studies journals’], and who “worked with Ralph Juergens in the field of electromagnetism and astronomy until Juergens’ death in 1979”, and has “written on the Electric Sun model, and completed a trilogy entitled *Three Wise Men*, concentrating upon the lives and work of Immanuel Velikovsky, Alfred de Grazia, and Ralph E. Juergens (unpublished)”, and “edited, as well as co-authored, the proceedings of the influential symposium devoted to Velikovsky’s contribution to the sciences, entitled *Recollections of a Fallen Sky*”, and has, “Together with Alfred de Grazia... authored *Solaria Binaria: A History of the Solar System* (1984)”, and who evidently asserts that]...a disturbance of Saturn of the magnitude described here would almost certainly bring about drastic changes in the Earth’s rotational motion
[http://www.velikovsky.info/Society_for_Interdisciplinary_Studies].]

Victor J. Slabinsky, “Astrodynamics Dept., Communications Satellite Corp., Washington, D.C.U.S.A.”, is a published *aerospace engineer*, and critic of both Peter Warlow (SIS) and Dr. Velikovsky, while Charles Leroy Ellenberger is...

...perhaps best known [especially ‘encyclopedically’] as a one-time advocate, but now a critic of, controversial writer Immanuel Velikovsky and his works on catastrophism. He first read *Worlds in Collision* in 1969. In 1979, he became a contributing editor (and later Senior Editor & Executive Secretary) to the Velikovsky-inspired *Kronos* journal, and has contributed material to many other publications. In 1980 he was selected by the editor of *Astronomy* magazine to debate James Oberg [“M.S. in

Applied Mathematics (Astrodynamics) from Northwestern University in 1969 (where he was also a NASA Trainee) and a M.S. in Computer Science from University of New Mexico”,] on Velikovsky. His confidence in the validity of Velikovsky's ideas was shaken in January 1982 when Kronos sponsored his attendance at the semi-annual AAAS meeting in Washington, D.C., in order to distribute information on Velikovsky. In a wide-ranging conversation with Jeremy Cherfas, then a writer for the British weekly science magazine *New Scientist* over how the press misunderstood Velikovsky, Cherfas had counter-arguments to many points that Ellenberger was not able to rebut. According to Professor of Social Theory [Dr.] Alfred de Grazia at New York University, "By 1983 Ellenberger was preparing to abandon much of quantavolution [- the theory that “geologically recent (in the last 15,000 years) extraterrestrially-caused catastrophes occurred, and had a significant impact on the Earth and its inhabitants”,] and found now that the story of Velikovsky was not without its shady tones, and more important, [he was **deceived** to believe] that Arctic ice cores and bristlecone pine dating technologies were directly contradicting Holocene [the current “geological epoch”] quantavolutions... [- this particular ‘**deception**’ the result of the erroneous assumptions/propaganda that only 1 *layer of ice* is *laid* per year, and only 1 *ring* is *grown* per year, when actually and commonly multiple *layers* and *rings* are added *annually*, these *phenomena* being more related to Earth’s many annual *seasonal weather* changes than to its full *orbits*, (see for example, <http://www.popularmechanics.com/flight/a18943/glacier-girl-p-38-fighter/>, and I forget from where, but I did hear about a ‘walking cane maker’ who grows his own wood, who testified that he usually gets 11 rings, more or less, in 7 years of growth]; further [and adding nothing to nothing really], that Gentry's studies of the surprising 'instant' polonium halos of creation... were probably invalid [or “unthinkable”, because it would require **faith** in not just God’s awesomely regulated, weeklong ‘**creative power**’, but also **faith** in His unimaginably controlled, instantaneous ‘**corrupting act**’ - **the curse** - to be ‘**rightly**’ understood, let alone **believed**].” [Dr.] Henry Bauer [whose family is another that fled Nazi Germany in WWII, in their case to Australia, afterward settled in the US, and became “an emeritus professor of chemistry and science studies at Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University” (Virginia Tech), and also “served as dean of the College of Arts and Sciences at Virginia Tech, generating controversy by criticizing affirmative action”, which is ‘fair enough’, and, “He is the author of several books and articles on fringe science, arguing in favor of the existence of the Loch Ness Monster [yea!] and against Immanuel Velikovsky [boo!], and is an AIDS denialist [also ‘fair enough’]”, who after he retired became “editor-in-chief of the *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, a fringe science publication”], described Ellenberger's role in the Velikovsky scene as follows: "...as a confidant to Velikovsky, a frequent visitor (often with camera) from April 1978 to his death in November 1979, and a Senior Editor of the Velikovskian journal *Kronos*, until the evidence [that those with **blinded...minds** are ‘**unable**’ to expose as erroneous, as well as being ‘**outmatched**’ in ‘**wrestling with**’ the ‘**satanic**’, ‘**always-on-the-prowl**’, ‘**conspiratorial**’ **principalities and powers**] forced him to conclude [along with all the other ‘**insider-self-idolater**’, *uniformitarian evolutionists*, etc.,] that Velikovsky's scientific claims were baseless. [Before this “forced” upon him ‘turncoat’ move...] Velikovsky inscribed his copy of *Ramses II and His Time* 'To Leroy who is consumed by the sacred flame of search for truth', 20 May 1978, and

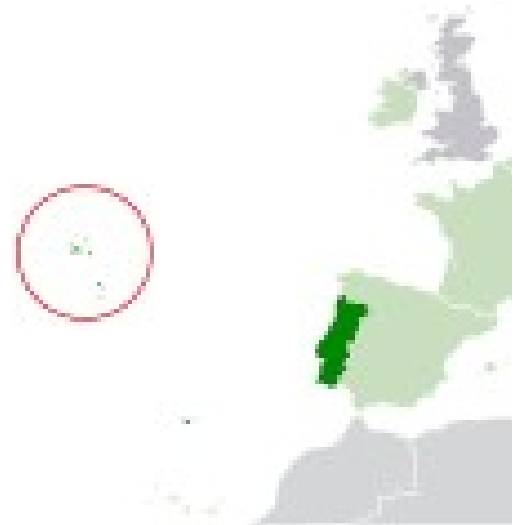
gave him permission to sell 'Velikovsky's right!' T-shirts. [Dr.] Alfred de Grazia ["PhD in political science from the University of Chicago"], [and the] impetus for *The Velikovsky Affair* (1966), appointed him chronicler of the continuing Velikovsky controversy in 1980... Also [and since becoming a 'turncoat'], he "has tried unceasingly but to little avail to have his former colleagues acknowledge the accumulating evidence, for example, from Greenland ice cores, that Velikovsky's claimed catastrophes did not in fact occur. Ellenberger points out, too, that Velikovsky's writings have become superfluous: astronomically plausible argument and speculation about relatively recent cosmic catastrophism can now be found in the work of Victor Clube and Bill Napier (*The Cosmic Serpent*, 1982; *The Cosmic Winter*, 1990), where the testimony of myth and historical records is also taken into account." [But remember that Dr. Velikovsky acknowledges authors of this kind too, including ones who instead - and however unwittingly - better support his *catastrophic theories* as opposed to Clube and Napier's (or rather 'Clueless' and 'Sappier's') 'ridiculously long' supposedly more *uniformitarian* ones.]

Ellenberger has degrees in chemical engineering and finance & operations research (B.S., Washington Univ.; M.B.A., Univ. of Pennsylvania). He is currently a Medical Article Retrieval Specialist in St. Louis, Missouri.

And wearing a 'better coat', Peter Warlow...

...is a British physicist with a particular interest in the potential instability of our planet. In *The Reversing Earth* he is reluctantly drawn to the Atlantis question, noting that "there is a subtle but distinct and important difference between searching for Atlantis and searching for a place that could be Atlantis. Many authors carry out the latter search." He...believes that the starting point... must be Plato. He points out... a consistency in Plato's writing, which demands that "the story of Atlantis is to be treated as seriously as the rest of his work."

Warlow supported the idea that a lower... [sea level], such as [supposedly] existed during the last Ice Age [or otherwise], would, in the vicinity of the **Azores** [an island chain, in this case, "an archipelago composed of nine volcanic islands in the North Atlantic Ocean about 1,360 km (850 mi) west of continental Portugal [in darker green on the map on p.382]... and about 1,925 km (1,196 mi) southeast of Newfoundland, Canada [not on map], have created an island as large as England and Wales [top right, grey] with the present archipelago being the remnants of Atlantis' mountains (p.132)"]



Others think the Caribbean islands, including Cuba, represent its still above sea level remains, while I'd guess Atlantis 'split in two' at the Mid-Atlantic Ridge just

after the 2nd Visit of Mercury, **divided** much faster earlier than at present, and resulted in both and/or other “island groups”.

Warlow’s ideas, regarding Atlantis, are peripheral to his principal thesis regarding the reversal of the Earth’s rotation, having ‘flipped over’ as a result of a close encounter with a large extraterrestrial body [in this case Mercury]. A demonstration of this ‘tippe-top’ theory can be seen on a *YouTube* video... [<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=42GgKKD08bY> - in which David Salkeld, “former SIS chairman”, is said to defend both Warlow and Velikovsky by arguing that Mr. Slabinsky mishandled the time factor] [<http://atlantipedia.ie/samples/tag/peter-warlow>] [*eafc* minor, and you may need to paste in the ‘tippe-top’ link to access it, if it has not been ‘scrubbed’ altogether].

And this is where we entirely ‘lose our bearings’, and go all ‘tippe-top’...

But during the Deluge "the sun and the moon shed no light" [L. Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews* (Philadelphia,1928), Vol.I, p.162] and for an entire year the planets did not follow their regular courses. [*Midrash Rabba* to Genesis 25:2.] It may be that because of dust discharged by volcanoes [which again, would not happen because of a ‘proton spray-down’ from Saturn, but would instead require a ‘pyroclastic dust up’ because of a ‘close encounter’ with a planet like Mercury, where possibly] the sky remained veiled for a long period, and this veil [supposedly] made any celestial orientation impossible for the few [exactly **eight**] survivors [though from them there is apparently no report of such a ‘long veiling’]; but [or so] quite possibly [instead] the statement refers to a change in the celestial orbits. The rabbinical sources add that the earth was quaking [- again, because of a ‘close encounter’], and the sun was darkened, and the foundations of the cosmos were dislodged. The entire world was in volcanic activity; "amidst lightnings and thunders a very loud sound was heard in the entire world, never heard before." [Ha-Yewani Zerahiah [or “Rabbi Zerachiah the Greek... a Greek-Jewish ethicist [“trusted” judge of “ethics and ethical codes”] ...in the Byzantine Empire in the thirteenth or fourteenth century”, still often misidentified and/or confused with other authors, but considered to be, at least by Dr. Velikovsky, the author of *Sefer haYashar*, “eighteen short chapters” which are generally a condensation and “imitation of Bahya ibn Paquda's [“too long and too profound”] *Hobot ha-Lebabot*” treating “the ethical principles which underlie the relation of man to God”], *Sefer Hayashar, The Book of the Righteous* [or “Book of the Upright One”, “but *Jashar* is generally left untranslated into English and so *Sefer ha-Yashar* is often rendered as *Book of Jasher*”], ed. and transl. by S. J. Cohen [?] (New York,1973), p.?

Of course and again, I assume that this “very loud sound” is caused – besides by God – by the resulting *significant* ‘**stretching**’ and ‘**squeezing**’, and therefore ‘audible groaning’ of the entire Earth due its close proximity to a ‘**visitor**’ of ‘significantly-size’, this globally-heard “sound” being God’s use of the Earth to ‘vocalize’ His intelligible **voice**, likely including the Earth-reverberating ‘boom’ from the *electromagnetic discharge* of the Earth to Mercury, and possibly vice versa.

And can you not yet **hear his voice**? And I mean has He not yet **shewed** you all this? Or let me ask as Moses did...

Did ever people hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as thou hast heard, and live? Or hath God assayed to go and take him a nation from the midst of another nation, by temptations, by signs, and by wonders, and by war, and by a mighty hand, and by a stretched out arm, and by great terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes? Unto thee it was shewed, that thou mightest know that the LORD he is God; there is none else beside him. Out of heaven he made thee to hear his voice, that he might instruct thee: and upon earth he shewed thee his great fire; and thou heardest his words out of the midst of the fire [Deu 4:33-36](#).

So again yes, **people** distinctly **heard** the intelligible **voice of God**, and not just **speaking out of the midst of fire** of a **'burning bush'**, nor just **out of the 'whirling' pillar of a cloud 'by day'** and **pillar of fire 'by night'**, but **he made Job to hear his voice** also **out of** just a **whirlwind of air**, and He evidently **spake** too **out of 'whirlwinds'** in the **waters**, and surely He **spake** by the use of other **'natural'** means, including being **heard** by everyone on Earth at the same time, even **out of 'Earth's reverberating crust'**. And again, didn't you **hear** it too?

However, and I hope that by now this has changed, but as far as I can tell Dr. Velikovsky did not have **ears to hear** this **voice**, seeing only God's more **'naturally done' work**, and saying...

The Flood was caused by waters pouring from above, but also by waters drawn up from the ground. "All the fountains of the great deep were broken up, and all the windows of heaven were opened [[which is more evidence of Mercury's 'Earth-contorting', 'voice-producing' closeness](#)]." [Genesis 7:11.] The waters that came from the sky were heated [[or became heated - even to the boiling point](#)]. Many passages in the rabbinical literature refer to the heated water. [[But most of it must have been the result of the 'heated conflict' between Earth and Mercury, surely one way or another putting Earth's inhabitants 'in a lot of hot water'](#).] [The opinion of Rabbi Hisda to this effect is recorded in *Rosh Hashanah* 12A and *Sanhedrin* 108B. Cf. J. B. Wiedeburg, *Astronomische Bedenken* [[Astronomical Issues](#)] (Jena,1744), p.80, and sources in Ginzberg, *Legends* Vol. V, p.178.]

The also previously referenced Johann Bernhard Wiedeburg or Wideburg, was a late 17th to mid 18th Century "German mathematician and astronomer... [and] extraordinary professor of mathematics in [the University of] Helmstedt", which "existed from 1576 until 1810", and which was "the first Protestant ["Lutheran"] university of the northern Holy Roman Empire [that] quickly became one of the largest German universities", and was established "to train preachers in Lutheran Protestantism", but, "In the late 18th century, Helmstedt lost popularity to newer universities, such as the University of Göttingen", founded in 1734, and called "the city of science". Professor Weideburg left the evidently waning Helmstedt and...

...became a full professor of mathematics at the University of Jena... [as well as] an inspector of the Saxon Convictory [[evidently an ecclesiastical rulling body](#)]. As a university lecturer, he taught Leibniz's infinitesimal calculus, analytical geometry, mechanics, and astronomy [[- Leibniz tbb eventually](#)]. At the same time he dealt with biblical mathematics and sought to link mathematics to theological doctrine. In 1737 he was

appointed to the Council of Churches of Saxony-Weimar, and in 1739 he was given the right to hold lectures at the faculty of theology, which gave him a theological professorship. He also taught the chair of rhetoric from 1739 to 1743... [and was] dean of the Faculty of Philosophy [three times]...

And a little more of the early history of the University of Jena is worth introducing here too. It was reportedly, "Founded as a home for the new religious opinions of the sixteenth century", and more specifically...

Electoral John Frederick [or [Johann Friedrich I](#)] of Saxony first thought of a plan to establish a university at Jena upon [\[the river\]](#) Saale in 1547 while he was being held captive by emperor Charles V [\[of the Holy Roman Empire\]](#). The plan was put into motion by his three sons and, after having obtained a charter from the Emperor Ferdinand I [\[- the next Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire\]](#), the university was established on 2 February 1558.

But you must **understand** that **our brother** John's clout to obtain such a "charter" was not because he was Catholic. Instead, Johann Frederick I, who actually died a few years before the university was "established", was also...

...called **Johann the Magnanimous**, or **St. Johann the Steadfast** (by Lutherans)... [\[yes, the same\]](#) Elector of Saxony... [\[who was also\]](#) Head of the Protestant Confederation of Germany (the Schmalkaldic League)... [\[and otherwise known as\]](#) ...the **Champion of the Reformation**.

The **Schmalkaldic League**... was a defensive military alliance of Lutheran princes within the Holy Roman Empire during the mid-16th century. Although originally started for religious motives soon after the start of the Reformation, its members eventually intended for the League to replace the Holy Roman Empire as their source of political allegiance [\[though it only "lasted for sixteen years"\]](#). While it was not the first alliance of its kind, unlike previous formations, such as the [\[non-militarized\]](#) League of Torgau [\[and besides the even more militarized Hussites\]](#), the Schmalkaldic League had a substantial military [\[- "an army of 10,000 infantry and 2,000 cavalry", "and was more successful in reaching its demands", and better able\]](#) ...to defend its political and religious interests [\[like getting "Lutheran Protestantism" university charters\]](#).

Of course now Jena is as bad as Göttingen, and as bad as the English Reformation Anglican 'preacher-training' Universities of Oxford and Cambridge have become, and as bad as the originally Congregational 'preacher-training' Universities of Harvard and Yale too, while Helmstedt is long gone.

Note: "Congregational practices concerning church governance influenced the early development of democratic institutions in New England, and many of the nation's oldest educational institutions, such as Harvard and Yale University, were founded to train Congregational clergy... [these] ministers [having] influenced the First and Second Great Awakenings and were early promoters of the missionary movement of the 19th century... [and] shaped both Mainline Protestantism and Evangelicalism in the United States."

But even with the now dominating *evolutionary* 'self-idolatry-training' universities of our day, **we** can '**endeavor**' to find chances to nonetheless '**surge**' forward, while trying not to get too '**carried away**' in this '**flood**', and that is, as much as it is personally, and **God willing** only metaphorically, avoidable. So hang on for the ride.

The rabbinical literature also refers to great tides and surges of water that covered the face of the earth. "The flood began to toss the ark from side to side. All inside of it were shaken up like lentils in a pot." [Ginzberg, *Legends*, Vol. I, p.162.] It is also said that not one, but many arks or vessels were used as a means of escape, but they were ruined or capsized one after the other in the surging water. [*Ibid.*, Vol. VI, p.35.] Judged by this, one would think that there were ample signs of the impending catastrophe, and attempts to organize rescue by preparing boats or ships, all probably destined to fail. The Biblical account, in order to explain the survival of the human species and some land animals, made the ark of Noah the central theme of the story [or simply gave an accurate account of the survivors]. There must have been many Noahs, and the Midrashim also say so - but probably none of them [except the **eight**] escaped with his boat the outrages of nature. Possibly, in some caves high in the mountains, in far separated regions of the earth, human beings survived the Deluge [or not]; but hardly any vessel or ark [or really just one did]. The attempt to find the remains of an ark on Mount Ararat are probably as futile as looking for the ribs of Adam. Yet such attempts are [successfully] made even in our time. [E.g., the expedition recounted by D. Balsinger and C. Sellier, Jr. in *In Search of Noah's Ark* (Los Angeles, 1976 [and previously referenced by me]). If there are some ancient fossilized [or just frozen] structures that resemble an ark as some explorers assert, then more [or less] probably it was the presence of these remains which caused the Biblical penman [Moses!] to relate the rescue ship to the mountainous crag of Ararat in the southern Caucasus.]

And either that, or there's really nothing like Noah's Ark, certainly nothing that carried survivors, and either it's on **Ararat**, or possibly instead **on the mountains of the kingdom of Ararat** ([Gen 8:4](#); [Jer 51:27](#)), though again, the *perpetually frozen* one on Ararat apparently was 'broke in two', the pieces separated by considerable distance and elevation, apparently by avalanche, which you can have a peek inside at <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=x5N6K1fkm2U>), while the one on a "sister mountain" of Ararat - which I reject as able to carry survivors because, though possibly big enough, it so far offers no evidence that it carried *animals*, and even if it eventually does, it's more traditionally 'ship-shaped', not 'box-shaped', this being a problem because remember Dr. Henry Morris "calculates that the ['box-shaped'] dimensions of the Ark are sufficient to survive ocean waves that would bring it to nearly vertical positions, that is, without overturning it". And remember that would be "overturning" in extremely *turbulent* and maybe *acidic water*, where any survivors are at best left adrift for months on 'makeshift rafts' to die of *dehydration* and/or *starvation*, and even if resulting to *cannibalism*. Still a view of this apparently 'failed vessel' is available too at <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iCyOVGBnNp8>. (Sorry, these videos, or web addresses, have been 'scrubbed' from YouTube. Try instead this search: [Noah's Ark Found \(Photos, Video\) Noah's Ark Ministries International](#))

The duration of the flood is described differently – forty days, and also much longer. [It appears that the tradition of “a year” of the deluge led to confusion in calculations, and the traces of this confusion seem to be found in the double redaction [or **‘layering’**] of the story of the Deluge. The age of Noah and his contemporaries would indicate that the year was shorter [or that the Pre-Flood *environment* greatly promoted longevity]; it could still have consisted of a number of months, but not of months of thirty days; and the days themselves could have been shorter [or again, with a *water canopy in the sky* they just lived much longer.] Like the former catastrophe of the fall of man, this catastrophe of the Deluge, according to the Hebrew cosmogony, changed the nature of herb, animal and man. The prosperity of the time before the great flood was gone, never to return; the world lay in ruins. The earth was changed; even the sky was not the same.

The continents changed their places in the former catastrophes, and once again in the catastrophe of the Deluge. The areas which are now the shores of the Mediterranean were the shores of an open ocean – or so one may conclude from the following statement: "Before the birth of Noah, the sea was in the habit of transgressing its bounds twice daily, morning and evening [by *high and low ocean tides*].

Afterwards it kept within its confines [meaning the Mediterranean Sea Coasts at some point no longer experienced such *tides*, and this evidently because its mouth to the Atlantic was at some point mostly closed at the **Strait of Gibraltar**, known in the ancient world as the "**Pillars of Hercules**" (satellite shot, p.386), and which today, at its narrowest point, is a little less than 9 miles wide, and it “ranges between” about a 1,000 to about 3,000 feet deep].

As volcanoes erupted, the sky was darkened, and the ocean swelled and rolled on a helpless planet that fluttered when [besides all the greater “upheaval” and *inundation* caused by Mercury’s ‘close proximity’, Earth was “possibly” also] caught in hydrogen clouds of cosmic origin.



However remember that before “the Deluge” there were no “former catastrophes” where the “continents changed their places”. Neither the *collision* that ‘broke out’ Mercury, most likely involving the *planets* whose debris became the Kuiper Belt and the Scattered Disc, and involving the close ‘perturbational help’ of Neptune, and maybe also of Planet Nine, nor the *alignments* of the *giant planets* that ‘spit out’ Venus and likely also Mars, occurred until a while after God initiated The Curse. So no **‘visitors’** likely reached Earth before The 1st Visit of Mercury at The Flood, this evidently being the first time there was enough ‘pull’ available for “continents” to have “changed their places”. Of course in “the Deluge” it was only the new *high ground* that ended up above *sea level*.

Hydrogen and Oxygen

The conflict [by *alignment*] between the larger [or *giant*] planets resulted in long-stretched

filaments ejected by a disturbed [*dwarf star*] Saturn to cross the Earth's orbit. The hydrogen of the planet combined with the oxygen of the terrestrial atmosphere in electrical discharges and turned into water. [Of course this seems as fantastic as *water in the sky*.]

There are definite indications of a drastic drop in the atmospheric oxygen at the time of the Deluge – for instance, the survivors of the catastrophe are said in many sources to have been unable to light fires.

[Such were the accounts of the Sioux, Menomoni, and other Indian tribes as told by Sir James George Frazer in his "*Remarks*" to Volume II of Pseudo-Apollodorus' [the "author... traditionally thought to be Apollodorus of Athens, but that attribution is now regarded as false, and so "Pseudo-" was added to Apollodorus", neither is he to be confused with "Apollodorus of Artemita... a Greek writer of the 1st century BC" who "wrote a history of the Parthian Empire, the *Parthika*", and who "is quoted by Strabo" and considered by him "reliable", and who "seems to have used the archives of Artemita and Seleucia on the Tigris for his work"], *The Library* ["also known as the **Bibliotheca of Pseudo-Apollodorus**... a compendium of Greek myths and heroic legends, arranged in three books, generally dated to the first or second century AD] in the Loeb series [or in the Loeb Classical Library, LCL, "named after James Loeb [- "German-born American banker, Hellenist and philanthropist" who "founded and endowed the Loeb Classical Library, and founded the Institute of Musical Art, which later became part of the Juilliard School of Music" -] ...[it being] a series of books, today published by Harvard University Press, which presents important works of ancient Greek and Latin literature in a way designed to make the text accessible to the broadest possible audience, by presenting the original Greek or Latin text on each left-hand page, and a fairly literal translation on the facing page", the "General Editor" being "Jeffrey Henderson, holder of the William Goodwin Aurelio Professorship of Greek Language and Literature at Boston University"], p.342. Cf. *Skanda Purana*, describing the deluged world in which "nothing could be seen... fire there was not, nor moon, nor sun." (Shastri, *The Flood Legend in Sanscrit Literature*, p.88). Even in the [present] relatively slightly rarefied atmosphere of La Paz, Bolivia, "because of the reduced oxygen content... fires start with such reluctance that there is little work for the city's fire department." (*Area Handbook for Bolivia* [Washington,1974], p.55).]

Of course we've already accounted for *deoxygenation* another way. The 'drained' *water canopy* '**naturally**' resulted in lower *atmospheric pressure*, which decreased the *per volume oxygen content* in the *air*, this because the *atmosphere* formerly enclosed below the *canopy* is no longer restrained from *expanding* far above where it used to be contained, and this resulting *expansion* happening because *gaseous molecules* naturally *repel* each other, which altogether naturally *lowers air pressure* by 'spreading out' the *molecules*, there now being a much *greater volume* of *space* available into which they are free to *expand*. In addition to this, "possibly" the 'proton spray' further *deoxygenated* the *atmosphere*. However when it comes to 'lighting fires' immediately following The Flood, **remember** that it was only Noah and his family that actually experienced this change – just **eight souls**. So accounts referring to this experience from Ancient Greece, India or elsewhere can only be second hand at best.

The [*decreased pressure making oxygen less densely available, along with some*] consumption of the oxygen in the air by its conversion into water [or other

[molecules](#)] could not fail to have a marked effect upon all that breathes. The animal life that survived needed to accommodate itself to the changed conditions [- bigger [plants](#) and [animals](#) becoming 'disadvantaged' to survive].

According to rabbinical sources, before the Deluge man was vegetarian; but the post-diluvian population did not continue the vegetarian habits of the "sinful" population of the earth. The Talmud and the Midrashim narrate that after the Deluge a carnivorous instinct was awakened in animal and man, and everyone had the impulse to bite. [*The Book of Enoch* 89:11: "After the deluge they began to bite one another." According to *Midrash Aggada* [in regard] to [Genesis 10:8\[-9\]](#), Nimrod was the first to eat meat [which, since Dr. Velikovsky is next going to tell us that God told Noah that, **Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you** [Gen 9:3-4](#), cannot be true]].

The fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth and upon every bird of the air... Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you; and as I gave you the green plants, I will give you everything. [[Gen 9:1-3](#)]

The prohibition against quenching the thirst for blood [[Gen 9:4](#) ff] is an ordinance said to have been introduced immediately after the Deluge [as it is "said" by God directly to Noah].

In a teleological [or 'God-planned'] program this result of the Deluge does not seem appropriate for a catastrophe brought about to chastize the human race and the animals, to cleanse them of their vices and make them better. Because of its non-program [or **foolish**] appearance [e.g., [1Co 1:18-25](#); [2:12-16](#)] the carnivorous urge must have been not a mythological motif, but a result of physiological changes. [Uh-huh, ones **ordained** by God ([Psa 8:3](#)).] Most probably an anemia [or **low blood oxygen**] connected with the diminution of oxygen in the air was responsible for [or just contributed to] the new inclination.

[One might speculate that the diet of meat would be conducive to the production of the additional red blood cells needed by the body to absorb more efficiently the diminished amount of oxygen entering the lungs. In Tibet the high altitude and rarefied atmosphere is said to make it impossible to follow the vegetarian diet advocated by Buddhist teaching. Cf. *Science* Vol. 203, no. 4383 (March 23, 1979), p.1230: "At high altitudes all animals hyperventilate - an involuntary mechanism of fast breathing in which carbon dioxide causes the *ph* of the blood to become alkaline and constricts blood vessels. This, in turn, reduces the blood flow to the brain and brain cells become starved of oxygen, eventually dying. An alkaline *ph* in the blood can also produce other fatal effects."]

But God didn't say that His unavoidably '**foolish-looking-to-the-world plan**' was simply to "chastize the human race and the animals". He instead said that He intended to, almost entirely, **destroy** ^{H4229} **man** ^{H120} **whom I have created** ^{H1254} as well as to, almost entirely, **destroy all flesh** ^{H1320} **wherein is the breath** ^{H7307} **of life** ([Gen 6:6-8,11-13,17-22](#)). And of course I say "almost entirely" because we **know** that there were only **eight** survivors, none of whom were 'chastised', but were instead **delivered** ^{H5337} and **provided** ^{H3559: G4265} for, along with quite a large 'boat load' of *animals*, the only casualties of which must have been among the **clean** ^{H2889} ones, because, besides their '**sacrificial use**' (e.g., [Gen 8:20-22](#);

[Gen 22:1-18](#); [Gen 31:51-55](#); [Exo 5:1-3](#)), another of the more important reasons being that they were brought to become **cattle** ^{H929}, or be available for hunting as necessary or desired, where by “necessary” I mean so the **eight** and their progeny wouldn’t starve if waiting for a harvest, and by “desired” I mean that God did indeed give us these *animals*, almost unconditionally, for **meat**, and I say “almost unconditionally” because, besides the ‘condition’ that **scripture** and Dr. Velikovsky will shortly remind us of, **cruelty** to and/or ‘**abuse**’ of God’s *animals* is a **sin** (e.g., [Lev 24:17-21](#); [Psa 36:6](#); [50:10](#); [147:9](#); [Pro 12:10](#); [Ecc 3:18-21](#)/[Tit 1:12](#); [Deu 25:4](#)/[1Ti 5:18](#)/[1Co 9:9-10](#).)

And God’s ‘**plan**’ wasn’t so much “to cleanse them of their vices and make them better” (e.g., [Pro 20:30](#)). It was much more that **Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD**, and that a **few**, evidently not most, in Noah’s progeny that Jesus **knew** (e.g., [Psa 139:16](#)) – or in our perspective, that He would ‘**come to know**’ – **found grace** too. So evidently without any intent to ‘eradicate’ the ‘**sin nature**’, God must have instead intended to just further ‘hinder’ it, and thereby further ‘limit’ it, and this by adding on top of the challenges that **the curse** brought the additional, ‘**time-stealing**’ and ‘**occupationally-diverting**’ ones, including a much shorter **life**, and a much less ‘enhanced’ *environment*, where ‘**fleshly corruption**’ happens much faster, and ‘**groaningly**’ and ‘**painfully**’ so (e.g., [Rom 8:22](#)), making opportunities to **sin** much less available than before, though most all of this is really due to the ongoing ‘**natural fallout**’ of **the curse**.

And God let Ham’s apparently at least mostly not *genetically-expressed* ‘**angel-human**’ wife aboard too, where by so doing He ‘opened the door’ to ‘**angel-human**’ led ‘**beastism**’, which evidently did require further ‘adjustments’, especially the ones resulting from that Tower of Babel ‘incident’, including that **the earth was divided**, which I imagine eventually also ‘pulled off’ The Sinking of Atlantis, all evidently among the resulting bigger ‘adjustments’ needed to insure that ‘**angel-humans**’ wouldn’t get all ‘Tower-of-Babel’, ‘one-world-government’, ‘out of control’ again, and at the same time allow their ‘**evil influence**’ to actually help ‘hinder’ **sin** from getting ‘out-of-control’ too, with **evil people** attracting the most **wicked...rulers**, who ‘**naturally**’ expedite their own **fall** and/or **destruction**, especially if ‘pushing’ a ‘global want-a-be’ **nation**. And **remember** that even the Antichrist won’t get past **the kings of the east**, not in a **time, times, and an half**.

And yes, God is incomprehensively **good** at ‘balancing’ a multitude of ‘forces’ (pun ‘absolutely’ intended), and at making them **all...work together for good**, and especially for **them who are the called according to his purpose**. And I’d say that in this present ‘environment’ that the motivation to ‘get busy’ is so much better than before, because there’s now so much less **time** ^{H4150} to **waste** (MP-PAMD, [H1110](#); [H1326](#); [H2717](#); [H2720](#); [H2721](#); [H2723](#); [H3765](#); [H4875](#); [H5327](#); [H7582](#); [H7703](#); [H8047](#); [H8074](#); [H8077](#); [H8414](#); [H1086](#); [H3615](#); [G684](#)), **thank and praise the LORD**.

And Dr. Velikovsky’s ideas about “anemia”, etc. are applicable, in that surely one of God’s ‘bigger motivations’ for declaring after The Flood that, **Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat** for us, was because of “the diminution of oxygen in the air”, another ‘big one’ being that it takes a while to get a crop grown and harvested, this being an extremely time-consuming, and presently absolutely necessary **sweat of the face** ‘occupation’, and one in which we must all in some way ‘participate’. And I mean if you don’t actually do it, then other labor on your part must pay for and/or support it – yes, maybe not your own, but someone’s – or, and as in by far the most cases, you **starve**. And I say “presently absolutely necessary” because evidently

before The Flood this kind of **'time-consuming', 'sin-limiting' work** wasn't so necessary for survival.

Note: "Approximately 9 million people die of world hunger each year according to world hunger statistics; more than the death toll for malaria, AIDs and tuberculosis combined in 2012." (<https://borgenproject.org/15-world-hunger-statistics> & <http://www.stopthehunger.com/>)

The Origin of the Oceans

It must have been at the very beginning of my occupation with the problems later developed in my books and in [still] not yet [conventionally] published manuscripts [including this one, though all these "not yet published manuscripts" are now available at <http://www.varchive.org/index.htm>], that I came upon the question of the origin of salts in seas and oceans. The common salt is a substantial ingredient of the oceanic content, or, said differently, the water of the oceans and seas contains a substantial solution of NaCl, or sodium chloride. Even though our blood and tissues abound in sodium chloride, man and animals are not adapted [or **made**] to drink salty water [- at the now *high concentration* of NaCl in the *oceans*, anyway], and life on land [again now] could develop only thanks to the evaporation of the water from the surface of seas and oceans, or to distillation - the evaporating water is free from salts. Falling as rain or snow or dew, it feeds underground sources and also glaciers, and through them the brooks and rivers and lakes, and is delivered to our use usually through concrete tubes and metal [or now *plastic*] pipes.

Of the salts of the seas sodium chloride is by far the most abundant. The provenance [or "origin"] of it is, however, a riddle. It was, and still is, assumed that the salts in the oceans originated mainly through importation [erosion] from land, having been dissolved from rocks by flowing rivulets and rivers, themselves fed by underground sources, and the same process working on the rocks of the seabed. Terrestrial formations are rich in sodium, and in [**'ridiculously-long'**] eons of time, it is assumed, the sodium washed out of the rocks supplied its content to the oceans; the seas evaporate and the concentration of these salts grows. But the rocks are by far not so rich in chlorine, and hence the problem - from where did chlorine come to contribute its abundance to oceanic water? There is chlorine in source [or *river*] water, but usually not in significant amounts. The proportion of salts in the rivers is very different from their proportion in the seas. River water has many carbonates [or *carbonate salts*] (80 percent of the salts), fewer sulphates [or *sulphate salts*] (13 percent) and still fewer chlorides [or *chloride salts, mostly NaCl*] (7 percent). Sea water has many chlorides [and lots of NaCl] (89 percent), fewer sulphates (10 percent) and only a [very] few carbonates (0.2 percent). The comparison of these figures makes it clear that rivers cannot be made responsible for most of the salts [especially all the NaCl] of the seas. Therefore it is also obvious that there is no proper way of calculating the age of the Earth by comparing the amount of salts in the seas with the annual discharge by the rivers; the most that can be done

in this respect is to calculate the rich amount of carbonates in the rivers in their relation to the relatively poor concentration to these salts in the seas; but then there will be no explanation for the rich concentration of chlorides in the seas in comparison with their poor concentration in the rivers.

A part of the salts could be traced to the washing of lands and the floor of the seas; chlorine is known also to be discharged by volcanoes, but to account for the chlorine locked in the seas, volcanic eruptions, whether on land or under the surface of the seas, needed to have taken place on an unimaginable scale - actually, it was figured out, on an impossible scale. Thus it was acknowledged that the provenance [again, "origin"] of chlorine in the salts of the seas is a problem unsolved.

Paleontological research makes it rather apparent that marine animals in some early age were more closely related to fresh-water fauna; in other words, the salinity of the oceans increased markedly at some age in the past.

Of course since all the "early" *layers of sediment* that we can blame on Mercury were *laid* at about the same time as 'his' supposed much 'later' ones, and since most the "salt" was likely 'added' at about this same time too, then the change from *fresh* to *salt water animal life* must only be in evidence in *fossil form above* 'his' *sediment*, and that is, in 'Venus-laid' *sediment* and above.

The most obvious and permanent effect of a deluge of extraterrestrial origin on the Earth would be the increase in its water volume and of the place occupied by the seas. Presently four-fifths of the Earth are covered with water. A stupendous addition of water to the Earth should have decreased, not increased its salinity, if the water came down in a pure state. But if the Earth was showered by torrents of hydrogen and [it *bonded* with *oxygen* in Earth's *atmosphere* to form] water, some other ingredients of the Saturnian atmosphere [- *evidently including chlorine* -] could also have swept across the Earth's orbit [- *of course all the salt that was buried in the Genesis topsoil had time to dissolve into the Oceans before the rest settled and was buried again, eafc minor*].

In the Buddhist book on "The World Cycles," the *Visuddhi-Magga*, where the catastrophes that terminated the world ages are described, it is said:

But when a world cycle perishes by water... there arises a cycle-destroying great cloud of salt water. At first it rains with a very fine rain which gradually increases to great torrents which fill one hundred thousand times ten million worlds, and then the mountain peaks of the earth become flooded with saltish water, and hidden from view. And the water is buoyed up on all sides by the wind, and rises upward from the earth until it engulfs the heavens. [The *Visuddhi-Magga*, transl. by H. C. Warren in *Buddhism in Translations* (Cambridge, Mass., 1896), Chap. xiii, p. 327.]

Professor Dr. Howard Crosby Warren was a late 18th/early 19th Century...

...American psychologist and the first chairman of the Princeton University Psychology department. He was also president of the American Psychological Association in 1913. The Society of Experimental Psychologists awards the Howard Crosby Warren Medal each year in his honor [though undoubtedly this 'award' only annually adds to his ultimate *shame*]...

Note: "New Light" Presbyterians "founded the College of New Jersey [now Princeton University] in 1746 in order to train ministers". "New light" (or "New Side") Presbyterians "opposed the Awakening", and opposed the 'originally established', 'Awakening-supporting', New England Presbyterians, who "would come to be called the Old Side" or "Old Light" Presbyterians. But...

As the fervor that was the Great Awakening died down, the two synods spoke about union. [*"A **synod**... is a council of a church, usually convened to decide an issue of doctrine, administration or application".*] These talks were in full swing by 1751, but would not come to final fruition until 1758. On May 29, 1758 at three p.m. the two synods unanimously decided to unite forming the Synod of New York and Philadelphia [*- a milestone in the decline of this Church*].

The factions of the Old Side and New Side did not die down. The Synod of New York had 72 ministers in 1758 when it merged with the Synod of Philadelphia, which had only a little over twenty. Thus, the New Side [*Enlightenment*] doctrine was imposed upon the Presbyteries and became the rule of the Synod. By 1762 disagreement over the plan of union and examination of candidates for the ministry had erupted at synod. The Old Side did not inquire into the candidate's experience to determine his acquaintance with religion, and the New Side minister had done so. The synod decided to leave it up to each presbytery on whether or not to question candidates in such a manner. That year they also created a Second Presbytery of Philadelphia, which was clearly done on a theological split, not a geographical one. In 1765 the Old Side controlled Presbytery of Donegal [*meaning "fort of the foreigners", now "a borough in Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania... a distinct municipality from the adjacent Donegal Township... named after the town and county of Donegal in Ireland"*] was split into multiple presbyteries. On account of this perceived violation of their rights and the Plan of Union, the Old Side members of the Presbytery of Donegal withdrew from Synod and Revs. John Ewing [*an "honorary doctor", "educated... at the College of New Jersey (today's Princeton University)", and "pastor of the First Presbyterian Church in Philadelphia from 1759 until his death in 1802", who also "served as the provost (president) of the University of Pennsylvania from 1780 to 1802", and who was a preacher of "sermons [that] were popular with the general churchgoers and educated elites"*] and Alexander McDowell [*"a Presbyterian minister... ordained to go as an evangelist to Virginia and to itinerate in New Castle Presbytery... [where the] Synod's school was entrusted to him, and was finally removed to Newark, Delaware... [and in 1767] chartered as an Academy by the Proprietary, John Penn... [and in 1777 - during "the Revolutionary War"] Dr. Ewing and Hugh Williamson visited Great Britain to solicit funds for its endowment", and "were successful and Ewing brought back... a large sum"*], [*and*] both [*of these being*] Old Side ministers, protested

the decision of synod to split Donegal. In the end, the outbreak of the Revolutionary War took center stage and by the end of the war the Synod of New York and Philadelphia dissolved and in 1788 the first General Assembly was formed.

But getting back to the **corruption** [H4889: G5356](#) of Professor Dr. Warren...

Starting in 1891, he studied abroad at the universities in Leipzig, Berlin and Munich, but left by 1892 to help establish a psychological laboratory at Princeton University with James Baldwin. Despite not earning a doctorate until 1917 Warren was appointed professor in 1902.

Professor Dr. James Mark Baldwin, besides also studying at Leipzig and Berlin, was...

...educated at Princeton under the supervision of Scottish philosopher James McCosh and ... was one of the founders of the Department of Psychology at the university. He made important contributions to early psychology, psychiatry, and to the theory of evolution.

And Rev. Dr. James McCosh, “a prominent philosopher of the Scottish School of Common Sense”, (which is “best remembered for its opposition to the pervasive philosophy of David Hume”, and was “influential and evident in the works of Thomas Jefferson and late 18th century American politics”), endeavored to “reconcile evolution and Christianity”, and he...

...studied at the Universities of Glasgow and Edinburgh [[near and/or at the time Charles Darwin was there](#)], obtaining his M.A. at the latter... for an essay on stoicism. He became a minister of the Established Church of Scotland in 1834, serving as pastor... [[in two different ‘towns’](#)]. He sided with the Free Church of Scotland in the Disruption of 1843, becoming minister at Brechin's new East Free Church. In 1850 or 1851 he was appointed Professor of Logic and Metaphysics at Queen's College...

In 1868 he travelled to the United States to become president of the College of New Jersey (now Princeton University). He resigned the presidency in 1888, but continued [[evidently at some point getting his doctorate too](#)] to teach philosophy until his death [[and surely he wasn't ‘doomed’ \(a category of ‘predestination’\) just for trying to “reconcile evolution”, but only if Jesus never knew him](#)]. McCosh Hall (home of the English department) and a cross-campus walkway are named in his honor. The campus infirmary is named after his wife, Isabella McCosh [[who, and whether or not she ignorantly or knowingly supported her husband's efforts to “reconcile evolution”, may have nevertheless ‘come to be known’ by Jesus too](#)].

And as for the “pervasive philosophy” of David Hume, (whom I was assigned to read in college, along with Niccolò Machiavelli, Jean-Jacque Rousseau, Immanuel Kant, John Locke, etc., yet, providentially enough, I neglected to read most of them, and let my professor's lectures about them be sufficient to regurgitate), Hume being among those who reject “Common Sense”. But please indulge my encyclopedia's ‘lecture’, along with my numerous added definitions, bios and interpretations (distinguished in various colors), about this man of “passion”, he being...

...a Scottish philosopher, historian, economist, and essayist, who is best known today for his highly influential system of philosophical [1] empiricism [“a theory... that knowledge comes only or primarily from sensory experience”, and certainly not from a ‘*sin nature*’], [2] skepticism [“a method that questions the possibility of certainty in knowledge”, including from *scripture*], and [3] naturalism [the “idea or belief that only natural (as opposed to supernatural or spiritual) laws and forces operate in the world”, and meaning that there are no such things as *miracles*].

Hume's empiricist approach to philosophy places him with John Locke...

...a 17th Century “intellectual hero of the Whigs”, associate of Isaac Newton, and known as the “Father of Liberalism” (“Liberalism” originally equated with “ideas of liberty and equality”), whose “writings influenced Voltaire” (18th Century “French Enlightenment writer, historian, and philosopher famous for his wit, his attacks on the established Catholic Church, and his advocacy of freedom of religion... [and] speech, and separation of church and state”), and Mr. Locke “influenced... Jean-Jacques Rousseau” (18th Century Geneva, Switzerland born, whose “political philosophy influenced the Enlightenment... [and] the French Revolution and the overall development of modern political and educational thought”), and Mr. Locke “influenced... many Scottish Enlightenment thinkers, as well as the American revolutionaries”, and his “contributions to classical republicanism and liberal theory are reflected in the United States Declaration of Independence”, but **we** will just call him, and pretty much any given Empiricist, a “blank slate”, because they’re all, including ones calling themselves Christians or Jews, **blinded in the mind** enough to reject the existence of the ‘*sin nature*’, ‘believing’ instead that we all start with a ‘clean’ or “blank slate” at birth, though *scripture* is clear otherwise (e.g., [Pro 22:15](#); [Rom 5:12](#))...

...[and Mr. Hume may also be ‘placed’ with Sir] Francis Bacon...

...the late 16th/early 17th Century “Father of empiricism” and of “the scientific method”, who was “Attorney General and...Lord Chancellor of England”, though also ‘reportedly’ 1) a “Pederast” (the “adult male” in a “homosexual relationship between an adult male and a pubescent or adolescent male”), 2) the real ‘mastermind’ behind Shakespeare’s plays and sonnets, and 3) a Satanist who ‘masterminded the corruption of society’ – which I would agree he successfully – even if unwittingly – did, and even if only by ‘fathering’ Empiricism...

...and [Mr. Hume may be ‘placed’ with the previously ‘favorably bio’ed] Thomas Hobbes...

...who is “considered one of the founders of modern political philosophy”, and reportedly one of the “noble spirits”, except he “honoured” Sir Francis Bacon, his “fellow-philosopher and friend”, so possibly beyond being an “Empiricist”, he too may have been another of the ‘evil-mastermind’, ‘elitist’, ‘sophist’, and/or ‘conspiratorial corruptors of society’, characteristics applicable to ‘any given Empiricist’, though surely their ideas have since been further **perverted** by our **adversary**.

...[which altogether ‘places’ Mr. Hume] as a [‘top’] British Empiricist. Beginning with his *A Treatise of Human Nature* (1739), Hume strove to create a

total naturalistic [read, 'unspiritual' and 'un-miraculous'] science of man that examined the psychological basis of human nature. Against philosophical rationalists [who regard "reason as the chief source and test of knowledge"], Hume held that passion rather than reason governs human behaviour and argued [like most all Empiricists] against the existence of innate ideas ["innatism" being "a [scriptural] philosophical and epistemological ['knowledge theory'] doctrine that holds that the mind is born with ideas/knowledge [including a '**sin nature**'], and that therefore the mind is not a ['clean' or] "blank slate" at birth, as early [and most all] empiricists such as John Locke claimed", and yes, such 'arguments' and 'claims' of "empiricists" pointedly "against innatism" expose that they 'believe' that there's no such thing as a '**sin nature**'], positing [instead] that all human knowledge is ultimately founded solely in experience; Hume thus held that genuine knowledge must either be directly traceable to objects perceived in experience, or result from abstract reasoning about relations between ideas which are derived from experience, calling the rest "nothing but sophistry and illusion" [irony alert !!!], a dichotomy later given the name *Hume's fork* [or call it, '**Satan's pitchfork**', as Mr. Hume essentially proposed - however much unwittingly - that **truth** is 'deception', and that reality should instead be interpreted through **lust** and **pride**, and other **fleshly** means, these being 'major planks' in Satan's now 'long-revived', '**evil-masterminded propaganda platform**' of '**self idolatry**'].

In what is sometimes referred to as Hume's problem of induction, he argued that inductive reasoning [or "reasoning in which the premises are viewed as supplying strong evidence for the truth of the conclusion", otherwise definable as 'logical reasoning' or 'common sense' where "conclusions" are considered "probable"], and belief in causality ["cause and effect"] cannot ultimately be justified rationally [which is another way to say that **truth** is 'deception']; our trust in causality and induction instead results from custom [**scripture** ?] and mental habit [**trust in...God** ?], and are attributable to only the experience of "constant conjunction" ["synonym for causality and induction"] rather than logic ["thought" or "reason"]: for we can never, in experience, perceive that one event causes another, but only that the two are always conjoined, and to draw any inductive causal inferences from past experience first requires the presupposition that the future will be like the past, a presupposition which cannot be grounded in prior experience without already being presupposed. [And **many** 'believe' such 'psychobabble', while **we** instead **believe**, for **ensamples**, [Romans 15:4](#), [1Corinthians 10:11](#) and [2 Peter 2:1-2](#).] Hume's anti-teleological opposition to the argument for God's existence from design [which included his "opposition" to the idea that God is in any way involved with His Creation] is generally regarded [by '**self-idolaters**', and too many who call themselves Christians or Jews,] as the most intellectually significant such attempt to rebut the teleological argument prior to Darwin.

And yes, **many** 'believe' that Mr. Hume defeated "the teleological argument", otherwise known as "the argument from design" or "intelligent design argument", which is the "argument for the existence of God or, more generally, for an intelligent creator" that is "based on perceived evidence of deliberate design in the

natural or physical world". Talk about **vanity...of mind**, and being **blinded in the mind** and **heart** ([Eph 4:17-20](#); [2Co 3:14-16](#); [4:4](#)).

Hume was also a sentimentalist who held that ethics are based on emotion or sentiment rather than abstract moral principle [like say, [The Ten Commandments](#)], famously proclaiming that "Reason is, and ought only to be the slave of the passions". Some contemporary scholars view Hume's moral theory as a unique attempt to synthesize the modern sentimentalist moral tradition to which Hume belonged, with the [["born with Plato and Aristotle"](#)] virtue ethics tradition of ancient [[and especially Greek](#)] philosophy, with which Hume concurred in regarding traits of character, rather than acts or their consequences, as ultimately the proper objects of moral evaluation. Hume's moral theory maintained an early commitment to naturalistic explanations of moral phenomena, and is usually taken to have first clearly expounded the *is-ought* problem, or the idea that a statement of fact alone can never give rise to a normative [[or "standard" or right](#)] conclusion of what *ought* to be done. Hume also influentially [[among 'self idolaters', etc.](#)] denied that humans have an actual conception of the self, positing that we experience only a bundle of sensations, and that the self is nothing more than this bundle of causally-connected perceptions. Hume's compatibilist theory of free will [- "[the belief that free will and determinism are compatible ideas](#)", or that a person has "[the ability to choose to do otherwise than one does](#)",] takes causal determinism [["the philosophical position that for every event there exist conditions that could cause no other event"](#), which **we** could identify as strict 'Calvinistic Predestinationism',] as fully compatible with human freedom [[which **we** could call strict 'Arminianistic Potentialism'](#)], and has proved extremely influential on subsequent moral philosophy [[except, and besides Mr. Hume being both like a Calvinist and Arminianist in that he does not **discern** \[G1253\]\(#\); \[G1252\]\(#\) the difference between God's perspective and ours, he also **deceiveth** \[H7411\]\(#\); \[G4105\]\(#\); \[G5422\]\(#\); \[G538\]\(#\) 'self idolaters' to 'believe' that they may, without 'consequence' or 'interference' from God, 'determine' or 'be the **gods**' of their own **lives**\].](#)

While Hume was derailed in his attempts to start a university career by protests over his "atheism," and bemoaned that his literary debut, *A Treatise of Human Nature*, 'fell dead-born from the press', he nevertheless found literary success in his lifetime as an essayist, and a career as a librarian at the University of Edinburgh. His tenure there, and the access to research materials it provided, ultimately resulted in Hume's writing the massive six-volume *The History of England*, which became a bestseller and the standard history of England in its day. Hume described his "love for literary fame" as his "ruling passion" and judged his two late works, the so-called "first" and "second" enquiries, *An Enquiry Concerning Human Understanding* and *An Enquiry Concerning the Principles of Morals*, respectively, as his greatest literary and philosophical achievements, asking his contemporaries to judge him on the merits of the later texts alone, rather than the more radical formulations of his early, youthful work, dismissing his philosophical debut as juvenilia: "A work which the Author had projected before he left

College." Nevertheless, despite Hume's protestations, a general consensus exists today that Hume's strongest and most important arguments, and most philosophically distinctive doctrines, are found in the original form they take in the *Treatise*, begun when Hume was just 23 years old, and now regarded as one of the most important works in the history of Western [- and that is, **worldly**] philosophy.

And whether Jesus '**came to and still continues to know**' any of these Empiricists, including Sir Francis Bacon, Misters Hobbes, Locke, Voltaire, Rousseau and/or Hume, (the latter more likely sometime after he abandoned some of his earlier more "radical formulations", of course), or the psychologists and evolutionists, Rev. Dr. McCosh, Drs. Baldwin and Warren, or President Thomas Jefferson, and others of "the American revolutionaries" for that matter, Jesus knows. (But see <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=dmFPfEYRZF8&feature=youtu.be> - paste address.)

And these 'investigations' into the locals of Leipzig, Berlin, Princeton, Edinburgh, etc., were germane to our overall **purposes** [H4284](#): [G4286](#): [G1011](#). However they were arguably altogether a 'wild goose chase' too, because we were talking about the wrong H. C. Warren 😊.

Henry Clarke Warren (1854-1899) was an American scholar of Sanskrit and Pali. Warren along with Charles Rockwell Lanman founded the Harvard Oriental ["book"] Series in 1891; on his death in 1899 he left \$15000 towards its [continued] publication.

He graduated in 1879 with an A.B. from Harvard University, and followed it up with studies at Johns Hopkins University under Lanman and Maurice Bloomfield [[who also studied "in Berlin and Leipzig"](#)], and at Oxford University with T. W. Rhys Davids [["founder of the Pali Text Society" who "took an active part in founding the British Academy and London School for Oriental Studies"](#)]. He purchased the house of Charles Beck in 1891, and lived in it until his death in 1899 at which he bequeathed it, along with the bulk of his estate, to Harvard University; the building is now known as the Beck-Warren House (or Warren House).

His work *Buddhism in Translation* (1896) [etc.]... appeared...[in] the Harvard Oriental Series.

And Dr. Velikovsky, though one of the Jews **blinded...until this day**, nonetheless sees that...

Volcanoes which were active during the cataclysm of the Deluge and during other cosmic upheavals vomited sulphur, chlorine, and carbonates, and contributed to the composition of the salts of the oceans. Carbonates [[volcanic ash, etc.](#)] fell on Earth in large quantities in some of the upheavals, certainly in the one which took place in the middle of the second millennium before the present era, at the very end of the Middle Kingdom in Egypt [[involving 'Venus-class volcanic activity'](#)], an upheaval described in detail in *Worlds in Collision* [[and Earth In Upheaval, which we'll get to in SECTION 8 and 9](#)]. But a

major portion of the chlorine in which the oceans are so rich must have [- or let's just say, may have] come from an extraterrestrial source [or two].

And Dr. Velikovsky acknowledges that Venus "certainly" was one of the bigger causes for a lot of *chemicals* being "vomited" onto Earth's surface, though he apparently '**mis-imagined**' that a 'proton/salt spray' from Saturn alone was enough to also cause 'extreme' *volcanic activity*.

[The knowledge that the water of the oceans came from the most part from Saturn and that the waters were salty was combined by the Greeks into a metaphor which has the sea being the "tear of Kronos." This tradition originated with the Pythagorean school and may derive ultimately from Egypt. (Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride* [*On Isis and Osiris*], ch.32: "According to what the Pythagoreans say, the sea is the tear of Kronos." Clement of Alexandria, *Stromata* ["Patchwork", "because it deals with such a variety of matters"], V.8, 20 f.: "This the Pythagoreans believed...comparing the sea to a tear of Kronos." The same is found in a fragment of Aristotle in the edition of V. Rose [?] (Teubner, 1886), no.196. Cf. ['Pompous-ass'] Porphyry's *Life of Pythagoras* (Nauck ed., p.39). Cf. also Eugène Lefebure [late 19th Century "French Egyptologist" known for, "Working with the French Archaeological Mission in the Valley of the Kings [Egypt]...in the tomb of Ramesses IV (KV2)... [and for 'documenting'] the tomb of Seti I", etc.], *Etudes Egyptologiques* [*Egyptological Studies*], Vol.III: *Le Mythe osirien* [*The Osirian Myth*] (Paris, 1874), p.125: "...et il faut sans doute regarder comme égyptienne cette croyance des Pythagoriciens rapportée par Plutarch, que la mer était une larme de Kronos..." ["...and it is doubtless necessary to regard as Egyptian this belief of the Pythagoreans, as reported by Plutarch, that the sea was a tear of Kronos..."]]

My explanation of the origin of a large portion of the salts of the seas suggests that Saturn is rich not only in water [or at least in *hydrogen*, and probably also *oxygen*,] but also in chlorine, either in the form of sodium chloride or [more likely] in some other combination [like *hydrochloric acid*, HCl], or even atomic free. The last solution, of atomic free chlorine [or *independent chlorine atoms*], appeared chemically and biologically somewhat difficult to contemplate, because chlorine is a very active element, seeking ties with other elements [and that is, it readily *bonds* with other *atoms*, including with *hydrogen*, which is apparently abundant on Saturn]; [and] biologically ["difficult to contemplate" because it would readily make *hydrochloric acid*, HCl, abundant too, this being a problem] because it would be damaging to any plant life, yet there are other indications which point to the possibility of plant life on Saturn.

Is there really *plant life* on Saturn? Though I remain skeptical of any *lifeforms* on Saturn, this also because - Dr. Velikovsky apparently compartmentalizing here - that Saturn supposedly used to be a *dwarf star* that went *nova* - I have to consider that Saturn may have '**spewed**' a good deal of *chlorine* at us, which improves the chances that it also '**spewed**' much more *hydrogen* at us than I had up to this point thought. And I mean it "possibly" provided more *water* for The Flood than what was provided from either the *water canopy* or from inside the Earth, or not.

Saturn the God of Seeds

Saturn was called "the god of seeds" or "of sowing," [Augustine, *De Civitate Dei* VII.13f.]...

[Augustine wrote: "*Saturnus... , unus de principibus deus, penes quem sationum omnium dominatus est.*" ["Saturn... , one of the principal gods, the one in whose control is dominion over all sowing."] Cf. Arnobius [of Sicca, "died c. 330", "an Early Christian apologist [though evidently also '**dangerously**' or maybe even '**damnably**' gnostic,] of Berber [- "or Barbary", read, of 'North African'] origin"] 4.9; Macrobius, *Saturnalia* I. 7.25; Servius, *On Vergil's Georgics* I. 21; Saturn was credited with the introduction of agriculture in Italy (Macrobius, *Saturnalia* VII. 21). In Greece Kronos was closely associated with the harvest of grain (H. W. Parke [?], *The Festivals of the Athenians* (London, 1977 [- this & other of his books available at https://www.goodreads.com/author/list/734949.H_W_Parke]), p.29. Among the Egyptians it was said that "Osiris is seed." (Julius Firmicus Maternus ["a Latin writer and notable astrologer, who received a pagan classical education that made him conversant with Greek", who "lived in the reign of Constantine I (306 to 337 AD) and his successors", and whose "triple career made him a public advocate, an astrologer and finally a Christian apologist", his Christian work "preserved in a single manuscript from the Bibliotheca Palatina, now in the Vatican library" and "first printed at Strasbourg in 1562, and... reprinted several times, both separately and combined with the polemical writings of Minucius Felix, Cyprian or Arnobius", the Bibliotheca Palatina being "the most important library of the German Renaissance, numbering approximately 5,000 printed books and 3,524 manuscripts" with "some of the books and manuscripts... now held by the University of Heidelberg", but "the bulk of the original collection... now an integral part of the Bibliotheca Apostolica Vaticana at the Vatican"], *The Error of the Pagan Religions*, II. 6); cf. Johann Peter Adolf Erman [a late 19th/early 20th Century "renowned German Egyptologist and lexicographer"], *Die Religion der Aegypter* [*The Religion of the Egyptians*] (Berlin, 1934), p.40; Hugo Gressman[n] [late 19th/early 20th Century "prominent Old Testament scholar in Protestant Germany", who "argued" that the "Decalogue", or the "Ten Commandments", contrary to other 'evaluations', "bore no evidence of having been influenced by Canaan", and so "must have been composed at a far earlier stage in Israel's history", and must be "older than the Prophets"], *Tod und Auferstehung des Osiris* [*Death and Resurrection of Osiris*], p.8 ff. In Babylonia during the festival marking the drowning of Tammuz, grains and plants were thrown upon the waves. (S. Langdon [bio, p.277], *Tammuz and Ishtar* [Isis], p.13.)

["Saturn was called"] ...also "the lord of the fieldfruits." [Lydus [again no, not the one that was "supposedly a mythological character, 'supposedly' because his grandfather, Manes, the first king of Maeonia", "was believed to be a son of Gaia [Earth] and Zeus", "with Maeonia being the kingdom that was later renamed Lydia after it's third king Lydus, this line of kings likely all '**angel-humans**' who probably lived closer to The Visits of Venus than Mars", but instead, "John the Lydian or John Lydus... a 6th-century Byzantine administrator and writer on antiquarian [ancient] subjects"], *De Mensibus* [*Of Months* - "a history of the different pagan festivals of the year"], IV.10.]

A Deluge destroying much faunal life must have caused a dissemination of plants: in many places new [or just 'relocated' and/or variations in the] forms of vegetation must have sprouted from the rich soil fertilized by lava and mud; seeds were carried from all parts of the globe and in many instances, because of the change in climate, they were able to grow in new surroundings. The axis of the earth was displaced, the orbit [slightly] changed, the speed of rotation [slightly] altered, the conditions of irrigation became different, the composition of the atmosphere was not the same - entirely new conditions of growth [within strict limits] prevailed.

And though the 'changed growth' could understandably be blamed on Saturn, and though I'm guessing that other 'alien lifeforms' – besides **angels** – have reached Earth, as we will further consider in later sections, "seeds" could not have been '**spewed**' from such a supposedly 'hydrochloric-acid-rich', 'exploding dwarf star', and therefore could not have participated 'organically' in the changes that occurred on Earth following the Flood, though Dr. Velikovsky and his sources seem resolved that such 'organic participation' from Saturn took place...

Ovid thus describes the exuberant growth of vegetation following the Flood. "After the old moisture remaining from the Flood had grown warm from the rays of the sun, the slime of the wet marshes swelled with heat, and the fertile seeds of life, nourished in that life-giving soil, as in a mother's womb, grew, and in time took on some special form." "When, therefore, the earth, covered with mud from the recent Flood, became heated up by the hot and genial rays of the sun, she brought forth innumerable forms of life, in part of ancient shapes, and in part creatures new and strange [having been relocated to places and conditions in which they had not grown before, and with just **eight** people alive to actually witness such changes]."

[Ovid, *Metamorphoses*, lines 418 ff., transl. by F. J. Miller [?]. Cf. Empedocles ["c. 490 -c. 430 BC... a Greek pre-Socratic philosopher and a citizen of Acragas (Agrigentum), a Greek city in Sicily... best known for originating the cosmogenic theory of the four [or five] classical elements" ["earth, water, air, fire, and aether ", "or ether, also called quintessence... the material that fills the region of the universe above the terrestrial sphere"], which "also proposed forces he called *Love* and *Strife* which would mix as well as separate the elements", these "physical speculations" being "part of a [mythical] history of the universe which also dealt with the origin and development of life", he being also, "Influenced by the Pythagoreans", and "a vegetarian who supported the doctrine of reincarnation", and "is generally considered the last Greek philosopher to have recorded his ideas in verse", of which, "Some of his work survives, more than is the case for any other pre-Socratic philosopher", and his "death was mythologized by ancient writers, and has been the subject of a number of literary treatments"], fg.60,61, edited by J. Brun [?] (Paris,1966); cf. also Plato, *The Statesman*, 65.]

The innumerable new forms of life in the animal and plant kingdoms following the Deluge could have been solely a result of multiple mutations...

However again, since *mutation by radiation* actually partially and randomly destroys atomic structure, and so really only leads to 'unfitness' or *death*, then all such 'fit changes' were instead the result of 'relocation', abruptly 'de-enhanced' conditions, and *variation within species*.

Still Dr. Velikovsky, his assistant, and some *scientists* further '**mis-imagine**' that...

[The effects of nearby supernovae on the biosphere have been the object of intensive study by geologists in recent years, in the attempt to account for abrupt changes in the history of life on this planet. Cf. D. Russel and W. Tucker, "*Supernovae and the Extinction of the Dinosaurs*," *Nature* 229 (Feb.19,1971), pp.553-554. Sudden extinctions were followed by the appearance of new species, quite different from those preceding them in the stratigraphic record. In a relatively brief interval whole genera were annihilated, giving way to new creatures of radically different aspect, having little

in common with the forms they replaced. See Dr. Norman D. Newell [bio'ed in SECTION 3], "Revolutions in the History of Life," *Geological Society of America Special Papers* 89, pp.68-91; Cf. S. J. Gould and N. Eldredge [both Dr. Newell's students], "Punctuated equilibria: the tempo and mode of evolution reconsidered," *Paleobiology* 1977, Vol.III, pp.115-151. Thus over the past two or three decades many geologists and paleontologists have found themselves increasingly drawn to the view that the observed abrupt changes in the biosphere, such as that which marked the end of the Mesozoic and is thought to have brought with it the extinction of the dinosaurs, among other animal groups, could best be explained by the exposure of the then living organisms to massive doses of radiation coming from a nearby supernova. The radiation would annihilate many species, especially those whose representatives, whether because of their large size or for other reasons, were unable to shield themselves from the powerful rays; at the same time new organisms would be created through mutations or "macro-evolution." See Velikovsky's comments in "The Pitfalls of Radiocarbon Dating," *Pensée* IV (1973), p.13: "...in the catastrophe of the Deluge, which I ascribe to Saturn exploding as a nova, the cosmic rays must have been very abundant to cause massive mutations among all species of life..." Animals would suffer much more severely than plants - on plants the principle effect would be mutagenic. See K. D. Terry and W. H. Tucker, "Biologic Effects of Supernovae," *Science* 159 (1968), pp.421-423 [or see, "Could a nearby supernova explosion have caused a mass extinction?", John Ellis, Theoretical Physics Division, European Organization for Nuclear Research, Geneva, Switzerland, and David N. Schramm, Department of Astronomy and Astrophysics, University of Chicago, and National Aeronautics and Space Administration/Fermilab Astrophysics Center, Fermi National Accelerator Laboratory, Batavia, IL, (9/6/94) <http://www.pnas.org/content/92/1/235.full.pdf>.]

And I think Dr. Velikovsky also '*mis-imagines*' that...

...Although this [combined effect of *relocation*, *reacclimatization* and *mutation* by *radiation*] seems a sufficient explanation of why and how Saturn came to be credited with the work of dissemination and mutation, the mention of another possibility should not be omitted.

If it is true that the Earth passed through the gases exploded from Saturn, it should not be entirely excluded that germs [- from an "exploding" *dwarf star?! -*] were carried together with meteorites [*?!*] and gases and thus reached the Earth.

That Saturn by going *nova* sent anything *organic* to Earth should be "entirely excluded", but the close proximity of Mercury at this time, and of Venus and Mars at others, as well as the *collisions* that produced the various *asteroid belts* in our Solar System, evidently all caused the 'delivery' of "meteorites" to Earth, and possibly "seeds" and/or "germs" too, making it appropriate that...

The scholarly world in recent years has occupied itself with the idea that microorganisms - living cells or spores - can reach the Earth from interstellar spaces, carried along by the pressure of light rays [thought surely not by being expelled from a *star gone nova*]. [E.g., F. Hoyle and Chandra Wickramasinghe [bio'ed in SECTION 3, along with Dr. Hoyle's "slandering" of Dr. Velikovsky], "Does Epidemic Disease Come from Outer Space?", *New Scientist*, 17th November, 1977, pp.402-404.] The explosion [or *collision*] of a planet [and not of a "star"] is a more likely method of carrying seeds and spores [and *germs* and *viruses*] through interplanetary spaces.

And so the ‘pendulum swings’ toward the conclusion that in The 5th-6th Plague Judgments of The Exodus (5th - **murrain** on just the Egyptian **cattle**, and 6th - **boils**, evidently on just the Egyptians ([Exo 9:11](#)), each also being a **sign** ([Exo 8:23](#); [9:13-16](#); [10:2](#)) that the causes of these **plagues** [Exo 9:14](#), as well as the ones to come in The Great Tribulation, (including the **death** in The 4th Seal, and the also **‘divided’** [H6304](#) or **‘severed’** [H6395](#) **grievous sore[s]** of The 1st Plague), come by God’s extraterrestrial means.

The new [*‘relocated’*, *‘reacclimatized’*, and *‘de-enhanced’*] forms of life could [also] be the result of mutations [by *radiation*, except again, this instead results in *‘unfitness’* or *death*, and *never* *‘evolved life’*], a subject I have discussed [- but as **we** have already seen, inadequately supported -] in *Earth in Upheaval*. But the possibility that seeds were carried away from an exploding planet [especially if this is just the result of a *collision*] cannot be dismissed either [unless the “planet” is a *‘hydrochloric-acid-rich’*, *‘hydrogen-burning’*, *dwarf star* *‘gone nova’*].

The Worship of Saturn

Saturn, so active in the cosmic changes, was regarded by all mankind as the supreme god. Seneca says that Epigenes [*“of Byzantium... unknown - circa 200 BC... a Greek astrologer”*], who studied astronomy among the Chaldeans, "estimates that the planet Saturn exerts the greatest influence upon all the movements of celestial bodies." [*Naturales Quaestiones* VII. 4.2.]



[An astrological treatise ascribed to Manetho states that “In the beginning Kronos the Titan ruled the entire ether; his star the far-seeing gods called ‘the shining one.’”, *Manethonis Apotelesmaticorum libri sex*, ed. Carl August Moritz Axtius [or *Moritz Karl August Axt*, a 19th Century “German philologist and high school teacher”, who studied “philology at the University of Halle”, and after receiving a

doctorate in philosophy in 1825, “he became an apprentice at the Gymnasium [‘high school’] in Cleve” or Cleves or *Kleve*, “a town in the Lower Rhine region [*Neiderrhein*] of northwestern Germany [*Deutschland*]”, now “a region around the [*elevationally*] Lower Rhine section of the river Rhine in [“the German state of”] North-Rhine-Westphalia [*Nordrhein-Wesfalen*]”, presently “the most populous state of Germany”, “commonly shortened to NRW”, and bordering The Netherlands (*Neederlande*), *Kleve* being “near the Dutch border and the river Rhine”, and though not indicated on the German **map of the Rhine** on p.399, it’s near where the *Neiderrhein* (again, the Lower Rhine) crosses the northwestern border of *Deutschland* into *Neederlande* on its thereafter divided way (the “Rhine-Meuse

Scheldt delta or Helinium”) to the *Nordsee* (North Sea), with the entire *Rhein* (Rhine) being a river that starts, likely since The Visits of Venus, in what is now called the *Schweiz-Österreich* (Swiss-Austrian) *Alps*, (map including some of the *Italian Alps*, also p.399), and he “became in 1834 a first teacher at the Gymnasium in Wetzlar”, a city in the eastward neighboring German state of *Hessen* (Hesse), and in 1837 “he was awarded



the title of professor by royal order, and in 1840 he became a rector of the school”, and in 1842, and for the next 20 years, “became a rector of the Gymnasium in Kreuznach” back in NRW near the Rhine, until just before his death in 1862, at which time “his corpse was engaged with great sympathy”, and Friedrich Anton Rigler [also a “German [“high school teacher”,] headmaster and philologist”, who “studied philology in [the city of] Münster ([in the province of] Westphalia [now part of NRW])”, but jumping back 3 to 6 centuries, from the Modern Period to the Medieval Period (in this case to the 12th to 15th Centuries), Münster became “a leading member of the Hanseatic League”, this “League” (read, ‘monopoly’) being “a commercial and defensive confederation of merchant guilds and their market towns” that “came to dominate Baltic maritime [sea] trade for three centuries along the coast of Northern Europe”, and “stretched from the Baltic to the North Sea and inland” – at least as far as Münster – but which “declined slowly after 1450”, and jumping a century after this

evidently ‘Holy-Roman-Emperor-approved” trade “confederation” began its ‘slow decline’, Münster is also “the location of the Anabaptist rebellion during the Protestant Reformation” (1534-35), and jumping another century it’s also “the site of the signing of the Treaty of Westphalia” at the end of the Thirty Years War (1648), and jumping another couple centuries – these ‘jumps’ further considered in the paragraphs below – brings us to just after Mr. Rigler’s studies in Münster, where he “was appointed assistant professor at the Rheinische Konsistorium”, this Konsistorium (literally, “Senate”) being, besides a ‘high school’, also “a church court or a church authority in the Protestant [Lutheran] churches”, which “designates the ecclesiastical administrative authority”, or more specifically, in “the sixteenth century, [Erastian] consistories were created to exercise the sovereign church regiment [evidently including in schools], the sovereign and episcopal rights of the German princes over the Protestant [Lutheran] churches, and were state authorities up to its abolition in 1918” (during WW I), this particular ‘school’ being “in Cologne” (Köln), presently “the largest city” in NRW, and “located on both sides of the Rhine, near Germany’s borders with Belgium and the Netherlands”, and he next became “a second teacher at the Höhere Bürgerschule, (“literally Higher Citizen’s School”, “a municipal school, which did not prepare students for university studies, but for practical occupations in the commercial and craft sector”), this also “in Cologne”, (again, Köln) after which he “moved to the Royal Prussian Gymnasium in Bonn”, it too in NRW and on the Rhine, and presently, “with the capital Berlin... the *de facto* joint seat of government of Germany” and its “largest metropolitan area”, and he was next “appointed to the Prussian Gymnasium in Aachen in the autumn of 1825, and was

appointed director”, this again in NRW and right on the border of the Netherlands and Belgium, though Belgium was then still part of the Netherlands, and this Prussian ‘influence’ in the Rhineland being because “both [North Rhine and Westphalia Provinces were] formerly parts of Prussia”, a country also further considered shortly, but because he “had in the meantime transgressed to the Protestant faith” – most likely from Catholic to Lutheran, but possibly from one of these to either Calvinist or Anabaptist, though apparently also “influenced by Erastus” (see next link, but it’ll be ‘a while’) – “he was transferred to Kleve in 1827”, “where he directed the mixed royal high school to Cleve”, and, “After denominational disputes, which ended with the founding of the Catholic Emmerich Gymnasium in 1832, he took over [for the next 35 years, while supposedly staying “Protestant”,] the directorate at the Humanistic Gymnasium in Potsdam until he retired in 1868”, this being where he was born, back on the far, northeast side of Germany, a city that “directly borders the German capital Berlin“, and being close enough to Bohemia to have “lost nearly half of its population due to the Thirty Years’ War”, but nonetheless afterward became “a residence of the Prussian kings [in the 18th and 19th Centuries, starting with that “Great” Prussian king named Frederick] and the German Kaiser” (before WWI)] (Cologne,1832), p.64 (Bk. IV, lines 14-15). Cf. Proclus, *In Timaeo* (ed. Ernst Diehl [late 19th/early 20th Century “German classical philologist and epigraphist”, who “studied classical and Romanic philology in Bonn... and Berlin”, and was “promoted in 1897 and became an extraordinary professor of classical philology in Jena in 1906”, and in “1911 he received a chair for Latin Studies in Innsbruck, and in Halle in 1925 (as successor to Georg Wissowa) [or Wissowa, who again, “is remembered today for [his] re-edition of *Realencyclopädie der Classischen Altertumswissenschaft*”, (again, *Encyclopaedia of Classical Antiquity*), the one “started by August Friedrich Pauly”, which he held until his retirement in 1937”, Leipzig,1904), Vol.III, p.169.]

And that “Anabaptist rebellion” in the 16th Century, otherwise known as, “The **Münster Rebellion**... an attempt by radical Anabaptists [with “a radical Lutheran perspective”] to establish a communal sectarian government in the German city of **Münster**” (photo and drawing p.400), which lasted only from 1534 to 1535, was started – at least arguably – by “**Melchior Hoffman**... an Anabaptist... leader in northern Germany and the Netherlands”, though he was born in the now southwestern German state of Württemberg, with the **Oberrhein** (Upper Rhine) on its western border between it and France, and with the **Hochrhein** (High



Panorama of Münster



Rhine) on its southern border between it and Switzerland (see again maps above), and he was born the year before **our brother** Menno, and died in prison a “martyr” two decades before him, and he too was influenced by ‘**our brothers**’ Huldrych Zwingli and Martin Luther, except, like **our brother** Menno, he didn’t agree with them on baptism, nor on communion, evidently including disputing not just

transubstantiation and consubstantiation - look them up if you still need to - but also the propriety of "communion under both kinds".

Note: "By the Middle Ages... Communion was given only on the tongue', and without 'wine', until, "This practice was challenged [by a "colleague of Jan Hus"], the Bohemian reformer, Jacob of Mies, who in 1414 [the year before the martyrdom of **our brother** Jan,] began to offer Communion under both kinds ["both the consecrated bread and wine"] to his congregation".

And beyond disagreements, though earlier **our brother** Martin "joyfully received" **our brother** Melchior, later he "advised to give him a cold reception", and next that he "should be silenced", and "refrain from preaching", including "warning the authorities [about him] in very sharp terms", and I can't say to what extent this may have been appropriately done, except that **our brother** Melchior spend a year in **Sweden** (on both maps on p.401), where, "The German Lutheran Church in Stockholm conferred the office of preaching upon him early in 1526", and that is, until King Gustav I, "fearing that the stormy nature of the preacher might embarrass the young government, requested his resignation (letter of 13 January 1527), and Hoffman was [again] compelled to move on", like he had previously done from Dorpat, now Tartu, also "an important Hanseatic trade center" on the Baltic Sea, and formerly part of Germany, etc., now in **Estonia** (right side map below, p.401), where, even after he obtained **our brother** Luther's written approval - 'carte blanche', so to speak - "his relations with the Lutheran clergy [became] intolerable", and a Lutheran "opponent... published a polemic against him... compelling him to leave the town again", and like next in Reval, Germany, also on the Baltic Sea, his main work there being "servant of the sick", and where, "For his service... he accepted no salary, but [being a "furrier"] supported himself with his own labor... But before long the Lutheran clergy in Reval accused him of heresy because in addition to faith he insisted on the necessity of holy living".

And later in **Denmark**, a 'peninsula country' on the coast of **Germany**, which is both the most eastern border of the **North Sea** and the most western border of the **Baltic Sea** (see both maps below), he started a "conflict with the Lutheran clergy... concerning the communion", where the "king agreed to proclaim a public disputation" to keep the peace. And he fared little better when he "stayed in the



Netherlands", except that "for a brief period the Melchiorite movement took on mass dimensions", and so much so he has been called "the father of Dutch Anabaptism", nevertheless when he "stayed... at Leeuwarden, the capital of the province of Friesland", and in **Amsterdam** too, the capital of the **Netherlands**, (marked with a black star on the left map, and yes, both these cities being in **our brother** Menno's neighborhood), and they were among the few cities in which "he could move about unmolested".

But another reason for all this 'molestation' of Anabaptists after 1525 - before the soon to follow Münster Rebellion of 1534-35 - was the just finished, and 'blamed-on-the-Anabaptists', Peasants' War (http://gameo.org/index.php?title=Peasants%27_War,_1524-1525). And being so often 'pushed away', **our brother** Melchior also "traveled through Hesse", a province where "Philipp I *der Großmütige* (Philip the Magnanimous): Landgrave of Hesse... introduced the Reformation into Hesse in 1526, [and] founded the University of Marburg in 1527", Marburg being, besides where late 19th/early 20th Century Professor Peter Christian Albrecht Jensen taught, and where late 16th/early 17th Century Professor Christopher Helvicus studied, and besides being where "Huldrych met with Martin and several other reformers in 1529 at the Marburg Colloquy", it was "a center of the Anabaptist movement in Hesse... in the Reformation period", with Philipp being "one of the most zealous promoters of the Reformation in Germany", as well as yet another 'prince' who "heard him [**our brother** Melchior] preach"

But **our brother** Melchior repeatedly "turned again to Strasbourg" (the city, now in Northeastern France, on the west bank of the Rhine River), where he was baptized, but later when there he "remained in complete concealment", until he finally surrendered himself and died in prison there. But he baptized adults, printed "pamphlets" of his **teaching** - which certainly contained some serious **errors**, especially eschatological ones - and he started Anabaptist churches most everywhere he went.

And more solidly on the **reward** side, and like most all the "Reformers", he preached "a strong emphasis on justification alone through faith". And he also "preached against the use of images" ("Iconoclasm"), had a more "Zwinglian [as opposed to a Lutheran] view of the Eucharist" (not a 'Lutheran literal' but a 'Zwinglian symbolic' view), and he "initiated adult baptism in Strasbourg in 1530", and rather than "rebellion" - in Münster or anywhere else - he would instead "insist" on "peaceful paths", and that everyone "respect the government", while strongly opposing the "fanatical spirits" who "make themselves illegal executors of God's judgment", and preaching instead that "he who takes the sword shall perish by the sword". And further...

...the fact remains that the social and moral aberrations in Münster find no source nor echo in either the life or teaching of Melchior Hoffman. His lasting significance lies in the fact that he transplanted the Anabaptist movement from the South to the North...

...It has been argued that Hoffman's ministry proved counterproductive (Deppermann). The social disorders that followed his preaching ["in **Reval**"] in Livonia helped frighten the landed nobility back into the old [**Catholic**] church, and hastened the triumph of conservative [**read, 'not that different from Catholic'**] forms of Lutheranism in the cities. A similar case can be made for Schleswig-Holstein [- then the 2 southernmost duchies of Denmark, now part of "the northernmost of the 16 states of Germany", this region being the southernmost part of the Danish Peninsula, or "on the base of Jutland Peninsula", this

peninsula “also known as the **Cimbric** or **Cimbrian Peninsula**”, a region that has ‘seesawed’ back and forth from Danish to German control since the Early Medieval Period, and the region where **our brother** Melchior’s “conflict with the Lutheran clergy... concerning the communion” happened]. The apocalyptic [or “chiliastic” or ‘end of the world’] excitement aroused in Strasbourg [by Hoffman’s ‘eschatology’] led to reactionary measures that proved detrimental to all nonconformists. The disaster of Münster had far-reaching consequences for Anabaptists everywhere. Münster itself was recatholicized. However, assessments of Hoffman's historical significance must take account of the fact that his labors in the various territories coincided with the introduction of the Reformation in them. That his influence waxed and waned with popular initiative helps to explain why for a brief period the Melchiorite movement took on mass dimensions in The Netherlands. If Münster constituted an expression of that movement, so did the peaceful remnant gathered by Menno Simons. Hoffman remains of historical significance precisely because he introduced Anabaptism to the North.

And yes, more solidly on the **‘fire/suffer-loss’** side – though all of us must experience this to some extent – it is appropriately conceded that it may have been his “apocalyptic” or “chiliastic ideas” (in this case read, ‘imminent end-of-the-world, ‘false-alarm’ teaching and/or ‘prophecy’) that “helped lay the foundations for the events of 1534-1535 in Münster”, which worsened the **great persecution** of the Anabaptists. But whatever the causes of it all, surely such **sufferings... are not worthy to be compared with the glory** and resulting **‘happiness’** that **shall be revealed** in **souls** like **them** (e.g., [Mat 5:10-12](#); [1Pe 3:14](#); [Rom 8:18](#); [2Co 4:17](#); [Rev 6:9-11](#)). And surely **our brother** Melchior also “helped” add thousands of **martyrs of Jesus** to **them** who will ultimately be among these **‘happy souls’** who are **appointed** to **rest** in **the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven** in the not too distant future. And that would be...

...under the altar [where] **the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held...** [will **rest**, after having] **cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?** [At this time]...**white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled** [Rev 6:9-11](#)...

...with some of these **souls... that were slain** evidently being Anabaptists **‘martyred’** by Lutherans, and evidently to a some extent, as in Münster, vice versa. Go figure. I suppose I’ll try next **study**, God willing. And by the way, GAMEO – Global Anabaptist Mennonite Encyclopedia Online – also tells me that **our brother** Menno...

...was the most outstanding Anabaptist leader of the Low Countries [[-elevation wise, I presume](#)] during the 16th century. His followers became known as Mennonites (*Mennisten*). He was not, however, as is popularly assumed, the founder of the movement in the Netherlands. He became its leader after it had been in existence in that area for a number of years. His significance lies in the fact that he assumed the

responsibilities of leadership at the crucial moment of the movement when it was in danger of losing its original identity under the influence of chiliastic [- “the doctrine of Christ's expected return to reign on earth for 1000 years; millennialism”,] and [‘Church-State’] revolutionary leaders who succeeded in winning large followings. He maintained original peaceful Biblical Anabaptist concepts and won many who had been in danger of being swallowed up by the [“chiliastic and revolutionary”] Münsterites.

So since **‘our brothers’** Melchior and Menno were evidently equally **‘blessed peacemakers’** (Mat 5:9) at **heart**, though maybe not so much in practice, and since it evidently was **our brother** Melchior who “introduced Anabaptism to the North”, then it must have been more directly his **work** that had more influence on Pastor Smyth in Amsterdam, who I’m guessing became the influence that eventually led to my baptism on the other side of the globe some 3½ centuries later, though **we** have **our brother** Menno to thank too for saving the reputation of the Anabaptists, and that is, from them being considered ‘rebels against government’, though neither **brother** Melchior nor Menno saved them from being considered “radicals” in Christian **doctrine**, which is a reputation these particular **‘radicals’** will wear as a **‘badge of glory’**, because – as I **see** it – more **glory** will be **rewarded** to those who embrace more of **the truth** as **‘radically’**, and I mean as **zealously** or **‘hotly’**, while remaining **faithful unto death**, as they did. And their **faith** has benefited all Anabaptists – and I think all Baptists too – since then.

But see also the GAMEO entry entitled “Reformation, Catholic”, otherwise known as the “Catholic Counter Reformation” (http://www.gameo.org/index.php?title=Reformation,_Catholic).

And before you’re too hard on **our brother** Melchior for his **‘false prophetic teaching’** (as well as on pretty much every other eschatological teacher and/or preacher you hear) – including for his ‘teaching’ that “the spiritual Jerusalem will be destroyed by the Turks”, and that is, by the Muslims, with “spiritual Jerusalem” or “New Jerusalem” being Münster, the “center of the Anabaptist movement”, which after “the town was recaptured” and “recatholicized”, it’s further blamed for all the “far-reaching consequences for Anabaptists everywhere” – and before you’re too hard on him for his outright **‘false prophecy’** that, “The end of the world is to occur in 1533”, first consider the fact that Constantinople did fall to the Muslims in the previous century, and that the “Administrative Seat” of the Holy Roman Empire, Vienna, Austria, was then considered in similar peril, and all the way until the “Battle of Vienna (1683), [when] the Army of the Holy Roman Empire... decisively defeated a large Turkish army, stopping the western Ottoman advance and leading to the eventual dismemberment of the Ottoman Empire in Europe”, and second consider that **our brother** Melchior’s teaching was not that much different from the now popular, arguably also ‘date-setting’, **‘false prophetic teaching’** of too many of today’s Evangelical Christians, who now teach that it’s the Muslims who will give us the **antichrist** and his **‘ten horned’ kingdom** – which allows **all nations** to continue to be **deceived** by the real **‘blood sucking whore’** – and who also ‘teach – like the Apostle Paul did – that Jesus could come any day now, when at least you now **know** that the events Jesus told us to **watch** for include an apparently decades-long event involving **‘Israeli-enforced’, ‘wall-less’, ‘invulnerable peace and safety’** that must precede The Rapture of the Pre-Church and the Church, which is a **time** that clearly hasn’t even started yet (as of 10/17). And I mean unless you have not ‘taught’, ‘passed on’, and/or ‘believed’ some form of

'false prophetic teaching' - including what *RGT* should have brought to your attention - you shouldn't **'cast the first stone'**.

Jumping a century, Münster is also "the site of the signing of the Treaty of Westphalia ending the Thirty Years' War in 1648", it being...

...one of the longest and most destructive conflicts, as well as the deadliest European religious war, in history. It took place in Central Europe between 1618 and 1648 and resulted in eight million casualties [- more than by the Black Death (*bubonic plague*) in the 14th Century].

Initially a war between various Protestant and Catholic states in the fragmented Holy Roman Empire, it gradually developed into a more general conflict involving most of the great powers. These states employed relatively large mercenary armies, and the war became less about religion and more of a continuation of the [Catholic] France-Habsburg rivalry for European political pre-eminence [in the "fragmented Holy Roman Empire"].

The war was preceded by the election of the new Holy Roman Emperor, Ferdinand II, who tried to impose religious uniformity on his domains, forcing Roman Catholicism on its peoples. The northern Protestant states, angered by the violation of their rights to choose that had been granted in the Peace of Augsburg, banded together to form the Protestant Union. Ferdinand II was a devout Roman Catholic and relatively intolerant when compared to his predecessor, Rudolf II, who ruled from the largely Protestant city of Prague [in Bohemia]...

And jumping back a century, the Peace of Augsburg, or "the **Augsburg Settlement**", was...

...a treaty between Charles V, Holy Roman Emperor (the predecessor of Ferdinand I) and the Schmalkaldic League [- that 'protestant confederation' in Germany led by Elector John Frederick I of Protestant Saxony, "Champion of the Reformation", who was "held captive by emperor Charles V"], signed on September 1555 [- 3 years before the founding of the University of Jena -] at the imperial city of Augsburg [in the Catholic Province of Bavaria]... [and this "Settlement"] officially ended the religious struggle between the two groups [Catholics and Lutherans] and made the legal division of Christendom permanent within the Holy Roman Empire, allowing rulers to choose either Lutheranism or Roman Catholicism as the official confession of their state. Calvinism [by-the-way] was not allowed until [about a century later at] the Peace of Westphalia.

And it was about half a century after the Peace or Treaty of Augsburg that...

The **Protestant Union** or **Evangelical Union**... a coalition of Protestant German states... was formed...[in] 1608 by Frederick IV, Elector Palatine [of the Rhineland Province - no relation to Elector John Frederick I of Saxony - "Elector" meaning that along with all other Holy Roman Empire Electors he had a vote in the election of Holy Roman Emperors, and Palatine, or Palatinate, meaning he was a provincial or state ruler in Germany, in Frederick IV's case, of the Rhineland Province, where he too became a 'rebel' against Rome when he "formed" the Protestant Union] in

order to defend the rights, lands and person of each member. It dissolved in 1621 [after Ferdinand II “ordered the Protestant Union to disband its army”, and though they “formally protested”, they “complied”].

And all this was just the beginning, because...

...events [of the Thirty Years' War] caused widespread fears throughout northern and central

Europe, and [to be more specific] triggered the Protestant Bohemians living in the then relatively loose dominion of Habsburg Austria to revolt against their nominal ruler, Ferdinand II. After the so-called Prague Defenestration deposed the emperor's representatives in Prague, the Protestant estates and Catholic Habsburgs started gathering allies for war. The Protestant Bohemians ousted the Habsburgs and elected the Calvinist Frederick V, Elector of the Rhenish [Rhineland] Palatinate as the new king of the Kingdom of Bohemia [- he being the son of Frederick IV, and another in the line of 'rebel Rhineland Fredericks' against Rome]. Frederick [V] took the offer without the support of the Protestant Union. The southern states, mainly Roman Catholic, were angered by this. Led by [the largest German southeast Province of] Bavaria [with it's “Elector Palatine” being also the Emperor over all the German provinces, but under Ferdinand II, and fully on the side of Rome, with Catholic Austria on its south side, and the Protestant German state of Saxony, and the Protestant Kingdom of Bohemia on its northeast side], these [“southern... Catholic”] states [including Austria and the Papal States] formed the Catholic League to expel [“Calvinist”] Frederick [V] in support of the [Habsburg Austrian Holy Roman] Emperor [Ferdinand II]. The Empire soon crushed this perceived rebellion [- and if you're like me you're hearing Darth Vader-Stars Wars music in your head about now -] in the Battle of White Mountain [1620, where, “An army of 15,000 Bohemians and mercenaries... was defeated by 27,000 men of the combined armies of Ferdinand II”], executing leading Czech aristocrats shortly after. The Protestant world condemned the Emperor's action.

After the atrocities committed in Bohemia [uh-huh], Saxony [being literally 'caught in the middle', and that is, being in Eastern Germany bordering both Bohemia and Bavaria,] finally gave its support to the [evidently 're-formed' Protestant] union and decided to fight back. Sweden, at the time a rising military power, soon intervened in 1630 under its king Gustavus Adolphus [or Gustav Adolf, yes, that king who “commissioned” Christopher Helvicus - that “German chronologist and historian” who studied at Marburg in Hesse - to do his “horoscope”], transforming what had been simply the Emperor's attempt to curb [read, 'forcibly convert to Catholicism'] the Protestant states into a full-scale war in Europe. Spain, [then over 6 decades into their Habsburg v. Bourbon Dynasties, Eighty Years' War with the Dutch (1568-1648), and vainly] wishing to finally crush the Dutch rebels in the Netherlands and the Dutch Republic, intervened under the pretext of helping its dynastic Habsburg ally, Austria [where “dynastic Habsburg ally” means that Spain too had Habsburg line kings and/or queens, while the Netherlands had the Bourbon line]. No longer able to tolerate the encirclement of two major Habsburg powers on its borders, Catholic

[Bourbon] France entered the coalition on the side of the Protestants in order to counter the Habsburgs.

And all of this further reveals that Satan's *kingdom* is **divided, thank and praise the LORD**, though I should also admit that in too many ways, and despite the Apostle Paul's admonition e.g., [1Co 1:10](#)), God's *kingdom* is '**shamefully' divided** too, though not for much longer.

And I should at least mention at this point that the still ongoing, now approaching 2 millennia

of intermarrying of royal dynasties throughout Europe is not a random, insignificant practice, but based on the '**satanic conspiracy**' of "holy blood". But it's easily enough exposed as such because there's no such thing as "holy blood", not in the sense that to this day all of Europe

- and now all the **world** too - are still **deceived** to believe, anyway. What conspiracy? It's the '**lie of the devil**' that Jesus wasn't really **obedient unto death, even the death of the cross** [Phl 2:8](#), but instead only "swooned", or

'passed out', and later revived, and was, in one 'story', taken by 'Joseph of Arimathaea' to France, where 'He' had a child by 'Mary Magdalene', this 'Child' supposedly being the ancestor of all the kings of Europe to this day, and this 'Jesus' having brought with him a "grail" (or chalice), supposedly the one used at the Last Supper, And this **abominable** [H2194](#): [H6292](#): [H8251](#): [H8262](#): [H8263](#): [H8441](#): [H8581](#): [G111](#): [G947](#): [G948](#) and **corrupt** [H7843](#): [H2254](#): [H4167](#): [H1605](#): [G853](#): [G4550](#): [G5351](#): [G2585](#): [G1311](#): [G2704](#) 'story'

was perhaps most popularly 'excreted' in the book, *Holy Blood,*

Holy Grail: The Secret History of Christ & The Shocking Legacy of the Grail, by 3 authors I

won't mention, as they soon enough **shall not be remembered, nor come into mind** anyway,

though for now their **abominable** volume of **lies** is still available (including for free at Internet

Archive at

https://archive.org/stream/HolyBloodHolyGrail/HolyBloodHolyGrail_djvu.txt), and is purported to 'factually support' the

comparably **abominable** fiction novel, *The Da Vinci Code*, by Dan Brown. And I only mention his name because he's plainly

another 'Brown-nose', making it again personally unavoidable for me to hereafter call him, should he ever again need mentioning,

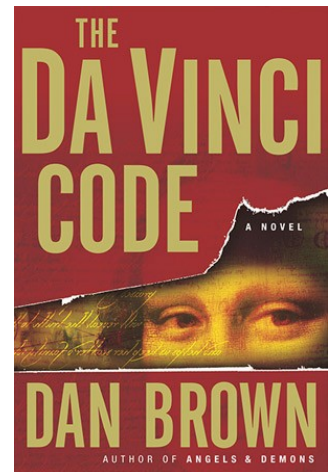
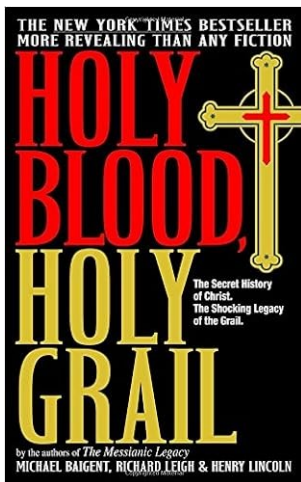
'Brown-nose 2'. And let's call those other 3 otherwise

unmentionable **fools** 'the 3 turds', as each, at least metaphorically, may be **rightly**

'identified' as "a piece of excrement", and yes that's right, the point would be to

appropriately and collectively refer to them, if necessary, as 'Brown-nose 2 and the 3 turds'.

The Thirty Years' War devastated entire regions, with famine and disease resulting in high mortality in the populations of the German and Italian states, ...Bohemia, and the Southern Netherlands. Both mercenaries and soldiers... traditionally looted or extorted tribute to get operating funds, which imposed severe hardships on the inhabitants of occupied territories. The war also bankrupted most of the combatant powers.



The Dutch Republic enjoyed contrasting fortune; it ended its [80-years] revolt against Spain in 1648 and subsequently enjoyed a time of great prosperity and development, known as the Dutch Golden Age, during which it became one of the world's foremost economic and naval powers [- another '**young lion**' of it's time, you might say]. The Thirty Years' War ended with the treaties of Osnabrück and Münster, part of the wider Peace of Westphalia. The war altered the previous political order of European powers. The rise of Bourbon France...



...Bourbon Dynasty kings (see "shield" of the **Duke of Bourbon Coat of Arms** on p.406) having "originated in 1272 when the heiress of the lordship of Bourbon married the youngest son of King Louis IX", and the "house continued for three centuries as a cadet branch, while more senior [supposedly also 'Jesus bloodline'] Capetians ruled France, until Henry IV became the first [supposedly also 'Jesus bloodline'] Bourbon king of France in 1589", (which was during the Spanish-Dutch Eighty Years' War, otherwise known as the "Dutch War of Independence"), with "branches" of the Bourbons surviving beyond the French Revolution, and beyond the Second French Revolution too, (otherwise known as the "July Revolution" of 1830), to rule in France to as late as 1848, and still to this day - by supplanting (supposedly 'Jesus bloodline') Habsburgs - in Spain, as well as in Luxembourg, (a country "about the same size as the US state of Rhode Island", with a present population of about half a million, or about the same as the Island of Oahu in Hawaii, and which (again) is over 60% Catholic, produced 4 Holy Roman Emperors, was formerly part of Germany, later France, then Austria, and next part of Napoleon's 'republic/empire', but finally "emerged at the Congress of Vienna..." as "...an independent state under the personal possession of William I of the Netherlands [a Stuart-Bourbon Dynasties king] with a Prussian garrison to guard the city against another invasion from France", and it has become "the world's only remaining grand duchy", presently under the Bourbon Grand Duke Henri, with its capital Luxembourg City being, "together with Brussels [Belgium] and Strasbourg [France], one of the three official capitals of the European Union" - all marked on the maps several pages back), the point of all this being that the "rise of Bourbon France" related directly to their 'holy blood family rivalry' with the Habsburgs, and to...

...the curtailing of Habsburg ambition, and the ascendancy of Sweden as a great power

[or yet another '**young lion**' of its time] created a new balance of power on the continent, with France emerging from the war strengthened and increasingly dominant in the latter part of the 17th century [as well as in the first decade or so of the 19th Century following the French Revolution, and that is, under Emperor Napoleon].

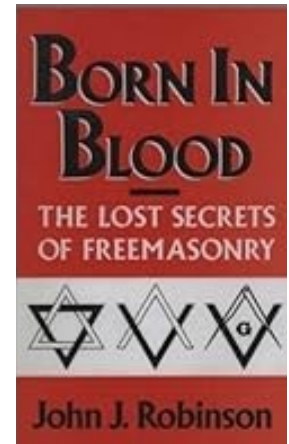


"The **fleur-de-lis/fleur-de-lys**..." by the way, "is a stylized lily (in French, *fleur* means "flower", and *lis* means "lily") that is used as a decorative design or symbol", including a royal one. And to be both brief and blunt as appropriate in this case, I am convinced that it's also a "stylized" phallic symbol disguised as a lily. And I mean it secretly represents two spread legs and a penis, suchlike symbolism traceable at least all the way back to the worship of Nimrod and his supposedly 'supernaturally formidable' one. And I've already mentioned at least one source that exposes this

kind of symbolism. Another I will soon mention again. But there's still another one I've mentioned that we're now maybe not quite yet ready to 'fully' **understand**. And whatever the case, I'll leave further pursuit of such a **perverse** subject entirely to you.

But I will also mention that Napoleon's success – as long as it lasted – was in part due to another 'confederation' who was provoked into opposition against all the Holy Blood Dynasties of Europe and to their **whore**. And though this 'league' seems now to be reconciled with this 'bloodline' and their **whore**, their '**elites**' must either have forgotten their **hate** for **her** and will soon again be reminded, or they are only pretending, and only until this 'bloodline' – evidently including its "senior" **ten kings** – can be fully 'won over' to the side of '**Satan's insiders**', and, with this **evil** confederation's help, are finally able to 'retributively doublecross' this **whore** in The 6th Plague Judgment. And if you haven't guessed yet, I'm talking about the Masonic Lodge, the home of Freemasonry. Remember I recounted in *The Beginning Study* that,

...the Knights Templar... were the defenders of the pope and his Holy Roman Empire who descended from the famed 12th and 13th Century Crusaders... [the progenitors of today's Masonic Lodge, this change occurring when]... near the start of the 14th Century they began to be scattered and spoiled by King Philip IV (the 4th) of France because they had grown rich, and because the king was in debt to them over his ongoing war with England, and because he was desperate for more money to continue the war. Pope Clement V (the 5th) was pressed by Phillip to acquiesce to this plan within a few years, but he must have gotten something out of it for his trouble too. [See **Born In Blood**, by John J. Robinson.]



What War?

The **Hundred Years' War** was a series of conflicts waged from 1337 to 1453 by the House of Plantagenet, ['**holy blood**'] rulers of the Kingdom of England, against the House of Valois, ["a **cadet branch of the Capetian dynasty**", '**holy blood**'] rulers of the Kingdom of France, over the succession to the French throne. Each side drew many allies into the war. It was one of the most notable conflicts of the Middle Ages [or **Medieval Period**], in which five generations of kings from two rival dynasties fought for the throne of the largest kingdom in Western Europe...

After [the French '**holy bloodline**' Duke of Normandy became King William the Conqueror when he led] the Norman conquest of 1066 [successfully 'conquering' England], the ['**holy blood**'] kings of England were vassals of the kings of France for their possessions in France [as well as in England]. The French kings had endeavored, over the centuries, to reduce these possessions [- "endeavored" because they couldn't rightly and causelessly - without additional "conflicts" - just take such "possessions" from the English '**holy bloodline**' dukes or king who 'possessed' them, as they too were from 'branches' of the 'family tree' whose 'root' was (misrepresented to be) Jesus Himself,] to the effect that, roughly, [by marriages, purchases, "conflicts", etc., all of which surely included some 'foul play',

etc.,] only Gascony was left to the English. The confiscation or threat of confiscating this duchy had been part of French policy to check the growth of English power, particularly whenever the English were at war with the Kingdom of Scotland, [which, especially before the Protestant Reformation was] an ally of France.

In 1316, a principle was established denying women succession to the French throne. When Charles IV of France (the last king of the senior line of the [Capetian 'holy bloodline' in the] House of Capet) died without sons in 1328, his closest male relative was [Plantagenet 'holy bloodline'] King Edward III of England. Through his mother, Isabella of France, Edward III was the nephew of Charles IV. Isabella claimed the French throne for her son, but the French rejected it, maintaining that Isabella could not transmit a right that she did not possess. A French ['holy bloodline'] count, Philip of Valois [again, "a cadet branch of the Capetian dynasty"], first cousin of Charles IV in the male line, succeeded to the throne as King Philip VI [the 6th] of France. For about nine years (1328-1337), the English had accepted the Valois succession to the French throne, but the interference of the new French king in Edward III's war against Scotland prompted Edward III to reassert his claim to the French throne. Several overwhelming English victories in the war... raised the prospects of an ultimate English triumph. However, the greater resources of the French monarchy precluded a complete conquest. Starting in 1429, decisive French victories... concluded the war in favour of France, with England permanently losing most of its possessions on the continent.

And some of the more popular background to the peak of English domination in this war is evidently closely enough told by Mr. Shakespeare, in his play, *Henry V*, (one of many of his plays I have seen performed), as it essentially agrees with my encyclopedia, which reports,

In 1415, Henry [of the 'holy blood' House of Lancaster] embarked on war with France in the ongoing Hundred Years' War (1337-1453) between the two nations. His military successes culminated in his famous victory at the Battle of Agincourt (1415) and saw him come close to conquering France. His claim to the kingdom was endorsed by the powerful Duchy of Burgundy, a French vassal whose ruler was a key player in French politics. After months of negotiation with Charles VI of France [of the House of Valois], the Treaty of Troyes (1420) recognised Henry V as regent and heir apparent to the French throne, and he was subsequently married to Charles's daughter, Catherine of Valois (1401-1437).

And yes, not much unlike with the 'royal families' of the Ancient Greek Empire, who ruled masquerading as 'descendants of the gods', there was and still is a lot of 'kingdom hopping' going on in the European 'holy bloodline' families too, who instead masquerade as the descendants of Jesus. But this is the wrong war, because The Hundred Years War started entirely after the death of Philip IV, and after the death of his later reigning son, Charles IV, both these 'holy bloodline' kings referred to as "the Fair" (meaning "handsome"). And I mean that I have been subsequently informed by my encyclopedia - and to be clear - that I misunderstood that...

The most notable conflicts of Philip's reign [and that is, Phillip IV, "the Fair", Capetian 'holy **bloodline**' "King of France from 1285 until his death" in 1314] include a dispute with [Plantagenet 'holy **bloodline**' King] Edward I of England, who was also his vassal as the Duke of Aquitaine, and a war with the County of Flanders [- today's remnant of it being "the Dutch-speaking northern portion of Belgium"], which gained temporary autonomy following Philip's defeat at the Battle of the Golden Spurs (1302). To further strengthen the monarchy, he tried to control the French clergy and entered in conflict with Pope Boniface VIII [- predecessor of Clement V]...

So no, Philip the Fair was not as "desperate" for money for his 'war chest' as I had somehow concluded, though he was surely to some degree in debt to the Templars, as all extravagant French and other kings near that time were. The circumstances were instead as follows...

On 7 September 1303, an army led by King Philip's minister Nogaret and Sciarra Colonna attacked Boniface at his Palace in Anagni [in "central Italy, in the hills east-southeast of Rome"] next to the Cathedral [where he was "probably beaten and nearly executed, but was released from captivity after three days... [and] died a month later", and was succeeded by Pope Clement V, whose evidently coerced and reluctant "order disbanding the Order of the Knights Templar was signed at the Council of Vienne on 2 May 1312"]. This conflict led to the transfer of the papal court to the enclave [- a "small, distinct area... isolated within a larger one" -] of **Avignon** ["in south-eastern France" on the **Rhône river** - see map on p.409] in 1309...

Meanwhile,

In 1306, Philip the Fair expelled the Jews from France [and, if I can generally trust the history 'dramatized' in Sir Walter's novel *Ivanhoe*, and I generally do, it revealing that Jews were nearly as badly treated in England at this time too, the richer ones choosing to buy the protection of Muslim sultans than to endure the persecution of remaining in then still Catholic England,] and, in 1307, he [Philip] annihilated the order of the Knights Templar. Philip was in debt to both groups and saw them as a "state within the state" [which, though he was known for 'false charges', and mostly just wanted an escape from his loan debts, wasn't altogether inaccurate in these cases].

And whatever the case, we **know** from **scripture** alone that some Jews can be '**abominably wicked**' people (e.g., [1Ki 21:25-26](#); [Eze 8](#)), and from history that apparently some descendants of these 'doublecrossed' Masons migrated to America, some of whom evidently became it's "Founding Fathers", who naturally insisted on the "Declaration" that one of the "truths" to be held "self evident" was that "all men are created equal". And why would they insist on this? Certainly the Great Awakenings, originally inspired by '**our brothers**' Jonathan Edwards and George Whitefield (again, pronounced 'Whitfield'), could be credited, but for Masons it wasn't as much a vague, godly generality, but it was their 'declaration of war' against the Catholic Church and **her** supposedly 'above-us-all', Holy Blood Dynasty Kings of Europe. Yes, this language was - at least in part - a slam against the idea that



'descendants of Christ' should rule. And this 'opening salvo' in America against the Catholic Church and **her** 'holy bloodline' kings led to the French Revolution, which "led to the elimination of the thousand-year-old Holy Roman Empire", but on the downside, with 'salvation' and 'truth' being increasingly sought solely through Rationalism (or "Reason" or "Common Sense", terms that go back to Pythagoras, Plato, and Aristotle), or through Empiricism (or call it '**flesh-ism**'), it also led to "the overall development of modern [increasingly Gospel-excluding] political and educational thought". Still and generally speaking, these changes brought more liberty and less tyranny, and facilitated, as Jesus promised, that...

...this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come [Mat 24:14](#).

However France - like Italy - did not escape their Catholic heritage, only **her** 'holy bloodline' kings, while other European **nations** escaped neither. But England and Scotland, while retaining 'holy bloodline' kings and queens, did generally escape Catholicism, at least in the most essential **doctrine** of **salvation only by grace... through faith** (e.g. [Eph 2:8](#)).

And hopefully you didn't miss that 'fuller decompartmentalization', where you **see** on our **way** another '**step up**' that 'further exposes' a still 'higher level wild goose chase'. But I'll ask anyway. Does your **faith** still stand in either "reason" or "experience", (both these **words** being **used** in the KJV), or in "conservatism" or "liberalism", or in "capitalism" or "socialism", (**remember** the Early Church **used** 'socialism', and it was at least indirectly supported by God through the slaying of **Ananias, with Sapphira his wife [Act 4:32-5:11](#)**), or in "peace" or "war", (as there is **a time** for both of these too [Ecc 3:8](#)), or in any other **philosophy** of **fleshly wisdom**? And I mean your **faith** instead **should be** in the **foolishness** of the Gospel,

Because the foolishness [G3474](#) of God is wiser than [G4680](#) men; and the weakness [G772](#) of God is stronger than [G2478](#) men [1Co 1:25](#).

[And] **...the natural [G5591](#) man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness [G3472](#) unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually [G4153](#) ["by the aid of the Holy Spirit"] [G350](#) [1Co 2:14](#).**

For the wisdom [G4678](#) of this world [G2889](#) is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise [G4680](#) in their own craftiness [G3834](#) [1Co 3:19](#).

And I mean the application of any of these '**philosophies of men**' must be **spiritually discerned** and '**rightly divided and handled**' for **use** in their '**right time and way**'. Otherwise - and at least by decompartmentalization - every one of them **seemeth right** when they really aren't. And every such '**foundationless house**' ([Luk 6:47-49](#)) - if solely 'stood upon' - becomes just another of the **slippery places** and **ways** ([Psa 35:6](#); [73:18](#); [Jer 23:12](#)), where, as Solomon puts it, **the end thereof are the ways of death**, or as Jesus puts it, **the ruin of that house was great, right?** So yes indeed...

Beware [G991](#) lest any man spoil [G2071](#) [G4812](#) you through philosophy [G5385](#) and vain [G2756](#) deceit [G539](#), after the tradition [G3862](#) of men, after the rudiments [G4747](#) of the world [G2889](#), and not after Christ [Col 2:8](#).

But these are *precepts* better further ‘discerned, divided and handled’ next study.

And yes, many associate the Masons with Deism, if not Occultism and Satanism, and often enough appropriately so. But evidently this faction of ‘*Satan’s insiders*’, along with all ‘*elite, self-idolatry beastismists*’ in this ‘*evil confederation*’, really do, or soon will, ***hate the whore***, though now some of them forget, overlook or pretend otherwise, and that is, until they gain full advantage, which will be when they’ve gotten out of *her* all they need, and have won the ‘holy bloodline’ ***kings*** fully on their side, after which they ***shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire*** [Rev 17:16](#), ***spiritually*** (and metaphorically) speaking.

And again yes, it’s partly Satan’s ‘*divided kingdom*’ – where God’s ***work*** using this ***division*** has, again and again, ***made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it*** – that really helps the mostly Protestant ***nations*** to enjoy their present political and religious liberty, however much that’s left anyway, and I ***for ever*** will ***be thankful*** that it all resulted in ***our*** opportunity not just to be ***saved***, but also to ***seek his face continually*** and ***evermore***. See again 1Chronicles 16:8-36 and [Psalm 105](#), and ***remember*** [Psalm 19:27](#), [71:17-18](#) and [Psalm 111](#) too.

And Sweden seems to be another example of Satan’s ***divided*** kingdom, and also something like the ‘split’ nature of Switzerland, my encyclopedia informing me that Sweden as an...

...independent state emerged during the 12th and 13th Century. After the Black Death in the middle of the 14th Century, which hit Scandinavia just as hard as in most other parts of Europe, killing about a third of the population, the Hanseatic League and their market towns [- an originally German “commercial and defensive confederation of merchant guilds”, and a ‘Holy-Roman-Empire-approved brand’ of *monopoly capitalism* -] threatened the whole of Scandinavia's culture, finances and languages. This led to the forming of the Scandinavian Kalmar Union [which “joined under a single monarch the three kingdoms of Denmark, Sweden [- then including parts of Finland], and Norway” -] in the end of the 14th Century. But with the union followed other problems and in the 1520s Sweden left this union. With the Swedish involvement [a decade more than a century later] in the Thirty Years War, [and naturally] on the Reformist [Protestant] side, began an expansion of its territories. And the Swedish Empire was formed. This became one of the great powers of Europe until the early 18th century. Swedish territories outside the Scandinavian Peninsula were gradually lost during the 18th and 19th centuries, ending with the annexation of present-day Finland by Russia in 1809. The last war in which Sweden was directly involved was in 1814, when Norway was militarily forced into personal union. Since then, Sweden has been at peace, maintaining an official policy of neutrality in foreign affairs. The union with Norway was peacefully dissolved in 1905, leading to Sweden's current borders. Though Sweden was formally neutral through both world wars, Sweden engaged in humanitarian efforts, such as taking in refugees from German-occupied Europe.

And Prussia, who had controlled the “Rhineland” since before the Thirty Years War, again,

After the Congress of Vienna [when the spoils of Napoleon's defeat were divided] ... was awarded with the entire Rhineland... [including a few duchies and] the free cities of Aachen and Cologne, and nearly a hundred small lordships and abbeys... [and] Prussia [like they had done before] had the tact to leave them in undisturbed possession of the liberal institutions they had become accustomed to under the republican rule of the French [- and that is, under Napoleon].

And by-the way, Mr. Rigler - that NRW high school teacher, headmaster and philologist bio'ed about a dozen pages back - more likely "transgressed" from Catholic to Lutheran or Calvinist, and/or he may have instead or later "transgressed" from one of these to Anabaptist, because...

Menno [too] stayed and worked "in the diocese of Cologne" in 1544-1546. In vain he strove for a disputation with the "scholars" at Bonn (electorate of Cologne) and at Wesel (duchy of Cleves). But about 1545 he lived with Lemken (see [using the 'long-time-coming' link] below) at Illikhoven... [just over the border] in the Dutch province of Limburg. He preached in the environs of both places [or in two duchies of Limburg] and also reached Roermond and may have founded the Anabaptist congregation of Illikhoven-Vissersweert. At any rate after the Wassenberg preachers [or the Wassenberger Prädikanten, "the intellectual leaders of the district of Wassenberg in the duchy of Jülich", "adjoining the present Dutch province of Limburg", and a "center of the Anabaptist movement",] and [after] their adherents had left [over the border] for Münster, and [after] Menno had visited the region, organized congregations remained or were founded anew [though some evidently later 'fled' to America (<http://gameo.org/index.php?title=Germany> - and yes, this is that particular 'awhile-awaited', 'long-time-coming' link to GAMEO)].

And I should also mention the "Concept of Cologne (*Concept van Keulen*)"...

...an agreement between the High [elevation?] German and [lower elevation?] Dutch Mennonites... signed on 1 May 1591 at Cologne. Various previous attempts had already been made to bring about union, but they were usually geographically limited. Participating in this conference at Cologne were Mennonites of the [evidently Lower to Upper] Rhine region from the North Sea to the borders of Switzerland.

The churches were trying to reach a fraternal agreement to bridge over differences that had formed between them. The Dutch churches realized that they had been too severe in their attitude toward other brethren, as in the use of the ban, and joined with the High Germans in signing a common confession of faith and an agreement on church regulations and conduct which was called a Concept, commonly known as the "Concept of Cologne"...

In doctrine, the belief in the Trinity was affirmed. "In Jesus Christ we recognize the only Son of the Father from eternity, born of Mary in the fulness of time through the power of the Most High and through the co-

working of the Holy Spirit, who was made flesh through the eternal Word of the Father. We acknowledge also the Holy Spirit, that He is a power of God and proceeds from the Father through the Son, promised by Christ and sent to comfort the believer. He who believes in this Son of God as the Savior and Redeemer promised and sent from God, he is free from all sins... We also confess the resurrection of the body from the dead, both the righteous and the unrighteous, and believe that at the Last Judgment each will receive according as he has walked." [Hear, hear.]

Concerning baptism and communion the Concept says: "The man who acknowledges himself to be sinful and brings forth the fruits of repentance, and proves that he gladly accepts the Word of Christ and requests baptism out of desire, him shall an irreproachable ordained minister baptize with water in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. He who is thus minded and has been baptized, shall not be baptized again. All those who are thus baptized by the Spirit into one body ([1 Corinthians 12:12](#)) shall observe communion together with ordinary ['untransubstantiated'] bread and wine, and thereby remember His great love and His bitter death." [Again, hear, hear.]

Ironically enough, my encyclopedia also just informed me, and it makes sense that...

The name Anabaptist means "one who baptizes again". Their persecutors named them this, referring to the practice of baptizing persons when they converted or declared their faith in Christ, even if they had been "baptized" as infants.

However I am also just informed that...

Lutherans explicitly reject transubstantiation believing that the bread and wine remain fully bread and fully wine while also being truly the body and blood of Jesus Christ...

...which I guess means that they symbolically 'have their bread and wine' and literally 'eat and drink Jesus too'. My encyclopedia also oversimplifies the 'range' of Eucharist doctrine:

Official writings of the churches of the Anglican Communion have consistently [\[agreed with the Catholics and\]](#) affirmed Real Presence of Christ in the Eucharist... [While] John Calvin "can be regarded as occupying a position roughly midway between" the doctrines of Martin Luther on one hand [\[who had both a symbolic and literal "view" - with Calvin's literal "view" being more "spiritual" than Luther's, though similar in symbolism -\]](#) and Huldrych Zwingli on the other [\[who agrees with me and the Mennonites, \(if allowing 'laity handling'\)\]](#) [\[- Zwingli's being the solely symbolic "view"\]](#).

And concerning '**communion**', apparently **we** of the entirely symbolic "view" - unlike '**our brothers**' Martin and Jehan and company - are the only ones entirely uninfluenced by '**Babylon Mystery Religion**' and/or "Aristotelian philosophy" and/or "Aristotelian metaphysics", because apparently every literal "view" - and however unwittingly - employs one or more of these, **God willing**, 'non-lethal

poisons', though they could only be 'non-lethal' for those who are at least 'mostly' otherwise **out of her**, which would be 'boundaries' that only God can **judge**, though I will **'endeavor'** to be more specific about all this in the next **study, if God permit**.

But if you want a 'taste' of such **meditation** now, consider that in order to have **no divisions**, one thing **we** must be **able** to **'rightly divide'** is exactly what will keep a **brother** or **sister** from being **accepted** onto the very bottom **foundation** floor of **new Jerusalem**, and what, however regrettable and shameful, and by **the blood of Jesus**, will not keep them from being **accepted**.

Still I'm sticking to my **judgment** that Dr. Velikovsky was compartmentalizing about Saturn, apparently overlooking the 'view' that *life* and a *nova* don't mix, since he apparently otherwise correctly concludes that...

On becoming a nova [- uh-huh, a nova /], it ejected filaments in all directions [- and various 'lifeforms' too?! - na-uh - though nearby Mercury possibly later "ejected" some, and Saturn could take the blame for it,] and the solar system [from this nova /] became illuminated as if by a hundred suns. It subsided rather quickly and retreated into far-away regions.

Peoples that remembered early tragedies enacted in the sky by the heavenly bodies asserted that Jupiter drove Saturn away from its place in the sky. Before Jupiter (Zeus) became the chief god, Saturn (Kronos) occupied the celestial throne. In all ancient religions the dominion passes from Saturn to Jupiter...

Of course I think when Dr. Velikovsky says, "Jupiter drove Saturn away from its place in the sky", he's implying that the phenomenon of "ejected filaments" would have been the result of Saturn's *alignment* with Jupiter and the Sun, these "filaments" most significantly being 'pulled' along lines toward the Sun, where if Earth too was 'in line', Jupiter may have 'shielded' the Earth from the worse of the 'blast', and maybe Jupiter got 'nudged' a little closer to the Sun, while this evidently somewhat 'directed' *explosive force* may have 'pushed' Saturn away from the Sun, it finally settling in an *orbit* that at least appeared 'further out' than before this "explosion". Yes?

[Cf. Ovid, *Metamorphoses* I, transl. by M. Innes: "When Saturn was consigned to the darkness of Tartarus... the world passed under the rule of Jove." Tacitus refers to "a storm [evidently caused by Saturn's explosion] during which Saturn was forcibly expelled by Jupiter [or really by itself] and ceased to rule." ("*qua tempestate Saturnus vi Jovis pulsus cesserit regnis.*"), *The Histories* V.2.]

...In Greek mythology, Kronos is presented as the father and Zeus as his son who dethrones him. Kronos devours some of his children. After this act Zeus overpowers his father, puts him in chains [or rings], and drives him from his royal station in the sky. In Egyptian folklore or religion the participants of the drama are said to be Osiris-Saturn, brother and husband of Isis-Jupiter.

And by the way, remember the Rings of Saturn are "by *spectrographic analysis*... known to be composed of 99.9% pure *water ice*", and that I previously guessed that they formed with a 'splash' from Saturn's surface when a *comet* or *asteroid* - instead of being *captured* in *orbit*, or 'caught messengering', etc. - 'splashlanded', this

evidently how “Kronos devours some of his children”, except that before Saturn exploded it was apparently still a ‘brightly burning’ *dwarf star*, where the ‘planet-sized’ *comets* or *asteroids* weren’t so much ‘splashlanding’ into *water*, but more into *burning hydrogen*, with the *water* only somehow being separated and/or formed and finally *frozen* in the *upper atmosphere* within Saturn’s *magnetic field* after it went *nova*, I suppose.

And apparently this formerly *hydrogen-burning*, “Shining Star” had a supply of *oxygen* in some form, though before this *explosion* probably not so much combined with *hydrogen* in the *liquid state*, though maybe in the *gaseous* and/or *plasma states*, and/or otherwise bonded or free, where after the ‘blast’, and maybe much like Dr. Velikovsky thinks it happened on Earth, *liquid water formed*, especially in the *atmosphere*, likely after *condensing* from *gas*, and after that *freezing* where caught in Saturn’s *magnetic field*, while Saturn’s surface is left covered with mostly *liquid hydrogen*, as *spectrography*, etc., evidently now reveals.

So I’m also now thinking that these *water ice rings* or “chains” must have formed rather quickly – after the *explosion* and before Earth’s *water canopy* came down – because evidently only through the *water canopy lens* could the *rings* have been seen, and evidently only for this brief ‘window of time’, at least until *telescopes* came along, though I’m also guessing that before Venus came along some ‘ancients’ – who had heard about the former ‘magnifying water lens in the sky’ – invented assorted ‘magnifying devices’ of their own, but ones that evidently and **‘naturally’** did not survive beyond The Visits of Venus.

The cult of Osiris and the mysteries associated with it dominated the Egyptian religion as nothing else. Every dead man or woman was entombed with observances honoring Osiris; the city of Abydos in the desert west of the Nile and north-west of Thebes was sacred to him; Sais in the Delta used to commemorate the floating of Osiris’ body carried by the Nile into the Mediterranean. What made Osiris so deeply ingrained in the religious memory of the nation that his cult pervaded mythology and religion?

Osiris’ dominion [before The Flood], before his murder by Seth [- Adam’s son, or after The Flood murdered by Shem, Noah’s son, Osiris then ‘embodied’ in Nimrod], was remembered as a time of bliss. According to the legend Seth, Osiris’ brother [and in Shem’s ‘recycled story’ maybe his uncle], killed and dismembered him, whereupon Isis [the Planet Jupiter], Osiris’ wife [- in Shem’s ‘recycling’ evidently Semiramis, though sometimes it’s her who killed Nimrod, while Shem took the blame], went on peregrinations [or “travel from one place to another”] to collect his dispersed members. Having gathered them and wrapped them together with swathings, she brought Osiris back to life [or in Shem’s ‘recycling’ Semiramis at that point simply bore his or another’s child, Tammuz-Horus, claiming he was Osiris reincarnated]. The memory of this event [- whichever version -] was a matter of yearly jubilation among the Egyptians...

[For a graphic description of some of the Egyptian rites, see Julius Firmicus Maternus, *The Error of the Pagan Religions* transl. by Dr. Clarence Allen Forbes [a 20th Century “American historian”, who “studied Ancient History at Bates College, where he received the bachelor’s degree in 1922 with distinction”, and “continued his studies at the University of Illinois, where he obtained a master’s degree in 1924 and a doctorate in 1928”, and thereafter “worked as a lecturer at the University of Cincinnati”, and “as Associate

Professor of Classics at the University of Nebraska, where he received his Honorary Doctor of Letters", and at "Ohio State University as a full Professor of Classics, where he retired in 1971", his "research interests" being "the history of sport and the social history of antiquity", about which he "wrote, among others, the monograph Greek Physical Education (first edition 1929, reprint 1971)", and he was also "elected President of the Classical Association of the Middle West and South", and was "a member of the North American Society for Sport History, who named him the Honorary President in 1984"] (New York,1970), pp.44 f.]

...Osiris became lord of the netherworld, the land of the dead. A legend, a prominent part of the Osiris cycle, tells that Isis gave birth to Horus, whom she conceived [either before Osiris died, or by **fornication** [H2181](#); [H8457](#); [G4202](#) before or afterward, but claiming] from the already dead Osiris [Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride* [*On Isis and Osiris - Jupiter and Saturn*]], and that Horus [or Tammuz] grew up to avenge his father by engaging Seth [or in the later "cycle" Shem] in mortal combat.

In Egyptology the meaning of these occurrences stands as an unresolved mystery. The myth of Osiris "is too remarkable and occurs in too many divergent forms not to contain a considerable element of historic [and 'recycled'] truth," wrote Sir Alan Henderson Gardiner, the leading scholar in these fields...

[Gardiner [an "English Egyptologist, linguist, philologist, and independent scholar", who is "regarded as one of the premier Egyptologists of the early and mid-20th century", most importantly including "a 1959 book on his study of "The Royal Canon of Turin" and his seminal 1961 work *Egypt of the Pharaohs*, which covered all aspects of Egyptian chronology and history at the time of publication [though he missed all that 'historical reconstruction' Dr. Velikovsky revealed]", as well as his "major contributions to ancient Egyptian philology" including "his famous three editions of *Egyptian Grammar* and its correlated list of all the Middle Egyptian hieroglyphs", which "produced one of the few available hieroglyphic printing fonts", and he was also able to "crack the so-called Proto-Sinaitic writing system", "also referred to as Sinaitic, Proto-Canaanite, Old Canaanite, or [just] Canaanite", which "is a term for both a Middle Bronze Age (Middle Kingdom) script attested in a small corpus of inscriptions found at Serabit el-Khadim in the Sinai Peninsula, Egypt, and [- especially to those with an 'evolutionary mind-set' -] the reconstructed common ancestor of the Paleo-Hebrew, Phoenician and South Arabian scripts (and, by extension, of most historical and modern alphabets)", and who "was educated at... Queen's College, Oxford", and "was later a student of the famous egyptologist Kurt Heinrich Sethe in Berlin"], *Egypt of the Pharaohs*, (Oxford University Press,1961), p.424.]

...but what historical truth is it [in the "myth of Osiris"]? Could it be of "an ancient king [or two] upon whose tragic death the entire legend hinged"? wondered Gardiner. [This view was held by Kurt Sethe. See *Urgeschichte und aelteste Religion der Aegypter* [*Prehistory and the Oldest Religion of the Egyptians*] (Leipzig,1930), p.73, n.3.] But of such a [Pre-Flood] king "not a trace has been found before the time of the Pyramid texts," and in these texts Osiris is spoken of without end. There he appears as a dead god or king or judge of the dead. But who was Osiris in his [Pre-Flood] life? asked Gardiner. At times "he is represented to us as the vegetation which perishes in the flood-water mysteriously issuing from himself..." [*Ibid.*, p.426.]

By-the-way, the Great Pyramid was clearly built before The Flood, part of the proof of this being that it's inner chambers must have been entirely flooded, since *dried salt* was left behind on its interior floors, this inner flooding evidently because of the diagonally upward "vents" from both the Queen's and King's Chambers to the outside.

So the "Osiris cycle", or 'recycle', where after The Flood Nimrod made himself out to be the 'incarnation of Saturn', and his wife Semiramis to be the 'incarnation of Jupiter', and she after his death making her son, Tammuz, out to be the 'reincarnation of Saturn', the Egyptians calling him Horus, is apparently just a 'repeat' of the "cycle" that transpired before The Flood, except that before The Flood Saturn clearly rules, while after The Flood there is a change of rule, and Jupiter takes over control of the Heavens, and Earth, with Saturn left 'dimmed' and in "chains".

[The connection of Osiris [Saturn] with water or flood-water is frequently stressed both in native Egyptian sources and in reports by classical and early Christian authors. Plutarch (*De Iside et Osiride* 33.364f) wrote that the Nile is the "moist principle and power," that the Nile is the "efflux of Osiris" (39.366c,32.363d,38.366a) and that Osiris is Oceanus (34.364d). Cf. John Gwyn Griffiths [20th Century "Welsh poet, Egyptologist and nationalist political activist who spent the largest span of his career lecturing at Swansea University", "a public research university located in Swansea, Wales, United Kingdom... chartered as University College of Swansea in 1920"], Plutarch's *De Iside et Osiride*, pp.36,56f.,424. See also Origen, *Contra Celsum* [*Against Celsum*, "an answer to a book entitled *The True Doctrine* which attacked Christianity", evidently written by Celsum, who is "an unknown Middle Platonic philosopher"] 5.38; Hippolytus, (*Refutatio Omnium Haeresium* 5.7.23) reported that the Egyptians "say that Osiris is water." Cf. also Sallustius ["or Sallust... a 4th-century writer, [and] a friend of the Roman Emperor Julian", who "wrote the treatise *On the Gods and the Cosmos*, a kind of catechism of 4th-century Hellenic paganism", and whose "work owes much to that of Iamblichus of Chalcis [a late 3rd/early 4th Century "Syrian Neoplatonist philosopher who determined the direction taken by later Neoplatonic philosophy... also the biographer of Pythagoras and a Greek mystic, philosopher and mathematician"]", Sallustius being someone afterward "who synthesized Platonism with Pythagoreanism and theurgy [- theurgy, again, being "a system of beneficent magic practiced by the Egyptian Platonists and others"]", and also to Julian's own philosophical writings... [and the] treatise is quite concise, and generally free of the lengthy metaphysical theorizing of the more detailed Neoplatonic texts... ['aiming'] in part "to parry the usual onslaughts of Christian polemic" in the face of Christianity's growing preeminence, and "met [or brought together] theology with theology"', however "Sallustius' exact identity is a matter of some uncertainty", being, "By some...identified as Flavius Sallustius (a native of Spain who was praetorian prefect of Gaul from 361 until 363 and Julian's colleague as consul in 363), by others with Saturninius Secundus Salutius (died after 367 AD, a native of Gaul who was praetorian prefect of the Orient in 361)", this "latter... said to have been offered the purple ['imperial favor']?, but declined it, after Julian's death"], *De diis et de mundo* [*The Gods and the World*], 4. Nock in his commentary to his edition of Sallustius (p.xlviii, n.44) compared a first century Greek papyrus (Papyrus Leiden J. ["an Egyptian medical papyri", these being "ancient Egyptian texts written on papyrus which permit a glimpse at medical procedures and practices in ancient Egypt"] 384, col. vii, 23) in which it is written "I am Osiris, who is called 'water'." The drowning of Osiris, described by Plutarch, is attested in some of the earliest Egyptian hieroglyphic texts. See K. Sethe, *Die altaegyptische Pyramidentexte* [*The Ancient Egyptian Pyramid Texts*] 24D,615D,766D; cf. idem, *Denkmal Memphitischer Theologie* [*Monument to Memphitic Theology*] 8,10b,19ff.,62 ff; Hugo Gressmann, *Tod und Auferstehung des Osiris* [*Death and Resurrection of Osiris*], pp.4,11-12,39.]

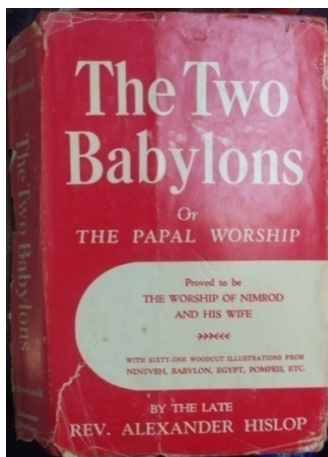
Julian, by-the-way, who you may remember Cyril, Bishop of Jerusalem, 'fought a lot with'...

...was "the last non-Christian [read, 'non-Catholic'] ruler of the Roman Empire, and it was his desire to bring the Empire back to its ancient Roman values in order to, as he saw it, save it from dissolution. He purged the top-heavy state bureaucracy and attempted to revive traditional Roman religious practices at the expense of Christianity. His anti-Christian sentiment and promotion of Neoplatonic paganism caused him to be remembered as *Julian the Apostate* by the [Catholic] church. Ironically [but that is, if Constantine had really been a **'true believer'** ^{G4100}], he was the last emperor of the Constantinian dynasty, which was the empire's first Christian [again, evidently really Catholic] dynasty.

And maybe only now are **we** finally ready – and I mean **if** you've sufficiently **'mastered'** this **study** up to this point, without skipping over too much of the **scripture** or other references and biographies, as well as having **diligently** applied enough **pressing** repetition to it all – to **study** as well as **'rightly divide and handle'** the Rev. Hislop's expose on the **greater abominations** identified in his 1916 book, **THE TWO BABYLONS OR THE PAPER WORSHIP PROVED TO BE THE WORSHIP OF NIMROD AND HIS WIFE**, (photo of my copy, p.417).

Try if you dare.

And it's also time I acknowledge **our brother** Origen, who I owe an apology for 'jumping on the bandwagon' that **wholly** rejects him and 'labels' him 'nothing but a Gnostic', because my encyclopedia reports that...



Origen... or Origen Adamantius [was a late 2nd to mid 3rd Century] Greek scholar, ascetic, [martyred son of a martyr] and ["pervasive"] early Christian theologian who was born and

spent the first half of his career in Alexandria. He was a prolific writer in multiple branches of theology, including [1] textual criticism [or "lower criticism" – the attempt to "determine" or "reconstruct" original source text, this being impossible with **scripture** without **'spiritual discernment'**], [2] biblical exegesis [- again, "critical explanation or interpretation of a text" – also impossible without "the aid of the Holy Spirit"] and [3] hermeneutics [- "the theory and methodology of interpretation" – which is just **'worldly manipulation'** without **'spiritual discernment'**], [4] philosophical theology [- "a branch and form of theology in which philosophical methods are used in developing or analyzing theological concepts", which nowadays is mostly just **'worldly manipulation'** methods, and among Satan's leading **ways** not only to **pervert** ^{H5186; H5791; H6140; H8136; G1294; G3344} **justice** ^{H6664}, **pervert judgment** ^{H4941}, **pervert all equity** ^{H3477}, and generally otherwise to **pervert the right ways of the Lord**, but also and primarily to **pervert the gospel of Christ**], [5] preaching [- yes, susceptible to the same kinds of problems really], and [6] spirituality [- certainly not unaffected by these problems -] written in Greek. He was anathematised [- labeled a "heretic" -] at the Second Council of Constantinople [in 553 – apparently to his credit]. He was one of the most influential figures in early Christian asceticism [- again, but in other words, the pursuit of "a lifestyle characterized by abstinence from sensual pleasures... for the purpose of pursuing spiritual goals"].

Unlike many church fathers, he was never canonised as a saint [- again, to his credit -] because some groups believed that some of his teachings contradicted those attributed to the apostles, notably the Apostles Paul and John. His teachings on [1] the pre-existence of souls [which, though Psalm 139:15-16 confirms they have existed from Creation, his position is more a 'Mr. Millstone-like' **error**, though no worse than today's Evangelicals who believe Mr. Millstone's 'paradise lost story' about Satan's supposed 'fall before Creation'], [2] the final reconciliation of all creatures, including perhaps even the devil (the apokatastasis) [- meaning "restoration to the original or primordial condition", or to the 'pre-Creation condition', meaning everyone will be 'saved', this an 'Apocalypse-of-Peter-like' **error**, arguably as bad as Evangelicals today who misplace the **abomination of desolation** to Mr. Greaseball's time on the testimony of that **darned** Gnostic, 'Mr. Pompous-ass'], and his possible belief that [3] God the Son was subordinate to God the Father [John 4:34; 5:19-30; 6:38-9; 7:33; 8:28-9; 9:4; 12:44-50; 13:16, 20; 14:10-28; 15:10-26; etc. → no **error** here, on his part anyway], were rejected by [both Pre-Catholic and Catholic] Christian orthodoxy...

And I have to pause to emphasize here that it's been my experience that most Evangelicals today also, at least when compartmentalizing, and however 'unconsciously', are not only 'infected' or 'poisoned' with Gnosticism, but they also incorrectly 'identify' Jesus as equal to, and not entirely "subordinate to God the Father", and despite Jesus' clear and repetitious testimony otherwise. See again - as plenty enough **proof** of Who Jesus really is in this respect - the 10 references from 10 different chapters in The Book of John above.

...Origen, reportedly trained in the school of Clement [in this case, "**Clement of Alexandria** to distinguish him from the earlier ['1st Pope'] Clement of Rome"] and by his [ultimately martyred] father, has long been considered [by the **worldly** or '**spiritually immature**', etc.] essentially a Platonist with occasional traces of Stoic philosophy [which again is, at least arguably, what many Evangelicals today could be 'labeled']. Patristic scholar [- a scholar engaged in "the study of the early Christian writers who are designated Church Fathers" - Dr.] Mark J. Edwards ["Tutor in Theology and University Lecturer in Patristics, Faculty of Theology" at Oxford, whose publications include *Apologetics in the Roman Empire*, (Oxford University Press 1999); and *Neoplatonic Saints: the Lives of Plotinus and Ploclus by their Pupils*, (Liverpool University Press 2000),] has argued that many of Origen's positions are more properly Aristotelian than strictly Platonic (for instance, his philosophical anthropology [- "sometimes called **anthropological philosophy**", an entirely **worldly** "discipline dealing with questions of [1] metaphysics", which again, is "a branch of philosophy exploring the fundamental questions, including the nature of concepts like being, existence and reality", "...and [2] phenomenology of the human person...", or "the philosophical study of the structures of experience and consciousness", "...and [3] interpersonal relationships"]. Nonetheless, he was thus a pronounced idealist, [in his case] as one regarding all things temporal and material as insignificant and indifferent, the only real and eternal things being comprised in the idea [or in another **word**, in the **spirit**]. He therefore regards as the purely ideal centre of this spiritual and eternal world, God, the pure reason, whose creative powers call into being the world with matter as the necessary substratum [- which sounds about **right** to

me, e.g., [John 1:1](#), [Rom 11:36](#), [1Co 8:6](#), [Heb 2:10](#), [2Co 13:4](#), [1Jo 4:9](#) and [Acts 17:28](#) - and in this last verse the Apostle Paul quotes a '**planet-god' worshipper**/Platonist '**poet**'^{G4163} to '**planet-god' worshippers**/Platonists on **Mars' hill** in Athens, and that so he **might by all means save some**, and where **some** indeed **believed** [Verse 34](#), and so by this **means** nonetheless were, **thank and praise the LORD**].

Origen's cosmology is complicated and controverted [**'conflicts with itself' - who's doesn't?**], but he seems to have held to a hypothesis of the preexistence of souls. Before the known world was created by God, he created a great number of spiritual intelligences. At first devoted to the contemplation and love of their creator, almost all of these intelligences eventually grew bored of contemplating God, and their love for him cooled off. Those whose love for God diminished the most became demons. Those whose love diminished moderately became human souls, eventually to be incarnated in fleshly bodies. Those whose love diminished the least became angels. One, however, who remained perfectly devoted to God became, through love, one with [\[or 'entirely subordinate to'\]](#) the Word (Logos) of God. The Logos eventually took flesh and was born of the Virgin Mary, becoming the God-man Jesus Christ. The diverse conditions in which human beings are born is actually dependent upon what their souls did in this pre-existent state. Thus what seems unfair, some being born poor and others wealthy, some sick and others healthy, and so forth, is, Origen insists, actually a by-product of the free-will of souls. Thus, material creation is at least implicitly of a lesser ontological category than the immaterial, or spiritual, and the heavy material bodies that man assumes after the fall will eventually be cast off. Origen, however, still insisted on a bodily resurrection, but in contrast to Athenagoras, who believed that earthly bodies would be precisely reconstituted in the hereafter, Origen argued that Paul's notion of a flourishing spiritual body is more appropriate.

Athenagoras of Athens, by-the-way, the elder contemporary of Clement of Alexandria, who died when Origen was still a young child...

...was a Father of the Church, an Ante-Nicene Christian apologist [\[and apparently more an "apologist" than a "polemic" as he was not "contentious", and "Ante-Nicene" means he lived in "the period before the promulgation of the Nicene Creed at the First Council of Nicaea" \(325 AD\)\]](#), [\[and he\] ...lived during the second half of the 2nd century \[but\] of whom little is known for certain...](#)

In his writings he styles himself as "Athenagoras, the Athenian, Philosopher, and Christian". There is some evidence that he [\[too\]](#) was a Platonist before his conversion, but this is not certain [\[though very likely since he lived in Athens\]](#).

Although his work appears to have been well-known and influential, mention of him by other early Christian apologists, notably in the extensive writings of Eusebius, is strangely absent. It may be that his treatises, circulating anonymously, were for a time considered as the work of another apologist, or there may have been other circumstances now lost. There are only two mentions of him in early Christian literature... [\[And\] Philip of Side claims](#)

that Athenagoras headed the Catechetical School of Alexandria [where Clement also “taught”] (which is probably incorrect [- though he likely at least ‘sabbatical’ there, and that is, had an “extended period of leave” there from his “customary work, especially for rest, to acquire new skills or training, etc.”]) and [Philip] notes that Athenagoras converted to Christianity after initially familiarizing himself with the Scriptures in an attempt to controvert [or ‘disprove’] them.

His writings bear witness to his erudition [or “scholarship”] and culture, his power as a philosopher and rhetorician, his keen appreciation of the intellectual temper of his age, and his tact and delicacy in dealing with the powerful opponents of his religion [implying more the “defending or attempting to prove the truth” of “apologetics”, as opposed to the more “warlike, hostile” and “aggressive claims” of “polemics”]. Thus his writings are credited by some later scholars as having had a more significant impact on their intended audience than the now better-known writings of his more polemical [yes, read, “hostile”] and religiously-grounded contemporaries.

Of his writings, of which there were likely many, there have been preserved but a few: his *Embassy (πρεσβεία) for the Christians* (more usually called by the Latin titled *Legatio Pro Christianis* or simply the *Legatio* and often referred to as the *Apology*), and a treatise titled the *Resurrection of the Dead* a.k.a. *On the Resurrection of the Body...*

And according to my encyclopedia, Origen, “who was born and spent the first half of his career in Alexandria”, and who was “reportedly trained in the school of Clement [otherwise known as “the Catechetical School of Alexandria”] by his [ultimately martyred] father”,

...was [or is] a rigid adherent of scripture, making no statement without adducing some scriptural basis. [They call **us fundamentalists** nowadays.] To him the scriptures were divinely inspired, as was proved both by the fulfillment of prophecy and by the immediate impression which the scriptures made on those who read them. Since the divine Logos spoke in the scriptures, they were an organic [**living** ^{G2198}] whole and on every occasion he combatted the Gnostic tenet of the inferiority of the Old Testament. In his exegesis, Origen sought to discover the deeper meaning implied in the scriptures. One of his chief methods was the translation of proper names, which enabled him, like Philo, to find a deep meaning even in every event of history (see hermeneutics), but at the same time he insisted on an exact grammatical interpretation of the text as the basis of all exegesis [underlining mine]. A strict adherent [“supporter”] of the [then ‘Pre-Catholic’] Church, Origen yet distinguished sharply between the ideal [or **spiritual**] and the empirical [or “external organisation”] Church, [these two parts] representing “a double church of men and angels” [underlining again mine], or, in Platonic phraseology, the lower church and its celestial ideal [which isn’t entirely just a “Platonic” or “Gnostic” **precept**, because **we too believe that every angel** - except those following Satan - is already now and **for evermore will be our fellow-servant** ^{G4889} after all (Rev 19:10; 22:9)]. The ideal Church alone was the Church of Christ, scattered over all the earth; the

other [- “the “empirical” or “external organization” Church] provided also a shelter for sinners. Holding that the [then Pre-Catholic] Church, as being in possession of the mysteries [in this case God’s *mysteries*^{G3466} of which Jesus and the Apostle Paul spoke (e.g., [Mat 13:11](#); [Mar 4:11](#); [Luk 8:10](#); [1Co 2:7](#); [4:1](#); [15:51](#); [Rom 16:25](#); [Eph 3](#), [Rev 1:20](#); [10:7](#), etc.), and not those of *Mystery Babylon, practised*^{H6213} by *the whore* ([Rev 17:5-7](#)), whose ‘*deadly fruit*’ didn’t really begin to ‘*re-blossom*’ until about half a century later], affords the only means of salvation [more of my approving underlining], he was indifferent to her external organisation, although he spoke sometimes of the office-bearers as the pillars of the Church, and of their heavy duties and responsibilities. More important to him was the idea borrowed from Plato [- and remember the Apostle Paul too “borrowed” from the ‘*planet-god*’ worshipers/Platonists when *preaching to them on Mars’ hill* [Act 17:22-34](#) -] of the grand division between the great human multitude, [the ‘*1st Division*’ being] capable of sensual vision only [such being the ‘*spiritually unable*’ who are *unskilful in the word of righteousness* [Heb 5:11-13](#), and who I otherwise refer to as ‘*milk-drinking*’ babes, who, if they don’t *awake to righteousness* [1Co 15:34](#), will, at best, remain among the *last and the least in the kingdom*], and [the ‘*2nd Division*’ being] those who know how to comprehend the hidden meaning of scripture and the diverse mysteries [- such being the ‘*spiritually able*’ who have become *exercised*^{G1128} to discern^{G1253} both good^{G2570} and evil^{G2556}, and who go on unto perfection ([Heb 5:14-6:3](#)), and who otherwise I refer to as *strong meat* ‘*eaters*’ who, if they continue so, will, God willing, be among the first and great in the kingdom of heaven], church organisation being for the former only [and these ‘organizers’ being “the pillars of the Church”, who in this context I’d instead call ‘*babysitters*’, and whose *reward* for their certainly essential *ministry* will be for having “provided a shelter for sinners”, but it’s a *reward* that must *come short*^{G5302} of the *greater...reward* ([Heb 11:26](#)) accompanying the *better resurrection* ([Heb 11:35](#)) that comes with ‘*making disciples*’ (read, *Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever* Jesus has *commanded* [Mat 28:19-20](#)), ‘*all*’ of which also sounds about *right* to me, though ‘*all*’ this will require further ‘*correcting, improving and expanding*’, the *better* part of which we’ll save, *if God permit, for the next study*].

And I have to pause again to emphasize that *angels* are not really our *servants*, but every one of them is actually our *fellow servant* of *the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named* [Eph 3:15](#), and that our *conversation* [and ‘*citizenship*’^{G4175}] *is* [now already] *in heaven*, along with all other *predestinated* Immortal Sons of God of the *coming, ‘multi-stationed’*, Eternal Kingdom of God and of Christ.

And I should also emphasize that like *our brother* John Darby greatly ‘under-categorized’ the ‘*stations*’ of the Immortal Sons of God, so *our brother* Origen ‘under-categorized’ these ‘*divisions*’ of *us* all too. And I mean that there will be *twelve foundations* (or ‘*floors*’) in New Jerusalem, from the ‘*last bottom floor*’ to the ‘*first top floor*’, where I’ll guess that *the least in the kingdom* are the ones who *dwell*^{G3306: G4637} on the largest and ‘*last bottom floor*’, while the ‘*increasingly*’ *great in the kingdom* may *dwell* (or *abide*, etc.) on the increasingly smaller ‘*upper floors*’ above. And evidently each ‘*floor*’ will have further divided ‘*immortals*’ from *last* to *first* too. And so it must also be in *the nations of them which are saved* ([Rev 21:14, 24](#)).

But why do I owe him an apology for calling him a Gnostic? Well, since I don't call most Christians nowadays 'Gnostics', but arguably could, neither should I call **our brother** Origen one. I mean Evangelicals today commonly believe a 'before Creation fairytale', as well as other plainly *gnostic* ideas. And they also – like **our brother** John Darby and others – 'mis-group' and/or 'mis-identify' the Immortal Sons of God, and 'misidentify' the 'standards' of **salvation** and **reward**, and even to some degree 'misidentify' Jesus Himself, none of which necessarily costs them their **salvation**, as long as they **continue** to **believe** that **Christ died for our sins** [1Co 15:3](#), and keep accepting His **sacrifice** whenever **the Comforter**



'reproveth' ^{G1651} them of **sin**, etc. Of course doing only that may **for ever** cost them the opportunity for 'housing' anywhere above the **'lowest bottom floor'**.

And Evangelicals also make big messes of eschatology, as well as of too many other **doctrines**, arguably at least as much as **our brother** Origen, including 'believing' that some of the **damned** will instead be **saved**, (like those 'infected' with '**Mr. Magoo** syndrome' – see 'patient zero' on [p.420](#) – who are **blinded** to think that Catholics, in general, and even their pope, finally including **the false prophet**, if not also **the antichrist**, will be **saved**, and vice versa, like those who catch 'anti-denominational fever', who

believe anyone outside their church is at least in 'danger' of being 'lost', thinking only their denomination is 'safe', and the only one with 'flawless doctrine'), while **our** entirely rejected **brother** Origen seems closer to **the mark** on **the deep things of God** than most Evangelicals.

And so I'm **hoping** I will get the chance to apologize to him for previously going along with the popular opinion of the Evangelicals of my time that have 'labeled' him – at least somewhat hypocritically – a 'Gnostic'. But I have more than **hope**, and that would be **'supernatural knowledge'** given to **us** by Jesus Himself, that today's Church, however much 'infected' or 'poisoned' with 'Gnostic', 'Platonist', "Aristotelian", or other 'metaphysical philosophies', etc., will not **ever** be **fully 'prevailed against'** by **the gates of hell, thank and praise the LORD**.

And I think the biggest **error** that **our brother** Origen and most Evangelicals today make on the topic of the **knowledge** of **heaven** and **angels**, is that they seem to compartmentalize, if not entirely miss that **now we see through a glass darkly** [1Co 13:12](#), and they also apparently overlook that though **angels** from the 'other side' of this **'dark glass'** visit this side – some being messengers of Satan's **lies** – and though **men** have returned from there alive – some surely **deceived** by 'false experiences' – evidently the **knowledge** of what's really happening on the 'other side' is limited by God, and evidently mostly to **unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man [or angel] to utter** [2Co 12:4](#). And I take Paul's meaning here to be that there's a boundary set by God, which no **man** or **angel** can cross, as God is **able** to **forbid** it.

And for example, I'm reminded that **our brother, cardiologist** Dr. Maurice Rawlings, who gathered testimonies of many who had been 'resuscitated from the dead', discovered that only about 1 in 5 remember anything about their 'experience' while 'dead', and only a minority of these remember 'trips to heaven', more instead recalling 'trips to hell'. And I'm going to guess that this is at least partly because God is still actively at **work to forbid** most of this kind of **knowledge** from reaching 'our side' of this **'dark glass'**.

But I should also clarify that many OBE's ("out of body experiences"), including 'trips to heaven' or 'hell', are **'deceptions'**. So you must **understand** that to the extent to which God has **hid** ^{G613} from us what's going on in **heaven** right now, is

the extent to which any testimony of a 'trip to heaven' or 'hell' can be trusted. And I mean it's my conclusion and testimony that many such 'trips' are fake, being **devices** [H4284](#): [H4209](#): [H4156](#): [H2154](#): [G3540](#) of '**our** adversary to **deceive** and '**mislead**' us. And this means that all testimonies – before they can be **believed** – must first align with The Word of God. And again, we should expect that all 'real testimonies' never give away much of what's going on in **heaven**, and probably don't reveal much more than **scripture** does of what's going on in **hell** either. That's what I **believe** Paul means when he says, **we see through a glass darkly**. And I **believe** that anything beyond this **is not lawful for a man [or angel] to utter**, this being a 'boundary' God is fully **able** to make 'impassable', but one that apparently Satan is still free to **lie** about.

And as for specifics of what happened before Creation, that's evidently still – and may always be – **hid** by God from us and the **angels**, though Satan apparently **lieth** about that too.

And getting back to Saturn/Osiris...

...He is associated with brilliant light.

[Heinrich Karl Brugsch, (*Astronomische und astrologische Inschriften altaegyptischer Denkmaeler* [*Astronomical and Astrological Inscriptions of Ancient Egyptian Monuments*] [Leipzig, 1883]) wrote of the identification of certain planets, among them that of Osiris, with the sun ("Die Planeten als Sonnen") ["The Planets as Suns"] and published an inscription he had copied at Philae: "*es sind Sonnen, welche leuchten tagtaeglich und welche strahlen in der Daemmerung, es sind (dies) der Sahu-Stern der Seele des Osiris und der Sothis Stern*" ["there are suns which glow day by day, and which radiate at dusk, these being the Sahu star of the soul of Osiris and the Sothis star" – "the Sothis star" being "the name for the star Sirius, the Dog Star, given by the ancient Egyptians"].]

After a life of studying Egyptian history and religion Gardiner confessed that he remained unaware of whom Osiris represented or memorialized: "The origin of Osiris remains from me an insoluble mystery." [Gardiner, "*Was Osiris and Ancient King Subsequently Deified?*", *The Journal of Egyptian Archaeology* 46 (1960), p.104.] Nor could others in his field help him find an answer.

The Egyptologist John Wilson wrote that it is an admission of failure that the chief cultural content of Egyptian civilization, its religion, its mythological features again and again narrated and alluded to in texts and represented in statues and temple reliefs, is not understood...

[Dr. John Wilson ["the Andrew MacLeish Distinguished Service Professor at the University of Chicago", who, "After graduating from Princeton University in 1920 he taught English at the American University in Beirut [Lebanon]... [and there] he met faculty member Harold H. Nelson who introduced him to hieroglyphics and in 1923 to the famous Egyptologist James Henry Breasted... [and he] was offered by Breasted a fellowship at the Oriental Institute, where he earned his doctorate in 1926... [and he] was sent to Luxor ["a city in Upper Egypt", map in VOL. III, SEC. 8, p.278] by Breasted as an epigrapher and after further study in Munich and Berlin he returned to Chicago and was appointed associate professor of Egyptology at the University of Chicago in 1931... [and he] succeeded Breasted as director of the Oriental Institute when he died in 1936... [and he] continued as Director until 1946 after leading the Institute through a difficult financial period... [and he] was honored by being named Distinguished Service Professor in 1953", and "had many honors

conferred upon him by various universities and societies"], *"Egyptian Culture and Religion" in The Bible and the Ancient Near East, Essays in Honor of William Foxwell Albright* [- who was "born in... Chile, the eldest of six children of American evangelical Methodist missionaries", and who was an "archaeologist, biblical scholar, philologist, and expert on ceramics... Ph.D. from Johns Hopkins University...1916 and took a professorship there in 1927, remaining as W. W. Spence Professor of Semitic Languages from 1930 to his retirement in 1958 ... [and he] was also the Director of the American School of Oriental Research in Jerusalem, 1922-1929, 1933-1936, and did important archaeological work at sites in Israel"], ed. by Prof., Dr. George Ernest (not Frederick) Wright [a 20th Century "leading Old Testament scholar and biblical archaeologist", and "expert in Ancient Near Eastern archaeology... especially known for his work in the study and dating of pottery", who "studied with William Foxwell Albright at Johns Hopkins University", and who "joined the faculty of Harvard Divinity School in 1958, where he was Parkman Professor and [in 1961 also] the Curator of the Semitic Museum...until his death [in 1974]"], (New York,1961), p.307. Ezekiel, Ch.8 [which identifies Israel's **great and greater abominations, including women weeping for Tammuz**].]

...The astral [*astrological or cosmological*] meaning of Egyptian deities was not realized and the cosmic events their activities represent were not thought of.

* * *

The prophet Ezekiel in the Babylonian exile had a vision—the likeness of a man, but made of fire and amber who lifted him by the lock of his hair and brought him to some darkened chamber where the ancients of the house of Israel with censers in their hands were worshipping idols portrayed upon the wall round about. Then the angel of the vision told him: "Thou shalt see greater abominations that they do"—and he brought the prophet to the door of the gate of the Lord's house—"and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz." Next he showed him also Jews in the inner court of the Lord's house "with their back toward the temple of the Lord and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east." [[Ezekiel, ch.8.](#)]

The worship of the sun and the planets was decried by Jeremiah, a contemporary of Ezekiel. But what was this weeping for Tammuz?

Tammuz was a Babylonian god; one of the months of the year, approximately coinciding with July, in the summer, was named in his honor; and by this very name it is known in the present-day Hebrew calendar. Tammuz was a god that died and was then hidden in the underworld; his death was the reason for a fast, accompanied by lamentations of the women of the land. His finding or his return to life in resurrection were the motifs of the passion. [S. Langdon [[bio, p.277](#)], *Tammuz and Ishtar* (Oxford,1914), pp.9,22,84f.]

Tammuz was a god of vegetation, of the flood, and of seeds: "The god Tammuz came from

Armenia every year in his ark in the overflowing river, blessing the alluvium with new growth." [Hugo Gressmann, *The Tower of Babel* (New York,1928), p.28; cf. Langdon, *Tammuz and Ishtar*, p.13.] In the month of

Tammuz he was "bound, and the liturgies speak of his having been drowned among flowers which were thrown upon him as he sank beneath the waves of the Euphrates." [Langdon, article "Tammuz" in *The Encyclopaedia Britannica*, XIIIth Edition. See also idem, *Babylonian Liturgies* (Paris,1913), p.96.] The drowning of Tammuz was an occasion for wailing by women: "The flood has taken Tammuz, the raging storm has brought him low." [Langdon, *Tammuz and Ishtar*, p.15. Langdon adds that "As Damu he [Tammuz] is called *bel girsu (ummun mersi)*, 'lord of the flood.'" (*Ibid.*, p.6n.)]

Of Tammuz it also is narrated that he was associated with brilliant light [Langdon, *Tammuz and Ishtar*, p.15: "The shining ocean to thy perditions has taken thee..." Cf. p.21: "The shining crown from thy head is divested..."], [and "associated"] with descent into the nether world, visited there by Ishtar, his spouse. Tammuz' death, his subsequent resurrection, or his discovery in the far reaches, but no longer brilliant, were the themes of the cult that was not just one of the mysteries, but the chief and paramount cult.

The Osirian mysteries, the wailing for Tammuz, all refer to the transformation of Saturn during and following the Deluge. [So] Osiris was not [just] a king [or kings, namely, Nimrod and whatever Pre-Flood predecessor] but [also] the planet Saturn, Kronos of the Greeks, Tammuz of the Babylonians. The Babylonians called Saturn "the Star of [King] Tammuz"...

[Ernst Friedrich Weidner, *Handbuch der babylonischen Astronomie* [again, *Handbook of Babylonian Astronomy*] (Leipzig,1915), p.61; cf. Dr. Alfred Jeremias [late 18th/early 19th Century "German pastor ["of the Lutheran congregation in Leipzig", and later "also professor at Leipzig University"], Assyriologist and an expert on the religions of the Ancient Near East", and "pupil of Franz and [his son] Friedrich Delitzsch [- Friedrich, who I'll refer to hereafter as 'Dr. Devil-leech', being "a lecturer of Semitic languages and Assyriology in Leipzig", and who, as mentioned earlier, "In a 1902 controversial lecture titled "Babel and Bible"... maintained that many Old Testament writings were borrowed from ancient Babylonian tales, including the stories of the Creation and Flood"]... [and in 1886 he [Pastor Jeremias] promoted the latter ['Dr. Devil-leech'] with a revision of the Isenar's Hellfahrt [*Die Höllen-fahrt der Istar. Eine altbabylon. Beschwörungslegende*, Diss. phil. (*The Hellish Journey of the Istar. An Old Babylon Incantation Legend*, a Philosophical Dissertation (Leipzig,1886)], which he published as part of the Babylonian-Assyrian Conceptions of Life After Death [*Die babylon.-assy. Vorstellungen vom Leben nach dem Tode. Nach den Quellen mit Berücks. der alttestamentl. Parallelen dargestellt* (or *The Babylon.-assy. Ideas about Life After Death. After the Sources with Berücks. the Old Testament Parallels*)], published in [Leipzig in] 1887"... [and these "conceptions" or "ideas" that were "promoted" by 'Dr. Devil-leech' and Pastor Professor Dr. Jeremias came to be called "**Panbabylonism** (also known as **Panbabylonianism**)" which "is the school of thought that considered the cultures and religions of the Middle East and civilization in general to be ultimately derived from Babylonian myths which in turn they viewed as being based on Babylonian astronomy, often in hidden [or 'not understood'] ways] ... [and in] 1891 he [Jeremias] presented the first complete German translation of the Gilgamesh epic ...[and in] 1922, he became an extraordinary professor of religious history. In 1905, the University of Leipzig, and in 1914, the University of Groningen awarded him the theological honorary doctorate... [and in] his numerous and widely-read works, he was committed to the dissemination [see comment next paragraph] and

evaluation [read, 'distortion'] of ancient oriental research results – especially in the theological field of biblicalegese – and, alongside ["Extraordinary Professor of Oriental languages" at Berlin, Dr.] Hugo Winckler, was one of the principal representatives of the Pan-Babylonian school ...[where] so-called pan-Babylonism [mis-]asserts a uniform ancient Oriental mythology, which is [wrongly] based on the Bible in particular", *Handbuch der altorientalistischen Geisteskultur [Handbook of Ancient Oriental Spiritual Culture]* (Leipzig,1913), pp.92,137.]

The term "dissemination" here is a shamefully appropriate pun, there being at least dual meaning in the definition, "promulgate extensively", and that is, "to scatter or spread widely, as though sowing seed", because the "seed" here is most appropriately identified as 'wild oats', making it fitting to refer to Pastor Jeremias hereafter, if unavoidable, as 'Pastor Wild Oats'.

...After the Deluge Saturn was invisible [or – for the only **eight** survivors while **shut...in** the Ark – certainly 'out of view'] (the sky was [- but likely only part of the time they were still **shut...in,**] covered for a long time by clouds of volcanic dust [and that would be a "long time" only if **forty days** or so of surely global, 'sky-cleaning' **rain** is a "long time" compared to the remaining 110 **days** (of the whole **hundred and fifty days**) of more likely and generally *clear sky*, as opposed to what the *sky* must have been like after The 2nd Visit of Mercury, when there was much less 'sky-cleaning' **rain**]) and [or but nonetheless the 'story' was 'disseminated', evidently first by Ham's wife, whereby eventually] the Egyptians cried for Osiris, and the Babylonians cried for Tammuz. Isis (Jupiter at that time) went in search of her husband, and Ishtar (also Jupiter at that early time [- later **Venus**]) went to the netherworld to find her husband Tammuz. For a time Saturn disappeared [or again, was mostly just 'out of view' until the **eight** disembarked], [but it evidently nonetheless appeared to have been] driven away by Jupiter, and when it reappeared [and that is, whenever the **eight** first saw it again] it was no longer the same planet: it moved [relatively] very slowly [being in a 'further-out' *orbit and/or orbiting slower?*]. The disappearance [or just the 'transformation'] of the planet Saturn ['disseminated' as 'doing time' entirely 'out of view'] in the "nether world" became the theme of many religious observances, comprising liturgies, mystery plays, lamentations, and fasts. When Osiris was seen again in the sky, though greatly diminished, the [**eight**] people were [not likely] frenzied by the return [or "greatly diminished" appearance] of Osiris from death [though evidently Ham's wife 'invented' stories along these lines at some later point]; nevertheless he [Saturn] became king of the netherworld. In the Egyptian way of seeing the celestial drama, Isis (Jupiter), the spouse of Osiris (Saturn) wrapped him in swathings [or 'mummified' him]. Osiris was known as "the swathed" – the way the dead came to be dressed for their journey to the world of the dead, over which Osiris reigns. Similar rites were celebrated in honor of Adonis, who died and was resurrected after a stay in the netherland [Cf. Charles Vellay [late 19th to mid 20th Century "French historian and hellenist, director of the "Journal of Homeric Studies"], *Le Culte et les fetes d'Adonis-Thammouz dans l'orient antique [The Cult and Festivities of Adonis-Tammuz in the Ancient East]* (Paris,1904); Sir James G. Frazer, [in] *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*, Vols.I-II (London,1922)], [recounts the "rites...celebrated"] in the

mysteries of Orpheus, Cf. [Dr. William Keith Chambers Guthrie](#), *Orpheus and Greek Religion* (London,1935).]

Dr. William Keith Chambers Guthrie, FBA (Fellowship of the British Academy),

...was a [20th Century] Scottish classical scholar, best known for his *History of Greek Philosophy*, published in six volumes between 1962 and his death [1981]. He served as Laurence Professor of Ancient Philosophy at the University of Cambridge from 1952 to 1973 and as Master of Downing College, Cambridge from 1957 to 1972...

...W. K. C. Guthrie wrote that Orpheus was the founder of mystery religions and the first to reveal to men the meanings of the initiation rites...

...**Orpheus**... is a legendary Thracian musician, poet, and prophet in ancient Greek religion and myth. The major stories about him are centered on his ability to charm all living things and even stones with his music, his attempt to retrieve his wife, Eurydice, from the underworld, and his death at the hands of those who could not hear his divine music. As an archetype of the inspired singer, Orpheus is one of the most significant figures in the reception of classical mythology in Western culture, portrayed or alluded to in countless forms of art and popular culture including poetry, film, opera, music, and painting.

Orpheus was born as a son of the Muse Calliope and the Thracian king Oeagrus in a cave between Pimpleia and Leivithra [["an ancient Macedonian city at the foot of Mount Olympus \[photo p.425\], near... Skotina" on the east coast of Northcentral Greece](#)].



For the Greeks, Orpheus was a founder and prophet of the so-called "Orphic" mysteries. He was credited with the composition of the **Orphic Hymns**, a collection of which only two have survived. Shrines containing purported relics of Orpheus were regarded as oracles...

...He is not mentioned in Homer or Hesiod. Most ancient sources [however] accept his historical existence; [But] Aristotle [[evidently being a Platonist 'elitist, insider, self-idolatry beastismists', and evidently intending to diminish the popularity of 'planet gods' worship,](#)] is an exception... Pindar [- the late 6th to mid 5th Century BC "Ancient Greek lyric poet from Thebes", and one of the "canonical nine lyric poets of ancient Greece", all nine evidently 'pure' **'planet-god' worshippers**, and "esteemed by the [pure **'planet-god-worshipping'**] scholars of Hellenistic Alexandria as worthy of critical study",] calls Orpheus "the father of songs" and identifies him as a son of the Thracian king Oeagrus and the Muse Calliope...

...According to [[Pseudo-](#)]Apollodorus and a fragment of Pindar [- both likely just plain **'planet-god' worshippers**], Orpheus' father was Oeagrus, a Thracian [[likely 'angel-human'](#)] king; or, according to another version of the story, the god [[or 'satanic' angel](#)] Apollo.

The famous 20th Century “British philosopher, logician, mathematician, historian, writer, social critic, political activist and Nobel laureate”, (this ‘award’ being “in recognition of his varied and significant writings in which he champions humanitarian ideals and freedom of thought”), and also *atheist*, Bertrand Russell, “described himself...saying”,

...in regard to the Olympic gods, speaking to a purely philosophical audience, I would say that I am an Agnostic. But speaking popularly, I think that all of us would say in regard to those gods that we were Atheists. In regard to the Christian God, I should, I think, take exactly the same line.

And about Orpheus he “noted”,

The Orphics were an ascetic sect; wine, to them, was only a symbol, as, later, in the Christian sacrament. The intoxication that they sought was that of "enthusiasm," of union with the god. They believed themselves, in this way, to acquire mystic knowledge not obtainable by ordinary means. This mystical element entered into Greek philosophy with Pythagoras, who was a reformer of Orphism as Orpheus was a reformer of the religion of Dionysus. From Pythagoras Orphic elements entered into the philosophy of Plato, and from Plato into most later philosophy that was in any degree religious [or “into” all forms of ***‘planet-god’ worship***].

And the way Strabo identifies Orpheus is predictable too, and that is, if I wasn’t so long overdue in introducing him. He was “a Greek geographer, philosopher, and historian who lived in Asia Minor during the transitional period of the Roman Republic into the Roman Empire”, and a “highly respected tutor in Augustus's court”, as well as another, like Lucius Cornelius Alexander Polyhistor (or Alexander of Miletus), who was “a proponent of Roman imperialism” even though he “belonged... to a prominent family whose members had held important positions under the previous resisting regime of King Mithridates VI of Pontus”. (You know, that “resisting regime” that Pompey could not, but Julius finally ‘came, saw and conquered’.) And Strabo was evidently also an ***‘elitist, insider, self-idolatry beastismists’***, because he instead...

...presents Orpheus as a mortal, who lived and died in a village close to Olympus. "Some, of course, received him willingly, but others, since they suspected a plot and violence, combined against him and killed him." He made money as a musician and "wizard" – Strabo uses *agurteúonta* (αγυρτεύοντα), also used by Sophocles in *Oedipus Tyrannus* to characterize Teiresias [- the “blind prophet of Apollo in Thebes” -] as a trickster with an excessive desire for possessions. *Agúrtēs* (αγύρτης) [its root word] most often meant charlatan [- “a person practicing quackery or some similar confidence trick or deception in order to obtain money, fame or other advantages via some form of pretense or deception”,] and always had a negative connotation. Pausanias writes of an unnamed Egyptian who considered Orpheus a *mágeuse* (μάγευσε), i.e., magician [such ‘charges’ being an insult to and demotion from his former ***‘demigod’*** status]...

The ‘pawn’ Pausanias was...

...a Greek traveler and geographer of the second century A.D., who lived in the time of Roman emperors Hadrian, Antoninus Pius, and Marcus Aurelius. He is famous for his *Description of Greece* (Ancient Greek: Ἑλλάδος Περιήγησις, *Hellados Periegesis*), a lengthy work that describes ancient Greece from his first-hand observations. This work provides crucial information for making links between classical literature and modern archaeology.

And,

Mystery religions, sacred mysteries or simply **mysteries**, were [or include] religious schools of the Greco-Roman world for which participation was reserved to initiates (*mystai* [read, 'elites' or 'insiders']). The main characterization of this religion is the secrecy associated with the [surely **abominable**] particulars of the initiation and the ritual practice, which may not be revealed to outsiders [as they certainly involve '**satanic**' as well as criminal acts]. The most famous mysteries of Greco-Roman antiquity [another name for "Classic Antiquity"] were the Eleusinian Mysteries, which were of considerable antiquity and predated the Greek Dark Ages [that is, "predated" Homer, and probably "predated" The Flood too]. The mystery schools flourished in Late Antiquity; Julian the Apostate in the mid 4th century is known to have been initiated into three distinct mystery schools - most notably the mithraists [- "Mithraism" again being "the Roman worship of Saturn", and Emperor Constantine, as likely all in his "dynasty", besides being 'Christians' - except Julian - were apparently also "initiated into" as many or more "distinct mystery schools" as the 'pagan' Julian was]. Due to the secret nature of the school, and because the mystery religions of Late Antiquity were ['on the surface'] persecuted by the Christian Roman Empire from the 4th century, the details of these religious practices are derived from descriptions, imagery and cross-cultural studies. "Because of this element of secrecy, we are ill-informed as to the beliefs and practices of the various mystery faiths. We know that they had a general likeness to one another" [- not to mention a single author, '**the father of lies**', who, though refocusing **worship** during this time, surely did not let them entirely die out, and **we also know** that though the **world is blinded** ⁶⁵¹⁸⁶ by both God and Satan, (e.g., [John 12:40](#); [2Co 4:4](#); [2Th 2:6-12](#)), and that though **the great whore that sitteth upon many waters**, and that **MYSTERY BABYLON** religion of '**hers**', now already **reigneth over the kings of the earth** ([Rev 17:18](#)), and though it is **by 'her' sorceries that all nations** [continue to be] **deceived** ([Rev 18:23-24](#)), **we are not entirely ignorant of his** [or her] **devices** [2Co 2:11](#), now are **we**].

By-the way, the Greek Dark Ages is the topic of one of Dr. Velikovsky's "unpublished" volumes in the *Ages In Chaos Series*, titled, *The Dark Age of Greece* (<http://www.varchive.org/dag/index.htm>), "a critical examination of the mysterious gap of close to five centuries thought to follow the Mycenaean civilization", when an evidently "mystery religion" influenced "civilization", though this "mysterious gap" is not actually real, but instead, as suggested in the *Preface* by Professor David Flusser, Hebrew University, is "a false Egyptian chronology, which was invented by Egyptian patriots in order to show that the Greeks were, in comparison to the Egyptians, mere children...", as well as to preserve the 'classic

chronology' in general, and it should not be confused with the real "Dark Ages", also known as the "Medieval Period", or the "Middle Ages", occurring when there was an absence of The Word of God in common languages, this period spanning The 2nd half of The 1st Millennium AD to The middle of The 2nd Millennium AD.

And indeed a 'phase' of mystery schools "flourished" in Late Antiquity, which was the period marking the close of the "Classical Antiquity" period, and generally thought to be from the 3rd Century AD to as late as the 8th Century, and that is, "in mainland Europe, the Mediterranean world, and the Near East", this region also "collectively known as the Greco-Roman world", and this period otherwise known as "the time of transition from classical antiquity to the Middle Ages", the whole period of "classical antiquity" starting with "Homer...8th-7th century BC", as Dr. Velikovsky points out that the events Homer wrote about in *The Iliad* places him in the 7th Century BC - necessarily after The Trojan War - though most "who believe that the stories of the Trojan War are derived from a specific historical conflict usually date it to the 12th or 11th centuries BC, often preferring the dates given by Eratosthenes, 1194-1184 BC", Eratosthenes being that late 3rd/early 2nd Century BC "Greek polymath... nicknamed *Pentathlos*... [who] became chief librarian at the Library of Alexandria... [and] invented the discipline of geography", and though Dr. Velikovsky places the close of this war after The Last Visit of Mars in 687 BC, this half-millennium disagreement being the imaginary marker of the "Greek Dark Ages", but really just the beginning of the recovery from The Visits of Mars, as well as of Satan's awakening to the reality that there weren't any more major '**planet gods**' coming back again real soon, with this entire "classical antiquity" period extending most of a millennium, "through the emergence of Christianity [and Catholicism] and the decline of the Roman Empire (5th century AD)", or just over a millennium "to, in the East, the Muslim conquests in the mid-7th century", these being real markers of the beginning of what I'll call The Pan-Occidental-Oriental Dark Ages, and that is, to distinguish them as needed from the imaginary Greek Dark Ages.

And Dr. Velikovsky continues, adding that,

Sir James G. Frazer, the collector of folklore, came to regard Osiris as a vegetation god [This was also recognized by Hugo Gressman ("Tod und Auferstehung des Osiris," [again, "*Death and Resurrection of Osiris*") *Das Alte Orient [The Old Orient]* [1923], p.12.]; likewise he saw in the Babylonian Tammuz, an equivalent of the Egyptian Osiris, a vegetation god and, carried away by this concept, wrote his *The Golden Bough*, built around the idea of the vegetation god that dies and is resurrected the following year. [See especially the volume entitled *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*.]

And Dr. Velikovsky concludes that,

A few peoples through consecutive planetary ages kept fidelity to the ancient Saturn, or Kronos, or Brahma, whose age [or 'period of dominance'] was previous to that of Jupiter...

[That Brahma is Saturn was understood by Velikovsky as long ago as the early 1940's though he did not publish the idea until 1974 in the text of his lecture before the American Association for the Advancement of Science Symposium. See *Pensée VII* (1974), p.10 and *KRONOS III.2* (1977), p. 6. The identification of Brahma with Saturn is evidenced by the fact that the god is assigned a celestial sphere (cf. *The Ramayana*, transl. by Ralph Thomas Hotchkin Griffith [a 19th Century "scholar of Indology", who got his B.A. at Queen's College, "and was elected to the vacant Sanskrit Scholarship ... [in

1849... [and he] translated the Vedic scriptures into English... [and] also produced translations of other Sanskrit literature, including a verse version of the Ramayana and the Kumara Sambhava of Kalidasa... [and] held the position of principal at the Benares College in India”], Vol.I [London,1870], Canto XLV, p.208; cf. also *The Kalika Purana*, ch.xxv). A celestial sphere should probably be interpreted as an orbit. In the *Mahabharata* it is further said that “the high-souled Brahma [is] seated in the highest (abode)” (quoted in Shastri, *The Flood Legend*, p.10). *The Brhad-aranyaka Upanishad* places Brahman in the highest “world.” In the cosmology of the *Yogabhasya* of Vyasa, the highest celestial sphere is that of Brahma. In the *Vishnu Purana* the Brahmaloaka, which is the heaven of Brahma, is the seventh and highest heaven. In some sources the Brahmaloaka is referred to as Satyaloka. Cf. Tacitus, *The Histories* V.4: “In the highest orbit and exerting the greatest influence moves the star Saturn.” Many years ago Francis Wilford [a late 18th/early 19th Century “Indologist, Orientalist, fellow member of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and a constant collaborator of its journal – *Asiatic Researches*”,] reported the opinion of certain learned Brahmins who told him that while Shiva shines in the planet Jupiter, “Saturn is directed by Brahma.” (“On Egypt etc. from the Ancient Books of the Hindus,” *Asiatic Researches* III (1799), p.382). Cf. Edward Moor, *The Hindu Pantheon* 1864), p.218. I believe Wilford is the unacknowledged source of Moor’s assertion that Brahma is Saturn.]

[In China the planet Saturn was associated with the palace and with the Emperor. It was called “the planet of the Son of Heaven.” (Se-ma Ts’ien [or Sima Qian or Ssu-ma Ch’ien, “a Chinese historian of the early Han dynasty (206 BC-AD 220)... [who] is considered the father of Chinese historiography for his *Records of the Grand Historian*”, *Les memoires historiques*, ed. by Emmanuel-Édouard Chavannes [late 19th/early 20th Century “French Sinologist [- “the academic study of China primarily through Chinese language, literature, Chinese culture and history”,] and [he was an] expert on Chinese history and religion, and is best known for his translations of major segments of Sima Qian's [which again, is otherwise spelled Se-ma Ts’ien’, etc.], *Records of the Grand Historian*, the work's first ever translation into a Western language... [and] Chavannes was a prolific and influential scholar, and was one of the most accomplished Sinologists of the modern era notwithstanding his relatively early death in 1918 at age 52... [and he was] largely responsible for the development of sinology and Chinese scholarship into a respected field in the realm of French science”], Vol.III, pt.2, p.367).]

...Thus the Scythians were called Umman-Manda by the Chaldeans –
 “People of Manda” –
 and Manda is the name of Saturn...

[Cyril I. Gadd [“Assistant in the Department of Egyptian and Assyrian Antiquities, British Museum”], *The Fall of Nineveh* (London,1926 [- “Sold at the British Museum”, and available at Internet Archive <https://archive.org/details/C.J.GaddTheFallOfNineveh.TheNewlyDiscoveredBabylonianChronicle>]); cf. Donald John Wiseman [OBE, FBA, FSA, a mid to late 20th/early 21st Century “biblical scholar, archaeologist and Assyriologist... [and] Professor of Assyriology at the University of London from 1961 to 1982”], *The Chronicles of the Chaldean Kings in the British Museum* (London,1956).]

[Professor Peter Christian Albrecht Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* [again, *The Cosmology of the Babylonians*], p.114. Cf. *The Brihajatakam of Vahara Mihira* [- “one of the five principal texts written by Varahamihira... [and] one of the five major treatises on Hindu Predictive Astrology”, Vahara Mihira being a 6th Century “Indian astronomer, mathematician, and astrologer”, and “considered to be one of the “Nine Jewels” (Navaratnas) of the court of legendary ruler Yashodharman Vikramaditya of Malwa”], transl. by Swami Vijnanananda [- “born as Hariprasanna Chattopadhyaya in an

upper-class family”, a late 19th/early 20th Century “direct disciple of Ramakrishna” (“Indian mystic and yogi during the 19th-century”), and he “was an engineer and worked as the District Engineer in the erstwhile State of United Provinces, India”, and “was a great scholar of Sanskrit with expertise in religio-philosophical works, astronomy, civil engineering etc.”, who “spent considerable time in Allahabad (Prayag) centre of Ramakrishna Math”, and “became the President of Ramakrishna Mission in 1937”, and it “was under his presidency and direct supervision that the Ramakrishna Temple at Belur Math was constructed and consecrated.”] (Allahabad,1912), p.38, n.2: “Saturn is Manda.”]

...The Phoenicians regarded El-Saturn as their chief deity; Eusebius informs us that El, a name used also in the Bible as a name for God, was the name of Saturn...

[*Praeparatio Evangelica* IV.xvi: “Kronos [El] was deified in the star Saturn.” This statement is quoted by Eusebius from Philo’s redaction of the lost *Phoenician History of Sanchuniathon*. Some classical writers, among them Tacitus (*Histories* V.4) alleged that the Jews were worshippers of Saturn; cf. Augustine’s refutation in *Contra Faustum Manichaeum* [*Against Faustus Manichaeus*] XX.13, [though Tacitus was indisputably correct on this point, e.g., Ezekiel 8].]

...In Persia Saturn was known as Kevan or Kaivan.

[*Dabistan* 31; *Bundahis* [“one of the **Sacred Books of the East**... a monumental 50-volume set of English translations of Asian religious writings, edited by [Friedrich] Max Müller” [a 19th Century “German-born philologist and Orientalist, who lived and studied in Britain for most of his life”, who “was one of the founders of the western academic field of Indian studies and the discipline of comparative religion”, and “Oxford’s first Professor of Comparative Philology”, and who “wrote both scholarly and popular works on the subject of Indology”, “The *Sacred Books of the East*... [being] prepared under his direction”, and published by the Oxford University Press], Edward William West [19th Century “scholarly English engineer, orientalist, and translator of Zoroastrian texts... educated at King’s College London”, who “prepared five volumes of Pahlavi texts (the *Marvels of Zoroastrianism*) for Prof. Max Müller’s monumental Sacred Books of the East series, published from the years 1880 to 1897”]. [[And see] Professor Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, p.114.]

The different names for God in the Bible reflect the process of going through the many ages in which one planet superseded another and was again superseded by the next one in the celestial war. El was the name of Saturn; Adonis of the Syrians, the bewailed deity, was also, like Osiris, the planet Saturn; but in the period of the contest between the two major planets, Jupiter and Saturn, the appellation of the dual gods became Adonai, which means "my lords"; then, with the victory of Jupiter, it came to be applied to him alone. [Origen, *Contra Celsum*, V.41.]

Well, this is one way Satan ‘spins’ the story anyway, and it’s admittedly how some **stubborn, stiffnecked, rebellious, and disobedient** Jews may misuse God’s Names. But of course the plural *Adonai*, like *Elohim*, must really refer to both the Father and Jesus, and evidently to the Holy Spirit too, and implies that **they** are **one** in **purpose**, Jesus and The Spirit being entirely “subordinate to God the Father”, as **we** should **desire** to be to our **Lord, king**, and future **husband**, Jesus. That’s my story, and **desire**, anyway.

Seventeen [and *the seven and twentieth* too]

In the story of the Universal Deluge it is said: "In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, on the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened." [[Genesis 7:11.](#)] Five months later [which again, is not such a "long time"], according to the Book of Genesis, [also] on the seventeenth day [but] of the seventh month, the ark rested upon Ararat. In Egyptian religious belief Osiris was drowned "on the seventeenth day of the month Athyr"...

[Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride*, ch.13; cf. also ch.42.] [The coincidence of the Biblical date of the beginning of the Deluge with the date of Osiris' disappearance, or drowning, was noted by the eighteenth-century scholar Jacob Bryant ["a British scholar and mythographer [a collector and studier of mythology], noted as "the outstanding figure among the mythagogues who flourished in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries", and was a fellow of King's College, Cambridge, where he took his degrees of B.A. (1740) and M.A. (1744)", and later was a "private tutor to the Duke of Marlborough... [and in] 1756 he accompanied the duke, who was master-general of ordnance and commander-in-chief of the forces in Germany, to the Continent [Europe] as private secretary. He was rewarded by a lucrative appointment in the Board of Ordnance, which allowed him time to indulge his literary tastes"... [and on] his death he "left his library to King's College, having previously made some valuable presents from it to the king and the Duke of Marlborough", and he "bequeathed £2000 to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel", [and Jacob was the one] who claimed, in addition, that in both accounts the month was the second after the autumn equinox (*A New System or An Analysis of Ancient Mythology*, second edition [London,1775], p.334). Bryant also believed that "in this history of Osiris we have a memorial of the Patriarch and the Deluge" (*ibid.*, p.334, n.76). The identity of the two dates has been noted by several other authors, among them George St. Clair [?]. See his *Creation Records Discovered in Egypt* (London,1898 [- available on Amazon, etc.]), p.437. On the significance of the date seventeen in Egypt, cf. John Gwyn Griffiths, *Plutarch's De Iside et Osiride*, p.312. Cf. Herbert Eustis Winlock [an early 20th Century "American Egyptologist employed with the [New York] Metropolitan Museum of Art during his entire Egyptological career... [and cenral] to the great era of American museum-sponsored Egyptian excavations, Winlock's work contributed greatly to Egyptology's development [and likely also to its accompanying 'mis-chronologization'], in particular his reconstruction [and surely to some degree 'misconstruction'] of the royal lineage of the Egyptian Middle Kingdom... [and much] of the Met's collection of Egyptian artifacts comes from his archaeological expeditions, particularly his excavations at Thebes, where he worked for many years on the excavations at the funerary temple of Hatshepsut", *the queen of Sheba*], "*Origin of the Ancient Egyptian Calendar*," *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society* 83 (1940), p.456 n.: "Throughout Coptic and Arab times at least, the night of June seventeenth was celebrated as 'the night of the Drop' when it was believed that a miraculous drop fell into the Nile, causing it to rise."]

...The fast for Tammuz, commemorating his descent into the netherworld, began on the seventeenth of the month named for him...

[According to Prof., Dr. Stephen Herbert Langdon, "In Babylonia the god Tammuz was said to have descended to the lower world on the 18th of Tammuz and to have risen on the 28th of Kislew (December)." (*Babylonian Menologies and the Semitic Calendars* [London,1935], p.121). Originally the date had been the seventeenth; but when "the reckoning of time was altered to the extent of making the day begin with sunrise instead

of with the approach of night” (Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr., *The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria* [Boston,1898], p.78), the 18th day of the month began about twelve hours earlier and encroached upon the daylight hours of the seventeenth day, which were now counted as part of the eighteenth. According to rabbinical sources, the end of the 40 days of rain mentioned in the Genesis account came on the 27th of Kislev – the very same day as the 28th of Kislev in the Babylonian reckoning, when Tammuz is said to have risen [- though apparently then the **eight** still had an upper deck/roof ‘obscuring’ their view of the sky, while [Gen 8:14-16](#) seems to imply that their first best chance to see Saturn came **in the second month, on the seven and twentieth day of the month, [when] the earth [was] dried**, this being the **day** they were able to **go forth of the ark**, and, that night, get their first full and unobstructed view of the sky].]

Although the similarity of the Babylonian and Biblical versions of the story of the Deluge was repeatedly stressed, the significance of the number seventeen in the story of Tammuz in relation to the same number in the book of Genesis was not emphasized, or even noticed [!!!].

The feast of Saturnalia began "always on the 17th of December" and with time, in imperial Rome, when it was celebrated for three consecutive days, it began on the fifteenth and con-tinued for two more days, until the seventeenth. [Macrobius, *Saturnalia* l. 10.2f. Cf. Cicero, *Ad Atticum* [or "*Epistulae ad Atticum* (Latin for "Letters to Atticus")... a collection of letters from Roman politician and orator Marcus Tullius Cicero [bio, p.257] to his close friend Titus Pomponius Atticus... [and the] letters in this collection, together with Cicero's other letters, are considered the most reliable sources of information for the period leading up to the fall of the Roman Republic"] 13.52.1.]

The connection between the number seventeen and the Deluge is thus not confined to the Biblical, Babylonian, and Egyptian sources – we meet it also in Roman beliefs and practices. The significance of the number seventeen in the mystery plays related to Osiris’ drowning and in the festivities of Saturnalia is an indication that these memorials were related to the Deluge.

Of course these **days** most literally best correspond to the **day** that the **eight** boarded (the 17th) and to the **day** they disembarked (the 27th) the Ark, the time in between being when they were **shut...in** by God inside the Ark, it evidently really being the upper deck and roof of the Ark, not so much the **heavens** and its **gods**, that are responsible for this ‘perceived disappearance’ and ‘reappearance’ of the **‘planet’ god** Saturn. And his ‘unperceived activities’ that were later told to ‘his’ followers are surely as ‘make-believe’ as they are designed to **deceive** them, and this is surely the case for all the ‘make-believe’ stories about all the so-called **‘planet’ gods**.

Festivals of Light

The Deluge and the seven days of brilliant light immediately preceding it were a universal experience [but only possibly passed on by the **eight**], and they left indelible memories [in these **eight** people, though evidently not all of them thereafter offered entirely **faithful...testimony** about it]. Many of the religious rites and observances of all creeds go back to these events of the past in which the celestial gods Saturn and Jupiter were the main participants.

Among the most ancient of all such observances were festivals of light of seven days' duration, held in honor of Saturn. The "seven days of light" just before the Deluge overwhelmed the Earth are recreated in these feasts.

Herodotos [or Herodotus] describes a nocturnal light festival held each year at Sais in commemoration of Osiris' death and resurrection. It was called the Feast of Lamps:

There is one night on which the inhabitants all burn a multitude of lights in the open air round their houses... These burn the whole night... The Egyptians who are absent from the festival observe the night of the sacrifice, no less than the rest, by a general lighting of lamps; so that the illumination is not confined to the city of Sais, but extends over the whole of Egypt.

[*Herodotos* II, 62, transl. by George Rawlinson ["...the younger brother of Sir Henry Rawlinson... his degree [taken] at the University of Oxford (from Trinity College) in 1838... [and he was] elected to a fellowship at Exeter College, Oxford, in 1840, of which from 1842 to 1846 he was fellow and tutor... ordained in 1841... Bampton lecturer in 1859, and... Camden Professor of Ancient History from 1861 to 1889... In 1872 he was appointed canon of Canterbury, and after 1888 he was rector of All Hallows, Lombard Street... [and in] 1873, he was appointed proctor in Convocation for the Chapter of Canterbury... His chief publications... [included a "collaboration" entitled] the *History of Herodotus*, 1858-60... [and independent works including] *The Origin of Nations*, 1877; *History of Ancient Egypt*, 1881; *Egypt and Babylon*, 1885; *History of Phoenicia*, 1889; *Parthia*, 1893"). Cf. Sir James George Frazer, *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*, second edition (London, 1907), pp. 300 ff.]

All Hallows, Lombard Street, by-the-way, was "a parish church in the City of London" that was "demolished in 1937", but "its tower was reconstructed at Twickenham as part of the new church of All Hallows, which also received its bells and complete interior fittings", and it's a place that...

...John Wesley preached at Evensong [- "a liturgy in use in the Anglican tradition celebrated in the late afternoon or evening"]. He recalled an earlier incident where, just as he was about to preach, he realised he had forgotten his sermon, and confided this to the attendant vergier [or "usher"].

The reply came "What cannot you trust God for a sermon?" and upon this rebuke I went into the pulpit and preached with much freedom and acceptance [and that is, *in the Spirit*]; and from that time I have never taken a manuscript with me.

[The earliest of the festivals of this type that we know of was the yearly seven-day-long celebration commemorating the inauguration of the temple of Ningirsu in Babylonia in the time of Gudea (before ca. 2000 B.C.). For this and other similar festivals, see Photeine Bourboulis [?], *Ancient Festivals of "Saturnalia" Type* (Salonica, 1964 [- available on Amazon]). Ningirsu was "he who changed dark-ness into light," the same as Ninib, or Saturn (Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr., *Die Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens*, ch. IV, pp. 56 ff). In Athens the feast in honor of Saturn was called the *Kronia*. See H. W. Parke [again, ?], *Festivals of the Athenians* (London, 1977 [- available at https://www.goodreads.com/author/list/734949.H_W_Parke]), pp. 29-30. It would

appear that the main idea behind the Saturnalia-type festivals, so widespread in antiquity, was a re-enactment of the conditions that existed during the Golden Age when Saturn reigned. The celebration of the Roman Saturnalia, which, according to Macrobius, pre-dates the founding of Rome by many centuries (VII.??), was marked by a reversal of social relations, the release of the statue of Saturn that stood in the Forum from its bonds (Macrobius, *Saturnalia* VII.??), the crowning of a mock-king (apparently representing Saturn) whose every command had to be strictly obeyed (Tacitus, *Annales* 13,15; Epictetus [late 1st/early 2nd Century “Greek Stoic philosopher... [who] was born a slave at Hierapolis, Phrygia (present day Pamukkale, Turkey) and lived in Rome until his banishment, when he went to Nicopolis in northwestern Greece for the rest of his life... [and his] teachings were written down and published by his pupil Arrian in his *Discourses* [4 out of 8 of which are “preserved”] and *Enchiridion* [“or *Handbook*”]... [and he] taught that [“Stoic”] philosophy is a way of life and not just a theoretical discipline... [and to him], all external events are beyond our control... [such that] we should accept calmly and dispassionately whatever happens... [yet] individuals are responsible for their own actions, which they can examine and control through rigorous self-discipline”, *D*, I.25.8; Lucian, *Saturn*, 2.4.9), and who was later sacrificed on the altar of Saturn. Some details of such a sacrifice are given in *Acta Sancti Dasii*, ed. by Dr. Franz Cumont in *Analecta Bollandiana* [“a journal of critical hagiography [- an hagiography being “a biography of a saint or an ecclesiastical leader”], edited and published since 1882 by the Société des Bollandistes in Brussels”, “**Bollandists**” being “an association of scholars, philologists, and historians (originally all Jesuits, but now including non-Jesuits)”, whose “journal was conceived [and ‘disseminated’] as a continuous updating of the prestigious *Acta Sanctorum* [*Saints*] series”, “an encyclopedic text in 68 folio volumes of documents examining the lives of Christian saints... which is organised according to each saint's feast day”, and evidently full of ‘Catholic propaganda’, “as well as an entirely new instrument devoted to hagiographical [propaganda] research” - <http://www.bollandistes.org/publications-analecta.php?pg=journal&n=111>] XVI (1897). See also Dr. Franz Cumont, “*Le roi des saturnales*,” [“*The King of the Saturnals*”] *Revue de Philologie* XXI (1897), pp.143-153. [‘Pompous-Ass’] Porphyry reports the existence of a similar festival on Rhodes during which a man was sacrificed to Kronos (*De Abstinencia* [*On Abstinence*] II.54). A similar Persian festival was the *Sacaia* (Dio Chrysostom [“a Greek orator, writer, [“Sophist”] philosopher and historian of the Roman Empire in the 1st century... [from whom 80] of his *Discourses* (or *Orations*; Λόγοι) are extant... [and his] surname *Chrysostom* comes from the Greek *chrysostomos*... which literally means “golden-mouthed”... [but as has happened he] should not be confused with the Roman historian Cassius Dio, nor with the 4th-century bishop John Chrysostom of Constantinople”), *Orationes* IV.66). A possible parallel in Mexico may be the festival Atemoztli, “Coming Down of the Waters,” described in a manuscript reproduced in Kingsborough, the *Antiquities of Mexico* [“a compilation of facsimile reproductions of Mesoamerican literature such as Maya codices, Mixtec codices, and Aztec codices as well as historical accounts and explorers' descriptions of archaeological ruins... assembled and published by Edward King, Lord [or Viscount] Kingsborough [“an Irish antiquarian who sought to prove that the indigenous peoples of the Americas were a Lost Tribe of Israel”], in the early decades of the 19th century... [and while] much of the material pertains to pre-Columbian cultures, there are also documents relevant to studies of the Spanish conquest of the Aztec Empire”, it being “produced to make copies of rare manuscripts in European collections available for study by scholars”]: “On the XXI of December they celebrate the festival of that god who, they say, was the one that uncovered the earth [- from its *water canopy*?] when it was annihilated by the waters of the Deluge.”]

In Rome the feast of light was named Saturnalia. According to tradition the Saturnalia had been established in honor of Saturn when, all of a

sudden, after a lengthy and prosperous reign, "Saturn suddenly disappeared."

[Macrobius, *Saturnalia*, 1.7.24: *subito non comparuisset* ['uncertain']. It was then, according to Macrobius, that Italy came to be called Saturnia in honor of the planet. Cf. Dionysius of Halicarnassus, *Antiquitates Romanorum* [*Roman Antiquities*] 1.6; Ovid, *Fasti*, VI.1.31.]

The lifespan of Dionysius of Halicarnassus, ("an ancient greek city...in Turkey"), was from...

...c. 60 BC - after 7 BC... [and he] was a Greek historian and teacher of ["Classical"] rhetoric, who flourished during the reign of Caesar Augustus. His literary style was Atticistic [read, "Athenian" or "Grecian"] - imitating Classical Attic [or "Athenian"] Greek in its prime... Dionysius'... promotion of paideia within education, from true knowledge of Classical sources, endured for centuries in a form integral to the identity of the Greek elite...

Atticism,

...(meaning "favouring Attica", the region that includes Athens in Greece) was a ["Classical"] rhetorical movement that began in the first quarter of the 1st century BC; it may also refer to the wordings and phrasings typical of this movement, in contrast with various contemporary forms of Koine Greek (both literary and vulgar), which continued to evolve in directions guided by the common ["Classical"] usages of Hellenistic Greek...

Atticism was portrayed as a return to Classical [**'planet-god' worshipping**] methods after [or in response to] what was perceived as the pretentious style of the Hellenistic, Sophist [read, '**self-idolatry**'] rhetoric, and called for a return to the approaches of the [**'planet-god' worshipping**] Attic orators [and evidently a "return" to '**planet god' worship** too]...

And the term *paideia*...

...also spelled **paedeia**... referred to the rearing and education of the ideal member of the polis. It incorporated both practical, subject-based schooling and a focus upon the socialization of individuals within the aristocratic order of the polis. The practical aspects of this education included subjects subsumed under the modern designation of the liberal arts (rhetoric, grammar and philosophy are examples), as well as scientific disciplines like arithmetic and medicine. An ideal and successful member of the polis would possess intellectual, [**'planet-god' worshipping**] moral and physical refinement, so training in gymnastics and wrestling was valued for its effect on the body alongside the [**'planet-god' worshipping**] moral education which the Greeks believed was imparted by the study of [their] music, poetry and philosophy. This approach to the rearing of a well-rounded Greek male was common to the Greek-speaking world, with the exception of Sparta where a rigid and

militaristic form of education known as the *agoge* was practiced [and except that 'behind the scenes' it was really the conspiracies of '**self-idolator, beastismist, elitist insiders**' that dominated].

And the certainly Late Antiquity Platonist, and evidently Sophist...

Macrobius wrote that in celebrating the Saturnalia the Romans used to "honor the altars of Saturn with lighted candles... sending round wax tapers [or "thin candle[s]"] during the Saturnalia."...

[(*Saturnalia*, I. 7.31-32, transl. by Percival Vaughan Davies [again, ? - but available at https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/7443270.Percival_Vaughan_Davies), 1969). Macrobius noted also the opinion of those who "think that the practice is derived simply from the fact that it was in the reign of Saturn that we made our way, as though to the light, from a rude and gloomy existence [under '**planet-god**' worship] to a knowledge of the liberal arts [and '**self idolatry**'.]" [Cf. above, "*Tammuz and Osiris*," n.9 on the Egyptian light festival in honor of Osiris.]

...In his time the festival was celebrated for three consecutive days but, Macrobius wrote,

And yet in fact among the men of old there were some who supposed that the Saturnalia lasted for seven days... for Novius [which would be, "**Quintus Novius** (*fl.* 30 BC)", where "**Floruit** ...abbreviated **fl.** [or **f.**] (or...**flor.**), Latin for 'he/she flourished', denotes a date or period during which a person was known to have been alive or active", Novius being a "Roman dramatist, composer of *Atellanae Fabulae* (Atellan Fables)... [whose] efforts seem to have been directed towards giving literary dignity to this form of drama without diminishing their popular character and traditional cast of characters"... [and who] says: 'Long-awaited they come, the seven days of Saturnalia'; and Lucius Mummius Achaicus too [- the "2nd century BC... Roman statesman and general... [who] received the agnomen **Achaicus** for his victories while consul in 146 BC, when he conquered the Achaean League and destroyed the ancient city of Corinth, in the process bringing all of Greece under Roman control"... says: 'Of the many excellent institutions of our ancestors, this is the best - that they made the seven days of the Saturnalia begin when the weather is coldest.' [*Saturnalia* X.]

Hannukah and Christmas are both feasts of light and, like the Saturnalia, both can be traced to the days of the Universal Deluge. The Hebrew tradition that Hanukkah was established to commemorate the "miracle with the oil" that was found undepleted and sufficed for seven days, is a poor rationalization. A better ground for a re-establishment of a holiday, so similar to the Saturnalia, in Judea, was in the fact that in the middle of the second century before the present era Rome conquered Greece, and about the same time in the rebellion of the Hashmanaim (better known by the name of one of the sons, Judah Maccabi) against Hellenistic rule, the people of Palestine were drawing near the Roman world with its usages. It appears that the Romans fomented [or facilitated] the revolt in the Hellenized provinces at the time of their conquest of Greece. Thus the feast of Hanukkah seems to be an adaptation of the Roman Saturnalia. [Similarly, the way of praying with covered head appears to be a taking over of the Roman usage - the Greek custom was to pray with an uncovered head.]

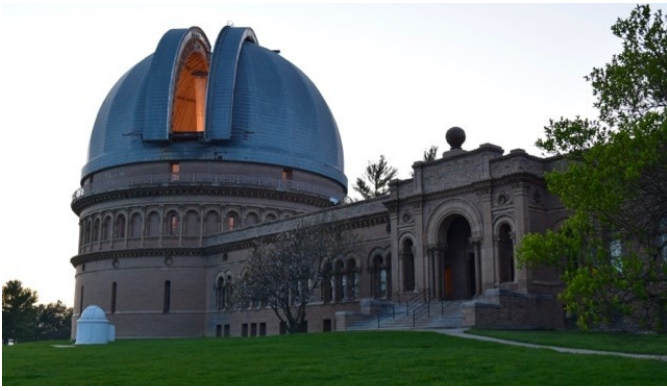
The observation of this festival was later taken over by the festival of Christmas, which was originally observed for seven days, from the 25th of December until the first of the New Year.

Saturn and Jupiter

The history of this pair, the ancient Kronos and Zeus, or Saturn and Jupiter, as reflected in many traditions all around the world, tells a story that has nothing in it resembling the sedate and uneventful circling of these bodies on their orbits that modern astronomy asserts as a fact.

Saturn and Jupiter are very much like the sun; were they not planets, they would be considered stars, like our sun...

[In *Worlds In Collision* Velikovsky wrote of events that may theoretically take place in the future: "Some *dark star*, like Jupiter or Saturn, may be in the path of the sun, and may be attracted to the solar system and cause havoc in it" (Emphasis added). While in 1950 both planets were assumed by astronomers to be covered by thick layers of ice, they are now known to be star-like in their composition and thermal properties. In the case of Saturn, Sir Harold Spencer Jones [KBE, FRS, FRSE, PRAS, 20th Century "English astronomer... renowned as an authority on positional astronomy and served as Astronomer Royal for 23 years"], (*Life on Other Worlds* [Macmillan Company: New York, 1940], ch.6) argued that Saturn must be coated with water ice or frozen ammonia. Spencer-Jones' book was published in the same year in which Velikovsky drew very different conclusions about Saturn's thermal history and structure. The astronomers' conjecture was based on a simple calculation of the amount of heat reaching the planet: Saturn, being almost ten times farther away from the Sun than the Earth had to have a mean temperature in the neighborhood of -155 degrees Celsius. The reasons why Velikovsky concluded that Saturn's temperature must be considerably higher than the accepted estimate were, first, in "the residual heat of the catastrophe in which Saturn was derailed from its orbit" and, second, "the radioactivity that resulted from the catastrophe must still be pronounced on Saturn." (From the unpublished manuscript, *The Test of Time*). On top of all this, "based on its past history, Saturn can be regarded as a star and may have some of the mechanism that makes our sun burn with intense light."

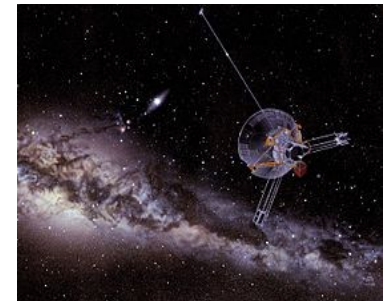


In 1966 Kellerman [?] described his observations and measurements at a wavelength of 21.3 cm, which showed a temperature of 90 degrees Fahrenheit for the inner atmospheric layers (*Icarus*). Revised textbooks, taking account of the findings, began to speak of "room temperature" ["between 15 degrees Celsius (59 degrees Fahrenheit) and 25 °C (77 °F)"] on Saturn, recorded in the 21-centi-meter

band. (E.g., Fred Lawrence Whipple [20th Century "American astronomer... PhD in Astronomy in 1931", UC Berkeley, "who worked at the Harvard College Observatory for over 70 years... [and amongst] his achievements, he discovered some asteroids and comets, [and] came up with the "dirty snowball" cometary hypothesis"], *Earth, Moon and Planets* third revised edition [Cambridge, Mass., 1968], p.187). By 1972 measurements at radio wavelengths of 50 and 100 centimeters found "unusually high" temperatures - about 240 degrees F. and 520 degrees F. respectively. "Thus it appears that Saturn, like Jupiter, is not the entirely frozen wasteland it was once thought to be.", (D. McNally [?], "Are the Jovian

Planets 'Failed' Stars?", *Nature* 244 [August,1973], pp.424-426). Soon it was realized that Saturn must have an internal energy source, and is in fact more like a star than like a planet, though it is [now] not considered sufficiently massive to function as a true star (*Science News* 101 [1972], p.312). The article compares the view expressed only a few years previously by [atheist] Carl Sagan that Saturn could not be an abode of life because of atmospheric temperatures several hundred degrees below zero Fahrenheit. Cf. *Intelligent Life in the Universe*. Measurements in the far-infrared and submillimeter ranges, published in 1977, indicate that the internal energy source on Saturn lies "within the range of 2.3 to 3.2 times the absorbed solar flux." (Robert F. Loewenstein ["Center for Astrophysical Research in Antarctica" (CARA) projects, *Yerkes Observatory*, (pictures left side, p.435), Williams Bay, Wisconsin, "operated by the University of Chicago Department of Astronomy and Astrophysics"] et al. [8 other authors], "*Far Infrared and Submillimeter Observations of the Planets*," *Icarus* 31 [1977], p.315. Cf. *The Astro-physical Journal* 157, pp.169 ff.). In other words, Saturn gives off up to about three times the amount of energy it receives from the Sun.

At the beginning of 1980 analysis of measurements taken by *Pioneer 11* [picture, right, p.435] during its flight past Saturn showed that the interior of the planet has a temperature exceeding 10,000 degrees Kelvin, which is considerably hotter than the surface of the Sun (less than 6,000 degrees Kelvin).]



...Jupiter is nearly 330 times more massive than the Earth, and Saturn 80 times. Both planets are covered with gases which are in constant motion, like the gaseous atmosphere of the sun. The sun has nine satellites [counting Pluto] and numerous asteroids and comets; Jupiter has at least fourteen satellites [or now "69 known natural satellites... 53 less than 10 kilometres in diameter... discovered since 1975"] and several asteroids and comets [- actually there are "currently over 400 Jupiter-family comets known"]. Saturn has ten known satellites [or now "62 known moons, 53 of which have formal names... [and] there is evidence of dozens to hundreds of moonlets with diameters of 40-500 meters in Saturn's rings"]; and four or five comets constitute the Saturnian family (though

these comets do not circle around Saturn itself, they are commonly regarded as related to the orbit of Saturn).

Were Jupiter and Saturn free from the bonds of the sun, they could be considered as stars or suns. Were two such stars set in space close to one another, they would constitute a double-star system, both stars circling around a common focus.

As told, the picture that emerges from comparative folklore and mythology presents Saturn and Jupiter in vigorous interactions. Suppose that these two bodies approached each other rather closely at one time, causing violent perturbations and huge tidal effects in each other's atmospheres. Their mutual disturbance led to a stellar explosion, or nova. As we have seen, a nova is thought to result from an instability in a star, generated by a sudden influx of matter, usually derived from its companion in a binary system. If what we call today Jupiter and Saturn are the products of such a sequence of events, their appearance and respective masses must formerly have been quite different. [A hypothesis that the protoplanetary masses of Jupiter and Saturn were nearly the same was advanced by G. Kuiper. See *Sky and Telescope*, (March,1959), p.259.]

A scenario such as this would explain the prominence of Saturn prior to its cataclysmic disruption and dismemberment - it must have been a larger body than it is now, possibly of the volume of Jupiter. Interestingly, for certain reasons G. Kuiper assumed that Saturn originally was of a mass equal to that of Jupiter. [*Sky and Telescope* (March,1959), p.259.] At some point during a close approach to Jupiter, Saturn became unstable; and, as a result of the influx of extraneous material, it exploded, flaring as a nova which, after subsiding, left a remnant that the ancients still recognized as Saturn, even though it was but a fraction of the celestial body of earlier days. In Saturn's explosion much of the matter absorbed earlier was thrown off into space. Saturn was greatly reduced in size and removed [or 'blown'] to a distant orbit - the binary system was broken up [- though like now Saturn has likely always somehow been orbiting the Sun -] and Jupiter took over the dominant position in the sky. The ancient Greeks saw this as Zeus, victorious over his father, forcing him to release the children he earlier had swallowed and banishing him to the outer reaches of the sky. In Egyptian eyes it was Horus-Jupiter assuming royal power, leaving Osiris to reign over the kingdom of the dead.

If the descriptions of Saturn as a "sun" mean anything, Saturn must have been visible, in the time before its explosion, as a large disk. If this was the case the increased distance between the Earth and Saturn could have been the result of the removal of the Earth from its place or [and much more likely] of Saturn from its place, or [but not likely] both. Saturn could be removed only by [or most significantly by interactions with] the planet Jupiter [especially if in alignment with the Sun, and most likely by the force of its own

'inward directional explosion' which would have 'propelled it outward'], [Jupiter 'naturally' being] the sole member of the planetary family [that as a result of this 'explosion' appeared to become] more powerful than Saturn. And indeed, the myth says that Saturn was removed by Jupiter [- though the resulting 'dimming' and 'shrinking' of Saturn should account for at least some of this 'apparent removal'].

The Rings of Saturn

One instance of the Saturn myth can be verified with the help of a small telescope: Saturn is in chains. Instead of solving anything, this fact presents a new problem that demands a solution. How did the ancient Greeks and Romans know that Saturn is encircled by rings?

Of course again, **we** can deduce that the "rings" must have formed before the *filaments* and/or 'proton spray' from Nova Saturn reached Earth, and that these evidently quickly forming "rings" were temporarily visible with the aid of the *water canopy lens*, at least until the 'debris' from Nova Saturn finally started reaching Earth, and helped Mercury bring down the *water canopy*.

[The rings of Saturn are referred to by Aeschylus ["an ancient Greek tragedian" - "Greek tragedy" being "sometimes called **Attic tragedy**... widely believed to be an extension of the ancient rites carried out in honor of Dionysus, and it heavily influenced the theatre of Ancient Rome and the Renaissance"... [and he] "is often described as the father of tragedy", and among the "most acclaimed Greek tragedians", including Sophocles and Euripides... [and academics'] knowledge of the genre begins with his work, and understanding of earlier tragedies is largely based on inferences from his surviving plays... [and according] to Aristotle, he expanded the number of characters in theater allowing conflict among them; characters previously had interacted only with the chorus"], *Eumenides* 641: "He [Zeus] himself cast into bonds his aged father Cronus"; cf. Lucian, *Astrology*, 21: "Moreover, it is not true, neither, that Saturn is in chains." Neoplatonists like Proclus (*In Timaeo*, tr. by André-Jean Festugiere [20th Century "French Dominican friar, philosopher, philologist, and expert on Neoplatonism, and in particular the works of Proclus. He is also notable for his translation of the works attributed to Hermes Trismegistus", who is "the purported author of the *Hermetic Corpus*", and who some say was the **god** Hermes 'himself', these being "a series of sacred texts that are the basis of Hermeticism", which is "a religious, philosophical, and esoteric tradition ["esoteric" meaning "belonging to the select few" or "intended to be revealed only to the initiates of a group", and in this case, a "tradition"] based primarily upon writings attributed to Hermes Trismegistus ("Thrice Great")", where this title also seems to be "a representation of the syncretic combination of the Greek god Hermes and the Egyptian god Thoth". "These writings have greatly influenced the Western esoteric tradition [read, '**elitist, insider, self-idolatry beastismists**' tradition or **Western mystery tradition**] and were considered to be of great importance [to '**elitist, insider, self-idolator beastismists**'] during both the Renaissance and the Reformation. The tradition claims descent from a *prisca theologia* [ancient theology], a doctrine that affirms the existence of a ["perennialist" or] single, true theology that is present in all religions and that was given by God [or really Satan] to man in antiquity", and evidently originally in relation to the *planet* Mercury, "and passed through a series of prophets, which included Zoroaster and Plato.", and by other accounts Abraham and Moses too, and this "tradition" is otherwise considered to be a "hidden" and/or "enchanted" world view, and/or "rejected knowledge" that "is accepted neither by the scientific establishment nor by orthodox religious authorities"], Vol.III, p.255 and n.4); and *in* Plato (*Cratylus* [or Cratylus] 209.3 ff), and Porphyry [or 'Mr. Pompous-Ass'], (*De Antro Nympharum* [*The Cave of Nymphs*] 67.21ff.) [all] sought a philosophical or mystical

meaning in the tradition. Cf. also Clemens Alexandrinus [or **Titus Flavius Clemens** – not the consul], *Homilia*, VI.xiii in *Patrologiae Cursus Completus, Series Graeca* [*Complete Course in the Church Fathers, Greek Series*], Jacques Paul Migne ed. [19th Century “French priest who published inexpensive and widely distributed editions of theological works, encyclopedias, and the texts of the Church Fathers [and in this last genre to promote “patrology” or “patristics”, which is “the branch of theology dealing with the teachings of the church fathers”], with the [overall] goal of providing a universal library for the Catholic priesthood”], Vol.II.207f; DioChrysostom, *Fourteenth Discourse* 21ff: “And yet the King of the Gods, the first and eldest one, is in bonds, they say, if we are to believe Hesiod and Homer and the other wise men who tell this tale about Cronus.” Cf. Hesiod [who by now I should have bio’ed, but eventually will], *Works and Days*, 169ff. Augustine, refuting those who asserted that the Jewish Sabbath was held in honor of Saturn, wrote: “*ita patres nostri longe fuerunt a Saturniacis catenis, quamvis pro tempore propheetiae sabbati vacationem observaverint.*” [“For our fathers so far have been since the Golden Age of Saturn with fetters of brass, although the exemption shall continue to observe the sabbath, for the time prophesied.”] (*Contra Faustum Manichaeum* XX.13. in Jacques Paul Migne ed., *Patrologiae Cursus Completus, Series Latina* [*English Series*], Vol.XLII, p.379). Cf. also Arnobius [of Sicca and of Late Antiquity], (*Contra Gentes* [*Against Gentiles*] IV. 24 in *ibid.*, Vol.III): “*Numquid paricidii causa vincitum esse Saturnum, et suis diebus tantum vinculorum ponderibus revelari?*” [“Is it to be imprisoned for the cause of the murdering of Saturn, and the weight of the shackles of their own times, only to be revealed?”] and Marcus Minucius Felix [“died c. 250 AD in Rome... one of the earliest of the Latin [“Stoic”] apologists for Christianity... of Berber [“or Barbary”, and that is, of “North African”] origin... [though nothing] is known of his personal history, and even the date at which he wrote can be only approximately ascertained as between AD 150 and 270... [and] Jerome's *De Viris Illustribus* ["On Illustrious/Famous Men"] #58 speaks of him as "*Romae insignis causidicus*" [one of Rome's notable solicitors], but in that he is probably only improving on the expression of Lactantius [“advisor to the first Christian Roman emperor, Constantine I, guiding his religious policy as it developed, and a tutor to his son”,] who speaks of him as “non ignobilis inter causidicos loci” [not unknown among solicitors] ...[and Marcus, possibly **our brother**,] is now exclusively known by his *Octavius*, a dialogue on Christianity between the pagan Caecilius Natalis and the Christian Octavius Januarius... [written] for educated non-Christians, the arguments... [being] borrowed chiefly from Cicero, especially his *De natura deorum* (“Concerning the Nature of the Gods”), and Christian material, mainly from the Greek Apologists”], (*Octavius* XXI, in *ibid.*, Vol. III, col.304): “*Quid formae ipsae et habitus?... Saturnus compeditis.*” [“What is the very form and appearance?... Saturn’s feet shackled.”] An epigram of Marcus Valerius Martial [a late 1st/early 2nd Century “Roman poet from Hispania (modern Spain) best known for his twelve books of *Epigrams* [an “epigram” being “a brief, interesting, memorable, and sometimes surprising or satirical statement”], published in Rome between AD 86 and 103, during the reigns of the emperors Domitian, Nerva and Trajan. In these short, witty poems he cheerfully satirises city life and the scandalous activities of his acquaintances, and romanticises his provincial upbringing ... [and he] wrote a total of 1,561 epigrams, of which 1,235 are in elegiac couplets”, a “couplet” being “two successive lines that rhyme and have the same metre”] (III.29) refers to the bonds of Saturn, comparing them to rings: “*Has cum gemina compede dedicat catenas, Saturne, tibi Zoilus anulos priores.*”, (“These chains with their double fetter Zoilus dedicates to you, Saturnus. They were formerly his rings.”) – transl. by W. Kerr [?] (London,1919). The shrines to Saturn in Roman Africa portrayed the god with his head surrounded “by a veil that falls on each of his shoulders,” in a way reminiscent of the planet’s rings. See Jules François Toutain [mid 19th to mid 20th Century “French archeologist... [who] studied at the Lycée Charlemagne” in Paris, the building constructed “many centuries before it became a lycée”, having “originally served as the home of the Order of the Jesuits”, while the “lycée itself was founded by Napoléon Bonaparte and celebrated its bicentennial in 2004”, a *lycée* being

“the second, and last, stage of secondary education”, and in this case the school “offers two-year courses preparing students for entry to the *Grandes écoles*”, (“higher education establishments”), this school being “directly connected to the Collège Charlemagne (formerly known as *le petit lycée*) which is located directly across from it, on the Rue [or Avenue] Charlemagne”, however this ‘highly educated’ Frenchmen instead entered “the *École Normale Supérieure* [ENS] in 1885”, ENS being “a French *grande école* (higher education establishment outside the framework of the public university system), and a constituent college of PSL [Paris Sciences & Lettres] Research University, a collegiate university based in the Latin Quarter of Paris... [it being] initially conceived during the French Revolution and was intended to provide the Republic with a new body of professors, trained in the critical spirit and secular values of the Enlightenment... [and] has since developed into an institution which has become a platform for a select few of France's students to pursue careers in government and academia”, and as “professor at the *École Normale Supérieure*, Toutain was president of the Academy of Sciences in Semur and director of excavations in Alésia [in “eastern France”] until 1958”, and “his research was on the history of Roman Africa, in particular on the area of modern-day Tunisia [- part of Berber World or Barbary - in green on map, p.438], and on the history of religions in the Roman Empire, in which he opposed the theories of [Dr. Franz] Cumont”, *De Saturni Dei in Africa Romana Cultu* [*On Saturday African Roman Worship*] (Paris, 1894), p.42 and figs. 1-2 [*each minor*].]



But I'm not sure whose side I should 'jump on' here, because...

...Cumont's international credentials were brilliant, but his public circumspection was not enough. In 1910, Baron Edouard Descamps, the Catholic Minister of Sciences and Arts at the University of Ghent [UGent], refused to approve the faculty's unanimous recommendation of Cumont for the chair in Roman History, Cumont having been a professor there since 1906. [UGent is “a public research university located in Ghent, Belgium... established in 1817 by King William I of the Netherlands”, earlier the “Sovereign Prince of the United Netherlands”, who “proclaimed himself King of the Netherlands” in 1815, and later that year “became also the Grand Duke [essentially the ‘King’] of Luxembourg” too, but after “the Belgian revolution of 1830, the newly formed Belgian state” – broken off from the Netherlands – “began to administer the university”, and in “1930, it became the first Dutch-speaking university in Belgium, whereas French had previously been the standard academic language”, and in “1991, the university was granted major autonomy and changed its name accordingly from *State University of Ghent*... to its current designation”, and it now “supports... the University Hospital... one of the largest hospitals in Belgium”, UGent being “one of the largest Flemish universities”, (Flemish being “Dutch speaking Northern Belgians”), and one that “considers itself a *pluralist* university in a special sense, i.e., not connected to any particular religion or ideology”, and one that “consistently rates among the top universities not only in Belgium but also throughout the world”.] There was a vigorous press campaign and student agitation in Cumont's favor, because the refusal was seen as blatant [evidently Catholic] religious interference in the University's life. When another candidate was named, in 1912, Cumont resigned his positions at the University and at the Royal Museum in Brussels, left Belgium and henceforth divided his time between Paris and Rome... He contributed to many standard encyclopedias, published voluminously, and in 1922,

under stressful political conditions, conducted digs on the shore of the Euphrates at the previously unknown site of Dura-Europos [[“located near the village of Salhiyé, in today's Syria”](#)]; he published his research there in 1926. He was a member of most of the European academies. In 1936 Franz Cumont was awarded the Francqui Prize [[- “a prestigious Belgian scholarly and scientific prize”](#)] on Human Sciences. In 1947 [[nevertheless, and I mean despite the previous ‘Catholic opposition’ he had apparently experienced](#)], Franz Cumont donated his library and papers to the Academia Belgica in Rome...

...an institute whose “goal” ...

...is to promote the cultural, scientific and artistic cooperation between Italy and Belgium... [this being] also the seat of the Belgian Historical Institute in Rome [[which “supports historical research”](#)] and of the foundation princess Marie-José [[of Belgium, she being, along with her husband](#)] ...the Italian crown prince Umberto... [[the co-founders of these institutions, who purportedly make such “research”](#)] ...accessible to researchers.

But neither do I know how Professor Toutain “opposed the theories of Franz Cumont”. So, and at least for now, that’s how we’ll have to leave it.

But I also don’t want to neglect asking the question, (and one making it a good place to take a break if your brain’s not fresh from sleep), why did Belgium ‘break away’ from the Netherlands in 1830? I’m guessing the real reason was that it was another case of Protestantism v. Catholicism, and evidently predominantly and more specifically Arminianism v. Catholicism. Remember that “Dutch Arminianism” was “originally articulated” and ‘state endorsed’ in the Netherlands in the early 17th Century, but evidently ultimately rejected by a majority of Catholics in her southernmost region in the 19th Century, and that would be the region bordering Catholic France, present day Belgium. And evidently Luxembourg ‘broke away’ too for the same reason.

And this is in the timeframe of the 19th Century reign of William I of the Netherlands, “Prince of Orange”, a title “originally associated with the sovereign Principality of Orange, in what is now southern France”, and this House of Bourbon-Stuart (*tbb* later) connected lineage ‘originating’ less than directly with an earlier, 16th Century, William I, Prince of Orange, and that is, William the Silent, who ultimately became “the main leader of the Dutch Revolt against the Spanish Habsburgs that set off the Eighty Years' War”. This earlier William was “raised a Lutheran”, and ‘educated’ as a Catholic from a young age, but chose Calvinism in later life. He was...

A wealthy nobleman... [who] originally served the Habsburgs as a member of the court of Margaret of Parma, governor [*stadtholder*] of the Spanish Netherlands. Unhappy with the centralisation of political power away from the local estates and with the Spanish persecution of Dutch Protestants, William joined the Dutch uprising and turned against his former masters. The most influential and politically capable of the rebels, he led the Dutch to several successes in the fight against the Spanish. Declared an outlaw by the Spanish king [Philip II] in 1580, he was assassinated... in 1584...

...[William's] family was religiously devout and William was raised a Lutheran... [However in]

1544, William's agnatic [male lineage] first cousin, René of Châlon, Prince of Orange, died childless. In his testament [or will], René of Chalon named William the heir to all his estates and titles, including that of ['Holy Blood'] Prince of Orange, on the condition that he receive a Roman Catholic education. William's father acquiesced to this condition on behalf of his 11-year-old son, and this was the founding of the house of Orange-Nassau [- Nassau being another 'Holy Blood-ruled' province and region "located in what is now the German states of Rhineland-Palatinate and Hesse", the southern and eastern neighbors of NRW]. Besides the principality of Orange (located today in ["the south of"] France ["on the west bank of the river Rhône, north of the city of Avignon"]) and significant lands in Germany, William also inherited vast estates in the Low Countries (present-day Netherlands and Belgium) from his cousin [satellite photo, p.440]...

And I found a more specific definition of "Low Countries": "consisting especially of the Netherlands and Belgium, and the low-lying delta of the Rhine, Meuse, Scheldt, and Ems rivers where much of the land is at or below sea level", and apparently implying that it sometimes also includes other relatively low regions, "especially" in Northern Germany, Denmark and Luxembourg. See satellite photos p.440-41.





Pop Quiz: 1) On the second map identify Denmark, Germany, The Netherlands, Belgium, Luxembourg, France, Switzerland, Austria and The Czech Republic. 2) Trace the High Rhine River (*Hochrhein*) along the border of Austria and Switzerland; then trace the Upper Rhine River (*Oberrhein*) along the border of Switzerland and Germany, and along the border of Germany and France, and up into Germany; then trace the Middle Rhine River (*Mittelrhein*), beginning where it drops to a lower elevation, and to where it ends as it drops again to a still lower one; and then trace the Lower Rhine (*Neiderrhein*) until it crosses into the Netherlands. 3) Locate approximately these cities: 1) Cologne (*Köln*), Germany on the Lower Rhine, 2) Bonn, Germany, near the transition from the Middle Rhine to the Lower Rhine, 3) Strasbourg, (or Strassburg, not to be confused with cities in Germany or Austria, etc.) on the Upper Rhine, and 4) Basel, Switzerland, at the end of the High Rhine, and near the start of the Upper Rhine.

The Middle Rhine River (*Mittelrhein*), by the way, flows...

...through the **Rhine Gorge**, a formation created by erosion [mostly due to **'Venus-class flooding'**], which [evolutionists think] happened at about the same rate as an uplift in the region [and it did - but mostly due to **'Venus-class pull'**], leaving the river at about its original level, and the surrounding lands raised... [so that the] gorge is quite deep, about 130 metres (430 ft) from the top of the rocks down to the average water-line [photos, p.442].



And while you're at it identify the country of Poland, since it's relatively large, "devoutly religious", and also partly in the shot on p.441...

Since the country adopted Christianity [Catholicism] in 966, Poland has contributed significantly to the development of ideals, which [strangely enough] upheld and guaranteed religious freedoms. In 1264, the Statute of Kalisz, also known as a "Charter of Jewish Liberties", granted Jews living in the Polish lands unprecedented legal rights not found anywhere in Europe. In 1424, a setback occurred when the Polish king was pressed by the [Catholic] Bishops to issue the Edict of Wieluń, outlawing early Protestant Hussitism. However, in 1573, the Warsaw Confederation marked the formal beginning of extensive religious freedoms granted to all faiths in the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth. The act was not imposed by a king or consequence of war, but rather resulted from the actions of members of the Polish-Lithuanian society. It was also

influenced by the events of the 1572 French St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre [of Protestants], which prompted the Polish-Lithuanian nobility to see that no monarch would ever be able to carry out such reprehensible atrocities in Poland. The act is also credited with keeping the Polish-Lithuanian Commonwealth out of the Thirty Years' War [1618 to 48], fought [mostly] between German Protestants and Catholics.

Religious tolerance in Poland spurred many theological movements such as Calvinist Polish Brethren and a number of other Protestant groups, as well as atheists, such as ex-Jesuit philosopher Kazimierz Łyszczyński, one of the first atheist thinkers in Europe. Also, in the 16th century, Anabaptists from the Netherlands and Germany settled in Poland - after being persecuted in Western Europe...

And to 'under-summarize', Poland rose to dominance in "the period known as "Golden Liberty" (in the 14th and 15th Centuries), and declined (in the 16th to 18th Centuries) to the point of being 'assimilated' partly by Russia on the East, Prussia on the west, and Habsburg Austria on the south, and so for over a century (from the end of the 18th Century to early in the 20th) Poland "effectively ceased to exist", with only a 'brief respite' because of the Napoleonic Wars, and that is, until after WWI - with some "arguing that Germany and Austria-Hungary started the war" - "when then the Allies [or Allied Powers] agreed on the reconstitution of Poland", and evidently because, "A total of 2 million Polish troops fought with the armies of the three [or really 4] occupying [Allied] powers, and 450,000 died", (and really 4 "occupying powers" because, "The **Allied occupation of the Rhineland** took place following the armistice that brought the fighting of World War I to a close on 11 November 1918... [and actually] consisted of American, Belgian, British and French forces"), though, "Shortly after the armistice... [and after] Poland regained its independence [by great sacrifice] as the Second Polish Republic", then, suffering the adding of insult to injury, "It reaffirmed its independence after a series of military conflicts, the most notable being the Polish-Soviet War (1919-21) when Poland inflicted a crushing defeat on the Red [or '**red horse**' [Rev 6:4](#)] Army at the Battle of Warsaw, an event which is considered to have halted the advance of Communism into Europe and forced Vladimir Lenin to rethink his objective of achieving global socialism", yet we **know** this is not the last time that **Gog** will **think an evil thought**, and suffer 'crushing defeat" for it ([Eze 38:10](#)). And better than all this...

Until World War II, Poland. was a religiously diverse society, in which substantial Jewish, Christian Orthodox [- uh-huh, the ones '**doomed**' to become part of the Catholic "great big scary monster"], Protestant, Armenian Christian [- more Orthodox 'monster types'] and [the 'head' of the "great big scary monster",] Roman Catholic groups coexisted. In the Second Polish Republic, according to the Polish census of 1931, Roman Catholicism was the dominant religion, declared by about 65% of Polish citizens, followed by other Christian denominations, and about 10% of Jewish believers. As a result of the Holocaust and the post-World War II flight and expulsion of German and Ukrainian populations, Poland has become overwhelmingly Roman Catholic. In 2014, an estimated 87% of the population belonged to the Catholic Church. Though rates of religious observance are lower, at 52%... [meaning around half don't regularly attend mass, making them CIHO's,

though no less potentially 'monstrous', but some maybe instead 'beheadable'], Poland remains one of the most devoutly religious countries in Europe.

But let's get back to the young, 16th-Century William...

...Because of his young age, [Holy Roman] Emperor Charles V [son of Phillip I of Castile (Spain), grandson and successor of Maximilian I (because Philip died before his father, Maximilian), and predecessor of his younger brother Ferdinand I], who was the overlord of most of these estates, served as regent until William was old enough to rule them himself.

William was sent to the Netherlands to receive the required Roman Catholic education, first at the family's estate in Breda ["in the southern part of the Netherlands"] and later in Brussels [now the capital of Belgium, and though, "Historically a Dutch-speaking city, Brussels has seen a language shift to French from the late 19th century onwards. Today, the majority language (with over 90%) is French, and [or but] the Brussels-Capital Region [still] is an officially bilingual enclave within the Flemish Region... [where all] road signs, street names, and many advertisements and services... in both languages"], [William's "education" being] under the supervision of Mary of Habsburg (Mary of Hungary), a sister of Charles V and governor [*stadtholder*] of the Habsburg Netherlands (Seventeen Provinces). In Brussels, he was taught foreign languages and received a military and diplomatic education [or was **learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, you might say**]...

On 6 July 1551, William married Anna van Egmond en Buren, daughter and heiress of Maximiliaan van Egmond, an important Dutch nobleman. Anna's father had died in 1548, and therefore William became Lord of Egmond and Count of Buren [in Westcentral Holland] upon his wedding day. The marriage was a happy one and produced three children, one of whom died in infancy. Anna died on 24 March 1558, leaving William much grieved...

And by the way, another entry of this encyclopedia informs me that...

The eighth president of the United States, Martin Van Buren, [who was "a major figure of the abolitionist movement defending Abraham Lincoln's policies during the American Civil War", whose "family of Dutch descent supported the Patriot cause during the American Revolution", and whose "father served as a captain in the Albany County Militia's 7th Regiment", and who "was raised speaking Dutch and learned English at school, making him the only U.S. President who spoke English as a second language", also] traced his ancestry to inhabitants of the city [of Buren, in the province of Gelderland], who had taken the surname *Van Buren* after relocating to the Dutch colony of New Netherland in what is now the state of New York.

William, on the other hand...

...Being a ward of Charles V and having received his education under the tutelage of the Emperor's sister... came under the particular attention of the imperial family, and became a favorite. He was appointed captain in the cavalry in 1551 and received rapid promotion thereafter, becoming commander of one of the Emperor's armies at the age of 22. This was in 1555, when Charles V sent him to Bayonne with an army to

take the city in a siege from the French. William was also made a member of the Raad van State, the highest political advisory council in the Netherlands. It was in November of the same year (1555) that the gout-afflicted Emperor Charles V leaned on William's shoulder during the ceremony when he abdicated his Spanish possessions in favour of his son, Philip II of Spain.

In 1559, Phillip appointed William stadtholder (governor) of the provinces of Holland, Zeeland and Utrecht, thereby greatly increasing his political power. A stadtholdership over Franche-Comté [in France, a region on Switzerland's present western boarder] followed in 1561...

...Although he never directly opposed the Spanish king, William soon became one of the most prominent members of the opposition in the Council of State... mainly seeking more political power for themselves against the *de facto* [or 'real', and that is, Spanish] government... but also for the Dutch nobility... and complained that too many Spaniards were involved in governing the Netherlands. William was also dissatisfied with the increasing persecution of Protestants in the Netherlands. Brought up as a Lutheran and later a Catholic... [he] was very religious but was still a proponent of freedom of religion for all people. The activity of the Inquisition in the Netherlands [uh-huh], directed by Cardinal Granvelle, increased opposition to Spanish rule [even] among the then mostly Catholic population of the Netherlands. Lastly, the opposition wished to see an end to the presence of Spanish troops [underlining mine].

And evidently this "increased opposition" to "the Inquisition in the Netherlands", even "among the then mostly [but surely to some extent 'forced-to-be-professing'] Catholic population" was because of the 'outrageous cruelty' known to be involved.

And a principle 'instrument' of this 'extreme cruelty', Cardinal Antoine Perrenot de Granvelle, "a Burgundian statesman, made a cardinal, who followed his father as a leading minister of the Spanish Habsburgs... was one of the most influential European politicians during the time which immediately followed the appearance of Protestantism in Europe", he being both an archenemy of Protestantism and "the dominating Imperial statesman of the whole [16th] century", who, for examples, "was involved in the settlement of the terms of peace after the defeat of the Schmalkaldic League [by Charles V] at the Battle of Mühlberg in 1547", "attended... the Council of Trent", (which "issued condemnations of what it defined to be heresies committed by Protestantism", and is "described as the embodiment of the Counter-Reformation", "also called the Catholic Reformation... or the Catholic Revival... the period of Catholic resurgence initiated in response to the Protestant Reformation, beginning with the Council of Trent (1545-1563) and ending at the close of the Thirty Years' War (1648)", and, "Initiated to preserve the power, influence and material wealth enjoyed by the Catholic Church and to present a theological and material challenge to Reformation"), and Granvelle was also "prime minister to the new governor [Stadtholder of the Netherlands] Margaret of Parma (1522-83) (natural half-sister to Philip II)".

According to the *Apology*, William's letter of justification [for his "actions"], which was

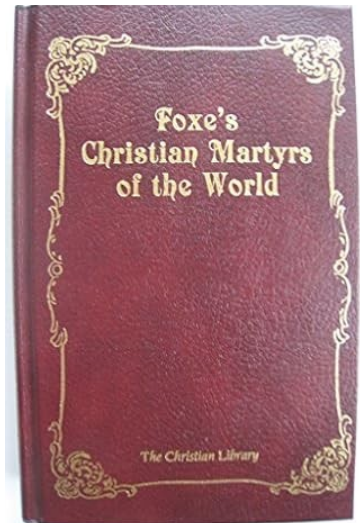
published and read to the States General [of the Netherlands] in December 1580, his resolve to expel the Spaniards from the Netherlands had originated when, in the summer of 1559, he and the Duke of Alva [or Alba, of Spain] had been sent to France as hostages for the proper fulfillment of the Treaty of Cateau-Cambrésis following the Hispano-French war. During his stay in Paris, on a ["stag"] hunting trip to the Bois de Vincennes, King Henry II of France started to discuss with William a secret understanding between Philip II and himself aimed at the violent extermination of Protestantism in France, the Netherlands "and the entire Christian world." The understanding was being negotiated by Alva [or Alba], and Henry had assumed, incorrectly, that William was aware of it. At the time, William did not contradict the king's assumption, but he had decided for himself that he would not allow the slaughter of "so many honourable people," especially in the Netherlands, for which he felt a strong compassion.

On 25 August 1561, William of Orange married for the second time. His new wife, Anna of Saxony, was described by contemporaries as "self-absorbed, weak, assertive, and cruel", and it is generally assumed that William married her to gain more influence in [Protestant] Saxony, Hesse and the Palatinate [as well as to be in a better position to defend "honourable [Protestant] people", and "especially in the Netherlands"]. The couple had five children.

Up to 1564, any criticism of governmental measures voiced by William and the other members of the opposition had ostensibly been directed at Granvelle [evidently including at the "Inquisition" he "directed"]; however, after the latter's departure early that year, William, who may have found increasing confidence in his alliance with the Protestant princes of Germany following his second marriage, began to openly criticize the King's anti-Protestant politics. In an iconic speech to the Council of State, William to the shock of his audience justified his conflict with Philip by saying that, even though he had decided for himself to keep to the Catholic faith, he could not agree that monarchs should rule over the souls of their subjects and take from them their freedom of belief and religion [- Amen].

By the way, Philip II of Castile (Spain), son of Charles V, was from 1554-58 also "King of England and Ireland" by marriage to "Charles' maternal first cousin", the 1st "child of Henry VIII...to survive to adulthood", "**Mary I**... Queen of England and Ireland from July 1553 until her death" in 1558, their "marriage at Winchester Cathedral... just two days after their first meeting", though '**fortunately**', and I mean '**providentially**', "Philip was to enjoy Mary's titles and honours for as long as their marriage should last", while '**unfortunately**', and no less '**providentially**', she is "best known for her aggressive [and 'extremely cruel'] attempt to reverse the English Reformation". And so much so that, "The executions that marked her pursuit of the restoration of Roman Catholicism in England and Ireland led to her denunciation as "Bloody Mary" by her Protestant opponents", "executions" here unavoidably a pun that involves the Anglican Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Cranmer, who when forced by Mary chose, in the end, "to die a heretic to Roman Catholics and a martyr

for the principles of the English Reformation". Also by marriage to Philip she became "queen consort of Habsburg Spain [Castile] on his accession in 1556, but she never visited Spain". And yet once more I'll direct you to the volume first published by Barbour and Company, Inc., now by The Christian Library, *Foxe's Christian Martyrs of the World*, (photo of my copy, p.446), and that is, if you think you can 'stomach' the more horrifying details. And for your information, I've chosen not to 'stomach' them myself.



In early 1565, a large group of lesser noblemen, including William's younger brother Louis, formed the Confederacy of Noblemen. On 5 April, they offered a petition to Margaret of Parma, requesting an end to the persecution of Protestants. From August to October 1566, a wave of iconoclasm (known as the *Beeldenstorm*) spread through the Low Countries. Calvinists (the major Protestant denomination), Anabaptists, and Mennonites [- the 'minor ones', at least if not added together, and why Lutherans aren't mention here I'm not sure - were they more tolerant of "images" ?], angered by Catholic oppression and theologically opposed to the Catholic use of images of saints (which in their eyes [and God's] conflicted with the Second Commandment), destroyed statues in hundreds of churches and monasteries throughout the Netherlands [though I'm guessing that it was mostly the Calvinists and Lutherans who, at least at this time, did most of these 'destructive acts', and - while this time not guessing but speaking for God - that these particular 'destructive acts', at this particular time, also "conflicted" with His Word].

Following the [ungodly, or maybe I should say, 'unchristian-like'] *Beeldenstorm*, unrest in the Netherlands grew, and Margaret agreed to grant the wishes of the Confederacy, provided the noblemen would help to restore order. She also allowed more important noblemen, including William of Orange [yes, William the Silent], to assist the Confederacy. In late 1566, and early 1567, it became clear that she would not be allowed to fulfil her promises, and when several minor rebellions failed, many Calvinists and Lutherans [apparently neither very 'tolerant of images'] fled the country [while apparently the 'radicals', yes, the Anabaptists and Mennonites - again, and at least at this time - didn't as urgently have to 'flee', being known by then to oppose 'violent or destructive acts', and that is, to be **harmless** (e.g., [Mat 10:16](#); [Phl 2:14-16](#); [Heb 7:26](#))]. Following the announcement that Philip II, unhappy with the situation in the Netherlands, would dispatch his loyal general Fernando Álvarez de Toledo, Duke of Alba [or Alva] (also known ["in the Netherlands"] as "The Iron Duke"), to restore order, William laid down his functions and retreated to his native Nassau [again, a province/region "located in what is now the German states of Rhineland-Palatinate and Hesse", which are the southern and eastern neighbors of NRW] in April 1567. He had been (financially) involved with several of the rebellions.

After his arrival in August 1567, Alba [or Alva] established the *Council of Troubles* (known to the people as the *Council of Blood*) to judge those

involved in the rebellion and the iconoclasm. William was one of the 10,000 to be summoned before the Council, but he failed to appear. He was subsequently declared an outlaw, and his properties were confiscated. As one of the most prominent and popular politicians of the Netherlands, William of Orange emerged as the leader of armed resistance. He financed the *Watergeuzen*, refugee Protestants who formed bands of corsairs [which are “private person[s]...engaged in maritime warfare... sometimes referred to as...buccaneer[s]... or...pirate[s]”, who] ...raided the coastal cities of the Netherlands (often killing Spanish and Dutch alike). He also raised an army, consisting mostly of [‘Protestant-friendly’ and/or ‘anti-Catholic’, or just ‘financially motivated’] German mercenaries, to fight Alba on land. William [also] allied with the French Huguenots [- “Reformed/Calvinist Protestants”], following the end of the second Religious War in France when they had troops to spare. Led by his brother Louis, the army invaded the northern Netherlands in 1568. However, the plan failed almost from the start. The Huguenots were defeated by French royal troops before they could invade, and a small force under Jean de Villers was captured within two days. Villers gave all the plans of the campaign to the Spanish following his capture [and that is, to Catholics who know how to torture, etc]. On 23 May, the army under the command of Louis won the Battle of Heiligerlee in the northern [or “northeasternmost”] province of Groningen against a Spanish army led by the stadtholder of the northern provinces... [who] was killed in the battle, as was William's brother Adolf. Alba countered by killing a number of convicted noblemen ... and then by leading an expedition to Groningen. There, he annihilated Louis’ forces on German territory in the Battle of Jemmingen on 21 July, although Louis managed to escape. These two battles are now considered to be the start of the Eighty Years' War...

[But soon]... rebel armies captured cities throughout the entire country... William himself then advanced with his own army and marched into several cities in the south... [and again] counted on intervention from the Huguenots... but this plan [too] was thwarted after the St. Bartholomew's Day Massacre on 24 August [1572], which signalled the start of a wave of violence against the Huguenots [in which, “An estimated 3,000 [mostly defenseless] French Protestants were killed in Paris, and as many as 70,000 in all of France”, though apparently their **stars** since then still **shine** in the Heavens]. After a successful Spanish attack on his army, William had to flee and he retreated to Enkhuizen, in Holland. The Spanish then organised countermeasures, and sacked several rebel cities, [these Catholics of ‘hers’ again] sometimes massacring their inhabitants [as God’s **mighty angel** [Rev 18:21-24](#) has both **testified** and **prophesied**]... They had more trouble with the cities in Holland, where they took... [for their gains] a loss of 8,000 soldiers, and they had to break off their siege of Alkmaar.

By-the-way, in the French Wars of Religion (1562–98), an “estimated... three million people perished... whether from violence, famine, or disease in what is considered the second deadliest religious war in European history... surpassed only by the

Thirty Years' War, which took eight million lives”, though it involved fighting all over Europe as opposed to mostly just in France...

Much of the conflict [in the French Wars of Religion] took place during the long regency of Queen Catherine de' Medici, widow of Henry II of France, for her minor sons [and that is, she ruled while her sons were too young to rule]. It also involved a dynastic power struggle between powerful noble families in the line for succession to the French throne: [1] the wealthy, ambitious, and fervently Roman Catholic ducal [read, 'Holy Blood'] House of Guise (a cadet branch of the House of Lorraine, who claimed descent from Charlemagne) and their ally Anne de Montmorency, Constable of France (i.e., commander in chief of the French armed forces) versus [2] the less wealthy House of Condé (a branch of the House of Bourbon), princes of the ['holy'] blood in the line of succession to the throne who were sympathetic to Calvinism. Foreign allies provided financing and other assistance to both sides, with Habsburg Spain and the Duchy of Savoy supporting the Guises, and England supporting the Protestant side led by the Condés and by [our sister] the Protestant Jeanne d'Albret [III of Navarre], wife of Antoine de Bourbon, King of Navarre [who was not so much a supporter of Protestantism as he “appears not to have had real religious conviction and officially changed religions several times... [“although”] his brother Louis was the head of the Protestant faction [being “a prominent Huguenot leader and general, [and] the founder of the House of Condé, a cadet branch of the House of Bourbon, and his wife Jeanne III was likewise a convert to Calvinism who established Calvinism as the official religion of Navarre”], and her son, Henry of Navarre [“the future Henry IV of France”, Navarre being a small kingdom on the border between Spain and France, close to a couple of equally small British possessions 'within' France - see the map of these 'realms' on p.460, or just wait for it] [eafc minor].

And by-the-way, and using a couple other encyclopedias, at the time of the St. Bartholomew's

Day Massacre, otherwise known as The Huguenot Massacre of 1572, evidently lots of Huguenots were visiting Paris unwittingly waiting to be '**winepressed**' ^{H6333}, and that is, in a “massacre” considered to be among the most “reprehensible atrocities” of all time. Why were they there? It was the occasion of the marriage of “Margaret of France (Margeurite de Valois)”, the Capetian branch daughter of Catherine de' Medici, Queen Mother of France, “to the Huguenot [and Bourbon King] Henry [III] of Navarre (the future Henry IV of France), and [so] a large part of the Huguenot [but supposedly 'Holy-Blood-filled'] nobility came to Paris for the wedding”, some evidently **predestinated** to die, but all this nonetheless one of the '**set snares**' and '**set traps**' to **catch men** (e.g., [Jer 5:26](#)), and that is, one of the **wicked devices** (e.g. [Psa 10:2](#); [37:7](#); [Isa 32:7](#)) of, let's call her, 'The Queen Mother of Bitches' (in context of [Mat 7:6](#)), this apparently being her (or I could say **her**) temporarily successful plot to end Protestantism in France, but only temporarily because with “years of struggle” against the Catholics of France, **our brother** Henry earned his reputation as “protector of the Protestant churches”, though finally, and evidently as the only way to establish peace, and, “After long hesitation, he undertook a final conversion back to Roman Catholicism”, and “signed the Edict of Nantes, which confirmed Roman Catholicism as the state church but granted a large measure of religious freedom to Protestants, who were also given the right to hold public office and who retained their fortresses in certain cities... [and maybe

more importantly this edict] ended nearly 40 years of religious strife and civil war that had left France tottering on the brink of disintegration”, and that is, it saved France from being overtaken by the Habsburgs.

And Henry’s Habsburg-allied enemies in France were formidable, and organized as...

The **Catholic League of France** (French: *La Ligue catholique*), sometimes referred to by contemporary (and modern) Catholics as the **Holy League** (*La Sainte Ligue*)... a major participant in the French Wars of Religion. Formed by Henry I, Duke of Guise, in 1576, the League intended the eradication of Protestants – mainly Calvinists or Huguenots – out of Catholic France during the Protestant Reformation, as well as the replacement of King Henry III [who finally sided with **our brother** Henry against “the League”, and after that was assassinated].

Henry I, Duke of Guise, of the House of Guise, a cadet branch of the House of Lorraine, who therefore “claimed a Carolingian descent” – from Charlemagne (Charles the Great) – evidently presumed to “cast eyes on the throne” to take it from **our brother** Henry, which “led to the stage of the Wars of Religion known as the *War of the Three Henri*s (1584-1588)”. Or to be explicit,

...at the death in 1584 of Francis, Duke of Anjou, the king's [i.e., Henry III of France's] brother [tbb in a bit] (which left Henry [III] of Navarre, the Protestant champion, as heir-male [to the throne of France]), Guise concluded the Treaty of Joinville with Philip II of Spain. This [“secret”] compact declared that the Cardinal de Bourbon should succeed Henry III, in preference to Henry of Navarre [- this cardinal otherwise known as “**Charles de Bourbon**”, but appropriately enough, “Henry III had Charles imprisoned”, and had him “transferred from one castle to another, presumably to prevent escape”, and at some point Charles **rightly** ^{G3723; G3718} “renounced the royal title and recognized his nephew [and **our brother**] Henry IV”, after which in one of these ‘prison castles’, “He died”]. [However evidently before fully realizing what this ‘Guise’ was really up to,] Henry III now [or at this time] sided with the Catholic League (1585), which made war with great success on the Protestants... [and that is, until] Guise sent his cousin Charles, Duke of Aumale, to lead a rising [supposedly against “Habsburg forces”] in Picardy (which could also [or really] support the retreat of the Spanish Armada) [- Picardy being “a former administrative region of France... located in the northern part of France”, which, “In 1557... was invaded by Habsburg forces”]. Alarmed, Henry III ordered Guise to remain in Champagne; [but] he defied the king and on 9 May 1588 Guise entered Paris, bringing to a head his ambiguous [or ‘masked’] challenge to royal authority in the Day of the Barricades and forcing King Henry to flee...

...The League now controlled France; the king was forced to accede to its demands and

created Guise Lieutenant-General of France. But Henry III refused to be treated as mere cipher [- “a person of no influence; nonentity”,] by the League [and he likely at least suspected an assassination plot was ‘afoot’], and [so] decided upon a bold [preemptive] stroke [and that is, a “stroke” that would prevent a coup d’état, (literally, a “stroke of state”, or “a sudden and decisive action in politics, especially one resulting in a change of government illegally or by force”]. On 22



December 1588, he spent the night with his current mistress Charlotte de Sauve, the most accomplished and notorious member of Catherine de' Medici's group of female spies [and *whores*, e.g., [Jdg 16:4-21](#); [Eze 16:33](#); [Hos4:14](#)] known as the



"Flying Squadron" [the implication being that ‘intel’ and *gifts* [H7810](#); [H7810](#); [H5078](#); [H5083](#) were also ‘trafficked’ [H7404](#)]. The following morning at the **Château de Blois** [- photos, including of

it at the end of the bridge on the Loire River in the city of Blois “in central France”, on [p.449](#)], Guise was summoned to attend the king, and was at once assassinated [or really just ‘executed’ for ‘treason’ and ‘conspiracy to commit regicide’, “regicide” being “the deliberate killing of a [‘Holy Blood’] monarch”,] by "the Forty-five", the king's bodyguard, as Henry III looked on. Guise's brother, Louis II, Cardinal of Guise, was likewise assassinated [or also appropriately ‘executed’] the next day. The deed aroused such outrage among the remaining relatives and allies of Guise that Henry III was forced to take refuge with Henry of Navarre... [Still he] was assassinated the following year by... an agent of the Catholic League.

And apparently as a result of all this, still today one “British Dictionary” definition of “guise” is “pretence”, and “guiser” may mean “masquerader”, or “mummer”, which is “a person who wears a mask or fantastic costume while merrymaking”, and the word “disguise” comes from the “Old French de(s) guiser, equivalent to des- (dis +) -guiser, derivative of *guise*”, and “geezer”, the English spelling, is “probably from [the French] dialect pronunciation of guiser”. And this original ‘Guiser’ [pronounced, ‘geezer’] of the House of Guise [pronounced, ‘gies’], if not really of “Carolingian descent”, evidently really was “a descendant of... Pope Alexander VI”, or of...

Rodrigo de Borja... Pope from... 1492 until his death [in 1503]. During the Age of Discovery [including the Americas], the Iberian-born [read, Spanish] pope's bulls of 1493 confirmed or reconfirmed the rights of the Spanish crown in the New World [evidently including the 'right' to have all who would not submit *slain* ^{G4969}], [this] following the finds of Christopher Columbus in 1492 [though I understand that in the case of Governor, Admiral Columbus, it was more certainly Caribbean natives who were comparably *abominable* to Pope Alexander, and that maybe in "the end" this 'great discoverer' had *come out of her*, because, "Towards the end of his life, he produced a *Book of Prophecies* in which his career as an explorer is interpreted in the light of Christian eschatology and of apocalypticism", which seems to imply that he *believed* and '*diligently studied*' *scripture*, and no one should *condemn* him for the ways he got his '*apocalyptic eschatology*' wrong but God]. He [Pope Alexander VI, on the other hand,] is one of the most controversial [read, 'morally corrupt'] of the Renaissance popes, partly because he acknowledged fathering several children by his mistresses. Therefore his Italianized Valencian surname, *Borgia*, became a byword for libertinism [- meaning, "devoid of most moral or sexual restraints",] and nepotism [- the "power or influence" gained through "favouritism [British spelling] shown to relatives or close friends... with power or influence"], which are traditionally considered as characterizing his pontificate...

...The Borgias became prominent in ecclesiastical and political affairs in the 15th and 16th centuries, producing two popes... [including] Rodrigo Lanzol Borgia, as Pope Alexander VI...

Especially during the reign of Alexander VI, they were suspected of many crimes, including adultery, incest, simony ["making of profit out of sacred things"], theft, bribery, and murder (especially...by arsenic poisoning). Because of their grasping for power, they made enemies of the Medici... among others [- but on the '*bright side*' you can revisit [Mat 12:25](#) & [Luke 11:17](#)]...

...The [House of] Medici produced three Popes of the Catholic Church... and two regent queens of France... [including] Catherine de' Medici... In 1532, the family acquired the hereditary title [of '*Holy Blood*'] Dukes of Florence. In 1569 [during the French Wars of Religion and under Catherine de' Medici's regency], the duchy was elevated to a grand duchy after territorial expansion... [and they] ruled the Grand Duchy of Tuscany...until 1737...

And I must add that Henry III, "the fourth son of King Henry II and Catherine de' Medici", was much like his 2 brothers who were king before him, and that would be Francis II, in whose 2½-year, middle-teenage reign his "mother... entrusted the reins of government to his wife's uncles from the House of Guise", and Charles IX (*tbb* shortly), who was heavily "influenced by his mother", and "dispensed with her advice only in the last months of her life".

His father Henry II's "reign was marked by wars with Austria", or with "The Eighth [and last] Italian War of 1551-1559, sometimes known as the Habsburg-Valois War, [which] began when Henry declared war against Holy Roman Emperor Charles V with the intent of recapturing Italy and ensuring French, rather than Habsburg, domination of European affairs", a war in which he gained territory from the Habsburgs, (most notably the Three Bishoprics - "all within the Lorraine region", essentially the northeastern corner of France - and a piece of Bloody Mary's English

possessions in France, and this despite the efforts of her husband, 'Foul Phil', uh-huh, Phillip II of Spain, this piece he won formerly part of Flanders, now the 'northern tip' of France), but he still lost the war because at its end, "he renounced any further claims to territories in Italy".

Henry II's reign was also "marked by... the persecution of [the Huguenot] Protestants... He severely punished them, particularly the ministers, for example, burning at the stake or cutting off their tongues for uttering heresies", though, "Persecution of Protestants at home did not prevent Henry II from becoming allied with German Protestant princes", who were "led by Elector Maurice [Moritz] of Saxony", who when faced with loosing his autonomy to the Empire, again changed sides, and fought against Charles V, this 'turncoat' *tbb* a bit more a bit later.

And Charles IX too in the end openly **repented** ^{H5162: G3340} of taking his mother's "counsel"...

In the aftermath of the [Bartholomew's Day] massacre, the king's fragile mental and physical constitution weakened drastically. His moods swung from boasting about the extremity of the massacre to exclamations that the screams of the murdered Huguenots kept ringing in his ears. Frantically, he blamed alternately himself - "What blood shed! What murders!", he cried to his nurse. "What evil counsel I have followed! O my God, forgive me... I am lost! I am lost!" - or his mother - "Who but you is the cause of all of this? God's blood, you are the cause of it all!" Catherine responded by declaring she had a lunatic for a son.

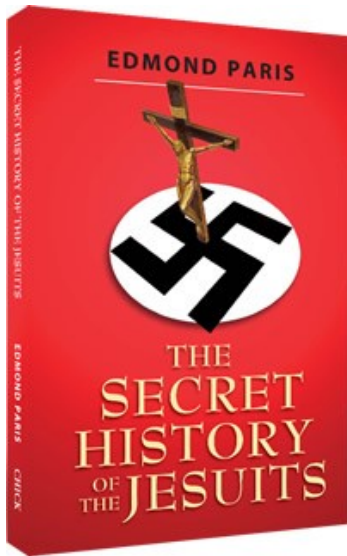
[So] Charles' physical condition... deteriorated [but **thank and praise the LORD**]...

On his last day, 30 May 1574 ["aged twenty-three years"], Charles called for Henry of Navarre, embraced him, and said, "Brother, you are losing a good friend. Had I believed all that I was told, you would not be alive. But I always loved you... I trust you alone to look after my wife and ["illegitimate"] son. Pray God for me. Farewell."

And speaking of those who would consider anyone who would **come out of her** a "lunatic"...

...Two of [Pope] Alexander's ['nepotistically empowered'] successors, the controversial pontiffs [- in their cases, if not lacking "sexual restraints", then surely otherwise 'morally corrupt',] [1] Sixtus V [- the one who "extensively renovated" the "repeatedly irreparably damaged" Lateran Palace, who "regarded the [**treacherous** ^{H898} and 'treasonously conspiratorial'] Jesuits with disfavour", and who "chafed under his forced alliance with Philip II of Spain", but "agreed to renew the excommunication of [Protestant] Queen Elizabeth I of England", and "excommunicated Henry of Navarre (future Henry IV of France), and probably worst of all, contributed to the Catholic League", thereby condoning their "reprehensible atrocities"] and [2] Urban VIII, [whose "papacy covered [the middle] 21 years of the Thirty Years' War", who "practiced nepotism on a grand scale", and made Galileo "recant his work" on "heliocentrism", and hopefully worst of all, 'disseminated' some "bull... forbidding" some of the Jesuits' more 'overt' **wickedness**, though "protected the existence of [their 'covertly' **treacherous** and 'treasonously conspiratorial'] Jesuit missions in South America... China and Japan", and he was guilty of condoning Alexander VI's infamous '**treacherousness**' and

wantonness^{G766}, as he was described by]...him as one of the most outstanding popes since Saint Peter.



And for more about those formerly more 'overt' but now much more 'covert', though in all cases **treacherously** and 'treasonously conspiratorial' Jesuits, (and no, I can't repeat that line enough), I'll yet again direct you to the "French author of works on history, particularly the modern history of the Catholic church", Edmond Paris (1894-1970), but more particularly to his book, **The Secret History of the Jesuits** (*L'histoire secrète des jésuites*), still available at Chick publications (<http://www.chick.com/catalog/books/0191.asp>).

And whether **our brother**, the '**blessed peacemaker**' Henry was actually, at least in the end, **out of her** or not God knows. I mean the evidence shows that in his **heart** he was a Protestant, and that he was at least one of those '**in her**' that Jesus would call **my people**. And I'm **hoping**, maybe **in vain**, that his "conversion back to Roman Catholicism" was kind of like what using a fake **mark of the beast** will be like, since it's clear he only 'played a Catholic', and only to save France from the **treacherous** Habsburgs, but sincerely was a Protestant, who fought his whole life to protect them all over Europe, and even died - arguably martyred - in the process, since at the time he "was killed" in 1610, (the last of "at least 12 assassination attempts"), he was "on his way to... make final preparations for imminent military intervention in the disputed succession to [the United Duchies of] Jülich-Cleves-Berg", which were "two former territories [from 1521 to 1666] across the modern German state of North Rhine-Westphalia and the modern Dutch province of Gelderland", (Gelderland identified more specifically shortly), and this "intervention on behalf of a Calvinist candidate would have [again] brought him in conflict with the Catholic Habsburg dynasty", as it involved "Henry's decision to invade the Spanish Netherlands... [which was perceived by at least his assassin as] the start of a war against the Pope", and either that or I **hope** Henry had enough time to **repent** before he died. (Note: the assassin, fyi, was thereafter horribly and repeatedly "tortured... before being pulled apart by four horses, a method of execution reserved for regicides".) But Henry did not die before restoring "peace and relative prosperity... to France after decades of religious war". But of course his **judgment** is God's call, not mine.

...King Henry's vision extended beyond France, and he financed several expeditions... to North America... [including laying] claim to New France (now Canada)...

...A statue was erected in his honour... [in Paris] in 1614, four years after his death. Although this statue - as well as those of all the other French kings - was torn down during the French Revolution, it was the first to be rebuilt, in 1818 [photo, p.452].



And by-the-way, Alkmaar is a city in North Holland, which, as you may remember, is 'in the neighborhood' of **our brother** Menno, who spent his last years in Denmark, but was no longer **awake** (in the context of [1Th 5:10](#)) at the time of the

Duke of Alba's (or Alva's) unsuccessful "**Siege of Alkmaar** (1573)", a siege considered by some as "a turning point in the Eighty Years' War", the Dutch having "held off the Spanish... with boiling tar and burning branches from their renewed city walls", and finally with the help of "William the Silent... [this was] followed up [with the order calling for] the dikes surrounding Alkmaar to be breached, thereby flooding the polders [a "polder" being "a low-lying tract of land enclosed by dikes"] in which the Spanish troops were camped... [which] forced the Spanish commander, the son of the hated Alva himself, to retreat".

And using yet another encyclopedia and a couple of its entries, I'll add that, "According to all available information Menno died" ... "on 31 January 1561" ... "at Wüstenfelde", "a village...in the German province of Schleswig-Holstein", which, as you may also remember, is now the northern-most German state that used to be the southernmost part of Denmark, and a place where he "could live and work quietly during his last [about 6] years" of his life, though it was also a place that was "wiped out in the Thirty Years' War", but a "monument to Menno Simons was erected on the presumed location of the village by the Hamburg-Altona Mennonite Church in 1906".

There is also "in Witmarsum, Dutch province of Friesland, erected on the site where the meetinghouse of the Witmarsum Mennonites once stood", the "**Menno Simons-monument**"...

Tradition says... [that this monument (photo, p.452) marks where] Menno first preached after leaving the Roman Catholic Church in 1536, and often stayed, and where he was probably married. These traditions are, however, rather improbable. The monument, a large stone obelisk about 10 feet high, was dedicated on 11 September 1879. On the front it has the words, "In memory of Menno Simons, b. at Witmarsum in 1496.



[Heb 12:7](#)"; on the left side: "According to tradition Menno preached to his first followers here"; on the right side (facing the village two miles (3.3 km) distant): "For three centuries the Mennonites of Witmarsum assembled at this place"; on the back: "[1 Corinthians 3:11](#). 1536." The petition of the Dutch Mennonites for contributions to support the project was not universally complied with... [as some] rejected the idea of such a monument. The stiffest resistance was encountered in America, where an article in the periodical *Zur Heimath* called it idolatry and a defamation of Menno Simons [- and I would agree]. On 3 July 1936 in connection with the close of the [3rd] Mennonite World Conference, a wreath was placed at the foot of the monument in a solemn ceremony...

...*Zur Heimath* [[Going Home](#)] (1875-81), [was] first published... monthly by David Goerz at Summerfield, Illinois, as the official organ of the Mennonite Board of Guardians [- "an immigration aid committee of American Mennonites"]... and distributed free to Mennonite immigrants from Russia by the Board, February to December 1875 [and thereafter continued as a

bimonthly publication with an annual subscriptions price of \$1]... *Der Nebraska Ansiedler* [*The Nebraska Settler*], a similar periodical published by the Mennonite Publishing Company beginning in June 1878, and transformed into *Die Mennonitische Rundschau* [*The Mennonite News Magazine*] after two years (June 1880), was in a sense a competitor, and with John F. Harms, Mennonite Brethren minister, as editor, succeeded in separating a certain segment of the Russian Mennonite constituency in North America from Goerz's paper. The latter became increasingly the servant and organ of the Western District (General Conference Mennonite) Conference, and finally merged with the *Mennonitischer Friedensbote* [*Mennonite Messenger of Peace*] to form the *Christlicher Bundesbote* [*Christian Messenger*] (January 1882) as the official German organ of the General Conference Mennonite Church...

...The first [Mennonite World] conference [in 1925, in Basel, Switzerland] was based upon the idea of the 400th anniversary of the founding of Anabaptism in Switzerland in 1525, the second [in 1930, in the Free City of Danzig, Poland] upon the need for cooperative effort to meet the urgent need for aid to Mennonite refugees from Russia then being settled in Paraguay, Brazil, and Canada, the third [in 1936, in both Amsterdam and Witmarsum, Netherlands] upon the 400th anniversary of Menno Simons' conversion from Roman Catholicism in 1536...

...World War II made the calling of the fourth world conference in 1940 in the United States, as planned, impossible; and the traditional world conference leader, Christian Neff ["outstanding leader of the Mennonites of Germany"], died in 1946. The MCC then assumed the leadership and called the conference to meet in the United States in August 1948,

...serving the large attendance by holding sessions at two centers, Goshen, Ind., and North Newton, Kan...

Mennonite World Conference Assemblies

Assembly	Year	Location
1	1925	Basel, Switzerland
2	1930	Free City of Danzig
3	1936	Amsterdam, Elspeet, and Witmarsum, Netherlands
4	1948	Goshen, Indiana, and North Newton, Kansas
5	1952	Basel and Zürich, Switzerland
6	1957	Karlsruhe, Germany
7	1962	Kitchener, Ontario
8	1967	Amsterdam, Netherlands
9	1972	Curitiba, Brazil
10	1978	Wichita, Kansas
11	1984	Strasbourg, France
12	1990	Winnipeg, Manitoba
13	1997	Calcutta, India
14	2003	Bulawayo, Zimbabwe
15	2009	Asunción, Paraguay
16	2015	Harrisburg, Pennsylvania

...In the 1952 [5th] conference held on the grounds of the St. Chrischona Seminary near Basel, Switzerland, the program development and attendance reached a new level... [the] general theme of the program [being]... "The Church of Christ and Her Commission"...

...[And this] fifth Mennonite World Conference (MWC) meeting in Basel in 1952 signaled a new focus in MWC assemblies. The succeeding conferences moved from a focus on historical celebration and concern

for the Mennonite family to a series of deliberate themes focusing on theological issues...

...Indonesia will be the location for the 2021 [17th] assembly, with Europe the likely location for the 2027 [18th] assembly. [See the chart of the 1st 16 Mennonite World Conference Assemblies, on p.453]

And I'll mention for now that,

The **Free City of Danzig** [2nd MWC Assembly] ...was a semi-autonomous city-state that existed between 1920 and 1939, consisting of the Baltic Sea port of **Danzig** (now *Gdańsk*, Poland [map, SEC. 8, p.27]) and nearly 200 towns and villages in the surrounding areas. It was created... with the... Treaty of Versailles after... World War I [and it lasted till WWII].

And getting back to "my favorite encyclopedia", and whether ready or not to **discern** ^{G1253} and **judge** ^{G350} the difference ([Heb 5:14](#); [1Co 2:15](#)), back to times when Anabaptist sometimes did engage in **ungodly, violent** ^{G970; G971; H1498; H1500; H2555 H6231; G1286} and **'destructive'** ^{H6; H10; H11; H12; H13; H343; H4103; H4288; H4876; H4889; H6365; H6986; H7667; H7701; H7722; H7843 H7845; H8395; G684} acts, but also back to... **'a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord'** ([Eph 6:21](#)), Menno...

Simmons grew up in a disillusioned war-torn country. Friesland was ravaged by war in the late 15th and early 16th centuries. Landsknecht soldiers [- "mercenary soldiers", "intended to indicate soldiers of the [relative]

lowlands of Swabia", and that would be in Southern Germany bordering Switzerland, and evidently mainly Catholics, as "opposed to the "highlander" Swiss mercenaries", who were evidently also mainly Catholics,] haunted the Frisian lands in the 1490s to force the 'Free' Frisians to accept the duke of Saxony-Meissen as their head of state. The duke was the governor of the Netherlands for the Habsburg family. [But **'unfortunately'...**] One of the arch-enemies of the Habsburgs, the Duke of Guelders [or Gelderland] invaded Friesland in 1515 and conquered half of it. **Saxony** [in **Germany**, remainder of it seen in dark green, large map, p.454] ceded the other half to the Habsburgs. The Frisians tried to regain their freedom but they were too weak and eventually accepted the imperial authority of the Habsburg emperor Charles V.



The Saxons were “a group of Germanic tribes first mentioned as living near the North Sea coast of what is now Germany (Old Saxony), in the late Roman Empire”, and “mentioned as raiding and settling in many North Sea areas, as well as pushing south inland towards the Franks”, and this expansion “corres-ponds... [roughly] to the modern German in **dark green**], the 2 states that most Saxony to Saxony] northeastern] part of (small map, **p.454**), settled by the Saxons Also, “Significant of Great Britain in the part of the merged eventually organised England”, while those and otherwise known subdued by incorporated into the by 804”, shortly after [‘Holy Blood’-ruled] “raised... to the the Holy Roman Empire”, and, “After the Empire's dissolution in 1806, the [‘Holy Blood’ House of] Wettin electors raised Saxony to a kingdom”. **Pop Quiz:** name at least half of the 16 German states on the maps on **p.454**.



states of **Lower Saxony** [again **Saxony-Anhalt** [and **Thuringia**, directly connect Lower and the Westphalian [or **North Rhine-Westphalia**”, this being generally “the area in the late Early Middle Ages”. numbers settled in large parts early Middle Ages and formed group of Anglo-Saxons who the first united Kingdom of who remained in Germany, as “Old Saxons”, “were Charlemagne [in 772]... and Carolingian Empire (Francia) which it became “a medieval duchy”, and in 1356 was status” of “an electorate of

Note: “The older Ernestine branch [of the Saxon House of Wettin] played a key role during the Protestant Reformation”, first with Frederick (or Friedrich) III, Elector of Saxony, “also known as **Frederick the Wise**”, who evidently really was **wise** [H7919: H2450: G4680: G5429](#), as he was “one of the most powerful early



defenders of Martin Luther, Lutheranism and the Protestant Reformation”, and he “appointed Martin Luther (1512) to the University of Wittenberg which he had established in 1502”, and beyond that he was “among the princes who pressed the need of reform upon Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian I”, and despite his ‘fetish’ for “relics”, (that I **hope**, along with that **great whore ‘herself’**, he **escaped**), he “ensured Luther would be heard”, and “protected Martin Luther from the Pope's enforcement of the edict [of Worms] by faking a highway attack on Luther's way back to Wittenberg,

abducting and then hiding him at **Wartburg Castle**” (photo, **p.455**), where **our brother** Martin “translated the New Testament... into German”.

The Edict of Worms from Charles V, from the “**Diet of Worms 1521**... an imperial diet (assembly) of the Holy Roman Empire held... in Worms [“in **Rhineland-Palatinate**... on the Upper Rhine” - find it too], then an Imperial Free City of the Empire”, in part reads:

For this reason we forbid anyone from this time forward to dare, either by words or by deeds, to receive, defend, sustain, or favour the said Martin Luther. On the contrary, we want him to be apprehended and punished as a notorious heretic, as he deserves, to be brought personally

before us, or to be securely guarded until those who have captured him inform us, whereupon we will order the appropriate manner of proceeding against the said Luther. Those who will help in his capture will be rewarded generously for their good work.

And since our brother Frederick or Friedrich “died unmarried”, his (and **our**) brother John or...

Johann... known as **Johann the Steadfast** or **Johann the Constant...** was [the next] Elector of Saxony... from the [“Ernestine branch” of the] House of Wettin [and the next “patron of Martin Luther”, who continued in his brother’s place this **good fight of faith**]...

He is notable for organising the Lutheran Church in the Electorate of Saxony from a state and administrative level. In that, he was aided by Martin Luther, whose "Saxon model" of a Lutheran church was also soon to be implemented beyond Saxony, in other territories of the Holy Roman Empire. Luther turned to the Elector for secular leadership and funds on behalf of a church largely shorn of its assets and income after the break with Rome...

...In 1527 the Evangelical-Lutheran Church was founded, whose [first] bishop was [**our brother Johann,**] the Elector of Saxony.

And ‘**fortunately**’ (in **our** perspective), or ‘**predestinatively**’ (in God’s), Johann’s son, Johann Friedrich I, the next Elector of Saxony, carried on his uncle and father’s **good fight of faith**...

He received his education from George Spalatin, whom he highly esteemed during his whole life. Spalatin was Martin Luther's friend and advisor and thus, through Spalatin's schooling, Johann developed a devotion to the teachings of Martin Luther. His knowledge of history was comprehensive, and his library... was one of the largest in Germany.

He cultivated a personal relationship with Martin Luther, beginning to correspond with him in the days when the bull of excommunication was first issued against the Reformer [- this “bull” (pun unavoidable) being the Edict of Worms], and showing himself a convinced adherent of Luther. He carefully observed the development of the reformatory movement. He read Luther's writings, urged the printing of the first complete

(Wittenberg) edition of his works [- 19 “volumes published between 1539-1558”], and in the latter years of his life promoted the compilation of the Jena edition [13 “volumes published between 1555-1558”]. At the Elector castle at Torgau [now in “northwestern Saxony”, called “**Hartenfels castle** [which still] dominates the town”, photo, p.456], he constructed a chapel specifically designed to be a Lutheran place of worship and invited Martin Luther to deliver the inaugural sermon.



But **'unfortunately'**, (yet no less **'predestinatedly'**, as **'unavoidably'**, **all things work together for good to them that love God...** [and] **are the called according to his purpose**, while **to them** who **choose not to love God**, and who **received not the love of the truth**, and **believe 'lies'** and the **strong delusion** God **'sends'** - both before and after their **conscience**^{G4893} is **seared**^{G2743}, and they're **'given' over to a reprobate mind** - the opposite must also be **'unavoidable'**), the year after **our brother** Martin died, "Ernestine predominance [of the Wettin dynasty] ended in the Schmalkaldic War (1546/7)... After the Battle of Mühlberg [when, "The Catholic princes of the Holy Roman Empire led by the Holy Roman Emperor Charles V decisively defeated the Lutheran Schmalkaldic League of Protestant princes under the command of [**'our brothers'**] Elector John Frederick I of Saxony and Landgrave Philipp I of Hesse"], Johann Friedrich [I, the son of **"Johann the Steadfast** or... **the Constant**", and nephew of Friedrich III, **"the Wise"** in the Ernestine Branch of the House of Wettin] had to cede territory (including Wittenberg) and the electorship to [that 'turncoat'] his cousin [Duke] Moritz [or Maurice 'the Turncoat', of the Albertine Branch of the House of Wettin, because - and though Maurice was "also...Lutheran" - he]... rallied to the Emperor's cause", as "Charles V had promised Moritz [some of his cousin's lands and] the rights to the electorship"... Although imprisoned, Johann Friedrich was able to plan a new university", that was "established by his three sons... [in] 1548 as the *Höhere Landesschule* (Higher State School) at Jena", the school that Holy Roman "Emperor Ferdinand I awarded... the status of university", but surely only to avoid an otherwise 'too unstable peace'.

And you may remember that this son of Johann (no numeral) and nephew of Friedrich III, Johann Friedrich I, is also "called **Johann the Magnanimous**, or **St. Johann the Steadfast** (by Lutherans)", "**Champion of the Reformation**", and that along with Philipp I of Hesse - who you may remember was also called "the Magnanimous", having "introduced the Reformation into Hesse in 1526, founded the University of Marburg", and otherwise was "a leading champion of the Protestant Reformation and one of the most important of the early Protestant rulers in Germany" - that they are called by me, however needless to repeat, **'our brothers'**.

And , "Agnates ["male line" descendants] of the House of Wettin have, at various times, ascended the thrones of Great Britain, Portugal, Bulgaria, Poland, Saxony, and Belgium", yet, "Only the British and Belgian [Ernestine] lines retain their thrones today", while the "Albertine Branch...is officially treated by the German nobility as extinct in its legal succession-line".

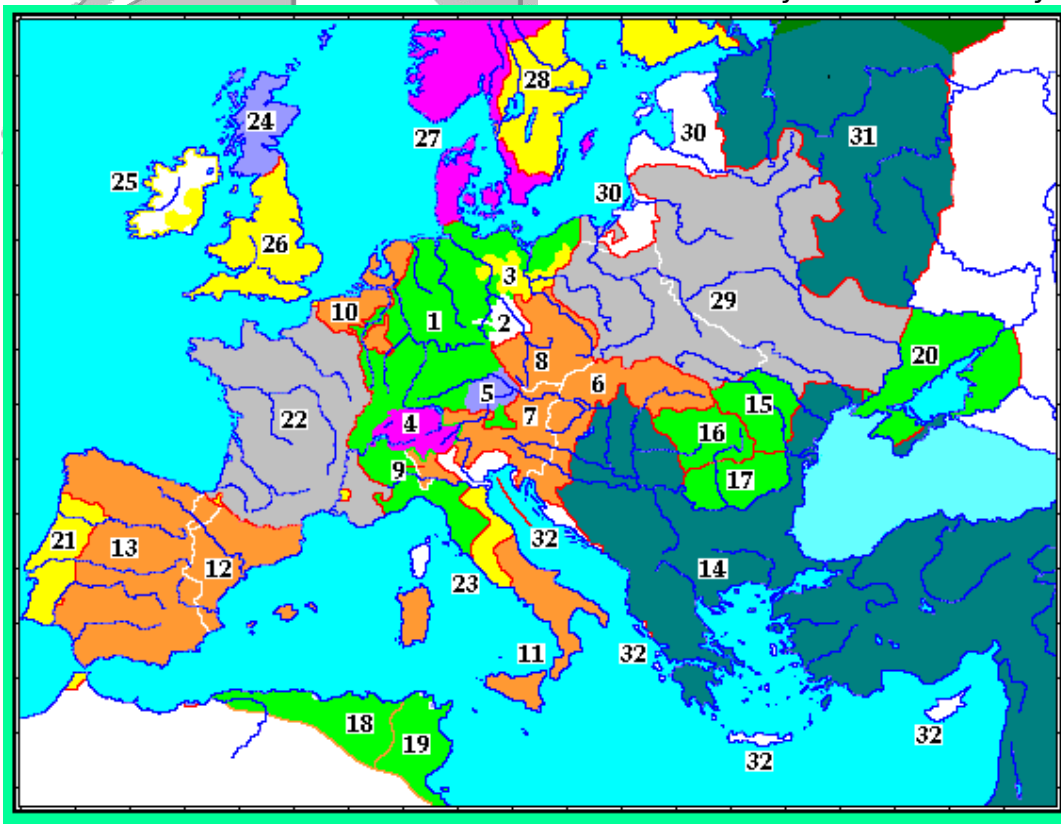
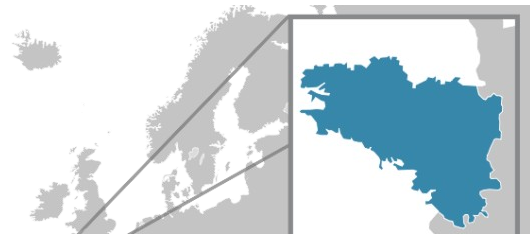
And Saxony later became "a kingdom" from 1806-1918, and that is, from "After the [Holy Roman] Empire's dissolution" to "Germany's defeat in World War I", and since then "twice a republic", both times named, The Free State of Saxony, because after WWII it "was broken up into smaller units during communist rule (1949-1989), but was re-established... [in] 1990 on the reunification of East and West Germany". And by-the-way, "its largest city is Leipzig", 44 miles (71 km) northeast of Jena, in neighboring Thuringia, another of the 'Saxon-heritage' states.

And jumping back over to Germany's northwest side, and into the Netherlands, our 'friend' Charles II, Duke of Guelders - our 'friend' at least because he was, "One of the archenemies of the Habsburgs" - was "a member of the House of Egmond", the son of Adolf of Egmond and Catharine of Bourbon, who 'wrestled back' his "Burgundian lands" from the Habsburgs, Guelders or Gelderland being partly 'in the neighborhood' of **our brother** Menno, but stretched eastward and "also comprised parts of the present Dutch province of Limburg", (which borders Germany, specifically the NRW), "as well as those territories in the present-day German state

of North Rhine-Westphalia... that were acquired by Prussia in 1713”, and the story of how Charles, (or we can call him Chuck), “wrestled back” his “Burgundian lands” from the Habsburgs is telling...

Charles was born either at Arnhem [- now “the capital of the province of Gelderland”,] or at Grave, Netherlands [- both near **our brother** Menno’s neighborhood,] and raised at the Burgundian court of Charles the Bold, who had bought the duchy of Guelders from Adolf of Egmond in 1473 [- Charles the Bold being the “Duke of Burgundy from 1467 to 1477”, whose “only surviving child [Mary of Burgundy]... inherited all the Burgundian domains before her marriage to [Holy Roman Emperor] Maximilian [I] of Habsburg”]. He [Chuck] fought in several battles against the armies of [the regents of] Charles VIII of France, until he was captured...in 1487.

Charles VIII of France, by-the-way, did us all a service too while “monarch of the House of Valois...from 1483 to his death in 1498”, though because he “succeeded his father Louis XI at the age of 13”, his “elder sister Anne of France acted as regent jointly with her husband Peter II, Duke of Bourbon until 1491 when the young king turned 21”, at which time, “In a remarkable stroke of audacity [and here’s the good part], Charles married Anne of Brittany [*Bretagne*] in 1491”, Brittany “then a duchy”, now “a province” in “northwest” France, (map, p.457), “also ... referred to as... *Little Britain* (as opposed to *Great Britain*)”, this marriage being “after she had already been married by proxy to the



Europe in 1550

- 1 Holy Roman Empire
- 2 Saxony
- 3 Brandenburg
- 4 Switzerland
- 5 Bavaria
- 6 Habsburg Territory
- 7 Royal Hungary
- 8 Austrian Lands
- 9 Bohemian Lands
- 10 Milan
- 11 Netherlands
- 12 Naples - Sicily
- 13 Aragon
- 14 Castile
- 15 Ottoman Empire
- 16 Ottoman vassals
- 17 Moldavia
- 18 Transylvania
- 19 Wallachia
- 20 Algeria
- 21 Tunisia
- 22 Crimea
- 23 Portugal
- 24 France
- 25 Papal State

- 24 Scotland
- 25 Ireland
- 26 England
- 27 Denmark-Norway
- 28 Sweden
- 29 Poland-Lithuania
- 30 Teutonic/Livonian Order
- 31 Russia
- 32 Venice

Habsburg Holy Roman Emperor Maximilian I in a ceremony of questionable validity”, and since Maximian, “Preoccupied by the problematic succession in the Kingdom of Hungary... failed to press his claim”, then, “Upon his marriage Charles became administrator of Brittany and established a personal union that enabled France to avoid total encirclement by **Habsburg territories**”. See the map of **Europe in 1550** on p.457.

King Maximilian [**Maximilian I**... King of the Romans (also known as King of the Germans) from 1486 and Holy Roman Emperor from 1493 until his death [in 1519, a reign begun in the papacy of Alexander VI, or let's call him 'Pope Abominable' if anything], though he was never crowned by the Pope, as the journey to Rome was always too risky” [uh-huh], he being “the son of Frederick III, Holy Roman Emperor, and Eleanor of Portugal”, who “ruled jointly with his father for the last ten years of his father's reign”, and he] ...managed to acquire the Burgundian lands for the Habsburgs by marriage [to Mary of Burgundy, “though he also lost the Austrian territories in today's [4] Switzerland to the Swiss Confederacy”, it being “a loose confederation of independent small states within the Holy Roman Empire”, and “the precursor of the modern state”, which “pledged neutrality in 1647 (under the threat of the Thirty Years' War”, but through the “marriage of his son Philip [I] the Handsome [father of both Charles V and Ferdinand I, Charles V the father of Philip II] to eventual queen Joanna of Castile in 1498, Maximilian helped to establish the Habsburg dynasty in Spain, which allowed his grandson Charles [V] to hold the thrones of both Castile and Aragon”, and beyond that he “extended the Habsburg influence in every direction: to the [10] Netherlands, [13] Spain [Castile and Aragon], [8] Bohemia [or the Bohemian Lands], [6] [Royal] Hungary, [29] Poland[-Lithuania], and Italy”, including [9] Milan, [11] Naples-Sicily, [23] [The] Papal State[s] and [32] Venice”, etc., as seen on the map of Europe in 1550 above, the legend indicating that the green (if not Ottoman Vassals), brown, yellow and white are 'shades' of the (Habsburg) Holy Roman Empire]. In 1492, [however] the citizens of Guelders, disenchanted with Maximilian's rule, ransomed Charles [II of Guelders, but in a good way] and recognized him as their Duke. Charles was [at that time] supported by the French King [Charles VIII, and evidently later by his successor and uncle, Louis XII, though these are the kings that started and continued the Italian Wars, France's attempts at assimilating Italy, and they were primarily occupied with this ultimately failed effort], but [or so] in 1505, Guelders was regained by King Maximilian's son Philip [I] the Handsome. Charles had to accompany Philip to Spain to attend Philip's coronation as King of Castile but at Antwerp, Charles managed to escape. Shortly afterwards, Philip died in Spain and by July 1513 Charles had regained control over the whole of Guelders. In his conflict with the Habsburgs, Charles also became a major player behind the scenes of the Frisian peasant rebellion and at first financially supported the rebel leader Pier Gerlofs Donia [about whom one historian wrote, “Out of personal revenge for the bloody injustice that befell him (in 1515) with the killing of kinsfolk and destruction of his property he became a freedom fighter of legendary standing”]. After the tides turned against the rebels, Charles stopped his support and switched sides... In the Treaty of Gorinchem (1528), Emperor Charles [V], son of Philip [I] the Handsome, proposed to recognize Charles of Egmond as Duke of Guelders under the condition that he would inherit the Duchy should the Duke die without issue. The Duke, who at the time did not have any children [and likely



expected a following assassination plot], delayed signing the treaty. Another battle ensued, after which the passage was removed from the treaty. In 1536 there was finally peace between Guelders and Burgundy with the Treaty of Grave.

Charles died at Arnhem, and is buried in the **St. Eusebius Church**...

...the largest building in Arnhem [photo, p.458]...

...The church was extensively damaged during the Second World War ... [and] completely burnt out. Later the tower, weakened by the fire, collapsed entirely... Following the war the church was restored between 1946 and 1961.



And as for other Anabaptists, **violence** and **destruction**, whether **godly** or **ungodly**...

...In 1535, his [and that is, **our brother Menno's**] brother Pieter was among a group of Anabaptists killed near Bolsward because of his participation in the violent takeover of a Catholic monastery known as the Oldeklooster (or... **Bloemkamp Abbey** [picture, p.459]). This monastery, near Bolsward in the Dutch province of Friesland, was seized on 30 March 1535 by about 300 Anabaptists of

Friesland, both men and women, led by Jan van Geelen, an emissary of the Anabaptists of Münster. They thereby won a strong position and from here tried to conquer the entire province. The imperial stadtholder [or Spanish Habsburg governor] Georg Schenck van Toutenburg was put in charge of capturing the old monastery from the Anabaptists. He supposed that he would be able to do so easily, but found himself compelled to conduct a regular siege. On 1 April he decided to bombard the monastery with heavy artillery and tried to storm it. Four times he had to lead his soldiers into the fire. On the third assault they succeeded in taking several positions. Some of the fortifications and the church remained in Anabaptist possession. On 7 April the monastery was finally stormed after a severe battle. 300 Anabaptists were killed. Of the ones who did not lose their lives in the storming, 37 were at once beheaded and 132, both men and women, taken to Leeuwarden [also "in Friesland", and now "the provincial capital of the States of Friesland"], where 55 were executed there after a short trial [and that is, after a 'routine inquisition']...

But speaking of that Proverb that teaches us to,

Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it [Pro 22:6](#),

and continuing without "apology" with the entry on **our brother** William the Silent...

In 1573, William joined the Calvinist Church [**thank and praise the LORD**]. He appointed a Calvinist theologian, Jean Taffin (1573-1581) as his court preacher. Taffin was later joined by Pierre Loyseleur de Villiers (1577-1584), who also became an important political [and evidently **godly**] advisor to the prince [though I'm guessing we can also number him among the **sons of thunder** (Mar 3:17), the evidence for which you'll soon catch if you pay close attention].

In 1574, William's armies won several minor battles, including several naval encounters. The Spanish, led by Don Luis de Zúñiga y Requesens since Philip replaced Alba in 1573, also had their successes. Their decisive victory in the Battle of Mookerheyde in the south east, on the Meuse [River] embankment, on 14 April cost the lives of two of William's brothers, Louis and Henry. Requesens's armies also besieged the city of Leiden. They broke off their siege when nearby dykes were breached by the Dutch. William was very content with the victory, and established the University of Leiden, the first university in the Northern Provinces.

William married for the third time on 24 April 1575 to Charlotte de Bourbon-Montpensier, a former French nun, who was also popular with the public. They had six daughters. The marriage, which seems to have been a love match on both sides, was happy [though not possibly as "happy" as they're going to be in New Jerusalem I should think].

After failed peace negotiations in Breda in 1575, the war continued. The situation improved for the rebels when Don Requesens died unexpectedly in March 1576, and a large group of Spanish soldiers, not having received their salary in months, mutinied in November of that year and unleashed the "Spanish Fury" on Antwerp, sacking the city in what became a tremendous propaganda coup for the rebels. While the new governor, Don Juan of Austria, was en route, William of Orange got most of the provinces and cities to sign the Pacification of Ghent, in which they declared themselves ready to fight for the expulsion of Spanish troops together. However, he failed to achieve unity in matters of religion. Catholic cities and provinces would not allow freedom for Calvinists [nor for any other Protestant denomination].

When Don Juan signed the Perpetual Edict in February 1577, promising to comply with the conditions of the Pacification of Ghent, it seemed that the war had been decided in favour of the rebels. However, after Don Juan took the city of Namur in 1577, the uprising spread throughout the entire Netherlands. Don Juan attempted to negotiate peace, but the prince intentionally let the negotiations fail. On 24 September 1577, he made his triumphal entry in the capital Brussels. At the same time, Calvinist rebels grew more radical, and attempted to forbid Catholicism in areas under their control. William was opposed to this both for personal and political reasons. He desired freedom of religion, and he also needed the support of the less radical Protestants and Catholics to

reach his political goals. On 6 January 1579, several southern provinces, unhappy with William's radical [in this case, **violent and 'destructive'**] following, signed the Treaty of Arras, in which they agreed to accept their Catholic governor, Alessandro Farnese, Duke of Parma (who had succeeded Don Juan).

Five northern provinces [however], later followed by most cities in Brabant and Flanders, then signed the Union of Utrecht on 23 January, confirming their unity [and independence from Spain]. William was initially opposed to the Union, as he still hoped to unite all provinces.

Nevertheless, he formally gave his support on 3 May. The Union of Utrecht would later become a *de facto* constitution, and would remain the only formal connection between the Dutch provinces until 1797 [or for more than 2 centuries, and it was kind of like the US Articles of Confederation, except the US version lasted only about a decade, and that is, until 1789]...

...In spite of the renewed union, the Duke of Parma was successful in reconquering most of the southern part of the Netherlands. Because he had agreed to remove the Spanish troops from the provinces under the Treaty of Arras, and because Philip II needed them elsewhere subsequently, the Duke of Parma was unable to advance any further until the end of 1581. In March 1580 Philip issued a royal ban of outlawry against the Prince of Orange, promising a reward of 25,000 crowns to any man who would succeed in killing him. [And this is when] William responded with his *Apology*, a document (in fact written by Villiers) in which his course of actions was defended, the person of the Spanish king viciously [though appropriately] attacked [including for his '**blood drunk viciousness'**], and his own Protestant allegiance restated. In the mean time, William and his supporters were looking for foreign support. The prince had already sought French assistance on several occasions, and this time he managed to gain the support of Francis, Duke of Anjou, [the younger] brother of King Henry III of France [- Henry, again, being "the last French monarch of the House of Valois", and the last king in the Capetian dynasty, with the reign of Henry IV, "the first monarch of France from the House of Bourbon", then already ruling as King Henry III of Navarre, just a decade away]. On 29 September 1580, the Staten Generaal (with the exception of Zeeland and Holland) signed the Treaty of Plessis-les-Tours with the Duke of Anjou. The Duke would gain the title "Protector of the Liberty of the Netherlands" and become the new sovereign. This, however, required that the Staten Generaal and William renounce their formal support of the King of Spain,

which they had maintained officially up to that moment. [See the 'quite awhile back' promised map of Navarre, including those nearby "British possessions" in France, as well as Castile and Aragon, etc., c.1400, on p.460.]



On 22 July 1581, the Staten Generaal declared that they no longer recognised Philip II of Spain as their ruler, in the Act of Abjuration. This



formal declaration of independence enabled the Duke of Anjou to come to the aid of the resisters. He did not arrive until 10 February 1582, when he was officially welcomed by William in Flushing [now

Viissingen, a city on an island called Walcheren on the North Sea and in the Netherlands, map p.461, and “a region... in the Dutch province of Zeeland at the mouth of the [“Western”] Scheldt estuary”, the Eastern Scheldt Estuary being the northern branch now no longer connected to the Scheldt River, while the ‘western branch’ still is and flows into the North Sea south of Walcheren, the dark green region



(and island) which, on the larger map below, identifies the yellow highlighted city of Vlissingen, this larger map entitled, Cruising the Scheldt River from Vlissingen, Netherlands to Antwerp, Belgium on p.461].

On 18 March, the Spaniard Juan de Jáuregui attempted to assassinate William in Antwerp [on the Scheldt Estuary in Belgium]. Although William

suffered severe injuries, he survived thanks to the care of his wife Charlotte and his sister Mary. While William slowly recovered, Charlotte became exhausted... and died on 5 May. The Duke of Anjou was not very popular with the population. The provinces of Zeeland and Holland refused to recognise him as their sovereign, and William was widely criticised for what were called his "French politics". When Anjou's French troops arrived in late 1582, William's plan seemed to pay off, as even the Duke of Parma feared that the Dutch would now gain the upper hand.

However, Anjou himself was displeased with his limited powers, and secretly decided to seize Antwerp by force. The citizens, who had been warned in time, ambushed Anjou and his troops as they entered the city on 18 January 1583, in what is known as the "French Fury". Almost all of Anjou's men were killed, and he was reprimanded by both Catherine de Medici [*'Queen Mother of Bitches'*] and [*our sister*] Elizabeth I of England (whom he had courted). Anjou's position became untenable and he subsequently left the country in June. His departure discredited William, who nevertheless maintained his support for Anjou. William stood virtually alone on this issue, and became politically isolated. Holland and Zeeland nevertheless maintained him as their stadtholder, and attempted to declare him count of Holland and Zeeland, thus making him the official sovereign. In the middle of all this, William married for the fourth and final time on 12 April 1583 to Louise de Coligny, a French Huguenot and daughter of Gaspard de Coligny. She was to be the mother of Frederick Henry (1584-1647), William's fourth legitimate son [*who became the "sovereign Prince of Orange and stadtholder of Holland, Zeeland, Utrecht, Guelders, and Overijssel from 1625 to 1647"*]...

...**Elizabeth I** [1533-1603] was Queen of England and Ireland from...1558 until her death... [in] 1603. Sometimes called **The Virgin Queen**, **Gloriana** or **Good Queen Bess**, Elizabeth was the last monarch of the House of Tudor.

Elizabeth was the daughter of Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn, his second wife, who was executed [by Henry] two-and-a-half years after Elizabeth's birth. Anne's marriage to Henry VIII was annulled, and Elizabeth was declared illegitimate. Her half-brother, Edward VI, ruled until his death in 1553, bequeathing the crown to Lady Jane Grey [*"great-granddaughter of Henry VII", and Edward's "first cousin, once removed", (she being from his previous generation),*] and ignoring the claims of his two half-sisters, Elizabeth and the Roman Catholic [**Bloody**] Mary, in spite of statute law to the contrary. [But] Edward's will was set aside and [**Bloody**] Mary became queen, deposing [*and finally executing*] Lady Jane Grey. During Mary's reign, Elizabeth was imprisoned for nearly a year on suspicion of supporting Protestant rebels.

...One of her [Elizabeth's] first actions as queen was the establishment of an English Protestant church, of which she became the Supreme Governor. This Elizabethan Religious Settlement was to evolve into the Church of

England. It was expected that Elizabeth would marry and produce an heir to continue the Tudor line. She never did, despite numerous courtships. As she grew older, Elizabeth became celebrated for her virginity [though it's questionable whether she actually remained a virgin, and if not, **'hopefully' she finally repented of any fornication**]...

In government, Elizabeth was more moderate than her father and half-siblings had been. One of her mottoes was "*video et taceo*" ("I see but say nothing"). In religion, she was relatively tolerant and avoided systematic persecution [of Catholics]. After the pope declared her illegitimate in 1570 and released her subjects from obedience to her, several conspiracies threatened her life, all of which were defeated with the help of her ministers' secret service. Elizabeth was cautious in foreign affairs, manoeuvring between the major powers of France and Spain. She only half-heartedly supported a number of [mostly] ineffective, poorly resourced military campaigns in the Netherlands, France, and Ireland. By the mid-1580s, England could no longer avoid war with Spain. England's defeat of the Spanish Armada in 1588 associated Elizabeth with one of the greatest military victories in English history...

...[By-the-way,] The execution [by Elizabeth] of [her "first cousin once removed" (from the generation following hers),] Mary, [the Catholic] Queen of Scots [widow of Francis II of France], in 1587 ended Philip [II of Spain]'s hopes of placing a Catholic on the English throne. He turned instead to more direct plans to invade England and return the country to Catholicism. In 1588, he sent a fleet, the Spanish Armada, to rendezvous with the Duke of Parma's army [of the Spanish Netherlands] and convey it across the English Channel... [**'Fortunately' and 'predestinatedly', he was hindered by** lengthy delays, lack of communication between Philip II and his two commanders and the lack of a deep bay for the fleet... [and,] At the point of attack, a storm struck the English Channel, already known for its harsh currents and choppy waters, which devastated large numbers of the Spanish fleet. There was a tightly fought battle against the English Royal Navy; it was by no means a slaughter (the Spanish lost 5 ships... the English lost none), but the Spanish were forced into a retreat, and the overwhelming majority of the Armada was destroyed by the harsh weather [read, by God]... [And so with the help of] "only... a slight tactical victory [of the Royal Navy] over the Spanish... [God by "harsh weather"] ...delivered a major strategic one - preventing the invasion of England."

Elizabeth's reign is known as the Elizabethan era. The period is famous for the flourishing of English drama, led by playwrights such as William Shakespeare and Christopher Marlowe, and for the seafaring prowess of English adventurers such as Francis Drake. Some [probably Catholic] historians depict Elizabeth as a short-tempered, sometimes indecisive ruler, who enjoyed more than her share of luck [read, God's **anointing**]... [On the other hand] Elizabeth is acknowledged as a charismatic performer and a dogged survivor in an era when government was ramshackle and

limited, and when monarchs in neighbouring countries faced internal problems that jeopardised their thrones. Such was the case with Elizabeth's rival, Mary, Queen of Scots, [widow of the short-reigning Francis II of France,] whom she imprisoned in 1568 and had executed in 1587. After the short reigns of Elizabeth's half-siblings, her 44 years on the throne provided welcome stability for the kingdom and helped forge a sense of national identity.

But more importantly, and like **'our brothers'** William, Johann Friedrich and his father and uncle, Philip of Hesse, Henry of Navarre, Chuck, (if **indeed** they're all really **'our brothers'**), and so many more, **our sister** Elizabeth **withstood** ^{H5975; G436} against **the great whore** and **her 'vicious and relentlessly' wicked 'onslaught'** - and against **the wiles of the devil** too - to "reinstate Catholicism" in England (cf. [Psa 11:2](#); [28:3](#); [37:32](#); [64:all](#); [71:4](#); [119:53,95](#); [140:all](#)).

And I should also add - though making a long story short - that it was "a series of errors of judgment by Mary [Queen of Scots, of the House of Stuart, originally Stewart, and descended from Robert I (*ttb* next paragraph), widow of Francis II of France, and cousin of Elizabeth, that] handed the victory to the Scottish Protestants and to Elizabeth". And when **our sister** Elizabeth appropriately "imprisoned" her cousin in 1568, Mary was the mother of an infant son by an 'ill-conceived' recent marriage, and so Mary chose to give her child to her cousin, Virgin Queen Elizabeth, for his protection, and so he was "raised as a Protestant", and to be the next king, and that would be James I of England and VI of Scotland, and yeah, the one who commissioned the KJV. And Elizabeth "resisted calls for Mary's death", though finally signed her 'death warrant', but reportedly "claimed not to have ordered it and indeed most accounts have her telling her Secretary, William Davison, who brought her the warrant to sign, not to dispatch the warrant even though she had signed it", and she apparently only signed it hoping to save her country from falling into another, unavoidably **bloody**, Protestant/Catholic religious war.

And let me also note, (like either you or I can do anything in and of ourselves, and I mean if you can **believe** me, I really experience that everything is in God's hands, and that He's just 'leading me by the hand'), that (1) Elizabeth's "rival" and "first cousin once removed", Mary, "also known as **Mary Stuart** or **Mary I**" of Scotland, and (2) Mary II of Scotland, "joint monarch of England, Scotland, and Ireland, with her husband and first cousin, William III of Orange", she also being "named after her [**'unfortunate'**] ancestor, Mary, Queen of Scots", were both descendents of Robert I, early 14th Century "King of Scots", "popularly known as Robert the Bruce of Scotland", and as an ally and finally (allegedly) betrayer and successor of William Wallace (- see the movie starring Mel Gibson, *Braveheart*), but on the 'plus side', Robert the Bruce was "excommunicated by the Pope", though near the end of his reign, "the Pope recognized Robert I as king of an independent Scotland", and "England...renounced all claims to sovereignty over Scotland". (See photo of the "**Statue of Robert the Bruce at the Bannockburn battle field**", [p.464](#).)

And if you're wondering how Elizabeth could have ever "courted" Francis, Duke of Anjou (younger brother of Francis II, Charles IX, and Henry III of France), I could add that to become Duke, and gain Elizabeth's favor, Francis,

...joined the [English-supported] prince of Condé [**our brother** Henry of Navarre's uncle, Louis] and his forces in the south [of



France]. When they were also joined by [**our brother Henry**] the King of Navarre's forces, following his [Francis'] escape from [his brother, Henry III's] court in February 1576, this combined army was enough to force Henry III, without a pitched battle of any sort, to capitulate and sign the very pro-Protestant... Edict of Beaulieu on 6 May 1576. By 'secret treaties' that formed part of this peace settlement, many on the Protestant side were rewarded with land and titles. Francis was awarded the **Duchy of Anjou** [map, p.464] (along with other lands) and thus became the Duke of Anjou.

...[And after the] debacle [or "overwhelming defeat"] at Antwerp... when Elizabeth I formally ended her engagement to him... Anjou [or Francis] fell seriously ill... [and though while sick he] reconciled to his brother, King Henry III of France... [shortly after] the Duke of Anjou was dead... [at] 29... [and his] premature death meant that the Huguenot Henry of Navarre became heir-presumptive [to the throne], thus leading to an escalation in the French Wars of Religion...

And though surely also **predestinated, our brother** Henry's end was arguably more tragic...

...The Burgundian Catholic Balthasar Gérard (born 1557) was a subject and supporter of Philip II, and regarded William of Orange as a traitor to the king and to the Catholic religion. In 1581, when Gérard learned that Philip II had declared William an outlaw and promised a reward of 25,000 crowns for his assassination, he decided to travel to the Netherlands to kill William. He served in the army of the governor of Luxembourg... for two years, hoping to get close to William when the armies met. This never happened, and Gérard left the army in 1584. He went to the Duke of Parma to present his plans, but the Duke was unimpressed. In May 1584, he presented himself to William as a French nobleman, and gave him the seal of the Count of Mansfelt. This seal would allow forgeries of the messages of Mansfelt to be made. William sent Gérard back to France to pass the seal on to his French allies.

Gérard returned in July, having bought two wheel-lock pistols on his return journey... [and] made an appointment with William of Orange in his home in Delft, now known as the Prinsenhof. That day, William was having dinner with his guest Rombertus van Uylenburgh [- "the father of Saskia van Uylenburgh, the wife of Rembrandt", and "one of the founders of the University of Franeker in 1585"]. After William left the dining room and walked downstairs, van Uylenburgh heard Gérard shoot William in the chest at close range. Gérard fled immediately.

The University of Franeker (1585-1811) "in Franeker, Friesland... was the second oldest university of the Netherlands, founded shortly after Leiden University", also known as "the University of Friesland", and for being "the stopover for many Puritans [in this case "mostly English Reformed Protestants"] on their way to, eventually, the American Continent, such as Peter Stuyvesant [who "served as the last Dutch director-general of the [American] colony of New Netherland from 1647

until it was ceded provisionally to the English in 1664, after which it was renamed New York", (and the capitol city, New Amsterdam, renamed New York), he being "a major figure in the early history of New York City and his name has been given to various landmarks and points of interest throughout the city", and he was "a member of the Dutch Reformed Church... [though one who] opposed religious pluralism and came into conflict with Lutherans, Jews, Roman Catholics and Quakers as they attempted to build places of worship in the city and practice their faiths", and this despite the fact that he is counted among those "escaping the persecutions of Bishop Laud", the English "Archbishop of Canterbury from 1633, during the personal rule of ['Catholic friendly' King] Charles I", the bishop ultimately being "executed in 1645" for treason, and at the same time "granted a royal pardon", though, besides torturing one 'dissenter', he was evidently only guilty of "obsession with points of ritual", and of 'disrespecting' his king by exhibiting this "obsession".

And Delft, by-the-way, is in the Province of North Holland, and...

The **Prinsenhof** ("The Court of the Prince") in Delft... is an urban palace built in the Middle Ages as a monastery. Later it served as a residence for William the Silent... [who] was murdered in the *Prinsenhof* in 1584; the holes in the wall made by the bullets at the main stairs are still visible...

...According to official records, William's last words were:

Mon Dieu, ayez pitié de mon âme; mon Dieu, ayez pitié de ce pauvre peuple. (My God, have pity [or mercy] on my soul; my God, have pity [or mercy] on this poor people).

Gérard was caught before he could escape Delft, and was imprisoned. He [too] was tortured before his trial on 13 July, where he was sentenced to an execution brutal even by the standards of that time [though again, ones considered appropriate for 'Holy Blood' regicide]. The magistrates decreed that the right hand of Gérard should be burned off with a red-hot iron, that his flesh should be torn from his bones with pincers in six different places, that he should be quartered and disembowelled alive, that his heart should be torn from his chest and flung in his face, and that, finally, his head should be cut off...

...Traditionally...the Nassau family...[was] buried in Breda, but as that city was under royal [Spanish Habsburg] control when William died, he was buried in the **New Church in Delft** [photo, p.465]. The monument on his tomb was originally very modest, but it was replaced in 1623 by a new one, made by ["Dutch sculptor and architect"] Hendrik de Keyser and his son Pieter. Since then, most of the members of the House of Orange-Nassau... have been buried in the same church. [However] His great-grandson William III, King of England and Scotland and Stadtholder in the Netherlands, was buried in Westminster Abbey...



Nieuwe Kerk [New Church]... a Protestant church in the city of Delft... [sits] opposite to the City Hall (Dutch: *Stadhuis*)... The latest ["members of the House of Orange-Nassau [that] have been entombed in the royal crypt"] are Queen Juliana and her husband Prince Bernhard in 2004... The church tower is the second highest in the Netherlands...

According to a British historian of science Lisa Jardine, he was the first head of state to be assassinated by handgun. The Scottish Regent Moray ["a supporter of the Scottish Reformation", which was "the process by which Scotland broke with the Papacy and developed a predominantly Calvinist national Kirk (Church), which was strongly Presbyterian in outlook", and "part of the wider European Protestant Reformation"] had been shot 13 years earlier, being the first recorded firearm assassination...

But evidently he was just another victim of the countless Catholic conspiracies, which again, is in keeping with the testimony of the ***mighty angel*** in our Lord's ***revelation*** who says,

...in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth [Rev 18:24](#).

...Philip William, William's eldest son by his first marriage, to Anna of Egmond, succeeded ...as the Prince of Orange. However, as Philip William was a hostage in Spain and had been for most of his life, his ["Protestant" younger] brother Maurice [or Maurits] of Nassau was appointed Stadholder and Captain-General [and that's "from 1585 at earliest until his death in 1625"}... Phillip William died in Brussels on 20 February 1618 and was succeeded by his half-brother Maurice, the eldest son by William's second marriage to Anna of Saxony, who became Prince of Orange. A strong military leader [for 40 years], he won several victories over the Spanish... [and] a very favourable twelve-year armistice [was signed] in 1609, although Maurice was unhappy with this... [and being] a heavy drinker... died on 23 April 1625 from liver disease. Maurice had several sons by Margaretha van Mechelen, but he never married her. So, Frederick Henry, Maurice's half-brother (and William's youngest son from his fourth marriage to Louise de Coligny) inherited the title of Prince of Orange. Frederick Henry continued the battle against the Spanish... [dying in] March 1647... The Netherlands became formally independent after the Peace of Westphalia in 1648 [*ea/c* minor].

And again but more specifically,

The **Peace of Westphalia**... was a series of peace treaties signed between May and October 1648 in the Westphalian cities of Osnabrück and Münster, effectively ending the European wars of religion. These treaties ended the Thirty Years' War (1618-1648) in the Holy Roman Empire between the Habsburgs and their Catholic allies on one side, and the Protestant powers (Sweden, Denmark, Dutch, and [Protestant German] Holy Roman principalities) and their [predominantly] Catholic (France) Anti-Habsburg allies on the other. The treaties also ended the Eighty Years'

War (1568-1648) between Spain and the Dutch Republic, with Spain formally recognising the independence of the Dutch Republic.

And these would be the wars - ending almost a century after Lutheranism became 'acceptable' by the Peace of Augsburg - by which, generally speaking, Calvinism (and Arminianism in the Netherlands as I will soon disclose) joined Lutheranism and Catholicism as 'acceptable denominations', and by which religious freedom for the more '**radical**' - in this case read, **zealous** - 'reformation movements' grew too, and especially in 'Protestant majority realms'.

The son of Frederick Henry, William II of Orange succeeded his father as stadtholder, as did his son, William III of Orange. The latter also became king of England, Scotland and Ireland from 1689. Although [or even though] he [William III] was married to Mary II, [Protestant] Queen of Scotland and England for 17 years, he died childless in 1702 [and so House of Orange rule in England began and ended with him, however, "William and Mary, [being] both Protestants, [and the ones who] became king and queen regnant following the Glorious Revolution ["also called the **Revolution of 1688**", it being "the overthrow of [Mary II's father, Catholic] Leonard James II of England (James VII of Scotland) by a union of [Protestant] English Parliamentarians with the Dutch stadtholder William III, Prince of Orange"], which resulted in the adoption of the English Bill of Rights and the deposition of her [and that is, Mary II's] Roman Catholic father, James II and VII... [and] William became sole ruler upon her death in 1694... [and] histories usually refer to their joint reign as that of "William and Mary" ", she being the one who "endowed the College of William and Mary (in present day Williamsburg, Virginia) in 1693"]. He appointed his cousin Johan Willem Friso (William [the Silent]'s great-great-great-grandson) as his successor [in the Netherlands]. [And not all of William the Silent's successors were agnates.] Because Albertine Agnes, a daughter of Frederick Henry, married William Frederik of Nassau-Dietz [which allowed him to become *stadtholder*], [so] the present royal house of the Netherlands is [also] descended from William the Silent through the female line... As the chief financier and political and military leader of the early years of the Dutch revolt, William [the Silent] is considered a national hero in the Netherlands, even though he was born in Germany, and usually spoke [and **prayed in**] French.

In the 19th century the Netherlands became a constitutional monarchy, currently with King Willem-Alexander as head of state: he has cognatic descent ["traced through both a father and mother"] from William of Orange. All stadtholders after William of Orange were drawn from his descendants or the descendants of his brother...

And by-the-way,

A statue of William the Silent was erected in 1928 on the main campus of Rutgers University in New Brunswick, New Jersey, a legacy of the university's founding by ministers of the Dutch Reformed Church in 1766. The statue is commonly known to students and alumni as "Willie the Silent" and contains an inscription referring to William as "Father of his Fatherland"...

...There are several explanations for the origin of the style [or title], "William the Silent"... The most common one relates to his prudence in regard to a conversation ["during a stag-hunt"] with the king of France...

And of course there's always more - and various versions - to every story.

But now we don't have to read too much 'between the lines' to **see** why Belgium 'broke away' from the Netherlands. Nevertheless, it was the later (19th Century), William I, King of the Netherlands, and that is, "William V's son, William Frederick (William VI)", who "studied briefly at the University of Leiden", (the university "founded in the city of Leiden... in 1575 by William [the Silent], Prince of Orange"), and who contended with Napoleon, including siding at various points with England, Prussia, Austria and Russia, that finally, for a short time, "fulfilled his family's three-century dream of uniting the Low Countries" (Luxembourg, Belgium, and The Netherlands), this "dream" partially collapsing with the (Catholic) Belgium Revolution of 1830, and a little further with (also increasingly Catholic) Luxembourg 'following suit' in 1839.

And it's apparently also time we recognize that Arminianism is "based on theological ideas of the Dutch Reformed theologian Jacobus Arminius" - "his supporters known as Remonstrants" - who after being educated at the University of Leiden from 1576-1582, spent time at the Theological University of Geneva [Switzerland], including time under **our brother** Professor Theodore Beza, "a French Protestant Christian theologian", who later in his career became the university's first "chair of Greek", and finally **our brother** Jehan "Calvin's successor", and that is, "after Calvin's death [Professor Beza became] also... ["chair"] of theology", this university being "founded in 1559" by **our brother** Jehan, and the school where our namesake for Arminianism experienced "pressure" for his "philosophical methods", but he finally received Professor Beza's 'letter of recommendation', after which he next "answered the call to pastor at Amsterdam in 1587, delivering Sunday and midweek sermons", and was "ordained in 1588", and after inconclusively 'wrestling' with his country's current pressing 'theological debate', he was "comissioned to organize the educational system of Amsterdam", for which he was acknowledged for having "done it well", and he also "greatly distinguished himself by faithfulness to his duties in 1602 during a plague that swept through Amsterdam, going into infected houses that others did not dare to enter in order to give them water, and supplying their neighbors with funds to care for them", after which he "was called back to Leiden University to teach theology", and "served from 1603 as professor in theology... until his death" in 1609...

His teachings held to the five solae of the Reformation [- these being the "foundational set of Biblical principles held by theologians and clergy to be central to the doctrine of salvation as taught by the Lutheran and Reformed branches of Protestantism"], but they were distinct from particular teachings of Martin Luther, Huldrych Zwingli, John Calvin, and other Protestant Reformers... Arminianism is known to some as a soteriological diversification of Protestant Calvinist Christianity [which means it involves "comparing various ideas about what salvation is and how it is obtained", and coming to 'different conclusions' than '**our brothers**' Huldrych, Martin or Jehan did]. However, to others, Arminianism is a reclamation of early Church theological consensus [!!!]

But '**unfortunately**',

...In the latter [or 2nd] meeting [of what was to become the Dutch Reformed Church, this meeting “better known [as the] Second Synod of Dort of 1618”, a “synod”, again, being “a council of a church, usually convened to decide an issue of doctrine, administration or application”], the Church fathers expelled Arminians [who were then evidently infiltrated by Jews seeking mostly just refuge]... The government of the Dutch Republic [then under Maurice of Orange], which had instigated the Arminians' expulsion, subsequently prohibited the Reformed Church from assembling synodically. No Synod was held in the Netherlands until after the end of the Republic in 1795.

And speaking quite a while back of the hazards of ‘jumping on sides’, while again ‘jumping back’ even more timewise, and enough so that exactly how far – and exactly where to – are again “uncertain”, and that would be into topics that are each “a contested issue in scholarly circles”, there’s also that so-called “prophet” Zoroaster...

...also known as **Zarathustra**... an ancient Iranian-speaking prophet whose teachings and innovations on the religious traditions of ancient Iranian-speaking peoples developed into the religion of Zoroastrianism [pronounce, *zohr- or zawr-oh-as-tree-uh-niz-uh m*], which by some accounts was the first world religion. He inaugurated a movement that eventually became the dominant religion in Ancient Persia. He was a native speaker of Old Avestan and lived in the eastern part of the Iranian Plateau, but his exact birthplace [too] is uncertain.

Dating is uncertain as there is no scholarly consensus, but on linguistic and socio-cultural evidence Zoroaster is dated around 1000 BCE [perhaps to King David’s time] and earlier, i.e., somewhere in the 2nd millennium BCE, however, other scholars still put him in the 7th and 6th century BCE as a contemporary or near-contemporary of Cyrus the Great and Darius I. Zoroastrianism was already an old religion when first recorded, and it was the official religion of Ancient Persia and its distant subdivisions from the 6th century BCE to the 7th century CE [and that is, until Islam took over, though, “A number of parallels have been drawn between Zoroastrian teachings and Islam”]. He is credited with the authorship of the Gathas as well as the Yasna Haptanghaiti, hymns composed in Zoroaster's native dialect, Old Avestan, and which comprise the core of Zoroastrian thinking. Most of his life is known from the Zoroastrian texts. By any modern standard of historiography, no strictly historical evidence can place him into a fixed period, and the historicization surrounding him may be a part of a trend from before the 10th century that historicizes legends and myths [- kind of like how Dr. Velikovsky shows us that “legends and myths” to some extent should be ‘historicized’ - *eaftc minor*]...

...In the Gathas, Zoroaster sees the human condition as the mental struggle between *aša* (truth) and *druj* (lie). The cardinal concept of *aša* – which is highly nuanced and only vaguely translatable – is at the foundation of all Zoroastrian doctrine, including that of Ahura Mazda (who is *aša*), creation (that is *aša*), and existence (that is *aša*), and as the

condition for free will. The purpose of humankind, like that of all other creation, is to sustain *aša*. For humankind, this occurs through active participation in life and the exercise of constructive thoughts, words and deeds...

...**Ahura Mazda**... is the Avestan name for the creator and sole God of Zoroastrianism, the old Iranian religion that spread across the Middle East [supposedly] predating Judaism, before ultimately being relegated to small minorities after the Muslim conquest of Iran. Ahura Mazda is described as the highest spirit of worship in Zoroastrianism, along with being the first and most frequently invoked spirit in the *Yasna* [- "the Avestan language name of Zoroastrianism's principal act of worship"]. The literal meaning of the word *Ahura* is "mighty" or "lord", and *Mazda* is "wisdom".

So it isn't yet clear to me which side I should 'jump on' in this case either. I mean the **wise men from the East** [Mat 2:1](#) - who had the **wisdom** to seek Jesus - may have been Zoroastrian, and/or maybe were **scattered** Jews (e.g., [Psa 44:11](#)). And I don't mean that any of them can be **saved** without Jesus, but that maybe relatively many of them were **accepted with him** before The Resurrection, and so by "divine anticipation of a redemptive act of free will" ended up in **Abraham's bosom**, and so were **led...captive** with the rest of **captivity to paradise**.

And somehow, though referenced by Dr. Velikovsky several times already, I have neglected to bio another very ancient, 'major celebrity', who by some accounts was a contemporary of Zoroaster, and that is, Hesiod. He was...

...a Greek poet generally thought by scholars to have been active between 750 and 650 BC, around the same time as Homer. He is generally regarded as the first written poet in the Western tradition to regard himself as an individual persona with an active role to play in his subject. Ancient authors credited Hesiod and Homer with establishing Greek religious [**'planet-god' worshipping**] customs. Modern scholars refer to him as a major source on Greek mythology, farming techniques, early economic thought (he is sometimes considered history's first economist), archaic Greek astronomy and ancient time-keeping...

The dating of Hesiod's life [too] is a contested issue in scholarly circles...

Greeks in the late 5th and early 4th centuries BC considered their oldest poets to be Orpheus, Musaeus, Hesiod and Homer - in that order. Thereafter, Greek writers began to consider Homer earlier than Hesiod. Devotees of Orpheus and Musaeus were probably responsible for precedence being given to their two cult heroes and maybe the Homeridae were responsible in later antiquity for promoting Homer at Hesiod's expense.

Three works have survived which are attributed to Hesiod by ancient commentators: *Works and Days*, *Theogony*, and *Shield of Heracles*... However, the *Shield of Heracles* is now known to be spurious [or "counterfeit"] and probably was written in the sixth century BC...

And Musaeus of Athens...

...was a legendary [and 'historicized'] polymath, philosopher, historian, prophet, seer, priest, poet, and musician, said to have been the founder of priestly poetry in Attica [- again, "a region in SE Greece, surrounding Athens"]... [who] composed dedicatory and purificatory hymns and prose treatises, and oracular responses... Herodotus reports that, during the reign of Peisistratus at Athens, the scholar Onomacritus collected and arranged the oracles of Musaeus but inserted forgeries of his own devising... [which were] later detected...

In 450 BC, the playwright Euripides in his play *Rhesus* describes him thus, "Musaeus, too, thy holy citizen, of all men most advanced in lore [read, in 'the **worship** of the **'planet' gods**]."

And finally, 'looping back around' to those 'planet-god-binding rings', (and it's OK if you're feeling a little dizzy, as it's been quite a long "loop back"), Dr. Velikovsky too appropriately enough 'draws the encircling line', confronting us all with the 'inescapable predicament' that...

...It is strange that this question [of how the Greeks and Romans knew that "Saturn is encircled by rings"] was not asked before...

[But cf. Thomas Taylor [1758-1835, "English translator and Neoplatonist, the first to translate into English the complete works of Aristotle and of Plato, as well as the Orphic fragments... and [many] other Neo-platonists and Pythagoreans... [his] aim...[being] the translation of all the untranslated writings of the ancient Greek philosophers... [and he] was also an outspoken voice against corruption in the Christianity of his day, and what he viewed as its shallowness" [though I'm guessing we should read, 'fundamentalness'] in *The Classical Journal* 40 (1819 [- available on Amazon], pp.324-326, and [the previously mentioned, and recently deceased,] Prof., Dr. Alfred de Grazia ["PhD in political science from the University of Chicago", and "Professor of Social Theory... at New York University", a "political scientist and author... [who] developed techniques of computer-based social network analysis in the 1950s, developed new ideas about personal digital archives in the 1970s, and defended the catastrophism thesis of Immanuel Velikovsky", specifically as co-author of the documentary, the "Velikovsky Affair" with Ralph E. Juergens and Livio Stecchini, and co-author of other Velikovsky bios], "*Ancient Knowledge of Jupiter's Bands and Saturn's Rings*," *KRONOS* II.3 (1977), pp.65 ff.]

...The existence of these rings around Saturn became known in modern times only in the seventeenth century, after the telescope was invented [or perhaps after it was reinvented a long while after *The Visits of Venus*]. They were first seen, but misunderstood, by Galileo...

[When Galileo first saw the rings in July of 1610, he thought them to be two satellites on either side of Saturn, and this is what he also announced in his *Sidereus Nuntius* [*A Starry Message*]. Cf. Arthur Francis O'Donel Alexander [a 20th Century "English amateur astronomer and author... known for his books *The Planet Saturn - A History of Observation, Theory and Discovery* (1962), and *The Planet Uranus - A History of Observation, Theory and Discovery* (1965), ...accounts of the observations of these planets from the earliest date up to the date of publication"], *The Planet Saturn*, (1962), pp.84 ff.]

....and ["these rings" were] understood by Huygens.

[Christiaan, Huygens, FRS, son of the 17th Century "diplomat and advisor to the House of Orange", Constantijn Huygens", whose "friends included Galileo Galilei", and who sent Christiaan "to study law and mathematics at the University of Leiden", but, as Spain subsequently regained control of the country, instead of becoming a politician, and more to his interests, Christiaan became a "prominent Dutch mathematician and scientist... known particularly as an astronomer, physicist, probabilist and horologist", and "as a leading scientist of his time... [and his] work included early telescopic studies of the rings of Saturn and the discovery of its moon Titan, the invention of the pendulum clock and other investigations in timekeeping. He published major studies of mechanics and optics (having been one of the most influential proponents of the wave theory of light), and pioneered work on games of chance", *Systema Saturnium* [*System Saturn*] (1659); Cf. Alexander, *The Planet Saturn*, loc. cit.]



If the myth did not by mere chance invent these rings, the Greeks must have seen them. The last case could be true if the Greeks or some other oriental people possessed lenses adapted for the observation of celestial bodies, or if the rings around Saturn were visible to the naked eye at some time in the past [and they apparently were just before Saturn 'went nova', before the *water canopy* came down, when back then everyone got a 'sky-size-lens' view of them simply by 'looking up'] - today they are not visible without magnifying instruments. There are cases of exact observations by the Chaldeans which suggest the use of some accurate technical means [or of records passed along originating with the Ark passengers]. [Prof. Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, p.?] These means could consist of a sort of **astrolabe** [- picture, p.470, "an astronomical instrument for taking the altitude of the sun or stars and for the solution of other problems in astronomy and navigation: used by Greek astronomers from about 200 b.c. and by Arab astronomers from the Middle Ages until superseded by the sextant" - such instruments supposedly being] like that of Tyche de Brahe who made most accurate observations of celestial bodies without the help of a telescope; also Copernicus, prior to Tyche de Brahe, made all his calculations of the movements of the planets before the telescope was invented. But neither Tycho de Brahe nor Copernicus saw the rings.

The statue of Saturn on the Roman capitol had bands around its feet,...

[Macrobius, *The Saturnalia*, I.8.5, transl. by Percival Vaughan Davies (New York,1969): "Saturn, too, is represented with his feet bound together, and, although Verrius Flaccus ["c. 55 BC-AD 20... a Roman grammarian and teacher who flourished under Augustus and Tiberius"] says that he does not know the reason... [Pseudo-]Apollodorus says that throughout the year Saturn is bound with a bond of wool but is set free on the day of his festival." Cf. *ibid.*, I.8.1.]

...and Macrobius in the fifth century of our era, already ignorant of the meaning of these bands, asked: "But why is the god Saturn in chains?"

In the Egyptian legend Isis (Jupiter) swathes Osiris (Saturn). The Egyptian appellation for Osiris was "the swathed."

[See below, section “*Tammuz and Osiris*”. Cf. Abraham Shalom Yahuda [late 19th/early 20th Century “Palestinian Jew, polymath, teacher, writer, researcher, linguist, and collector of rare documents... born in Jerusalem to a Jewish family originally from Baghdad... In 1895, at the age of fifteen, he wrote his first book (in Hebrew) entitled *Arab Antiquities*... [and 2] years later, in 1897 he attended the First Zionist Congress in Basel, Switzerland”, then taught in Berlin, and because of WWI, next in Madrid, and finally he relocated to New York to “continue his career at the New School for Social Research”, known as “a home for progressive thinkers... [and during] his lifetime Yahuda was a notable linguist and writer, translating and interpreting many ancient Arabic documents including various works of pre-Islamic poetry and medieval Judeo-Arabic texts... [and in] 1935 he published *The Accuracy of the Bible*, a work which would spark a significant amount of international discussion [and which according to Prof. Yahuda in his *Introduction* to this work, “the object” of it]... chiefly aims at proving through the tracing of the various relationships and especially through the establishment of the combined Assyro-Babylonian and Egyptian character of some of the Genesis stories, that the Biblical narratives by their form, their style, their linguistic garb and peculiar colouring could only have developed in the course of the migrations of the Patriarchs from Ur through Canaan to Egypt and the return of the Hebrews from Egypt back to the Land of Promise” [available at Internet Archive, above quote on p.ix, [https://archive.org/stream/accuracyofthebib028016mbp - page/n15/mode/2up](https://archive.org/stream/accuracyofthebib028016mbp/page/n15/mode/2up)], [and after] his death in 1952 his book *Dr. Weizmann's Errors on Trial* was published” - Dr. Chaim Azriel Weizmann being a “Russian... Zionist leader and Israeli statesman who served as President of the Zionist Organization and later as the first President of Israel... [and he] was elected on 16 February 1949, and served until his death in 1952... [and he] convinced the United States government to recognize the newly formed state of Israel”, and, “The work [of Abraham Yahuda against Dr. Weizmann] is a scathing attack upon Zionist policies that Yahuda had felt irreparably damaged relations between Jews and Arabs”, but, **God willing**, this will not ultimately cost him his **eternal life**, and beyond that, **God willing**, may he also, **like** Jesus, be **clothed with a vesture dipped in blood** (e.g., [Isa 63:1-6](#); [Rev 19:11-16](#)), having been helpful to Jesus to **repay...fury to his adversaries**, and particularly to **Idumea, (Edom, Moab, and Ammon)**, and against **all the kings of Arabia** (cf. [Isa 34:5-6](#); [59:18](#); [Eze 35](#); [36:5](#); [Joel 2:1-11](#); [Jer 25](#), especially Verses 21, 24, and 29-33)], “*The Osiris Cult and the Designation of Osiris Idols in the Bible*,” *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* III (1944), pp.194-197.]

In the *Zend-Avesta* [- “Zend” being “a Zoroastrian [ancient Persian religion] technical term for exegetical glosses, paraphrases, commentaries and translations of the Avesta's texts”, and a “gloss” being “an explanation or translation, by means of a marginal or interlinear note, of a technical or unusual expression in a manuscript text”, altogether meaning that the *Zend-Avesta* , in its various forms, only provides “commentaries on the Avesta”, while the Avesta itself is “the primary collection of [ancient Persian] religious texts of Zoroastrianism”, though for a long time in “Western scholarship”, and “well into the 20th century”, the “Zend-Avesta” was “mistaken as the name of Zoroastrian scripture”], it is said that the star Tistrya (Jupiter, later Venus) keeps Pairiko in twofold bonds.

[*The Zend-Avesta* xvi, transl. by James Darmesteter [19th Century “French author, orientalist, and antiquarian”, who in 1875 “published a thesis on the mythology of the Avesta, in which he advocated that the Persian religion of Zoroastrianism had been influenced by Judaism”, not the other way around, “as many scholars say” (!!!), and who in 1877 “became teacher of Persian language at the École des Hautes Études [“School for Advanced Studies” in Paris]... [and he] continued his research with his *Études iraniennes [Iranian Studies]* (1883), and ten years later published a complete translation of the Avesta and associated *Zend* (lit. “commentary”), with historical and philological commentary of his own... [and he] also edited the Avesta for Max Müller's *Sacred Books of the East* series.”] (1883), p.107]. [The text of the *Zend-Avesta* reads:

“Tistrya, bright star, keeps Pairiko in twofold bonds, in threefold bonds.” A third ring around Saturn was observed in 1980. Velikovsky also thought that Mithraic representations of Kronos with his body encircled by a snake (cf. Dr. Franz Cumont, *The Mysteries of Mithra* [1903], figs 21-23) may attest to a memory of the rings of Saturn. Cf. the Hindu Sani (the planet Saturn) shown in an ancient woodcut reproduced in F. [actually Thomas] Maurice [late 18th/early 19th Century, Oxford educated, “noted oriental scholar and historian, and assistant-keeper of MSS [“manuscripts”] at the British Museum”], *Indian Antiquities* (London,1800), Vol.VII, and described by the author as “encircled with a ring formed of serpents.” Tammuz, who represented the planet Saturn in Babylonia (Ernst Friedrich Weidner, *Handbuch der Babylonischen Astronomie* [again, *Handbook of Babylonian Astronomy*] [Leipzig,1915], p.61) was called “he who is bound.” See also Dr. Thorkild Jacobsen [“renowned historian specializing in Assyriology and Sumerian literature... [and] one of the foremost scholars on the ancient Near East... [who] received, in 1927, an M.A. from the University of Copenhagen and then came to the United States to study at the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago, where, in 1929, he received his PhD... [and he] was a field Assyriologist for the Iraq Expedition of the Oriental Institute from 1929 to 1937, and in 1946 became director of the Oriental Institute... [and] served as Dean of the Humanities Division from 1948 to 1951, as an editor of the *Assyrian Dictionary* from 1955 to 1959, and as Professor of Social Institutions from 1946-1962 ...[and in] 1962, Jacobsen became a professor of Assyriology at Harvard University, where he remained until his retirement in 1974... [and beyond] being an expert translator, he was a brilliant interpreter whose insights led to a deeper understanding and appreciation of the institutions and normative references of Sumerian and Akkadian culture... [and in] 1974 he served as a Visiting Professor at UCLA where he helped develop a strong Assyriology program... [and] served [in] 1993 as president of the American Oriental Society”), *Toward the Image of Tammuz* (Harvard University Press,1970), p.85, and Dr. Adolph Ernestus Thierens [a late 19th/early 20th Century “Dutch soldier, officer and astrologer ... [who] followed the family tradition and became an officer in the navy... [and in] 1921 he was honorably discharged... In 1907 he founded the Netherlands Society for the Study of Astronomy and Modern Astrology, of which he was president until 1922... He became known as editor of the astrological magazine Urania. His many publications are not only about astrology but also about Tarot, Theosophy [the study of “direct, unmediated knowledge of the nature of divinity and the origin and purpose of the universe”, the assertions of which are sometimes “characterised as mystical and occultist philosophies”] and Freemasonry. Thierens was an esoteric astrologer who approached astrology from a theosophical angle. The society founded by him still exists as a working community of Astrologers... In 1925 he obtained his PhD at the University of Lausanne in philosophy and a year later he was awarded an honorary doctorate there”], *Astrology in Mesopotamian Culture* (Leiden, 1935). Ninib, who was also Saturn, was said to hold “the unbreakable bond” or “*der maechtigen Schlange*” – Prof., Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr., *Die Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens*, ch.xvii, p.463.]

“The University of Lausanne...in **Lausanne, Switzerland** [on the north side of **Lake Geneva**, map back on **p.409**] was founded in 1537 as a school of theology”, and “to train ministers for the church”, and for a time “enjoyed a certain renown due to the fact that it was the only French language Protestant school of theology”, and probably where **our brother** John Nelson Darby, who is said to have “defended Calvinist doctrines”, ‘lectured’ on “biblical prophecy” in 1840. “As the centuries passed, the number of faculties increased and diversified until, in 1890, the Academy received the name and status of a university”. And so, like every other **godly** “school of theology” established in the Protestant Reformation and since then, (read, **‘unfortunately’**), ‘another one bites the dust’. (Not necessarily, however unavoidably, a reference to the “British rock band, Queen” – whose lead singer was reportedly gay – nor to their “alleged... subliminal messages through a

technique called backmasking" purportedly used in their song by this title, where the "chorus, when played in reverse, can be heard as "Decide to smoke marijuana", "It's fun to smoke marijuana", or "Start to smoke marijuana"" - really.)

...Saturn is encircled by two groups of rings - one larger and one smaller, with a space in between. To see this a better telescope than that used by Galilei or that used by Huygens is needed; the twofold structure of the girdle was first observed in 1675. [The observation was made by Giovanni Domenico Cassini [17th to early 18th Century "Italian (naturalised French) mathematician, astronomer and engineer", "known for his work in the fields of astronomy and engineering... [and he] discovered four satellites of the planet Saturn and noted the division of the rings of Saturn; the Cassini Division was named after him", and he "was also the first of his family to begin work on the project of creating a topographic map of France... The Cassini spaceprobe, launched in 1997, was named after him and became the fourth to visit Saturn and the first to orbit the planet".]

The rings of Saturn were known also to the aborigines of America before Columbus discovered the land; this means also before the telescope was invented [or 'reinvented'] at the beginning of the seventeenth century. An ancient engraved wooden panel from Mexico shows the family of the planets: one of them is Saturn, easily recognizable by its rings. [Edward King, Lord Kingsborough, *Antiquities of Mexico* (London,1830), Vol.IV, the fourth plate from end of the volume. See fig.]

Nor were the Maoris of New Zealand ignorant of them: "One of the great mysteries connected with Saturn is the still unanswered question of how the ancient Maoris of New Zealand knew about her rings - for there is evidence that they did have a Saturnian ring legend long before the days of Galileo."

[Guy Murchie [20th Century "writer about science and philosophy: aviation, astronomy, biology, and the meaning of life... [who] was, successively, a world traveler; a war correspondent; a photographer, staff artist, and reporter for the Chicago Tribune; a pilot and flight instructor; a teacher; a lecturer; an aerial navigator; a building contractor; and founder and director of a summer camp for children... [and he] was a practising member of the Bahá'í Faith ["a religion teaching the essential worth of all religions, and the unity and equality of all people"]... [and his] books included *Men on the Horizon* (1932), *Song of the Sky* (1954), *Music of the Spheres* (1961), and *The Seven Mysteries of Life* (1978)... [the] latter three books... [being] chosen for promotion by the Book of the Month Club... [and he] illustrated his books with etchings and woodcuts of his own design"), *Music of the Spheres* (Boston,1961), p.94].

[A useful discussion of Maori astronomical ideas is provided in a monograph by Elsdon Best [late 19th/early 20th Century New Zealand "ethnographer who made important contributions to the study of the Māori", "the indigenous Polynesian people of New Zealand"], *The Astronomical Knowledge of the Maori, Genuine and Empirical, New Zealand Dominion Museum Monograph* no.3 (Wellington,1922), p.35: PAREARAU represents one of the planets. Stowell [?] says that it is Saturn; that Parearau is a descriptive name for that planet, and describes its appearance, surrounded by a ring. The word *pare* denotes a fillet or headband; *arau* means "entangled" - or perhaps "surrounded" in this case, if the natives really can see the *pare* of Saturn with the naked eye [or were told of it by certain of their ancestors who earlier could]. If so, then the name seems a suitable one... Of the origin of this name one says, 'Her band quite surrounds her, hence she is called Parearau.']

In the myth it is said that Jupiter drove Saturn away and that on this occasion Saturn was put in chains. If these words mean what they say and are not a meaningless portion of the myth – in a dream, at least [and as *neurologist* Dr. Freud also asserted], there are no meaningless parts [and these “parts” supposedly sometimes also, as *psychiatrist* Dr. Jung, “known for” his theory of *collective unconscious*, also asserted, have universally “shared” parts, (read, **‘universally satanically propagandized’** parts)] – then the knowledge of the ancients about the rings of Saturn could have been acquired because of better visibility [- getting ‘warmer’?]: in other words, at some time in the past Saturn and Earth appear to have been closer to one another. [Oh, ‘colder’, because they weren’t likely ever so close, but there was once a ‘sky-sized’ *water lens* between them, and it’s greatly diminished brightness accounts for it appearing to be further away.]

Originally I assumed that the rings of Saturn may consist of water in the form of ice, but since the ancient lore all around the world tells that it was Jupiter that put these rings around Saturn...

[Regarding the process of formation of Saturn’s rings, Velikovsky thought that it might have been analogous to the formation of a disc-like ring of gaseous material around some stars in binary systems, as described by Herbert Friedman [20th Century “American pioneer in the application of sounding rockets to solar physics, aeronomy, and astronomy... [who] was also a statesman and public advocate for [evolutionary] science... [and, in] his lifetime, he was awarded the Eddington Medal of the [British] Royal Astronomical Society, the [US] National Medal of Science, the Henry Norris Russell Lectureship of the American Astronomical Society, the William Bowie Medal of the American Geophysical Union, the Wolf Foundation Prize in Physics, and the Albert A. Michelson Medal of the Franklin Institute (1972), among others... [and he] was elected a member of the National Academy of Sciences in 1960 and of the American Philosophical Society in 1964... [and his] service to [evolutionary] science included membership on the General Advisory Committee to the Atomic Energy Commission during Lyndon Johnson’s presidency, on President Nixon’s Science Advisory Committee, and on the Space Science and Governing boards of the National Academy of Sciences”, or in other **words of God**, he was the son of “an Orthodox Jew” who got “a scholarship to Johns Hopkins” and **became a ‘top’, ‘World-beloved’, ‘prize fool’**, and that is, among all the others **professing themselves to be wise Rom 1:22**, but, **God willing**, he still has another chance to ‘come to his senses’, double meaning absolutely intended, and the article of his Dr. Velikovsky cites being] in *Science* 181, (Aug.3,1973), p.396: “The gas [necessarily **‘mis-imagined’** as ‘forming’ over ‘ridiculously-long’ periods of time] enters into Keplerian orbits and accumulates in a disc somewhat resembling Saturn’s rings...” [but of course all this implies ignorance or compartmentalization of the option that the *rings* formed when *dwarf star* Saturn ‘went nova’, as well as when subsequent bombardment due to the ongoing **‘fallout’** from **the curse** likely further expanded and/or supplied these *magnetic rings* to their present extent.]]

...I considered that [because of Jupiter’s supposed involvement] they [Saturn’s rings] might have some other components, too. [But] Since the 1960’s spectroscopic study of the Saturnian rings has confirmed that they consist most probably [and almost entirely] of water in the form of ice.

[In August 1965 [the now recently passed] Tobias (Toby) C. Owen [“former student of G. P. Kuiper... [whose] earliest work was in spectroscopy of the giant planets...[which] quickly broadened to encompass all aspects of the origin and evolution of planetary atmospheres... [and] toward [mis]understanding the origins of all the planets and small

bodies of the Solar System... [he being another] one of the world's leading [**'prize fool'**] planetary scientists... [and] an active participant in a great number of missions, including Apollo 15 and 16, [and the] Viking, Voyager, Galileo, Rosetta, Juno, and Cassini-Huygens [*space probes*]... [who] played a leading role in the development of the Cassini-Huygens mission as a joint project of NASA and ESA, and was called upon frequently to promote this and other missions to funding agencies in Europe as well as to NASA... [and] had close ties with European [**'top fool'**] colleagues, notably in France where he inspired a vigorous planetary group at the Paris Observatory, and also promoted collaboration with planetary [**'top fool'**] scientists in the USSR/Russia and in other countries... [and the] DPS [**Division for Planetary Sciences**] as a division of the AAS [**American Astronautical Society**] began with the initiative of... [the **'prize fools'**] Carl Sagan, and Toby... [along] with the support of several [**'top fool'**] planetary specialists at Kitt Peak National Observatory [among others **professing themselves to be wise**]... [and "Toby" and] Carl forged the relationship with the AAS that persists to the present time", (bio at <https://aas.org/obituaries/tobias-c-owen-1936-2017>), and Toby also], writing in *Science*, (p.975) reported that "the reflection spectrum from the ice block gave best match to the absorption observed in Saturn's ring" - but that "the most likely alternatives" would be "ices of methane and ammonia" - both known ingredients of the Jovian atmosphere, methane being also in the composition of the Saturnian cloud envelope. See also Appen-dix 26.] [As early as 1947 Kuiper, (*The Atmospheres of the Earth and Planets* [1949]), concluded on the basis of spectral measurements in the infrared that "the rings are covered by frost, if not composed of ice." Cf. A. F. Cook [another **'top fool'** of the Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory and Harvard College Observatory, and "Committee Member" of the International Astronomical Union (IAU)] *et al.*, "*Saturn's Rings - A Survey*," *Icarus* 18 (1973), p.317: "Although frozen H₂O is a major constituent, the spectral reflectivity indicates the presence of other materials."]

And I shouldn't pass up the opportunity to further bio Dr. Gerard Peter Kuiper, 20th Century...

...Dutch-American astronomer, planetary scientist, selenographer, author and professor. He is the eponymous namesake of the Kuiper belt. Kuiper is considered by many to be the father of modern planetary science. As professor at the University of Chicago, he was dissertation advisor to Carl Sagan. In 1958, the two worked on the classified military Project A119, the secret Air Force plan to detonate a nuclear warhead on the Moon [or in other **words of God**, he took 'blowing it' in various 'fields' of **science falsely so called** to the 'highest level', puns intended].

...He went to study at Leiden University in 1924, where at the time a very large number of [*evolutionary*] astronomers had congregated. He befriended fellow students Bart Bok ["an exceedingly popular personality in the field of astronomy",] and Pieter Oosterhoff [ultimately "co-administrator, along with Jan Oort, of the Leiden Observatory"] and was taught by Ejnar Hertzsprung ["chair of astronomy at Leiden University" and "director of the Leiden Observatory"], Antonie Pannekoek [a Marxist who "is considered to be the founder of astrophysics as a separate discipline in the Netherlands"], Willem de Sitter [who "made major contributions to the field of physical cosmology", and "co-authored a paper with [the **'top prize fool'**] Albert Einstein"], Jan Woltjer ["the father of the astronomer Lodewijk Woltjer... the director general of the European Southern Observatory"], Jan Oort [who, besides what we already know about him, "made significant contributions to the understanding [and **'misunderstanding'**] of the Milky Way and... was a pioneer in the field of radio astronomy... [being heralded as] one of the century's foremost

explorers of the universe"... [and] one of the greatest astronomers of the 20th century... [who] revolutionised astronomy through his ground-breaking discoveries... [and all this] putting the Netherlands in the forefront of postwar astronomy"] and the physicist Paul Ehrenfest ["an Austrian and Dutch theoretical physicist, who made major contributions to the field of statistical mechanics and its relations with quantum mechanics" - or "**QM**; also known as **quantum physics** or **quantum theory**", and related to "**quantum electro-dynamics (QED)**" and "**quantum field theory (QFT)**", etc., each of these *theories* being parts of the perspective that "describes nature at the smallest scales of energy levels of atoms and subatomic particles", and each of these friends and/or mentors of Dr. Kuiper had various *heavenly objects*, and/or *earthly* institutions or observatories, and/or *falsely so-called scientific theories* or prizes, named after them, though they likely all now abide in *the lower [low or nether] parts* ^{H8482} *of the earth*, but we can nonetheless *hope* that some of them are Jewish too]... Kuiper finished his doctoral thesis on binary stars... in 1933, after which he traveled to California to become a fellow under Robert Grant Aitken [a "president" of the "Astronomical Society of the Pacific... [and] editor of the Publications of the Astronomical Society of the Pacific", who "delivered the Darwin Lecture before the [British] Royal Astronomical Society, where he was an associate member", and who "was chair of the double star committee for the International Astronomical Union" (IAU)] at the Lick Observatory [which is "owned and operated by the University of California... [and] situated on the summit of Mount Hamilton, in the Diablo Range just [or about 25 miles] east of San Jose, California... [and] managed by the University of California Observatories, with headquarters on the University of California, Santa Cruz campus [about 30 miles south of San Jose], where its scientific staff moved in the mid-1960s"]. In 1935 he [Dr. Kuiper] left to work at the Harvard College Observatory... [and finally] took a position at the Yerkes Observatory of the University of Chicago...

...Besides the minor planet 1776 Kuiper, three craters (Mercurian, lunar and Martian), Kuiper Scarp in Antarctica, and the now-decommissioned Kuiper Airborne Observatory were also named after him.

...The Kuiper Prize, named in his honor, is the most distinguished award given by the American Astronomical Society's Division for Planetary Sciences, an international society of [surely by now exclusively '*top fool*'] professional planetary scientists... [and by now just another] prize [for *fools* that] recognizes outstanding [but only *evolutionist*] contributors to planetary science, and is awarded annually to [*evolutionary*] scientists whose lifetime achievements have most advanced our understanding [and '*misunderstanding*'] of planetary systems...

...Astronomers [also] refer to a region of minor planets beyond Neptune [which includes Pluto] as the "Kuiper belt", since Kuiper had suggested that such small planets or comets may have formed there. However he believed that such objects would have been swept clear by planetary gravitational perturbations so that none or few would exist there today [unless instead they're the result of a *collision* that took place less than 6,000 years ago, and that is, shortly after *the curse*].

And one thing's for sure, some quantity of what ended up as mostly *water* got 'blown' (and/or 'sucked') into Saturn's *outer magnetosphere*. But whether a

significant quantity also got 'blown' all the way to Earth, and whether Jupiter's role in forming Saturn's *rings* (besides their mutual *atomic magnetic* and 'gravitational attraction') was more just 'optical illusion', are less certain.

Saturn's Golden Age

The age that man later called the Age of Kronos (Saturn) was remembered with nostalgia as an age of bliss. References to the Age of Kronos in the ancient lore are very numerous.

[On Kronos' golden age see Plato, *The Statesman*. Cf. Pierre Emmanuel Vidal-Naquet [20th Century "French historian who began teaching at the *École des hautes études en sciences sociales* (EHESS [or the "**School for Advanced Studies in the Social Sciences**... a constituent college of PSL University" ("Paris Sciences & Lettres")] in 1969", and "a specialist in the study of Ancient Greece, but was also interested (and deeply involved) in contemporary history", including that he "opposed the use of torture by the French Army... [and he was also "interested in"] Jewish history... [and] he criticized negationism" ["or *denialism*... an illegitimate distortion of the historical record... often imprecisely referred to as *historical revisionism*"], and though he "never abandoned his fascination with Antiquity, was also a supporter of Middle East peace efforts"), *Plato's Myth of the Statesman, the Ambiguities of the Golden Age and of History*, *Journal of Hellenic Studies* 98 (1978), pp.132-141. Cf. Porphyry ["Mr. **Pompous-ass**"], *De Abstinencia* [On Abstinence] IV.2; Teleclides ["an Athenian Old Comic poet... [dating] to the 440s and 430s BCE... [of whom only] six titles and a few fragments of his plays survive ...[one being] *The Amphictyons*, in which Telecleides presented a [Pre-Flood] Golden Age of impossibly effortless plenty"], quoted in Athenaeus ["a Greek rhetorician and grammarian, flourishing about the end of the 2nd and beginning of the 3rd century AD"], *Deipnosophistae* ["*Dinner-table Philosophers*"] VI. According to Macrobius, in the reign of Saturn there was no distinction between freedom and slavery (*Saturnalia* I.7.26) and all wealth was held in common (I.84). Cf. Gnaeus Pompeius Trogus ["1st century BC... also anglicized as **Pompey Trogue**... a Gallo-Roman historian from the Celtic Vocontii tribe in Narbonese Gaul [- Vocontii being "a Gallic people who lived to the east of the River Rhône in modern south-eastern France", which is "now Languedoc"]... [and he] lived during the reign of the emperor Augustus", and "was nearly contemporary with Livy", and is cited by Dr. Velikovsky] in Justin [about whom almost "nothing is known of... [his] personal history, his name appearing only in the title of his work... [though he] must have lived after Gnaeus Pompeius Trogus, whose work he excerpted"], [see] bk.43: "Saturn is said to have been so just that no one under him was a servant, nor did anyone have any private possessions, but all things were held in common and undivided, as if the inheritance of one belonged to all." On Saturn's reign in Italy, see Dionysius of Halicarnassus, *Antiquitates Romanorum* I. 36.1; Vergil, *Fourth Eclogue*, also, *The Aeneid* 11.252, Tiberius Catius Asconius Silius Italicus ["a Roman consul, orator, and Latin epic poet of the 1st century AD... [whose] only surviving work is the 17-book *Punica*, an epic poem about the Second Punic War and the longest surviving poem in Latin"] 3.84;13,63;17. 380. Marcus Valerius Martial, *Epigrams* 63. Macrobius, *Saturnalia*, VII.26.]

Hesiod tells of

A golden race of mortal men who lived in the time of Kronos when he was reigning in heaven. And they lived like gods without sorrow of heart, remote and free from toil: miserable age [or today's 'normal aging'] rested not on them... The fruitful earth unforced [or 'easily'] bare them fruit abundantly and without stint [or "end"]. They dwelt in ease and peace upon their lands with many good things [except for the '**angel tyranny**', and for the

increasingly common **wickedness of man**, and that until **every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually**...

[Hesiod, *Works and Days*, transl. by Hugh Gerard Evelyn-White [early 20th Century "English archaeologist and Coptologist... educated at King's School, Ely ["founded in 970 AD, making it one of the oldest schools in the world, though it was given its Royal Charter by King Henry VIII in 1541"]. In 1909 he joined the Metropolitan Museum of New York's expedition to Egypt, remaining with them until 1921, except for a period when he served in World War I... [and at] first he worked with H. E. [Herbert Eustis] Winlock at al-Bagawat in the Khargah Oasis and then at West Thebes until 1914... followed by the exploration of the Coptic Monastery of Epiphanius at SHAYKH 'ABD AL-QURNAH... [his] major undertaking...[being the] making an architectural and archaeological survey of the monasteries of Wadi al-Natrun, which resulted in the [posthumous] publication of his three-volume *The Monasteries of the Wadi 'n Natrun* (New York,1926-1935)... [and among] his Coptic contributions is *The Monastery of Epiphanius at Thebes*, with H. E. Winlock and W. E. [Walter Ewing] Crum", late 19th/early 20th Century "M.A., F.B.A., Hon.D.Litt., Hon.PhD, Berlin", a "Scottish coptologist, or scholar in Coptic language and literature", who in "1939... completed *A Coptic Dictionary*, a dictionary of translations from Coptic to English"] (New York,1909-1917)", 110 [text at <http://www.sacred-texts.com/cla/hesiod/works.htm>, and Evelyn-White's bio at <http://ccdl.libraries.claremont.edu/cdm/ref/collection/cce/id/827>].]

Similarly writes Ovid in the sixth book of his *Metamorphoses*:

In the beginning was the Golden Age, when men of their own accord, without threat of punishment, without laws, maintained good faith and did what was right [though evidently decreasingly so after The Fall]... The earth itself, without compulsion, untouched by the hoe, unfurrowed by any [plow]share, produced all things spontaneously [but not as much as before the Fall]... It was a season of everlasting spring. [Ovid, *Metamorphoses* Book I, tr. by Innes.]

Rabbinical sources recount that men lived under very favorable conditions before the Deluge, and that these contributed to their sinfulness [uh-huh]: "They knew neither toil nor care and as a consequence of their extraordinary prosperity they grew insolent." [Ginzberg, *Legends*, I.]

And this Jewish perspective also sounds like what's going to happen again, and that is, at the end of The Millennium. And it will happen again even though **we** already **know** that **many** [Mat 7:13](#), **the number of whom is as the sand of the sea** [Rev 20:7-9](#), will again grow "insolent" (meaning, "boldly rude or disrespectful; contemptuously impertinent; insulting"), and evidently so much so that **GOD...** [will again **see** that] **the wickedness of man...**[has again become] **great in the earth, and that** [for these '**many**' as the sand of the sea] **every imagination of the thoughts of [their] heart[s]...** [will again be] **only evil continually** [Gen 6:5](#). And **we** - and I'm talking about those of **us** who have **vehement desire** to be among **our** Lord's most **diligent, fervent, and zealous** of His **disciples indeed**, as well as among His closest **friends**, while He to **us** remains **our** most **wellbeloved** (e.g., [Isa 5:1](#), and see Chapters 2-5 for the full context), and **we** His **betrothed**, but then and **for evermore** thereafter His **devoted** ^{H3374} and **loving** ^{H157; H2896} **wife** - already **know** that all this '**great wickedness and evil**' will happen again despite the then already ongoing **peace, order, justice** and '**prosperity**' of our Lord's **everlasting kingdom** ([Isa 9:7](#); [Dan 7:27](#)), and despite

His **rule...with a rod of iron** (Rev 2:27; 12:5; 19:15), and despite the **'open pit of hell'** Isa 66:23-24 reminding and warning everyone - at least annually - of the **'eternal consequences'**. And I mean it's evidently all **predestinated** that **we** won't be able to stop this **righteous judgment** ^{G1341} **of God** ^{G2316} from happening all over again.

And yes, here again **we** get another **taste** ^{H2938: G1089} of what a most **wise** king once said...

...in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow [Ecc 1:18](#).

Nevertheless ^{H3588: H7535: H61},

Save ^{H3467} **us, O LORD** ^{H3068} **our God** ^{H430}, **and gather** ^{H6908} **us from among the heathen** ^{H1471}, **to give thanks** ^{H3034} **unto thy holy** ^{H6944} **name, and to triumph** ^{H7623} **in thy praise** ^{H8416} Psa 106:47.

The dominance of Saturn at some remote period in the history of the life of the people on Earth was of such pronounced and all-pervading character that the question arises whether the adventures of the planet going through many exploits [and Satan's **'propagandizing spin'** of it all] could by itself be the full cause of the worship of the planet and the naming of the Golden Age, "the Age of Kronos" (Saturn). Saturn exploded and [being one of God's major, but more **'indirect'** **instruments of death** Psa 7:13, assisted in what] caused the Earth to go through the greatest of its historical catastrophes, and this was completely sufficient to make of Saturn the supreme deity; but it appears that the Age of Saturn is a name for the epoch *before* the Deluge; after the Deluge Saturn, dismembered, almost ceased to exist as a planetary body and when at length it was reconstituted [less than 7 days "after" it **'went nova'**, and again "after" The Flood, having also lost **magnification**] it was fettered by rings, and was far from being the dominant celestial body that would behoove [or **'suit'**] it as the supreme deity of the epoch. The "Age of Kronos" is so glorious an age that it is hardly thinkable to connect it [or its *rings*] with the period after the Deluge. The wailing for Adonis, Tammuz of the Babylonians, or Osiris of the Egyptians, deplored the end [and **'swathing'**] of its dominance, not the beginning of it [*eaſc* minor].

Then why was Saturn the supreme deity by whose name the great and glorious age *before* the Deluge was named? [Was it simply] Because it removed Uranus from its role of chief deity, and to the onlookers on Earth [by **'optical illusion'**], emasculated him? If the distances between the Earth and Saturn and Uranus were then what they are now, then such occurrences could scarcely be observable [without a **water lens** in the sky]: Uranus is [now] only faintly visible in the night sky over Mesopotamia in a most translucent [or **clear**] night. Saturn is clearly visible but is not, for an unaided eye, a spectacle in the sky [but again, it likely was when seen through a **'sky-sized'** **water lens**]; [and besides that] it was more voluminous and more luminous [as a **shining dwarf star!**] before the Deluge [and Uranus was likely bigger and brighter too before it somehow got **'knocked-over on its side'**], but if it

moved on an orbit not too different from the present one, and the Earth were moving approximately in the same quarters where it moves today, then the surprise still persists as to how a body on a 30-years-long orbit could make the inhabitants of the Earth on its one-year-long orbit, regard it the supreme of all celestial bodies in the sky [unless, again, there was a 'sky-sized' *water lens* between them (e.g., [Gen 1:6-7](#); [Psa 104:6](#))].

The appellative "sun" employed for Saturn could be explained by its unusual brightness when it exploded as a nova for a short time [and before that by the fact that it must have been a *dwarf star*, since only *stars* 'go nova'], actually [it may have 'gone nova'] for [less than] seven days [to give 'magnified viewing time' of the newly formed *rings*], before the beginning of the Deluge on Earth. Assuming [1] the length of the day in those times to have been not too dissimilar from its present value, [2] the velocity of the moving masses [from *nova explosions*] being on the order of 100 kilometers a second or 8,600,000 kilometers in a 24-hour period, and [3] the Earth and Saturn being on the closest points on their reciprocal orbits, or in conjunction [or *aligned*] (which is another surmise), [then] in seven days a distance of ca. 60 million kilometers would be covered [though by the end of the **forty days and forty nights of rain**, near 400 million kilometers could be "covered"]. On present orbits the distance between Saturn and Earth varies from 1,279 million kilometers at superior conjunction to 1,578 million kilometers at opposition; the lesser of these distances is ca. 21 times greater than that above calculated [but only a little over 3 times greater with those extra **forty days**]. This means also that unless the velocity of the ejected water [or "ejected" *protons (hydrogen ions)* that were supposedly *converted to water* upon entering Earth's *oxygen rich atmosphere*] was an order of magnitude greater than 100 km per second, the distance between Saturn and Earth must have been substantially smaller than it is at present.

Good math, but Dr. Velikovsky is implying that Saturn used be as close or closer to Earth as

Mars now gets. ("The minimum distance from the Earth to Mars is about 54.6 million kilometers. The farthest apart they can be is about 401 million km") And yes, Saturn may have 'blown a little outward' from the Sun, but more significantly, after it 'blew' it must have mostly only appeared to be noticeably farther away - when it really wasn't - this apparent separation being mostly an 'optical illusion' due to it becoming significantly dimmer, with all this implying that it's not likely that Saturn passed by Jupiter on the way out - as Dr. Velikovsky seems to have implied - but more likely implies that Jupiter was 'blown slightly inward', if any at all, having not 'gone nova', while Saturn by 'going nova', and thereafter appearing significantly dimmer, mostly just appeared to be 'blown a lot outward' from the Sun, but actually maybe only just 'a little'. So I still "surmise" that it was predominantly the Sun and Jupiter's 'inward pull' on Saturn that caused it's mostly 'inward explosion', and one that propelled Saturn only to what 'appeared' to be to a 'noticeably-farther-out' orbit. See it? Then again, this may also imply that no **rain** from Saturn reached Earth during the first **forty days** of The Flood. But **remember** (e.g., [Isa 46:9-10](#)), nothing taller than 'Mercury-class' *mountains* existed then, so there could have been enough '**water in the sky**' and coming out of the **fountains of the great deep** to do the job.

And then yet again, Dr. Velikovsky appropriately admits,

I have rather arbitrarily selected the figure of 100 kilometers a second for the motion of the exploded material; today the escape velocity, or the speed required for a projectile on the surface of Saturn to leave the gravitational attraction of the planet is but 35 kilometers a second. For Jupiter the escape velocity is 59 kilometers a second. Assuming that Saturn was of a mass equal to that of Jupiter, the same figure would apply to it too. With 100 kilometers a second we have almost double the velocity of escape. The [‘out of the blue’] arbitrariness of the assumption of such velocity for our calculations is obvious. But if the set of figures is not too far from what they actually were, the conclusion would be that the distance of the Earth from Saturn was but a twentieth part [or near a third part] of what it is now; this would permit us to speculate whether the Earth could at some early period have been a satellite [or moon] of Saturn. The distance 60 million km is commensurate with the distance of Mercury from the Sun [too, see next paragraph], or 58 million km; Jupiter’s satellites revolve at distances up to 24 million km from the primary. Theoretically Saturn could have satellites as large as the Earth: the Moon is only one-fortieth of the Earth in volume, whereas Saturn is 760 times larger than our planet. [The proportion of the Earth’s mass to that of Saturn is 1:90.]

As usual in this section I did most my ‘commentary’ work on each of Dr. Velikovsky’s paragraphs before reading any further ahead in his text, because the “simulation of what it’s like to grow in knowledge of God” really is what it’s all about. But this “surmise” of his in this last paragraph is entirely unbiblical (e.g., [Genesis 1:1](#)), and at least somewhat unscientific. Still he thought,

If such was ever the case, the "Age of Saturn" and the very unusual conditions under which mankind lived in it, and Saturn’s worship prior to the Deluge, would gain in meaning. The appellative "sun" used for Saturn would be understood as resulting not only from the great light it emitted for a short period when a nova, but [if **scripture is ignored**] also from its long-standing role of a primary [with the Sun ‘**mis-imagined**’ as ‘secondary’] for the revolving Earth.

If there is truth in the surmise, and nothing more it is than a surmise, that the Earth was once a satellite of Saturn, the latter must have revolved closer to the sun in order that the Earth should receive heat from it [except when *eclipsed* by Saturn] - Saturn [now] exudes little heat [Analysis of the data collected by Pioneer 11 has led to an estimate of a temperature of ca. 10,000 degrees Kelvin in the interior of Saturn. There appears to be some net outflow of heat at the top of the atmosphere [but the *dwarf star* must have *burned significantly hotter*]] - and if the age of Kronos was a golden age, then it is also proper to assume [or understandable to ‘**mis-imagine**’] that the conditions on the satellite Earth [when it supposedly orbited Saturn] were not unfavorable for life. The geological record documents extreme climates for the past of the Earth - times when corals grew in the Arctic, and times when the Earth, partly even on the equator, was fettered by ice.

Such climates require definitely abnormal conditions that could be created only by varying positions of our planet as an astronomical body [or just by 'flipping it around' in its present orbit]. Therefore surmises as made in this section are not in conflict with geological and paleo-climatological records [so much as with **scripture**] – yet it is not what could have taken place, but what took place, or the historical record [qualified by **scripture**], that is the proper goal for inquest. In the absence of direct indications we may only deal with the problem of the Earth as a satellite of Saturn as with a hypothetical construction, requiring further elucidation [which, as **scripture 'elucidates', only rightly and fully 'rules out' this "surmise"**].

It is assumed by modern astronomy that the ninth planet [or now the *planetoid or dwarf planet*], Pluto, was once a satellite of Neptune, which, having [supposedly *magnetically and therefore more elastically*] collided with Triton, another satellite of the planet, was thrown out of the ring and became an independent planet; the satellite Triton, however, as a consequence of the collision, reversed the direction of its revolution and became a retrograde satellite...

But even more likely, Pluto was either a more *solid* 'piece' or a more *liquid* 'blob' from the *collision* that formed the Kuiper and Scattered Disc *asteroid belts*, as I think Mercury and Triton were too, except Mercury and Triton, and others. by various *perturbations*, "escaped" from one or the other of these *belts*. But these *belts* were not identified until after Dr. Velikovsky's writing of this volume, and so he wasn't aware that there were likely other 'balls in play', and that there is now more evidence of multiple *elastic* and *inelastic collisions* that happened in the vicinity of Neptune.

[R. A. Lyttleton, "On the Possible Results of an Encounter of Pluto with the Neptunian System," *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society* 97 [1936], p.108. Cf. the criticism of Lyttleton's suggestion of R. S. Harrington and T. C. van Flandern in "The Satellites of Neptune and the Origin of Pluto," *Icarus* reprinted in *KRONOS* V.2. (1979), p.76. The alternative postulated by the authors involves a near-encounter between Neptune and a hypothetical planet of two to five Earth masses. The authors' suggestion that Pluto's newly-discovered moon may once also have been an independent satellite of Neptune could help solve the question of the origin of the Earth's companion [- or not].]

Dr. Raymond Arthur Lyttleton, "Fellow of St John's College" at Cambridge University, and "Reader in Theoretical Astronomy from 1959 to 1969, after which he was appointed to a specially created professorship in the subject", and,

He was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society in 1955... [by then already,] "Distinguished for his work in astronomy. Author of numerous papers on the [*ridiculously long ago*'] origin and early history of the Solar System, notably his modifications of the collision theory. Showed from work of Cartan that fission of a planet by rotation would give two independent bodies, and consequently that the [*thermonuclear*] fission theory of binary stars is untenable (The Stability of Rotating Liquid Masses, 1953). Author (with [*that 'prize fool'*], Sir Dr. Fred Hoyle) of numerous papers on the astronomical effects of accretion, and (with Sir Hermann Bondi [*KCB FRS...*

an Anglo-Austrian mathematician and cosmologist... best known for developing the Steady State theory of the universe with Fred Hoyle and Thomas Gold as an [equally 'ridiculously-long-transpiring'] alternative to the Big Bang theory") of two [papers] on the transmission of the tidal friction couple to the Earth's core and on the behaviour of the core during precessions. Author of a striking new theory of comets. (The Comets and their Origin, 1953.)

He won the Royal Society Royal Medal in 1965... [for] *his distinguished contributions to astronomy, particularly for his work on the ['ridiculously-long'] dynamica stability of galaxies.*"

Professor Lyttleton's generation younger, Yale educated ("PhD in Astronomy"), contemporary and critic 'across the pond', Dr. Thomas (Tom) C. Van Flandern...

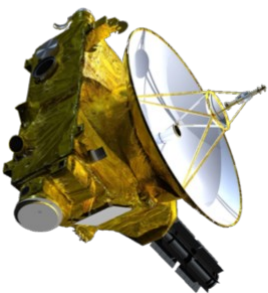
...was an American [evolutionary] astronomer and author specializing in ['ridiculously long ongoing'] celestial mechanics... [who] had a career as a professional scientist [working at the United States Naval Observatory (USNO)], but was noted as an outspoken proponent of non-mainstream [and that is, more catastrophist] views related to astronomy, physics, and extra-terrestrial life... [and therefore he was "forced...to the 'fringes'... [having concluded that] "reality differed seriously from what I had been taught" ", and so he] published the non-mainstream *Meta Research Bulletin*...

...He [also, in a later book, admitted that "he had become increasingly dissatisfied with the main-stream view of science by the early 1980s", and] alleged that when experimental evidence is incompatible with mainstream scientific theories, that mainstream scientists refuse to acknowledge this to avoid jeopardizing their funding...

...[And much earlier he predicted] that some asteroids have natural satellites [or orbiting moons], which was almost universally rejected, [but] was proven correct when the *Galileo* spacecraft photographed Dactyl, a satellite of 243 Ida, during its flyby in 1993... [and] he began to promote the belief that major planets sometimes explode... [and he] was a vocal opponent of the Big Bang model in cosmology... [However one of his "seven [evolutionist] principles" was] No creation ex nihilo ["ex nihilo" being Latin for "out of nothing"].

Dr. Robert Sutton Harrington, contemporary of Dr. Van Flandern, ultimately became "chief astronomer" at the United States Naval Observatory (USNO), where...

Another astronomer there [at USNO], James W. Christy, consulted with him after discovering bulges in the images of Pluto, which turned out to be **Pluto's satellite Charon** [see the photo, p.481, "taken by [the "interplanetary space probe"] *New Horizons*... July 2015", "launched ["in 2006"] as a part of NASA's New Frontiers program... [and,] Engineered by the Johns Hopkins University Applied Physics



Laboratory (APL) and the Southwest Research Institute (SwRI)... with the primary mission to perform a flyby study of the Pluto system"]. For this reason, some consider Harrington to be a co-discoverer of Charon, although Christy usually gets sole credit. By the laws of physics, it is easy to determine the mass of a binary system based on its orbital period, so Harrington was the first to calculate the mass of the Pluto-Charon system, which was lower than... the lowest previous estimates of Pluto's mass.

And I "surmise" that this suggests that both Pluto and Charon were originally "ejected", *molten*, and therefore *less dense*, 'sphere-itized blobs' whose *outer layers* while 'flying' through *space* 'crusted over', their 'expulsion' either the result of being *volcanic bombs* from Neptune, or being 'expelled' from one of the two *bodies* whose 'remnants' became the Kuiper and Scattered Disc *asteroid belts*, and that would be either when these 2 *objects collided*, or when *magma* 'squirted out' as a result of their *inelastic collision*. But since Pluto and Charon are in the Kuiper Belt, they were more likely "ejected" from the *object* whose 'pieces' now fill this particular *belt*, where objects like Charon, which on the surface look more like Mercury, being one of the more *solid* 'pieces' that was *ejected*



from the *collision*, and 'caught' by one of the originally more *liquid* 'blobs', in this case by what is now *the red dwarf planet* Pluto. See the size and color comparisons chart of [the Moon](#), [Pluto](#), and [Earth](#) on [p.482](#), and again Pluto and its 5 moons in [VOL. I, SEC. 2](#) on [p.121-2](#).

And you might want to revisit more of the charts, etc., in [JAC, VOL. I, SEC. 2](#), specifically from page 109 to 126. Or just "search" from the beginning of the document for the word *Charon*; that will put you in the middle of them. (If using a "word processing program" such as Microsoft Word, Open

Office, etc, or other formats that allow such searches, like web pages and PDF files, with your cursor on the first page of the document (or page) press the "Cntrl key" and the "F key" simultaneously, then type *Charon* into the "Find" or "Search" box and press the "Enter key".)

And if you look closely you'll see [Pluto's head](#) (on the chart on [p.482](#)) 'popping up' from the bottom. And speaking of characters who don't really care if people think they're certifiably [Goofy](#)... (pictures, [p.482](#)).



For much of his [Dr. Harrington's] career, he believed in the existence of a Planet X beyond Pluto [- the chart on [p.353](#), (or search "Planet X" from the start of [JAC, Volume II](#), and you can press the Enter key - or click "find - twice altogether to get back here), shows the supposed/calculated *orbit* of the best candidate I'm aware of for Planet X, or Planet Nine, which appears to intersect the *orbits* of several other *objects*, which, 'in turn', (uh-huh, puns naturally 'come around' with me), pass near Neptune's,] and supported searches for it, collaborating initially with T. C. (Tom) Van Flandern, though he became skeptical [or 'caved to pressure' from his *anti-quantavolutionist* (or *anti-catastrophismist*) "mainstream" colleagues and/or to the 'pressure' to keep his "funding"] later in life.

However a “non-mainstream” report says that he “died [in 2008] before he could publicize the fact that Planet X [Planet Nine?] is approaching [the *ecliptic* of] our Solar System”. And this report supposedly also prompts some to question, “Many feel his death [is] part of a cover-up? – one in which government agencies quickly moved to conceal the [possibly literally] most earth-shaking discovery in history.” (<http://yowusa.com/planetx/2008/planetx-2008-05b/1.shtml>).

And speaking of ‘bouncy’ *elastic collisions* versus the ‘crumbly and squirty’ *inelastic* variety...

...Another instance of a postulated conversion of a planetary satellite into an independent planet is discussed by Van Flandern and Harrington in their paper "A Dynamical Investigation of the Conjecture that Mercury is an Escaped Satellite of Venus," *Icarus* 28 (1976), pp.435-440]. Thus the principle of [at least] a conversion of a satellite into a planet in its own right is not a phenomenon that is discussed here for the first time.

And as Dr. Velikovsky and I have already provided the additional content, I would add to the above ‘dynamic’ title the appropriately, very long subtitle: “And the Scientific, Historical, and Mythological Indications of this Messenger Planet’s Previous Escapes from Earth, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, and/or Neptune, and Before that His More Solid Emergence by an Inelastic Collision as a Remnant of Two Worlds In Collision, Otherwise Resulting in the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts”. (And leave it to me to come up with the longest title of these ‘*studies*’ so far – 11 words and over 100 character longer than that one used for **our brother** Sir Isaac’s, ...*Dissertation Upon the Sacred Cubit of the Jews...*, to be specific 😊).

And for a variety of reasons which we’ve covered, and which I’ll leave to you to **remember** – or by review, **learn** – it’s more likely that Venus and Mars are *volcanic bombs* that “escaped” from Jupiter, and that Mercury is instead a more *solid* but finally also ‘sphere-itized piece’ from an *inelastic collision* resulting in the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts. But however it was **predestinated**, and otherwise ‘**angel-assisted**’, I’m sure that all God’s ‘**shots**’ were, and if still ongoing still are, **marvellously, wondrously, great** and **terribly ‘awesome shots**’. Aren’t you yet?

The Golden Age of Saturn or Kronos came to its end with [or when] the supreme god of that period, the planet Saturn, was broken up [or ‘blown out’]. The Age of Kronos was not [but just adding The Age of Innocence really was] the earliest age of which man retained some, however dim, memories – but farther into the past the dimness amounts almost to darkness.

[Similar traditions of a golden age existed among [1] the Sumerians (Dr. Samuel Noah Kramer [“one of the world's leading Assyriologists and a world-renowned expert in Sumeria history and Sumerian language [cuneiform]” of the 20th Century, who testified that he “played in the recovery, restoration, and resurrection of Sumerian literature... [including many] reliable translations... [and] helped to spread the name of Sumer to the world at large, and to make people aware of the crucial role the Sumerians played in the [re-]ascent of civilized man”, “*Sumerian Myths and Epic Tales*” in Dr. James Bennett Pritchard ed., *Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament* [Princeton, 1950], pp.37 ff.), [2] ancient Egyptians (François Lenormant, “a 19th-century French assyriologist and archae-ologist”, a “prodigy” who “was among the first to recognize in the cuneiform inscriptions the existence of a non-Semitic language”, who

“contributed articles to the *Dictionnaire des Antiquités Grecques et Romaines*” (the ‘long title’ to which I’ll translate as, “*Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities according to the texts and the monuments, containing the explanation of the terms which relate to the customs, the institutions, the religion, the arts, the sciences, the costume, the furniture, the war, to the navy, trades, currencies, weights and measures, etc. etc., and in general to the public and private life of the ancients*” – and yes, this beats mine by 10 words and 30 characters ☹, but falls 3 words and 45 characters short of Van Flandern and Harrington’s title added to my subtitle ☺), and... [Lenormant] for his “truly amazing” and “unrivalled” work was “named as a member of the Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres”], *Les Origines de l’histoire* [Paris,1880], Vol.I, p.58), [3] Hindus (*The Laws of Manu*) [or ‘The Laws of the King God Saturn and/or Mercury’ or “The **Manusmṛti** ...the most important and earliest metrical work of the *Dharmaśāstra*” (a “textual tradition of Hinduism”), and “a genre of Sanskrit texts...[that] refers to the treatises (shastras) of Hinduism on dharma”, where dharma generally “signifies behaviours that are considered to be in accord with *ṛta*, the order that makes life and universe possible”, and [4] Chinese (*Les Memoires historiques de Se-ma Ts’ien*, transl. by Émmanuel-Édouard Chavannes [Paris,18xx], Vol.I, pp.17 ff.) among others).]

And Dr. Velikovsky is right in a sense, the “farther...past...dimness [before Creation] amounts almost to darkness”, especially if you don’t yet **believe in the light that shineth in a dark place**, the **more sure word of prophecy**, as well as **in** its full context, “the totality of **scripture**”.

Rainbow

After the Deluge the hope grew into faith that no such or similar destruction would again come to decimate mankind. The story is told that the Lord made a covenant with Noah, and the following were the terms of the covenant:

Then God said to Noah... "I establish my covenant with you, that never again shall all flesh be cut off by the waters of a flood, and never again shall there be a flood to destroy the earth." [[Genesis IX. 8-11.](#)]

As a visible sign of the obligation not to repeat the catastrophe, a colorful rainbow appeared for the first time after the Deluge – it was a new and till then unknown atmospheric phenomenon. In this colored refraction of sunlight in small and suspended drops of water the rescued believed [[as they were told](#)] to see the divine promise not to repeat the flood:

And God said, "This is the sign of the covenant which I make between me and you and every living creature that is with you, for all future generations: I set my bow in the cloud, and it shall be a sign of the covenant between me and the earth. When I bring the clouds over the earth and the bow is seen in the clouds, I will remember my covenant.

[[Genesis IX. 12-15.](#)] [According to Genesis II. 5-6 no rain fell on the newly created earth, which was watered only by a mist ascending from the ground and falling as dew. If this

phenomenon persisted until the Deluge this would explain the novelty of the rainbow after the catastrophe.

Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa, the Spanish conquistador who traveled in the Andes in the sixteenth century, recorded in his *Historia de los Incas* a tale about Manco Capac, the first Inca, which has a curious resemblance to the Biblical story. Emerging from a cave after the re-appearance of the sun, Manco Capac and his brothers “arrived at the mountain which is two leagues, approximately, from the town of Cuzco, and climbing to the top, they saw in it the rainbow, which the natives call *guanacuari*. And, interpreting it as a favorable omen, Manco Capac said: ‘Consider this a sign that the world will not again be destroyed by water’” (“*Tened aquello por senal que no sera el mundo mas destruido por agua!*” Chapter 12). The rainbow was depicted on the altar of the Coricancha in the temple of Viracocha in Cuzco. See Reiner Tom Zuidema [a 20th to early 21st Century “professor of Anthropology and Latin American and Caribbean Studies at University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign. He is well known for his seminal contributions on Inca social and political organization. His early work consisted of a structural analysis of the ceque system. He later extended this approach, based on French and Dutch structuralism, to other aspects of Andean civilization, notably kinship, the Inca calendar and Incaic understanding of astronomy”], “*La Imagen del Sol y la Huaca de Susurpuquio en el Sistema Astronomico de los Incas en el Cuzco*” [“*The Image of the Sun and the Huaca de Susurpuquio* [the “revered...monument” of “the spring at Susur”] *in the Astronomical System of the Incas in Cuzco*”], *Journal de la Societe de Americanistes* [*Journal of the Society of Americanists*] LXIII (1974-76), p.218. If, as Dwardu Cardona has suggested, the reference to the rainbow in this passage is to the rings of Saturn - a suggestion with which I tend to concur - the “bondage” of Saturn in its rings may have been regarded as a guarantee of its future behavior.]

The before referenced, but not bio'ed, and recently passed, “**Dwardu Edward Cardona**... educated in **Malta, Europe** [map, p.484], from where he emigrated to Canada in 1959 ...[and] in mid-1960... became involved in the study of catastrophism and the reconstruction of the Solar System's cosmic history... [and] since then, acted as a Contributing Editor for *Kronos* and, later, as a Senior Editor... and as Editor of *Aeon*... [as well as being] a Founding Father of the Canadian Society for Interdisciplinary Studies (now defunct), and has acted as a consultant on mythology and cosmogony for *Chronology and Catastrophism Review* [*SIS C&C Review*], which is the official organ of the British-based Society for Interdisciplinary Studies. He has also acted as the Series Editor for the Osiris Series of books sponsored by Cosmos & Chronos [“(C&C)... a non-profit... organization, formed in 1975 by [Dr.] C. J. Ransom at the request of Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky. It [C&C] has provided research funding to individuals and organizations” and “published the journal *Kronos*”, etc.]. He [Mr. Cardona] has also contributed articles to *Frontiers of Science* [a now “failed” periodical which Dr. Alfred de Grazia called, “The only magazine with a general readership that gave sympathetic attention to quantavolution” (yes, read, *catastrophism*)].



As a writer, Cardona has now published well over a hundred articles, notably on the "Saturn theory", in various periodicals, as well as the books *God Star* (2006), *Flare Star* (2007), and *Primordial Star* (2009). He has additionally lectured at the University of Bergamo, in Italy, and at various organizations in Canada, the United States, and England...

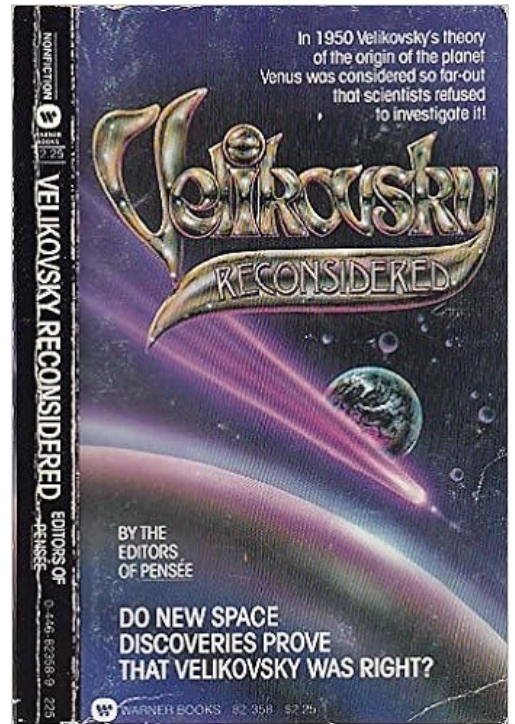
Dr. C. J. Ransom."has been an associate editor and contributor of *Pensée* and *Kronos*, a contributor to the SIS journal *Chronology and Catastrophism Review*... the author of the book, *The Age of Velikovsky*... the Executive Director of the organisation Cosmos and Chronos... has a diverse background in plasma physics research, aerospace research, computer aided analysis [etc.]... received his Ph.D. in plasma physics at The University of Texas... conducted research and technical computing in the aerospace industry for over 30 years... [and] now performs plasma experiments modeling crater formation on asteroids, moons and planets... at the Vemasat Research Institute for plasma discharge experiments".

And *Pensée* magazine published...

...a special series of ten issues... to "encourage continuing critical analysis of all questions raised by Velikovsky's work", published between May 1972 and Winter 1974-75 by the Student Academic Freedom Forum... with the assistance and cooperation of Lewis and Clark College, Portland, Oregon. Velikovsky - "the man whose work was being examined 'objectively'" - insinuated himself into the editing of the May 1972 issue, just as he had done earlier for the April 1967 "Velikovsky" issue of Yale Scientific Magazine.

It... resulted in a book, *Velikovsky Reconsidered* [1976-77 - photo of the paperback copy like mine, p.485]

...



Dr. Velikovsky concludes,

The covenant, according to the moral conception of the Hebrews, was a reciprocal deed. It was kept only in its promise not to bring a paramount flood upon the Earth: the Earth and man continued to be shaped and reshaped in further catastrophes before the close of the age of creation that is the theme of the Book of Genesis.

PART III: MERCURY AND MEMORY

The Confusion of Languages

The sequence of events as presented in the Book of Genesis places [the "catastrophe" of **the curse** first, and] the catastrophe of Babel [or The 2nd Visit of Mercury] next [or 3rd] after the Deluge.

And the whole land was of one language and of one speech... And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower whose top may reach unto heaven... And the Lord said, behold, the people is one, and they have all

one language... Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth. [[Genesis XI 1-9.](#)]

The rabbinical sources explain that the purpose of the Tower was to secure a shelter for the city of Babel in case the Deluge should occur another time:

The men who were before us God has destroyed with a deluge; if he shall again think fit to be wroth with us, and seek to destroy us even with a deluge, we shall all perish to a man. But come, let us prepare bricks and burn them with fire, that they may withstand the waters and building them together with asphalt, let us make a high tower the top of which shall reach to heaven, in order that being delivered from the deluge we may find safety in the tower...

[Quoted in Cosmas Indicopleustes [meaning, "who sailed to India"... "also known as **Cosmas the Monk** ...a Greek merchant and later hermit from Alexandria of Egypt... [and] 6th-century traveller, who made several voyages to India during the reign of emperor Justinian... [and his] work *Christian Topography* contained some of the earliest and most famous world maps... [and he] was a pupil of the East Syrian Patriarch Aba I and was himself a follower of the Church of the East", yes, predecessors of the Assyrians or the Nestorian Church], *Christian Topography* (Hakluyt Society: London,1897). Cf. Josephus, *The Antiquities of the Jews*, I.4.2. and sources in L. Ginzberg, *The Legends of the Jews*, Vol.V, pp.199-200.] [Some of the sources assert that the builders of the Tower [instead or also] feared a world conflagration. Cf. S. Bochart, *Geographia Sacra [Sacred Geography]*, Lib.I, cap.xiv (Lugduni Batavorum [Leiden],1707): "...Video quosquam asserere, illos futuri incendii metu de asylo sibi prospexisse, memores scilicet 'affore tempus quo mare, quo tellus, correptaque regia coeli ardeat, et mundi moles operosa laboret'" ["The usual Chaldean doctrine distinguishes seven ages; 'every planet, including the sun and the moon, rules as a chronorator over a period of a thousand years'"].]

Samuel Bochart "was a [17th Century] French Protestant biblical scholar", but also a *Renaissance humanist*, (which was "a response to the *utilitarian approach*... [or to the aptly so-called] "narrow pedantry" associated with medieval [Catholic] scholasticism", however and '**unfortunately**', this inevitably increasingly **worldly** "response" and "approach" was "to create a citizenry able to speak and write with eloquence and clarity and thus [be] capable of engaging in the civic life of their communities and [in the] persuading [of] others to virtuous and prudent actions... [this 'goal' supposedly, though inevitably decreasingly so,] accomplished through the study of the *studia humanitatis*, today known as the humanities: grammar, rhetoric, history, poetry, and [increasingly more **worldly** and less Biblical] moral philosophy)... His two-volume *Geographia Sacra seu Phaleg et Canaan* (Caen 1646) exerted a profound [*humanist*, and that is, **worldly**] influence on seventeenth-century Biblical exegesis... [he being] a pastor of a Protestant church at Caen ["in northwestern France"], and also studied in Oxford... [and] a man of profound erudition... [who] possessed a thorough knowledge of the principal Oriental languages, including Hebrew, Syriac, and Arabic... [but who] died of apoplexy, aged 67, in the academy of Caen during an impassioned debate... on the translation of a passage of Origen related to transubstantiation".

...This purpose of the builders [of The Tower of Babel] is found also in an account of this catastrophe which the aborigines of Central America transmitted from generation to generation. [The previously bio'ed, late 16th/early 17th Century "indigenous Mexican nobleman, historian and author", Governor] Ixtlilxochitl, after narrating the story of the Deluge which brought to a close the first world age, Atonatiuh, and destroyed most of mankind, described the catastrophe which ended the second age or Ehecatonatiuh - "the sun of wind."

And as men were thereafter multiplying they constructed a very high and strong *Zacualli*, which means "a very high tower" in order to protect themselves when again the second world should be destroyed. At the crucial moment their languages were changed, and as they did not understand one another, they went into different parts of the world [and evidently often built 'towers' as high as they could there too]. [Don [meaning "lord or gentleman", in this case Governor] Fernando de Alvara, *Ixtlilxochitl, Obras Historicas* [Historical Works] (Mexico,1891), Vol.I, p.12.]

The same author also gives another version of the same catastrophe:

When 1715 years had passed since the Deluge [men] were destroyed by a violent hurricane (Uracan) which carried off trees, mountains, houses and people, and great buildings, although many men and women escaped, especially those that were able to take refuge in caves and places where this great hurricane could not reach.

Of course this event 1715 years after The Flood must have occurred about 14 centuries after "the catastrophe of Babel". We know this - despite Dr. Velikovskiy's apparent oversight here - because he has already helped us establish, (as pointed out near the beginning of this section, and as it will again be in the next 'sub-part', subtitled *Mercury*), that "two hundred and eighty-eight [288] years after the Deluge", not 1715, "a comet was seen in Egypt of the nature of Saturn... [where,] Confusions of languages and dispersals of peoples followed... [and about] this the text of the eleventh chapter of Genesis speaks in more detail".

And though by the descriptions alone these separate "catastrophes" can easily enough be confused, the one 1715 years after The Flood can have no connection to "the catastrophe of Babel", and must instead be 'in the ballpark' of The Visits of Mars (1656 + 1715 = 3371 AC), and so is a marker worth **remembering** within God's entire 7,000 year timeline.

[*Ibid., loc. cit.*] [Similarly, the sacred writings of the Burmese relate that "when the world is destroyed by wind... the wind begins to blow and gradually increases. At first it only raises sand and small stones; but at length it whirls about immense rocks, and the summits of mountains." Dr. Francis Buchanan-Hamilton, "*On the Religion and Literature of the Burmas*," *Asiatick Researches* VII (1799), p.244.]

Similarly wrote Gomara (ca. 1510-1560): "The wind which occurred at that time was so great and of such force that it overthrew all buildings and trees, and even broke mountains apart."

And of course such 'extreme meteorological conditions', or 'extreme weather', though varying in intensity, must be common to all The Visits of God's Great Instruments of Death, and giving it Satan's 'spin', ever since the '**planet' god** Mercury, along with the 'participation', 'resistance', or just 'submission' of all the other '**planet' gods**, brought the *water canopy* down.

[Francisco López de Gómara, ["was a [16th Century] Spanish ["humanist"] ecclesiastic and historian [and contemporary to both Holy Roman Emperor Charles V and his son Philip II of Spain] who stood out as a chronicler of the Spanish conquest of Mexico, although he never crossed the Atlantic... He studied in Alcalá de Henares [near Madrid, Spain] to be ordained as a priest... lived in Rome, and on his return in 1540 he met Hernán Cortés and stayed at his house as chaplain... [and was a] professor of classical letters at the University of Alcalá ["a public university located...35 km (22 miles) northeast of Madrid in Spain... founded in 1293"]... [and the "Peruvian chronicler"] Inca Garcilaso de la Vega made annotations to the General History of the Indies of Lopez de Gomara, whose first volume was published in Zaragoza in 1552"] *Conquista de Mexico* [*Conquest of Mexico*] (Mexico, 1870), Vol. II, p. 261.] [The order of the "sun ages" of the ancient Mexicans is given differently by different authors: but the most reliable of the sources - the Vatican Codex, Ixtlilxochitl, and Veytia - all agree that Ehecatonatiuh, or "the sun of wind" was the second age, following after the "sun of water" or Atonatiuh.]

Many of the sources which recount the destruction of the Tower of Babel maintain, in close accord with the Mexican account [and if not confused with later '**planetary visits**'], that the catastrophe was caused by a violent wind. Thus the Sibyl is said to have prophesied:

When are fulfilled the threats of the great God
With which he threatened men, when formerly
In the Assyrian land they built a tower,
And all were of one speech, and wished to rise
Even till they climbed unto the starry heaven,
Then the Immortal raised a mighty wind
And laid upon them strong necessity;
For when the wind threw down the mighty tower,
Then rose among mankind fierce strife and hate.
One speech was changed into many dialects,
And earth was filled with divers tribes and kings.

[Quoted by Theophilus of Antioch [2nd Century "Christian apologist and Patriarch of Antioch", about whom scholars "gather from his writings (the only remaining being his apology to Autolycus) that he was born a pagan, not far from the Tigris and Euphrates, and was led to embrace Christianity by studying the Holy Scriptures, especially the prophetic books... [though he himself] makes no reference to his office in his existing writings, nor is any other fact in his life recorded... [however] Eusebius... speaks of the zeal which he and the other chief shepherds displayed in driving away the heretics who were attacking Christ's flock, with special mention of his work against Marcion [who, "rejected the deity described in the Hebrew Scriptures and in distinction affirmed the Father of Christ as the true God [?]", and so the Early "Church Fathers denounced Marcion... [and] excommunicated [him] from the proto-orthodox [or Early] Church... [but Marcion] published his own list of New Testament books, making him a catalyst in speeding up the process of development of the New Testament canon by forcing the early Church to respond to his claims"]. [Theophilus, on the other hand,] made contributions to the departments of Christian literature, polemics, exegetics, and apologetics... [and] William Sanday ["the Dean Ireland's Professor of Exegesis of Holy Scripture from 1883 to 1895, and the Lady Margaret Professor of Divinity from 1895 to

1919; both chairs... at the University of Oxford”] describes him [Theophilus] as "one of the precursors of that group of writers who, from Irenaeus [- **our** 2nd Century “Greek” **brother** “noted for his role in guiding and expanding Christian communities in what is now the south[east] of France and, more widely, for the development of Christian theology by combatting heresy and defining orthodoxy... [who came] from Smyrna, now Izmir in Turkey... [having] heard the preaching of Polycarp, who in turn...heard John the Evangelist”,] to Cyprian [- that “controversial” 3rd Century “bishop of Carthage and... notable Early Christian writer of Berber descent ... [whose] eventual martyrdom at Carthage vindicated his reputation...[and made him] the preeminent Latin writer of Western Christianity until Jerome and Augustine], [are all “writers” who] not only break the obscurity which rests on the earliest history of the Church, but alike in the East and in the West carry it to the front in literary eminence, and distance all their heathen contemporaries” [!!!], *To Autolycus* II.xxxi, transl. by Rev. Dr. Marcus Dods in *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Vol.II (Grand Rapids, 1962); Cf. Josephus, *Antiquities* I.109-121; Samuel Bochart, *Geographia Sacra* I.13; *The Sibylline Oracles* III. 97-107 in Prof., Dr. Robert Henry Charles ed., *Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament* (Oxford,1913), Vol.I, pp.380f.]

[In the *Book of Jubilees* it is said that “the Lord sent a mighty wind against the tower and overthrew it upon the earth.” [*The Book of Jubilees* 10.26 in Charles ed., *Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*. Cf. also *Midrash Rabba* to Genesis, and sources in Ginzberg, *Legends* III.35.]

The Babylonian account, as transmitted by Abydenus [“a Greek historian, and the author of a *History of the Chaldeans and Assyrians*, of which some fragments are preserved by Eusebius in his *Praeparatio Evangelica*, and by Cyril of Alexandria in his work against Julian... [and of which] Several other fragments are preserved by Syncellus... [these “fragments” being] particularly valuable for chronology ...[including one] important fragment, which clears up some difficulties in Assyrian history, [and which] has been discovered in the Armenian translation of the *Chronicon* of Eusebius... [though it] is uncertain when he lived, but he is to be distinguished from Palaephatos Abydenus, who lived in the time of Alexander the Great [4th Century BC]; for this Abydenus mentions Berosus, who lived at a later period [3rd Century BC]... [and so he] probably wrote around 200 BC and, as Cyril states, in the Ionic dialect”, [and Abydenus] tells that once men “built a high tower where now is Babylon, and when it was already close to heaven, the gods sent winds and ruined the entire scheme... and men, having till then been all of the same speech, received [now] from the gods many languages.” [Abydenus, quoted by Cyril, *Adversus Julianum* Bk.I, and by Eusebius, *Praeparatio Evangelica* IX,14.]

Other accounts give the impression that a strong electrical discharge – possibly from an overcharged ionosphere – found a contact body in the high structure. According to a tradition known to the twelfth century traveler Benjamin of Tudela, “fire from heaven fell in the midst of the tower and broke it asunder.” [Quoted in Samuel Bochart, *Geographia Sacra* I.13. Cf. Marcus Nathan Adler [the “elder son” of Nathan Marcus Adler, “the Orthodox Chief Rabbi of the British Empire” (1845-90), the younger being “involved in scholarly activities such as writing, editing, and translating ...[including] his critical text, translation, and commentary of Benjamin of Tudela’s important medieval manuscript”], *The Itinerary of Benjamin of Tudela* (London,1907)]...

In the Tractate Sanhedrin of the Babylonian *Talmud* it is said: "A third of the tower was burnt, a third sank [into the earth] and a third is still standing."

[*Tractate Sanhedrin* XI (fol. 109A) of Seder Nezikin, transl. by H. Freedman [?], ed. by Rabbi Ezekiel Isidore Epstein (London, 1935), p. 748.] [The tradition that fire from heaven destroyed the tower is also a feature of some of the Meso-American accounts, e.g., the legend recorded by Pedro de los Rios ["a Domician missionary in Mexico in the mid-16th century... [about whom,] Little is known... but he contributed to the creation of the manuscripts now known as the Codex Telleriano-Remensis and Codex Vaticanus A, which describe Aztec culture and history... [the latter] also known as the Codex Ríos"] concerning the foundation of the pyramid of Cholula in Mexico. After the waters of the Deluge had receded, one of the survivors came to Cholula, where he began to build a large structure. "It was his purpose to raise the mighty edifice to the clouds, but the gods, offended at his presumption, hurled the fire of heaven down on the pyramid, many of the workmen perished, and the building remained unfinished." [Sir James George Frazer, *Folk Lore in the Old Testament* Vol. I [London 1918]. Frazer [- attempting to entirely substantiate this, at least to some extent, 'stolen tale' with what must be either 'planted' or 'misplaced evidence',] adds that "It is said that at the time of the Spanish conquest the inhabitants of Cholula preserved with great veneration a large aerolite [- "a meteorite consisting mainly of stony matter"], which according to them was the very thunderbolt that fell on the pyramid and set it on fire." Cf. Edward Burnett Tylor, *Anahuac* [again, "the central plateau of Mexico"], p. 277. Another Mexican tradition, recorded by Diego Duran ["c. 1537-1588... a Dominican friar best known for his authorship of one of the earliest Western books on the history and culture of the Aztecs, *The History of the Indies of New Spain*, a book that was much criticised in his lifetime for helping the "heathen" maintain their culture... also known as the Durán Codex, *The History of the Indies of New Spain* was completed in about 1581... [and he] also wrote *Book of the Gods and Rites* (1574-1576), and *Ancient Calendar* (c. 1579)... [and he] was fluent in Nahuatl, the Aztec language, and was therefore able to consult natives and Aztec codices as well as work done by earlier friars... [and his] empathetic nature allowed him to gain the confidence of many native people who would not share their stories with Europeans, and was able to document many previously unknown folktales and legends that make his work unique",] in 1579 (*Historia de las Indias de Nueva Espana y las Islas de Tierra Firme* [*History of the Indies of New Spain and the Islands of the Mainland*] |



[Mexico,1867], pp.6ff.) tells of giants who built a tower that almost reached the heavens, when it was destroyed by a thunderbolt.]

Note: Governor Admiral Columbus was “the first European to arrive at... [what is] believed by historians to... [be] **the Bahamas**... After the first of... [his] voyages... Europeans began to use the term *West Indies* [map, p.489] to distinguish the region [of “the **Caribbean Basin**” of Central and South America] from the East Indies of South Asia and Southeast Asia”.

The Tower of Babel story was found in the most remote parts of the world prior to the arrival of missionaries in those places, thus before the Biblical account became known to the aborigines. For instance, on the island of Hao, part of the Puamotu (or Tuamotu) islands in Polynesia, the people used to tell that after a great flood the sons of Rata, who survived, made an attempt to erect a building by which they could reach the sky and see the creator god Vatea (or Atea). "But the god in anger chased the builders away, broke down the building, and changed their language, so that they spoke divers tongues."

[Robert Wood Williamson [late 19th/early 20th Century “British solicitor [“legal practitioner”] and anthropologist”, who was “president of Manchester Law Society, and a Member of the Council of the London Law Society”, and following that “a member of the Court of Governors of Victoria University of Manchester... Turning to anthropology at the age of 54, Williamson travelled in the Solomon Islands and took part in an anthropological expedition into the interior of British New Guinea in 1910. He was Honorary Treasurer of the Royal Anthropological Institute (RAI) from 1912 to 1921, Member of Council for the RAI from 1922 to 1924, Vice-President from 1925 to 1927, and again a Member of Council from 1928 to 1931”], *Religious and Cosmic Beliefs of Central Polynesia* (Cambridge,1933), Vol.I, p.94.]

The question of Biblical influence was discussed by the folklorist: "They [the natives of Hao] declared that this tradition existed already with their ancestors, before the arrival of the Europeans. I leave to them the responsibility for this declaration. All I can certify is that this tradition contains many ancient words which today are no longer understood by the natives." [A.-C. Eugene Caillot, *Mythes, legendes et traditions des Polynesiens* (Paris,1914), p.16, n.1. The tradition was among those collected by Caillot in 1912 or 1913; his publication contains the story in the original Polynesian and in a French translation.]

Popol Vuh, the sacred book of the Quiche Mayas, narrates that the language of all the families that were gathered at Tulan was confused and none could understand the speech of the others.

[Abbot [and “Father”] Charles-Étienne Brasseur de Bourbourg [a 19th Century “noted French writer, ethnographer, historian and archaeologist... [who] became a specialist in Mesoamerican studies, travelling extensively in the region... [with his] writings, publications, and recovery of historical documents [having] contributed much to knowledge of the region's languages, writing, history and culture, particularly those of the Maya and Aztec civilizations... [h]owever, his speculations concerning relationships between the ancient Maya and the lost continent of Atlantis inspired Ignatius L. Donnelly [- a 19th Century “U.S. Congressman, who also wrote books on his theories of Atlantis, and that the Earth had been struck by a comet in prehistoric times destroying

civilizations... [and whom] Alfred de Grazia in his book, *Chaos and Creation*, labels... a prominent catastrophist", though to defend the originality of his own later work, Dr. Velikovsky 'comments' about Congressman Donnelly's by far more "indefinite" perspective, saying that he "did not show any awareness that Whiston was his predecessor", and that his "assumption" about the distribution of "till and gravel on the rock substratum in America and Europe... [caused by] an encounter with a comet... [and that is] only in one half of the earth is arbitrary and wrong", https://www.velikovsky.info/Ignatius_Donnelly,] and [Brasseur's work] encouraged the pseudo-science of Mayanism", which is "a non-codified ['unorganized'] eclectic ['hodgepodge' or 'varied'] collection of New Age ["spiritual or religious"] beliefs, influenced in part by Pre-Columbian Maya mythology and some folk beliefs of the modern Maya peoples", but surely originally and mostly by Satan himself], *Histoire des nations civilises du Mexique [History of the Civilized Nations of Mexico]* (1857-59), Vol. I, p.72.] [Cf. also the Andean tradition recorded by Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa in his *Historia de los Incas*, ch.7. In common with other accounts, it places the confusion of languages after the Deluge.]

The Kaska (Indian) story makes the result into the cause. The Indians narrate that "a great darkness came on, and high winds which drove the vessels hither and thither. The people became separated. Some were driven away... Long afterwards, when in their wanderings they met people from another place, they spoke different languages, and could not understand one another." [*Kaska Tales*, "collected by James Alexander Teit ["an anthropologist, photographer and guide who... [studied] Interior Salish First Nations peoples in the late 19th and early 20th centuries... [and] led expeditions throughout BC [British Columbia, Canada] and made many contributions towards native ethnology"], *Journal of American Folklore*, no.30 (1917), p.442.]

With this exception – the Kaska story may refer to any great upheaval and is actually an effect of large-scale migrations – the traditions of the peoples make the catastrophe the immediate cause of the confusion of languages and the dispersion as well.

And I'll attempt to further clarify here that though Venus and Mars were '**supernaturally**' **ordained** by the '**re-parameterization**' of Creation by The Curse, including some '**direction**' by **angels** along their way, "the confusion of languages" caused by "large-scale migrations" initiated by these 2 Great Instruments of Death were otherwise entirely '**natural changes**', and only over time added new dialects to existing languages, while "the confusion" caused by The 2nd Visit of Mercury was a '**supernatural act of God**', possibly involving the use of His **natural** Creation, but where apparently entirely new languages were '**instantaneously**' **created**.

Note: "To parameterize" by itself means "to express in terms of parameters", "parameters" being "limits or boundaries", and in this case they were originally **established** (or **stablished**) in Creation Week by God's **ordinances of heaven and earth**, though since Creation they have been '**supernaturally re-parameterized**' by God by The Curse...

While the account in Genesis, and that given by Abydenos and various other sources connect the story with a certain place in Mesopotamia, other traditions [mis-]localize [or 'duplicate'] it in many different countries [and that is, in some to most cases this could be the result of additional "long term

migrations” due to the additional **visits** of *planets* where **‘natural changes’** of dialect are added to their original **‘supernatural change’** of language]. [Many different traditions were collected by James G. Frazer in *Folklore in the Old Testament*, (London,1918), Vol.I, ch.V. Cf. Hubert Howe Bankroft [19th and early 20th Century “American historian and ethnologist who wrote, published and collected works concerning the western United States, Texas, California, Alaska, Mexico, Central America and British Columbia”], *The Native Races of the Pacific States*, Vol.V.] In each case the entire population of the world is said to have been affected. If the nature of the catastrophe was cosmic, the same occurrence could have taken place in different countries. In this [‘**mis-imagined’**] case [as well as in any more **‘rightly imagined’** ones] the existence of similar traditions in many corners of the globe is of no avail for tracing the migration of ancient tribes [but **scripture** clearly traces them all back to Babel, cultural influences and additional ‘catastrophe-caused’, ‘dialect-changing migrations’ not withstanding]. The Arabic tradition [for example, by cultural influence] makes South Arabia the scene of the [original] upheaval, [and it may be “the scene” of an additional “upheaval”, one which is also] followed by confusion of languages [or in any such later cases, of ‘changing dialects’] and [additional] migrations [too]...

[D. Ioannes Iacobus Reiske [or “**Johann Jakob Reiske**... [an 18th Century] German scholar and physician... [and] pioneer in the fields of Arabic and Byzantine philology as well as Islamic numismatics [“the study or collecting of coins”]”, *De Arabum Epocha Vetustissima, Sali Ol Arem, etc.* [The Oldest Arab Epoch, Sali Ol Arem, etc.] (Leipzig,1748).] [The question of whether the Greeks transmitted an account of the same events was debated by several writers in antiquity, including Philo of Alexandria (*De Confusione Linguarum*) [Confusion of Tongues], Cyril of Alexandria (*Contra Julianum*, Bk.IV) and Origen (*Contra Celsum*, IV.21). These writers saw a link between the story of the revolt of the giants – the sons of Aloeus who piled [Mount] Ossa upon [Mount] Olympus and [Mount] Pelion atop Ossa in a vain effort to reach the lofty dwelling of Zeus [– this evidently occurring during the 2nd Visit of Mercury, supposedly providing a way to climb up] and make war on the gods [tbb further next] – and the account of the construction of the tower of Babel in [Genesis XI, 3-8](#). The earliest allusion to these events is in Homer’s *Odyssey* (XI.315-316); Homer ascribes the destruction of the giants [evidently including Nimrod’s contemporaries] to Apollo. Pliny, *Natural History* II. 8.30) and Macrobius [the 5th Century Roman] (*Saturn*, I.19.7) identified Apollo with the planet Mercury. Apuleius [tbb after Aloeus] wrote (*De Mundo* [Of the World], 336) that Mercury and Apollo were alternate names for “Stilbon,” the planet Mercury.

More specifically, Aloeus was a **‘giant demigod’**...

...the son of Poseidon and Canace, husband first of Iphimedeia and later of Eriboea... and father of Salmoneus (who founded Elis), and the eponym [and father] of Otus and Ephialtes [his twin sons by Iphimedeia], collectively [the twins] known as the Aloadae. These [evidently **‘angel-human’**] giants made war on the gods and captured the god [or **angel**] Ares [Mars] in a bag [– evidently like, as in Homer’s epic poem, *The Odyssey*, when “a [‘**demigod’**] king endowed by the gods with the winds... gave Odysseus a leather bag containing all the winds, except the west wind, a gift that should have ensured a safe return home [despite Poseidon’s (or Neptune’s) anger over not being acknowledged for his help in winning the 10-year-long Trojan War, except that] just as Ithaca [Odysseus’ home Island] came into sight, the greedy sailors naively opened the bag while Odysseus slept, thinking it contained gold... [and] the winds flew out and the resulting storm drove

the ships back [across the Aegean Sea from where] they had come [back to the coast of Turkey, to ancient Troy]. Aloeus's wife Eeriboea reported this ['bagging of Ares'] to the gods, for which Aloeus had her flayed alive. In Virgil's *Aeneid*, the twins of Aloeus are found in the underworld and there Aeneas sees them being punished by Rhadamanthus ["son of Zeus and Europa... [who "was a wise king of Crete"] and later a judge of the dead"]. This scene from Virgil was a precursor to Dante's depiction of Hell [in "*La Divina Commedia*" ("*Divine Comedy*")].

And to attempt to be clearer, apparently this Greek "account" of "the catastrophe of Babel", which was "debated by several writers in antiquity" to be such, was a 'Greek interpretation' of a Post-Flood 'squabble' between '**at large**' angels and the surviving '**angel-human**' progeny of the now '**captive angels**'. And I mean it doesn't appear that these 'ancient debaters' thought that this supposedly Post Flood "catastrophe of Babel" was directly related to the Titanomachy ("Titan War"), though maybe an attempt at some revenge for it, the Titans being the **gods** who, being opposed by Jupiter/Zeus, et al., were defeated and imprisoned in *Tartarus*, this being apparent because Cronus/Saturn was "chained", and this happening at the end of their "legendary Golden Age" at the time of The Flood, this earlier "Titan War" apparently 'spun' by Satan to take attention away from the real **angels** that **scripture** identifies as **the angels that sinned**, who, not likely so much because of their 'squabbles', but because they **took** human **wives** ([Gen 6:1-2](#)), were **delivered... into chains of darkness, into Tartarus** ([2Pe 2:4](#)) at the time of The Flood. And really the only **angels** that were '**imprisoned**', contrary to Greek and other 'traditions', were those that '**took wives**', while all the others, including Satan, remain in 'good standing' before God, though some continue to 'squabble' (e.g., [Dan 10:13](#)), and to participate with Satan, **the accuser of our brethren** [Rev 12:10](#), to **devour** all they **may** ([1Pe 5:8](#)), and that is, within the 'limits and boundaries' that by God's **permission** they **may**.

In Greek mythology, the **Titans** were members of the second generation of divine beings, descending from the primordial deities [before Uranus] and preceding the Olympians [under Zeus/Jupiter]. Based on **Mount Othrys** [about 200 miles south of Mount Olympus, [photo p.492](#)], the Titans most famously included the first twelve children of Gaia (Mother Earth) and Uranus (Father Sky). They ruled during the legendary Golden Age, and... [were] the first pantheon of Greek deities...

...Just as Cronus [[Saturn](#)] overthrew his father Uranus, the Titans were overthrown by Cronus's children (Zeus [[Jupiter](#)], Hades [[Dīs Pater](#), and "later... [Pluto or Hades](#)"], Poseidon [[Neptune](#)], Hestia [[Vesta](#)], Hera [[Juno](#)] and Demeter [[Ceres](#)]), in the Titanomachy [or "War of the Titans", "also known as... **Battle of the Titans, Battle of the Gods**, or just the **Titan War**", this being the "war... fought to decide which generation of gods would have dominion over the universe... [and] ended in victory for the [younger] Olympian gods" - and evidently was followed by The Flood].

And we should acknowledge here that these 'changes' in '**planet-god rule**', as well as the 'births' of **gods** and '**demigods**', and the origins of other 'religious traditions' of the Greeks, etc., aren't just related to the real interaction of **angels** and '**angel-humans**', but are also connected, marked, and 'spun'



by Satan, from “catastrophes” on Earth caused by **visits** of the ‘**planet-gods**’, and just as much or more from what is viewed in the **heavens**, especially from the *alignments, perturbations, collisions*, etc. of *planets* and their ‘visitors’, and especially from such ‘events’ that were *magnified* before the *water lens* came down.

And I’ll remind you that I **believe** that before The Curse that there was only the Earth, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, and no more than a few other *outer planets*, including the two that *collided* in what I’m guessing was the 2nd major *collision* after The Curse, the one that made the Kuiper and Scattered Disc *asteroid belts*, and probably Mercury too, the 1st major *collision* being of a couple of *planets* even further out, which I’m guessing made the Oort Cloud and “Planet X”, and whatever other ‘pieces’ are still out there. And I mean I believe that before The Curse that the only *moon* in our Solar System was orbiting Earth, and that there weren’t any *comets* or *asteroids* either, or any of this kind of ‘debris’ anywhere else in the entire Universe for that matter, as it’s all the result of the still ongoing *collisions* from ‘**fallout**’ from The Curse.

And to be more specific, God didn’t just **create** a ‘**permanently stable**’ Solar System; He also **created** a ‘**permanently stable**’ Universe. And this means that all the *comets, asteroids, and moons*—other than our own Moon—as well as all the *colliding* and *disintegrating galaxies* and *galaxy clusters*, the *colliding* and ‘gone-nova’ *stars*, and the resulting ‘scattered’ *interstellar objects* (“detected... [while passing] through the Solar System, and... distinguished from an Oort Cloud *comet* [or *asteroid*] by its strongly hyperbolic [‘curved but not circular’] trajectory”, the “only known” one “discovered” in 2017), not to mention all of the *extrasolar comets* (or “exocomets”, “first... detected in 1987”), the *extrasolar asteroids* (“one identified as of 2013”), and the *extrasolar moons* (or “exomoons”, at this point just “inferred from [our] Solar System”), altogether imply that *collisions* and *explosions* of *objects* throughout the Universe since The Curse are quite common, and that the resulting ‘fragments’ – *comets, asteroids, and moons* – are all **signs** of the ongoing literal ‘breakdown’ of the entire Universe.

And giving all this Satan’s ‘spin’, the ‘**planet**’ **gods**, especially because of the *water lens*, and because of their ‘**visits**’ to Earth after it came down, have provided a lot of seemingly ‘friendly’ and ‘unfriendly interaction’, including ‘wars’, ‘sex’, ‘births’, etc., for the **inhabiters of the earth** to ‘watch’, the biggest difference in the ‘viewing’ still **to come** being that Satan and the Antichrist will take most of the credit, and that is, whenever they don’t instead have to blame it on God.

And “Apuleius... also called Lucius Apuleius Madaurensis”; was a 2nd Century...

...Latin-language prose writer, Platonist philosopher and rhetorician... [and] a Numidian [“the Berber population” of what is now “present day Algeria...and in a smaller part of Tunisia”] who lived under the Roman Empire... studied Platonism in Athens, travelled to Italy, Asia Minor, and Egypt, and was an [‘**insider**’] initiate in several cults or mysteries. The most famous incident in his life was when he was accused of using magic to gain the attentions (and fortune) of a wealthy widow. He declaimed [or denied it] and then distributed a witty *tour de force* [- in this case, an ‘exceptionally persuasive treatise’] in his own defense... [now otherwise] known as the *Apologia* [and meaning, “a formal defense of a position or action”, and see also definitions 1 and 2 of “tour de force” at [Dictionary.com](http://www.dictionary.com/browse/tour-de-force?s=t) (<http://www.dictionary.com/browse/tour-de-force?s=t>)].

His most famous work is his bawdy ["indecent; lewd; obscene"] picaresque novel ["an episodic recounting of the adventures of an anti-hero", or "of a roguish ["mischievous"] hero of low social class who lives by their wits in a corrupt society"], the *Metamorphoses*, otherwise known as *The Golden Ass*. It is the only Latin novel that has survived in its entirety. It relates the ludicrous adventures of one Lucius, who experiments with magic and is accidentally turned into a donkey.

[Hesiod described the battle with the giants [**angels v. 'angel humans'**] as an immense catastrophe involving the earth and heaven alike [apparently placing it at the time of "the catastrophe of Babel"].

The boundless sea rang terribly around, and the earth crashed loudly: wide heaven was shaken and groaned, and high Olympus reeled from its foundations under the charge of the undying gods, and a heavy quaking reached Tartarus... the cry of both armies as they shouted reached to starry heaven.

Then Zeus no longer held back his might; but straight his heart was filled with fury and he showed forth all his strength. From heaven and from Olympus he came forthwith, hurling his lightning: the bolts flew thick and fast from his strong hand, together with thunder and lightning, whirling and awesome flame. The life-giving earth crashed around in burning, and the vast wood cracked loud with fire all about. All the land seethed, and Ocean's streams and the unfruitful sea [did too]. The hot vapour lapped round the earthborn Titans [and that would be the **'angel-human'** offspring of the Titans, as opposed to the fully **'angelic'** Titans who by this time were 'earthbound' in *Tartarus*, leaving it to these "earthborn" Titan **'angel-human'** offspring to - evidently unsuccessfully - seek "revenge" for their losses in the Titanomachy]: flame unspeakable rose to the bright upper air: the flashing glare of the thunder shone and lightning blinded their eyes, for all that they were strong [though remember that even by 'stacking Mercury-class mountains' one atop of another they couldn't reach Zeus to attempt to 'bag' him.]

It seemed as if Earth and wide Heaven above came together; for such a mighty [thunder] crash [would sound like it] would have arisen if the Earth were being hurled to ruin and Heaven from on high were hurling her down.

...Also the winds brought rumbling earthquake and duststorm, thunder and lightning, and the lurid thunderbolt, which are the shafts of great Zeus.

Seneca [the Younger] also referred to the same events in mentioning Jupiter's thunderbolts "by which the threefold mass of mountains fell" [another apparent allusion to the *geological* "upheaval" caused by The 2nd Visit of Mercury - which was apparently blamed on the "giants" by the Greeks] and a tradition held that this was the first occasion on which Jupiter [though it was actually Mercury] used his bolts (Ovid, *Fasti* III. 438 [and Mercury evidently had done so before to initiate The Flood, [Psa 104:5-9](#), especially Verse 7].) The pagans disputed with the Jews and Christians whether Moses took the story from Homer or Homer from Moses, but the common origin of the two accounts was generally conceded. One early writer, Eupolemus ["the earliest Hellenistic Jewish historian whose work survives...in five fragments...embedded in quotations from the historian Alexander Polyhistor, and in the *Stromata*...of Clement of Alexandria"], drew on both sources in asserting that "the city of Babylon had been founded by [descendants of] those who saved themselves from the deluge: they were [ruled by 'super-big-and-tall' **'angel-human'**] giants [as opposed to the fully human population that were generally much taller than people today, these **'angel-humans'** evidently being the descendants of Ham and his apparently **'angel-human'** wife, though evidently she herself was not noticeably *genetically expressed* as a **giant**, Canaan and a minority of his siblings and cousins likely the next to be], and they built the famous



tower.” (Eusebius, *Praep. Evang.*) From the viewpoint of sequential chronology, the link is plausible. The giants’ revolt is said to have occurred not long after Zeus had taken over from Kronos the dominion of the sky, and it marks the real beginning [or the ‘first major expression’] of Jupiter’s dominion. Cf. Samuel Bochart, *Geographia Sacra*, I.13.]



...Similar experiences [like at Babel] could have been brought about by one and the same cause in many places [or various ‘language-groups’ over time ‘fashioned’ just the one event at

Babel to match their resulting new culture and location, as well as possibly also confusing it with later “catastrophes”].



It appears that after the Flood the plain of Mesopotamia became one of the few cultural centers of the world [and likely the only one with such a formidable “tower”]. Another flood would have caused the utter destruction of the human race, and this was feared because the memory of the Flood a few centuries earlier was very vivid. Observations of the movements of the heavenly bodies may have provided a warning of a new catastrophe [- and maybe they could actually see Mercury returning -] and large structures were built for refuge. But when the event came, structures were overwhelmed and destroyed by hurricanes and powerful electrical discharges.



But Dr. Velikovsky’s surmise that just before “the catastrophe of Babel”, because people “feared...the memory of the Flood”, and/or some “heavenly... warning of a new catastrophe”, that “large structures were built for refuge” apparently everywhere - when all spoke one language - needs some clarification. Yes, I think all this happened. But more specifically, I’m guessing that if any were built at the same time as The Tower of Babel, they were comparatively ‘puny towers’, and certainly not as popularly supported, as there was no “language barrier” then keeping most the rest of the World from uniting to build just one that was literally thousands of feet high, and that would have accommodated everyone. But after Babel was destroyed, with this “feared...memory” and/or “heavenly... warning” likely remaining no less motivating, and when there were “language barriers”, then I expect only ‘towers’ comparable to the size of any given ‘language group’ could be built.



And ‘large ancient structures’, though not nearly as ‘large’ or ‘ancient’ as The Tower of Babel, (with the exception of that likely more ancient **altar** [and **pillar**] **to the LORD in...Egypt** [Isa 19:19-20](#)), and not just for



“refuge” but alternatively for **worship** and/or **burial** too, and most of them ‘pyramidal’ in shape, have been erected in regions all around the World. Some notable examples of these ‘language-group-limited’, large, ancient pyramids’ are found in **Egypt, Cambodia, Mexico, Indonesia, Spain** and **Iran**, (pictured top to bottom on p.495). They are also found in China, Peru, Sudan, Nigeria, Greece, and North America, with over 50 in Central America, and, “118 Egyptian pyramids have been identified [2008]”.

In the rabbinical concept of the seven earths, molded one out of another in successive catastrophes, the generation which built the Tower of Babel inhabited the fourth earth [- if you count the time before Creation as ‘the first earth’]; but it goes on to the fifth earth [- supposedly following The 2nd Visit of Mercury -] where the men become oblivious of their origin and home...

[This is told in allegorical form in the tale of the wanderings of Adam. The myth of Man (Adam) traveling through all the seven earths is a transparent allegory of the physical and human history of the earth. See *Sefer Raziel HaMalakh* [“the book of Raziel” [“the angel”], “a medieval Practical Kabbalah [“a branch of the Jewish mystical tradition that concerns the use of magic”] grimoire [“a textbook of magic”] written primarily in Hebrew and Aramaic... [and the] *Liber Razielis Archangeli* (*Book of Raziel the Angel*), its 13th-century Latin translation produced under Alfonso X [King of Castile, etc.], survives”]; cf. Ginzberg, *Legends* I.90ff., V.117f.]

...those who built the Tower of Babel are told to forget their language. This generation is called "the people who lost their memory." The earth which they inhabited was "the fifth earth, that of oblivion (Neshiah)..."

And again, but this time using these Jewish traditions, and more specifically ‘naming names’, if we use “catastrophes” to divide and count “the seven earths”, and if we count – and **‘mis-imagine’** – the one before Creation as the unknown ‘first earth’ (which will remain nameless), we could consider The Age of Innocence/Potentially-Permanent-Paradise Earth – the one before The Fall – ‘second’, The One-Language/Conscience-Curse-Moderated/Tartarus-Angel-Ruled/Pre-Flood Earth ‘third’, The One-Language/Conscience-Curse-Moderated/Angel-Human-ruled/Babel-Centered Earth “fourth”, and “the fifth”, identified here as “oblivion”, and whether lasting to the seemingly more localized ‘catastrophe of Sodom and Gomorrah’, or all the way to The Visits of Venus, could in either case be called The 1st Multi-Language / Conscience-Curse Moderated/Beastly-Government-Ruled Earth, right?

And of course this ancient “rabbinical concept of the seven earths” that identifies significantly changed “earth” – as well as changed “suns” and “planet-gods” too – seems to mark the ‘fifth earth’ as ending with ‘the catastrophe of Sodom and Gomorrah’, the ‘sixth’ with ‘the catastrophe of The Exodus’, and, being devised long before The Visits of Mars, and since ‘he’ was not as harmful to Israel, and since Jews remain **‘naturally’ blinded** to the **‘prophesied’** Earth/Sun-changing’ Great Tribulation still to come, they see our present “earth” as ‘seventh and last’.

But of course I have already accounted for The Ages of Creation in a variety of other ways, including counting from 7 to 15 or more **great judgments**, and/or counting 4 or 5 different **‘great’ instruments of death**, as well as 12 or 13 separate **‘globally catastrophic visits’**, and that is, depending on whether we’re counting the **‘supernaturally and instantaneously ordained’ curse** as one of these ‘catastrophes’, and whether that **‘firebomb’** dropped at the end of the coming Last Rebellion is delivered by a different *planet*, by a previous one, or is just

a more or less 'circular formation' of 'crash-landing' *meteorites*, or 'pieces' of an *exploding comet*.

[*Midrash Rabba* to Genesis, Exodus; Ginzberg, *Legends* I.114; *Zohar Hadesh Bereshit* [evidently "a homiletic Midrash, which again, is 'a teaching used for preaching', and in this case part of "a group of books including commentary on the mystical aspects of the Torah"] 8a-8b, *Zohar Ruth* [evidently another part] 97b, and other sources in Ginzberg, *Legends*, V.143.] [In *Tractate Sanhedrin* [of the *Babylonian Talmud*] 109a it is said that the place where the Tower once stood retains the peculiar quality of inducing a total loss of memory in anyone who passes it.]

In the ancient Mexican traditions it is told that those who survived the catastrophe of the "sun of wind" lost "their reason and speech." [Hubert Howe Bankroft, *The Native Races* (San Francisco, 1882), Vol.III, p.64.]

The characteristic of this [Tower-of-Babel-destroying] catastrophe was its influence upon the mental, or mnemonic, capacity of the peoples. The description of it, as told by many tribes and peoples, if it contains authentic features, arouses the surmise that the earth underwent an electromagnetic disturbance, and that the human race experienced something that in modern terms seems like a consequence of a deep electrical shock.

The application of electrical current to the head of a human being often results in a partial loss of memory; also a loss of speech may be induced by the application of electrodes to specific areas of the brain.

[The electro-convulsive therapy used in psychiatry for the treatment of certain mental cases is administered by passing current through electrodes on the forehead. Conducted through the brain, the electric discharge causes a period of confusion and a subsequent complete, though temporary, loss of memory of the events immediately preceding the discharge. A number of patients complain also of consequent disturbances of longer duration, and some of them suffer a patchy, retrograde amnesia. See the article by Siskind in *Archive of Neurological Psychiatry* (Chicago, 1941), p.215, 223.]

Mercury

It can be assumed with a fair amount of probability that the planet that caused the disturbances described above was the [Roman-named] planet Mercury [or Apollo], the Greek Hermes [or *Stilbon*], the Babylonian Nebo [as well as the Egyptian *Thoth*, etc].

Note: Apollo is...

...one of the most important and complex [- including 'age to age' changes of identity -] of the Olympian [and Titan] deities in classical Greek and Roman religion and... mythology...

...In Hellenistic times, especially during the 3rd century BCE [and though evidently earlier "identified" as Mercury], as *Apollo Helios* he became identified among Greeks with Helios, Titan god of the sun, and his sister Artemis

[Roman: Diana, etc.] similarly equated with Selene, Titan goddess of the moon [but evidently later “equated with” the *planet* Venus]. In Latin texts, on [one of] the other hand[s], Joseph Fontenrose [a 20th Century “American classical scholar... [mostly] interested in Greek religion and...mythology... [and] an expert on John Steinbeck, commenting on the mythology in Steinbeck's work”,] declared himself unable to find any conflation [- “when the identities of two or more individuals... sharing some characteristics of one another, seem to be a single identity” ,] of Apollo with Sol among the Augustan poets of the 1st century, not even in the conjurations [- a “conjuration” being “an act of calling on or invoking a sacred name”,] of Aeneas and Latinus in *Aeneid* XII (161-215). Apollo [being “equated with” the Planet Mercury] and Helios/Sol [being “equated with” the Sun] remained separate beings in literary and mythological texts until the 3rd century CE [which surely after Mercury had finally settled into its *orbit* around the Sun was becoming comparatively obscure alongside it, which I’m guessing was a factor in the merger of these two ‘identities’, as well as in this new single “deity” becoming “equated with” just the Sun, though at the same time it evidently also added **mystery** to the “complex” identity of Hermes/Mercury].

And to reuse Dr. Velikovsky phrase, “It can be assumed with a fair amount of probability” that the reason for such “complex” changes of identities of the “deities” is because of their various ‘earth/sky-changing’ *planetary* ‘encounters’, ones both with Earth and each other, especially the ones formidable enough to initiate new “suns” and “ages”, as such ‘encounters’ would more readily initiate ‘new’ and/or ‘redefined’ **gods**, and of course that’s depending on Satan’s ‘spin’ of the particular views of such ‘encounters’ from various perspectives around our globe.

And Dr. Velikovsky otherwise summarizes all this by saying,

To each of the planets is ascribed a world age, and the ages of the other planets – [1] [the] Moon [The Age of Innocence], [2] Saturn [The Golden or Pre-Flood Age], [3] Jupiter [The Post-Flood and/or Post-Babel Age], [4] Venus [the **age** starting with ‘her’ 2 ‘visits’], and [5] Mars [the **age** during and following ‘his’ 7 ‘visits’] – are well discernible; [however] the dominion of Mercury must be looked for in [or within] one of the world ages, and one of the world cataclysms was apparently ascribed to this lesser planet [and – by at least me – really a couple of them]...

[Among the reasons which suggest that Mercury was the planet which caused the catastrophe of the confusion of languages is the fact that the age of Mercury follows that of Saturn. In the Hindu conception of the world ages, Satya yuga, the Saturnian age [“also called **Satyug**, or **Kṛta Yuga**... the first of the four Yugas, the “*Yuga* (Age or Era) of Truth”, when humanity is governed by gods”], was brought to a close by a general flood. Cf. Sir William Jones, “*On the Gods of Greece, Italy and India*,” *Asiatick Researches* I (1799), p.234: “...The Satya, or (if we may venture to call it) the Saturnian age was, in truth, the age of the *general* flood” (emphasis in text). Mercury appeared [or was understandably enough ‘reidentified’] soon after the beginning of the next age, the Treta yuga [“the second out of the four yugas, or ages of mankind... [an age where] the power of humans diminishes slightly... [and where] Kings and Brahmins [the ruling ‘**angel-humans**’, as opposed to the previously ruling **angels**] need to actively fulfil their desires instead of using mere [‘**angel-powered**’] fiat of will... [and where because of the advent of many languages and cultures...] Wars broke out frequently and [with the *water canopy* gone] climate changes became common place, giving rise to deserts and oceans”]; and for at least a part of this age men lived under the aegis of Mercury [but ultimately Jupiter]. In Hindu astronomy the usual name for the planet Mercury was Budha.

In the *Brihad-Bhagavatamrita* ["a sacred text for followers of [the] Hindu tradition of Gaudiya Vaishnavism", "one of the major traditions within Hinduism", "inspired by ["Hindu spiritual leader"] Chaitanya Mahaprabhu (1486-1534) in North India" ... [it being] one of the most important works of Vaishnava theologian Sanatana Goswami... [and it being a work that, as opposed to the] *Hari-Bhakti-Vilasa* [which] sets out guidance for Vaishnava behavior and ritual... [instead] contains an analysis of the teachings of Chaitanya from an ontological and metaphysical perspective"] it is said that "Budha [Mercury] became visible the 1002nd year of the Cali yug" [or "**Kali Yuga**... lit. "age of Kali", or "age of beans"... means "strife", "discord", "quarrel" or "contention"... the last of the four stages (or ages or yugas)", this evidently being the first time Mercury is 'reidentified' from Southcentral Asia after The Flood, though surely Mercury was visible for centuries in its 'magnified version' through the *water lens* before The Flood too, and that is, ever since a *collision of planets* apparently 'broke it out' to begin its 'full tour' - or 'God-shot' - through our Solar System]. According to John Bentley [born "1756? - [died] Calcutta [now Kolkata, India]... [in] 1823 (when 67)... [a] British Mathematician and Astronomer... [who spent a] long time in India... [and while] severely criticizing the supposed high antiquity of Indian astronomy, he took himself the other extreme, dating e.g. Varāhamihira around 1000 A.D." instead of in the 6th Century], "the 1002nd year of the Cali yug [[or Kali Yuga] astronomical era] corresponds... with "the 179th year of the Treta yug of the poets." *Remarks on the Principal Aeras and Dates of the Ancient Hindus,* Asiatick Researches V (1799), pp.320f. The *Bhagavatamrita* describes in mythical language the first appearance of Mercury [- at The Flood?]. See Sir William Jones, *On the Chronology of the Hindus,* Asiatick Researches II (1799), p.122. Jones also placed [The 1st Visit of] "the ancient Budha, or Mercury... about the beginning of the Treta yug [- again, at the Flood? - so it may not just be me!]. "In Hindu lore Budha, or Mercury, is said to have married Ila, the daughter of Satyavrata [Saturn], the Manu ['King God'] of the Satya yuga [The Pre-Flood Age], in whose days [at the end of his 'reign'] the Deluge occurred. This is but a way of saying that the time of Mercury's prominence was shortly after the Deluge, [or following] the age of Saturn, the Satya yuga. *The Matsya Puranam* ["one of the eighteen major Puranas (Mahapurana), and among the oldest and better preserved in the Puranic genre of Sanskrit literature in Hinduism"] ed. and transl. by Jamna das Akhtar [?] (Delhi,1972), ch.xi.]

Contributions from my encyclopedia on The 4th Yuga:

In Hinduism, *Kali Yuga* is the fourth and present age of the world cycle of yugas, or "ages." It is also the end of the four ages that comprise a cycle and is often referred to as the dark age. In Hindu belief, the Kali Yuga leads to destruction of the world and then the creation of a new cycle of the four yugas.

As with end-of-world predictions in other traditions and religions, pundits have attempted to calculate the end date of Kali Yuga. Various dates have been given, including 2012 and 2082 [AD - of course 2082 is presently more popular since "the destruction of the world" did not occur in 2012, though surely it was near the beginning of **the time of the end**, (e.g., [Dan 12:9](#)), huh]. It is believed Kali Yuga began with the death of Lord Krishna, estimated as having occurred between 3102 and 3113 B.C.E. [which is closer to the time of The Flood than to the Tower of Babel].

However these dates in The 4th Millennium BC don't line up with The Visits of Venus, nor with either of The Visits of Mercury, but with the middle of The Pre-Flood Age, and apparently don't mark anything especially, as Dr. Velikovsky or I would put it,

“catastrophic”, though they may, if they’re to any degree accurate, mark The Ascension of Enoch, because it certainly has been increasingly ‘all downhill from there’ [<https://www.yogapedia.com/definition/5302/kali-yuga>].

[Among the descriptive epithets applied to Mercury in India, were *budha* – “mind, spirit, intelligence,” *sarvagna* – “all-knowing,” *shadhabhigna* – “possessor of the six sciences,” *advayavadi* – “eloquent, unequalled in speech.” See Fr. Paulinus of St. Bartholomew [“an Austrian Carmelite missionary [- a “Roman Catholic religious order founded, probably in the 12th century, [and supposedly in present day Israel] on Mount Carmel in [what was at the time] the Crusader States” -] and Orientalist of Croatian origin... [and] the author of [the] first edition of the first Sanskrit grammar to be published in Europe... [and] one of the first Orientalists to remark upon the close relationship between Indian and European languages... [along with Sir] William Jones’ and others”], *Systema Brahmanicum* (Rome, 1791), pp.156 f. The presence of the god could induce forgetfulness. (*The Matsyapuram* XI.61).]

...Mercury was a feared god long before Mars (Nergal) became one. As the name of Mount Sinai refers to Sin, the Moon, so the name of Mount Nebo in Moab where Moses died [[Deut-eronomy 34:1-5](#); cf. Jastrow, *Die Religion Babyloiens und Assyriens*, p.124, n.3] was called already in that early time by the name of the planet Mercury. Later in the seventh and sixth centuries before the present era, this god was much venerated, especially by the Chaldeans and other peoples of Mesopotamia, as the names of Nabopolassar and his son Nebuchadnezzar prove...

[Nebo was [later] regarded as the son of Marduk, or Jupiter. His chief cult center in Babylonia was Borsippa, whose ziggurat, or stepped pyramid, was consecrated to Nebo. In the Talmud (Sanhedrin XI. 109a) the ruins of this structure were considered to be the remains of the Tower of Babel. (Cf. Obermeyer, pp.314,327,346). It was of these ruins that Rabbi Yochanan bar Nappaha is reported to have said “a third of the tower was burnt, a third sunk [into the earth], and a third is still standing.” The Talmud next quotes the Rabbi as having said “The atmosphere of the tower causes forgetfulness.”

Rabbi Yochanan bar Nappaha, (“**Yohanán, Yochanan and Johanan**... [being other] trans-literations to the Latin alphabet of...[this] Hebrew male given name”), is the late 2nd to late 3rd Century son of a blacksmith, and contemporary and elder to both **our brother** Origen and to ‘Mr. Pompous-ass’, who “was a rabbi in the early era of the Talmud”, who sold “a field house and an olive shed that he had inherited from his parents in order to be able to devote his time to study... [and] after that was spent, he lived a life of poverty... [but] was considered... the greatest rabbi in the Land of Israel, and was even esteemed in the other center of Rabbinical Judaism, Babylonia... [to the point of being] considered by Babylonian Jews as the greatest rabbi of the generation. He [moved to and] started a school in Tiberias [“an Israeli city [founded in about 20 AD in honor of Emperor Tiberius] on the western shore of the Sea of Galilee”], and let anybody in if they wanted to learn, a controversial move at the time. He laid the foundations for the Yerushalmi (Jerusalem Talmud)”).

Nebo was also thought of as the herald [or “messenger”] of the gods, and as presiding over all matters pertaining to the intellect. Cf. Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr, *Die Religion Babyloiens und Assyriens*, Vol. I, pp.121,123,238; Cf. the prayer of Assurbanipal: “For Nebo the perfect son, regulator of all things in heaven and earth, him

that holds the tablet of wisdom, carrier of the stylus of fate...”, S. Langdon [bio, p.277], *Sumerian and Babylonian Psalms* (Paris,1909), p.129.]

...In earlier times Mercury was known to the Sumerians as **Enki**. [See again his bio on p.358.]

["The Sumerians believed that there was a time when all mankind spoke one and the same language, and that it was Enki ["later known as Ea"], the Sumerian god of wisdom, who confounded their speech"—so concluded Dr. Samuel Noah Kramer after publishing his translation of a Sumerian epic fragment. See S. N. Kramer, *"The 'Bable of Tongues': A Sumerian Version," The Journal of the American Oriental Society* 88, pp.108-111. The text of [one of] the tablet ["stories"] is translated by Kramer [- he being "famous for assembling tablets recounting single stories", evidently including the ones that accompany the epic poem *Gilgamesh*,] as follows:

The whole universe, the people in unison
To Enlil ["The war god"] in one tongue [declare that]
...Enki... the leader of the gods,
Endowed with wisdom...
Changed the speech in their mouths ([and] brought) contention into it,
Into the speech of man that (until then) had been one.

Cf. Klaus Dieter Seybold [tbb in a bit], *"Der Turmbau zu Babel," ["The Tower of Babel"] Vetus Testamentum [Old Testament]* 26 (197x), pp.453-479; J. van Dijk [?], *"La 'Confusion des langues'. Note sur le lexique et sur la morphologie d'Enmerkar"* ["The 'Confusion of languages'. Note on the Lexicon and Morphology of Enmerkar", "Enmekar" being "a legendary [read, 'angel-human'] king listed as the builder of the Sumerian city of Uruk [or **Erech**, Gen 10:10]... [who] was said to have reigned for "420 years" [and evidently such an 'angel-human' lifespan was common closely following The Flood]; [and] some copies read [or more likely - since it's after The Flood - 'exaggerate' that he "reigned"] "900 years" "], 147-155, *Orientalia* [meaning, "books, manuscripts...[etc.] pertaining to the Orient and Oriental art, culture, history, folklore, or the like"] 39 (1970), pp.302-310; Dr. Bendt Alster [late 20th/early 21st Century Danish Assyriologist who "studied Assyriology at the University of Copenhagen... and received the doctoral degree in 1975... [and during this time also] spent one year in Rome at the Biblical Institute (1968-69), and another (1970-71) at Harvard University studying with [Dr.] Thorkild Jacobsen Alster [actually Thorkild Peter Rudolph Jacobsen, "renowned historian specializing in Assyriology and Sumerian literature...[and] one of the foremost scholars on the ancient Near East", and you can read more about Dr. Thorkild and his work, etc., in his obituary at

<https://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/obituary-thorkild-jacobsen-2321535.htm>]

... [and Bendt] Alster was [also a] visiting scholar at the University Museum, Philadelphia, in 1973, 1988-89, 1992 and...1993-94, as well as visiting scholar at the British Expedition to Iraq, Baghdad in 1990, and visiting scholar at the Babylonian Collection, Yale University, 1992... [and] was external lecturer at the University of Copenhagen from 1978 until 2005... Bendt ranks among the most significant Sumerologists of the past half century", (<http://cdli.ox.ac.uk/wiki/doku.php?>



[id=alster_bendt](#)), "An Aspect of 'Enmerkar and the Lord of Aratta', " *Revue d'Assyriologie* 67 (1973), pp.101-109.]

See larger map of **Mesopotamia**, and smaller map of the succeeding **Akkadian Empire** on p.500-501, both showing **Ninive** (or **Nineveh** [Gen 10:11](#)) on the **Tigris** (or **Tigre**) **River**, but only the large map shows Ninive across the Tigris River from present day **Mosul**, both near the northeastern boundary of the succeeding Akkadian Empire, **Nineveh** also a later **strong hold** [H4013](#); [H4692](#); [H4686](#) of the **kings of Assyria** (8 KJV references). And both maps show **Ur** across the **Euphrates** (or **Euphrate**) **River** from **Uruk** ([Gen 10:10](#); [Ezr 4:9 NIV](#)). And a comparison of the maps shows Ur very near the coast of the Persian Gulf on the smaller map, but much further inland on the larger map, this evidently because the Persian Gulf, likely due to a variety of *geological* and *extraterrestrial* 'influences', has significantly 'receded' from its former 'encroachment' into the



eastern end of the **Fertile Crescent** (map of this region too, located in the **Levant**, on p.500).

Uruk, an ancient Mesopotamian city, and supposedly the same as **Erech** [Gen 10:10](#), is placed by some on the Euphrates River in present day Warka, Iraq, , and not far from a likely location of **Ur of the Chaldees** ([Gen 11:28, 31](#); [15:7](#), [Neh 9:7](#)), near present day Nasiriyah, Iraq. And Uruk (**Erech**) is identifiable as **in the land of Shinar** where Nimrod established the cities **of his kingdom** (also [Gen 10:10](#), etc.), **Uruk** being a derivation of the "original Hebrew word 'Erk,' or 'Ark' ", while in turn the "Arabic name of Babylonia, *al-'Irāq*, is thought to derive from the name **Uruk**".

And evidently **Accad... in the land of Shinar**, (uh-huh, [Gen 10:10](#)), or “Akkad” in other ‘modern translations’, as well as on the smaller map, was a city in Nimrod’s **kingdom** between The 2 Visits of Mercury. And after The 2nd Visit of Mercury, during the Akkadian Empire, “It is [only] known that **Akkad...** was a city located along the western bank of the Euphrates River possibly between the cities of **Sippar** and **Kish** (or, perhaps, between **Mari** and **Babylon** or, even, elsewhere along the Euphrates [notice that on the smaller map Akkad has a question mark]). According to legend, it was built by the king Sargon the Great [not to be confused with **Sargon the king of Assyria** [Isa 20:1](#)] (who ruled 2334-2279 BCE) [which would be ‘right after’ The Flood, so for the following reasons he must have “ruled” closer to around 2000 BC, he being the king] who unified Mesopotamia under the rule of his Akkadian Empire and set the standard for future [‘**beastistic**’] forms of government in Mesopotamia... [and] there is no doubt that Sargon the Great created the first multi-national [as well as multi-language] empire in the world” (<https://www.ancient.eu/akkad> - and notice that Genesis 12 follows Genesis 11).

Ur is believed by some to be the location of the native city of the Patriarch Abraham ([Gen 11:31](#); [15:7](#)). It was an “important Sumerian city-state in ancient Mesopotamia”, whose “patron deity was Nanna (in Akkadian, Sin), the Sumerian and Akkadian ([and later] Assyrian-Babylonian) moon god... [and the] site is marked by the partially restored ruins of the Ziggurat of Ur, which contained the shrine of Nanna, excavated in the 1930s... [being] built in the 21st century BC (short chronology), during the reign of Ur-Nammu and was reconstructed in the 6th century BC by Nabonidus”.

The legendary king Gilgamesh, according to the chronology presented in the Sumerian king list [which must be that “brilliant reconstruction” of this “list” that was “submitted” by Thorkild Jacobsen ...for the D Phil degree at Copenhagen], ruled Uruk in the 27th century BC [which would have been before The Flood, so more likely it was in or after the 23rd Century BC, or after The 1st Visit of Mercury]. The city lost its prime importance around 2000 BC [likely in Abraham’s lifetime, or after The 2nd Visit of Mercury], in the context of the [‘**confounded-languages**’] struggle of Babylonia against Elam [e.g., [Ezr 4:9](#); **Elam** also marked on the smaller map], but it remained inhabited throughout the Seleucid (312-63 BC) and Parthian (227 BC to 224 AD) periods until it was finally abandoned shortly before or after the Islamic conquest of 633-638.

And my encyclopedia also informs me that...

Aratta is described as follows in Sumerian [[Ancient Mesopotamian Civilization](#)] literature:

- It is a fabulously wealthy place full of gold, silver, lapis lazuli and other precious materials, as well as the artisans to craft them.
- It is remote and difficult to reach.
- It is home to the goddess Inana, who transfers her allegiance from Aratta to Uruk.
- It is conquered by Enmerkar of Uruk.

And the ‘**planet god**’ Inana was an...

...ancient Sumerian goddess of love, beauty, sex, desire, fertility, war, combat, justice, and political power [yes, a real 'mother' of a 'queen of heaven', you might say]. She was later worshipped by the Akkadians, Babylonians, and Assyrians under the name **Ishtar** [and by the Egyptians as Isis, and throughout the God Zone as Astarte, the Jews calling her **Ashtoreth** (1Ki 11; 2Ki 23; Eze 8)].... She was [also] known as the "Queen of Heaven" [Jer 7 and 44], and was the patron goddess of the **Eanna temple** [or "**E-anna**", meaning "the residence of Inanna"] at the city of Uruk [see "Part of the front of Inanna's temple from Uruk" on p.502], which was her main cult center. She was [last]



associated with the planet Venus [but before The Flood with the Planet Jupiter, and probably before The Curse with the Moon]... Her husband was the god Dumuzid the Shepherd ([read, Osiris/Saturn, as 'he' is] later known [or 'reborn'] as Tammuz [being "in chains" and "in the underworld", or in "Tartarus"]), and her *sukkal*, or personal attendant, was the goddess Ninshubur (who later became the male deity Papsukkal [both *tbb* shortly]).

But the '**planet deity**' "equated with" the Moon before The Curse - who continued to be, though decreasingly so, beyond it - was not the '**queen/mother planet goddess**', but the original '**king planet god**', identified in Dr. Herbert Mason's translation of *Gilgamesh* by the Akkadian-Babylonian name "Sin", and 'he' was also known by the Sumerian-Assyrian name Nanna, and elsewhere later as the '**queen planet goddess**' Nanna too, having evidently sometime after The Curse, in some but not all cultures, 'transitioned' from 'male' to 'female'. And 'he' was originally the son of Enlil, "the Bull of Heaven", the **god** in *Gilgamesh* killed by the '**demigod**' Enkidu, this evidently a theophoric name implying that he was under the protection of Enki, though remember Enkidu finally died from the wound he received in his confrontation with Enlil.

And I'm guessing Enlil was originally "equated with" the Planet Uranus, 'he' being the 'short-lived', '**king planet god**' who apparently 'reigned' after the Moon was 'darkened' by The Curse, all this implying that the **inhabitants of the earth** not only 'saw' Saturn's 'part' in the 'toppling' of Uranus - which I'm guessing was just their *alignment* - but also 'saw' that Enki, who was "equated" with the Planet Mercury, also appeared to play a significant 'roll' in that 'toppling', but one where maybe Mercury did not escape completely 'unscathed', though otherwise somehow 'he' - or 'she' if recognized as Ninshubur - was 'seen' as a 'war counselor' and/or "'personal attendant"' to Saturn and/or Jupiter, if not as the 'mastermind' of it all. But I don't think that Enlil was called "the Bull of Heaven" because 'he' was 'seen' to have 'two horns', but instead, according to Plato, because he was 'seen' to have a different, evidently 'perceptibly large', 'bull-like body part', or literally, "a long filament of gaseous material", one that at some point, apparently during that *alignment* with Saturn, and 'encounter' with Mercury, et al., appeared to be 'cut off

And the '**moon god**' Sin was also later known - in the God Zone - as "the father [and "head"] of the gods", and "creator of all things". And to continue 'running the ages together', as later 'myths' tend to do, "His wife was Ningal ("Great Lady" [or

according to my encyclopedia's entry about her, "Great Lady/Queen"... "a goddess...in the Sumerian mythology... [who was the] daughter of Enki... and the consort [or "spouse, especially of a reigning monarch"] of the moon god Nanna" or Sin]), who bore him Utu/Shamash ("Sun") and Inanna/Ishtar (the goddess of the planet Venus [and evidently before that, the goddess of the Planet Jupiter])", and who, while the Moon and/or Uranus "ruled" and held their 'masculine roles', and because 'she' was thought to have 'given birth' to the Sun, and to be the 'wife' of the formerly 'very bright' Moon, must have originally been "equated with" that "Shining Star", the Dwarf Star Saturn. And I mean I expect that all of this was 'in the mix' of what Satan '**propagandized**' in Mesopotamia, and later to some extent in the entire God Zone, though not so much later in Greece or elsewhere.

And the 'sex change' of the '**planet god**' Papsukka, formerly the '**planet goddess**' Ninshubur, this 'change' evidently "equated with" the 'changing behaviors' of the Planet Mercury, must have been 'perceived' as such at least partly because of 'his' later especially 'forceful encounters' with Earth, but 'he' was then nonetheless identified as...

...the messenger god in the Akkadian pantheon. He is identified in late Akkadian texts and is known chiefly from the Hellenistic period... [and] he acts as both messenger and gatekeeper for the rest of the pantheon... Papsukkal was syncretized with [read, 'was another culture's and/or another age's name for'] Ninshubur [- 'she' too described as being "like...Hermes"], the messenger of the goddess Inanna [which implies that both before and after The Flood some 'interactions' between the Planet Mercury and Jupiter were seen too].

And here let's again pause to attempt to somewhat "syncretize", (and that is, "To reconcile and unite... [in this case] differing religious beliefs" or "differing" **gods**), the varying 'identities' of Saturn, Mercury, Jupiter and Venus. To oversimplify, and leaving out in this paragraph the Earth and its *moon*, and with a bias for the God Zone, and using, on p.503, color-coded chronological, (from earlier to later), Mesopotamian / Egyptian / Assyrian-Babylonian-Canaanite / Greek / Jewish names, evidently after the 'toppling' of Uranus, the Pre-Flood/'pre-nova' Saturn was "equated with" Dumuzid or Enlil / Osiris / Bel or Marduk or Merodak or Moloch / Cronus / Bel or Baal or Moloch. And his wife, the Planet Jupiter, was "equated with" Inanna / Isis / Sarpanit or Belit or Istar or Astarte / Rhea / Ashtoreth or **the queen of heaven**, and 'her' later 'killed', 'reborn', but 'incarcerated husband', the Post-Flood/'post-nova' Saturn was "equated with" Tammuz / Tammuz or Horus / Bel or Marduk or Merodak or Moloch / Cronus / Bel or Tammuz, as 'he' was "in chains" and in "Tartarus". And 'identities' of the Planet Mercury evidently included Ea or Enki or Ninshubur or Papsukkal / Thoth / Nebo / Stilbon or Hermes / Mercurius.

Other '**queen/mother planet god**' types were "equated with" not just Jupiter and/or Venus, but with the Earth and the Moon too, apparently mostly because of their 'consequential close encounters' (read, *perturbations, elastic to inelastic collisions, and/or alignments, etc.*), and because of their 'perceived resulting offspring' (read, *volcanic bombs, escaping moons, and/or proximity or apparent proximity to newly discovered objects, etc.*). And so 'they' were usually considered wives and/or daughters of Jupiter and/or Saturn, an arguable exception being the last '**goddess**' in my following 'short list' who, by one account, was 'brought to life' by the 'castration' of Uranus, and that is, when the 'eviscerated part' was 'hurled into Earth's sea'.

My 'short list' of Greek/Roman '**king-planet-wife/daughter goddesses**' is as follows:

(1) Dione – this name being “essentially the feminine... form of... *Zeús*”, and “*Dione* is translated as “Goddess”, and given the same etymological [or ‘original’] derivation as the names *Zeus*, *Diana*, et al.”, and, “One source describes her as an ancient wife of Zeus”, and another identifies ‘her’ “as the mother of the Roman goddess of love, Venus, or [by another] equivalently as the mother of the Greek goddess of love, Aphrodite, but Dione is also [later] sometimes identified [directly] with Aphrodite”, and so ‘she’ can be “equated with” both the Planets Jupiter and Venus, depending on the ‘Age’.

(2) Artemis – the “Roman equivalent” being Diana, “goddess of the hunt”, and commonly also “portrayed as a moon goddess”, and, “In later Hellenistic times, she even assumed the ancient [‘mothering’] role of Eileithyia”, “the Greek goddess of childbirth and midwifery”, and so besides being both earlier and later “equated with” the Moon, ‘she’ may have been by some also earlier “equated with” Jupiter, and later with Venus too,

(3) Athena – another ‘mother’ of a ‘queen of heaven’, and supposedly the cause of the greatest “headache” of a ‘reigning’ **‘king planet god’**, as consequently ‘she’ was “born [or *ejected*] from the head of her father Zeus”, and by some accounts at the same time as “her brother Ares [Mars]” and other of ‘her siblings’, whom their father had supposedly earlier “swallowed” (an event evidently involving *comets*, *asteroids*, and/or *planets* ‘crash-landing’ on Jupiter), fearing they would depose him as he had Saturn, and as Saturn had Uranus. And about Athena, “It is presumed that her Roman name, Minerva, is based on... Etruscan [read, ‘pre-classical Greek’, or ‘before The Visits of Mars’] mythology”, and before that “based on” an “Italic [Italian Peninsula, ‘before The Visits of Venus’] moon goddess” – evidently Nanna – but ‘she’ was finally “equated with” the Planet Venus,

(4) Aphrodite – already well “equated with” both Jupiter and Venus, and according to Plato also with a *meteor* ‘crash-landing’ into one of Earth’s *oceans* supposedly at the time Uranus was ‘emasculated’ and ‘toppled’, however if Plato’s ‘testimony’ is not actually based – but ‘extrapolated’ – from later ‘witnessed’, Post-Flood/‘post-water-canopy’, ‘wet crash-landings’, then this *object* would have to have ‘plunged through’ the *water canopy* without collapsing it, which I find questionable. So I’d guess that any ‘testimony’ of such a ‘doubly-wet crash-landing’, and in turn Plato’s account, was likely in this respect ‘misreported’.

And so we have to some extent ‘come full sycretizing circle’. And I mean I hope you’re now **seeing** the still intertwined influences of The Moon Age, The Saturn Age, The Mercury/Jupiter Age, The Venus Age, and The Mars Age on the ‘age to age changing identities’ of all these **‘queen’** and/or **‘mother planet goddesses’**, all of them in one “age” or another being “equated with” the Earth (which we’ll account for shortly), the Moon, Saturn, Jupiter, and/or Venus.

For example you should now **see** that as these “ages” changed, in some cultures the new **‘reigning king’** and/or **‘queen planet’** sometimes inherited the same name of the old **‘reigning planet’**. And when the brightness and/or ‘prominence’ of a *planet* was significantly ‘diminished’, it was sometimes thereafter no longer considered to be ‘male’ but instead ‘female’, and vice versa. The Moon was apparently the first **‘heavenly body’** ([1Co 15:41](#)) ‘perceived’ to have made such a ‘sex-change’. Evidently Mercury was next, but in the opposite direction. And Jupiter is another example of a ‘female to male sex change’.

Also for example the Babylonian term “Bel” just means “master” or ‘lord”, and is a “title” applied to many **gods**, while “Belit”, the feminine form, applies to many **‘goddesses’**, but standing alone these terms commonly refer to whichever **‘king planet god’** or **‘queen planet goddess’** is then **‘reigning’**. The same goes for the terms “Baal” (meaning, “Lord”), and “Moloch” (meaning “king”, also rendered **Molech, Milcom** or **Malcham** in the KJV).

However and generally speaking, when the Saturn ‘went nova’ – likely while *aligned* with Jupiter, and after earlier ‘encounters’ with Mercury – and was ‘perceived’ to be ‘dethroned’ and ‘incarcerated’ after The Flood, ‘he’ remained a ‘reborn’ version of ‘himself’, while the Planet Jupiter – before that generally considered to be the wife of Saturn, and the **‘queen/mother planet goddess’** – became for many the new and **‘reigning king planet god’**, and therefore took over or shared the culturally appropriate “title” of “master” or “lord” or “king”. And this was especially so for those with the ‘misguided viewpoint’ that Jupiter’s ‘prominence’ over Mercury had been ‘decisively established’ in that ‘Tower of Babel incident’, (and I’ll be ‘enlightning’ you (*sic*, P-PAMD) as to how Jupiter was ‘perceived’ to have ‘out-powered’ Mercury shortly). But from other equally ‘misguided viewpoints’ of this ‘incident’, it was Mercury’s supposed ‘power’ and ‘superior knowledge’ to **confound...language** that instead raised ‘him’ to ‘prominence’.

And this rivalry – literally due to a variety of ‘misguided viewpoints’, and that is, due to Satan’s **‘propaganda’** that was evidently often **devised** [H2161: H2803: H4284](#) to **stir up** [H5782: G329](#) such **conflict** [G73](#), etc. – certainly resulted in more disagreement as to which **‘heavenly body’** was “equated with” the **‘queen/mother planet goddess’**.

But I expect all such ‘types’ are at least partially ‘syncretizable’ with the **‘earth goddess’** Gaia, “one of the Greek primordial deities”, “the immediate parent of Uranus”, [and] the ancestral mother of all life”, of whom “Hesiod’s *Theogony* tells how, after Chaos [read, ‘after Creation’, though “Hesiod and the Pre-Socratics use... [this] term in the context of cosmogony [in this case meaning a “religious... contemplation of the cosmos and its nature” involving “spiritual entities”, interpreting Chaos “as either “the gaping void above the Earth created when Earth and Sky are separated from their primordial unity” or “the gaping space below the Earth on which Earth rests” “]... [or in other words, by the ‘act of creation’] Gaia (Earth) arose to be the everlasting seat of the immortals who possess Olympus above, and the depths of Tartarus below (as some scholars interpret it)... [and Hesiod] then tells that Gaia brought forth her equal Uranus (Heaven, Sky) to “cover her on every side” and to be the abode of the gods... [and ‘she’] bore the hills (ourea), and Pontus (Sea), [all] “without sweet union of love” (i.e., with no father)... [and afterward] ...with Uranus she gave birth to the Titans”. And let’s not pass by the implication here that Uranus may have been in *alignment* with Neptune when the *objects* that *collided* to produce the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts ‘broke out’ Mercury, but apparently also ‘broke out’ other ‘pieces’ that subsequently became “equated with” the “mighty” Titans, at least until ‘they’ “were overthrown by Cronus’s children... in the Titanomachy” (read, ‘they were *captured as moons*’, and/or ‘crash-landed’, and/or ‘were *comets* that finally disintegrated or became *extinct* (burnt out and no longer visible), etc, and thereafter supposedly ‘incarcerated’ in “Tartarus”.)

And later **‘queen/mother planet goddess’** types – from the Age of Jupiter on – must also be at least partially ‘syncretizable’ with Hera, the wife of Zeus, Greek “goddess of women, marriage, family, and childbirth”, ‘her’ “Roman equivalent” being Juno, the wife of Jupiter or Jove.

And I mean apparently the biggest ‘identity disagreements’ during Jupiter’s “age” and thereafter are not as much over the attributes of the various **‘queen’** and/or **‘mother planet goddesses’**, but over which **‘heavenly body’** or **‘bodies’** they were “equated with”, though apparently the ‘prime suspects’ in this “age” were the Earth and the Moon, since Jupiter had become the ‘dominant male’, and Venus had not yet ‘exploded onto the scene’, while Saturn remained unquestionably ‘sidelined’, resulting in an ever-diminishing following, and Mercury too, having also ‘retreated to obscurity’, became the ‘perceptibly greatly inferior’, but ‘exclusive’, ‘companion of the Sun’.

But after the Planet Venus ‘emerged’ as the new ‘drama queen’, including on a couple of occasions ‘catastrophically assaulting’ the Earth and the Moon, if we narrow it to just the (again color-coded) Greek/Roman **‘goddesses’**, then I’d have to conclude that **Gaia/Tellus** or **Terra**, **Hera/Juno**, **Athena/Minerva**, **Ceres/Demeter**, **Artemis/Diana**, **Eileithyia** (and the **Eileithyiai**, the collective name of all “the Greek... birth goddesses”)/ **Lucina** (and the **Nixae**, the collective name of all the Roman “birth deities”), and **Dione** or **Aphrodite/Venus** – altogether – more widely divided the roles of the **‘queen’** and/or **‘mother planet goddess’**, and that is, the roles became more ‘widely distributed’ among the various **‘goddesses’** and **‘demigoddesses’**. And principally this division was represented by ‘daughters’ and ‘wives’ of the **‘king planet’** Jupiter, including:

- (1) **Athena/Minerva**, who by ‘her’ earlier association with the Planet Venus was not so much a **‘mother goddess’**, but more a **‘chieftess/warrior planet goddess’**, ‘she’ being the one evidently “equated with” the more ‘hostile interactions’ of the Planet Venus with other **‘planet gods’** and **‘goddesses’**, though ‘she’ was evidently also both earlier and later “equated with” some of the more ‘defensive interactions’ of the Moon that protected Earth, while...
- (2) **Artemis/Diana**, though mostly a ‘hunter/defender’ **‘moon goddess’** – and certainly Planet Earth would not have survived ‘her encounters’ with other **‘visiting planet gods’** or **‘goddesses’** without the Moon’s ‘help’ – later ‘she’ may have also been “equated with” some of the more ‘hostile interactions’ of the Planet Venus, and **‘she’** also later took on some of the more ‘motherly’ attributes too, as did...
- (3) **Ceres/Demeter**, the **‘nurturing earth goddesses’**, while...
- (4) **Dione** or **Aphrodite/Venus**, apparently later “equated with” the Planet Venus, was a **‘love goddess’**, though this association apparently corresponded with a period starting after ‘she’ had settled into ‘her’ more ‘harmless’ present *orbit*, evidently resulting in the ‘perception’ of more ‘womanly’, though not really ‘mothering’ attributes, and no longer overly ‘hostile’ ones either, such attributes being similar to those of...
- (5) **Hera/Juno**, the ‘queen’ and ‘wife’ of **Zeus/Jupiter**, evidently “equated with” both the Earth and the Moon.

And **Hera**, whichever **‘heavenly body’** ‘she’ was “equated with”, had an “archaic association...primarily with cattle, as a Cow Goddess”, and a “syncopated form” of her “Roman equivalent” name, **Juno**, (as “endorsed by Georg Wissowa”), means “heifer”, which I’m guessing is a ‘family bovine characteristic’, likely inspired by both the Planets Venus and Mercury’s *double cometary tails*, (and yes, “Most breeds of **cows**, bulls, steers, heifers, they’re all able to have horns”), as well as inspired by that ‘bull-like body part’ of Uranus. And besides being “equated with”

the Earth, “Ancient etymologies [word origins] associated Juno's name... to the renewal of the new and waxing moon [which when seen in *crescent* form appears to have ‘horns’ too], perhaps implying the idea of a moon goddess”.

And I mean from ‘age to age’ apparently **‘queen’** and/or **‘mother goddesses’** sometimes kept, or returned to, or shared, or distributed former characteristics and/or names, while sometimes keeping or changing their **‘heavenly body’** associations too.

In turn, and to **correct** [H3256](#): [H3198](#): [G3810](#) an earlier **correction** [H8433](#): [H4148](#): [G1882](#), I now **see** that after the Planet Mars “arose”, Bel, Baal, Marduk, Merodak (or **Merodach** [Jer 50:2](#)), Moloch, etc. – these being ‘God Zone names’ earlier “equated with” the Planet Saturn, and after that with the Planet Jupiter – became names “equated with” the Planet Mars.

But I should add that this ‘wider distribution’ was really more just the result of more and more **gods** ‘arising’ as a **‘natural’** result of The Progression of The Fallout of The Curse, meaning that over time there were just more and more ‘broken’ and ‘ejected pieces’ that were ‘put in play’, though some of them were later “swallowed”, or ‘incarcerated’, or otherwise ‘diminished’ and ‘taken out of play’ too, all this physically attributable to the single, **predestinated, great and terrible ‘God-shot’** initiated by The Curse, which was evidently **ordained** largely to help with God’s thereafter **‘precisely timed and targeted’** both **‘small’** and **great judgments** on **the inhabitants of the earth**, but above that, so He might **by any** and **by all means save some**.

And now we **know** that Satan has from ‘age to age’ and ‘culture to culture’ used The Curse to ‘force’ his **means**, and that is, he’s used increasing numbers of **‘propagandized planet gods’** to **‘intimidate and motivate mankind into serving and worshipping both him and their own flesh’**. But along the way he also has been ‘forced’ by this same **curse** of God into ‘changing their identities’. And we should now be **‘better able’** to **see** these ‘forced changes’ in relation to God’s **‘wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath’** ([Act 2:19](#)), and that is, **see** how Satan has used these **works of God** for ‘elevating’ or ‘diminishing’ his **devised** and **‘propagandized planet gods’**, which I will attempt to summarize as follows:

Originally (1) the Moon, rivaling the brightness of and otherwise more influential than the Sun – just outside the *water canopy* – was generally considered the ‘supreme light in the sky’, at least until ‘he’ became visibly dimmer, and to some a ‘she’, and that is, when the initial consequences of The Curse ‘shook’ the Moon and ‘dusted up’ its atmosphere, this being at least part of what made Uranus the new ‘supreme light in the sky’.

Then (2) Uranus, apparently not long after The Curse, ‘went nova’, and in the process got ‘blown sideways’, or instead – if it was all along just a *gas-ice giant planet* – it may have survived some sort of *collision*, leaving it ‘barreling on its side’, and in either one or the combination of these scenarios this ‘toppling’ likely also involved an ongoing, ‘billiards-like’, **‘God-shot’**, one that started with two major earlier *collisions*, the first producing the Outer Solar System Oort Cloud, including Planet X or Nine, etc., and the second producing the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts that both intersect the *orbit* of Neptune, this second one likely involving Neptune’s ‘pull’ to bring it about, though ‘he’ probably ‘suffered a little’ from it too, and it likely also ‘broke out’ Mercury, as well as other ‘larger pieces’, one of which shortly thereafter may have *collided* with Uranus, ‘knocking it on its side’, these being – as I presently **see** it – the most likely earlier consequences of The Fallout from The Curse, and all this was

apparently ‘perceptibly’ *magnified* by the then still functioning *water lens* in Earth’s sky, evidently ‘exposing’ events as far away as the **‘Satan-propagandized’** ‘castration’ and ‘toppling’ of Uranus, supposedly while *aligned* with Saturn, and ‘encountering’ Mercury, et al.

Then (3a) the Dwarf Star Saturn, after ‘his’ long Golden Age of “dominance” lasting for the greater part of the time between Creation Week and The Flood, apparently finally ‘went nova’, evidently just before the ‘draining’ of the *water canopy*, leaving ‘him’ only dimly visible, and otherwise apparently both smaller and farther away from Earth, and since ‘he’ was last seen just before ‘demagnification’ as *ringed* or “chained” and afterward ‘significantly dimmer’, Jupiter became the new ‘supreme light in the sky’, and the blame for Saturn’s demise.

But (3b) the Planet Mercury was ‘perceived’ by others as the ‘mastermind’ of it all, and they ‘saw his tour’ – or **‘God-shot’** – through the Solar System, including ‘his’ many ‘close encounters’ and/or *alignments* with likely every other *planet* (Venus and maybe Mars then not yet in existence), including ‘his’ two **great and terrible** ‘close encounters’ with Earth, as sufficient cause to establish ‘him’, at least for part of an “age”, as the ‘supreme light in the sky’, this ‘perspective’ being reinforced by ‘his demonstrated power’ to **confound... language**, except that other **inhabiters of the earth** with differing, though nonetheless ‘misguided viewpoints’ instead **‘mis-imagined’** – because the *atmosphere* during **‘his visits’** was quite ‘stirred-up’ – that the ‘great lightning bolt’ that “destroyed” The Tower of Babel was not from ‘him’, but from that known ‘lightning-bolt-thrower’, Jupiter, and this ‘misperception’, along with Mercury’s subsequent ‘retreat to obscurity’, and that is, to the ‘close companionship’ of the ‘overwhelmingly brighter’ Sun, finally at least generally confirmed – as apparently **‘propagandized’** by Satan – Jupiter as the ‘supreme light in the sky’.

Then (4) the Planet Venus – as likely also Mars too – *exploded out* of the Planet Jupiter, but ‘she’ was also by some confused with Jupiter, at least earlier on, and especially on ‘her’ first ‘catastrophically-assaulting encounter’ with Earth, the ‘stirred-up’, ‘highly charged’ *atmosphere* likely again causing ‘misperception’, at least until ‘she’ finally more clearly distinguished ‘her own’ various, ‘culture-centered’, ‘unique but syncretizable identities’. However later repeated ‘hostile encounters’ with Mars appeared to ‘force her’ into ‘her’ present ‘relatively harmless’, though still *brightest*, ‘morning/evening-star’ *orbit*.

And (5) the Planet Mars, which apparently also earlier *exploded out* of Jupiter, not only eventually rivaled the Planet Venus, but twice directly ‘foolishly assaulted’ this clearly ‘greater goddess’, evidently surprisingly ‘holding his own’ in both ‘encounters’, and ‘he’ also thereafter had several ‘provocative encounters’ with Earth, and ‘he’, being the last to have such ‘close encounters’ with Earth, and since these ‘encounters’ did not as much limit Earth’s **inhabiters** from surviving and recording them, “arose” for an “age” as the ‘supreme light in the sky’, at least until ‘he’ too was somehow ‘forced’ into ‘his’ present ‘relatively harmless’ *orbit*, which must have been when Satan realized that no **‘planet gods’** were likely soon returning to Earth, and he reverted from primarily promoting **‘planet-god’ worship** in order to advance **‘beastism’** to his original **‘propaganda’, ‘self idolatry’**, to advance it.

And there are **gods** in the lists above that I haven't yet very well introduced, which I'll leave

to you, because I expect you'll find, like I have, about as many different introductions to such **gods** as there are sources that 'identify' them – though I've also found that they're usually all, at least to some extent, 'syncretizable'.

Still, and despite the fact that his contributions are quite recent, and as promised, I don't want to pass by **our brother** Professor Dr. Klaus Dieter Seybold, "born...1936 in Heidenheim [in the southeasternmost German State of Bavaria], [died] 2011 in Basel [Switzerland]... a German Protestant theologian and professor of Old Testament in Basel", who first "studied Protestant theology in Tübingen [in the southwesternmost German State of Baden-Württemberg] at the Protestant theological monastery, and in Heidelberg [also in Baden-Württemberg], and thereafter became "Vicar of the Evangelical Church in Württemberg... then Repetent at the Protestant Seminary in Blaubeuren [again in Baden-Württemberg]... [then] a research assistant in the department of Old Testament of the Theological Faculty of Kiel University ["in the northernmost German state of Schleswig-Holstein"]... In 1968 he received his doctorate in theology with a dissertation on the subject: The Davidic kingship in the testimony of the prophets. In 1972 he habilitated at the Theological Faculty of the University of Kiel with the habilitation thesis: Disease and Healing in the Psalms. Investigations on the determination and assignment of disease and healing palsies... [and] worked [there] until 1979 as a lecturer and professor... [and from] 1976 to 1977... [in] a professorship at the theological faculty of the university. In 1977 he also took part in the course of the German Protestant Institute in Jerusalem. In 1979, Seybold was appointed Full Professor of Old Testament Theology at the Theological Faculty of the University of Basel. From 1980 to 1981 and from 1998 to 1999 he was able to hold other guest lectures and lectures at the University of Lucerne [Switzerland], 1986 in Taejon in South Korea, from 1990 to 1991 in Zurich [now "the largest city in Switzerland"], 1999 in Debrecen ["Hungary's second largest city after Budapest"] and in Budapest [a "co-capital of the Austro-Hungarian Empire" until 1918], and [in] 2000 in Sibiu, Romania. From 1980 to 2003 he was also editor of the Theologische Zeitschrift Basel [*Basel Theological Journal*]. From 1982 to 1988 he was head of the Theological Seminary in Basel... [and he was the annual] Dean of the Theological Faculty of the University of Basel [4 times]... In 2001 he was Vice President of the 17th Congress of the International Organization of the Old Testament (IOSOT) in Basel. He was retired in 2004 and died in 2011".

[The Sumerian Enki was the same as the Babylonian Ea; See for instance Professor Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr., *Die Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens* (Giessen, 1905), Vol. I, p. 62. The name Ea was written with the ideogram EN.KI. Students of Babylonian astronomy are well aware that "by 'Star of the god Ea' Mercury is meant." *Ibid.*, Vol. II, p. 667, note 2.]

Equally pronounced was the position of Thoth, the planet Mercury of the Egyptian pantheon, the theophoric part of the name Thutmose [which again is a "**theophoric name** (from... [the Greek word meaning] literally "bearing or carrying a god") [and which] embeds the name of a god, both invoking and displaying the protection of that deity"]...

[Cf. Patrick Boylan [?], *Thoth the Hermes of Egypt* (Oxford, 1922 [on Amazon, etc.]) [Diodorus wrote (I.17.3) that when Isis [Jupiter] took over the kingdom from Osiris [Saturn], Hermes (i.e., Thoth) became her chief counsellor. This means that the planet

Mercury was [or remained] prominent in the period after Jupiter replaced Saturn as the dominant planet. Diodorus also wrote that it was by the Egyptian Hermes “that the common language of mankind was first further articulated” (I.16.1).

An Egyptian hymn calls Thoth the deity that “made different the tongue of one country from another.” (Jaroslav Cerny [“a Czech Egyptologist, [who from] 1929 to 1946... was a lecturer and *docent* [“academic appointment... below the full professor rank”] at Charles University in Prague, [and] from 1946 to 1951, the Edwards Professor of Egyptology at the University College, London. From 1951 to 1965... Professor of Egyptology at University of Oxford”), “*Thoth as Creator of Languages*,” *The Journal of Egyptian Archaeology* 34 (1[48], pp.121-122). Another text tells that this god “distinguished (or separated) the tongue of country from country.” (*Ibid.*, p.121). Yet another recounts that he “dis-tinguished the tongue of every foreign land.” (*Ibid.*, *loc. cit.*). Cerny comments that the words “made different” or “distinguished” or “separated” are “past participles alluding probably to some lost myth or legend according to which Thoth differentiated the languages of the various countries. These epithets might even be cited as evidence of an Egyptian parallel to the Hebrew fable of Yahwe and the Tower of Babel.” Cf. John Gwyn Griffiths, *Plutarch’s De Iside et Osiride*, pp.263f. In Egyptian texts Thoth was called “lord of divine words” and “mighty in speech”; according to Sir Ernest Alfred Thompson Wallis Budge [a late 19th/early 20th Century “English Egyptologist, Orientalist, and philologist who worked for the British Museum and published numerous works on the ancient Near East... made numerous trips to Egypt and the Sudan on behalf of the British Museum to buy antiquities, and helped it build its collection of cuneiform tablets, manuscripts, and papyri... [as well as] published many books on Egyptology, helping to bring the findings to larger audiences... [and being] knighted for his service to Egyptology and the British Museum”], “from one aspect he [Mercury] is speech itself... Thoth could teach a man not only words of power, but also the manner in which to utter them... The words, however ...must be learned from Thoth.” Thoth was also known as “scribe of the gods” and “lord of books”...

Charles University...

...known also as **Charles University in Prague**... or historically as the **University of Prague**... is the oldest and largest university in the Czech Republic. Founded in 1348, it was the first university in Central Europe. It is one of the oldest universities in Europe in continuous operation and ranks in the upper 1.5 percent of the world’s best universities.

Its seal shows its protector [Holy Roman] Emperor Charles IV [who “promised to be subservient to [Pope] Clement [VI]”], with his coats of arms as King of the Romans and King of Bohemia...

But this university too became a “protestant academy” for most the 15th Century, and, “The faculty of arts became a centre of the Hussite movement, and the chief doctrinal authority of the Utraquists (Hussites who believe in “communion under both kinds”, or that both ‘bread and wine’ are appropriately administered with communion), and “Jesuits were expelled [from] 1618-1621 during the early stages of the Thirty Years' War”, however...

By 1622 the Jesuits had a predominant influence over the emperor [- he being the “zealous Catholic”, Ferdinand II, who “wanted to restore the Catholic Church as the only religion in the Empire and to wipe out any form of religious dissent”, but who really only prolonged The Thirty Years' War]. An Imperial decree of 19 September 1622 gave the Jesuits supreme control over the entire school

system of Bohemia, Moravia and Silesia. The last four professors at the Carolinum [from the Latin name for Charles University, *Universitas Carolina*] resigned and all of the Carolinum and nine colleges went to the Jesuits. The right of handing out degrees, of holding chancellor-ships and of appointing the secular professors was also granted to the Jesuits.

...(The Gods of the Egyptians [London,1904], Vol. I, p.401; cf. Patrick Boylan, *Thoth the Hermes of Egypt* [Oxford,1922] and Boris von Turajeff [or Turajeff], "Zwei Hymnen an Thoth" ["Two Hymns to Thoth"], *Zeitschrift fuer Aegyptische Sprache* [Journal of Egyptian Language] 33 [1895], pp.120-125).

In the dialogue *Phaedrus* (sect.274-275), Plato presents a story about the invention of letters by Thoth, and explores some of the implications of this new skill. It "will create forgetfulness in the learners' souls, because they will not use their memories; they will trust to the external written characters and not remember of themselves." (transl. by Benjamin Jowett [19th Century "renowned... influential tutor and administrative reformer in the University of Oxford, a theologian and translator of Plato and Thucydides... [and he] was Master of Balliol College, Oxford"].)

...For the northern [Nordic or Scandinavian] peoples, Mercury was Odin.

[See Tacitus, *Germania* IX, transl. by Harold Mattingly [20th Century, Cambridge educated, "British art historian and numismatist ["the study or collection of currency"], who specialised in the history of Ancient Rome, especially Etruscan and Roman currency... [not to be confused with his] son, Harold B. Mattingley (d. 2015)... a celebrated numismatist, and President of the Royal Numismatic Society 1999-2004"] (1948): "Above all they worship Mercury, and count it no sin to win his favor on certain days by human sacrifices." [!!!] Odin was the head of the Nordic pantheon. Matthew of Westminster [was "long regarded as the author of the *Flores Historiarum* [*Flowers of History*, but is]... now thought never to have existed... [t]he error [being]... first discovered in 1826... and later... completely proved ...[and it] appears to have been taken from that of Matthew Paris, from whose *Chronica majora* [*Greater Chronicle*] the earlier part of the work was mainly copied, and from Westminster Abbey, where the work was partially written"] (Flores ed.,1601, p.82) [- the work nonetheless] transmits a speech by Saxon envoys to Britain ca. 450 A.D.: "*Deos patrios, scilicet Saturnum, Jovem atque ceteros, qui mundum gubernant, colimus, maxime autem Mercurium, quem lingua nostra Voden apellamus.*" - "We worship the gods of our fathers, that is, Jupiter, Saturn, and the rest of those that rule the world, but most of all [we worship] Mercury, whom in our language we call Voden."

Of Odin it was said: "He spoke so well and so smoothly that all who heard him believed all he said was true." - *Heimskringla: History of the Kings of Norway*, transl. by Lee Milton Hollander [20th Century "American scholar of Norse literature and mythology... [who] was a long-term faculty member and head of the Department of Germanic Studies at the University of Texas at Austin and published many translations of Old Norse texts"] (Austin,1964), pp.10-11. He [Odin/Mercury] was associated with Hugin or "thought" and Munin or "memory."

One of the myths about Odin connects him with the multiplicity of languages. In the *Gylfaginning* ["Tricking of Gylfi... the first part of Snorri Sturluson's *Prose Edda* ["an Old Norse work of literature written in Iceland in the early 13th century"]... [which] deals with the creation and destruction of the world of the Norse gods, and many other aspects of Norse mythology"], ch.XIX, it is said that the reason why Odin is known by many different names is "the fact that there are in the world so many different languages" [- the same being generally true for all other '**Satan-propagandized**' gods].]

It is characteristic that in many astronomical texts [the Roman] Mercury, the Greek Hermes, the Babylonian Nebo, the Egyptian Thoth, [etc.] is portrayed as the planet-god which had in his dominion the physiological capacity of memory in man, ...

[1a] *Hermes*. "The planet Mercury [is] the deity which presides over the rational energy," wrote the neo-Platonist philosopher Porphyry ['Mr. Pompous-ass'] (*On the Wanderings of Ulysses*, transl. by Thomas Taylor [https://archive.org/stream/alchemicalarchive/taylor-on-the-wanderings-of-ulysses_djvu.txt] [London, 1823], p.259) and [1b] Proclus, the last great representative of that school, elaborated in his description of Mercury's powers: "(Mercury) unfolds into light intellectual gifts, fills all things with divine reasons, elevates souls to intellect, wakens them as from a profound sleep..." (*In Euclidi Elementa [In Euclid's Elements]* lib. [Book] I, par.14; [1c] cf. *idem*, *In Platonis Rem Publicam [In Plato's Republic]*, ed. Johann August Nauck [19th Century "German classical scholar and critic... [whose] chief work was the *Tragicorum Graecorum Fragmenta (TrGF) [Greek Tragedy Fragments]*", I.255, II.221). [1d] Proclus also described Hermes as "responsible for distinguishing and interpreting things, recalling to memory the sources of the intellect..." (*In Platonis Rem Publicam* II.224).

[2] *Nebo*. See above, n.3 [which I believe is the one I labeled [1c]].

[3] *Thoth*. An Egyptian hymn assigns to Thoth control over man's mnemonic powers, invoking him as the deity "that recalls all what had been forgotten." (Robert Hari [20th Century "Swiss pedagogue and archaeologist... [and] the chair of Egyptology at the University of Geneva... [and as a] Member of many learned societies and author of monographs, he created *Belles Lettres*, founded the magazine *Aegyptiaca Helvetica [Egyptology of Switzerland]* and the *Egyptology Society of Geneva*"], *Horemheb et le Reine Moutnedjemet [Horemheb and Queen Moutnedjemet]* [Geneva, 1965].)

...as well as that of speech. According to Augustine, "speech is Mercury."

[*The City of God* VII.14.1.] [Servius called Mercury "et orationis deus et interpretum" ["speech and the translator of the gods"] (*In Vergili Aeneidem [The Aeneid]* IV.239). Arnobius (*Adversus Gentes [Against the Nations]* III.32) argued that Mercury is simply speech and words exchanged in conversation. Cf. Hippolytus, *Refutatio* V.2; Clement of Alexandria, *Homilia* VI. xv; Macrobius wrote in his *Saturnalia*: "*scimus autem Mercurium vocis et sermonis potentem*." ["Now we know Mercury's powerful voice and speech"] Proclus, (*Commentaire sur le Timee [Commentary on Time]*, transl. by André-Jean Festugiere [20th Century "French Dominican friar, philosopher, philologist, and expert on Neoplatonism, and in particular the works of Proclus... [and] notable for his translation of the works attributed to Hermes Trismegistus"), Vol.V, p.237) asserted that "la faculte de langage [correspond à] Hermes..." ["the language faculty [corresponds to] Hermes"] Cf. Félix Buffière [?], *Les Mythes d'Homere et la Pensée grecque [Homer's Myths and Greek Thought - on Amazon in French]* (Paris, 1956), pp.289 ff. A scholium to Aristophanes' *Plutus*, Act.IV, scene I, and a scholium to Apollonius Rhodius' *Argonautica* 1.517 provide further details about Mercury's association with language.]

[Direct information that confirms our assumption is provided by Hyginus. Hyginus wrote that for many centuries men "lived without town or laws, speaking one tongue under the rule of Jove. But after Mercury explained the languages of men (whence he is called *hermeneutes*, 'interpreter,' for Mercury in Greek is called Hermes; he, too, divided the nations) then discord arose among mortals..."

And otherwise Jupiter generally continued to get the credit for 'great lightning strikes' and other such 'powerful acts of god', while Mercury continued to get the credit for '**confounding the languages**' and other such 'powerful acts of thought'.

Hyginus, *Fabulae [Fables]*, no. 143: "Phoroneus," transl. Mary Grant [?], in *The Myths of Hyginus* (University of Kansas Publications: Lawrence, 1960 [- available online]). Here Mercury is made directly responsible for the confusion of languages. "The meaning is clearly that Hermes invented one language for one people, another for another. The whole account reminds one of the Biblical Tower of Babel." *ibid.*, p.118.

The Romans as well as the Greeks pictured Mercury with wings, either on his headgear or at his ankles [or both, see sculpture, p.511], ...



[According to Servius (In *Vergili Aeneidem Commentarii* IV.239) "*Mercurius ideo dicitur habere pennas, quia citius ab omnibus planetis in ortum suum recurrit unde et velox et errans inducitur, ut ["Mercury is said to have wings, because of his fast visits and returns from all the planets and how often the urges for these wanderings come"] (Georgica I.337) "quos ignis caeli Cyllenius erret in orbes." ["What a sky fire Mercury the flying orb is."]*



...and with an emblem, the caduceus, a staff with two snakes winding. The double serpent (caduceus ["modern depiction", p.511]), the emblem of Mercury, is found in ornaments of all peoples of antiquity; a special treatise could be written about this subject; I found the caduceus all around the world.

And I will limit what I have to say on this subject to my surmise that Mercury is depicted this way, with two "snakes winding" around a centered "staff" for the same reason that Venus is depicted as 'a bull with two horns', both images being the result of the 'multi-tailed' *outgassing* of these two *comets*, these 'characteristics' evidently seen both before and after their '**visits**' to Earth, and in the case of Venus, especially as it departed from the Sun, because in this direction the 'horns' would appear to 'precede the head', and in Mercury's case, with the *comet* moving faster than any other *object* in the Solar System, having more greatly *accelerated* due its longer, though evidently incremental, 'fall toward the Sun', and as it was apparently also *spinning*, when it was close enough to the Sun it produced two outer *cometary tails* 'winding around' the more centrally located one. Uh-huh.

[The caduceus was an emblem of the Babylonian deity Ningishzida [evidently the same as the Sumerian messenger goddess, Ninshubur], and an astronomical tablet from Boghazkoi identifies Ningishzida with Nebo-Mercury [Ernst Friedrich Weidner, *Handbuch der babylonischen Astronomie*, (p.61). Cf. Helmuth Theodor Bossert [20th Century "German art historian, philologist and archaeologist ... best-known for his excavations of the Hittite fortress city at Karatepe, Turkey, and the discovery of bilingual inscriptions, which enabled the translation of Hittite hieroglyphs"), *Altsyrien* (Tuebingen, 1951), p.139, figs.442 & 445. Heinrich Schliemann [19th Century "German businessman and a

pioneer in the field of archaeology... an advocate of the historicity of places mentioned in the works of Homer and an archaeological excavator of Hissarlik, now presumed to be the site of Troy, along with the Mycenaean sites Mycenae and Tiryns... [and his] work lent weight to the idea that Homer's *Iliad* and Virgil's *Aeneid* reflect historical events... [however his] excavation of nine levels of archaeological remains with dynamite has been criticized as destructive of significant historical artifacts, including the level that is believed to be the historical Troy", but he] found the caduceus at Mycenae ["an archaeological site near Mikines in Greece, located about 90 kilometres (56 miles) southwest of Athens"]. Ancient Mexican codices portray the worship of entwined snakes. See Lord Kingsborough, *The Antiquities of Mexico* (London, 1830), Vol. II, p. 4. Cf. Professor Dr. Hartley Burr Alexander [late 19th/early 20th Century "American philosopher, writer, educator, scholar, poet, and iconographer... [who] received the Knight of the Legion of Honor award from the government of France in 1936 and was awarded an Honorary Membership in the American Institute of Architects for his collaboration with many of its architect members... [and] He was on the staff of *Webster's Dictionary* from 1903-1908, then became professor of philosophy at the University of Nebraska"], *Latin American Mythology (Mythology of All Races*, Vol. XI (1920), p. 72; cf. also Professor Dr. Franz Boas, *Kwakiutl Culture as Reflected in Mythology*, (New York, 1935), p. 137.]

Professor Dr. Frank Boas was a late 19th/early 20th Century "German-American anthropologist and a pioneer of modern anthropology who has been called the "Father of American Anthropology" ... [who in Germany was] awarded a doctorate in 1881 in physics while also studying geography ... [and next he did some] field work [at various locations in "northern Canada" and in "the Pacific Northwest", then] emigrated to the United States, where he first worked as a museum curator at the Smithsonian... [and after that] became a professor of anthropology at Columbia University, where he remained for the rest of his career... [and as a result] profoundly influenced the development of American anthropology... [his work being] associated with the movement of anthropological historicism", which is "the diffusionist concept that there were a few "cradles of civilization" which grew outwards, and [Dr. Boas] merged it with the idea that societies would adapt to their circumstances, which is called historical particularism", and he was "one of the most prominent opponents of the then-popular ideologies of scientific racism, the idea that race is a biological concept and that human behavior is best understood through the typology [read, "shape and size"] of biological characteristics... [and he supposedly "showed" in] a series of groundbreaking studies of skeletal anatomy... that cranial shape and size was highly malleable depending on environmental factors such as health and nutrition... [this being "in contrast"] to the claims by racial anthropologists of the day that held head shape to be a stable racial trait".

And of course this may also 'reshape' our opinions about how God accomplished - and evidently still is accomplishing - Noah's **curse** on Canaan. And I mean as much or more than *DNA*, maybe we need to consider God's use of 'poorer diet', 'harsher weather', and/or other "environmental factors" as significant in keeping Canaan's descendants generally in '**servitude**' [Gen 9:25](#), these instead possibly the dominant causes of their generally 'smaller brains', making their 'crossbreeding' with a *race* with generally 'larger brains' at best a lesser factor - DNA-wise - in their offspring's *brain size*. What do you think?

Mercury, or Hermes of the Greeks, was a messenger of the gods that speeded on his errand, sent by Jupiter. [Homer, *The Odyssey* VI; Vergil, *The Aeneid* IV. 239.]

Among the satellites that presently orbit each of the giant planets are bodies comparable in size to Mercury, or even larger. [Jupiter's satellite Ganymede is larger than Mercury, and Saturn's biggest moon, Titan, is almost as large.] [And these too would likely be some of the 'larger pieces' that were 'broken out' in the collision that produced the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts.]

Abraham Rockenbach, whose *De Cometis Tractatus Novus Methodicus* [A New Methodical Treatise on Comets] we had occasion to quote when investigating the causes of the Deluge, included in his treatise also the following entry [quoted also near the beginning of this section]:

In the year of the world one thousand nine hundred and forty-four, two hundred and eighty-eight years after the Deluge [1656 + 288 = 1944 - yes!], a comet was seen in Egypt of the nature of Saturn [or as bright as Saturn], in the vicinity of Cairo, in the constellation of Capricorn, and within the space of sixty-five days it traversed three [Zodiac] signs in the sky. Confusions of languages and dispersals of peoples followed. On this the text of the eleventh chapter of Genesis speaks in more detail.

[*De Cometis Tractatus Novus Methodicus* (Wittenbergae, 1602), pp.113f.: "Anno mundi millesimo, nongentesimo, quadragesimo quarto. Anno post diluvium, ducentesimo octuagesimo octavo, Cometa in Aegypto naturam Saturni referens, circa Alcairam, in dodecatemorio Capricorni visus est, hincque spatio sexaginta quinque dierum, tria signa in coelo percurrit. Hunc confusiones linguarum, dissipationes gentium in toto terrarum orbe, sunt secutae. De quibus Genes. undecimo capite, prolixius textus dicunt." Cf. [Johannes]. Hevelius, *Cometographia* (1668). (from Wiki, a Polish astronomer, FRS, "the last astronomer to do major work without the use of a telescope").]

But the implication here is that this 'very bright comet' did not actually **visit** Earth. But I think it did. It must have finished its approach to Earth out of sight of the particular observer responsible for this testimony. And remember the reason I think that a 'Mercury-class planet' must have had a 'close encounter' with Earth at the time of The Flood is not just so it could 'draw' enough *electromagnet charge* from Earth to 'short circuit' and 'drain' the *water canopy*, but also because the *geological activity* that Dr. Velikovsky's research shows us must have occurred at the time of The Flood requires the 'close proximity' of a *planet* with at least '**Mercury-class pull**', and it could not have been a *red planet* either. And when we add to all this the 'mythological accounts', Mercury is not just the best option, but really the only one.

From the annals of modern astronomy we know of cases when a [*long period*] comet traveling on an elongated orbit was "caught" by the planet Jupiter, by which is meant the change of the cometary orbit to one of a short period, with the sun in the focus of its orbit. [And the implication is that this apparently happened to Mercury at some point too.]

It is possible to reconstruct the planetary disturbances of that age with some approximation. In my understanding Mercury was once a satellite of Jupiter, or possibly [and likely] of Saturn [as well as of both Uranus and Neptune too]. In the course of the events which followed Saturn's interaction with Jupiter and its subsequent disruption, Mercury was pushed from its orbit and was directed to the sun by Jupiter. It could,

however, [then] have been a comet and the entwined snakes of the caduceus may memorialize the appearance it had when seen by the inhabitants of the Earth. At some point [or apparently at 2 points] a contact [or contacts involving 'colossal lightning strikes'] occurred between the magnetospheres of Mercury and the Earth [the first bringing down the *water canopy*, and the next bringing down The Tower of Babel], [these events being] described in the traditions of various nations [including in [Psa 104:5-9](#) and [Gen 11](#)].

[In Babylonian sources the destructive acts of Nebo are recorded: "The lofty one, furious... the word of him... causes the earth beneath to shudder [uh-huh, because of his '**Mercury-class pull**'], the word which in his glory he spoke... Waters have flooded the wide land [- evidently a reference to The Flood]." Professor Dr. Stephen Herbert Langdon, *Babylonian Liturgies* (Paris,1913), p.65.]

That the Earth was once a satellite of a giant planet is nothing more than a surmise; we dealt with it only as with a hypothetical construction, [not] requiring further elucidation [as we have already 'ruled it out']. But with a greater show of support derived from the mythological and folkloristic sources we have tried to demonstrate on the case of Mercury that once it had been a satellite of one of the giant planets and was "directed" by Jupiter closer to the sun. [Cf. Dr. Robert Sutton Harrington and Dr. Thomas (Tom) C. Van Flandern, "A Dynamical Investigation of the Conjecture that Mercury is an Escaped Satellite of Venus," *Icarus* 28, (1976), pp.435-440.]

The claim therefore is that Mercury has traveled on its present orbit for only some five or six thousand years [but really closer to just 4 or less]. This view conflicts with both the nebular and the tidal theories of the origin of the planetary family, and with the assumption that the planets have occupied the same orbits for billions of years.

PART IV: JUPITER OF THE THUNDERBOLT

The Overthrow of the Cities of the Plain

The Book of Genesis portrays the age of the patriarchs as a time of great upheavals in nature in which the geology of the Jordan Valley underwent some drastic changes. The focus of these events was in the place now occupied by the Dead Sea. The Dead Sea, according to the Genesis account, was not yet in existence in the days of Abraham. In its place there was a fertile plain, known as the plain of Sittim, with five populous cities: Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, Zeboiim, and Zoar. When Lot arrived in the region he "lifted up his eyes, and beheld all the plain of Jordan, that it was well-watered everywhere... even as the garden of the Lord, like the land of Egypt."

Actually, the 12 Patriarchs were all dead and gone at least a couple hundred years ([Exo 12:40](#)) before The 1st Visit of Venus, and 'she' was God's '**great instrument of death**' that brought the "great upheavals" that Dr. Velikovsky somewhat 'misplaces' here. And I mean that instead, "The Book of Genesis portrays" the lives

of Moses and Joshua “as a time of great upheavals in nature in which the geology of the Jordan Valley [and all the rest of the World] underwent some drastic changes”. And **‘unfortunately’** this ‘misplacement’ of an additional “global catastrophe” at the time when **the LORD destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah** will further ‘warp’ Dr. Velikovsky’s presentation from here on, though there is nonetheless a lot we can learn from it.

[[Genesis 13:10](#). Tacitus wrote that the plain was “fruitful and supported great and populous cities.” (*Histories* V.7). According to Strabo (*Geography* XVI. 2.44) there were “thirteen inhabited cities in that region of which Sodom was the metropolis.”]

The nineteenth chapter of the Book of Genesis tells of a catastrophe in which these cities were overwhelmed [- yes], overturned [- though really only metaphorically speaking], and swallowed by the earth [- but only if you mean it was ‘consumed by fire’]:

The sun was risen upon the earth when... the Lord rained [uh-huh, just **rained**] upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven; And he overthrew those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground [which indicates more just a ‘terrible meteor shower’, and in this case evidently not one accompanied by a **‘visiting planet’**]...

And Abraham got up early in the morning to the place where he stood before the Lord; And he looked toward Sodom and Gomorrah, and toward all the land of the plain, and beheld, and, lo, the smoke of the country went up as the smoke of a furnace. [[Genesis 19:23-25,27-28](#)]

The description of this upheaval has always aroused wonder: "There is clearly something unnatural or extraordinary that is recorded," one commentator wrote.

[Dr. James Penrose Harland [“professor of archaeology [University of North Carolina], received his BA (1913), MA, and PhD from Princeton, the last after a delay caused by his service in the Navy during World War I... [and he] also attended the University of Bonn (1913-14) and taught at the University of Michigan and the University of Cincinnati before joining the faculty at North Carolina in 1922 as an Assistant Professor of Classics, the first full-time archaeologist at the University... [being...] Promoted to associate professor of archaeology in 1927 and to professor of archaeology in 1929... [and he] continued to teach large and highly popular undergraduate courses until his retirement in 1963”, <https://classics.unc.edu/about-us-2/departamental-history/james-penrose-harland>], “Sodom and Gomorrah,” *The Biblical Archaeologist Reader* (New York,1961), p.61.]

The great rift of the Jordan and the Dead Sea [which was ‘rent’ with the help of the Planet Venus hundreds of years after the ‘meteor shower’ on Sodom and Gomorrah] bear witness to a tremendous upheaval. "With the end of the Tertiary period, in an event of extreme violence... the entire Syrian land, from its south end to its north end, was torn apart and the ground in between sank into the depths." [And you should be **able** to **see** Venus doing that.] So wrote Professor M. Blanckenhorn, the explorer of the region of the Dead Sea, ...

[Professor Dr. Max Blanckenhorn, "*Entstehung und Geschichte des Todten Meeres*" [*Origin and History of the Dead Sea*], *Zeitschrift des Deutschen Palaestina-Vereins* [*Journal of the German Palaestina Association*], 19 (1896), p.16.]

Professor Dr. Max Ludwig Paul Blanckenhorn, born 1861, died 1947 in Marburg, Hesse, was a geologist and paleontologist...

He studied in Göttingen, Berlin, Strasbourg and Bonn, where he received his doctorate in

1885... After that he worked first as an assistant [professor] in Cologne. In 1888 he became a private [professorial] assistant to Konrad Oebbeke ["a German mineralogist and geologist... [and] professor at the University of Erlangen", Bavaria]... and in 1891 he habilitated in Erlangen ... From 1897 [on] he was a volunteer member of the Prussian Geological Survey Institute... In 1899 he moved to Berlin and worked in the local Museum of Natural History. In 1905 he was awarded the title of Professor by the Prussian Minister of Education. In 1912 the move to Marburg took place, as he worked predominantly in Northern Hesse. During the First World War he worked as a geologist in Macedonia.

In the years 1888 to 1931 he undertook various research trips to the Orient...

1888 Trip to northern Syria.

1894 Trip to Northern Egypt, Western Sinai, South Palestine.

1897-99 Over two years as field geologist and collective paleontologist at the Geological

Survey of Egypt. Since this activity he is called "Father of Egyptian geology".

1901-2 Trip to Egypt.

1904-5 Trip to Palestine.

1906 Trip to Egypt and Arabia, supported by the Prussian Academy of Sciences...

1908 Trip to Palestine... Works on the Jordan Valley and the Dead Sea.

1914 Trip to the Red Sea... thwarted by the First World War.

1931 Trip to Syria and Palestine at the invitation of French geologists.

On the basis of these experiences he wrote a series of papers on the geology of Egypt, Syria and Palestine. Among them is a geological map of Palestine, a map of northern Syria, a 341-page "Geology of Egypt", he was a pioneer in this, as well as the chapters on Syria, Arabia, Mesopotamia and Egypt in the Handbook of Regional Geology. He also worked on the history of the Nile, the Paleolithic people in Egypt, with deposits work and meteorology.

...In his later work he advanced [or moved forward] the age of the [Jordan] rift [Valley] to the pluvial, or [to] the beginning of the first glacial age [- this

"age" evidently starting with The Visits of Venus]. The origin of the Dead Sea occurred "in a great mountain movement, with collapse and dislocation, that took place at the beginning of the pluvial [uh-huh, all this "great mountain movement" being caused by Venus], in [or actually mostly just before] the first glacial period... In these titanic events conditions were created for the existence of an inner ['dead'] sea."

And surely such "titanic events" – transcontinental 'lifting/rifting' events, along with the widest 'glacier-expanding' events – were not as much caused by Mercury or Mars, but by Venus. So Dr. Velikovsky apparently '*mis-imagined*' that a '*Venus-class upheaval*' also happened at the time of the 'fiery downpour' that...

...rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and fire from the LORD out of heaven; And he [by that rained-down brimstone and fire] overthrew^{H2015} those cities, and all the plain, and all the inhabitants of the cities, and that which grew upon the ground
[Gen 19:24-25](#).

And yes, Mercury, Venus and Mars all caused such 'downpours' – both 'fiery' and otherwise – each time they 'visited', and they caused a lot more devastation than just that too. However all I'm *seeing* at Sodom and Gomorrah is a 'severe meteor shower' – maybe some 'stray' Trojans, Greeks or Hildas, for example, that 'crash-landed' on Earth at God's *ordained* time, and were precisely '*targeted*' in a localized area. And I mean Dr. Velikovsky's perspective that the Dead Sea didn't exist before this 'downpour' appears correct, but its formation doesn't really fit just this 'downpour', because it would have taken the *visit* of a '*Venus-class planet*' to make such a "rift". And if such a *planet* also 'visited' Earth at the time that ***the LORD destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah*** [Gen 13:10](#) – hundreds of years before Venus *visited* at The Exodus – then the whole World – the few in it that survived, that is – would have known about it, because this would have also left the greater part of World, not just ***the plain of Jordan... destroyed*** (again [Gen 13:10](#)), as happened on the later '*visits*' of Venus.

And however severe this 'meteor shower' was, and whatever the extent of the devastation, and whatever *layers* in the so-called Geologic Column it is associated with, Dr. Velikovsky saw all the layers as 'laid' mostly not in one event – The Flood – but, like other *evolutionists*, 'laid' one at a 'ridiculously-long' time, and involving many catastrophes, and he thought that much of the 'geological trauma' that these layers contained occurred in the 'periods' when they were 'formed', and he apparently thought so while knowing that all the *layers* were later 'disturbed' and/or further 'retraumatized' by Venus and Mars. But surely when it comes to such 'geological trauma' within *layers* of *sedimentary rock*, the bulk of it was caused by a couple of '*visits*' from a single *planet*, the Planet Venus, with significant contributions also provided by The Visits of Mercury and Mars, with the lesser 'geological trauma' – compared to Venus – that was caused by The 1st Visit of Mercury done while all the *layers* of *sedimentary rock* were being 'laid'.

And of course with enough time after such a *visit*, which would give the Earth enough time to 'settle down', 'geologically speaking', no more 'geological activity' should be happening than what is happening today. And even today's 'activity' – contrary to what most 'teachers of prophecy' say – should be decreasing since The Last Visit of Mars. And in the next sections Dr. Velikovsky will provide more evidence to support this.

Still Dr. Velikovsky stuck to this 'misplacement', apparently equating in magnitude the event at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah with

the real 'age-ending events' of The Exodus. And I mean I don't yet see the evidence to support Dr. Velikovsky's perspective, not to mention that the "titanic events" of The Exodus took place hundreds of years later. And I'll try to leave this to you to 'deal with' as we proceed. Still and again, the following information will nonetheless be helpful for **'correcting, improving and expanding our perspectives of the predestinated fulfillment of prophecy'**, as well as help us **'better see'** God's ongoing **work** through His **'great instruments of death'**, which for a few of the **few** are also **'instruments of life', thank and praise the LORD.**

[Idem, *Naturwissenschaftliche Studien am Todten Meer und im tal* [*Scientific Studies on the Dead Sea and in the Valley*] (Berlin,1912); cf. R. Freund [?] et al., "The Shear [cliff] along the Dead Sea Rift," *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of London, A*, Vol.267 (1970), pp.107-130.]

A period of dryness followed the first glacial, or pluvial period [which we might consider to be the "period" following the 1st Visit of Mercury, or instead the "period" when *glaciers* expanded beyond their present limits, limits that were more or less set by The 1st Visit of Mercury, which in this case would make this "first glacial, or pluvial period", contrary to some of my earlier 'surmises', the one initiated by The 1st Visit of Venus]. In a new pluvial period, the second glacial epoch [evidently corresponding to one of the bigger **'axis-shifting visits'** of Venus or Mars], the lake reached its greatest dimensions: the Dead Sea spread to the northern side of the present Sea of Galilee, engulfing it together with the Jordan Valley between. At the time, as fossil snails show, the water was not yet saline.

Here Dr. Velikovsky asserted that, "At the time [of **the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah**]... the water was not yet saline" - ? I don't know what "snails" were found or how, but evidently "saline" (*salt*) was first added at The 1st Visit of Mercury, at the time of The Flood, after which, without the *water canopy greenhouse*, the first *polar ice caps* formed. And it's my understanding that *glaciers* form by frozen, essentially *distilled* and therefore 'saltless' *precipitation*, and would therefore contain little if any *salt*. And all the *freshwater snails buried* - and possibly also *frozen* - in the *sediments* 'laid' and 'salted' by Mercury, (and possibly also by Saturn's 'contributions'), were apparently living in *freshwater* before Mercury first arrived. However again, Dr. Velikovsky mistakenly saw each *layer* of *fossiliferous sedimentary rock* as 'laid' individually, each involving individual "catastrophes", and so he apparently **'mis-imagined'** that some of them were 'laid' long before *salt* was introduced into Earth's *oceans*.

Beyond that my encyclopedia informs me that currently there are no longer just 4, but,

There have been at least five major ice ages in the Earth's history (the **Huronian**, **Cryogenian**, **Andean-Saharan**, **Karoo** Ice Age, and the **current Quaternary** Ice Age). Outside these ages, the Earth seems to have been ice free even in high latitudes... [Note: the last and shortest, but still 'ridiculously-long', currently transpiring "eon" on the right (in black) is named the **Phanerozoic**, and as of 2009 the **Cryogenian** Ice Age (in blue) has been moved up and 'squeezed into' this current "eon".]

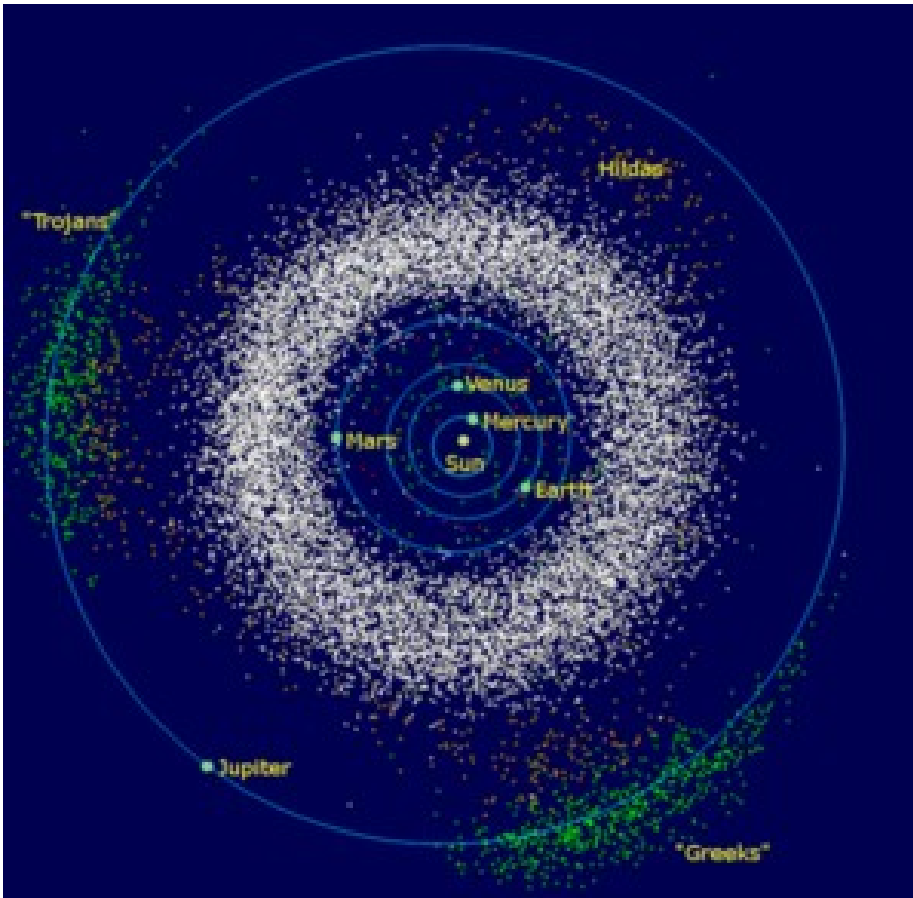


And there must be some correlation – though ‘ridiculously exaggerated’ timewise – of these “ages” (shown in blue on the timeline on [p.517](#)), with The Visits of Mercury correlating with the earliest formation of *ice caps*, and with The Visits of Venus correlating with the greatest following *glaciations*, and maybe not just one but two Ice Ages, and with The Visits of Mars, which evidently at least a couple of times ‘readjusted’ Earth’s *axis* too, correlating with the ‘most recent’ Ice Age or Ages. But evidently for *evolutionists*, what defines a “glacial epoch”, and how many of them there have been, changes over time. And they certainly handle their parameters with a ‘ridiculously exaggerated’ perspective. So let’s ‘tear ourselves away’ from further considerations ‘along these lines’, and get back to that ‘tear’ along that ‘transcontinental line’ of Earth’s *crust*.

The rift in which the Lake of Galilee, the Jordan, and the Dead Sea lie is the deepest depression on any continent. The surface of the Dead Sea is close to 400 meters below the level of the Mediterranean, and its deepest bottom is some 320 meters lower still. The shore falls steeply from the Judean mountains on the west; on the eastern side of the rift rise the Moabite mountains. The walls of the chasm show sharp broken strata that remained horizontal, which proves that the breaking down was instantaneous [and that is, the *continents* were literally ‘ripped apart’ by Venus from above the Sea of Galilee all the way down through the southeastern coast of Africa and beyond]. [Professor Dr. Max Blanckenhorn, “*Entstehung und Geschichte des Todten Meeres [Origin and History of the Dead Sea]*,” p.26.] The force which caused this slide movement must have been stupendous. The ground of the rift around the Dead Sea is covered with coagulated lava masses, taking the form [or appearance] of an immense herd of giant elephants with rough skin. These lava eruptions from fissures are ascribed to the second interglacial period [but they must actually have been formed as a result of The Visits of Venus, and possibly they were also later – to a lesser extent – ‘contributed to’ by The Visits of Mars] [*Ibid.*, pp.41-42]. To the south end of the Dead Sea towers a big cliff of salt called Jebel Usdum (Mount of Sodom). “It is absolutely impossible that the salt sediment of a sea should precipitate in such a form.” [*Ibid.*, p.34.] “Only the rupture of the ground could create this site, singular in the entire world.” [*Ibid.*, p.35.]

The destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah took place in historical times, according to my scheme in a catastrophe which caused also the end of the Old Kingdom in Egypt. The geologists [[mistakenly](#)] refer the upheaval which tore Syria in two to the end of the Tertiary period – long before human history began.

So here's where I should admit that the 'meteor shower' that **destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah** apparently also included some 'wider damage', and that is, at least to the so-called Old Kingdom in Egypt too, its downfall apparently before the rise of the Middle Kingdom in Egypt, the Middle Kingdom being the one destroyed in The Exodus, and the one that afterward was taken over by the **Amalekites** or the Hyksos or "king-shepherds" for hundreds of years. Nevertheless, The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah - whether or not concurrent with 'The Destruction of the Old Kingdom in Egypt' - and The Exodus which destroyed The Middle Kingdom of



Egypt, are distinct, time-separated "catastrophes", the first one I'm seeing as comparatively minor globally, just a 'severe meteor shower', though possibly quite catastrophic regionally as opposed to just in **the plain of Jordan**, the second clearly a global cataclysm which, taken as a whole, was certainly The Greatest Judgment of The Ages of Creation so far.

Now the question is legitimate: how old is the Dead Sea?

But this "question is legitimate" only if you're exploring the **power of God** by His Great Instruments of Life and Death.

And by the way, and

speaking of those 'stray' **Trojans**, **Greeks** and/or **Hildas**, etc., we haven't yet discussed a purpose for the *collision* that made the Main Asteroid Belt, the one between the *orbits* of **Jupiter** and **Mars**, and the one where at first glance it appears that only one 'participant' in that *collision* ended up 'totally fragmented'. And I mean maybe this *collision* was survived by Mercury, maybe resulting in 'him' ending up in 'his' present close *orbit* around the Sun, though it also occurs to me that if this was the case, if an *object* much smaller than Mercury *collided* with Mercury, there would be no *asteroid belt*, as all its *mass* would have been retained by Mercury. So it also finally occurs to me that like the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts represent what's left of two, similarly-sized, *colliding objects*, so the **Main Asteroid Belt** and the **Trojans**, **Greeks**, and **Hildas** (see again the map of the **Inner Solar System**, on p.518) may represent another *collision* of two similarly-sized *objects*, a *collision* that appears to have provided most of the *comets*, *asteroids* and *space dust* from Jupiter inward.

And the reason that the Trojans, Greeks and Hildas are not orbiting in a more 'normal belt' is apparently due to the fact that Jupiter has 'gathered' some of these 'pieces' - the 'leading' Greeks and 'trailing' Trojans into 'his' *orbit*, while the Hildas were apparently *perturbed* by Jupiter to *orbit* in the peculiar way that they do. And

can you see the few Greeks and Trojans marked in red, leading and following the Earth, Mars, and Venus, otherwise identified as **Near Earth Objects**? They're hard to see, but they're discernable along or between the *orbits* of Earth, Mars, and Venus. And apparently it's all these 'totally fragmented participants' of this *collision* - which at this point I'd guess were another couple of the 'larger pieces' from the *collision* that made the Kuiper and Scattered Disc Asteroid Belts - that continue to provide Earth with regular, however **predestinated** and '**perfectly targeted**', *meteor impacts*, including that 'God-timed downpour' on **the plain of Jordan**, as well as many, many others (e.g., [1Kings 18:36-39](#); [2Kings 1](#)).

The Age of the Dead Sea

There is a way of calculating the age of the Dead Sea. This interior lake contains concentrated solutions of salts. These salts flow into the sea with the waters of its tributaries. Thermal springs bring salt to the Sea of Galilee, and the Jordan carries them to the Dead Sea, which has no outlet. From the surface of the Dead Sea, in the deep hot rift, the water evaporates, leaving the salts behind. By calculating the amount of salts in the sea and the amount that reaches it annually by way of the Jordan and other streams, as well as from thermal springs on its shores, the approximate age of the Dead Sea can be determined. Such an attempt was partially made. The magnesium salts in the Jordan served as a basis for the calculation. It was reckoned that the present annual rate of influx of magnesium in the water of the Jordan alone, when related to the concentration of magnesium in the Dead Sea, should give a figure of approximately 50,000 years as the age of the sea. [W. Irwin, "*The Salts of the Dead Sea and River Jordan*," *Geographical Journal* 61 (London,1923), p.434.] [Yaacov K. Benter's (?) 1961 publication arrived at a figure close to 12,000 years. See *Scientific American* Oct.1983, p.103.] The author of this estimate admitted that even this figure is probably too high; the salinity of the Jordan must have decreased with time, for the thermal sources carry more salt when they are young and their temperature is high.

In the above calculation, it was estimated that the Jordan carries six million tons of water daily to the Dead Sea and that it deposits 181 million tons of magnesium annually. However, on an average day more than double that amount [of water] evaporates from the Dead Sea, ...

[*Ibid.*, pp. 435-436; [Cf. J. Neumann (?), "*Tentative Energy and Water Balances for the Dead Sea*," *Bulletin of the Research Council of Israel*, G, Vol.VII, nos.2-3 (1958); cf. also H. Haude (?), "*Ueber Klimatische und menschliche Einwirkungen auf den Wasseraushalt des Toten Meeres in seiner Vergangenheit*," ["*On Climatic and Human Impacts on the Water Balance of the Dead Sea In Its Past*"] *Zeitschrift des Deutschen Palaestina-Vereins* [*Journal of the German Palaestina Association*], 88 (1972), pp.105-139.]

...and its surface does not fall, other sources must be making up the difference [except more recently the level of the Dead Sea has fallen because so much water has



been diverted from it, provoking Israel and Jordan to collaborate to build the **Two Seas Canal**, also called the **Red Sea-Dead Sea Conveyance**, or the **Red-Dead Conduit** (map p.520), where they intend to pump water up from the Gulf of Aqaba nearly 400 feet and then drop it by canal nearly 1800 feet into The Dead Sea, producing some electricity to power the project, and desalinating some water in the process. And since, "Other routes for a conduit for the same objectives as the Red-Dead Conduit, the Mediterranean-Dead Sea Canal... proposed in Israel in the 1980s... [have been] discarded", "the first phase" of the Two Seas Canal is "slated to begin construction in 2018 and finish in 2021", costing "\$10 billion in all its phases".

The rivers Zerka (Callirhoe) and Arnon, which flow into the [Dead] sea from the east, carry salt solutions from many springs. The shores of the Dead Sea abound in highly concentrated thermal springs which contain rich amounts of magnesium. These sources flow directly into the sea, bringing a richer influx of magnesium than the Jordan. [Professor Dr. Max Blanckenhorn, "*Entstehung und Geschichte des Todten Meeres*," ["*Origin and History of the Dead Sea*"] p.29; cf. L. Lartet [?], *L'exploration geologique de la Mer Morte* [*Geological Exploration of the Dead Sea*] (1874), p.297.] In addition there are, on the shores of the Dead Sea, abundant vestiges of thermal springs with rich sediments of salts that are inactive at present...

[R. Sachsse [?], "*Beitraege zur chemischen Kenntniss der Mineralien, Gesteine und Gewaesser Palaestinas*," ["*Contributions to the Chemical Knowledge of Minerals, Rocks and Waters of Palestine*"] *Zeitschrift des Deutschen Palaestina-Vereins* [*Journal of the German Palaestina Association*], 20 (1897), pp.25 ff., esp. p.33; cf. Harry St. John Bridger Philby ["also known as Jack Philby or Sheikh Abdullah", a late 19th to mid 20th Century "British Arabist, adviser, explorer, writer, and colonial office intelligence officer... [as well as] the first Socialist to join the Indian Civil Service... [who,] After studying oriental languages at the University of Cambridge, he was posted to Lahore in the Punjab in 1908, acquiring fluency in Urdu, Punjabi, Baluchi, Persian, and eventually Arabic... [and who] converted to Islam in 1930, and later became an adviser to Ibn Saud, urging him to become King of the whole of Arabia, and helping him to negotiate with the United Kingdom and the United States when petroleum was discovered in 1938"], "*The Dead Sea to Aqaba*," *The Geographical Journal*, LXVI (1925).]

...It is highly probable, too, that there are submarine sources [such as *underwater springs*] in the Dead Sea which may provide magnesium, but they are indeterminable. [Wilfred Irwin [?], "*The Salts of the Dead Sea [and River Jordan. With details of chemical composition of the various salts. An original article from the Royal Geographical Society Journal, 1923*" [available online], *op. cit.*, p.438.]

When these factors are taken into consideration the age of the Dead Sea, computed on the basis of its magnesium content, must be drastically reduced [from 50,000 to about 3500 years].

A computation that takes, as its basis, [just] the amount of sodium in the Jordan points to a recent date for the origin of the Dead Sea. The proportion of sodium to magnesium in the water of the Jordan is about 4:1; in the Dead Sea it is 1:2. [*ibid.*, p.434. Cf. H. Boyko [?], *Salinity and Aridity* (The Hague, 1966 [available on Amazon]), p.15.] If the Jordan were the only source of the sodium for the Dead Sea the age of the Dead Sea would be

only about 6,000 years. But the thermal sources on the western, eastern, and southern shores contain sodium too; so may the submarine sources, which cannot be evaluated. It is likely, therefore, that the sea has existed for only about four thousand years. When again the fact is taken into account that the thermal sources are usually more concentrated when they first break out and when they are at a higher temperature, it may well be asked why the age of this sea should not be reduced still more. It is probable that deeper levels of water have a greater salt concentration.

[The figures for magnesium according to Terreil, quoted by Irwin (p.431), are: At the surface of the sea, at the north shore, magnesium constitutes 13.20 percent of solid salt; 120 meters below the surface, five miles east of Kasel Fesaka, magnesium amounts to 16.80 percent of the solid residue; and 300 meters deep at the same point, 15.99 percent. From the account of Tacitus (*Histories* V.6) it would appear that the Dead Sea was already saturated with salts nineteen centuries ago.]

[Even] Fifty thousand years as the age of the Dead Sea was an unexpectedly low estimate: the rift in which the Dead Sea is situated is considered to be the result of a catastrophe at the beginning of the first glacial period. [Professor Dr. Max Blanckenhorn, *Naturwissenschaftliche Studien am Todten Meer* [*Origin and History of the Dead Sea*], p.115.] Now a simple reckoning shows that the saline sea with the Jordan has not existed longer than five thousand years.

The Great Rift and the Jordan

The story of the violent changes that occurred in the Jordan Valley, the memory of [the 'regional catastrophe'] which is connected with the time of the [father of the] patriarchs and in which Sodom and Gomorrah were overturned [though again, not likely then literally], does not mention that the Valley of Sittim, where the cities were located, became an inner sea. Sulphur and brimstone fell from heaven, one of the best cultivated areas was overturned, [likely not] fire from beneath and [certainly] fire from above accomplished the desolation [of Sodom and Gomorrah] - all this is described; but not the appearance of a sea [because it didn't 'appear' as a result of this mere 'meteor shower']. However, [hundreds of years later] when the Israelites under Moses and Joshua reached the area in their flight from Egypt, they found the lake there. [Uh-huh, because it had been formed during the Exodus not too long before they got there.] [Joshua 3:16; Numbers 34:12; Deuteronomy 3:17] It seems to have appeared after a catastrophe later than the one that destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah. [Yeah, hundreds of year later, during The Exodus.]

And of course it wasn't just the Dead Sea that was created along with this rapidly-formed, transcontinental valley that ran from Syria to beyond Zimbabwe. This valley's formation apparently also resulted in many other bodies of water being created or 'adjusted' along its entire length, all of it evidently the result - I imagine - of the 'orbit shifting' of Venus around the '**axis shifting**' of Earth during The Visits of Venus, and this would include the formation of the Red Sea, except apparently this **sea** did not originally open to the Indian Ocean on The 1st Visit of Venus, but instead was maybe one of the larger **seas** connecting this transcontinental "river system", as the evidence that Dr. Velikovsky will shortly

reveal suggests. And of course it was named “Red” when it first appeared because of the *iron oxide* provided by Venus.

And Moses didn't forget about the **Red sea** because it had a new color, name, and evidently a significantly larger size following The 1st Visit of Venus. This is clear because we **know** that...

...the angel of the LORD [evidently Jesus, who] **appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush...** [sent Moses] **unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt** [Exo 3:2-10](#),

And I mean if the **Red sea** had been there in its present form, Moses would have had to avoid it on his first trip northward out of Egypt, as well as on his way back to Egypt, and he would have known it was there when he finally left Egypt, **unless** it was formed, or greatly expanded, **after** he returned, as Jesus puts it, to **bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt**. And besides, it was God that **led the people** [Exo 13:18, 21-22](#) to its shore and beyond...

But if there was no Dead Sea [or Red Sea, etc.] before the time of the Exodus [and there wasn't], whither did the Jordan flow, assuming it was already in existence? The Jordan might not have existed at all, or it could have flowed into the open sea, the Mediterranean. It probably did not flow along the Rift over the [Wady el-]Arabah into the Aqaba Gulf of the Red Sea, as no traces of marine life are found at the height of the



watershed of Arabah. The barrier between the Dead Sea and the Aqaba Gulf is about [400 or] 500 meters high [you know, the one that Isreal and Jordan are planning to start pumping water over from the gulf to resupply the now sinking water level of the Dead Sea]. The watershed between the Jordan River and the Kishon River which flows into the Mediterranean, at Mount Gilboa, is 500 meters above the ocean level [and evidently both these “barriers” were ‘lifted’ by Venus]. The topographical shape of the region of the Beth Shan Valley, stretching from the Jordan towards the Esdraelon Valley, makes the flow of the Jordan into the Mediterranean a far more acceptable conjecture than a presumed flow of the Jordan over the slopes of the mountain of Hor into the Red Sea [- this **Mount Hor** (photo, p.522), or “Mount Harun”, or “Jabal Haroun” (Arabic for Mount Aaron), or, according to Josephus, “*Jebel*

Nebi Harun (“Mountain of the Prophet Aaron” in Arabic)”, being situated “in the edge of the land of Edom” ([Numbers 20:23\[-29\]](#) and [33:37\[-39\]](#)) ...on the east side of the Jordan-Arabah valley”, a “few kilometres south-west from the ancient city of Petra”, and being “especially significant to the Israelites as Aaron the high priest, brother of Moses, died there”]. Of course, it can be regarded as certain that the geography of the environs of the Red Sea and of the continents in general was quite

different before and after the catastrophe that resulted in the formation of the Dead Sea.

And Dr. Velikovsky will shortly inform us about the “affinity” – or similarity – of the “fish fauna” of the Great Rift’s “Ethiopian zoogeographical region”, (which includes the “African lakes and rivers” of the Great Rift Valley), with the Jordan Rift Valley.

The Great Rift, which begins in Syria between the **Lebanon** and **Anti-Lebanon** [mountain ranges, which I imagine mark an example of the ‘shifting orbital paths’ of Venus along with *tectonic plate dynamics*, and which also likely involved the ‘axis-shifting’ of the Earth, all during The Visits of Venus, (see the satellite image of **Lebanon**, p.522: “The snow-covered areas nearer the coast are the Mount Lebanon range and the snow-covered areas further inland are the Anti-Lebanon mountain range”)], [and the rift continues through Lebanon between these mountains until entering Israel, and there it’s “known as the Hula Valley separating the Galilee mountains and the Golan Heights”, where the “Jordan River begins” and “flows southward through Lake Hula into the Sea of Galilee in Israel”, and then the rift] runs along the Jordan Valley, the Dead Sea, the [Wady el-]Arabah, the Aqaba gulf, [then more eastwardly along] the Red Sea, and [turning again southward] continues through the [eastern side of the] continent of Africa as far [south] as Zimbabwe [or farther], [and it] is generally regarded as the product of a grandiose revolution in the shell of the Earth: for many thousands of kilometers the Great Rift runs from Asia to [and through] Africa [and beyond].



Prehistoric man [or really Moses and the people of his time] witnessed the latest phases of widespread tectonic movements which convulsed East Africa and provoked great subsidences [‘sinking of land’] (of as much as 1500 feet or more) in the early Quaternary strata [or in the top layers of *sedimentary rock*], whereby was occasioned the discharge of lava and erupted scoriae [which evidently also originated from the deepest of *layers*, even from below Genesis rock, *scoria* being “a highly vesicular [“pitted with many cavities”], dark colored volcanic rock... (generally dark brown, black or purplish red)... [that is] relatively low in density... but in contrast to pumice, all scoria has a specific gravity greater than 1, and sinks in water”,] [this *geological activity*] modifying notably the courses of the rivers and the circumstances in which the lakes rose or fell in level, and even changing the outlines of these bodies of water [if not creating new ones]. [H. Alimen [?], *The Prehistory of East Africa* (London,1957 [on Amazon], p.194.) Changes in the watercourses and lakes took place along the entire length of the Rift. The deepest place in the Rift on land is the valley of the Jordan and the Dead Sea. It appears that the catastrophe which

originated the Dead Sea, caused also the origin of the Great Rift [in its entirety].

Beyond the Red Sea, which stretches for several hundred kilometers and has not a single affluent river, the aquatic life of the African lakes and rivers belongs to the so-called Ethiopian zoogeographical region.

According to Thomas Annandale "the explanation of the Ethiopian affinity of [or similarity with] the fish fauna of the Jordan is that the Jordan formed at one time merely part of a river system that ran down the Great Rift Valley. The Jordan was one branch of this huge river system, the chain of lakes in East Africa represents the other; and together they opened into the Indian Ocean [somewhere in Southeast Africa]." [See Roger Washbourn [?, B.A. & R.F.], "*The Percy Sladen Expedition to Lake Huleh, 1935*," *Palestine Exploration Fund, Quarterly Statements*, (1936), p.209 [and published in *Nature*, 137, pages 852-854 (23 May 1936), etc.]]

Thomas Nelson Annandale, CIE (Companion of the Indian Empire, in the Order of the [British] Indian Empire, "Companion" being a rank just below "Knight"), FRSE (Fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh), was a late 19th/early 20th Century "Scottish zoologist, entomologist ["study of insects"], anthropologist, and herpetologist ["study of amphibians"]", who was...

...educated at Rugby School, Balliol College, Oxford, and the University of Edinburgh.

Annandale went to India in 1904 as Deputy Superintendent of the Natural History Section of the Indian Museum. He was a deputy director at the Indian Museum in Calcutta and in 1907 he became its director... He had travelled widely before his career in India...

He started the Records and Memoirs of the Indian Museum journals and in 1916, he became the first director of the Zoological Survey of India that he helped found. He was associated with many scientists of his time. This change placed an official equality with botany and geology and made more funds available for expeditions to various parts of India. He was interested in aspects beyond systematics including ecology. His suggestion of a problem in anthropology to P. C. Mahalanobis led to the latter's discovery of a technique that developed into the multivariate statistical techniques of today. He held the position of director until 1924... He was president of the 1924 session of the Indian Science Congress.

In 1921... he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh. The Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal, with which he was closely associated during his service in India as Anthropological Secretary, Vice-President and as its President in 1923 instituted a triennial [every 3 years] Annandale Memorial Medal for contributions to anthropology in Asia...

His insect and spider collection is in the Indian Museum, Calcutta [now, Kolkata].

He was also noted for his work on the biology and anthropology of the Faroe Islands and Iceland about which he published *The Faeroes and Iceland: a Study in Island Life* in 1905.

Working in the scientific field of herpetology, he described several new species of lizards. He is commemorated in the scientific names of three species of reptiles...

But, Dr. Velikovsky continues,

Whatever the structural changes of the earth in the catastrophes before that which I describe here, there must have been some time when the Jordan streamed into the valley of Sittim (the name of the plain before the Dead Sea originated) and continued into the Mediterranean, most probably through the Jezreel Valley.

Legendary reminiscences from the patriarchal age indicate that the Jordan existed before the Dead Sea came into being. [[Genesis 13:10,11](#); cf. [Genesis 14:3](#).] It appears that the coming out of Paddan-aram to Canaan required the passage of a river. Today the way from Palestine to the north does not require the crossing of water. But if the Jordan did flow through the Esdraelon Valley into the Mediterranean, it had to flow in a direction opposite to the one in which it flows today [- a direction in which I expect it will once again flow, and that is, after Jesus returns, and after the **east sea** forms, as **prophesied** in [Joel 2:20](#), and implied in [Ezekiel 47:8](#)].

Does there exist any reminiscence about the Jordan changing the direction of its flow?

It is not the story in the book of Joshua about the Jordan halting its flow - there it is told that the water was stopped at Adama, north of Jericho. [[Joshua 3:16](#).] This indicates that the flow of the Jordan was already from north to south, as today. The existence of the Dead Sea is also mentioned at the time the Israelites approached Canaan, but it is described as recent: it is called "the sea of the plain." [[Joshua 12:3](#).]

The blocking of the Jordan River by falling slices of the banks happened a number of times...

[John Garstang [late 19th to mid 20th Century "British archaeologist of the ancient Near East, especially **Anatolia** [see the map of this portion of present day Turkey on p.524] and the southern Levant [which is "today Syria and Lebanon"]... [who] was the younger brother of Professor Walter Garstang, FRS, a marine biologist and zoologist... [the younger] considered a pioneer in the development of scientific practices in archaeology as he kept detailed records of his excavations with extensive photographic records, which was a comparatively rare practice in early 20th-century archaeology"], *The Foundations of Bible History* (1931), p.137; cf. *Worlds in Collision*, section "Jericho," and my article "Jericho" in *KRONOS* II:4 (1977), pp.64-69.]



...The stoppage referred to in the book of Joshua is described as a temporary blocking of the Jordan River in a time [following [The Exodus](#)] of frequent earthquakes [read, 'aftershocks'], and not as a reversal of the flow.

And of course even the 'earthquakes' of today are mostly just the 'diminishing aftershocks' of the 'real earthquakes' caused by The Visits of Mercury, Venus, and Mars.

But there are, in Scripture, references to the reversal of the flow of the Jordan:

When Israel went out of Egypt... The sea saw and fled: Jordan was driven back. The mountains skipped like rams, the little hills like lambs. What ailed thee, o thou sea, that thou fleddest? thou Jordan that thou was driven back? Tremble, thou earth, at the presence of the Lord... Which turned the rock into a standing water, the flint into a fountain of waters. [[Psa 114](#).]

Here the reversal of the flow of the Jordan is associated in time not only with the Exodus and the catastrophe of the Sea of Passage [the Red Sea], but also with the appearance of a new inner sea ("standing water").

And this "inner sea" must be the Dead Sea, which may have originally 'connected' through what is today the Wady el-Arabah to the Gulf of Abaca and the Red Sea, however remember Mount Hor was already there when Aaron was buried, evidently then already part of the "barrier" in the Great Rift between the Arabah and the Gulf of Abaca, though Mount Hor today is "a twin-peaked mountain 4780 feet above sea-level (6072 feet above the Dead Sea)", so I'm guessing that it was after Aaron was buried there, say, during The 2nd Visit of Venus, that it was raised to its present height, and that it was significantly smaller, and therefore much less difficult to climb at the time Aaron was buried. Remember Mount Nebo where Moses is buried is only 2680 feet high. And whether the Red Sea ever 'connected', by river and/or lake, all the way to the Dead Sea or not, apparently it was for a time an "inner sea" too.

A river that changed the direction of its flow must have been regarded as a very remarkable phenomenon.

An inscription of [the Egyptian Pharaoh] Thutmose I reads: "Frontier northern, as far as that inverted water which goeth down in going up." [[Dr. James Henry Breasted](#), *Ancient Records of Egypt*, Vol.III, par.73.] In order to explain this passage it was supposed that the Egyptians could not imagine that a river flows otherwise than from south to north, as does the Nile, and they wondered at a river flowing in another direction. The Euphrates flows from the north-west to the south-east; the Orontes [[or Orontes](#)] north to south for part of its course [- actually south to north], afterwards turning [[south-](#)]west and emptying into the Mediterranean [[and the Rhine, after starting in the Swiss Alps, and then running west for a bit, runs south to north too, but its delta bends west to empty into the North Sea, while the Rhône, also originating in the Swiss Alps, after first running mostly west for a while, runs mostly from north to south into the Mediterranean, and you should now be able to visualize all that](#)]. [[So...](#)] The explanation is obviously inadequate. There are many rivers in

the world and they flow in all directions. The river that reversed its direction is the Jordan.

(Legend for the full page “[Map of the Orontes river](#)” in the [Levant region](#) on [p.526](#): “White lines are country borders, river names are italic on a blue background, current cities or major towns have white backgrounds, orange background for other places of significance.”)

Prior to the Exodus, the Jordan Valley was on a higher level than the Mediterranean Sea. With the rupture of the tectonic structure along the river and the dropping of the Dead Sea chasm [\[evidently caused by multiple ‘shifting orbits’ of Venus around Earth, along with multiple ‘axis shifts’ of the Earth too\]](#), many brooks in southern Palestine which had been flowing to the south must have changed their direction and started to flow towards Palestine, emptying into the southern shore of the Dead Sea. This occurrence served as a symbolic picture for the dispersed Children of Israel, who also will return to their homeland: “Turn again our captivity [as from Babylon] as the streams [including the Jordan] in the south.” [\[Psalm 126:4.\]](#)

And though Dr. Velikovsky’s statements here about the “many brooks of southern Palestine, emptying into the southern shore of the Dead Sea” appears correct. His orientation on this verse of *scripture* does not seem to be entirely so. I mean he doesn’t seem to be considering that this *‘prophetic plea’* to “Turn again our captivity” is in the ‘voice’ of Jews who were already once ‘turned from captivity’ from Babylon, which is entirely to the north of Israel. So the “streams in the south” might not just refer to the ones in “southern Palestine”, (*streams* [H650](#) apparently



meaning here, "bed of a stream" or river), but to the ones in Northern Palestine too, including the Jordan River, which evidently originally flowed from south to north and then turned west and emptied into the Mediterranean, but after The Visits of Venus, being then cut off from the Mediterranean, it reversed it's flow, and has ever since emptied into the northern shore of the Dead Sea, though evidently for a while, maybe between The 1st and 2nd Visits of Venus, it had previously instead finally emptied into the Indian Ocean on the coast of Southeast Africa.

The plain of Siddim became a sea. When Israel "wandered into the wilderness in a solitary way [the Lord turned] rivers into the wilderness, and the watersprings into dry ground; and fruitful land into barrenness; [while elsewhere He **turneth**] the wilderness into standing water, and the dry ground into watersprings." [[Psalm 107:4,33-36](#) [\[reference corrected\]](#).]

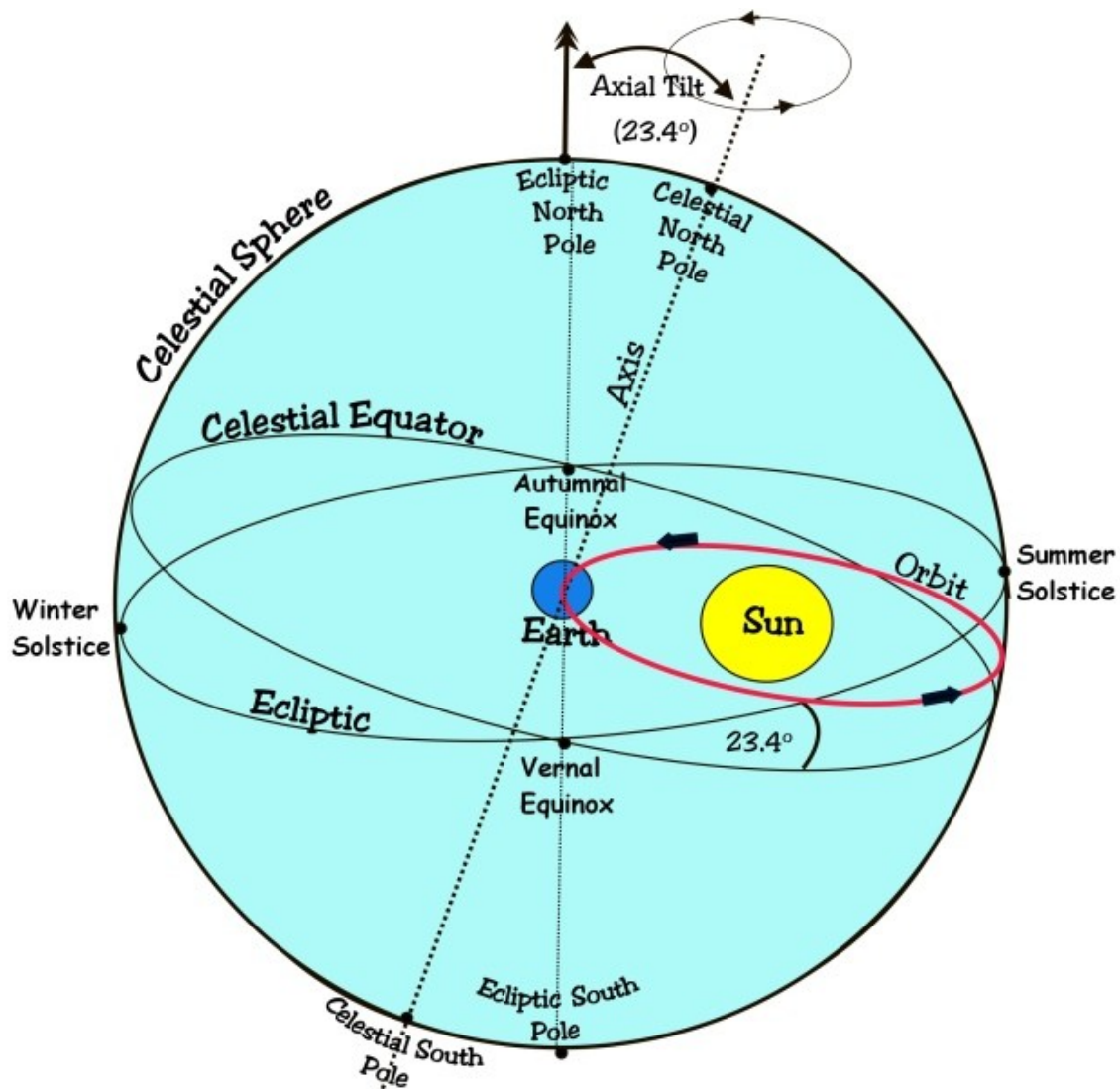
The opening of the Great Rift, or its further expansion, accompanied by the [\[actual and further\]](#) overturning of the plain and the origin of the Dead Sea, was a catastrophe that ended an era. In my understanding, the end of the Early Bronze Age or the Old Kingdom in Egypt coincided with these events [*efc* minor].

But I should clarify again that Dr. Velikovsky's perspective was a *catastrophic-evolutionary* one, one in which he saw each *fossiliferous sedimentary rock layer* as separately 'laid' over many 'ridiculously-long' periods of time, and involving separate catastrophes, instead of just 'one great flood', though he also sees that these *layers* were later repeatedly 'disturbed' and/or 'piled on' by Mercury, Venus and Mars (PIRE). So "in my understanding" and "scheme" - which I **believe** is '**inspired**' by The Spirit of God - the "opening of the Great Rift" really only "coincided" with The Exodus and The Destruction of the Middle Kingdom, not with The Destruction of the Old Kingdom, and this "rift" was probably additionally 'affected' by The 2nd Visit of Venus at the time of Joshua's Prolonged Day of Battle. More about all this is further considered as we **continue**.

The End of the Early Bronze Age

The Old Kingdom in Egypt, the period when the pyramids were built, a great and splendid age came to its end in a natural disaster. "At the conclusion of the Sixth Dynasty... Egypt is suddenly blotted out from our sight as if some great catastrophe had overwhelmed it."...

[Gerald Avery Wainwright [late 19th to mid 20th Century "British Egyptologist who worked on excavations in Egypt and Sudan... [and who] studied from 1889 to 1896 at Clifton College and the Universities of Bristol and Oxford... [eventually] joining the staff of the Egyptian Antiquities Service... [where in] 1922... he excavated the tomb of Salakhana in Assiut, which contained many canine mummies and 600 votive stelae ["stelae" being the plural of "stele", which again, is "an upright stone slab or pillar bearing an inscription or design and serving as a monument, marker, or the like", and "votive stelae" being any such slabs or pillars that are also "dedicated... in accordance with a vow... wish or desire"]... [and in] 1932, as a specialist in Egyptian sky mythology, he discovered that Egyptians were using the constellation Swan to determine the North" [which implies the Earth's *axis* has 'tilted' somewhat at least once since then], and he was "a generous supporter of Near East Archaeology...and deeply studied... and meticulous in his methods", this last quote found at



<http://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/10.1177/030751336405000118?journalCode=egaa>], *The Journal of Egyptian Archaeology* 16 (1930), p.43.]

By the way, “the constellation Swan” is Cygnus, and it’s now the “northern *constellation* lying on the plane of the Milky Way, deriving its name from the Latinized Greek word for *swan*”, with its *declination* above (as opposed to below) the *celestial equator*, (“the celestial equator... [now] inclined by about 23.44° with respect to the *ecliptic*... [or to] the plane of earth's orbit”)... [being] +42.03°, while “the *north celestial pole* has a declination [above the *celestial equator*] of +90°”. So to give you an idea of some of the ‘tilting’ that’s gone on, Cygnus is now less than halfway up the northern sky. See the chart of the “**Earth And Sun in The Celestial Sphere**”, p.528.

...The second city of Troy came to an end at the same time the Old Kingdom of Egypt fell; it was destroyed in a violent paroxysm of nature. The Early Bronze Age [including the Old Kingdom of Egypt] was simultaneously terminated in all the countries of the ancient [Near to Middle] East – a vast catastrophe spread ruin from **Troy** [in Northwest Asia Minor, map p.535] to the Valley of the Nile. This fact has been extensively documented by Claude Frédéric-Armand Schaeffer, professor at College de France, excavator of Ras Shamra (Ugarit) [tbb shortly].

And this would be the extent of that “wider damage” – wider than just in **the plain of Jordan** – caused by that ‘severe meteor shower’ at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah.

Note: the Great Pyramid was likely not built in the same “age” as all the others, but was reportedly built by Enoch before The Flood, the main evidence for this – besides its ‘incredible design’, ‘far-superior construction’, and ‘built-in message’, all attributes that **glorify, speak**, and even **prophecy** for God—being the *sea salt* in its upper chambers, though how it remained ‘unburied’ could only be explained by the ‘details’ of God’s **work** in The Flood, like the ‘details’ of how there was no *earthquake* under the Children of Israel’s **dwelling**s, but only everywhere else in Egypt, when **the LORD smote all the firstborn in the land of Egypt** [Exo 12:29](#).

And I mean this 10th Plague Judgment of The Exodus must have involved **‘precisely targeted great earthquakes’**, because one Egyptian testified in writing:

Forsooth, the land turns round as does a potter’s wheel... The towns are destroyed, Upper Egypt has become dry... All is ruin... Oh, that the earth would cease from noise, and tumult be no more... The residence is overturned in a minute (*Papyrus Ipuwer* 2:8,11; 3:13; 6:1; 7:4).

Either that or God instead used another kind of **‘miraculous power’** to again **sever between the Egyptians and Israel**, so that again, **ye [and I] may know how that the LORD doth put a difference between Egyptians and Israel** ([Exo 11:7](#)). But whatever the means God used, they were likely essentially **the same** ([Heb 13:8](#); [Mal 3:5-6](#)) as the ones He used to keep His **altar** and **pillar... in the midst of the land of Egypt** ([Isa 19:19-20](#)) ‘unburied’ by *flood sediment*.

So I’m thinking that like the ‘unburied’ Great Pyramid, this 10th Plague Judgment was not just **‘supernatural’**, but really mostly did involve, with God’s use of a **‘visiting planet’**, other than **‘supernaturally-guided ordinances of heaven and earth**, also **‘precisely targeted great earthquakes’**, including **‘masterfully handled’** cancellation of *ground waves* (establishing *nodes* within *standing waves*, in this case resulting in ‘still ground’) under the Jewish **dwelling**s, and **‘precisely targeted’** enhancement of *ground waves* (or *antinodal interference*, in this case resulting in ‘violently rising and falling ground’) under the Egyptian **dwelling**s, the ‘details’ of which, to whatever extent **‘discernable’**, must necessarily be, as usual, **‘short-circuitingly mindboggling’**. But let’s consider this some more anyway.

What are the two types of [wave] interference?

The interaction of waves with other waves is called **wave interference**. Wave interference [involving *water, light, Earth’s crust, etc.*] may occur when two waves that are traveling in opposite directions meet. The two waves pass through each other, and this affects their amplitude [- “amplitude” being the “extent of a... wave... [e.g., the] amplitude of an ocean wave is the maximum height of the wave crest above the level of calm water, or the maximum depth of the wave trough below the level of calm water”].

...[But] a standing **wave pattern** is an interference phenomenon. It is formed as the result of the perfectly timed interference of two waves passing through the same medium [e.g., *water, ground, etc.*]. A **standing wave pattern** is not actually a wave; rather it is the pattern resulting

from the presence of two waves of the same frequency with different directions of travel within the same medium [- “frequency” being “the number of times that a [wave]... vibration repeats itself in a specified time”, with *higher frequencies* distinguished by shorter distances from *crest to crest*, and *lower frequencies* distinguished by longer distances from *crest to crest*]...

...One characteristic of every standing wave pattern is that there are points along the medium that appear to be standing still. These points, sometimes described as points of no displacement, are referred to as **nodes**. There are other points along the medium that undergo vibrations between a large positive and large negative [or large up and down] displacement. These are the points that undergo the maximum displacement during each vibrational cycle of the standing wave... and so they are called **antinodes**...



The positioning of the nodes and antinodes in a standing wave pattern can be explained by focusing on the interference of the two waves. The nodes [or for example, places where there is 'still ground'] are produced at locations where **destructive interference** occurs. For instance, nodes form at locations where a crest of one wave meets a trough of a second wave... Antinodes, on the other hand, are produced at locations where **constructive interference** occurs. For instance, if a crest of one wave meets a crest of a second wave, a point of large positive [or upward] displacement results. Similarly, if a trough of one wave meets a trough of a second wave, a point of large negative [or downward] displacement results. Antinodes are always vibrating back and forth [or up and down] between these points of large positive and large negative displacement [at an 'unmoving location']; this is because during a complete cycle of vibration [from the peak of one *crest* to the next], a crest will meet a crest; and then one-half cycle later [and at the same "location"], a trough will meet a trough... [and as a result the] antinodes are vibrating back and forth [or up and down in an 'unmoving location', and to help you visualize this better, the surface of a long, rectangular trampoline would move in this way if there was a line of 'same-sized' people locked arm in arm jumping up and in unison on it]...

Nodes and antinodes should not be confused with crests and troughs. When the motion of a [single] traveling wave is discussed, it is customary to refer to a [moving] point [or line] of large maximum displacement as a crest and a [moving] point [or line] of large negative displacement as a trough. These represent [single wave moving] points [or lines] of the disturbance that travel from one location to another through the medium. An antinode... [or node, requiring two *interfering waves* or more] is a point [or area] on the medium that is staying in the same location. Furthermore, an antinode vibrates back and forth between a large upward and a large downward displacement [due to the 'addition' or *enhancement* of the two waves, while the *vibration* of nodes results in no displacement due to the 'negation' or *cancellation* of this "upward" and "downward displacement"]. [So] ...a standing wave [with nodes and antinodes] is not actually a wave but rather a ['stationary'] pattern that results from the interference of two or more [moving] waves... The nodes and antinodes are merely unique [unmoving] points [or in the case of *ground waves*, "locations"] on the medium that make up the wave pattern [- nodes being where 'still ground' exists, and *antinodes* being where repeatedly 'rising and falling ground' happens] [<http://www.physicsclassroom.com/class/waves/Lesson-4/Nodes-and-Anti-nodes>].

And don't you think God could '**masterfully handle**' such **ordinances** of His own **creation** to **sever between** the **Egyptians and Israel**, and so that [**we**] **may know how that the Lord doth put a difference between Egyptians and Israel?**

The *Papyrus Ipuwer* (photo, p.530), which is used by Dr. Velikovsky as evidence for The Exodus, and called "officially *Papyrus Leiden I 344 recto*", is otherwise identified by my encyclopedia as...



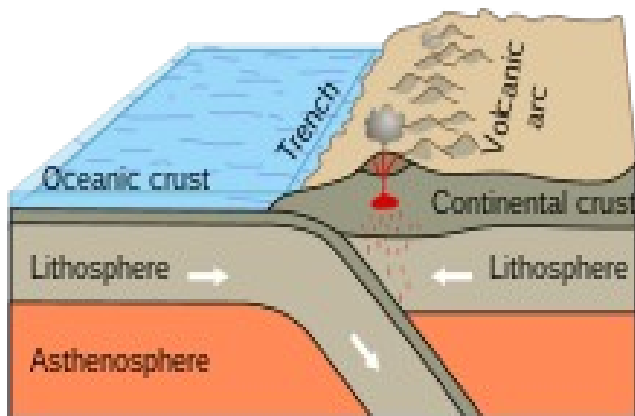
...an ancient Egyptian hieratic papyrus [- “hieratic” meaning, “hieroglyphics, used by the [Egyptian] priests”, and “papyrus” being “a tall, aquatic plant... native to the Nile valley” used to make a “material on which to write”, each surviving papyrus now identified as “an ancient document, manuscript, or scroll”, this particular papyrus evidently written in the aftermath of The 10 Plagues of The Exodus, though maybe later recopied]... during the Nineteenth Dynasty of Egypt, and now held in the Dutch National Museum of Antiquities in Leiden, Netherlands. It contains the **Admonitions of Ipuwer**, an incomplete literary work [because part of this papyrus, and the end of Ipuwer’s story, has not survived, Ipuwer being, according to my encyclopedia, “a name typical of the period 1850-1450 BCE”, which would be from the time of the Patriarchs to the time of The Visits of Venus]...

Claude Frédéric-Armand Schaeffer was a 20th Century...

...French archeologist, born in Strasbourg, who led the French excavation team that began working on the site of Ugarit, the present day Ras Shamra [- “ruins” of “an ancient port city in northern Syria”,] in 1929, leading to the uncovering of the Ugaritic religious texts.

He was curator for the Prehistoric and Gallo-Roman Museum, Strasbourg (1924-1933) and for the Museum of National Antiquities, Saint-Germain-en-Laye (1933-1956). Schaeffer was an advocate of catastrophism. He argued that on at least five occasions catastrophic events (such as earthquakes) had destroyed Bronze Age civilizations.

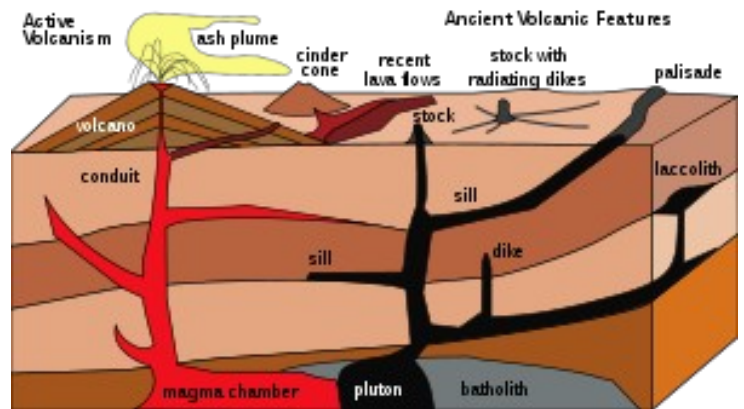
However not counting **‘post-visit’**, diminishing *aftershocks* and *volcanic activity* - which surely were much more **‘catastrophically destructive’** than the *geological activity* going on today - in the so-called Bronze Age, which with some ‘contortion’ might be placed as starting sometime before The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah and lasting sometime beyond The Visits of Venus, I count only 3 “catastrophic events”, with only the last 2 being caused by Venus, and only the last 2 causing most of the diminishing *aftershocks* and *volcanic activity* that is still ongoing today. And I **see** the first one, which ended the Early Bronze Age/Old Kingdom, as not global but regional, and not involving Venus, but instead as just a **‘fiery downpour’** of otherwise ‘unaccompanied’, ‘very small’, though nonetheless **‘catastrophically destructive’** meteors, which likely only created the *seismic activity* - in this case, *impact tremors* - corresponding to their strikes on Earth, and certainly not *earthquakes* that a **‘visiting planet’** like Venus would cause, the kind where “the land turns round as does a potter’s wheel” (*Papyrus Ipuwer* 2:8).



Oceanic-continental convergence resulting in **subduction** [downward arrow] and **volcanic arcs** illustrates one [of the now diminishing] effect[s] of **plate tectonics** [since The Last Visit of Mars; see the green diagram, p.531].

An originally [Flood-laid] horizontal sequence of sedimentary rocks (in shades of tan) are affected by igneous activity [right diagram, p.531]. Deep below the surface are a **magma chamber** and [the

smaller] and large[r] associated igneous bodies [including, a **pluton** (black) and a **batholith** (grey)]. The **magma chamber** feeds the **volcano**, and sends offshoots of **magma** [red] that will later crystallize [or *solidify*] into **dikes** and **sills** [(both red and black), as well as into **palisades**, **laccoliths** (black, but originally red too), and the included but not labeled **volcanic necks**, (again both red and black), and above the surface there are



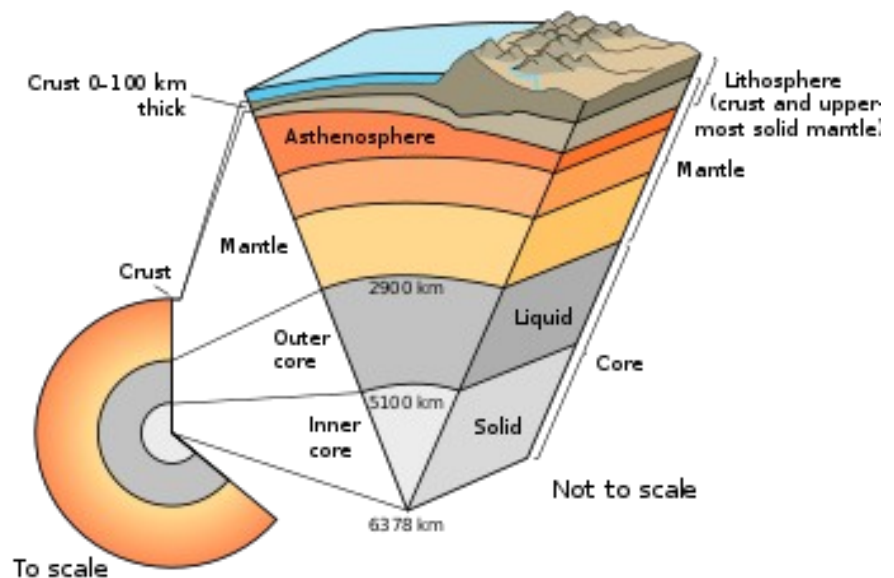
stocks, (black in diagram, and see real ones in the photo on p.531), that were 'revealed' when the layers of the *sedimentary rock* that originally contained them got 'washed away', most of it rather quickly by the 'continent-covering' *inundations* caused by Venus, **stocks** being "probably" the result of "an upward protrusion from the roof of... a batholith" or **pluton**, and the "radiating dikes" from the **stock** in the diagram evidently used to be *underground* (and red) too, and that is, they were originally *sills*... The diagram [right side, p.531 also] illustrates both a **cinder cone volcano**, which releases ash, and a

composite volcano, which releases both **lava** and **ash**.

However notice that the layered appearance on the above diagram of the "composite volcano" implies it is formed by repeated *eruptions* over 'ridiculous amounts' of time. Certainly some of these *layers* within *volcanic mountains* may have been layed up to 2 to 3 thousand years apart by the different '**visits**' of Mercury, then Venus, and finally Mars, or in 'aftershock events' which follow one or more of these '**visits**', but I expect most of them come from single '**visits**' of just 1 of these 3 planets, and instead involve multiple *orbits*, which with each 'pass' over a given newly forming *volcanic mountain*, *fluid-filled ground* is raised, this fluid being *magma*, and some of it escapes the *ground*, and by definition then become *lava*, and once free from being *underground* it naturally finds the lowest levels available to 'settle' and *solidify*, but evidently it quicky enough forms a *crust* on top, so that when the planet returns from another trip around the Earth, it may again 'suck up' still more *lava* out of the *ground*, and deposit it atop the already sufficiently enough *solidified crust* formed from the last *orbit*, and thus make such *layers* rather quickly.

But surely *layers* in *volcanic mountains* were 'laid' in a number of ways and by a number of causes.

And the **Asthenosphere**, in relation to definitions I've previously shared, and as depicted on the more detailed "**core to crust**" diagram on p.532, is just the 'second uppermost' level of the ("Stiffer") **Mantle**, and you may know I prefer to call the "**uppermost solid mantel**" (colored medium grey), "Genesis rock", which together with the **Crust** is - on this diagram anyway - defined as the **Lithosphere**.



And the reason I say the placement of the so-called "Bronze Age", as well as all the others, must be done with 'contortion' is because - contrary to Evolutionary Theory (see the bio on Dame Kathleen Kenyon, the 4th bio within the up-coming 3-page-long textnote) - after The Flood farming resumed with Noah and his sons ([Gen 4:2](#); [8:22](#); [9:20](#)), at least one of whom survived long enough to be contemporary with Abraham, who must have taught, and as necessary retaught them this '**skill**'. And in the Near/Middle East, the period from the so-called "Stone Age" to the following "Bronze Age" is better seen as 2 or 3 'recovery periods', the first being from a more 'regional catastrophe', and the second and third following The Visits of Venus, where after each of these catastrophes eventually people felt brave enough to come out into the open again, thinking 'the sky' might not again 'fall', and, finally being beyond 'just surviving', started to improve their lives, the so-called "Stone Age" being marked where evidence is found that people were only finding the time to make 'primitive tools', and this supposedly single "Age" 'peaking' when they also found the time - and courage - to resume farming, and the following so-called "Bronze Age" being marked by the evidence of people starting to find enough time to make better tools, etc. But as Dr. Velikovsky does, we will further consider these "ages" defined by *evolutionists*, as well as their 'contorted' relationships to reality, in the following sections, especially in **SECTION 11**.

And I don't mean to ignore the generally preceding "Copper Age", an "age" originally defined as having transpired 'between' the "Stone and Bronze Ages", but now evidently increasingly acceptably instead referred to as the "Copper Period", as it is now "usually considered to be part of the broader Neolithic" Period, and to have transpired within the "Neolithic [Farming] Revolution" at the end of the "Stone Age", and whether a "Period" or "Age", being marked in the places where "copper is predominant in metalworking technology... [this being supposedly] the period before it was discovered [or rediscovered] that adding tin to copper formed bronze (a harder and stronger metal)". Nor do I mean to ignore the "Iron Age" which is generally considered to have followed the "Bronze Age", and this generally when "mass production of tools and weapons superior to their bronze equivalents become possible". And the reason I cannot ignore them being, again, that Dr. Velikovsky does not.

Schaeffer observed at Ras Shamra on the Syrian coast clear signs of great destruction that pointed to violent earthquakes and tidal waves, and other signs of a natural disaster [- though the damage done by *impact tremors* is likely to some extent confused with the later and much greater 'geological trauma' caused by Venus, as the "tidal waves", evidently from *meteors* crash-landing in the Mediterranean Sea, is likely confused with the later *inundations* caused by Venus, if not also with The Flood]. Among the greatest of these [as it appears to some *evolutionists*] took place at the end of the Old Kingdom in Egypt. At the occasion of his visit to Troy, then under excavation by [Dr.] Carl Blegen [20th Century, Yale educated, "American archaeologist who worked on the site of Pylos in Greece and Troy in modern-day Turkey", and "directed the University of Cincinnati excavations of the mound of Hisarlik, the site of Troy, from 1932 to 1938"], he [Mr. Schaeffer] became aware that Troy, too, had been repeatedly destroyed by natural catastrophes at the same times when Ras Shamra was destroyed. The distance from the Dardanelles near which the mound of Troy lies to Ras Shamra in Syria is about 600 miles on a straight line. In modern annals of seismology [after the Earth has had more than a couple millennia since The Last Visit of Mars to 'settle down', 'geologically speaking',] no earthquake is known to have occurred covering an area of such an extent [but apparently the *seismic activity* caused by 'widespread' *meteor impacts* at the time of the Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah did, and the much greater *earthquakes* later caused by Venus must have been global]. He then compared the findings of these two places with signs of earthquakes in numerous other localities of the ancient East. After painstaking work he came to the conclusion that more than once in historical times the entire region had been shaken by prodigious earthquakes. As to the destruction that ended the Early Bronze Age [evidently being to some extent '**unable**' to distinguish the greater damage Venus later caused], Schaeffer wrote:

There is not for us the slightest doubt that the conflagration of [1] Troy II corresponds to the catastrophe that made an end to the habitations of the Early Bronze Age of [2] Alaca Huyuk, of [3] Alisar, of [4] Tarsus, of [5] Tepe Hissar [these first 5 in Asia Minor or Anatolia], and [beyond Anatolia] to [6] the catastrophe that burned ancient Ugarit (II) in Syria, [7] the city of Byblos that flourished under the Old Kingdom of Egypt, [8] the contemporaneous cities of Palestine, and that [9] was among the causes that terminated the Old Kingdom of Egypt.

[Claude Frédéric-Armand Schaeffer, *Stratigraphie comparee et chronologie de l'Asie Occidentale (IIIe et IIe millénaires)* [*Comparative Stratigraphy and Chronology of Western Asia (Third and Second Millennia)*] (Oxford University Press, 1948), p.225.]

In the same catastrophe were destroyed the civilizations of [10] Mesopotamia and [11] Cyprus.
 What caused "the disappearance of so many cities and the upheaval of an entire civilization"?

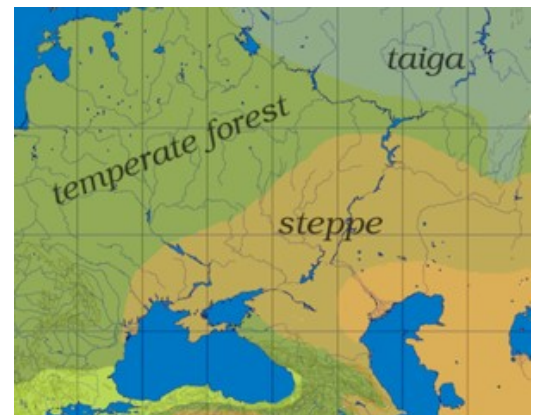
[Father Roland de Vaux [was a 20th Century "French Dominican priest who led the Catholic team that initially worked on the Dead Sea Scrolls. He was the director of the Ecole Biblique, a French Catholic Theological School in East Jerusalem, and he was

charged with overseeing research on the scrolls. His team excavated the ancient site of Khirbet Qumran (1951-1956) as well as several caves near Qumran northwest of the Dead Sea. The excavations were led by Ibrahim El-Assouli, caretaker of the Palestine Archaeological Museum, or what came to be known as the Rockefeller Museum in East Jerusalem", and Father Roland worked on "several" other excavations too], *"Palestine in the Early Bronze Age," The Cambridge Ancient History*, Third ed., Vol.I, pt.2 (1971), ch.xv, p.236.] [According to James Mellaart [FBA (Fellow of the British Academy), and a 20th to early 21st Century "British archaeologist and author who is noted for his discovery of the Neolithic settlement of Çatalhöyük in Turkey... [who] was expelled from Turkey when he was suspected of involvement with the antiquities black market... [and who] was also involved in a string of controversies, including the so-called mother goddess controversy in Anatolia, which eventually led to his being banned from excavations in Turkey in the 1960s... [but he also] lectured at the University of Istanbul and was an assistant director of the British Institute of Archaeology at Ankara (BIAA)... [and he] helped to identify the "champagne-glass" pottery of western Anatolia in the Late Bronze Age, which in 1954 led to the discovery of Beycesultan ["an archaeological site in western Anatolia"]... [and in] 1964 he began to lecture in Anatolian archaeology in Ankara ["historically known as **Ancyra** and **Angora**"... the capital of the Republic of Turkey since its establishment in 1923... and [since the 20th Century] Turkey's second largest city after the former imperial capital Istanbul [which again, is "historically known as Constantinople and Byzantium"] ... [and not surprisingly,] After his death it was discovered that he had forged many of his "finds", including murals and inscriptions used to discover the Çatalhöyük site"] [*The Catastrophe at the End of the Early Bronze Age 2 Period," The Cambridge Ancient History*, third ed. [1971], Vol.I, pt.2, p.406), in the period after the catastrophe the number of settlements "is reduced to a quarter of the number in the previous period." Jacques Courtois [? - evidently not the 19th Century "French-Italian painter"], reporting the results of a survey in the valley of the Orontes, writes of the "extreme density of habitation of the plain in the Bronze Age, and particularly in the Early Bronze Age." (*Syria* ["a French journal published once a year in Beirut" - on *JSTOR*, short for *Journal Storage*], 50 [1973], p.99). In eastern Arabia "a sharp downturn in settlements and activity becomes apparent" after ca. 2000 B.C. (Michael Rice [a 20th Century Archeologist specializing in Southeast Asia], *"The Status of Archaeology in Eastern Arabia and the Persian Gulf," Asian Affairs*, 64 [1977], p.143 [and a link to his later work, *"The Archaeology of the Arabian Gulf 1994"*, available free on Internet Archive, is https://archive.org/stream/MichaelRiceTheArchaeologyOfTheArabianGulf1994/MichaelRiceTheArchaeologyOfTheArabianGulf1994_djvu.txt]). According to Dame Kathleen Kenyon [DBE, and that is, "Dame Commander", female equivalent to "Knight Commander" of "The Most Excellent Order of the British Empire", this being another "British order of chivalry, rewarding [women's] contributions to the arts and sciences", etc., she being "a leading British archaeologist of Neolithic culture in the Fertile Crescent", [the "Neolithic culture" identified by *evolutionists* and my encyclopedia as existing between about 10,000 and 2,000 BC, and, "Traditionally considered the last part of the Stone Age or the New Stone Age... [which supposedly] commenced with the beginning of farming [but really when people who has been driven to hideouts and/or natural shelters by the regional "catastrophe" at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, and later by the assaults of Venus started 'coming out' again, with evidently both of the following 'recovery periods' misidentified as a single] "Neolithic Revolution"... [that supposedly] ended when metal tools [again] became widespread (in the Copper Age or Bronze Age... or, in some geographical regions, in the Iron Age)", and the Stone Age most noticeably appears to begin when the relatively few survivors of formerly 'civilized cultures' - some better 'civilized' than modern ones today - were forced into 'primitive conditions', this being globally by Venus, whereby most all these 'cultures' have since been 'misplaced', if not 'erased'], and Dame Kathleen "is best known for her excavations of Jericho in 1952-1958, and has been called one of the most influential archaeologists of the 20th century... [and she] was Principal of St Hugh's

College, Oxford from 1962 to 1973”, “The final end of the Early Bronze Age civilization came with catastrophic completeness... Jericho... was probably completely destroyed... Every town in Palestine that has so far been investigated shows the same break... All [or most] traces of the [Near to Middle East] Early Bronze Age civilization disappeared.” (*Archaeology in the Holy Land* [London,1960], p.134). According to Prof., Dr. George Ernest Wright [again, the 20th Century “leading [Harvard] Old Testament scholar and biblical archaeologist”], “one of the most striking facts about the [Near to Middle East] Early Bronze civilization is its destruction, one so violent that scarcely a vestige of it survived. We do not know when the event took place; we only know that there is not an Early Bronze Age city excavated or explored in all Palestine which does not have a gap in its occupation between Early Bronze Age III and the Middle Bronze Age [and surely the “meteor shower” that impacted, conflagrated, and/or inundated this region is partly responsible for the ‘geological damage’ found at this level of strata, but Venus is the most responsible for it, as well as for the ‘damage’ to every other layer of sedimentary and Genesis rock]. To date this gap, we know that it must be approximately contemporary with a similar period in Egypt called the ‘First Intermediate Period’ between dynasties VI and XI [6 and 11] (ca. 22nd and 21st centuries B.C. [or 2200 to 2000 BC]).” (“*The Archaeology of Palestine*” in *The Bible and the Ancient Near East, Essays in Honor of William Foxwell Albright* [1961], p.103)].

The destruction can be traced also in Greece. “The destruction of the Early Helladic II [Period] town at Lerna [on the map, p.535] in the eastern Peloponnese” [or in Peloponnesus] is an example of “the widespread and violent destruction that occurred ca. 2300 B.C. in the Aegean and East Mediterranean” [which apparently extends the range of when this catastrophe occurred back another 100 years, unless there was also earlier

‘targeted catastrophic fallout’ provided by the collision that made the Main Asteroid Belt, etc.] (Prof., Dr. Marija Gimbutas [“a Lithuanian-American archaeologist and anthropologist known for her research into the Neolithic and Bronze Age cultures of “Old Europe” and for her Kurgan hypothesis, which located the Proto-Indo-European homeland in the Pontic Steppe [“or Pontic-Caspian steppe... or Ukrainian steppe”, map, p.534]”, “*The Destruction of the Aegean and East Mediterranean Urban Civilization around 2300 B.C.*,” *Bronze Age Migrations in the Aegean*, ed. by R. A. Crossland [?] and Ann Birchall [?] [London,1973], pp.129 f [- this and other of their works online].) For Lerna, see also John “Jack” Langdon Caskey [a 20th Century “American archaeologist and classical scholar... [who] directed the American School of Classical Studies in Athens from 1949 to 1959, and [was] head of the Classics department at the University of Cincinnati from 1959 to 1979... [and whose] career focused on excavations at the ancient settlements of Troy [Northwest Asia Minor], Lerna, and Keos [now Kea, an island southeast of Athens, map, p.535] ... [and who until] his marriage ended he worked with Elizabeth Caskey who went to excavate on her own account after they parted”, Elizabeth “Betty” Gwyn Caskey being “a Canadian-American classical scholar, teacher, and archaeologist, known for her work in the excavations at Lerna and Kea, which are of importance to Greek prehistory [or ‘pre-Visits-of-Venus era history’]... [and as] an archaeologist she worked with her husband, Jack Caskey, on excavations where she supervised the trenches of every annual dig and their fortifications... [and she] also wrote summaries of the excavations... [and after] her marriage ended she excavated at Pylos [Southeastern Peloponnese]... [and she] was a Professor of Classics at Randolph-Macon College [in Ashland, Virginia] who became Professor Emeritus in 1981”, “*The Early Helladic Period in the Argolid*,” *Hesperia* [“an academic journal of Classical archaeology”] 29 (1960 [- online]), pp.289-290. “The burning of the House of Tiles... was the



end of an era at Lerna.” The settlement “came to a violent end.” Not only Lerna, but also “the tiled buildings at Tiryns and Asine were destroyed by fire.” It is quite probable that the end of the Third Dynasty of Ur occurred at the same time. Dr. Thorkild Jacobsen [again, that 20th Century “renowned historian specializing in Assyriology and Sumerian literature... [and] one of the foremost scholars on the ancient Near East”] wonders about “the reasons for the dire catastrophes that befell the city of Ur in the reign of Ibbi-Suen, the sudden collapse of its great empire, and the later utter destruction of the city itself at the hands of barbarian invaders... How an empire like that of the Third Dynasty of Ur... could so quickly collapse is really quite puzzling.” (*The Reign of Ibbi-Suen*, *The Journal of Cuneiform Studies* 7 (1953), p.36. Although Jacobsen refers to the text known as “*Lamentation over the Destruction of Ur*,” he does not treat it seriously. Yet this poem provides specific information about the causes of the disaster. It speaks of a “storm’s cyclone-like destruction” (99), of a “storm that annihilates the land” (178), “in front of the storm fires burned; the people groan” (188). It tells of the sun being obscured: “In the land the bright sun rose not, like the evening star it shone” (191). It describes earthquakes that shook the land: “the destructive storm makes the land tremble and quake” (199). “In all the streets, where they were wont to promenade, dead bodies were lying about” (217). “Mothers and fathers who did not leave their houses were overcome by fire; the young lying on their mothers’ laps like fish were carried off



by the waters" (228-229). The city, prostrated by the storm "which overwhelmed the living creatures of heaven and earth," fell prey to hostile tribes and was looted. See Dr. Samuel Noah Kramer, [again, "one of the world's leading Assyriologists and a world-renowned expert in Sumeria history and Sumerian language [cuneiform]" of the 20th Century], *"Lamentation over the Destruction of Ur," Ancient Near Eastern Texts Relating to the Old Testament* (Princeton, 1950). Another lament, *Oh, Angry Sea*, transl. by Professor Raphael Kutscher [?] (Yale University Press, 1975 [- online]), tells of the destruction of Ur, Larsa, Nippur, Sippar, Babylon and Isin by inundations sent by Enlil. I consider Enlil to be Jupiter [though at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, and whether it was the *perturbations* of Jupiter or Mercury that "sent" this "destruction" or not, all the "inundations", "earthquakes that shook the ground", and "storm fires" - the kind of "destructive storm [that besides *conflagration*] makes the land tremble and quake", and results in the Sun being "obscured" by a lasting 'thick haze' - were more likely caused entirely by a 'meteor shower', *impacting both land and water*, whose origin I "consider...to be" the *collision* that resulted in the Main Asteroid Belt, etc.]]

..."It was an all-encompassing catastrophe. Ethnic migrations were, no doubt, the consequence of the manifestation of nature. The initial and real causes must be looked for in some cataclysm over which man had no control."...

[Schaeffer, *Stratigraphie comparée [Stratigraphy Compared]*, p.537. In Alaca Huyuk [in Anatolia] there are unequivocal signs that an earthquake [or *impact tremors, causing some 'precisely targeted destructively interfering ground waves'*] was responsible for the destruction (pp.296 f.). Cf. Barbara Bell [?], *"The Dark Ages in Ancient History," American Journal of Archaeology* 75 (1971 [- online].]

...Everywhere [*meteor impacts and the resulting conflagrations, inundations, and/or constructive standing ground waves were 'targeted'*] it was simultaneous and sudden.

The shortcoming in Schaeffer's work was in not making the logical deduction that if catastrophes of such dimensions took place in historical times, there must be references to them in ancient literary sources. If a cataclysm terminated the Early Bronze Age, decimated the population, but left also survivors [including Abraham and Lot], then some memory of the events [besides *scripture*] must have also found its way to be preserved in writing - if not by survivors, turned to vagrancy and having to take care for the first necessities of life, then by the descendants of the survivors.

In my scheme the end of the Early Bronze Age or Old Kingdom in Egypt is the time of the momentous events connected with the story of the patriarch Abraham [and The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah], and described in the Book of Genesis as the overturning of the plain...

But the lack of the "slightest doubt" that [1] "the conflagration of Troy II corresponds to the catastrophe that made an end to the habitations of the Early Bronze Age of [2] Alaca Huyuk, of [3] Alisar, of [4] Tarsus, of [5] Tepe Hissar [these first 5 in Anatolia]... and [beyond Anatolia] to [6] the catastrophe that burned ancient Ugarit (II) in Syria, [7] the city of Byblos that flourished under the Old

Kingdom of Egypt, [8] the contemporaneous cities of Palestine, and that [9] was among the causes that terminated the Old Kingdom of Egypt", and "destroyed the civilizations of [10] Mesopotamia and [11] Cyprus", including causing [12] "the end of the Third Dynasty of Ur", and [13] the "destruction [that] can be traced also in Greece... [where] the Early Helladic II [Period] town at Lerna... is an example", does not necessarily lead to the conclusion that 'global geological upheaval' was the cause, but only really that there was 'regional conflagration', along with some 'inundation', due to a 'severe meteor shower', which would have also been accompanied by, I suspect, 'relatively minor' *seismic activity* due to *meteor impacts*, except maybe where God's '**targeted**' *antinodal interference* occurred.

However and like before the Flood, since there was apparently at this time in Sodom and Gomorrah and elsewhere in the Near to Middle East region many cities where for each of the **inhabiters** thereof, except for Abraham and Lot and too few others, **every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually**, then besides lots of '**targeted**' *meteor impacts*, and the resulting '**targeted**' *conflagrations* and/or *inundations*, there must have been a whole lot of '**evil-city-targeted**', 'antinodal-interference-style', 'shakin' going on' too.

And I will reemphasize that the later Visits of Venus and Mars surely further 'disturbed' and/or 'retraumatized', and to some extent further 'piled-on' all the *layers* of *rock* originally 'laid' in The Flood – including any investigated by *archeologist* Claude Shaeffer, et al. – and that, understandably, this additional and greater damage was apparently to some degree mistaken as to when it actually occurred, and therefore somewhat mistaken by Dr. Velikovsky too.

[The archaeological evidence uncovered in recent years strongly supports the conclusion that the cities of the plain flourished during the Early Bronze Age and that their destruction took place at the end of this period, more specifically at the end of EB III. See Hershel Shanks ["American founder of the Biblical Archaeology Society and the Editor Emeritus of the *Biblical Archaeology Review*... [who] has written and edited numerous works on Biblical archaeology including the Dead Sea Scrolls... [and for] more than forty years [since the early 1970's], Shanks has communicated the world of biblical archaeology to general readers through magazines, books, and conferences... [and] is "probably the world's most influential amateur Biblical archaeologist," wrote [a] New York Times book critic"], "*Have Sodom and Gomorrah Been Found?*" *Biblical Archaeology Review* VI:5 (Sept./Oct.1980), p.28. Cf. [*catastrophist*] Dwardu Edward Cardona (again, Senior Editor for *Kronos*, and Editor of *Aeon*, as well as a Founding Father of the Canadian Society for Interdisciplinary Studies (now defunct), and... a consultant on mythology and cosmogony for *Chronology and Catastrophism Review* (SIS C&C Review), which is the official organ of the British-based Society for Interdisciplinary Studies], "*Jupiter – God of Abraham* (Part III)," *KRONOS* Vol.VIII.1 (1982), pp.69 ff.]

...The cause of the catastrophe could not have been entirely unknown to the ancients. We must therefore become attentive also to other traditions connected with these events.

But again and still, the problem with the 'separate catastrophe per layer' way of "understanding" *strata* is that later 'catastrophes' can 'further disturb' the 'layers' that are 'laid' in the earlier ones, and evidently mislead *evolutionists* about the extent of any supposed 'disturbance'.

Zedek

The time of the patriarch Abraham witnessed unusual behavior by the planet Jupiter. The fact that Jupiter displayed [\[or more was just blamed for\]](#) a burst of activity exactly in the time of Abraham must not appear a coincidence: it was in the times of great global catastrophes, when the world was threatened with destruction, that religious reformers gained prominence and contemporaries looked to a divine man for guidance.

[For example, the time of the great catastrophes of the Exodus [\[caused by The Visits of Venus\]](#) saw Moses leading the Israelites from Egypt, to revelations and a covenant with God. And the time of the great upheavals of the eighth and seventh century before this era [\[caused by The Visits of Mars\]](#) heard the voice of Isaiah. In later centuries, religious reformers found an especially large and responsive following when they announced the approach of the end of the world, or the beginning of the Kingdom of God on Earth. Numerous instances may be cited, but the best known became the foundation of the religion of a large part of the Old and New World [\[?\]](#).]

Zedek was the name of Jupiter, and we read that in the days of Abraham the planet underwent some visible changes. [\[Evidently perverted\]](#) Rabbinical sources relate that when Abraham was on an expedition against Cherdlaomer, king of Elam, and his allied kings [\[Gen 14\]](#) – who had captured and despoiled Sodom, and taken Abraham’s nephew Lot into captivity – the star Zedek illuminated the night, thereby ensuring the expedition’s success.

[Rabbi Berkjah, quoted in *Bereshit Rabba* XLIII.3, translated by A. Ravenna [\[?\]](#) (Turin,1978), p.328, [\[evidently an example of how paganistic ‘planet-god’ worship to some degree corrupted Judaism\]](#).]

"When he returned from his victory over Cherdlaomer and the kings who were allied with him," the book of Genesis relates, "the king of Sodom came out to greet him. And Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought out bread and wine; he was priest of the Most High."...

[\[Gen 14:17-18\]](#) [\[Salem is considered to be the site of the later Jerusalem. Before Joshua’s conquest of Jerusalem the king of that city bore the name Adonizedek \[meaning, ‘the Lord Zedek’, or “my Lord is righteousness”\], \(\[Jos 10:1,3\]\(#\) \[- this being the chapter where Joshua commands the **Sun and Moon to stand thou still... until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies, including Adonizedek\]**\), an indication of continuing Jupiter worship among the Jebusites \[but surely also an indication of paganism’s perversion of the original meaning of such titles, not to mention an indication that God sometimes **‘destroyeth the wicked’** with regional ‘meteor showers’, and sometimes more globally with **‘visiting planets’**, but sometimes by other means too, like by **his servant Joshua**\].\]](#)

Abraham ceded to Melchizedek the spoils of the war he had obtained in Syria from Cherdlaomer.

Ancient Salem was a holy place, and Palestine was a holy land from grey antiquity. Thus, in the documents of the Old Kingdom in Egypt, Palestine is named God’s Land (*Toneter*), or Divine (Holy) Land [\[which is an indication that Pagans were not entirely able to pervert the true identity of God’s holy land \[Zec 2:12\]\(#\)\]](#). [In *Ages in Chaos* I have brought extensive material for the identification of the Divine Land with Palestine [\[- which we’ll cover in SECTION 11\]](#).] Abraham

lived at the end of the Old Kingdom in Egypt; and documents from that time already refer to Palestine as God's Land. But in early times, it was [evidently by 'Satan's propaganda' more often perverted](#) by the surrounding pagan ['planet-god' worshipers as](#) an astral [\[or 'planet'\]](#) god.

The meaning of the name Melchizedek is "Zedek is [My] King [\[or Lord\]."](#) Zedek, as said, [is \[or has been perverted to be\]](#) the name of the planet Jupiter, remaining so in the [\['pagan-perverted'\]](#) astronomy of the Jews in later ages. In the Talmud Zedek refers to Jupiter [\[- which confirms such 'perversion' if it actually does\].](#) [\[Cf. \[the previously unidentified\] Dr. William Moses Feldman \[M.D., M.R.C.P. \(Membership of the Royal Colleges of Physicians of the United Kingdom\), B.S. \(Bachelor of Surgery\) F.R.S.E. \(Fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh\), a late 19th/early 20th Century "Russian-born expert on child health in Britain, and Senior Physician at St. Mary's Hospital for Women and Children, Plaistow, East London, as well as a "keen astronomer... elected a Fellow of the Royal Astronomical Society in 1934"\], *Rabbinical Mathematics and Astronomy* \(New York,1931\).\]](#) Zedek also has the meaning of "righteousness" or "justice." [\[Uh-huh.\]](#) It is beyond the scope of this work [\[and the 'ability' of the unregenerate\]](#) to find which of the meanings – the name of the planet or a word in common usage – preceded and which followed. It is conceivable that this planet was worshipped in that remote time [\[and later by stiffnecked, backsliding Jews\]](#) and that, in the days of the patriarch Abraham, the cult of Jupiter was prominent in the Salem of the high priest Melchizedek [\[but it is not "conceivable" that this 'vain religion' was practiced by him\].](#) Melchizedek, "priest of the most high," was, it follows, [\[not\]](#) a worshipper of Jupiter [\[though evidently heathen/pagan gentiles, and disobedient \[H4784; G506; G544; G545\]\(#\) and rebellious \[H4775; H4779; H4780; H4784; H5637\]\(#\) Jews were\].](#) [\[Melchizedek, the priest-king of ancient Salem, plays an important part in Christian catechism \[but certainly not a pagan role\].\]](#) [\[*The Epistle to the Hebrews 5:6,10; 6:20; 7:1* ff, as well as *Psa 110:4*. Cf. also Fred L. Horton \[of originally 'Baptist-founded' Wake Forest University, North Carolina\], *The Melchizedek Tradition* \("a critical examination of the sources to the fifth century A.D. and in the Epistle to the Hebrews"\) Cambridge University Press, 1976 \[- online\].\]](#)

And surely the meaning of Melchizedek in *scripture* is "righteousness" or "judgment", as well as being a *shadow* reference to our Lord Jesus, and surely any connection to the Planet Jupiter was added later by the *heathen* [H1471; G1482; G1484](#), (meaning, "of the pagan, the Gentile"), as well as being appropriated by *stiffnecked* [H6203; H7186; G4644](#), *backsliding* [H4878; H5637; H7726; H7728](#) Jews.

And by the way, no, I no longer think, as I had been previously *'mistaught'* – and surely all *teachers* but Jesus *'misteach'* at least sometimes – that Jesus Himself was *Melchizedek king of Salem* [who] *brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God*, the one whom Abraham *honoured* when *he gave him tithes*, but I now instead *believe* that *Melchizedek* ([Psa 110:4](#)), or *Melchisedec* ([Heb 5:6,10; 6:20; Ch.7](#)), was just another *shadow of things to come* ([Col 2:17](#)), because, as the Apostle Paul says, (and I *'expand'* upon),

...the law [of Moses, or any previous *'sacrificial' offering* all the way back to Abel's *'accepted' offering* ([Gen 4:4](#)), even if] *having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect* [Heb 10:1](#),

but the **very image** of that **shadow**, Jesus, who was finally both symbolically and literally manifested at The Last Supper and On The Cross, respectively, **'brought forth bread and wine'** that now is **able** to **'make us' continually...perfect**, fulfilling the **prophecy** of [Psalm 110:4](#), with Jesus becoming our **priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek**.

The Change in Jupiter's Motion

In the Tractate Shabbat of the Babylonian Talmud it is said that in order to teach Abraham

the futility and meaninglessness of astrology [[which implies paganism didn't entirely corrupt Judaism](#)], the Lord let the planet Zedek, or Jupiter, change its rising point from west to east:

"Go forth (i.e. cease) thy planet-(gazing), for Israel is free from planetary influence. What is thy calculation? Because *Zedek* (Jupiter) stands in the West? I will turn it back and place it in the East." And thus it is written, *Who hath raised up Zedek from the East? He hath summoned it for his sake* (sc. [[Latin abbreviation of scire licet, meaning, "namely",](#)] for the sake of Abraham).

[*Shabbat* 156b, [Rabbi Ezekiel Isidore Epstein](#), [[again, that 20th Century "Orthodox rabbi and rabbinical scholar in England"](#)] ed., (London,1935). Cf. [Isaiah 41:2](#). "Zedek also has the meaning of "righteousness" or "justice" and therefore the sentence is often rendered incorrectly [[or really correctly](#)] as: "Who raised up the righteous (man) from the east" [[making this Tractate Shabbat quote, though apparently rejecting 'planet-god' worship, most likely a slander^{H1681} of Abraham, and I mean I doubt Abraham ever needed such 'instruction' from God](#)]. Cf. [Fritz Hommel](#) [[mid 19th to early 20th Century "German Orientalist... \[who\] studied in Leipzig and was habilitated in 1877 in Munich, where in 1885, he became an extraordinary professor of Semitic languages... \[and\] a full professor in 1892, and after his retirement in 1925, continued to give lectures at the University of Munich... \[and who was\] intrigued by linguistic problems, and also interested in the history of the Middle East and its connection with culture and intellectual life... \[and who\] excelled in studies of cuneiform literature, ancient Arabic poetry, old Turkic inscriptions and Egyptian pyramid texts"](#)], *JSOR [Journal of the Society of Oriental Research, Trinity College, Toronto, Ont., Canada]* (1927).]

However I have reviewed the context of Isaiah 41, where in [Verse 2](#) the English transliteration from the Hebrew of "zedek" is "*tsedeq*", and the KJV translation is **the righteous man**, and I must admit there appears to be a reference here by God to His **judgment** ([Verse 1](#)) that involved this particular **righteous man**, who in this case is God's metaphor for, or the personification of the Planet Jupiter, seen coming **from the east**, because it's revealed from God's rhetorical question and following statement in this verse that it's to Jupiter (*tsedeq*) that God...

...gave the nations before him, and made him rule over kings... he [[Jupiter - tsedeq](#)] **gave them as the dust to his sword, and as driven stubble to his bow. He** [[still Jupiter - tsedeq](#)] **pursued them, and passed safely; even by the way that he had not gone with his feet** [or "by a path his feet have not traveled before" (NIV), which appears to be a reference to Jupiter's 'change of orbit'] [Verses 2-3](#).

But in the next verse God takes all the credit, asking and answering the question,

Who hath [really] wrought and done it, calling the generations from the beginning? I the LORD, the first, and with the last; I am he [that made the Planet Jupiter one of My 'instruments of righteousness and judgment'] [Isa 41:4](#).

And this cannot be about the 'local' or even 'regional administration' of...

...this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace... [Heb 7:1-2](#),

because concerning this **judgment** of God involving Jupiter - *tsedeq*, [Isaiah 41:5](#) reads,

The isles [or 'continents'] saw it, and feared; the ends of the earth were afraid...

...evidently because **they saw** - as they **stood afar off - the smoke of...**[the] **burning** caused by this regional 'severe meteor shower', (this like the 'pre-report' seen from [Rev 18:15-18](#)).

And a few verses later the Lord concludes with the 'moral to the story' involving His use of His '**instrument of righteousness and judgment**', it being also a '**reminder**' intended to **comfort** Israel, and therefore **us** too, saying,

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness. Behold, all they that were incensed against thee shall be ashamed and confounded: they shall be as nothing; and they that strive with thee shall perish. Thou shalt seek them, and shalt not find them, even them that contended with thee: they that war against thee shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nought. For I the LORD thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, Fear not; I will help thee. Fear not, thou worm Jacob, and ye men of Israel; I will help thee, saith the LORD, and thy redeemer, the Holy One of Israel... [Isa 41:10-14](#)

And Dr. Velikovsky appropriately enough points out, while I qualify that,

This statement of the rabbis contains some contradictory ideas. Nevertheless, it may preserve certain [[preferably spiritually discerned 1 Co 2:14](#)] elements of ancient lore [[read, 'ancient history'](#)].

The Babylonians described Marduk, or Jupiter, as having an eastward motion, different from the other planets: "The earliest system from Babylon has, however, East and West reversed, and assigns to its chief god Marduk, as god of the planet Jupiter, a definite easterly direction; to Mercury, on the other hand, a westerly one."

[Dr. Hugo Winckler [who is again that German, but here I add, '**misguided**', "Pan-Babylonian school", "Extraordinary Professor of Oriental languages" at the University of Berlin, etc.], *Die Babylonische Geisteskultur* [[The Babylonian Spiritual Culture](#)] second ed. (Leipzig, 1919), p.72.]

"The Ra-mythology [of Egypt] is that which describes [Ra's] course from west to east."...

[Leo Viktor Frobenius [late 19th/early 20th Century "ethnologist and archaeologist and a major figure in German ethnography... [who] undertook his first expedition to Africa in 1904 to the Kasai district in Congo [which in the last quarter of the 20th Century was renamed Zaire, and since 1997 renamed again the Democratic Republic of the Congo (DRC)] formulating the African Atlantis theory during his travels ...[and during] World War I in 1916/1917... [he] spent almost an entire year in Romania, travelling with the German army for scientific purposes...[where his] team performed archaeological and ethnographic studies in the country... [and] Numerous photographic and drawing evidences of this period exist in the image archive of the Frobenius Institute... [and in] 1918 he travelled in... western and central Sudan, and in northern and northeastern Africa... [and in] 1920 he founded the *Institute for Cultural Morphology* in Munich... [and he] taught at the University of Frankfurt... [and in] 1925, the city acquired his collection of about 4700 prehistorical African stone paintings, which are currently at the University's institute of ethnology, which was named the Frobenius Institute in his honour in 1946... [and it was in] 1932 [that] he became honorary professor at the University of Frankfurt, and in 1935 director of the municipal ethnographic museum... [and also in] the 1930s... [he] claimed that he had found proof of the existence of the lost continent of Atlantis... [proposing the theory of] "African Atlantis"... a hypothetical civilization thought to have once existed in southern Africa... [where] this lost civilization was conceived to be the root of African culture and social structure... [and] that a white civilization must have existed in Africa prior to the arrival of the European colonisers, and that it was this "white residue" that enabled native Africans to exhibit traits of "military power, political leadership and... monumental architecture... [and that] historical contact with immigrant 'whites' of Mediterranean origin" was responsible for "advanced" native African culture... [and that] such a civilization must have disappeared long ago, to allow for the perceived "dilution" of their civilization to the "levels" that were encountered during the period... [and he] also confirmed the role of the moon cult in african cultures", etc.], *Das Zeitalter des Sonnengottes [The Age of the Sun God]* (Berlin,1904), p.170.]

...Ra, rising in the west, was called "Harakhte, only god, king of the gods; he riseth in the west."...

[Egyptologist, Dr. James Henry Breasted, *Ancient Records of Egypt*, III.18. Cf. Eduard Meyer [again, University of Berlin Professor of Ancient History, whose student was Dr. Julius Lewy], *Zeitschrift fuer Aegyptische Sprache [Journal of Egyptian Language]* (1877), pp.148 ff.]

...However, some hymns were addressed to "Ra when he riseth in the Eastern part of heaven."

[E.g., Sir Ernest Alfred Thompson Wallis Budge [again, "English Egyptologist, Orientalist, and philologist who worked for the British Museum and published numerous works on the ancient Near East", etc.] ed., *The Egyptian Book of the Dead* (London,1899), chapter XV (Papyrus Ani), p.246.]

Egyptian lore also knew of a "Horus of the West" and a "Horus of the East."...

[Dr. Samuel Alfred Browne Mercer [late 19th through mid 20th Century English-American-Canadian "Scholar of the OT and co-founder of the Anglican Theological Review (ATR)... [who, besides other undergraduate degrees,] received his B.A. from Harvard University in 1908 and his Ph.D. from the University of Munich in 1910... [and] studied Semitic languages at the University of Göttingen, the University of Heidelberg, and the Sorbonne

in Paris... [being] ordained... priest... [in] 1904... [and from] 1910 until 1922 he was professor of Hebrew and OT literature at the Western Theological Seminary in Chicago, and in 1922-1923, he was dean of Bexley Hal... [then from] 1923 until his retirement in 1946... Professor of Semitic Languages and Egyptology at Trinity College, Toronto... [and known as] a leading Semitic scholar", *Horus, The Royal God of Egypt* (Grafton, Mass., 1942), pp. 48, 117.]

...Horus was [or became] the planet Jupiter [after Saturn's 'decline'].

The expression found in Latin literature, Jupiter Dianus, ...

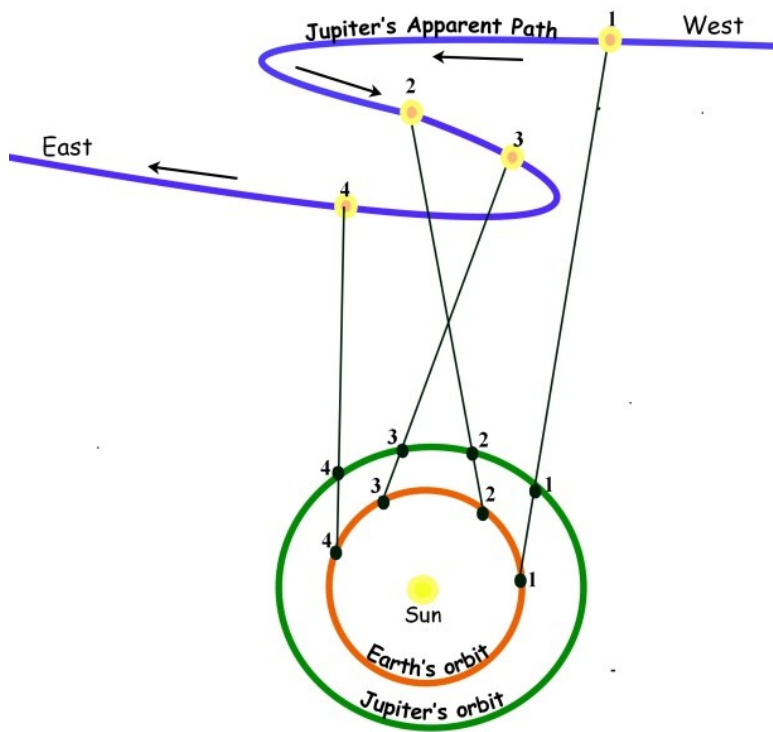
[Sir James George Frazer [OM (identified relatively shortly from now compared to my last promise), FRS, FRSE, FBA, and again, that "Scottish social anthropologist", who was "influential in the early stages of the modern studies of mythology and comparative religion...[and] is often considered one of the founding fathers of modern anthropology], *Ovid's Fasti* (London, 1931), note to p. 388.]

...or [for "Dianus" read,] two-faced, [which] could be interpreted as denoting two motions of Jupiter, an eastward and a westward. This conforms to the same expression applied to the Sun where, as I endeavored to show [mostly in the later sections], it denotes easterly and westerly movements of the luminary. [Cf. the ancient view, referred to by Macrobius (*Saturnalia* VIII) that the two faces of Janus symbolize the god's power over the two gates of the sky ("et ideo geminum, quasi utriusque januae coelistis potentem") ["Therefore, a double, as powerful as two gates of heaven"].]

The celestial mechanics [or astrophysics] of the implied reversal of Jupiter's apparent motion remains unsolved [except for the number of times when Earth 'flipped over', where each time the motion the Sun and all the planets appeared to reverse]. [However since] Jupiter apparently changed the place of its rising points without a similar and simultaneous change by the Sun and all the planets and stars [it seems to be an "unsolved" mystery]. It might seem that in order for Jupiter alone to be subject to [such] a change, a reversal of orbital motion is required, [which is] an [extremely] unlikely proposition from the point of view of celestial mechanics.

Earlier we asked in relation to Saturn's great prominence, was not the Earth at some early period a satellite of that planet?; and we may ask again, with the ascendance of Jupiter, was the Earth not in the domain of this successor to the celestial throne? Theoretically, if the Earth were revolving around Jupiter, a reversal of our planet's north and south geographical poles would cause Jupiter to appear to change the point of its rising [- but the Sun and planets too].

Except **we know** that the Earth was never a *satellite* of Jupiter or of any other *planet*, because **we know** the Earth was **created**, in its unfinished **form**, 3 days before the Sun, Moon and stars, which includes the *planets*, earlier known as **wandering stars**, though evidently at least one of them was originally a *dwarf star*. And if Earth ever were in Jupiter's "domain", this would have been - both *atmospherically* and *geologically* - an 'extremely hostile environment' which surely no **inhabitants of the earth** would long survive. Keep in mind also that since **we know** that Mercury, Venus and Mars came into existence as a result of the '**fallout**' from The Curse, **we** also **know** that the originally **created planets** only included



Jupiter's Retrograde Loop

Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, and whatever *planets* were beyond Neptune, at least 2 of which must have suffered some severe *fragmentation* due to *collisions*, with some 'pieces' unavoidably later *colliding* too, altogether becoming an *asteroid cloud* and *belts*, or 'crash-landing' on larger *objects*, or being *captured* by *planets* as *moons*, or by the Sun as *comets*, or as in Mercury's case, finally becoming new *planets*.

And it finally occurs to me that though it seems impossible that Jupiter actually changed directions, (not that anything is impossible for God, just that He remains **the same**, and doesn't usually otherwise 'play by such rules', but is known, at least by me, to operate mainly within His Own **ordinances of Heaven and Earth**),

Jupiter's *orbit* might have been 'pushed a bit closer' to Earth, and maybe **he** became 'unmasked' from Saturn's 'glare', this at the time when Saturn 'went nova', all this making **his** 'directional changes' appear more 'noticeable' than before, these altered 'directional changes' simply being the new **apparent retrograde motion optical illusion** as Earth spend the time needed to 'catch up to' and 'pass' **him** in **his** new, 'fully unmasked', 'more noticeable', maybe 'faster and closer than before' *orbit*, (chart of **Jupiter's Retrograde Loop**, p.543).

Jupiter's retrograde [or 'apparent westward' motion] periods [now] last for 4 months and are then followed by periods of nine months of prograde [or 'apparent eastward'] motion before going retrograde again.
[\[https://astronavigationdemystified.com/2015/04/08/jupiters-retrograde-motion\]](https://astronavigationdemystified.com/2015/04/08/jupiters-retrograde-motion)

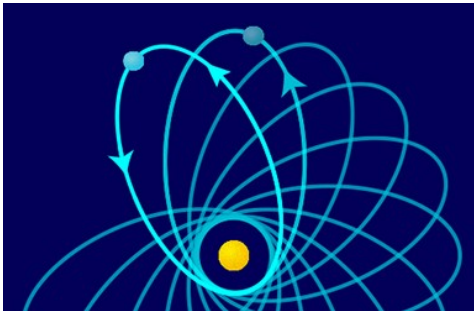
So Jupiter now appears to be traveling west - relative to the *stars* - for near half the time it appears to be traveling east, and therefore can be seen *rising* mostly in the west, but otherwise in the east too, and maybe a lot more 'noticeably' than before Saturn 'went nova'. Just an idea. But it should be added that...

...all stars and planets appear to move from east to west on a nightly basis in response to the rotation of Earth, [while] the outer planets [also] generally drift [or 'slip'] slowly eastward relative to the stars. [And the "outer planets", Main Belt] Asteroids and Kuiper Belt objects (including Pluto) [also] exhibit apparent retrogradation... [and that is,] since Earth completes its orbit in a shorter period of time than the planets [etc.] outside its orbit, it periodically over-takes them, like a faster car on a multi-lane highway. When this occurs, the planet [etc.] being passed will first appear to stop its eastward drift, and then drift back toward the west. Then, as Earth swings past the planet [etc.] in its orbit, it appears to resume its normal motion west to east. Inner planets Venus and Mercury appear to move in

retrograde in a similar mechanism, but as they can never be in opposition to the Sun as seen from Earth, their retrograde cycles are tied to their inferior conjunctions with the Sun... [meaning their *apparent retrograde motions*] are unobservable [being] in [both] the Sun's glare and in their "new" phase, with mostly their dark sides toward Earth... in the transition from morning... to evening star...

The period between [or from] the center of... [each of the *apparent*] retrogradations [back around to the next *center of apparent retrogradation*] is the [planet's] synodic period... [See chart, p.544.]

However Uranus is "never [or since The Flood 'decreasingly'] recognised as a planet by ancient observers because of its dimness and slow orbit", and Neptune, evidently also since The Flood, is "never visible to the naked eye", which leaves these 2 *planets* 'out of the conversation' too. But we can still see - with the naked eye, and according to the "Synodic period" chart - that Saturn spends about half a



month longer than Jupiter in *apparent retrogradation*, except that Jupiter at its *minimum brightness* is still over 3 times *brighter* than Saturn at its *maximum brightness*, which at least 'diminishes' Saturn's place 'in the conversation'.

On the other side of Earth, **Mercury**, in its much more "complicated" *orbit*, "moves faster than the Earth as it travels around the **Sun**... [and] has a highly elliptical orbit, so the speed of its orbit changes." Quoting another source, "As it orbits the Sun, this planet follows

an ellipse... [where] the point of closest approach of Mercury to the sun [*perihelion*] does not always occur at the same place but... slowly moves around the sun... This rotation of the orbit is called a *precession*", or in Mercury's case, and more specifically, a *perihelion precession*, (diagram, p.543, http://physics.ucr.edu/~wudka/Physics7/Notes_www/node98.html).

And by the way, the **he**, **his** and **him** about a page back referring to Jupiter-*tsedeq* are from [Isaiah 41:2](#), while the **her** that refers to the **earth** is from many both Old and New Testament verses from [Genesis 4:11](#) to [Revelation 14:18](#).

The Worship of Jupiter

"From Zeus let us begin; him do we mortals never leave unnamed; full of Zeus are all the streets and all the marketplaces of men; full is the sea and the heavens thereof... He it was who first set up the signs in heaven... Wherefore him do we men ever worship first and last." [Aratus, *Phenomena*, transl. by G. R. & A. W. Mair [?] (London,1955 [- [available online](#)]).]

In these words Aratus (fl. -310) pictured the place the planet-god Jupiter occupied in the thoughts of men. Nobody today in the streets and marketplaces mentions the planet Jupiter.

Aratus, who lived in the late 4th to the mid 3rd Century BC...

...was a Greek didactic poet... [whose] major extant work is his hexameter poem *Phenomena* (...Latin: *Phaenomena*), the first half of which is a verse setting of a lost work of the same name by Eudoxus of Cnidus [- "an

ancient Greek astronomer, mathematician, scholar, and student of Archytas and Plato... [all of whose] works are lost"). It describes the constellations and other celestial phenomena. The second half is called the *Diosemeia* (...[meaning,] "Forecasts"), and is chiefly about weather lore.

And Dr. Velikovsky reports that,

St. Augustine, seven centuries after Aratus, asked:

But since they call Jupiter king of all, who will not laugh to see his star so far surpassed in brilliancy by the star of Venus? ...They answer that it only appears so because it is higher up and much farther away from the earth. If, therefore, its greater dignity has deserved a higher place, why is Saturn higher in the heavens than Jupiter? [*The City of God*, VII.15, transl. by Prof., Dr., Rev. Marcus Dods [the younger] (Edinburgh,1872).]

Marduk, the great god of the Babylonians, was the planet Jupiter; ...

[Dr. Bartel Leendert van der Waerden [a 20th Century "Dutch mathematician and historian of mathematics", educated at the "University of Amsterdam and the University of Göttingen... [and] Amsterdam awarded him a Ph.D... [and] Göttingen awarded him the habilitation ["the qualification to conduct self-contained university teaching"]... [and] he accepted a professorship at the University of Groningen... [and finally] was appointed professor at the University of Leipzig"], *Science Awakening*, Vol. II (Leyden,1974 [-available online]), p.59; cf. Professor Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* [again, *The Cosmology of the Babylonians*] (Strassburg,1890), pp.131,134.] [Marduk was called "the great lord of the gods" and also "the Enlil of the gods." See Dr. Léon Legrain [D.D., Sc.D., late 19th to mid 20th Century French-American museum curator and epigrapher, who, "For over thirty years... served as Curator of the Babylonian Section in the University [of Pennsylvania, Penn] Museum, an officer as distinguished as he was devoted... [and] His services to the Ur Expedition and to both of its constituent Museums were still greater in the publishing than in the discovery of its trophies... [including that he] copied and catalogued about 1800 tablets of the Third Ur Dynasty, as well as taking an important share in the *Royal Inscriptions*..." (<http://www.ur-online.org/personorg/16> and <https://www.penn.museum/sites/expedition/leon-legrain-d-d-sc-d>), *Royal Inscriptions and Fragments from Nippur and Babylon*, (Philadelphia,1926), p.38.]

...so was Amon of the Egyptians [the Planet Jupiter]; ...

[*Herodotus* II.41; *Diodorus Siculus* I.3.2; Plutarch, *De Iside et Osiride*, IX.] [*Amen*, used at the end of a prayer in Hebrew and in European languages that borrowed it from Hebrew, was ['pervertedly' used by Pagans as] the name of the Egyptian deity Jupiter. It is part of the names of many Egyptian kings - Amenhotep, Tutankhamen; of the same root is *amen* - "to believe." It is beyond the scope of this work to find which of the words

Planet	Synodic period (days)	Synodic period (mean months)	Days in retrogradation
Mercury	116	≈ [or approximately] 21	[it's complicated]
Venus	584	19.2	41
Mars	780	25.6	72
Jupiter	399	13.1	121
Saturn	378	12.4	138
Uranus	370	12.15	151
Neptune	367	12.07	158
Hypothetical far-out planet	365.25	12	182.125

- as the name of the deity or as a word in vocabulary, precede, and which is derived.]
[Uh-huh.]

...Zeus of the Greeks was the same planet; Jupiter of the Romans, as the name shows, was again the same planet. Why was this planet chosen as the most exalted deity? In Greece it was called "all-highest, mighty Zeus,"...

[*The Iliad* VIII. 22.] [In Book II of *The Iliad* (lines 410f.) Agamemnon [a mythological, though more likely actual historical '**angel-human demigod**' and "king of Mycenae or Argos", (read, Ancient Greece), "the son of King Atreus" whose grandfather, Tantalus, was the "son of Zeus", and his mother was "Queen Aerope of Mycenae" whose grandfather, Minos, was a "son of Zeus" too, and Agamemnon was "the brother of Menelaus, the husband of Clytemnestra and the father of Iphigenia, Electra or Laodike..., Orestes and Chrysothemis... [and when] Helen, the wife of Menelaus, was taken to Troy by Paris, Agamemnon commanded the united Greek armed forces in the ensuing Trojan War", and Agamemnon] addresses the god [his great grandfather] thus: "Zeus, most glorious, most great... that dwellest in the heaven." Plato [evidently 'impiously'] wrote: "Zeus, the mighty lord, holding the reigns of a winged chariot, leads the way in heaven, ordering all and taking care of all." (*Phaedrus* 246e, transl. by Benjamin Jowett [1871]). The stellar aspect of Zeus is discussed by Arthur Bernard Cook [mid 19th to mid 20th Century "British classical scholar, known for work in archaeology and the history of religions... [and] best known for his three-part work *Zeus: A Study in Ancient Religion* ... [and who] is often considered one of the Cambridge Ritualists, and although he did not produce theoretical works, he has been called "perhaps the most typical disciple" of J. G. Frazer... [and became the] Laurence Professor of Classical Archaeology at the University of Cambridge"], *Zeus, A Study in Ancient Religion* (Cambridge, 1914 [- on Internet Archive]), pp.751,760.]

...in Rome [the Planet Jupiter was referred to as] "Jupiter Optimus, Maximus";...

["Optimus Maximus Caelus Aeternus Jupiter" ["Greatest in the Heaven the Eternal Jupiter"] was the planet's appellative in its official cult. Cf. Dr. Franz Cumont, *Astrology and Religion Among the Greeks and Romans*, p.115. Seneca called Jupiter "exalted ruler of the sky, who sittest in majesty upon the throne of heaven." Vergil termed him "the mightiest of all gods". *The Aeneid* 20,243.]

...in Babylon it was known as "the greatest of the stars";...

[Professor Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, p.117.] [Cf. Dr. Carl Ferdinand Friedrich Lehmann-Haupt in *Zeitschrift fuer Assyriologie [Journal of Assyriology]* II. 214 ff. and Dr. Morris Jastrow, Jr. in *ibid.*, 353f.]

...as Ahuramazda it was called by [Medo-Persian King] Darius "the greatest of the gods";...

[Ernst Emil Herzfeld [late 19th to mid 20th Century "German archaeologist and Iranologist", who started as an "assistant to Walter Andrae in the acclaimed excavations of Assur [an ancient Assyrian city on the Tigris, maps, p.500-501], and later traveled widely in Iraq and Iran at the beginning of the twentieth century. He surveyed and documented many historical sites in Turkey, Syria, Persia (later Iran) and most importantly in Iraq... [and at] Samarra he carried out the first excavations of an Islamic period site in 1911-13... [and after] military service during World War I he was appointed full professor of "Landes- und Altertumskunde des Orients" (approximately: Studies of the Ancient and modern Near East) in Berlin in 1920... [which] was the first professorship for Near/Middle Eastern archaeology in the world... [and from] 1923 to 1925 he started explorations in Persia and described many of the countries' most important ruins for the

first time... [and in] 1925 he moved to Tehran and stayed there most of the time until 1934... [and] was instrumental in creating a Persian law of antiquities and excavated in [2 of the] the Achaemenid capitals [- the Achaemenid Empire, as 'modern historians' see it, having been "founded by Cyrus the Great"]... [and he] left Iran at the end of 1934 for a year in London, but never returned... [and in] 1935, he was forced to leave his position in Germany because of his Jewish descent, and became a faculty member of the New Jersey Institute for Advanced Study], *Altpersische Inschriften* [*Old Persian Inscriptions* - 1938], no.6, quoted in Albert Ten Eyck Olmstead ["American historian and academic, who specialized in Assyriology", and the "Professor of Oriental History at the Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago"], *The History of the Persian Empire* (Chicago, 19xx), p.255.] [In the *Bundahis* (transl. by Edward William West, *The Sacred Books of the East*, Vol.V [1880], pt.I, p.?), the planet Jupiter is called Ahuramazda ["the highest spirit of worship in Zoroastrianism... Ahura... [meaning] "mighty" or "lord", and *Mazda*... [meaning] "wisdom"]. Also in the inscriptions uncovered by Th. Goell [?] at Nemrud Dagh, Oromazdes (Ahuramazda) is equated with Zeus. Dio Chrysostom wrote that the Persian Magi considered Zeus "as being the perfect and original driver of the most perfect chariot. For the chariot of Helios, they claim, is relatively recent when compared with that of Zeus" ("The Thirty-sixth Discourse," transl. by Dr. James Wilfred Cohoon [late 19th to mid 20th Century classical scholar who received his PhD from Princeton and, in addition to other colleges, was finally a professor at Mount Allison University in New Brunswick, Canada - <https://dbc.rutgers.edu/all-scholars/8618-cohoon-james-wilfred>... and, 'top-ranking' Mount Allison University was founded in the mid 19th Century, and is [or was] yet another college originally "designed to prepare men for the ministry and to supply education for lay members"] [London, 19xx].)]

In India Shiva was described as "the great ruler" and considered the mightiest of all the gods; ...

[For the identification of Shiva with Jupiter, see *Lippincott's Universal Pronouncing Dictionary of Biography and Mythology*, ed. by Joseph Thomas [?], 4th edition (xxxx [- on Internet Archive]), p.2203. Cf. Francis Wilford [again, a late 18th/early 19th Century "Indologist, Orientalist, fellow member of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, and a constant collaborator of its journal - *Asiatic Researches*"], "*On Egypt, etc. from the Ancient Books of the Hindus*," *Asiatic Researches* III (Calcutta, 1799), p.382: "... Many of the Hindus acknowledge that Siva, or the God Jupiter shines in that planet [Jupiter]..." *The Skanda Purana* also tells of a special relationship between Brihaspati, the astronomical designation for the planet Jupiter, and Shiva.]

...he was said to be "as brilliant as the sun."...

[John Dowson [M.R.A.S., Member of the Royal Asiatic Society, "a British Indologist... [and] noted scholar of Hinduism... [who] taught in India for much of his life... [and his] book *Classical Dictionary of Hindu Mythology* remains one of the most comprehensive and authoritative works on the topic... [and] In 1855, he was made professor of Hindustani both at University College, London, and at the Staff College, Sandhurst [or the Royal Military Academy Sandhurst], a post he held till 1877"], "*A Classical Dictionary of Hindu Mythology*," seventh ed., (London, 1950), p.296.]

...Everywhere Jupiter was regarded as the greatest deity, greater than the sun, moon, and other planets.

[The Incas of Peru regarded the planet Jupiter as "the guardian and ruler of the empire." See the seventeenth-century chronicle *De las costumbres antiguas de los naturales del Piru* [*Ancient Customs of the Natives of Peru*], published in 1879. Cf. Jan

Sammer [the Czechoslovakian-American “assistant to Immanuel Velikovsky (1976-1979), [and] an archivist and editor for the Velikovsky Estate, 1980-1983... [who received his] Master of International Affairs, Columbia University, NYC, [in] 1986... [and] made contributions to Kronos and Aeon journals... [and who] notes: "During the time that I worked for Velikovsky (1976-1978) one of my tasks was to complete the cataloguing of his library notes, mostly from the 1940s... [and the] headings of the catalogue generally corresponded to the section headings in *Worlds in Collision* and *In the Beginning*... [and the] completion of *In the Beginning* was a cooperative effort between Velikovsky and myself... [and after] Velikovsky’s passing, when I returned to Princeton to work on his archive, I systematically moved the parts contributed by me into the notes apparatus and this is how this material appears in the unpublished manuscript" - https://www.velikovsky.info/Jan_Sammer], “*The Cosmology of Tawantinsuyu,*” *KRONOS.*]

Homer makes Zeus say that all the other gods together could not pull him down, but he could pull them along with the Earth. [*The Iliad* VIII.18-26.] "That is how far I overwhelm you all, both gods and men."

Commenting on this passage, Eustathius wrote that according to some ancient authorities Homer meant the orbits of the planets from which Jupiter could drive the rest of them, but they could not drive it...

[*Commentarii ad Homeri Iliadem* [*Commentaries on Homer*] 695. 5 (Leipzig,1828), Vol.II, p.184: “Others believe the golden chain to refer to the orbits of the planets... for when the planets come together on those orbits, many are the changes that universally arise.”]

Eustathius of Thessalonica (or Eustathios of Thessalonike), was a 12th Century...

...Greek scholar and [Catholic] Archbishop of Thessalonica. He is most noted for his contemporary account of the sack of Thessalonica by the Normans in 1185, for his orations, and for his commentaries on Homer, which incorporate many remarks by much earlier researchers [*ea*fc minor].

And Dr. Velikovsky concludes that...

...This sentence of Homer is close to the truth. Jupiter is greater and more powerful than Saturn, its rival, [and even when added] together with Mars, Earth, Venus, and Mercury. Jupiter is more than a thousand times greater than the Earth or Venus in volume, and six thousand times greater than Mercury. [Jupiter has about 70 percent of the mass of the [known] solar system not contained in the Sun.]

...But it appears that one could not guess this from observation with the naked eye. Even through a very powerful telescope Jupiter looks like an inch-large flat disc, surrounded by its four larger satellites.

[Jupiter’s four Galilean moons may have been known to the ancients. Marduk was said to be accompanied by four dogs. Cf. Prof. Peter Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, p.131: “Die vier Hunden des Marduk. ‘Mein Herr mit den Hunden.’” [“The four dogs of the Marduk. ‘My lord with the dogs.’”] In Egyptian mythology Horus, or Jupiter, was often associated with his four sons. Cf. Dr. Samuel Alfred Browne Mercer, *Horus, the Royal God of Egypt*, (1942).]

Of course the 4 larger Galilean moons of Jupiter, so named because they were discovered by

Galileo, must have originally been seen without the aid of a *telescope*, but instead with the aid of the *water lens*, which implies that the Pre-Flood **inhabiters of the earth** saw Jupiter *capturing moons* – or *capturing* ‘pieces’ from earlier *collisions* – long before the *water lens* came down.

The ancients knew something unknown to the moderns when they asserted that Jupiter can overpower all other planets, [and surely, but only in an indirect sense,] the Earth included.

[A similar idea is expressed in *Enuma Elish* [also spelled *Enûma Eliš*, “the Babylonian creation myth (named after its opening words)... [which] was recovered by [Sir] Austen Henry Layard in 1849 (in fragmentary form) in the ruined Library of Ashurbanipal at Nineveh (Mosul, Iraq) ... [after which] active research and further excavations led to near completion of the texts, and improved translations... [making it] one of the most important sources for understanding the Babylonian worldview)... [and the text from the surviving 6 of the 7 original “clay tablets”, which in nearly complete form “exists in various copies from Babylon and Assyria”] describes the creation of the world, a battle between gods focused on supremacy of Marduk, the creation of man destined for the service of the Mesopotamian deities, and ends with a long passage praising Marduk... [and its] “numerous parallels with the Old Testament ... has led to a [certainly mistaken] general conclusion amongst some [faithless^{G571}] researchers that the paralleled Old Testament stories were based on the mesopotamian work”. [In *Enuma Elish*] Marduk, or the planet Jupiter, threatens to “alter the ways of the gods” – “I will change their paths.” (Tablet VI). In Tablet VII it is said of Marduk: “For the stars of heaven he upheld the paths, he shep-herded all the gods like sheep.” (Leonard William King [“F.S.A., (Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of London)”, late 19th/early 20th Century “English archaeologist and Assyriologist educated at Rugby School and King's College in Cambridge... [who] collected stone inscriptions widely in the Near East, taught Assyrian and Babylonian archaeology at King's College for a number of years, and published a large number of works on these subjects... [and] is also known for his translations of ancient works such as the Code of Hammurabi... [and he] became Assistant Keeper of Egyptian and Assyrian Antiquities at the British Museum”], *The Seven Tablets of Creation* [London,1902]). Cf. Dr. Franz Xaver Kugler [mid 19th to early 20th Century “German chemist, mathematician, Assyriologist, and [‘dirty, low-down’] Jesuit priest... [who] earned a Ph.D. in chemistry in 1885, and the following year he entered the [abominable Society of Jesus, the] Jesuits... [and by] 1893 he had been [thoroughly ‘brainwashed’ and] ordained as a priest... [and] at the age of 35... became a professor of Mathematics at Ignatius-College in Valkenburg in the Netherlands... [and he] is most noted for his studies of cuneiform tablets and Babylonian astronomy [and evidently not for his other surely more desperately wicked pursuits] ... [though it is known that he] worked out the Babylonian theories on the Moon and planets, which were published in 1907 [and which I can only imagine are still used to this day in ‘satanic worship’]... [h]owever [and ‘fortunately’ for him,] his full work on Babylonian astronomy was never completed, with only three volumes out of a planned five published... [and so, by God’s mercy, he] died in Lucerne, Switzerland”, evidently saved from even greater judgment, though I can only expect that he is now in hell, where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched Mark 9:43-48; Isa 66:24], *Sternkunde und Sterndienst in Babel* [*Stars and Star Worship in Babel*], Vol.I (1907), p.7.]

Jupiter of the Thunderbolt

Nobody who observes a thunderstorm would arrive at the conclusion that the planet Jupiter sends the lightning. Therefore it is singular that peoples of antiquity pictured the planet-god Jupiter as wielding a thunderbolt – this is equally true of the Roman Jupiter, the Greek Zeus,

and the Babylonian Marduk.

Pliny [the 1st Century scholar in his 'standard-setting' encyclopedia entitled *Natural History*] wrote:

It is not generally known what has been discovered by men who are the most eminent for their learning, in consequence of their assiduous observations of the heavens, that the fires which fall upon the earth, and receive the name of thunderbolts (*fulminum nomen habeant*) proceed from the three superior stars ([or] *siderum* [which must include Venus or Earth, Jupiter and Saturn], but principally from the one which is situated in the middle [which must be Jupiter] ...and hence it is commonly said, the thunderbolts are darted by Jupiter. [Pliny, *Natural History*, transl. by Dr. John Bostock [M.D., FRS] and Henry Thomas Riley, [Esq. [- "esquire" being "an unofficial title of respect... applied to... in Britain, a commoner [i.e., anyone not of 'Holy Blood', but] considered to have gained the social position of a gentleman [and therefore may more or less acceptably associate with descendants of 'Holy Blood']"] (B.A., Ed.) (London,1865), Book II, Ch.18.]

Pliny knew the origin of lightning in the friction of clouds - he wrote that "by the dashing of two clouds, the lightning may flash out." [*Ibid.*, ch. 43.] He did not confuse lightning with the thunderbolt that is discharged by the planets. He makes a distinction between "earthly bolts, not from stars," and "the bolts from the stars." [*Ibid.*, II. 53.] Pliny knew that the Earth is one of the planets [if not one of "the three superior stars"]: "Human beings are distributed all around the earth and stand with their [legs and] feet pointing towards each other... Another marvel, that the earth herself hangs suspended and does not fall and carry us with it."

The planet-god Jupiter was frequently shown with a thunderbolt in his hand. The electrical discharge coming from Jupiter is described in many ancient texts. In the Orphic Hymn to Jupiter the Thunderer, he is described as he "who shak'st with fiery light the World." "From thee proceeds th'etherial lightning's blaze, flashing around intolerable rays." "Horrid, untamed, thou rollest thy flames along. Rapid, etherial bolt, descending fire, the earth... trembles."...

[*The Mystical Hymns of Orpheus*, transl. by Thomas Taylor (London,1846).] [In the Iliad Homer calls Zeus "Lord of the bright lightning"; "even he [the ocean] hath fear of the lightning of great Zeus whenso it crashes from heaven." (XX.197f.) Hesiod recounts a battle among the planetary gods in which Zeus took an active part: "From heaven and from Olympus he came forthwith, hurling his lightning: the bolts flew thick and fast... whirling an awesome flame... It seemed as if Earth and wide Heaven above came together; for such a mighty crash would have arisen if Earth were being hurled to ruin and Heaven from on high were hurling her down." It was in this battle that Zeus is said to have made use of his thunderbolts for the first time [but the "first", 'planet-to-planet thunderbolt' involving Earth surely occurred on The 1st Visit of Mercury, and others occurred earlier throughout the Solar System that were visible through the *water lens*, and one occurred during The 2nd Visit of Mercury, which like later such *strikes* between Venus and Earth, were in some cultures mistaken as *strikes* from Jupiter].]

...The earth does not quake when struck by regular lightnings. The bolt of Jupiter falls from the [clear] azure [or blue] sky, not veiled by clouds.

The electrical discharge from a planet is described very clearly by Pliny: "heavenly fire is spit forth by the planet as a crackling charcoal flies from a burning log." [*Natural History*, II. 18.] "It is accompanied by a very great disturbance of the air," produced "by the birth-pangs, so to speak, of the planet in travail."

Also Seneca discerns between "the lesser bolts" which seek "houses and undeserving homes" and the bolts of the planet Jupiter "by which the threefold mass of mountains fell."

[Seneca, *Thyestes*, transl. by [the previously unidentified] Frank Justus Miller ["a leading American classicist, translator, and university administrator in the late 19th and early 20th centuries... [who] authored the Loeb Classical Library translations of Seneca and of Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, and was president of the American Classical League for more than a decade... [and he] served as Dean of the College of Arts and Sciences at the University of Chicago from 1911 to 1923"] (1917), lines 1077 ff.]

In the Babylonian epic, the *Enuma Elish*, it is told how Marduk, or the planet Jupiter, "raised the thunderbolt, his mighty weapon. He mounted the chariot, the storm unequalled for terror. ...With overpowering brightness his head was crowned." He is also described as the planet-god "at whose battle heaven quaked, at whose wrath the Deep is troubled... in the bright firmament his course is supreme... with the evil wind his weapons blaze forth, with his flame steep mountains are destroyed..." [Leonard William King, *The Seven Tablets of Creation*, IV. 45f, 58.] A hymn to Marduk tells that "by his warfare the heaven resounds; before his anger the deep is shaken; before his sharp weapon the gods draw back."

[Jastrow, *Die Religion Babyloniens und Assyriens*, Ch.XVII, p.495. Jupiter was also known in Babylonia as Dapinu, "he of the dreadful glow" (Jensen, *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier*, p.129). Marduk's "word" causes "shuddering below" (Langdon, *Tammuz and Ishtar*, p.112). Cf. idem, *Sumerian and Babylonian Psalms*, p.41: "The word of Marduk is a flood which tears away the dikes" [- this evidently an example that inundations caused by Venus were confused with Jupiter too].]

The Egyptian pharaoh Seti described Amon as "a circling star which scatters its seed in fire... like a flame of fire... irresistible in heaven and in earth."

[Dr. James Henry Breasted, *Ancient Records of Egypt* (Chicago, 1906), Vol.III, par.117. The worship of Amon, as the planet Jupiter was called in the Theban cult, became supreme with the Eighteenth Dynasty. Cf. Gerald Avery Wainwright, "The Relationship of Amon to Zeus and his Connection with Meteorites," *The Journal of Egyptian Archaeology*, 16 (1930), pp.35-38.]

Brihaspati, or the planet Jupiter in Hindu astronomy, is invoked in the Rig Veda as one who "in destroying enemies cleaves apart their cities... Brihaspati strikes the enemy with his thunderbolts."...

[*Rig-Veda*, Mandala VI.73, transl. by Hermann Günther Grassmann [19th Century "German polymath, known in his day as a linguist and now also as a mathematician... [and he was] also a physicist, neohumanist, general scholar, and publisher... [and d]isappointed by the reception of his work in mathematical circles, Grassmann lost his contacts with mathematicians as well as his interest in geometry... [and in the] last years of his life he turned to historical linguistics and the study of Sanskrit ... [and he] wrote a 2,000-page dictionary and a translation of the Rigveda (more than 1,000 pages) which earned him a membership of the American Orientalists' Society... [and in] 1955 the third edition of his dictionary to Rigveda [originally published in 1873] was issued", pt. I (Leipzig,1876).]

...Shiva is called "wielder of the thunderbolt." [John Dowson, *A Classical Dictionary of Hindu Mythology*, p.296.]

In *Worlds in Collision* the overpowering of one planet by another in conjunctions [or 'closest encounters'] was quoted from the Hindu astronomical books [See SECTION 9 and 10]; the electrical power which manifests itself in conjunctions is called *bala*. Jupiter as the strongest planet is a *balin*. [*Surya Siddhanta*, Ch.VII (transl. by Rev. Ebenezer Burgess ["formerly Missionary of the A.B.C.R.M." (American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions) - on Internet Archive].]

The Surya Siddhanta...

...is the name of a Sanskrit treatise in Indian astronomy from 6th Century BCE. The text survives in several versions, was cited and extensively quoted in a 6th-century BCE text, was likely revised for several centuries under the same title. It has fourteen chapters. A 12th-century manuscript of the text was translated by Burgess in 1860.

The *Surya Siddhanta* describes rules to calculate the motions of various planets and the moon relative to various constellations, diameters of various planets, and calculates the orbits of various astronomical bodies. The text asserts that the universe is of a spherical shape. It treats the earth as a stationary plane above which the sun orbits, and makes no mention of Uranus, Neptune or Pluto. It calculates the earth's diameter to be 8,000 miles (modern: 7,928 miles), diameter of moon as 2,400 miles (actual ~2,160) and the distance between moon and earth to be 258,000 miles (actual ~238,000). The text is known for some of earliest known discussion of sexagesimal fractions and trigonometric functions.

It represents a functional system that made reasonably accurate predictions. The text was influential on the solar year computations of the luni-solar Hindu calendar.

But it appears that Dr. Velikovsky was at least sometimes implying, even compartmentalizing, that these “bolts from the stars” were the sole or primary cause of ‘global catastrophic destruction’. However I **see** such ‘bolts’ as one of the more ‘minor’ causes of **destruction** in God’s Planetary Great Judgments, because such *electrical discharges* cannot occur unless a ‘**visiting planet**’ is close enough to Earth to also cause the ‘major’ damage due to the greatly increased *atomic magnet attraction*/‘gravity’ that ‘raises’ and ‘rifts’ the *crust* of the Earth, and which results in unimaginably ‘**great earthquakes**’, and ‘**great inundations**’, this **destruction**, I imagine, being far beyond what even many “bolts from the stars” – and that would be from *planets* the size of Venus and smaller – would cause.

And though Jupiter can, more than any other *planet, perturb* [read, ‘move off course’] other *planets, moons, comets* and *asteroids* in the Solar System, it has never actually directly delivered a “thunderbolt” to Earth, nor directly caused any other ‘geological trauma’ to Earth, but evidently the many *perturbations of objects* in **his** proximity, not to mention the ‘planet-sized’ *volcanic bombs he ejected*, evidently resulted in **him** getting a lot more of the blame for direct damage to Earth than **he** really caused, and I mean **he** has mistakenly been given credit, and even to a certain extent by God has been given credit ([Isa 41:2-3](#)), for “thunderbolts” and ‘geological trauma’ that Mercury and Venus actually directly ‘delivered’, though one way or another both Mercury and Venus, as God Himself also implies, were “sent” by Jupiter.

Where a Planetary Bolt Struck the Ground

We recognize in the [so far unidentifiable] change in Jupiter’s motion the cause of great catastrophes in the solar system which [surely only indirectly] affected also the Earth in the age of the patriarchs, or at the close of the Old Kingdom [because Jupiter’s ‘affect’ on the Greeks, Trojans, and Hildas is quite apparent, as is **his** role in causing the *collision* that produced these *asteroids*]. In that period Jupiter became the supreme deity, [evidently by ‘participating’ in] having removed Saturn from its orbit [which at least appeared to have “affected” **his** too]. Classical historians, speaking of the destruction of the Cities of the Plain, told of “fire from the sky.” Tacitus narrated that the catastrophe of Sodom and Gomorrah was caused by a thunderbolt – the plain was “consumed by lightning” – and he added: “Personally I am quite prepared to grant that once-famous cities may have been burnt by fire from heaven.” [Though in this case the evidence better indicates a ‘meteor shower’ originating from the *collision* that made the Main Asteroid Belt over any “bolts from the stars” as the cause.] [*Histories* [105 AD] V.7, transl. by K. Wellesley [?] (London,1964).] Also Josephus asserted that the cities had been “consumed by thunderbolts.” [a ‘**mis-imagination**’ evidently carried on by Tacitus] [*The Jewish War* [78 AD] IV.480.] Philo wrote that “lightnings poured out of heaven,” [*Moses* II.53ff.] destroying the cities. [The *Moses* treatise, written before 50 AD, implies Josephus and Tacitus in turn carried on Philo’s ‘**mis-imagination**’.]

Since the time of Abraham was [during] the period of Jupiter’s domination that followed Saturn’s and preceded that of Venus, we are led to the surmise that the thunderbolts which destroyed the plain with its cities originated from Jupiter, or from a magnetosphere or ionosphere overcharged by the nearby presence of the giant planet [Na-huh!!!]. Even

today discharges leap between Jupiter and Io, one of its satellites [or moons]. The charging of the Earth's atmosphere in the presence of Jupiter's huge magnetosphere prepared the way for a discharge: a planetary bolt struck the ground in the Valley of Sittim.

I guess **we** shouldn't be surprised with this conclusion. Sure, "discharges" have been seen to "leap between Jupiter and Io", and such "discharges" were likely seen before the *water lens* came down, which gave Jupiter the early reputation of being the 'king thunderbolt-thrower', but *electromagnetic fields* become very quickly and greatly weakened over *distance*, and I can only think that the Earth has always been way too far from Jupiter for such a "discharge" to happen, unless Earth was once a *satellite* of Jupiter, except **we know** it never was.

For a long time I thought that the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah and other cities of the Plain resulted from an interplanetary discharge caused by Jupiter: classical historians speaking of this event told of "fire from the sky." The period was that of Jupiter's era of domination that followed that of Saturn and preceded that of Venus; and reference to the king and high priest Malki-zedek ("My King is Zedek," Zedek being the usual name of the planet Jupiter), in the days of the patriarch Abraham and of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, seem to support my interpretation of the agent of the catastrophe [- "seem" being the operative word here]. This very catastrophe [was not really what] caused the origin of the Dead Sea and also of the entire African Rift that extends from north of the River Jordan all the way through two thirds of the length of Africa. But, reading in 1960 of a reference to Professor Mates (Matest) Mendeleovich Agrest, a [previously mentioned and bio'ed Jewish] Russian astronomer [physicist and mathematician] who thought that an atomic explosion had taken place, I saw some alluring points in it. If, as Prof. Agrest seems to assume, the three angels were extraterrestrial beings that followed Abraham from Mamre to Sodom and placed a time device in Sodom, the warning to Lot and his family to leave the place and not to turn their faces to the city they soon would flee, finds some parallels in the atomic age.

Or not. And "in my understanding" and "scheme", a near Earth-size *planet*, like Venus, would be quite sufficient to 'tear open' the *transcontinental rift*, as well as 'raise' the Alps, Himalayas, Andes, Rockies, and Cascades, etc., all with a few passes overhead. So I don't even want to think of what Jupiter in close enough proximity to Earth could do. Still Dr. Velikovsky continued,

The observers of the first atomic explosion at Alamogordo, New Mexico were told, as was Lot and his family, not to look at the fission, but the wife of Lot looked; she may have been blinded - in the legend she turned into a pillar of salt.

And indeed, I remember that Dr. Velikovsky has informed us that, "To the south end of the Dead Sea towers a big cliff of salt called Jebel Usdum (Mount of Sodom)", and its existence appears to prove there was a horrendous 'bolt' or "bolts from the heavens" that occurred there, but it doesn't prove when it or they occurred. And **we know** that a '*visiting planet*' to Earth must have been involved, but that it

could not have been Jupiter, and that likely no planet **'visited'** Earth at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, leaving The Visits of Venus as the only alternatives, from which we may deduce that this "big salt cliff" that "towers" over the Dead Sea was formed by one or more "bolts" exchanged between Venus and Earth during one or both of The Visits of Venus. And if "bolts from the stars" can make 'mountains of salt', then surely sufficiently-powerful, 'meteor-shower-enhanced' and **'targeted'**, "earthly bolts" at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah could have, for example, turned Lot's wife into a relatively tiny, ***pillar of salt***.

But 'making mountains' out of a much smaller ***pillar***, Dr. Velikovsly further **'mis-imagined'**...

At Alamogordo the observers were impressed, actually overwhelmed, by the tremendous light effect, even with their eyes closed. Next rose a pillar of smoke as if from a furnace ([Gen XIX:28](#)): Abraham "looked toward Sodom and Gomorrah, and towards all the land of the plain, and beheld, and, lo, the smoke of the country went up as the smoke of the furnace."

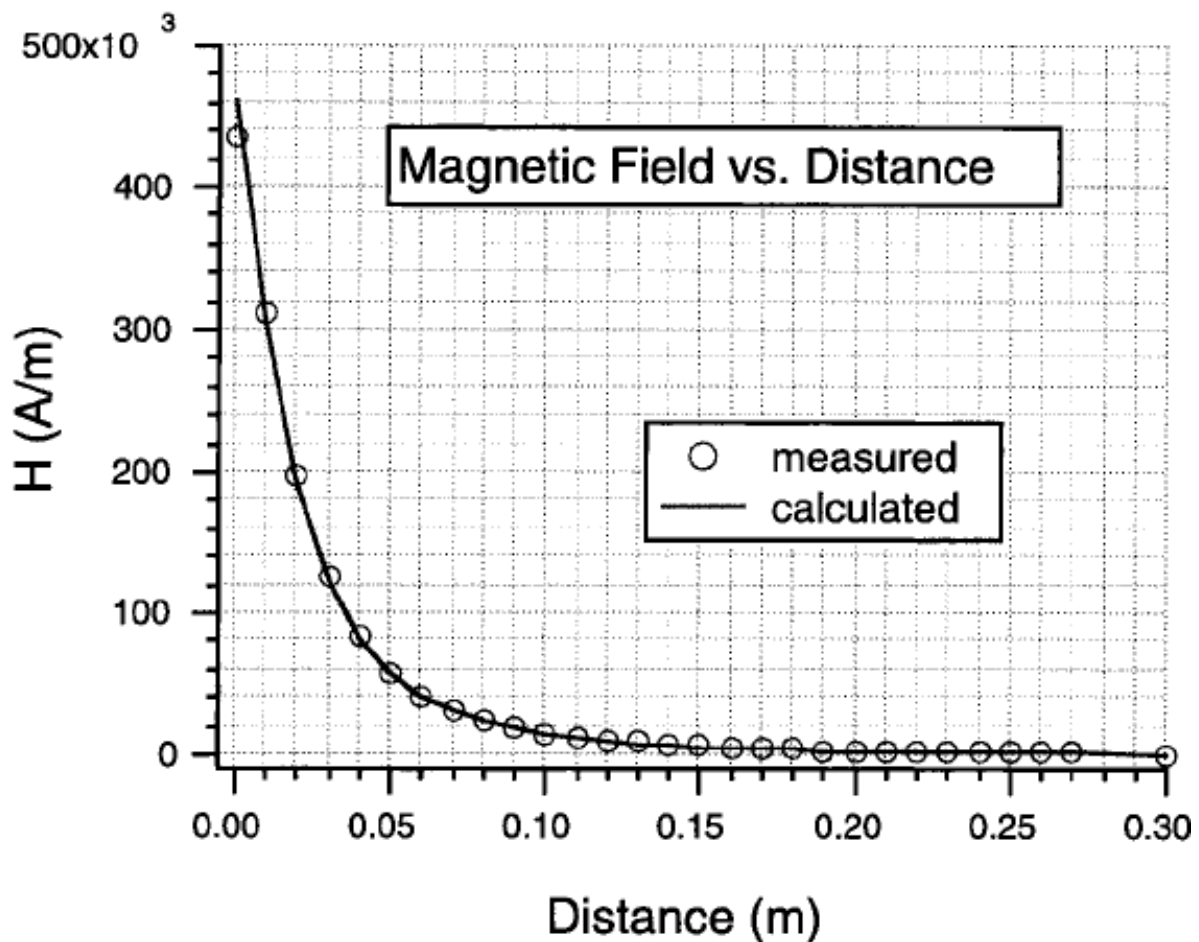
But of course this could happen with a 'regional meteor shower' too, which wouldn't kill, but just **'scare'**, everyone else on the planet.

If the time of the event is asked to be determined, I would strongly question the implication that extraterrestrial visitors came to Earth as late as the end of the Old Kingdom of Egypt, for this is the time to which the age of the Patriarch Abraham belongs - and on this I would expand somewhere else. [\[But this is not a place we need to go, or even revisit.\]](#)

Yet we are left with my original idea that goes back to the early forties [1940's] - that the agent of the destruction was a bolt from Jupiter, or from the magnetosphere or ionosphere, overcharged by the nearby presence of the giant planet.

But again, a 'severe meteor shower' - originating from some of the 'pieces' from the *collision* that made the Main Asteroid Belt, including the Greeks, Trojans and Hildas still under Jupiter's influence - would be quite sufficient to cause the 'damage' done in Greece and throughout the Near to Middle East at the time of The Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, and Venus is quite 'giant' enough to have later 'split the rift', etc. And remember that it's not "my understanding" and "scheme" that there is no such thing as "Horrid, untamed... etherial bolt[s]... [of] descending fire" from **'visiting planets'**. It's just that there is no possibility that any such *discharges* ever

struck the Earth that originated from Jupiter, because if Jupiter was ever close enough to *strike* Earth with such an "ethereal bolt", and considering the 'geological trauma' and 'atmospheric disruption' the Earth would suffer being that close to a *giant planet* that is "a thousand times greater than the Earth or Venus in volume, and six thousand times greater than Mercury", and which has about "70 percent of the mass of the solar system not contained in the Sun", ***God knoweth*** that - without His 'supernatural intervention' - we wouldn't be here anymore.



But can I entirely 'rule out' Dr. Velikovsky's "understanding" and "scheme" concerning this supposed 'bolt from Jupiter'? I mean maybe Jupiter became 'supercharged' as a result of Saturn 'going nova', so that it was able to *discharge* over – in my understanding – unbelievable distances. On the other hand, how could I believe that the power it would take to strike Earth from such "unbelievable distances" could be survived **by the inhabitants of earth?**

The chart on p.553 shows the "Calculated and measured values of magnetic field strength versus distance away from a magnet", where the "magnetic field strength" (H) is measured in *amperes per meter (A/m)*, and the "Distance" is measured in *meters (m)*, (in this case a fraction of a *meter* – https://www.researchgate.net/figure/Calculated-and-measured-values-of-magnetic-field-strength-versus-distance-away-from-a_fig5_226151519).

This is obviously based on small *magnets* (in this case, "each of dimension 2 in. x 2 in. x 1 in."), very far from 'planet-sized', let alone 'giant-planet-sized', but it shows, relatively, that *magnetic field strength*, especially enough to initiate *discharges* without a *conduit* through the *vacuum* of *space* – and *discharges* through a *vacuum* ('entirely empty space') take an incredible amount of power – is only near its 'strongest' relatively very close to the *magnet*, and the *magnetic field strength*, and therefore its ability to *discharge* through *atmosphere*, let alone through the *vacuum of space*, gets very quickly reduced to near zero over a relatively very short *distance*, (in the case of the *small magnet* at less than $\frac{1}{10}$ of a meter).

And I could do some math to determine the 'ballpark' of the *distance* that Jupiter's *electromagnetic strength* could 'throw bolts' beyond its own *moons*, but it would be like doing the math to find the *distance* I could jump – with just the *strength* of my own two legs – from the Earth to our Moon. So no, it's not going to happen.

It also occurs to me that Earth was originally perfectly placed by God relative to where the Sun would be placed 3 days later, and that is, in the so-called "Goldilocks

Zone", or the "circumstellar habitable zone", where it's 'not too hot, and not too cold'. So beyond the '**misimagination**' that Earth was once a *satellite* of Jupiter, if the "celestial mechanics" - or *astrophysics* - of reversing Jupiter's *orbit*, as Dr. Velikovsky and I together testify, is "extremely unlikely", then it's also "extremely unlikely" that Jupiter, even if 'blown' a little closer to Earth by Saturn 'going nova', could later very much if any be 'pulled back away' from the Earth and Sun, because remember "Jupiter has about 70 percent of the mass of the [known] solar system not contained in the Sun", meaning that, besides the Sun, Jupiter does most the 'pulling', and doesn't so much get 'pulled', which altogether means that if the Earth was ever out near where Jupiter is now, it would have been too cold for any **inhabiters of the Earth** to survive, and if Jupiter was ever as near to the Sun as Earth is now, it could have never gotten back out to where it is now. Huh.

So I must expect that I am **handling** these 'physical details' of God's '**masterfully orchestrated**' work with His Creation, as well as His **ordinances of heaven and earth**, much more '**in line**' with **scripture** than Dr. Velikovsky, or even Dr. Einstein, were **able** to do, and am therefore **handling** the 'mythological/historical information' better too. And so **we** will **continue**.

The Origin of Nitrate Deposits

The Dead Sea, for many centuries proclaimed to be dead and capable of yielding nothing, is today one of the greatest reservoirs of natural nitrate under exploitation in the world, competing with the deposits of Chile.

The deposits of nitrate in Chile are found in a narrow strip over 1400 miles in length, in the great desert in the northern part of the country. The origin of the nitrates is a problem that has not been solved.

"This is a moot question on which no two geologists agree... One [theory] is that in prehistoric times the entire nitrate zone was a part of the Pacific Ocean, and that through volcanic disturbances that portion of the sea was cut off and the water evaporated by a very slow process. Fish skeletons found in the caliche furnish good proof of this assertion, as does the fact that the Pacific coast is rising gradually. This theory is, however, contradicted by the fact that no bromine exists there - a substance naturally looked for in deposits thus formed."

Another theory attributes the origin of the *caliche* to an electrical process. A passage of an electric spark through the moist air produces a combination of nitrogen and oxygen resulting in nitric acid. Electrical storms - a frequent occurrence in the Andes - may have acted in this way and formed great quantities of nitric acid... [*Enrique Cuevas*, transl. in [Pauline G. Beery](#) [?], *Stuff, The Story of Materials in the Service of Man* (1930 [-available online]), p.41.]

But thunderstorms occur in many other places all over the world, near and far from the sea, and yet there are no deposits of nitrates in these places.

"A later theory maintains that the deposits are an accumulation of land drainage brought down through ages from the highlands along the coast." But how was it formed in the highlands of Chile? "Others explain the formation as the work of microbes, or as the result of the action of volcanoes discharging through their craters ammonia-charged steam there condensed." But deposits of nitrates are not formed in other volcanic regions.

No explanation satisfied the chemists and geologists, and therefore new ideas were constantly launched. In the laboratory a very efficient method of building oxides of nitrates is applied: "passing air through a powerful electric arc, in which the nitrogen and oxygen of the air combine chemically to form oxides of nitrogen [nitrates]." [*Ibid.*, p.43.]

Nature is a great laboratory too. The Dead Sea region was the scene of an interplanetary electrical discharge when a powerful electrical spark leaped down from above or sprang up from the earth.

A similar event created the Chilean deposits of nitrates, and the recollections of the Incas of Peru preserved the memory of this grandiose discharge. "Fire came down from heaven and destroyed a great part of the people, while those who were taking to flight were turned into stones."

[Christoval de Molina, *An Account of the Fables and Rites of the Yncas*, transl. and ed. by Sir Clements Robert Markham (London, 1873). The chronicle is dated 1574. The event it refers to is said to have occurred "in Pucara, which is forty leagues from the city of Cuzco on the Collao road."]

So these '**horrific**', 'planet-to-planet', "electrical spark[s]" mostly '**naturally**', as '**targeted**' by God, and evidently most '**powerfully**' in the Andes of Chile and "in the Valley of Sittim" about the time the Dead Sea was formed, "leaped down or sprang up" as Venus, certainly not Jupiter, passed directly overhead, and while '**she**' also, on **her** various *orbits* of Earth, 'raised mountains' and 'split open' the Great Rift, etc., this not being when Sodom and Gomorrah were **destroyed**, but centuries later at the time of The Exodus, and/or on Joshua's Prolonged Day.

And by the way, the **her** and '**she**' from the previous paragraph that refer to Venus (**the queen of heaven**) are from or suggested by, for example, [Jeremiah 44](#).

The Transmutation of Oxygen into Sulphur

In the building [or formation] of saltpeter, or potassium nitrate, the nitrogen of the air took a major part. How was the oxygen of the atmosphere affected by the interplanetary discharges?

It has been observed since ancient times that lightnings are attended by an odor of sulphur. In the twelfth book of the *Odyssey*, Homer says:

"Zeus thundered and hurled his bolt upon the ship, and she quivered from stem to stern, smitten by the bolt of Zeus, and was filled with sulphurous smoke." [*The Odyssey*, XII.]

Again, in the *Iliad*: "When beneath the blast of father Zeus an oak falleth uprooted, and a dread reek of brimstone ariseth therefrom, then verily courage no longer possesseth him that looketh thereon..." [*The Iliad*, XIV.]

And: "[Zeus] thundered horribly and let loose the shimmering lightning and dashed it to the ground in front of the horses of Diomedes, and a ghastly blaze of flaming sulphur shot up, and the horses, terrified, both cringed away against the chariot."

[*Ibid.*, VIII. 133-136, transl. by [Richmond Alexander Lattimore](#) [a 20th Century "American poet and classicist known for his translations of the Greek classics, especially his versions of the *Iliad* and *Odyssey*, which are generally considered as among the best... available."] (Chicago,1951).]

The same observation is put into a scientific prose by Pliny: "Lightning and thunder are attended with a strong smell of sulphur, and the light produced by them is of a sulphurous complexion." [*Natural History* 35.50, tranl. by [Dr. John Bostock](#) and [Henry Thomas Riley, Esq.](#)] The second part of Pliny's sentence is also correct: pioneer work on electrical discharges in modern times was produced using globes of sulphur in rotation. Sulphur is one of the best insulators and static electricity, when accumulated on it, discharges in electrical sparks toward objects brought close to it. [This experiment also demonstrates the concept that for "discharges" to occur from one object to another, "objects" must be "brought close" to each other.]

Electrical discharges produced without the help of sulphur are also accompanied by the smell of it. This odor was referred to by Benjamin Franklin who, comparing lightning and electricity, wrote to the Royal Society in London that both phenomena are attended by a sulphurous smell. This he mentioned among twelve other properties which suggested that lightning is an electrical discharge. No importance was attributed by him or by anyone else since to this sulphurous smell. The smell of ozone is different from the smell of vaporized sulphur or sulphurous compounds [elemental [or pure](#) sulphur is odorless], and the supposition that the ancients were unable to distinguish between the two disregards the fact that besides the smell of ozone a sulphurous smell follows an electric discharge.

[[Dr. William Jackson Humphreys](#) [a mid 19th to mid 20th Century, Johns Hopkins University educated, "American physicist and atmospheric researcher... [who] found a very good model for the stratosphere... wrote numerous books... held some teaching positions at universities... [and from] 1905 to 1935 he worked as a physicist for the U.S. Weather Bureau, predecessor of the National Weather Service], *Ways of the Weather* (London,1942), p.243.]

This suggests to me that sulphur is actually produced from the air by the passage of an electrical discharge. The quantity of sulphur must be detectable in a careful laboratory experiment.

Quite possibly the detection of sulphur produced by a strong electrical discharge, by means other than smell, has already been fulfilled. A very strong discharge of electricity passing through the air formed solid sulphur. The bolt of electricity that [\[supposedly\]](#) fell [\[from a 'visiting planet'\]](#) upon the plain of the Pentapolis [- 5 cities including Sodom and Gomorrah -] [\[supposedly\]](#) was of a magnitude sufficient to cause a transmutation of elements on a great scale [\[except such a "scale" was 'way beyond' what was required for the "transmutation" of just Lot's wife into a *pillar of salt*\]](#). It rained [\[more likely instead *meteoric*\]](#) "brimstone and fire from the Lord out of heaven." The overturned plain became [\[but maybe did not so much then become\]](#) full of sulphurous deposits - [\[nonetheless\]](#) "the whole land thereof is brimstone, and salt [- probably *potash*], and burning" [\[Deuteronomy 29:23\]](#) - and when later in another great upheaval the plain became covered by the Dead Sea [\[at the more likely time of a 'planet to planet', "bolt of electricity"\]](#), sulphurous springs continued [\[or really then began or increased\]](#) to flow into the valley of the Jordan and into the Dead Sea from submerged strata and from the springs on the shores.

And by "then began or increased" I mean that the centuries-earlier regional 'severe meteor shower' surely left behind plenty of **brimstone, and salt, and burning**, if not also some *sulphur*, and centuries later evidently a lot more **brimstone, and salt, and burning** was added to this region, along with maybe the strongest of all *electrical discharges* ever 'exchanged' between Earth and a '**visiting planet**', which evidently altogether, but predominantly at this later time, made the Dead Sea and its accumulated *nitrates*, which I can only expect was predominantly associated with The Visits of Venus, this "scheme", especially since it must be '**better spiritually discerned**' than Dr. Velikovsky was **able**, remaining far more likely to me.

But I will finally concede that it may have been that 'greatest-ever bolt so far' - and that would be from Venus - that 'softened the ground' enough to help make the Great Rift possible, though I can only imagine that it was the 'mountains-splitting', mutual *atomic magnetic attraction*/'gravity' between Venus and Earth that provided all the 'pull'. Can you see it?

At the end of the eighth century and the beginning of the seventh century before the present era, when every fifteen years Mars was approaching dangerously close to the Earth, Isaiah prophesied "the day of the Lord's vengeance," in which day "the streams [of Idumea] shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch." [\[Isaiah 34:9\]](#) A curse upon man and his land was that "brimstone shall be scattered upon his habitation." [\[Job 18:15\]](#) "Upon the wicked he shall rain pitch, fire and brimstone, and a horrible tempest." [\[Psalm 11:6\]](#) This eschatological vision was alive with Ezekiel in the days of the Babylonian Exile. He spoke about "an overflowing rain, and great hailstones [\[or unignited\]](#) meteorites], fire and brimstone [\[or ignited meteorites\]](#)." [\[Ezekiel 38:22\]](#)

But of course and again, all these are better explained by 'severe meteor showers', and whether or not they are also attended by a '**visiting planet**', which could

provide, in addition, a range of forms of *hydrocarbons*, as well as *electromagnetically-produced nitrates* and *sulphur*.

These stories of sulphur [but much more predominantly of *ignited and unignited rock and hydrocarbons*] raining from the sky and the fearful expectations built upon them could be taken as fictions of an imaginative mind, were not the smell of sulphur an indication of its presence in the air following the passage of a discharge, and were not also the presence of sulphur deposits around the Dead Sea, thrust in deep below the ocean level, [and were not further evidence - seen especially next section - of 'great meteor showers', etc.,] a substantiation of the story of the [3] cataclysm[s, the first being a *severe meteor shower* in the region of the God Zone, and the second and third being *global cataclysms*, both of these Visits of Venus being identified by me as among **The Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation**].

And of course the more isolated and/or limited deposits of *sulfur* are accompanied by the evidence of much more widespread "raining" of *ignited* and *unignited rock* and/or *hydrocarbons*, certainly not all of which could have been left behind after just one 'catastrophic event'.

Contemplating the method of the formation of *sulphur*, the conclusion to which is presently somewhat 'over my head', Dr. Velikovsky asks,

Is the atomic source of sulphur generated by a discharge in oxygen, or does the nitrogen of the air participate also in the building of sulphur? It seems more probable [to both Dr. Velikovsky and myself] that two atoms of oxygen are smashed into one atom of sulphur. If the atomic weight of sulphur obtained by electrical discharge will be found to be more than 32 (that of sulphur is 32.06) it might be due to the presence of some atoms of oxygen of the atomic weight 17. [The "standard atomic weight" of oxygen is about 16. But remember an *isotope* of oxygen, meaning it may have 'extra' or 'missing' neutrons, would have an "atomic weight" of about 17 if it had 1 'extra' neutron, the "atomic weight" of any atom being 'ballparked' by the number of both *protons* and *neutrons*, with oxygen 'standardly' having 8 each.] This heavy oxygen is the product of a nitrogen atom transmuted by the bombardment of alpha particles. [Dr. Ernest Rutherford: $N^{14} + He^4 = O^{17} + proton^1$ [- which is apparently the "chemical formula" for what happens when "a nitrogen atom" (N^{14}) is 'hit' by an *alpha particle* (He^4) and is "transmuted" into "heavy oxygen" ($O^{17} + [a 'free'] proton^1$).] We must reckon with the possibility that a proton from broken atoms of oxygen or ozone or nitrogen enters the new combination, or that electrons which cause the perturbation are able by themselves to change the atomic weight of the elements.

[In the late 1940s I asked Dr. A. V. Grosse [["affiliated with Temple University and other places" - his books and articles online](#) -] whether it would be possible to create, by a strong discharge, an atom of sulphur from two atoms of oxygen. His answer was that, as soon as there would be developed cyclo-trons capable of releasing two billion electron-volts of energy, sulphur could be made from oxygen.] [Cf. also the comments of Frederic Bonner "Fred" Jueneman [a 20th to early 21st Century "consulting industrial analytical chemist, who has served as an Associate Editor of *Kronos* and *Aeon* and was a member of the R&D 100 panel for the adjudication of the annual top one hundred products developed by academia and industry. Until his own retirement from industry in 1991, he

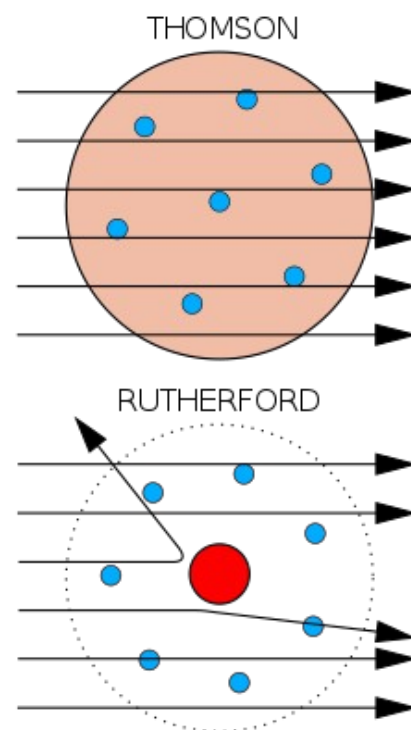
was a longtime member of the analytical committee of SEMI (Semiconductor & Equipment Manufacturers International). He has continued until recently as a Contributing Editor and columnist for Research & Development magazine to which he has contributed for 30 years... Jueneman was also a composer and author, having written two symphonic suites and several ensemble and piano works, as well as two published books on speculative science: *Limits of Uncertainty* (1975) and *Raptures of the Deep* (1995). He has also contributed articles to *Aeon*, *Kronos*, *SIS Review*, and the Oct. 1974 *Analog Science Fiction and Fact* "Special Velikovsky Issue" in *KRONOS VI.4* (1981), pp.53-56.]

Baron Dr. Ernest Rutherford, the late 19th/early 20th Century...

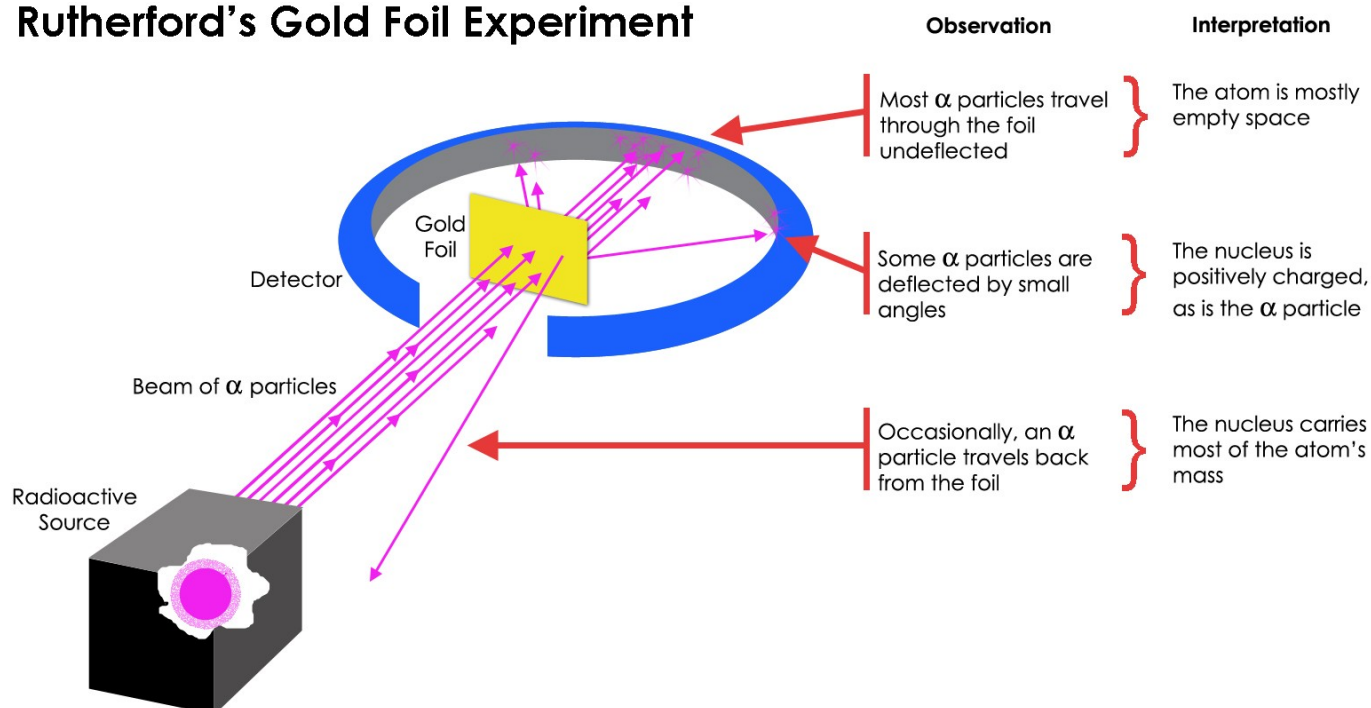
...1st Baron... of Nelson, OM [- "order of merit recognising distinguished service in the armed forces, science, art, literature, or for the promotion of culture... Established in 1902 by King Edward VII... [and] restricted to a maximum of 24 living recipients from the Commonwealth realms... [it is therefore] "quite possibly, the most prestigious honour one can receive on planet Earth"], FRS, HFRSE [- Honorary Fellowship of the Royal Society of Edinburgh], LL.D [- "Doctor of Laws", in this case, "*Legum Doctor* (Latin: "teacher of the laws")... The double "L" in the abbreviation refers to the early practice in the University of Cambridge to teach both canon [or Biblical] law and civil law (Doctor of both laws)"]... [and Rutherford] was a New Zealand-born British physicist who came to be known as the father of nuclear physics. *Encyclopædia Britannica* considers him to be the greatest experimentalist since Michael Faraday (1791-1867).

In early work, Rutherford discovered the concept of radioactive half-life, the radioactive element radon, and differentiated and named alpha and beta radiation. This work was performed at McGill University in Canada. It is the basis for the Nobel Prize in Chemistry he was awarded in 1908 "for his investigations into the disintegration of the elements, and the chemistry of radioactive substances", for which he was the first Canadian and Oceanian [- from "the islands of the central and... [South] Pacific", including New Zealand -] Nobel laureate.

Rutherford moved in 1907 to the Victoria University of Manchester (today University of Manchester) in the UK, where he and Thomas Royds proved that alpha radiation is helium nuclei. Rutherford performed his most famous work after he became a Nobel laureate. In 1911, although he could not prove that it was positive or negative, he theorized that atoms have their charge concentrated in a very small nucleus, and thereby pioneered the **Rutherford model of the atom** [which opposed the Thomson model, otherwise known as the "**plum pudding model**"], through his discovery and interpretation of **Rutherford scattering** by the **gold foil experiment** of Hans Geiger and Ernest Marsden. He conducted research that led to the first "splitting" of the atom in 1917 in a nuclear reaction between nitrogen and alpha particles, in which he also discovered (and named) the proton.



Rutherford's Gold Foil Experiment



Rutherford became Director of the Cavendish Laboratory at the University of Cambridge in 1919. Under his leadership the neutron was discovered by James Chadwick in 1932 and in the same year the first experiment to split the nucleus in a fully controlled manner was performed by students working under his direction, John Cockcroft and Ernest Walton. After his death in 1937, he was honoured by being interred with the greatest scientists of the United Kingdom, near Sir Isaac Newton's tomb in Westminster Abbey. The chemical element rutherfordium (element 104) was named after him in 1997...

...Rutherford performed his most famous work *after* receiving the Nobel prize in 1908. Along with Hans Geiger and Ernest Marsden in 1909, he carried out the Geiger-Marsden experiment, which demonstrated the nuclear nature of atoms by deflecting alpha particles passing through a thin gold foil. Rutherford was inspired to ask Geiger and Marsden in this experiment to look for alpha particles with very high deflection angles, of a type not expected from any theory of matter at that time. Such deflections, though rare, were found, and proved to be a smooth but high-order function of the deflection angle. It was Rutherford's interpretation of this data that led him to formulate the Rutherford model of the atom in 1911 - that a very small charged nucleus, containing much of the atom's mass, was orbited by low-mass electrons. [See diagrams of the Rutherford model of the atom, of the incorrect Thompson "plum pudding model", and of the famous Gold Foil Experiment on p.558-9.]

In 1919-1920, Rutherford found that nitrogen and other light elements ejected a proton (Rutherford said "a hydrogen atom" rather than "proton") when hit with α (alpha) particles. This result showed Rutherford that hydrogen nuclei were a part of nitrogen nuclei (and by inference, probably other nuclei as well). Such a construction had been suspected for many years on the basis of atomic weights which were whole numbers of that of hydrogen; see Prout's hypothesis. Hydrogen

was known to be the lightest element, and its nuclei presumably the lightest nuclei. Now, because of all these considerations, Rutherford decided that a hydrogen nucleus was possibly a fundamental building block of all nuclei, and also possibly a new fundamental particle as well, since nothing was known from the nucleus that was lighter. Thus, confirming and extending the work of Wilhelm Wien who in 1898 discovered the proton in streams of ionized gas, Rutherford postulated the hydrogen nucleus to be a new particle in 1920, which he dubbed the *proton*.

In 1921, while working with Niels Bohr (who postulated that electrons moved in specific orbits), Rutherford theorized about the existence of neutrons, (which he had christened in his 1920 Bakerian Lecture), which could somehow compensate for the repelling effect of the positive charges of protons by causing an attractive nuclear force and thus keep the nuclei from flying apart from the repulsion between protons. The only alternative to neutrons was the existence of "nuclear electrons" which would counteract some of the proton charges in the nucleus, since by then it was known that nuclei had about twice the mass that could be accounted for if they were simply assembled from hydrogen nuclei (protons). But how these nuclear electrons could be trapped in the nucleus, was a mystery.

Rutherford's theory of neutrons was proved in 1932 by his associate James Chadwick, who recognized neutrons immediately when they were produced by other scientists and later himself, in bombarding beryllium with alpha particles. In 1935, Chadwick was awarded the Nobel Prize in Physics for this discovery.



Note: "The atom [including its "electron shell"] bears about the same size relationship to a nucleus as a **large sports stadium** to a **marble**"

(*Chemistry: Precision and Design*, A Beka Book Publications, 1986, pictures, p.560).



Dr. Rutherford of course received many awards and honors, and besides that *chemical element*, he doesn't just have an award, building, and street named after him, he actually has several of each, as well as a park, New Zealand currency, a crater on the Moon, a rocket engine, etc., and his "image is depicted in the stained glass window of the Presbyterian chapel at Lindisfarne College in Hastings, New Zealand... unveiled in 2007... [and] dedicated to the college's concept of men with supreme content of character".

And remember that today *atomic physicists* have confirmed the existence of well over a 100 different *subatomic particles*, (including that *protons* and *neutrons* are made of *quarks*), with over twice that number now *theorized* to exist, but not yet confirmed. And of course confirming more of these *theorized subatomic particles* is what is now going on at CERN's Large Hadron Collider on the border of France and Switzerland. And they're confirming more, but I'm guessing that no matter

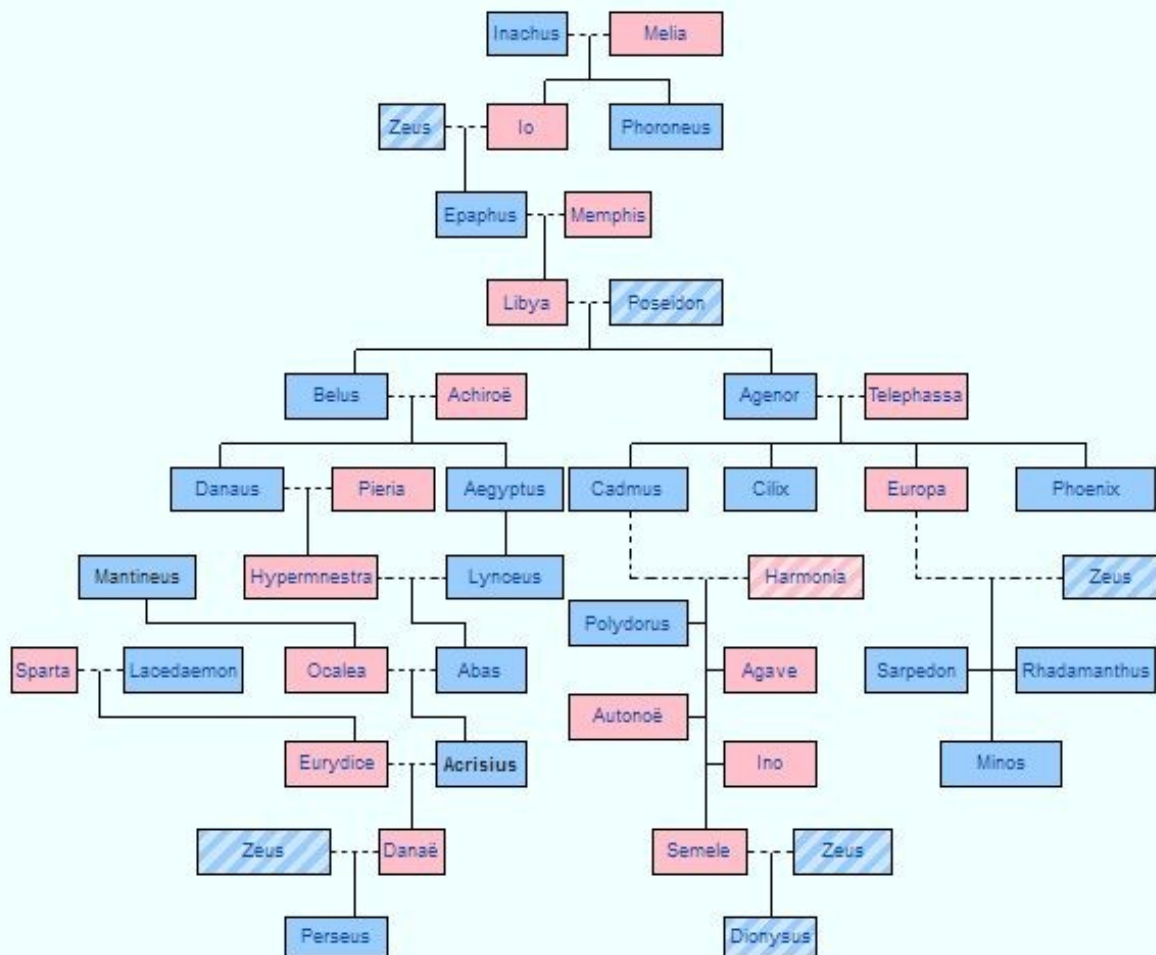
how many *subatomic particles* they 'break out' and confirm, and no matter how big the *telescopes* get that *astrophysicists* and *cosmologists* use to explore the Universe, most won't come to the conclusion that Job and the Apostle Paul came to, and that is, that God's Creation is ***past finding out*** ([Job 9:10](#) and [Rom 11:33](#)).

Jupiter, Gold, and the Birth of Athene [Venus]

Pindar, speaking of the island of Rhodes, says that Zeus "rained down on the city with golden flakes of snow" at the time Athene was born from Zeus' head, "shouting with a far-ringing cry, and all Heaven and Mother Earth shuddered before her." [Pindar, *The Seventh Olympian Ode*, transl. by Dr. Lewis Richard Farnell [FBA, late 19th/early 20th Century "classical scholar and Oxford academic, where he served as Vice-Chancellor from 1920 to 1923... [and between] 1880 and 1893, Farnell made a series of tours of Europe, studying classical archaeology in Berlin and Munich, as well as travelling in Asia Minor and Greece... [and from] 1901 he was a corresponding member of the German Archaeological Institute, and in June that year he received the degree of D.Litt. from the University of Oxford. In 1916, Farnell was elected a Fellow of the British Academy... [and he] also received honorary degrees from the universities of Dublin [Ireland], St Andrews [Scotland] and Geneva [Switzerland]",] (London,1930), p.35. Strabo, *Geography*.] Homer also says that "upon them [the people of Rhodes] wondrous wealth was shed by the son of Cronus." Strabo, after quoting Homer, adds that other writers "say that gold rained on the island the time when Athena was born from the head of Zeus, as Pindar states." [Strabo, *Geography*.]

Gold-bearing gravel - with ingots [- an "ingot" being "a mass of metal", in this case *gold*,] in it - originated from outside of the Earth and, if we should look upon the Greek legend of Zeus and the golden rain in Rhodes as containing revealing elements, then the ingots came from [or were confused as coming from] Jupiter...

[On another occasion Zeus is said to have come to Danae, the mother of Perseus, in the form of a shower of golden rain. See Hyginus, *Fabulae* 63; Apollodorus, *The Library* II.4.1; Horace, *Odes*, III. 16.1. Cf. L. Radermacher [?], "Danae und der goldene Regen," ["Danae [tbb next] and the Golden Rain"] *Archiv fuer Religionswissenschaft* [*Archive for Religious Studies*] 25 (1927 [on Amazon], pp. 216 ff. Cf. Pindar's twelfth Pythian and seventh Isthmian odes. A fragment of a lost play of Sophocles (1026) designates Zeus as "chrysmorphos" - having the form of gold. Rains of gold are reported also in the Chinese chronicles. See Jean-Pierre Abel-Remusat [late 18th/early 19th Century "French sinologist best known as the first Chair of Sinology ['China studies'] at the Collège de France... [who first] studied medicine... but... a Chinese herbal treatise enamored him with the Chinese language, and he spent five years teaching himself to read it... [and after] publishing several well-received articles on Chinese topics, a chair in Chinese was created at the Collège de France in 1814", which "has been termed "the birth-year of sinology" ", *Catalogue des bolides et des aerolithes observees a la Chine et dans les pays voisins* [*Catalog of Bolides* [a "bolide" being "an extremely bright meteor, especially one that explodes in the atmosphere"] and *Aerolites* [an "aerolite" being "a meteorite consisting mainly of stony matter"] *Observed in China and Neighboring Countries*] (1819), p.6. The Scythians are said by Herodotos (IV.?) to have venerated certain golden objects which they believed had fallen from the heavens in early times. In the sacred texts of the Hindus it is said that "gold belongs to Brihaspati." Brihaspati is the planet Jupiter. *The Maitrayani Samhita* [which "is the oldest Yajurveda Samhita that has survived", and for a 'crash course' in "the scriptures of Hinduism", "The Yajurveda (...yajus meaning "prose mantra" and veda meaning "knowledge") is the Veda of prose mantras... [it being an] ancient Vedic Sanskrit text... [and] a compilation of ritual offering formulas that were said by a priest while an individual performed ritual actions... [and it] is one of the four Vedas, and one of the scriptures of Hinduism... [and the] exact century of...[its] composition is unknown, and estimated by scholars to be around 1200 to 1000 BCE, contemporaneous with Samaveda ["the Veda of melodies and chants"] and Atharvaveda [another "Veda of



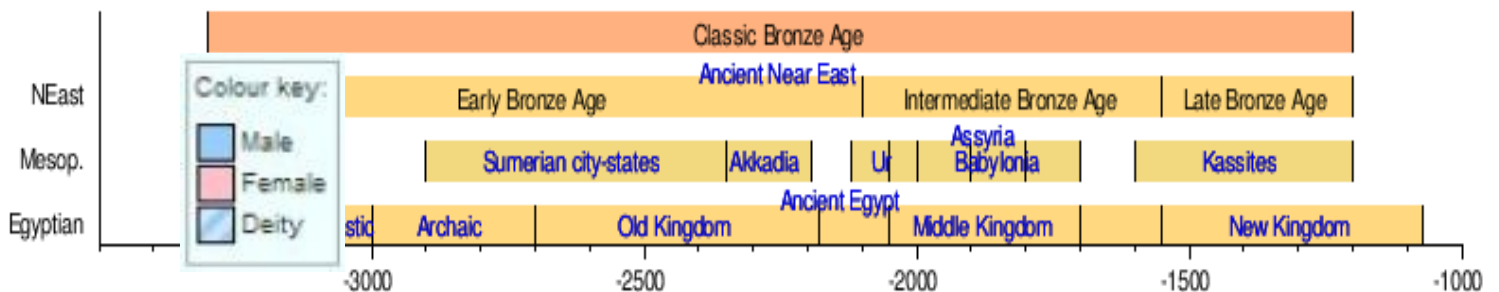
melodies and chants”]... [and it] is broadly grouped into two – the "black" (*Krishna*) Yajurveda and the "white" (*Shukla*) Yajurveda... [the] term "black"... [implying] the unarranged, unclear, motley collection" of verses... in contrast to the "white" which implies the "well arranged, clear" Yajurveda... [and the] black Yajurveda has survived in four recensions [or "version[s] of a text resulting from...revision"], while two recensions of white Yajurveda have survived... [and the] earliest and most ancient layer of Yajurveda samhita [Maitrayani Samhita] includes about 1,875 verses that are distinct yet borrow and build upon the foundation of verses in Rigveda”, which is “an ancient Indian collection of Vedic Sanskrit hymns along with associated commentaries on liturgy, ritual and mystical exegesis... [and it is] one of the four canonical sacred texts...of Hinduism known as the Vedas”] I.18.6. Cf. S. Bhattachrji [?], *The Indian Cosmogony* (Cambridge,1970), p.318.]

Danaë, near the bottom of the chart of *Argive Genealogy of Greek Mythology*, p.561...

...was the daughter, and only child of King Acrisius of Argos and his wife Queen Eurydice. She was the mother of the hero Perseus by Zeus. She was credited with founding the city of Ardea in Latium during the Bronze Age.

The confusion of Venus with Jupiter is again admitted by Dr. Velikovsky when he adds...

...It could be meteoric gold, and as to the origin [of it] the ancients could err; but the event happened in human memory, actually during the Early Bronze Age, or at its end [but really at the end of the so-called Middle Kingdom, and at the end of the so-called Intermediate Bronze Age – see my encyclopedia’s ‘contorted’, though otherwise ‘somewhat-near-the-ballpark’ timeline, p.562].



[It is a remarkable fact that gold appears only in very recent geological formations. Sir, Dr. Roderick Impey Murchison [19th Century 1st Baronet KCB DCL FRS FRSE FLS PRGS PBA MRJA “British geologist who first described and investigated the Silurian system [the layer of sedimentary rock generally between the so-called Ordovician and Devonian Period layers]... [who] became fascinated by the young science of geology and joined the Geological Society of London, soon becoming one of its most active members... [where his] colleagues there [- evidently some *saints*^{G40} and some *vipers*^{G2191} -] included [Rev., Professor] Adam Sedgwick... [Rev. Dr.] William Buckland... Charles [‘the Liar’] Lyell and Charles [‘Duhwind’] Darwin”] dedicated chapter XVII of his geological opus *Siluria* to this phenomenon: “On the Original Formation of Gold and Its Subsequent Distribution in Debris over Parts of the Earth’s Surface.” He argued, on the basis of his field observations in northern Russia, that gold is of *recent* origin:

Whatever may have been the date when the rock was first rendered auriferous [‘gold-bearing’], the date of this great superficial distribution of gold is clearly indicated. For it contains in many places the same



remains of extinct fossil quadrupeds that are found in the coarse drift-gravel of Western Europe. The *elephas primigenius*, or Mammoth, *bos aurochs* [allegedly “recently extinct member of the cattle tribe, *Bos primigenius*, that inhabited forests in N Africa, Europe, and SW Asia... had long horns and is thought to be one of the ancestors of modern cattle”, or “a genetic component of the modern European bison, crossbred with steppe bison”, skeletal photo, p.562], [as well as] *rhinoceros tochorrhinus*, with gigantic stags, and many other species, including large carnivores, were unquestionably before that period of destruction of the denizens [or inhabitants] of Europe and Siberia.

The period of the distribution of gold in the late Pleistocene strata was that of the mass extinctions of the great quadrupeds at the end of the last ice age. Next Murchison tried to determine the time when the rocks were first “impregnated with gold.” He wrote:

Now, it would seem as if these rocks, in the Ural, have been chiefly impregnated with gold, in a comparatively recent period. In the first place, the western flank of the Ural chain offers strong evidence that this golden transfusion had not been effected in this region when the Permian deposits were completed.

No sign of gold was found in these older strata.

Nowhere does it [the Permian debris] contain visible traces of gold or platinum. Had these metals then existed in the Ural mountains, in the quantities which now prevail, many remnants of them must have been washed down together with the other rocks and minerals and have formed part of the old Permian conglomerates. On the other hand, when the much more modern debacles, that destroyed the great animals, and heaped up the piles of gravel above described, proceeded from this chain, then the debris became largely auriferous. It is manifest therefore that the principal impregnation of the rocks with gold - i.e., when the lumps and strings of it were formed - took place in the intervening time.

Sometime between the Permian and the last ice age [- the biggest of which were initiated by The Visits of Venus -] some event resulted in the infusion of the [‘closer-to-the-surface’] rocks with gold. Murchison tried to fix the time more precisely:

We cannot believe that it occurred shortly after the Permian era, nor even when any of the secondary rocks were forming; since no golden debris is found in any of the older Tertiary grits and sands which occur in the Siberian flank of the chain. *If, then, the mammoth drift be the oldest mass of detritus in which gold occurs abundantly*, not only in the Ural, but in many parts of the world, we are led to believe that this noble metal, though for the most part formed in ancient crystalline rocks, or in the igneous rocks which penetrated them, was only abundantly imparted to them in a comparatively recent period - i.e., a short time (in geological language) before the epoch when the very powerful and general denudations [caused by The Visits of Venus] took place which destroyed the large extinct mammalia.

In another work of his, *The Geology of Russia and the Ural Mountains*, Vol. I (London, 1845), p.473, Murchison presented his conclusions about the geological events which accompanied the deposition of gold:

...We conclude that the [Ural] chain became (chiefly) auriferous during the most recent disturbances by which it was affected, and that this took place when the highest peaks were thrown [or ‘pulled’] up, when the present watershed was established, and when the syenitic granite and other comparatively recent igneous rocks were erupted along its eastern edges.

Murchison, one of the founders of modern geology, insisted that it was during a major geological upheaval that gold became part of the rocks - it was the time of mountains being “thrown up” and molten rock flowing, before solidifying into granite [or rather igneous rock]. Murchison next wondered about the “agency” which deposited the gold in the mountains of the Ural and elsewhere. As a geologist he observed that “the material

has been chiefly accumulated towards the surface of the rocks, and then by the abrasion and dispersion of their superficial parts, the richest golden materials have been spread out..." (*Siluria*, p.455). This last observation is of fundamental importance, in that since the gold was deposited close to the surface, it could not have come from [*forces acting solely*] inside the earth.]

Of course it makes sense that most of the quantity of *gold* that exists today "is of *recent* origin", because it apparently took the *atomic magnetic attractive* and 'gravitational' *forces* of a planet the size of Venus in close enough proximity to Earth to produce the bulk of it. Sure, Jupiter could have made - or "rained" - much more, but likely only during an "event that would cause human extinction... known as an **existential risk**", or an "Extinction Level Event".

In 1866 a human skull was unearthed in the interior of Bald Mountain near Altaville, in Calaveras County, California. The skull of Bald Mountain was reported to have been found in the shaft of a gold mine, in a layer of auriferous (gold-bearing) gravel, beneath four layers of lava, each separated from the other by four layers of gravel. The skull did not differ in structure or dimensions from the skull of modern man; however, it was fossilized...

[Josiah Dwight Whitney [a 19th Century "American geologist, professor of geology at Harvard University (from 1865), and chief of the California Geological Survey (1860 - 1874)... his travels and studies [being] in the principal mining regions of the United States... [and making him] the foremost authority of his day on the economic geology of the U.S... [and] Mount Whitney, the highest point in the continental United States, and the Whitney Glacier, the first confirmed glacier in the United States, on Mount Shasta, were both named after him by members of the Survey... [however while] in California, Whitney became embroiled in three notable controversies... [the first being that he] maintained that Yosemite Valley was created by a cataclysmic sinking of the valley floor... [while] John Muir [for whom one of the colleges of UCSD is named], [and] who was exploring the Yosemite area during the same time, argued that the valley was carved by glacial action... [and] Whitney derided Muir as an "ignoramus" and a "mere shepherd"... [and] Whitney's survey reports suppressed evidence of glaciers, and he never abandoned his viewpoint... [but most] scientists eventually dismissed Whitney's hypothesis and accepted Muir's... [the second "controversy" involving] the discovery of the Calaveras Skull, allegedly uncovered by a miner 130 feet beneath the surface of the earth... [where] eventually the skull made its way into the possession of Whitney, who quickly pronounced it genuine and concluded that it came from the Pliocene era (5.3 mya - 1.8 mya)... [however] others assert that the skull is much younger, as little as 1000 years... [and the] third controversy involved the dispute over California's potential oil wealth with Yale Professor Benjamin Silliman Jr... [who after] conducting a small-scale survey of surface seeps of petroleum in Ventura County... claimed that California possessed "fabulous wealth in the best of oil"... [and] Whitney vehemently contested this claim, and accused Silliman of self-interested speculation aimed at prospective investors... [and] Whitney devoted much of his time and energy to personally attacking and discrediting Silliman, whose reputation was severely tarnished over the course of the public debate between the two... [but] was ultimately vindicated - first in 1874 when the first major California oil strike occurred, and then in subsequent decades when California went on to produce 80 million barrels per year by 1910 - 40% of total U.S. domestic oil production), *The Auriferous Gravels of the Sierra Nevada of California* (1880), pp.268-269.]

...In the gold-bearing gravel of Calaveras were also unearthed fossilized bones of the mammoth,



the great mastodon, the **tapir** ["a large, herbivorous mammal, similar in shape to a pig, with a short, prehensile nose trunk... [that still] inhabit jungle and forest regions of South America, Central America, and Southeast Asia", picture p.564], horse, hippopotamus, rhinoceros and camel, all extinct animals in pre-Columbian America. But geologically the layer in which it was found belongs to the Tertiary [the supposed 'mountain-building age'], and therefore a great embarrassment was in store for the geologists and evolutionists. They divide the strata according to the fossils found in them and hold that in the Tertiary there could have been no human beings, for it is [supposedly] an age before the advent of man. But we have seen in the case of the Dead Sea that the great [global] upheavals ascribed to the end of the Tertiary took place at a much later time, actually in the time [shortly after that] of the Patriarchs, which is the end of the Early [or really the Intermediate] Bronze Age period [during The Visits of Venus]. The auriferous gravels of California and of the Ural Mountains had their origin at this same time.

The rain of gold on Rhodes is assigned by Pindar to the time [or following the time] when Athene was born from the head of Zeus. The expulsion of the protoplanet Venus from the body of Jupiter [in turn] followed, by decades or by centuries, the contact [or 'closest alignment'] of Saturn and Jupiter, and the fantasy of the peoples regarded Venus as a child of Jupiter, conceived to him by Saturn [among other interpretations from other perspectives around the globe].

And as far as an actual "rain of gold", remember that Venus is a little smaller than Earth, and if a 'lot of gold' was being formed in Earth's *uppermost crust* when Venus came by, it fits that 'a lot' was being formed on Venus too, and that some of it, via *volcanic activity*, etc., was apparently 'blasted' from Venus, and "rained" down on Earth. And remember Dr. Velikovsky himself has repeatedly accepted that The Visits of Venus were confused by some to be 'Visits from Jupiter'.

The ancient Persians called Venus Tishtrya, "a magnificent and glorious star which Ahura Mazda [i.e., Jupiter] has established as master and overseer of all the stars."...

[*Yasht* ["The *Yashts (Yašts)*... [being] a collection of twenty-one hymns in the Younger Avestan language... [each] of these hymns... [invoking] a specific Zoroastrian divinity or concept", and the "Avesta... [again, being] the primary collection of religious texts of Zoroastrianism, composed in the otherwise unrecorded Avestan language"] 8:44.]

...Plutarch described the events in the following terms: "Then Horomazes [Ahura Mazda [or Jupiter]], having magnified himself to three times his size, removed himself as far from the sun as the sun is distant from the earth... and one star, *seirios* [i.e., Tishtrya, or Venus] he established above all others as a guardian and watcher." [*De Iside et Osiride*, ch.47.]

The underlining above is mine, and the text underlined relates to the 3-part, **Volume II Final Test Question**: If Jupiter appeared "three times its size", would that put it close enough to Earth to allow an *electrical discharge* from Jupiter to Earth, and

beyond that, what could be happening to fit such a description, and when do you see it happening?

And that's enough said in this volume, except that I can't repeat enough that surely none of my - or your - perspectives on God's 7,000-Year Plan, or on The Lesser and Great Judgments of The Ages of Creation, or about His **ordinances of heaven and earth** are without '**flaws**', let alone are entirely **right**. And that's because **we know** that we must **be... mindful** [H2142](#) **always** [H5769: G3842](#), and **always abounding** [G4052](#) to '**correct, improve and expand**' all **we know** about our **infinite** [H4557](#), **eternal...Father** [1John 1:2](#), even as I, as one of the **followers** of the Apostles of Christ, and **even as 'they'**, the Apostles, **also... wish** [G2172](#), **even your perfection** [G2676: G5052](#) (e.g., [2Co 13:9](#); [2Pe 1](#); and see also [Luke 8:14](#)).

However I nonetheless **testify** that I have, by '**ever-increasing spiritual**' **perfection** [G5047: G5050](#) ([Heb 6:1](#); [7:11](#)), and by **deep** access to The Spirit of God, greatly '**corrected, improved, and expanded**' the nonetheless formidable and 'as honest as possible' work of, **God willing, our soon-to-be brother...in...Christ**, Dr. Immanuel Velikovsky, even as I will **continue** to do so as we proceed. And I will **continue, God willing** and **if God permit**, to **speak** for our Father, His Son, and the Holy Spirit.

And if we seemed to have fewer 'wild goose chases' in this volume, it's only because we haven't discovered them all yet. Nevertheless, and entirely embracing any and all '**profitable repetition**' (e.g., [2Pe 1:12,13](#)), I **hope** that you are now fully **awake** to the **understanding** that discovering your **ignorance, errors, 'misinterpretations'**, etc. in your **dividing** and **handing of the words of the LORD** is a '**neverending work**', necessarily requiring the **use** of '**ever-increasing humility**' - which is also required however otherwise you **seek his face** - and with all this being part of the unavoidable and necessary '**ever-ongoing work**' required to '**ever-increasingly**' **know** God.

And if this has become your experience with my **teaching**, then you should by now find me, by this **work, 'increasingly trustworthy'**. And you should also **trust** me enough to '**wait for it**', and that would be to **wait** for all the '**Spirit-led, 'ordered steps'**' that are '**up this path**' ahead of **us**, even as I also, along this same **path**, am **trusting** my Father, my Lord, and The Spirit to '**lead me by the hand**' (e.g., [Exo 4:13](#); [Isa 41:13](#); [Heb 8:9](#); [John 16:13](#)). And by "**trust me enough**" I mean that you have identified me as an **approved, spiritual, perfect, 'gifted' teacher of the word of God**, who is **able** to **speak as the oracles of God**, and as one who **knoweth** when the **time** to '**step onward and upward**' has come.

So, and especially to those who now really do **trust** God's **work** in and through me, and with the continued help of Dr. Velikovsky, it's '**onward and upward**' to a focus on Venus and Mars.

Concluded 11/19/2022